

Herbert W. Armstrong Sermon Transcripts

May 1974 – September 1985

Table of Contents

<u>Bricket Wood Message</u>	2	<u>Passover Examination</u>	1043
<u>Apostasy</u>	40	<u>Interracial Marriage</u>	1080
<u>Creation And The Gospel</u>	73	<u>Grateful for God’s Blessings</u>	1106
<u>Warning To The Church</u>	107	<u>Why Only a Few Chosen Now?</u>	1137
<u>Zerubbabel’s Temple</u>	145	<u>Another Civilization</u>	1180
<u>Why The Holy Days?</u>	178	<u>The Purpose Here Below</u>	1218
<u>Times and Seasons</u>	206	<u>Aversion Therapy</u>	1250
<u>The Plan of God</u>	245	<u>United States Of Europe Is Coming</u>	1285
<u>Building The Temple</u>	285	<u>Mark Of The Beast</u>	1321
<u>Microwave from Tucson</u>	341	<u>Spiritual Health Checkup</u>	1359
<u>The Church in Prophecy</u>	377	<u>Sin</u>	1391
<u>Revelation 12</u>	417	<u>Hungering For God’s Righteousness</u>	1419
<u>How You and I Came to Be Here</u>	452	<u>From Sardis to Laodicea</u>	1453
<u>A Pentecost Message</u>	493	<u>Success Based On God’s Law (Origins)</u>	1492
<u>What If Adam Hadn’t Sinned?</u>	531	<u>What Is a Christian?</u>	1519
<u>The Spirit In Man</u>	568	<u>50th Anniversary of the Eugene Church</u>	1553
<u>HWA Speaks To The Brethren</u>	601	<u>Kidnapped</u>	1598
<u>We Are The Temple</u>	636	<u>The Trunk Of The Tree</u>	1633
<u>The Need For Spiritual Knowledge</u>	681	<u>The Value of Human Life</u>	1677
<u>Endure To The End</u>	722	<u>Mission Of The Philadelphia Church Era</u>	1707
<u>Day of Atonement</u>	752	<u>Foundation of a New World</u>	1743
<u>The Meaning of The Feast of Tabernacles</u>	780	<u>The Spiritual Law vs. Rituals</u>	1768
<u>Are You Ready?</u>	818	<u>Unity</u>	1799
<u>Why The Church?</u>	855	<u>Rely On God</u>	1831
<u>The Sabbath Question</u>	887	<u>Coming Out of Sin</u>	1860
<u>On The Holy Spirit</u>	921	<u>Why The Firstfruits</u>	1889
<u>What God Expects of Us</u>	938	<u>Feast of Trumpets 1985</u>	1918
<u>Getting Back on Track</u>	976	<u>How Good and How Pleasant</u>	1946
<u>What Is Sin?</u>	1007		

Bricket Wood Message

Sermon – Bricket Wood UK (May 1974)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Bricket Wood Message	2	Satan Broadcasts	18
The Work Of God Today	5	The Purpose Of Mankind	19
Already Saved?	7	Choosing Or Rejecting Government	20
The Sabbath Question	8	Christ Qualified To Rule	24
Sign Of The End	9	The Old Covenant	26
Satan Cast Down	11	Before Christ's Second Coming	29
Back To The Beginning	13	Gospel Of The Kingdom Of God	32
God Created Angels	13	Purpose Of Our Calling	37
God Renews The Face Of The Earth	16		

Well, greetings everybody once again. It's nice to be back at Bricket Wood. I might just say that about a week ago we did have a wonderful turnout over in Jerusalem; and I was able to speak about 25 minutes to the top people of the nation Israel—members of the Knesset, members of the Cabinet, Supreme Court Judges, presidents of universities, and former presidents, mayors, and so on. And early tomorrow morning I'm leaving for Nassau, in the Bahamas. I think there will be radio interviews. There's no television there. There will be speeches at businessmen's clubs through the week at noon, like the Kiwanis, the Rotary Club, and so on—as we had when we were there before.

What has caused this slight change? On next Sunday (I believe it is afternoon, instead of evening.) one of the two I think best known concert pianists in the world Horowitz—Vladimir, I guess it is, Horowitz—is going to be giving the first recital that has occurred on the West Coast of the United States in about 27 years at the Ambassador Auditorium. Now, I very much

hated to miss it; and still it was coming on the same date as the Sunday evening campaign in Nassau. But now something else has developed; and we have decided that we will only advertise that I will be there on Friday night and Saturday night, but there'll be the three-night campaign. We'll just turn it over to Mr. Bass on Sunday night, and he will have the crowd right there. He will be the minister there. He'll have to take care of the others some other way for a while. It'll turn the people that are attracted by this campaign right over to a local minister. And that will enable me to be in Pasadena.

Now one reason that is necessary: the Oxxon... (Is that the way you pronounce it?) It's one of the biggest oil companies in the world. I think it's a consolidation of Standard Oil and several others, probably more than a billion dollar corporation (or billion pound, either one). And anyway, they are going to sponsor a national coast-to-coast broadcast on NBC or CBS about a month later of Maestro Horowitz in the Ambassador Auditorium. And to do it they'll have to give it, you know, the atmosphere—to show pictures of the Ambassador Auditorium by day and also by night, and the shimmering water, that the pillars rise up seven-stories high out of the lake of water, and interior shots I hope—because the Ambassador Auditorium is, I can say without exaggeration, the finest auditorium that has been built in the world (so far as I know) in this century.

I'm not comparing it with something like the Basilica of St. Peter down at Rome, which I think took over 200 or 300 years to build and is filled with ornate carvings, many pictures that if you see them on the walls you will think they are oil. And they are not oil. They are all various little pieces of marble, cut in the right color and put together in a way that makes a wonderful picture. Now, things like that took years, and years, and years to do. And I think there is nothing else on Earth like it, or ever has been.

But in the form of more-or-less modern architecture, I think there has been nothing that will compare with the Ambassador Auditorium; and the

acoustics are perfect! The Los Angeles Music Center, which is pretty much supported by The Los Angeles Times—the same family are back of both; and they are very jealous. I don't know why they should be. We've been bringing greater attractions into the southland, as we call that area of southern California, than they have. But they could have gotten them. And, if they didn't, that's not our fault.

And our acoustics are better, as their auditorium is more than twice the size of ours; and you can't make an auditorium that big and seating that many people (in the grasp for more dollars and more profits) and have the acoustics as good. Practically all the music halls and auditoriums for big musical concerts in Europe are about the size of ours, or smaller. We seat 1,250 and they seat about 3,500; and that is the difference.

Now the Music Center in Los Angeles will compare favorably with anything anywhere in the world. They are bringing that kind of cultural attractions to southern California. It's a credit to southern California, as things in this world go. And we can't see any reason why they should be jealous, but they are. One thing that hurt them very much down there: When Maestro Rubinstein was there a year ago last January 15th, a couple of nights later (he with the Los Angeles Philharmonic Orchestra) he was doing a concerto. He insisted on taking our piano from the Ambassador Auditorium down to the Music Center to play on it. Now, that was very humiliating to them. And they had to get it into the newspaper that he had borrowed the Ambassador College piano, and it was mentioned.

Well, I told Maestro Rubinstein that I had the two best pianos in the United States in that auditorium, about three or four weeks before, when I was having dinner with him in New York. And the Maestro said to me, he says: "Young man..." Now, that was the most delightful insult that anyone has given me in a long, long time. No one has called me young man for a long time. By the way, Maestro Rubinstein just a week or two ago entered his

90th year. He's older than I am. So he could say that; and I enjoyed that very much, because I still am a young man.

I told him I had the two finest pianos in the United States. He said, "Young man, are you a professional?" I said, "No. But you are." Well he said, "You don't know what you are talking about." I said, "No. I'll let you do the talking." Well I just told you his answer. He insisted on using our piano for the concerto in The Pavilion, which is the name of the large auditorium at the Music Center, much to their chagrin; and he has done it again since.

Well, this large oil company, which probably is the largest in America now. I think it's a new consolidation. I think it includes a lot of Standard Oil, maybe Gulf Oil and several others. I'm not really up on just what it is. But they want to feature him in a program that will probably be listened to by 30-40 million people in all parts of the United States. And I need to be there to help arrange it. And I think that's very important because it'll give Ambassador College the greatest exposure to the public in the United States that we've ever had at one time, in one kind of program. So I think that's important.

The Work Of God Today

Well, **the Work of God** is going on around the world. And the Work of God is not going on around the world in any other manner, shape, or form anywhere. And that's the main thing we are called for right now, is to get that out.

Now today I want to get back to prophecy. Not just world events. You know most prophecy and most history that you read in even profane history of the world is concerned with governments—the rise and fall of governments, and wars, and who is ruling, as ruling this or that of the other nations, and when.

In the Bible you will find however, that world events are listed only as they affect the nation Israel. The Bible is essentially the Book of Israel; and is not concerned with the affairs of other nations that have no connection, no relationship, to Israel. But still the historic portions are mostly a matter of the rise and fall of governments, and of their kings, and political and economic and governmental things. But God is interested in government, and I hope you'll see why before I'm through here this afternoon.

But I am interested now in prophecies, not of world events of this world but of **God's Church**. Now as in the prophecy of world events (and the many prophecies in the Bible about it), there is virtually nothing prophesied that was to happen between the first century and our time today except what you find of the seven Churches in the 2nd and 3rd chapters of Revelation. And there you find seven successive Churches, or eras of time in the Church; but also it is speaking of the Church as a whole all through the time. For example, the message to the Church of Ephesus was primarily for the Church in those early years. However, the Laodicean condition was there; and so was the Philadelphian condition. But the Ephesus condition dominated.

Now when we finally come to the Laodicean era, which is still ahead of us, the primary dominating factor will be the Church that is lukewarm. But you also find the Ephesus condition, the Thyatira condition, and all of the others there. So, in a sense, it is talking of the whole Church all the way through. When you read that, for example, if we overcome we will reign with Christ on His throne—that doesn't mean just the people of that particular era. That will apply to all eras. But still it will be **the overcomers**. Now I'll have something more to say about that a little later too, I hope.

But then was the prophecy in Matthew 24 about the false ministers going out and how the true gospel would be replaced with a false one, about wars, about famines, and so on. Those things have happened. There's no specific prophecy about any one event; but it's just a general condition that

has prevailed more or less from the first century on till now, except that now it has escalated at the time of the end.

Already Saved?

Now finally we come down to verses 13 and 14; and I want to emphasize verse 13 this time, where Jesus said:

***Matthew 24:13** But he that shall **endure unto the end** , the same shall be saved.*

When I was holding the campaign, back in 1933, that resulted in the raising up of the parent Church of this Philadelphia era, we had one man who was quite a critic who attended; and it was his habit to attend any evangelistic meetings held in that area there. He would always ask the speaker a question, and he would never fail to stump the speakers. He was a Bible scholar, self-professed. He admitted it himself. And he thought he understood the Bible better than any others.

Now in Eugene, Oregon (and this was just out of Eugene) on the University of Oregon campus, on one corner of it, is a... Well, you might say a Bible school. It's really a seminary; I think of the Church of Christ. Anyway, their young men were often sent out to practice on an audience out there.

This old man, Mr. Belshaw, would always ask a question. And he'd have a question they couldn't answer, and he would expose right off the bat that they didn't know anything about the Bible; and then they'd be through. The audience wouldn't come any more.

So the first night... No, he didn't come the first night. He waited until the second night in my campaign. (And it went on for six weeks.) He said, "Mr. Armstrong." I said, "Well, yes, Mr. Belshaw." You see, it was a little

one-room schoolhouse that only seated 36 people. However, we had some standing. We probably had 45 people there, which seemed like a tremendous audience at that time. He said, “May I ask you a question?” And I said, “Yes, Mr. Belshaw, you may.”

He said, “May I ask you, ‘Are you saved?’ Mr. Armstrong?” I said, “Mr. Belshaw, you ought to know that in Matthew 24, verse 13, it says ‘He that shall endure unto the end, the same SHALL BE saved.’” Well, everybody laughed at him because that’s what he expected to say to me. He thought I would say, “Sure, I’m saved.” And he was going to quote that and make a laughing-stock out of me. So it sort of got turned around. And every time he had started a heckle it happened too. God always seemed to give me the right answer.

The Sabbath Question

I know later on (This was about the beginning of the 6th week.) I’d announced I was going to speak on the Sabbath question. So a minister from this school came. I think he was a graduate by this time. And it was customary in those days; and I hadn’t come to know as much about the Scriptures as I do now, or I wouldn’t have gone in with it. But any such meetings as that, if a visiting minister came, he was asked to lead in prayer. So I asked this visiting minister to lead in prayer. Well, his whole prayer was a tirade against the Sabbath. He thanked God that we had a Savior to worship instead of a day! And he said, “I am like the apostle Paul was. I am determined to know nothing among you, save Jesus Christ; and Him crucified.” He said, “Away with these things of days and things like that.” Well when we arose, you see, he thought he had my sermon completely destroyed before I’d started.

Well, an incident happened that week. My wife had just written to me

about it. I'd gone on down to Eugene; but my family was still up in Salem, where we'd been living for a few months. And so I mentioned this incident, that I'd just had a letter. I said, "I agree with this man and his prayer. And I too am determined to know nothing among you save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified."

I said, "I just received a letter from my wife. And our oldest son, Richard, was playing outside. (It was summer then.) And the window was open. My wife was doing the housecleaning or something. And he was playing with another little boy. (They were both at that time, I think, 4 1/2 to 5 years old.) And the other boy was using words like gosh, and darn, and gee-whiz. My son wasn't going to stand for that any longer. He stooped down, and he picked up two sticks, and he crossed them. He said, 'Donald, look here. Do you know what that there is?' 'No.' He said, 'Well, that there is a cross.' And he said, 'Do you know that they had to take Jesus Christ and nail Him up to a cross until He died there BECAUSE you are always saying gosh, and darn, and gee-whiz. Don't you say those things any more!'"

I said, "I'm, like this other minister that lead us in prayer, determined to know nothing but Jesus Christ and Him crucified. They took Jesus Christ and nailed Him up to a cross till He died BECAUSE you people have been [{1}](#)... [***Tape skips at 19:06 and part is missing.*]. Jesus said, "I have kept My Father's commandments; and I've set you an example, that you should do as I've done to you."

Sign Of The End

Now, the next verse here in Matthew 24:

Matthew 24:14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached [In Mark 13:10 it's "published."] in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and THEN shall the end come.

The disciples had just asked Him for a sign of when the end of this world would come, and He would come to usher in the World Tomorrow. And He had not given that sign until He came to this 14th verse. Now IF THE GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM HAD BEEN PREACHED and proclaimed to the world all through the time, up to the end and the time of Christ's coming, He couldn't say that would be **the sign of His coming**, could He? In other words, **HE SAID RIGHT THERE THAT HIS GOSPEL WOULD NOT BE PREACHED UNTIL THE TIME OF THE END!** Otherwise, what He said made no sense whatever, if it had been preached all the time. His preaching didn't mean that you've come yet, to the time of the end. So that is really a very important point.

We, right now, have come to a place that I think you find described in the 12th chapter of the book of Revelation, and beginning with verse 7. The time when it says:

Revelation 12:7 *And there was...*

It speaks of prophecies in the past tense, as if they had already happened—because, when it's a prophecy in the Word of God, it's just as certain as if it had already passed.

Revelation 12:7-9 *And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, (8) and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. (9) And the great dragon was cast out [Who is the dragon? "The great dragon was cast out..."], that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world.*

Now Brethren, I suppose that couldn't include anybody here? He *deceiveth* **the whole world!** You know, a deceived person thinks he's right. If you KNOW you're wrong, you WOULD'N'T BE **DECEIVED!** Then you'd know. Deceived people are probably just as sincere as those who are

undeceived and who know the truth. And this whole world is deceived!
That's not saying anything against the person.

Revelation 12:9-10 ...which deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. (10) And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and **the kingdom of our God.**

That doesn't come until the Second Coming of Christ. But, at the time of this prophecy, the announcement will go out that now is the time, now it "is come."

Satan Cast Down

Revelation 12:10 ...and the power of his Christ: for **the accuser of our brethren** is cast down, which accused them ...day and night.

Now, I think Satan has a few people doing his bidding. They like to accuse me of this, and that, and the other thing. Really, I'd hate to start accusing people. That is the job the Devil is doing. Well, anyway come on now to the 12th verse:

Revelation 12:12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. **Woe** unto the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

How does he know? How does he know the time is about up and that this world is about to end? Because **WHAT THIS CHURCH IS DOING!** The gospel of the Kingdom is **NOW going to the world** for the **FIRST TIME** in 1850-1900 years. That's how Satan knows.

Revelation 12:13-14 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto

the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. (14) And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

Now, that is a prophecy that is just immediately ahead. Perhaps that war in heaven is already being fought, or has been. We are very close to that time. But beginning at that point is a good deal like coming into a movie, and it's been going on for some little time. And the things you see don't exactly make sense to you, because you don't know what had gone on before. You need to see it from the beginning. And, you know, it's a good deal like that. We start in the teaching of the Bible for this time, and prophecy for this time. And if you don't know what went on before, you just don't get it.

I've looked at sometimes plays on television. Maybe it's an hour long; and, for some reason, that I wanted to see this particular one. And I tune in when it's been going on for about 15 minutes; and, you know, I can't make head or tail of it from that time on. I don't know what went before; and everything else is just based on what went before, and you don't **get the meaning**. So we have to go back to the beginning. And I tell you, that's one reason people DON'T UNDERSTAND the Bible. It's one reason they DON'T UNDERSTAND the true gospel. They try to come in when it's about half or two-thirds over and understand it. And you don't get it that way at all!

We need to know what led up to it. What has led up to this point? This takes people on Earth. There's a devil here. The devil hates the people. It doesn't tell us "why" at that point. You have to go back before. How did the people come to be here? How did human beings ever come to be here? Did GOD put us here? Or did we just grow here, by evolution? Now, I would think you'd want to know that. I do. And when people try to disagree with the truth of God and of God's Church, they usually start right in there; and take it all out of context, and you don't know what's gone before and you don't

understand it.

All right, let's just skim through, very rapidly. See if I can skim through in about 10 minutes.

Back To The Beginning

Genesis 1:1 In the beginning God created the heavens [It should be plural, heavens.] and the earth.

In the Hebrew language, it is plural; In other words, the whole universe. It was a **perfect Creation**. The Hebrew words indicate a perfect Creation. In Job 38:1-7, God is speaking to Job. He says, "Where were you, Job, when **I created** the Earth?" Job had apparently built a great building. He'd been the one who'd been building it. It was a building where the cornerstone was laid on last. Now there's only one kind of a building where that happens; and that is in a pyramid, where the cornerstone is the top stone. And this was one where the builders rejected that Stone [Matthew 21:42], and that Stone was Christ.

Apparently, Job then...there's some indication that he well could have been the builder of the Great Pyramid. Now, not that he was Khufu. He was not the Pharaoh of Egypt at all. But he could have been the great engineer that the Pharaoh brought in to do it for him. Anyway, God was showing how **He created** the Earth.

God Created Angels

"Where were you, when I created the Earth? When I laid the line upon it? When I did this, and that, and the other thing? **And ALL THE HOLY ANGELS shouted for joy!**" [Job 38:7] The angels were already there before the Earth was created. It was a beautiful place. The angels were so glad to see

it that they shouted for joy.

Now, that indicates to us that angels populated this Earth before Adam. God had created angels. He had put them here, if you read the various scriptures about it. First is II Peter 2nd chapter and from the 4th on through the 6th verse. You find the angels that sinned and kept not their first estate, which was this Earth. And then the next thing shows another sin—between Adam and Noah (and the Flood)—that brought destruction to the whole Earth as a result of that Earth-wide sin. Then next it mentions Sodom and Gomorrah, destroyed totally; but the area that the sin covered was the area destroyed. In that case, it was just those few cities. So we know there was the destructions to the Earth.

Now you come back to the 2nd verse of Genesis 1, and you find that the Earth was in a state called in the Hebrew language “tohu” and “bohu.” Those Hebrew words really mean waste and empty, or chaotic and in confusion (as a result of the angels that sinned). They were here to develop the Earth, to do something good with it, to build it up. Instead, they tended to destroy it just as Satan has induced human beings to do! We have polluted the Earth—its surface, its soil, the water, the drinking water, the air. It’s all polluted. We have tended to destroy what God gave us. We are doing the bidding of the Devil, who is the god of this world.

Now we find that **God’s government** was put over those angels. And God set one on a throne. He was a super-archangel. He was the greatest, most perfect being that God can create. Now let me tell you one thing: God CANNOT create holy, righteous character instantly in a person by fiat. That’s something that can’t be done. That kind of character has to be developed through experience and by time. But God created this being, great as he was; gave him powers; gave him the power of thinking, of reasoning, of drawing conclusions and making decisions, making choices. He wouldn’t have had any personality or been a ‘being’ otherwise.

Now God instructed him in the truth, in the government of God, which is based on the law of God—which is love. L-O-V-E. Love is AN OUTGOING CONCERN towards others. And God’s law is love, and God’s law is not like any laws men make. God’s law is **a way of life**. Men don’t make laws that are a way of living, but laws to govern people the way the lawmakers want to rule them and govern them. So, this fellow got to reasoning. He got to thinking. You see, God’s law is **love**. Now that’s the way of peace. That is the way of cooperation. That’s the way of helping, assisting, of having concern for others.

But Lucifer began to reason, “Look, I want to exalt myself. Why should I exalt God? I’m going to get myself to be bigger than God. God made the universe. He created it. I don’t have the power to do that. But I’m going to try to take it away from Him. I want to take it away from Him!” So he reasoned that lust and greed would be better; that jealousy and envy would be better. He resented authority of God over him, and he began teaching his angels that. “Look, God has taken everything but this one Earth. He’s got all the rest in the universe. He’s not fair!”

They began to criticize God. They began to judge Him. They got into a spirit of competition and strife, of violence and war, of destruction. The name of this super-archangel was Lucifer. You read of that in the 14th chapter of Isaiah. (I can’t take the time for all of that. I want to go through this real quickly, this part of it.) He was given a throne. He said, “I will exalt my throne **above** the angels of God.”

In Ezekiel 28 it talks of him. It says he was perfect in all of his ways from the day God CREATED him (He wasn’t a born being; A created being.), **until** iniquity was found in him. It said he sealed up the sum of perfection, wisdom, and beauty. He was a created being, a great being. But he had brought disaster to this Earth; and he had scrapped the government of God, which was here.

God Renews The Face Of The Earth

Now, why did God create human beings? You go back into the 2nd verse of the 1st chapter of Genesis:

Genesis 1:2 And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep.

In other words, it was chaotic and in confusion. It was waste and empty. It was covered with water. Darkness covered the face of the deep. In other words, it was all ocean. Now in the 104th Psalm, and verse 30, you will read that God sent forth His Spirit and He RENEWED THE FACE OF THE EARTH. God renewed the face of the Earth. And the first thing God said was... And God creates everything by Jesus Christ, who is the WORD of God; and He speaks and it is done. He spoke and He said, *“Let there be LIGHT.”* Satan brought darkness. God is the Author of light, of truth. Satan is the author of error—to deceive people, to blind them, till they think they are right when they are wrong.

Sometimes he darkens those that we love the most. And Satan’s been busy over here in England, very busy. God says Satan has got people to turning and thinking that black is white, and that down is up, that east is west. They’re sincere. They really believe it. But they are misled. That’s the pity of it. Brethren, I tell you, we need to pray for people that have been so deceived.

Do you have to be a weak-minded nit-wit to be deceived by Satan? Do you know that he has deceived the greatest minds on this Earth! The GREATEST MINDS don’t know the truth; they don’t have it. They don’t have the Spirit of God. They don’t believe there is a Satan. They don’t believe there is a God, most of them.

Well, in six days God renewed the face of the Earth. Then He said, after creating the animals each after its own kind:

Genesis 1:26 Let us...

The word for “God” is Elohim, which is a uni-plural that is used in the first chapter of Genesis. Now another word comes into the second chapter, which refers to the Word—the Spokesman, Yahweh. But Elohim is the word in the first chapter of Genesis; and it is “God,” and **GOD IS A FAMILY**— a family of persons. **ONE GOD! ONE FAMILY**, But more than one person. You read of it in John 1, and the first 5 verses, in the New Testament.

John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

That Word became flesh and dwelt among us, it was Jesus Christ. He’s always existed. He was **WITH** God, but He’s a different person. And when He was born as a human being later, God called Him His Son. He said, “*This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.*” That’s **A FAMILY RELATIONSHIP!** Jesus prayed to Him as His Father. The Scriptures show us that the Church is going to be married to Jesus Christ. The Church will be the wife. There’s a Husband and a wife. There’s a Father and a Son. That’s **A FAMILY** relationship!

Now after this thing happened to the angels, **why did God create** human beings? There had to be a reason; and, if you don’t understand that and the purpose, you don’t understand things. Why didn’t God create another super-being? Well, how did He know that he wouldn’t do the same thing, and go the wrong way? God was left as the only Being... And the one we call the Father is the Father of the Family; but the one who became Christ was with Him, and absolutely 100% with Him in every way.

And do you know it’s impossible for God to sin. God knows and is **SO WELL** acquainted with the fact that to go contrary to His way of love is to bring disaster, suffering, destruction, darkness, everything wrong. And so God knew that He was the only One that could be absolutely **relied upon**

never to go contrary to His way of love, which is His law. And that was the law of the government of God.

Satan Broadcasts

Now, just stop and think a minute. Some people don't like LAW. They resent it. Do you know where that's coming from? That's coming from Satan! He is broadcasting. He's the prince of the power of the air. He broadcasts. And your mind is in tune with his wavelength, your mind – every one of you here. So is my mind. But when you come to know God's truth, you begin to recognize what is wrong when it comes to your mind.

Now you don't hear Satan broadcast. You don't see anything (like you do on television). He broadcasts merely in thoughts, in impulses, and in attitudes. You know, **the attitude** is the whole thing; the attitude. If you have an attitude of peace, of harmony, and of love—you are not going to get in trouble with anyone. But if you have an attitude of resentment, of saying “You stepped on my toes, so I'm going to sock you,” or the attitude of getting to the other and hurting him before he gets to you—that's the attitude of Satan; and he puts that attitude into people.

Children grow up with it. They are not born with it. They don't have it when they're born. I have just concluded an article for The Plain Truth on human nature. Where did human nature come from? Now we've never had anything specifically on that, and it's time we had it. And so I have written, it's the part 8 of the Human Potential series. Where did human nature come from? Did God create it in us? Did God create in us a nature that is **hostile to God** and not subject to His law (the right way of life) and can't be? Did GOD CREATE IN US a heart that is deceitful above all things and desperately wicked? Did the God of love do that?

But we have it, don't we. Then where did we get it? God didn't create

it. It's being broadcast. Children begin to get a little of it by a year and a half, or two years certainly. You'll find a little bit of rebellion against what Mom and Dad say to children before they get very old. You won't find it in an infant of 2 or 3 months old though. You see a sweet little baby. Don't think all that evil is in him. It isn't, yet. But it'll get there. And we have all tasted of the way of Satan, every one of you, and I. We all have!

The Purpose Of Mankind

Now we are put here for a purpose. God knew **HE'S THE ONLY ONE THAT WILL NOT AND CANNOT EVER SIN**, because He will not. And He has a great program. He had a great program ahead for the angels, to cover the whole universe! Most of the universe, except for this Earth, is like our moon. It is a dead hulk of decay. Now God doesn't create things like that. There's a reason they became that way. And God intended the angels to go over the whole universe and do a tremendous job; but they had to do the job here first. They didn't.

They had to. God can't have things going without some kind of regulation. And we can't have peace, and we can't do the job God wants done, unless we are in harmony and have His Spirit of love. That's the way He had to have a government—that is based on love, on helping one another, on giving and sharing to one another.

So Satan tried to turn that into a harsh law that is trying to hurt you. And he pictures a god who is a god of vengeance and wants to get revenge on us. That's not our God! That's Satan's god. And Satan is the god of this world.

Now, God saw that the only way He could get **beings** that could get this job done **OVER THE WHOLE UNIVERSE** (more than just this Earth) was **to reproduce Himself**. So He started the reproduction process. To do that, it

required matter. There are other reasons it required matter, and that was explained in an article (last September, I believe it was) in The Plain Truth, in installment 7. I hope you read it.

If you didn't, you'd better get the copy and go back and read it—because that's knowledge you'll never get any other place! God has not revealed it to any church. He's not revealed it to science. You won't get it in any university or college. It is the kind of knowledge you need, and you can't understand without it. God is **revealing TO HIS CHURCH** new knowledge, more coming now than ever did before. But the new knowledge and new teaching isn't that the law is done away. Not at all! That's Satan's teaching. That's what I had to confront 49 years ago.

Now in six days, as I said, God recreated the surface of the Earth; and it was beautiful. It was perfect. It isn't now, because man has polluted it; but it was then.

Genesis 1:26 *And God said, Let us* [Not “Me.” More than one person—“Let Us...”] *create man in our image.* [In other words, “Let Us make man **after the God-kind.**” Man was made TO HAVE A RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD. Man was given a mind, inferior to God...] [**** Tape skips at 45:46, and part is missing.**]

I need to be triplets. I need to be several places around this Earth all at once, and I can't be. Well, God is going to reproduce Himself so that there'll be a lot of Him. And He wants us to come to be like Him; and, if we'll just yield, we can be. We can be.

Choosing Or Rejecting Government

Well, He created Adam. He said it wasn't good that the man be alone, so He created woman to be a help for man. As He had instructed Lucifer in

the truth first and then sent him out, now He did not let Satan get to Adam... Because Lucifer had his name changed. He's now Satan. He was "Light bringer." The name Lucifer meant bringer of light and truth. "Shining star of the dawn" is the meaning of that Hebrew word, or name. And now his name is Satan, which means adversary, competitor, enemy. That's what he has become. But he's an immortal being, just as angels. He **MUST** remain on this Earth **UNTIL** a successor has qualified to restore **THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD** on this Earth, and has been inducted into office and restored it.

Adam was the first one that had a chance. The two trees were symbolic in the Garden of Eden. The one, of the Holy Spirit of God, that would have given him God's nature—the divine nature. He didn't have it. He never took it. The other was the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. They took that. And when Eve took it, and Adam took it with her, they **took TO THEMSELVES** the knowledge of what is right and what is wrong, what is good and what is evil. They wouldn't let God tell them what is the right way. "No, I want to decide for myself. I don't want any government over me!"

And **YOU'LL FIND OUT THAT THOSE THAT GO OUT FROM THIS CHURCH, SOONER OR LATER, COME TO THE ONE THING:** They'll say "I DON'T WANT ANY GOVERNMENT OVER ME!" And **WHAT GOD DOES WANT IS HIS GOVERNMENT OVER US! THAT'S THE ONLY REASON WE'VE BEEN BORN, BRETHREN! (I CAN'T PUT ENOUGH EMPHASIS IN THAT.)**

IF YOU HATE THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD, YOU ARE ON SATAN'S SIDE. GET OVER ON TO SATAN'S SIDE, IF THAT'S WHERE YOU STAND. BUT IF YOU ARE ON GOD'S SIDE, GET OVER HERE ON GOD'S SIDE; AND STAY THERE!

And remember: "*He that endureth unto the end*" is the one who's going to be saved. **SATAN IS OUT TO DECEIVE YOU!** I don't say, "Follow me."

But I say, “Don’t follow any other man. FOLLOW THE TRUTH.” I do say, “Follow me as I follow Christ.”

Humanity was put here **to reject** the way that Lucifer turned to, and his angels. To REJECT the way of defiance against the government of God! We were put here to ACCEPT the government of God **to be** obeyed. Obedient to the government of God; and to come to the place where, as Christ said, if we overcome—overcome Satan’s way, overcome sin (which is the transgression of the law)—that we will sit with Him on His throne.

Now character must be developed. To have the character of God, it must come **from God**. But first we have to know God has let us all—allowed us, not caused us—allowed us to grow up accepting so much of Satan’s way. Then He gives us the truth. And if we see the truth, and see that God is right, and that the way we’ve been going (of competition and strife, lust and vanity and greed, of resentment and rebellion against authority) is wrong; we turn over to God’s way.

Now we have to be **ruled by** the Kingdom of God before we can do the **ruling in** the Kingdom of God. Does that make sense to you? Do you agree with that? Do you think the government of God is wrong? The government of God is love. People will tell you it’s not the government of God. They’ll tell you it’s my government. Well that’s what they said about Moses. They said, “Why do you take to yourself, Moses, all of this rule?”

Well those that said it went right down into the earth, didn’t they?

I didn’t take it to myself, brethren. I was called, and I had to swallow the most bitter pill I had ever swallowed in my life. Satan may have used Adam’s wife to get to Adam; but God used my wife to get to me. Now what do you think of that? He made my wife see the truth. It angered me. I didn’t want any of it. I had every argument against keeping the Sabbath that anybody can think of today. Well, that’s old stuff with me. I went all through

that 49 years ago. My wife just smiled and shook her head, “No.” I said, “But look. You have to obey me! I’m your husband.” She said, “I have to obey you in the Lord, and not contrary to the Lord.” Well, I couldn’t come back on that; and she remained firm. She didn’t lose her love for me, but she didn’t lose her love for God either.

So I agreed I would give it an honest research. I almost believed there was no God, because I was challenged on evolution at the same time. Finally I proved how false evolution is. I proved the existence of God. Next I PROVED that the Bible is the Word of God, infallible in its original writings. And, of course, we have different translations and different copies. But we can get to the truth if we want to, if we are sincere enough that we really want to. And finally I had to see that I was wrong, and the world is wrong—that all nations are deceived. Now that was a bitter pill, but I swallowed it.

I’d been in business, and I’d been quite successful. Now I had to start from nothing. And when I started preaching God’s way of **giving** instead of Satan’s way of **getting**, at first I was getting a salary of \$3.00 a week; and we were getting eggs, and we were getting (oh) vegetables and things from some farmers thrown in. I rejected that \$3.00 a week when a challenge came of obeying God. From that time, within about one week from that time, the parent Church of this era of God’s Church was raised up—with 19 members. (Here’s that number 19 again, that some people like to ridicule.)

And that Church is going on, bigger and bigger all the time. Sometimes a few fall away. That’s been happening all these years, for 42 years now. But always, within 2 or 3 months, more new members have come in than those who went out. The Church keeps growing! THE WORK OF GOD KEEPS GROWING, because **THIS IS OF GOD!**

When I get into trouble, do you know where I go? I go into a private room, on my knees; and God shows me how to solve it. This is THE WORK

OF THE LIVING GOD, and don't you ever forget it! It's not the work of men. And the men that go out of it go to no place. That's happened for 42 years. You see, I've seen this happen. You haven't, brethren. You don't need to take my word for it. If you want to put it to the test, go on out. I won't stop you, but I'll go on loving you just the same—because I do go on loving those who have gone out.

Christ Qualified To Rule

Well, Christ had to meet Satan and had to **overcome Satan** before He could qualify to rule. Now the first Adam failed. God finally let Satan get to him. He followed his wife in the wrong way. Maybe there's something to it that I finally followed my wife in the right way. Anyway, I hope so; because I know that was of God—and the true God, and not the false god. Some people get mixed up on which is God.

So Jesus Christ came and **qualified**. Now before Christ came, why did He come? And why are we here? I want to go now to, well, a prophecy in Isaiah. The 9th chapter of Isaiah, beginning with verse 6:

Isaiah 9:6-7 For unto us [That's speaking of Israel.] a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the GOVERNMENT [the government] shall be on his shoulders: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, the everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. (7) Of the increase of HIS GOVERNMENT [Some people don't like government.] Of the increase of His government and peace... [Because the government of God is the only government that can bring peace.]

I talked, as I said, to the leaders of the nation Israel about a week ago. I told them of the troubles that the world is in. I have another meeting coming later, when I can go into more detail; and this particular time I couldn't because Minister Moshe Kohl (a minister in the government) had invited

everybody there and sponsored it. And I couldn't go further than he would go at that time. Next time I'll be free to say all I want to say, and I will. But this, I mentioned how the world had come to the place where...

It's like an editorial in the United States News and World Report. That's one of our weekly news magazines in the United States that I try to read all the time, because it's one of the very best. This was 2 or 3 years ago. It said in the editorial that it seems that conditions have gotten to the place now where the only way we can keep humanity alive on this Earth is through the existence of and the intervention of a very powerful "unseen hand from some place."

I said, "You know who they meant. They meant the Messiah that your people have been looking for all these years. And I'M HERE TO ANNOUNCE TO YOU THAT **HE'S COMING NOW VERY SOON!**" And I'm going to make that announcement a lot greater as I go along. There were 170 there, of the top people of the nation Israel. I either end everything I say now with something like that; or I go even further and name names, which I will do in Israel.

The message in the 40th chapter of Isaiah speaks of the cities of Judah, and that is really Judah. It's not Israel. They don't know it. They think they're Israel. They don't know where the Ten Tribes of Israel went. The cities over there, in the nation now called Israel, **are** the cities of Judah. And God is going to give ME the opportunity to get that message over to them.

God's Work IS going out to the world. Enemies will try to say it isn't, because they would do anything to serve Satan because they are deceived and don't know what they are doing. Well, notice now:

Isaiah 9:7 *Of the increase of his government [That's why Christ came—to govern] and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his [David's] kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and*

with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the [Eternal] of hosts will [do] this.

Now, when it says that, you can be sure it's going to be done. It will be done. Now, Jesus had to qualify. I'd like to go next to the 3rd chapter of Malachi.

***Malachi 3:1** Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me [That's really Christ speaking there]: and the Lord, whom ye seek [Christ], shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant...*

He's a Messenger with a message. He's the Messenger of the Covenant.

The Old Covenant

Now, there was the Old Covenant; and Moses was the mediator of the Old Covenant. And that married the nation Israel to God, but Israel was not a faithful wife. You know the story. There're so many prophecies about it—in Jeremiah, in Hosea, and many other places in the Bible—especially in the Old Testament, and in the New Testament too.

But there was something wrong with that Covenant. You'll find it in Hebrews the 8th chapter. You also will find it back in Jeremiah 31. **The fault was NOT the law**, as so many people seem to think. The fault WAS that the people didn't keep it. And what will be changed is that God will write His law of love in their hearts and in their minds. Now, that law is a spiritual law.

There also was a great system of physical laws given to ancient Israel as **a schoolmaster** to bring them to Christ. Wherever you read, in the New Testament, "*works of the law*" the word for "works" there is, 'ergon' is the Greek word; and it means PHYSICAL WORK. They had to do physical things morning, noon, and night to establish in them the **habit of obedience**.

I carry with me a watch that I hardly ever look at. I got this during the war. I had to have a watch with a very clear face for broadcasting, so I could see when I'd come to 29 minutes. I don't use this watch any more, but I carry it. Do you know why? Because it's better for the watch that it's wound every day. If I lay it in the dresser or some place at home, I'll forget it. But it's habit! I wind it every night when I take it out of my pocket to undress. It's habit.

Which is easier to remember? This is a test of intelligence. Which is easier to remember: To wind a one-day watch or an 8-day clock? Why the answer is it's much easier to remember to wind a one-day watch, because it's habit.

I had two sons. Both had become ministers in the Church of God. The one was killed as a result of an automobile accident now about 18 years ago. However – (All of a sudden what I was going to say just leaves me. Well, I'll get it back in a second or two.) Oh, when they were children. I told you a while ago that I was speaking down by Eugene, Oregon you know. And I hadn't moved the family down yet; and they were still...and I told you about my elder son, Dick.

Well now there was my younger son, whose name is Garner Ted; and he's still around, very much. And somehow Richard, whom we called Dick, (Dickey in those days), he was coming along pretty good. But Ted had just come to this age. He was between 4 and 5 years old by now, and my wife said that I was just going to have to do something. She couldn't make him mind at all. So, when I came up, I called him and I talked to him about it—the way he'd been doing; and he knew it. And I said, “Now, I'm going to have to paddle you for that.” And I used a table tennis paddle. I spanked him real good.

“Now,” I said, “I wonder if you will do what I tell you?” “Yes,” he said

he would. Well I said, “You see that chair over there. Take it and move it over here.” So he did. I said, “Now take it and put it back again.” So he did. I told him everything I could think of. I said do this, do that, do the other thing. I said, “Well, now you’re beginning to learn how to obey. Now I’m going to watch you for the next day or two, while I’m home. I’m going to make it a habit to. [*** Tape garbled at 1:05:16 and part is missing.*]

A habit of obedience! But all the sacrifices, all of their meat and drink offerings, couldn’t forgive their sins; and they couldn’t be forgiven until Christ came anyway. It was only a substitute. But when Christ came they didn’t need the substitute any longer.

If you got in a football game (soccer over here) and one of the top players of the team who ought to be a starter is 5 minutes late getting there, and you start a substitute in his place. As soon as the main player gets there, the substitute goes out. When Christ came (and the Holy Spirit came that we could have, which they didn’t have), we didn’t need **the substitute** any more.

But you see, the spiritual law—the law that is **LOVE**, the law that is **HOLY, AND PERFECT, AND JUST** as Paul wrote in the 7th chapter of Romans [{2}](#)—that is **God’s Way of life!** And that goes on. Yes, I had to argue with my wife, until I lost that battle 49 years ago.

The New Covenant

Well, now notice here: Christ is coming as the Messenger of the New Covenant. The New Covenant also will be a marriage, but **a marriage of THE CHURCH to Christ**. And this time we will come to the place I just read to you, where we can’t sin, before that marriage takes place. He said **HE WILL WRITE HIS LAW IN OUR MINDS AND OUR INWARD PARTS**. He wasn’t talking about rituals, the works of the law. **THE LAW—THE LAW THAT IS SPIRITUAL**. The law that is holy, and just, and good.

You don't find any such thing about the so-called laws of Moses at all. Well, I can go into a doctrinal subject like that some of these times. I don't know why some people now, after all these years, can possibly be deceived on a point like that. Anyway, I want you to notice, here is Christ coming as the Mediator of the New Covenant.

Malachi 3:2-3 But who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap. (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the [Eternal] an offering in righteousness.

Before Christ's Second Coming

Did Jesus do that when He came? It's speaking about THE COMING OF JESUS CHRIST! He didn't do that! He didn't do any of those things. LOOK AT IT! READ IT!

Malachi 3:4-6 Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the [Eternal], as in the days of old, and as in former years. (5) And I will come near to you to judgment [Jesus said the Father judges no man. He's given judgment to the Son, didn't He?], and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, and against false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in his wages, the widow, and the fatherless, and that turn aside the stranger from his right, and fear not me, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. (6) For I am the [Eternal], I change not [and so on].

That is a prophecy of Christ at His Second Coming. Now we find:

Mark 1:1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ...

Then it begins to speak of John the Baptist, who came to prepare the

way before Him. But Jesus didn't do any of these things when He came the first time. That's speaking of a **SECOND COMING** and **SOMEONE TO PREPARE THE WAY BEFORE HIS COMING!** There's something there you'd better learn, brethren. There also was a Second Coming of Christ. And it just said here that, before He comes, there'd be someone to prepare the way. So someone is preparing the way **for the Second Coming**, the same as the First.

As the gospel of the first century apostles, so now; there was a great apostasy during the apostles of the first century. And we read of it over here in II Thessalonians.

***II Thessalonians 2:1** Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him. (2) That you be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.*

Now he was writing about 50 something or 60 AD. I've got some notes on it somewhere, I don't have them right here. The Church was perhaps 10 or 15 years old by that time. The Church was really founded on the Day of Pentecost in 31 AD. But the false church was started in 33 AD, or immediately thereafter.

***II Thessalonians 2:3** Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first...*

Now that "falling away" in the Greek is speaking of **apostasy**; In other words, turning away from the truth of the gospel to a false gospel. And that did happen in their time. And a falling away is prophesied for our time now, too. And the one was only a type of the other.

***II Thessalonians 2:3-7** ...and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition: (4) who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God,*

*or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God. (5) Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? (6) And now you know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time. (7) For **the mystery of iniquity**...*

The “mystery of iniquity” was the religion called the Babylonian Mystery Religion. And it was a religion of lawlessness. It was Satan’s religion. Satan is the lawless one, and “iniquity” means lawless. That was the mystery—THE BABYLONIAN MYSTERY RELIGION. You’ll find it in the 17th chapter of Revelation, where the name is given, as **a mother church**. She’s the mother of daughters that have come out of her IN PROTEST, calling themselves Protestants. That is Revelation 17:5. And her name is:

Revelation 17:5 ...MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

The Babylonian Mystery religion—that is the religion that was founded under Simon the magician in 33 AD. And that church still claims it was founded in 33 AD. In that they are right. But this apostasy began then, and it’s a type of the apostasy in God’s Church right now. But it is Satan that is in back of it; but he deceives people, and they don’t know they’re deceived. Now, it says:

II Thessalonians 2:7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work...

That was in John’s day. It was already working at that time. Well, it’s still working. Don’t you think it isn’t!

Now Jesus Christ had to **qualify**. And you read of the big qualification in Matthew the 4th chapter. I won’t take time this afternoon for that. But Satan put Christ through, well, a kind of temptation that you have never been through. He had had to fast for 40 days and 40 nights. A man died just a day or so ago here, from fasting about 50 or 60 days. I don’t think he would have

lived that long if he hadn't taken a little something. And, of course, that caused uproar here; because there's nothing but violence going on now in this world. But Jesus had to **qualify**, and when He did:

Gospel Of The Kingdom Of God

Mark 1:14 Now after that John [the Baptist] was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of **the kingdom of God**.

THAT IS THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD and the FAMILY OF GOD. Now I've said the government of God had been on this Earth. Christ came to preach "**the kingdom of God**"—which is **THE FAMILY OF GOD** ADMINISTERING THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD.

Now the government of God has been on this Earth, and has been taken away. But the Family of God has not been yet, and won't until the time of the resurrection and Christ's Second Coming. You see, that'll be something a lot more. That's the Family of God, into which **WE WILL HAVE BEEN BORN**, I hope. And, brethren, I'm afraid it won't be all of us that are in this room; but I hope it will certainly be most of us—**born of God**.

It is the Family of God ruling with the government of God. That's why we were born. That's why we are called. That's why humanity was put on the Earth. We need to know why we are here and the purpose that's back of it—to give us meaning, so we can understand where we are going and why. Now notice here:

Revelation 2:26 He that overcometh...

Christ had to overcome Satan. Christ had to face Satan's way, be tempted with Satan's way, and reject it; and He had to prove He would **obey** the government of God. And when He proved it, He said:

Mark 1:15 The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand.

Time had not been fulfilled until He qualified! He had to QUALIFY before He could become the future King. But there's a reason why God wasn't ready at that time yet. So He went to get the Kingdom and to return; and He's going to return very soon now. And when He comes back, He will have already been crowned. The coronation ceremony will have taken place in heaven. And He's coming as the King of kings and the Lord of lords—to rule all nations.

Now, if He had to qualify, should we rule with Him if we don't qualify in the same way, brethren? I have said we are **called ahead of time**. This is NOT the time God is trying to save the world. Jesus said: "None can come to Me unless the Father draws him," through the power of the Holy Spirit. He didn't come to give peace that time. He said, "Think not I come to bring peace onto the Earth." He came as He said of His coming—because "some would believe" would only cause trouble among people on Earth that are angry against the truth of God and aren't going to tolerate it if they can stand it, if they can help it.

But when God sets His hand to save the world spiritually, there won't be any Satan around. The first thing Christ's going to do when He comes again is to put Satan away for a thousand years. Then he'll be loosed a little while at the end of it. And at the end of the thousand years, people will be in peace—THE WORLD AT PEACE!

But as soon as Satan is loosed, you'll find millions of people come to war (right away, they want to). They are angry at all of the saints and those that are on God's side, and they want to kill them. Then fire will come down and devour them. That will be their first death. There'll be people that have been born in the Millennium. And God will put Satan away forever, and never can he come back to the people of this Earth again.

Qualifying To Rule With Christ

Brethren, we are called now. We have to contend with Satan! And Satan is after **us**, not others. It's "the woman" he's going after, as I read to you at the beginning this afternoon. WE HAVE TO QUALIFY. And there's going to be a difference in status and government between us and those that are called and saved later. Now, it says here:

***Revelation 2:26** He that overcometh [And this is for all Churches.] and keepeth my works UNTO THE END [Enduring to the end.], to him will I give power over the nations. (27) And he shall rule them with a rod of iron.*

And then in Revelation 3:21:

***Revelation 3:21** To him that overcometh...*

That is Satan and Satan's way, and that comes under the government of God. And the only place on this Earth that the government of God is operating is in this Church. And some are going to try to get you to GET AWAY FROM **THAT GOVERNMENT!** "Oh," they'll say, "It's A HARSH GOVERNMENT." You tell me one harsh thing that I've ever done in this government. Go on. Tell me! You just can't. It's a government based on a law of love, and it's a government that we poor humans (those of us that God has called and put in certain offices) are trying to administer in love.

And it is those we've done the most for, and had the most love for, that will turn against us. Can you explain to me why that is? Someone said to me in Pasadena, "you notice the people that turn the wrong way? They are people who have been on the payroll getting, taking from this Work. They never can seem to get enough. But the people that are not on the payroll, and the people that are **giving** and not getting, they remain loyal." Can you explain that? Where your treasure is there your heart is also, if you are putting your treasure in; but if you **get**, you never get enough and you want

more. That's hard to understand sometimes.

***Revelation 3:21** To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne...*

He had to overcome. He said, "As I overcame." HE OVERCAME SATAN, and we have to do it. Now when you overcome jealousy and envy, bitterness and resentment against someone who stepped on your toes—you are overcoming Satan and Satan's ways, because that's where it came from. That's where it came from.

Now, I could go on and read more of this; but I just wanted to get that to you. And I want to just give you two more passages of Scriptures today. (Maybe I'm over. I don't know. No, I'm not overtime. I was afraid I was. I'll quit on time.) All right, in John 6, verse 66-67.

***John 6:66** From that time [During the life of Christ on Earth.] many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.*

What would you have done if you had lived in that day? You know, the Pharisees of that day said, "Look, if we'd lived back in the days of these prophets way back there, we would never have done like they did." That's what they said; and yet they are the very ones that cried out for the blood of Christ and said, "Crucify Him."

Some of you would say, "Oh, I would never do that." Oh, yes, you would—some of you—if you'd lived back in the days of Christ; because, if you leave **His Work**, you are leaving Him just as much as they did. Just as much. And you'd better think very seriously about that. Some of you are on the fence. That's a pretty poor place to be. I say, "If you are on God's side, you come in and be on God's side; and you STAND there."

***John 6:66-69** From that time on many of his [Jesus'] disciples went back, and walked no more with him. (67) Then said Jesus unto the twelve,*

Will ye also go away? (68) Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life. (69) And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.

We are following that same Christ today. He's the Head of this Church. I didn't assume any rule of leadership. It was put on me. God put it there. I wanted to be humble. I didn't want to rule.

Just outside of Eugene, Oregon there were two brothers that had come into the Church; and there was a third brother, and he wasn't sure. So they had a man, a minister of the Church of Christ, come down who wanted to argue about the Sabbath. So I let him say his say first, and then I was going to answer. When I started to answer, he just shouted. And I don't know. He wasn't even making any sense of words. I couldn't get a word that anybody could hear. Finally, I said, "Well, let's have a moderator and give you so much time, and then me so much. I'll keep still while you have your time. You keep still when I have mine." He agreed, but he didn't do it. I gave him his time. I kept silent.

As soon as I began to speak, he said, "Oh, oh, oh..." Just a lot of things like that, where he couldn't hear a word. I said, "The Spirit of God isn't here." I got up and left. And the brother of these other two men turned against the Sabbath; and they were pretty bitter against me. They said, "Look, if God has called you, you've got to stand up for the truth. You've got to stand up against someone like that." Well, I said, "I just wanted peace." "Yeah, but there is a time you can't run like that." After that, if it had been repeated, I would have SHOUTED louder than he did; and God would give me a voice to do it! And I'd say, "**YOU SIT DOWN, BY THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHRIST!**" and he would have sat down.

Afterwards they came (tried to heckle; and this, and that, and the other thing), but it turned against them every time. There are times you have to

rule. I've ruled people that don't want peace. Well, if I've had to, I've done it. I didn't want to. Always there are those, just like there were in the days of Moses though, that like to point a finger and question and say, "God didn't choose you." Well, pray tell me, what people did then? People didn't. They just didn't.

Well, Jesus asked His disciples if they were going to leave Him. And Peter answered, "Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of truth."

Purpose Of Our Calling

This is the Church that is doing the mission God wants done today, and nobody else is doing it. If you realize that God has given us two purposes for calling us now: One is that we get His message to the world, and the other is that that very thing that He's given us to get out is the means of the second great thing, which is that we develop the character and show we can be ruled by His Kingdom. And we develop the character that we will sit with Him on His throne and rule in His Kingdom.

GOD'S WHOLE PURPOSE IS TO RESTORE THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD ON THIS EARTH! THAT'S WHY HUMANITY IS HERE! But God has adopted a hand's off policy for 6,000 years because humanity rejected God! The first two people rejected God. So He said, "You live your way for 6,000 years"—which means Satan's way, because Satan is influencing them and swaying them.

Where would you go? Who else is getting the job done? Nobody else on this Earth! Someone has to be **preparing the way for the Second Coming of Christ**. Brethren, it's being prepared. One little insignificant thing, perhaps—it's just a physical thing; but, for the last six years, we've been clearing off over 50 feet of debris and stuff on top of the throne of David, where Christ is going to sit to rule. That's just one little thing. That's not the main thing. The

main thing is announcing that the Kingdom of God is coming, as a witness before other nations; and it is being done. And God is giving me favor in the eyes of heads of governments all over this world. Nothing like that ever happened before, to me or anyone else that I know of.

Now finally: II Thessalonians the first chapter, beginning with the second verse. I want to say this to you, even as Paul said it to those of Thessalonica.

***II Thessalonians 1:2-4** Grace unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. (3) We are bound to thank God always for you [As I am, to thank God for you.], brethren, as it is meet [fit, or proper], because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all toward each other abounds. (4) So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure.*

Now I think I can say I am speaking for all of the ministers, all of the loyal ministers in the Church of God, when I say that. That's the way we feel towards you people. We can't do the job God has given us to do without your backing, your help, your support, and knowing we have your prayers. That's more important than anything.

***II Thessalonians 2:5** Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that **you** may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which you also suffer.*

We are announcing the Kingdom of God all over this world. God is opening the doors. It is **a miracle!** Nothing like it has ever happened before. And, brethren, we have to continue going.

Now, it's time the fence sitters make up their mind. And as Elijah said, if the Eternal is your God—the Eternal Creator, let's get over on His side and

get well anchored and stay there, and endure until the end. If Satan, and trouble, accusations... They say questions: “Ah, but the people have questions.” What they mean is “I’m trying to put doubts into their mind.”
EVE DOUBTED. IT WAS DOUBT. SHE DOUBTED GOD. So she went the wrong way. Brethren, let’s get these doubts out of our mind. Let’s **get settled**. Let’s **get anchored**. Let’s know where we stand, and then let’s **stand**—because I’m going to stand there till either I die or the Kingdom comes. And I want you there with me.

[**Bleep at 1:32:24, and tape starts again back at 1:24:00.]

Transcriber’s note: At the end of Mr. Armstrong’s sermon here, the audio file goes back and repeats almost the whole end of the sermon again from 1:24:00 (where he starts reading verse 67 of John 6).

Editor's Notes

{1} - When Mr. Armstrong recounted this incident in Volume 1 of his Autobiography (page 438, 1973 edition), he said, “...because you people have been transgressing His holy Sabbath! DON’T YOU PROFANE WHAT IS HOLY TO GOD ANY MORE! And now I propose to preach to you Christ CRUCIFIED tonight—and WHY He was crucified!”

{2} - Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said the wrong book of the Bible. The original said: “as Paul wrote in the 7th chapter of I Corinthians.”

Apostasy

Sermon (January 31, 1976)

by Herbert W Armstrong

Table of Contents

Apostasy.....	40	God's 7,000-Year Plan	57
Shall Be Saved	41	Those Called By God	58
New Testament Prophecies	43	The Gospel Of Christ	60
God's Instruction Rejected	48	Preparing The Way	62
Law Of Love	49	Great Apostasy	63
God's Great Purpose	51	Announcing The Coming Peace	65
Effects Of The Angels' Sin	52	Believing A Lie	66
Qualifying To Rule	54	Warning For Us	68
Choosing Satan's Way	55	Faith And Good Doctrine	70

Greetings once again, everybody. Well, last Sabbath I had a big audience; and I would say it was bigger than our audience today comparatively for the place where it was held, because it was held in Nassau (one of the islands just a little ways east of Florida). We are not on the air there. I think we have not been on the air there, and yet these people: We have, I think, a few hundred Plain Truth subscribers there; and they've heard us from radio stations coming in from other islands or perhaps from Miami; and I think most of them were members. There were 150 there, and really that was quite a large attendance considering.

Now I'm expecting to return to Nassau for a campaign – a three-night campaign, let me see, two weeks from tomorrow. I'll be there for another week of interviews, perhaps some dinners of important people, perhaps another radio interview. They don't have television there, so it won't be on television. There just isn't any.

I'm leaving tomorrow morning for Paris. I leave ... Well, I'll arrive there early the next morning because, when we leave here, it's already

(remember) nine hours later there. So when we leave here early in the morning, it's almost evening there when we leave. I'll be there overnight, and then on to Israel where we have the long, long awaited and anticipated testimonial dinner coming up that same night of the day that I arrive. I'll be there a couple of other days, and then on to Cairo.

My son, Garner Ted, has just been in Cairo. Perhaps you heard a broadcast from there this week. But I'm having another testimonial dinner there, and this will be the fourth one. Each time we have a different group in attendance among the more prominent people in higher offices in government, and more important people in industry and commerce, and education, and the leading people of that country – Egypt.

Then, from there, back to London; and I hope, two weeks from today, to be in Bricket Wood. I see my son, Garner Ted, was there either last Sabbath or the Sabbath before I guess. I think Dr. Hoeh is there now, and all reports that I have from there are that things seem to be reasonably solid under all of the circumstances.

Shall Be Saved

I'm glad that, in the sermonette this morning, the 13th verse was mentioned in Matthew 24, as well as the 14th. Now the 14th refers to what we are doing. That's about us, and I wonder if God didn't put the 13th verse in there ahead of it just so that it would attract our attention.

It reminds me of something that happened when I was speaking out at the little school house eight miles west of Eugene, Oregon – in the series, or the campaign, that raised up the parent Church of this Era of the Church of God. We had a heckler there. He came quite often. In fact, there were more than one; but there was one in particular who was a repeater, and he came a number of times. One of the questions he heckled me with, he said, "May I

ask you a question?” His name was Belshaw; and I said, “Yes, Mr. Belshaw, you may.” He said, “Have you been saved, Mr. Armstrong?” I said, “Mr. Belshaw, do you not know what Christ said as recorded in Matthew 24 verse 13? *“He that endureth unto the end, the same shall be saved.”* And he looked rather foolish, because he was expecting to quote that to me if I said I was already saved. Of course, I knew that, and that’s something that we should remember.

That same man came frequently. He didn’t attend every night at all. I was holding these services, at that time, six nights a week; and I think it lasted about six weeks, or perhaps as many as eight weeks. Anyway, finally, after the meetings were over and the Church had been formed ... We were, at that time, meeting out at another school (a country, one-room school house) four miles farther out. He came and attended one time, and he kept still until the service was dismissed. People were starting to leave when he piped up his voice and said, “Mr. Armstrong, may I ask you a question?” Those who were at the door, ready to go out, all came back. This was getting interesting, and it had happened a number of times.

He said, “Mr. Armstrong, have I not heard you say that the apostle Paul did not shun to declare unto the Gentiles the entire gospel?” “Yes, I perhaps have said that. The Bible says it.” “Have you not said the apostle Paul held back nothing that was profitable for them?” “Yes, I probably have.” “All right now, Mr. Armstrong, can you show me where the apostle Paul taught them – the Gentiles – that they must keep the Sabbath?” Oh, he thought he had me now!

I said, “Yes, sir, Mr. Belshaw. I can. But before I give you that answer, when I give it and show you that the apostle Paul told the Gentiles to keep the Sabbath, will you finally surrender and keep it yourself?” He hesitated a minute or two. He was very troubled. He said, “No, I won’t.” and he walked out. So I told the rest I would give them the answer anyway, since he walked

out.

He told the Gentiles “*Be ye followers of me as I follow Christ.*” Christ kept the Sabbath, as His custom was. The apostle Paul kept the Sabbath as his manner was. He told the Gentiles to follow his example. That was teaching them to keep it. Well, he didn’t wait for that answer.

New Testament Prophecies

Anyway, I want to say something this morning about this thing of enduring to the end, because there are a number of scriptures on that very subject; and salvation will not come unless you do remember that scripture and obey it. So this afternoon I want to get back to prophecy once again. Now not just prophecy of world events this time (usually, that’s what prophecy means to us) but this time events that have to do with God’s Church.

As in the prophecies of world events (and the Bible has many of those), there is virtually nothing that was prophesied to occur between the First Century (the time of the apostles and Christ) until now – except what we find in the 2nd chapter of Revelation, to the Churches that are mentioned there. Let me see, four of them.

Now, Revelation 2 and the 3rd chapter of Revelation are dealing with the seven Churches. Let’s get one thing straight, and this is something I’ve been saying for the last 42 years; and many do not realize I’ve been saying it. They are speaking of seven successive Churches or seven successive **eras** of the one Church. But, at the same time, they are speaking of the seven **dominant conditions** that would be found in the Church of every era. So the things that you find in the Church at Ephesus really do apply to us now, the same as they did to them then. The difference is that what is mentioned in the Philadelphia Era dominates at this time, and what is mentioned in the

message to the Church of Ephesus dominated back in the beginning of the Church.

Then, besides that, in Matthew 24 for example (and, of course, Mark 13 and Luke 21 are just, you might say, a different reporter's account of the same prophecy of Jesus). It speaks there of, well, of the apostasy – of false ministers deceiving the people. In other words, of the fact that they would come with another gospel; and that the gospel that Jesus Christ brought – His message – would not be preached. It would be sabotaged. And then of famine and pestilence, of wars; and there have been continuing wars all through. Now most of those things they were having then, and we have had them continuously – apparently with a great sudden upswing now at the time of the end, which is occurring.

Then, the next thing to happen (the one thing that Jesus said would be the sign that we are at the end and prior to His Second Coming) would be what we read in verse 14 – that *“this gospel OF THE KINGDOM shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end [of this age] come [after that has happened].”*

That is referred to, in the Bible, as *“the day of the Lord”* in over 30 different prophecies. In other words, we have been in (you might call it) “the day of man.” Or perhaps you could just as accurately call it “the day of Satan” because it is the day of man cut off from God primarily, but swayed by Satan (who is the god of this world). Some people, I think, tell you what “God” wants done; and the only thing is that they have the wrong god. They mean Satan.

Then after this ... and, you see, the getting of this message out to the world has already taken 42 years. So it isn't something that just happens in one day. It's a continuous thing for quite a while. It takes a long time to get this job done. The next thing that is foretold there is the Great Tribulation.

Then comes what really is “the day of the Lord,” and that is the time when God supernaturally intervenes in this world’s affairs.

In other words, God (so to speak) just adopted a hands-off policy; and told humanity “Go ahead. Form your own governments. Decide for yourself what is right and what is wrong.” When Adam and Eve ... when mother Eve took and Adam took it with her, of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, they **took to themselves** the knowledge (or the production of the knowledge) of what is right and what is wrong, what is good and what is evil.

Now the law of God determines that, and God had just been teaching them about that. I know that He did, even though it isn’t recorded, for the simple reason that for the violation of that law He pronounced the death sentence upon them. And He could not have done that if He had not explained to them THE LAW whose penalty He was telling them would happen to them on violation. I know that God taught Adam and Eve a great many things that are not recorded at all, because in the first 11 chapters of the Bible it just skips over and gives us the barest outline, hitting only the high spots.

We don’t get down to specific details, or history, or anything of that kind until we come to the 12th chapter of Genesis and it begins about Abraham. Then, when we get down to the life of Abraham, and Isaac and Jacob and Joseph, and then later the children of Israel descended from them (and from Abraham), then we get into more detail in the history of the Old Testament scriptures.

God’s Church Now

But the thing that is prophesied for now is precisely what God has raised this Church up to do, and that is the reason He called you! Also now, let’s come to a prophecy in the 12th chapter of the book of Revelation; and beginning now with verse 7. Speaking here it has carried the time of the old

apostasy, the beginning of the Church, a flight of the Church (so to speak) underground, which it did through the Middle Ages – 1260 years. Then we come to verse 7, and this gets down to our time:

Revelation 12:7 And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels.

Now that's speaking of the angels which sinned, as you will read of in II Peter. Let's see, that's the 2nd or 3rd chapter of II Peter.

Revelation 12:7-9 ... and the dragon fought and his angels, (8) and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. (9) And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan.

You don't have to worry about who the dragon is; and don't try to make up something in your imagination that the dragon is a symbol for something else, because it tells us very plainly here:

Revelation 12:9 ... the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and [also called] Satan, which **deceiveth the whole world**.

Now when the Bible says the whole world, it means the whole world! That is, the world as a whole.

Revelation 12:9-10 He was cast out into the earth, and his angels [who are now demons] were cast out with him. (10) And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God ...

That only comes with the Second Coming of Christ. So this is just preceding that. Now Jesus said in Matt 24, and they asked Him for a sign about His coming and so that they would know that we are getting near to that time – it was a time when this gospel of the Kingdom would be preached, because it hadn't been for 18 1/2 centuries.

Revelation 12:10-12 ... *for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, [Don't accuse any of God's brethren. That is something Satan is doing. You'll be doing Satan's job for him, if you do that.] which accused them before our God day and night. (11) And they over came him by the blood of the Lamb [which is Christ], and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. [They were willing to risk their lives for the truth, which was more precious to them than even this mortal life.] (12) Therefore rejoice ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having GREAT WRATH [He is very angry right now.] because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.*

Now how does he know that? He knows that because he knows what this Church is doing. He knows what I am doing, and what Garner Ted is doing, and what this Church is backing us in doing – getting the gospel of the Kingdom, which he has kept from the world; but now getting that announced all over the world, and that it is coming. Its time is very near.

Revelation 12:13-14 *And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. [In other words, that was Israel. But the Israel of now in the New Testament time is the Church of God; a spiritual Israel, so to speak.] (14) And to the woman [Now meaning the Church.] were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time [Now this time that will be a mere 3 1/2 years, not a day for a year as it was through the Middle Ages when the Church of that time did flee for 1260 years.] from the face of the serpent.*

So this Church (and you'll read of this in the 3rd chapter of Revelation, where it speaks of this era of the Church specifically) – IF we endure to the end, IF we are faithful, IF we are back of this job that God wants done – we are going to be taken; and it says here “fly.” Now, in the Middle Ages, speaking of the Church going to a place of safety, they fled. That implies they

went afoot. Now whether it means anything or not, it does say “fly” this time. And there is the promise that, if we are faithful in getting this message to the world as a witness for all nations, that we will not have to go through this terrible Great Tribulation.

God’s Instruction Rejected

Now I want you to remember always that after Adam had rejected the Kingdom of God ... When he was first created, God told him about His own government – God’s government. He told him about the Kingdom of God. He explained to him he could be **born of God**, that the Kingdom of God is a Family; that God is a Family. God IS that Family, not just one person. The Father in heaven, whom Jesus prayed to and told us to pray to, is the Father of that Family. He called Christ His beloved Son. Christ called Him His Father. We are to pray to Him and call Him our Father, but we pray in the name and by the authority of Jesus Christ.

When Adam rejected the Kingdom of God, which he had a chance to rule because right there was also the Tree of Life. That tree was the symbol of the Spirit of God. If he had obeyed God (and he didn’t have to repent at that time, because he hadn’t done anything wrong yet: This was while God was still speaking to him, and before Satan encountered him.) he could have received the Spirit of the Living God, which would have impregnated him with immortal Life, and as a son of the Living God. But he didn’t.

Now, if we are going to rule in the place of Satan, we have to meet him. We have to reject his way of life. We are meeting him; and he is getting to us, and he is getting to us every day.

God made man with a physical brain. But in order that we could have a mind like God (although inferior, of course, at this time), He put within each of us a spirit – that spirit essence, not a spirit person or being at all. But that

spirit in man does impart to the physical brain the power of intellect that no animal has. Animals have brains PRECISELY like the human brain. Three of them have larger brains – the elephant and the ... Well, I don't know whether the shark does. But the elephant, and the dolphin, and the whale – and their brains, in quality, are right on the par with man. If man's brain is 100%, theirs are up in probably the late 90s. But the superiority of the human brain is thousands of times, not just 1 or 2% out of a hundred. The only way you can possibly account for it, even scientifically, is to accept the truth that there is in the human brain **a non-physical component** that is not present in the animal brain.

Now let's just remember that Adam had to meet Satan, because this earth had been originally populated by angels. God had put here a super archangel, a cherub whose name was Lucifer. He was the absolute maximum of a type of being that God could create. It's impossible to create anyone higher. However, just by creation – and giving him a mind, giving him the power to think, to reason; equipping him with very great knowledge, and letting him use that knowledge in thinking, and reasoning, and in drawing his own conclusions, in making his own decisions, in making his own choices. He couldn't have had personality, he couldn't have been a real being, without that; and so God did equip him with all of that.

Law Of Love

Now God also created two other super archangels, and apparently they have never misused their thinking processes; but this Lucifer did, and he took all of his angels with him. He convinced them also to rebel against the government of God.

Now the government of God is based on the law of God. All government is based on law. You don't know of any government (from the

smallest village up to the largest nation) that is not based on A LAW, a basic law. God's law is just L-O-V-E, the word "love." God Himself is said to be LOVE, and love is an outgoing concern for the good of others.

This Lucifer didn't like that way of life because it also meant humility, and it meant the giving way (instead of the getting and the taking way). It meant submission to God, who is over all as our Creator. He is also our Ruler. But He rules with His government, and His government is based on this law of love. God has love for us, but we are to have love for Him and for neighbor.

That law, as applied to human beings, is love first to God and secondly (the second great law) "*Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.*" The first four of the Ten Commandments tell us how to love God in general principle, and the last six in general principle tell us how to love our neighbor.

Then Christ came and magnified the law He said, for example, you have heard that "*Ye shall not commit adultery;*" but He said, if a man even looks on a woman to lust after her, he has committed adultery already in his heart. In other words, by the spirit; applying the **principle** and the **spirit** of the law, it goes much further than just the mere letter.

So God's law and government had been removed from the earth because Lucifer and his angels all went into rebellion; and (instead of God's law of love and cooperation, of serving, of helping, of sharing) they adopted the way of vanity, exalting the self above God (and not God above the self), the way of lust and greed, the way of opposition, of competition and strife, the way of jealousy and envy, the way of resentment and bitterness, and essentially wanting to get even and to hurt the other fellow. That is the way that was adopted by Satan and his angels (that are now demons), because the former Lucifer had his name changed. He was no longer a bringer of light and truth as he had been, and that is the meaning of the word Lucifer. Now he

is Satan, which means adversary, or enemy, or competitor; and that's what he is now.

God's Great Purpose

God had put the angels here for a very great purpose; but they had to do something to this earth first, and qualify. Then they would have been used in developing other planets all over the vast endless universe. But they didn't even develop this country. They wrecked it and ruined it. They perverted everything they could get to.

Angels are spirit beings. The earth is made of matter. And God put those spirit beings on a round earth of matter. They shouted with joy when God first created it. It was so beautiful! It was so perfect! It was such a wonderful opportunity! But they wanted to do what God was going to let them do. They wanted that all right. But they didn't want to do it God's way. They didn't want to do it in a way of love, and obedience to God, a lawful way of peace. As long as God's government ruled over them, with Lucifer on the throne of this earth, there was peace on earth. Wonderful peace! There was joy and happiness, shouting for joy (as you read in Job).

But they turned and tried to get it the other way. Instead, they perverted this earth. (And you'll find that described in the 2nd chapter of Genesis. The 1st chapter of Genesis and the 2nd verse I mean.) The earth was in a state of confusion; and it was waste and empty, and covered with darkness, with a watery fluid surface.

Now, in the 104th Psalm, you will read how God sends forth His Spirit; and then He renews the face of the earth; (104th Psalm, verse 30.) And in the second chapter of Genesis – I've read that so many times I'm not going back over it because I don't want to be here until midnight. And so in the 2nd verse of the 1st chapter of Genesis it shows the state of the earth. Darkness was over the deep, or the watery ocean surface. Then:

Genesis 1:3 God said ...

Now, the One who spoke was the One who later became Christ. You read in John 1 and verse 1, in the New Testament:

John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

John 1:3 [And] All things were made by him: and without him was not any thing made that was made.

That is the One who became Christ. Originally, so far as God has revealed, there were only the Two in the Family of God. Later the One who was the Word became a human being; and God became His Father, because They have no human father. So He was a Son of God; but He also was a Son of man, born of the virgin Mary.

And so God saw what had happened to the earth. God knew that there was only one being, or type of being, on the earth that would never violate His law. In other words, would never sin. Sin is the transgression of that WAY. That law is **a way of life**. It's the way of love. It's the way of sharing, of serving, of helping. It's the way of humility. It's not like manmade laws. Manmade laws are not a way of life of character development. God's law is.

Effects Of The Angels' Sin

Anyway, they had perverted themselves in their minds. They had now disqualified themselves. God wanted the entire universe developed. As a result of what they did, the planets all over the universe [{1}](#) became like our moon. It's waste and empty. It's just a hulk of nothing. There could be no life there.

Life cannot exist there except for a very temporary time, like some of

our astronauts did; but they had to take with them oxygen from the earth. If they had taken off the suit that they were wearing, they would either be burned to a crisp or they would have frozen instantly, whichever. I understand that at night it is so cold on the moon that it would freeze you instantly. In the daytime, it's so hot it would burn you to a crisp. They had to wear spacesuits that kept all those temperatures off, and they had their own oxygen inside to breathe. They had to take what it takes to sustain human life; they had to take it from this earth.

You might wonder, why did they want to go up there for? You know, I've received many letters of congratulation for making the first step on the moon, because the man who did had my name; but he was a different Armstrong. His name is Neil, and mine isn't.

Now that Satan had been disqualified to carry on the government of God, which he had rejected – and the government of God had been taken from the earth – anyone who was going to succeed him had to meet him, and **reject** his way, and **accept** God's way and God's government.

Adam had that chance. He was the first Adam. He didn't do it. The second Adam, who was Christ, did! Now I want to just go way ahead of myself for a moment, and go back here to the 2nd chapter of Revelation [{2}](#) (and I'm jumping way ahead now.) and beginning with verse 26 and verse 27, where Jesus Himself said:

***Revelation 2:26-27** And he that overcometh [What do we have to overcome? Satan, and your own self, and what he puts inside of you.] and keepeth my works **unto the end** [there it is, enduring unto the end again.] to him will I give power over the nations: (27) And he shall rule them with a rod of iron.*

Qualifying To Rule

Christ had to QUALIFY to become the King in the place of king Lucifer. If we are going to sit with Him on His throne, **we too have to qualify!** Do you ever wonder why it is God is only calling a very few now? I've told you that again, and again, and again; and I know, if I ask you, you'll say "Sure, I know it." And yet you take it for granted God is trying to convert everybody on earth now don't you? Without thinking you do. You know better. I'm trying to get all of you to really realize it so much that you never assume anything else.

But so much of Protestantism has rubbed off on us that we think a good deal like Protestants do. "This is the time God is desperately trying to get everybody saved, and the devil is trying to get them lost." Now you know, if you think a minute, that can't be true! Otherwise, Satan is more powerful than God. He's winning that battle. But there isn't any such contest going on at all! This is not a time God is trying to save the world. The parable, just read to you in the sermonette, shows you that the overwhelming majority never receives the Word; and, if they do, it chokes them immediately and they never go on.

It's a very few, and it's only those that God calls. If you have been called and converted, that's a miracle! And Jesus Christ said none could come to Him except the Father has drawn them. Other scriptures will show you that, if He has, you have been **predestinated** since before the foundation of the world. God knew that you would be born, and had you selected and picked out; but He **CALLED US TO GET A JOB DONE!** More about that a little later, and I've already said it so many times that I hope maybe I'll get everybody to understand it and believe it some of these days.

Anyway, let's see. Revelation 3:21 here:

Revelation 3:21 *To him that overcometh [And, again, it's overcoming Satan and his way; and accepting the way of God, and the law of God, and the government of God.] will I grant to sit with me on my throne.*

Jesus had to **qualify!** He had to reject the way of Satan. He had to prove He would KEEP the way of God, and if He was going to rule with that law and reestablish the government of God on this earth. That is what will bring PEACE to this earth! And we'll never have peace until human nature is changed. You weren't born with human nature. God didn't create Adam [{3}](#) with human nature.

He created an archangel, Lucifer; but He didn't put any bad nature in him. He just gave him a mind. He gave him a lot of facts, a lot of knowledge; and he misused what God gave him. He had a wonderful opportunity. He was told where he could go if he did the right thing, and he was told what would happen if he went the wrong way; but he didn't believe God.

And when God talked to Adam and Eve, they did NOT BELIEVE **what God said!** You not only have to believe on Christ, and believe that Jesus was the promised Messiah. That isn't enough. You have to **believe WHAT HE SAID!** He's the Word of God. It's His Word that is important. You know, there are millions that believe that Jesus was the Messiah today. And the Bible says even the devils, the demons, believe; but they tremble. They believe, but they don't obey. They believe that He, that Christ, is the Messiah; but they don't obey Him. They don't accept His Word.

You know, we need to get these things straight because it's very, very important; and your eternity is hanging on it. We are called for a job, and to get a job done. Now, Christ did qualify.

Choosing Satan's Way

But when Adam and Eve rejected God and God's law, and went Satan's way and chose THAT WAY – they cut themselves off from God. So God said, “All right. You cut yourself off from Me, I'm going to just simply let you go the way you have chosen, and it's the way Satan was leading. You will see, in human life, that going this way – of vanity and lust and greed, of jealousy and envy, of competition and strife, of resentment and bitterness and hatred and murder and violence – that you are only going to bring **suffering** on humanity. You'll never have peace, because of the way you live.”

I talk to the heads of governments all over this world. I don't use Bible language. I talk to them about their troubles and why. Why do they have the troubles they do? Because that's the way human beings are living. They are on the “get” way and not the “give” way. I put it in that kind of language, and they get it the message. They understand it, and they agree. I guess they think everybody else is on the “get” way and they are on the “give” way. Of course, that's not quite true. Everybody's thinking, no, it's the other guy who's going the wrong way. I guess that's human nature too. Maybe that came from Satan.

Anyhow, Satan is “*the prince of the power of the air;*” and he's broadcasting through that spirit that is in every one of us. He broadcasts not in words, not in sounds, but only in attitudes, impulses; feelings. You just suddenly feel a certain way, and you have a certain attitude and you begin to resent what someone did to you.

Many have sat right where you're sitting, or maybe over in the gymnasium or other places. They've heard this; even ministers. Yet they let bitterness and resentment come in and hook them on it; and they'll never get unhooked, because they don't want to. They won't repent. God would let them. God would easily grant them repentance, but they don't want it. You'll read that in Hebrews.

Once you have tasted of the truth of God, and of the Holy Spirit of God, and you have had these wonderful things – and it's **A MIRACLE** if you've had the Holy Spirit; and once that miracle has happened, and that **great GIFT** has been given to you, and you **TURN** away from it, and you **TURN** to another belief, it's impossible to ever get you to repent and change your mind because you won't. And God's not going to make you, if you refuse. That's happened to even some ministers in this Church. I'm coming to that.

God's 7,000-Year Plan

Anyway, God adopted a hands-off policy for 6,000 years. God has a purpose He's performing on this earth. The reason He put human beings here was because, when angels went wrong, he could not create any other angels greater; and He **CANNOT** create instantaneously by fiat this thing of **character!** That is something that has to be developed. God had it. The angels under Lucifer did not, and they went the wrong way.

The only way that God could provide enough beings to do what He wants done in the whole universe was **to reproduce Himself**. It had to be done out of matter, which can be subject to **CHANGE** because spirit will not change. We have to develop that character while we are composed of matter. Once we do, we die to be **resurrected spirit beings**; and it's all through the spirit that's within us.

Not many understand any of the things I am telling you. No other church on the face of the earth understands it. It's the Word of this Book – the Bible. They don't understand the Bible. They don't believe it. It's what God says, and they don't believe what God says!

You know I was stunned, back here 49 years ago, when I read in Romans 6 and verse 23 I believe it is: "*The wages of sin is DEATH.*" You know I'd always been taught that I was an immortal soul, and that the penalty

I'd get paid for sin ... And sin was going to the Matinee on Sunday, or going to a theatre at any time for that matter. So we kids, when we were about 12 or 13 years old, we had to sneak out and go to the Matinee on Sunday when our parents didn't know it, because the church said that was sin. Well, we wanted to sin!

I don't suppose any of you were like that? Maybe you're not human, but I can tell you I've been human. I have sinned, and sometimes I've thought I was the greatest of sinners. But I don't want to sin. Sometimes it's hard to go the other way. And I know that not only women can suffer birth pains; but men can – now, believe it or not. It wasn't for the birth of another human being; but I have suffered birth pangs that this campus could be here, and that you could be here right now enjoying it. You didn't have to suffer that. I did it for you.

I had to suffer birth pangs that I could come into the truth and be able to give to you what you can get no other place on this earth. You'd better hang on to it! It's very precious, believe me. What God has in store for us is beyond the greatest imagination of your mind; and He wants to give it to us, but we've got our part. You don't earn it. You never could.

Anyway, God adopted a 7,000-year plan. The first 6,000 years He's keeping hands-off of the world primarily, and He's letting men go their own way, accepting the way of Satan, to show the results by human experience of 6,000 years. The experience has been going on, the lesson has been written; but nobody believes it, and nobody seems to understand it. That is, virtually nobody.

Those Called By God

And about the first 2,000 years from Adam, God was not calling humanity for salvation. We find that Abel was called "*righteous Abel.*" So he

must have had God's Spirit. Enoch walked with God. We don't know any of the details of the circumstances of it. Noah was the only one found righteous on earth; but because of Noah, his family was saved with him, a total of eight people. God wasn't calling anybody else.

Then we don't find anybody being called of God for eternal Life until we come to Abraham; and then Isaac, and Jacob, and Joseph. Four hundred and thirty years after Abraham, his descendants were slaves in Egypt. God called them and offered them the opportunity to have His government as a nation. The only promises He gave, and what it would get them, were **national and material promises** – great wealth, peace, the greatest nation. They'd be the head and not the tail of all the nations on earth. But there was no (what-we-call) "salvation" – spiritual salvation. Eternal Life was NOT offered.

Only the prophets and they were given God's Holy Spirit to get a job done. Not just that they could have it and sit back, and say, "Well, I'm saved." They weren't saved! They aren't yet. Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob will be; but they are not yet. Not until the time of the resurrection. You read that in the 11th chapter of Hebrews.

But we come down to the time of Christ; and look at the millions, and billions, of people that had lived. God wasn't calling anyone to try to get them saved. God isn't trying to get humanity saved now, and hasn't been, and never has **as yet**. But He's got a program going. He has a purpose. We are here for a purpose – that we be made the children of God, and that we develop the character of God – because then there's a great job for us to do; and we are called to get a job done.

Right now what we are called for is to get this message of the coming Kingdom of God out to the world – not to convert them, not to get them to believe it (which they won't), but that they'll know they have heard it; and,

when it happens, they'll know **THEY'VE BEEN TOLD** (even though they didn't believe it). That's why **YOU** have been called, brethren! I hope I can get you to really see that and completely understand it.

The Gospel Of Christ

Now from Abraham to Christ, only the prophets (as I said); and from that time on, Christ came with a message – a gospel. He wanted the message to get out. The early apostles did get it out, but notice here in Galatians. I've read this so many times before. Here you get it once again, where Paul wrote to the Church at Galatia. He said:

***Galatians 1:6-7** I marvel that ye are so soon **removed** from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel [That was even read here last night.]: (7) Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.*

There were enemies trying to have what they call “this new teaching” even then, trying to get them away. Satan is active. He has his ministers. You read of it in II Corinthians 11. It's no great thing if his ministers appear as the ministers of righteousness and claim to be the ministers of Jesus Christ. But he [Paul] pronounces a double curse on man or angel that would preach any other gospel than the one he had preached, which was the gospel – or good news – of the Kingdom of God.

The Kingdom of God is the Family of God, into which we may be born. The Kingdom of God is the GOVERNMENT of God, and it's the Family who is doing the governing of God's government; and God's government is based on God's law. The only reason humanity is here is to, once again, get the government of God and the law of God established on this earth.

And yet even ministers will go out of this Church, who have been

taught it, and say “The law is not in effect for us at all any more, and you can work on the Sabbath all you please and go right in to God’s Kingdom.” Oh, no, you can’t! I wouldn’t give you a plugged nickel for your chances, because I speak the Word of God; and I speak it WITH AUTHORITY, and you know I do. I don’t say “maybe.” I don’t say “This is my opinion.” I have been called by the Living God to get a job done. I’m getting it done, and I need you to back me and to help me. I’m very thankful that you do, or I couldn’t keep going.

Now, I’m going to read a little bit more here, beginning with verse 10, because I can say this with the apostle Paul.

***Galatians 1:10-12** For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. (11) But I certify you brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. (12) For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.*

As Paul said, now beginning with verse 15:

***Galatians 1:15-17** But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother’s womb, and called me by his grace, (16) to reveal his Son in me [and His Son’s message; and His Son is the King of the Kingdom of God], that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood; (17) neither went I to ...*

... any Bible seminary, any denominational religious ministerial college; but I went to the Word of the Living Christ. Jesus Christ is the personal Word of God. The Bible is the written Word of God. As God in person taught the apostle Paul, so God through the **written** Word taught me. I had to come at one truth at a time (and it took years, believe me) that you might have it.

Preparing The Way

Now let's go back to Malachi and get this prophesy once again.

Malachi 3:1-2** Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant [That's Christ, the Messenger of the covenant. But another, human messenger, was to prepare the way before Him.], whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come [That's Christ.], saith the LORD of hosts. (2) **But ...

Now I want you to pay attention to the next verse. What kind of a coming of Christ is this really speaking about?

***Malachi 3:2-4** But who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap: (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the [Eternal] an offering in righteousness. (4) Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the [Eternal], as in the days of old.*

Did that happen at Christ's first coming, any of that? No, not at all!

Notice:

***Malachi 3:5-6** And I will come near to you to judgment; and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, and against false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in his wages, the widow, and the fatherless, and that turn aside the stranger from his right, and fear not me, saith the LORD of hosts. (6) For I am the LORD, I change not.*

That is talking about what Christ will do at His Second Coming. This shows two comings – a Second Coming of Christ, and a messenger to prepare the way! Now in Mark the 1st chapter, you find the beginning of the gospel

of Christ and about how Elijah prepared the way before Him. That was His First Coming. But this is talking primarily of THE SECOND COMING. Is anyone preparing the way?

Now, we know it is imminent; or this gospel of the Kingdom would not be going around to all of the world. The way is being prepared! Brethren, God called you for **your part** in getting that done. You say, “We’re behind you 100%, Mr. Armstrong.” Well, I’m certainly glad. If you’re not, the job isn’t going to get done. But I want you to realize what it means to be back of me 100%. If you are only back of me in your prayers (if there’s no money to help financially) you have no conception of how much **your prayers** can do! But you’ve got to be in earnest about it, and you’ve got to believe. Then it will be done.

Great Apostasy

What I read to you in Galatians, was about ... let’s see, I think it was about 68 A.D. The Church was founded in 31. The false church was started in 33, only started. Now I’m going to show you more about that, and the way is now being for the Second Coming. One way it’s being prepared is to announce about it: The coming of Christ and the government of God being restored to the earth, and the Kingdom of God.

As the gospel went out in the first century by the apostles, there was a great apostasy then; and, as it’s going out now, there has to be another one now. I want to go into those scriptures. I want you to notice now in II Thessalonians, the 2nd chapter and beginning with verse 11. No, no, that’s wrong somewhere. I mean ... Oh, no, beginning with verse 1, the second chapter.

II Thessalonians 2:1-2 Now, we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, (2) that ye

be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us ...

They were getting messages over in England that purported to come from headquarters. Now they came from Pasadena all right. So this is one of the deceptions that Satan would use. His men said over there, “Now this is the new teaching from Pasadena.” And the brethren thought it came from me, and my son (Garner Ted), and from us here at headquarters; and it’s just the opposite. I found over there, when we rushed over there as soon as we found what was going on, that here was some of my good friends; and they believed. Well, yes, they were just going right along. “Well, we thought that was your teaching, Mr. Armstrong.” And, as soon as they found it wasn’t, they were through with it. I don’t know yet if some are going to go that way and believe it, but most of them are not.

***II Thessalonians 2:2** ... as that the day of Christ is at hand.*

Now this is the second letter that Paul wrote to them. Let me see, I think I have some notes here, that this was written about 52 or 53 A.D. The “falling away” it speaks of here ...

***II Thessalonians 2:2-3** ... that the day of Christ is at hand. (3) Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come **a falling away** first...*

Now this “falling away” comes from the Greek word “apostasia,” in other words, apostasy and apostatizing: In other words, turning away from the truth to error and false teaching. It’s a dereliction of essential truth, or a corruption of truth and correct doctrine. That, it says here, had to come first.

Well, Paul had written a letter to them; and the second letter to the Thessalonians was written later that same year – within the same year, less than a year later than the first. Apparently a messenger had come from

Thessalonica and had told them that these brethren thought that others were spreading the gospel. They had what they called this “new teaching” that was come to the Church now, and they purported that it had come from the apostle Paul (So the people would believe it immediately, if it came from Paul.) and that the day of Christ was at hand, that it was just going to come right away. So he said:

***II Thessalonians 2:1-2** We beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, (2) that you be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter AS from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.*

Announcing The Coming Peace

Now I mentioned a while ago that we’ve been in “the day of man,” or you can call it “the day of Satan;” and that’s for this first 6,000 years. Then there’s going to be 1,000 years when God’s going to take over through Christ. Christ is coming again as King of kings and Lord of lords over all nations on the face of this earth. That’s when we’re going to have peace.

Now I’m an ambassador without portfolio for world peace, and I’m sort of recognized as such in capitols of the world. God has to have someone getting this message out. And peace is coming when Christ comes, and when Satan is put away, and when he can’t pump his kind of attitude into the minds of people through the spirit that is in them; and it won’t come any sooner.

Now I’m not trying to bring about peace. I’m only announcing WHAT GOD IS GOING TO DO. I go as an ambassador really – ambassador for Christ, with His message. And I’ve had to wait until I could learn to put it in the kind of language that people would understand, and not in Bible language. I simply say, “What I’m bringing you is something that no religion has ever revealed, something science has never been able to find out,

something that is not taught in the colleges and universities. It's the most important knowledge!" That makes it sound more respectable.

They've had enough of missionaries and that type of thing. If I go as a church man, they think I am a missionary or coming with a religion; and, what they know of as religion, they don't want any more of. They've got their own religion anyway.

Believing A Lie

Now, let's go on in this 2nd chapter of Thessalonians. Someone apparently had told them that it had come from Paul, and they were believing that. He said:

***II Thessalonians 2:3** ... except there come a falling away [or an apostasy from the truth] first, and that man of sin be revealed ...*

He was already there! And really the "man of sin" started out as (this man in the 8th chapter of the book of Acts) Simon the sorcerer. He founded the great false church. That church is still in the world today, and it is a great church. It has ruled over governments of Europe. You don't have to guess very far to guess what church that is.

***II Thessalonians 2:3-4** ... and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; (4) who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.*

"Most holy father," they call him. There can only be one who is the most holy Father, and that is God Himself.

***II Thessalonians 2:5-7** Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? [Paul's reminding them, but they were forgetting*

it.] (6) *And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time.* (7) *For the mystery of iniquity doth already work [even in Paul's time].*

This was probably about 52 or 53 A.D. They were already with a false gospel he said just a little later, when he wrote to the Galatians. That was going out then, and it's filled the world ever since.

II Thessalonians 2:8-11 *And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming [at the coming of Christ]: (9) Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, (10) and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. (11) And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.*

You come to believe a lie, and you'll depart from one truth of God; and pretty soon you depart from another, and another, and another. I said, when some of these apostated and went out of God's Church (and did it with a matter of duplicity, pretending they were with us) ... One got a leave of absence with full pay for a year, and used that money to try to destroy this Church and this Work. And he's getting out this so-called "new teaching" nullifying every important thing in the teaching of Jesus Christ. Now, if you want to follow that, there's the door back there. I won't try to keep you from it. But I'll tell you where you are going. It will be a lot worse than following the ox into the slaughter. A lot worse! And you'll leave all of the truth.

I Thessalonians 2:11-17 *God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie. (12) That they all might be damned who believe not the truth, but had PLEASURE in unrighteousness. (13) But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren [And I say that, with Paul, to you.] beloved of the Lord, because God hath chosen YOU to salvation*

through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth. (14) Where unto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ, (15) Therefore, brethren, STAND FAST, and HOLD the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle. (16) Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace, (17) comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

Warning For Us

Now we go next, a little farther here, to I Timothy 4. I Timothy the 4th chapter, and beginning again with verse 1:

I Timothy 4:1 Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith...

Here comes this apostasy again – going to false teaching, and some drawing some away after them. This is another evidence brethren, we are right down into the last time. The day of God and God’s interference in world affairs cannot come until this has happened. Now here some shall depart from the faith (In this case, this was written about 64 or 65 A.D.) and depart from the truth (The Greek word again is another form of the word “apostatize” or “apostasy”), bringing in doctrines that render the proof of the gospel null and void.

One that that church has always taught and I think many Protestants take it up, is that the Kingdom of God has been here all these years anyway and it is the church. Now some Protestants have come to a new wrinkle on that – that the Kingdom of God is some mysterious nothing set up in the hearts of men. They make it so meaningless it means absolutely nothing to you.

The Kingdom of God is the message that Christ brought. That is the message of the gospel!

I Timothy 4:1-2 ... giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; (2) speaking lies and hypocrisy.

Let me just say that these things, and these letters that Paul wrote to the Churches (and this to Timothy), were a message to them at that time all right. But also it applies to us today. Most of the Bible, I feel, was written and has been kept primarily **for us** of this time now. Most people in past ages never had a copy of the Bible. Printing wasn't established until just about, what, three or four hundred years ago. There couldn't have been any distribution. The Word of God had to be copied; and, through the Middle Ages, people would be burned at stake if they had a copy or if they tried to make a copy. They did everything they could to try to stamp the Bible out, and that was done by the religion – this false religion. But God didn't let it ever get stamped out.

I Timothy 4:2-5 Speaking lies and hypocrisy [That did happen back then, but it's happening again now; and, to a more or less extent, it's been happening all through this era.] speaking lies and hypocrisy, having their conscience seared with a hot iron; (3) forbidding to marry [I don't know that the people going out today are forbidding to marry, but certainly they did then. They forbid their ministers to marry. They forbid their nuns to marry.], and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving [Well, they have their meatless days; and you can't have any meat but fish on Friday; and they have certain days when you can't have meat and things of that sort.] ... (4) For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving. (5) For it is sanctified [which means set apart] by the word of God and prayer.

Now the Word of God sets apart the animals that are for meat, and the

vegetables, and so on, that we shall have for food; Leviticus 11. It's already set apart by the Word of God.

Faith And Good Doctrine

I Timothy 4:6-7 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of those things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and of good doctrine ... (7) But refuse profane and old wives' fables [and being blown about by every wind of doctrine that comes along.]

That's exactly what some are using to try to apostatize now. However, there are more new brethren being baptized and brought in than that kind of thing can take out. Now isn't that strange and wonderful? Oh, yes! Prophecy is being fulfilled.

In Revelation 3 it speaks of this Church, and the Work we are doing, and of the door open to get the gospel out. In the 11th and 12th verses it speaks of how, when the Great Tribulation comes (which will end our Work), we are not going to have to go through it **if** we are faithful. If you know how terrible that is you'll want to escape. I don't expect to have to go through it.

Let me see. Well, I said a while ago, the Bible is written primarily for us of this time because they didn't understand it before. Now [4](#) the apostatizing began while Jesus Himself was on earth, and I want to read that to you. John the 6th chapter and beginning with verse 66:

*John 6:66-71 From that time many of [Jesus'] disciples went back [Not the ones who became apostles, but others.], and walked no more with him. (67) Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away? (68) Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life. (69) And **we believe** [They believed what He said. Many others didn't.] and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living*

God. (70) Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? (71) He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

Even Jesus had a traitor of those He Himself had called! Now I just want to read one final scripture in II Thessalonians, again in the 1st chapter, beginning with verse 2. I want to say this, with Paul, to you brethren here.

***II Thessalonians 1:2-5** Grace unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. (3) We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren [Now this is the way I feel towards you, just as Paul did towards those at Thessalonica.], as it is meet [or fit, or proper], because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity [or love] of every one of you all toward each other aboundeth; (4) So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure: (5) which is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer.*

I just wanted to express how much I appreciate the fact you **are** loyal, you **are** back of this Work of Jesus Christ. You are back of me. I will be gone again for some very important meetings on this trip. From Bricket Wood [{5}](#) I leave two weeks from today. I hope that one the next day, Sunday, I will fly again to the Bahamas, Nassau. I'll be there for a week again of meetings and one thing and another. Then Friday, Saturday, and Sunday nights there will be the big campaign there; and I hope we'll have a big audience. After that, I'll come back and hope I can be with you a few days again. I don't know how long yet. We haven't got that planned. That's it for now.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Mr. Armstrong said, "the planets all over the earth." Undoubtedly, he meant to say "the planets all over the universe."

{2} - Mr. Armstrong said Genesis, but he read from Revelation.

{3} - Mr. Armstrong first said, “God didn’t create Satan...” But then he said, “I mean Adam...”

{4} - There was a false start at this point, where Mr. Armstrong first said, “Now the apostles.” But he immediately corrected himself and said, “I mean the apostatizing.”

{5} - Mr. Armstrong started by saying “From London;” but then he corrected himself, saying “Or from Bricket Wood ...”

Creation And The Gospel

Sermon (May 13, 1978)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Creation And The Gospel.....	73	God Instructs Man.....	87
God's Apostle.....	76	Rejecting God's Revelation.....	88
Mission Of Ambassador College.....	77	Choice And Consequences.....	90
God Created Angels.....	78	Population Explosion.....	91
Choosing Godly Character.....	79	God's Plan Revealed.....	94
Chaos And Confusion.....	80	The Work Today.....	100
After His Kind.....	82	The Gospel To The World.....	102
Believing God.....	85		

Well, greetings everybody once again this afternoon; and to all of you people up in Canada listening at Vancouver, British Columbia; and all of you over in Big Sandy, Texas. I didn't know you were listening last night, but I'm informed that you were. And I am so happy to be back once again on this platform, in front of this microphone, before all of you.

That song "Jerusalem" means something very special to me right at this moment because I am due to arrive in Jerusalem, I think it's the 30th of June. I'll be there until after the 4th of July. The city of Philadelphia has donated to the state of Jerusalem, or the nation of Israel I should say, an exact replica (an exact duplicate) of the Liberty Bell. And Mayor Teddy Kollek, the mayor of Jerusalem, came to me about oh, a year and a half or maybe almost two years ago. He wanted to build a big park in downtown Jerusalem. There was none. He felt one ought to be there; and he wanted to call it the Liberty Bell Park, and this big Liberty Bell is right at the entrance of the park.

I agreed to help with it and to take care of the construction of the children's playground right at the entrance. Now it is complete, and it is to be opened to the public and dedicated on July the 4th, America's Independence

Day. And it is an independence park and has very great significance to the United States. You might say that the United States has kept the nation of Israel alive.

You know there's been a great deal of debate in the last few days in Congress about sending arms to Israel, and Saudi Arabia, and to Egypt. But it seems like that's been settled finally by increasing the number of jet planes that the United States will send to Israel.

Anyhow, we hope for peace. We know there's not going to be too much for a while. Then is coming the great time of **peace** when Christ comes back to set up and to **restore** the government of God on this earth and set up the Kingdom of God. I hope to show you this afternoon the difference between the government of God and the Kingdom of God, because they are not synonymous.

Now just by way of a very, very brief announcement, I want to say that in the early days of my conversion, going back 50 years ago up in Oregon (and we were living in Portland, Oregon at the time) I was beginning to fellowship with the Church of God people up there. Now we find various eras of God's Church in the 2nd and 3rd chapters of Revelation, and that was what we call the Sardis Era. You read of it in the beginning of the first several verses of the 3rd chapter of the book of Revelation.

There was a mix-up in the Church. It was divided. And the man who had been the real leader of the Church, Andrew Dugger, had lost out by one vote. They were voting. They still had more Bible truth than any other church on earth; but they had lost a great deal of the original truth, which God has restored through me. And one of the things that was lost was on Church organization. Then Mr. Dugger left and, with another man, went to Salem, West Virginia and organized what he called the Bible form of organization of the Church.

Now we in Oregon knew that it was not the Bible form of organization at all. It was a true misapplication of some of the scriptures. The result is my mind was pretty much mixed up on just what is the form of executive organization in the Church. That is a thing that was hardest for me to understand, and it took **longer** for me to come to an understanding than anything else in the Bible. Now it is all clear.

I have made a mistake in the past because of that misunderstanding, although I have always known that God's form is government from the top down. Now this is too big a subject for me to go into in this one sermon, because I have something else that I think takes precedence and is so important I don't want to neglect it. But there will be an article in the Worldwide News thoroughly explaining that.

Now, let me just say that my recovery permits me to take the active position in the executive management of God's Work; and due to this, the announced changes in administration have been made. And now the Church is organized God's way, and it will have God's blessing. It will go forward. We expect to go forward now in radio broadcasting, getting back where we once were on the big radio stations coast to coast. It's very hard to get them to open up time; but we are doing everything we can. And that we will soon be daily, seven days a week, around the clock, on radio coast to coast. I know that's what the brethren all over the United States and Canada want. And of course, so far as other countries are concerned, we can't reach them with those same programs.

I'd like to read right at this point a verse that was my mother's favorite verse in all the Bible. It's the one 133rd Psalm, and verse 1.

***Psalm 133:1** Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for **brethren** to dwell together in unity!*

We are in real unity, and the Work will go forward as never before. I'm

sure I can promise you that on the authority of Jesus Christ.

God's Apostle

Now let me just say that God has put one apostle in His Church. I have never claimed to be that apostle – that is, I didn't originally – until I found that all of the Church recognized it anyway. And I would just simply point to 50 years of the fruits, and what has happened, and what God has done, and how He has used me in the last 50 years.

You know when John the Baptist sent some messengers to Jesus, when Jesus was on earth, to ask Him whether He was the promised Messiah, Jesus didn't say, "Yes." He didn't say, "No." He said, "You go tell John what you see being done. Tell him **the fruits** that you see, and he will know."

Well, no man made me an apostle; and men cannot **elect** an apostle. That would never have the approval of God in a million years. Christ Himself selected me, and laid on me the Great Commission of getting the **gospel of the Kingdom of God** (which is the **good news** of the coming government and kingdom of God) to all the world. Now that's why I've had to be away from here and in the capitals of the world for the last several years, a great deal; and again I will have to be.

Now I am planning to leave here on the 25th of June. I will be a few days in London, just in case I need a little resting up from that trip (because it is around, I don't know, an 11, 12, 13-hour flight). And then on the 30th of June we will fly on over to Jerusalem, and special plans are being made that our plane can land right at the Jerusalem Airport instead of the airport that is the only one that has been open in Israel at all, which is near Tel Aviv. And then you have a long full hour's automobile ride to Jerusalem. Well, I hope that we'll be able to land at the Jerusalem Airport, and they're trying to get special provision for that. I think that I will inaugurate the Liberty Bell Park with the inauguration prayer. And I will dine with the mayor, Teddy Kollek.

Incidentally, he's been here and spoken to the college students; and he's a very good friend of mine.

Now, let me just say that I was never called to get into the college business. God called me to get the message that He sent by Jesus Christ, which is the good news of the coming Kingdom of God. Since it is good news of what is going to happen, it amounts to an announcement. It is not a soul-saving mission to convince people that it's true, or get people to agree. It doesn't make any difference. Whether you agree or you disagree, it's going to happen – because God is going to do it! And, as my son Garner Ted has said many times on television and radio, God doesn't have to convince you or anybody. We're not going to do it. It's going to be done to us. But God is going to **FORCE this world to have peace** and to be **happy**, and tell people how to really enjoy life for the first time in 6,000 years. And that's going to happen soon, in our lifetime.

Mission Of Ambassador College

Now as I say, I was not called to get into the college business. But in the first years of my ministry, I held six-week evangelistic campaigns in many towns and villages up in Oregon. And always there were converts, and I would organize a small local church; but there was no minister. Now when the sheep have no shepherd, they do fall prey to the wolves or they run astray; and that's exactly what I saw happening. I saw that we **had** to have ministers in the churches. That I needed educated personnel to serve under me, and to help me in the many other facets of the administration of the Work of God.

And that's why Ambassador College was started. Then later God opened the college in England, and we were all of us that saw it and were at the top at the time, were convinced that God had shown us that He wanted a

college over there. And then even after that, about 1963 or '64, the college in Big Sandy, Texas. Now we had the three campuses. God blessed it, and we now have in the neighborhood of 700 ordained ministers around the world. We have an educated ministry. We have many people in top executive positions that are Ambassador College graduates. And, actually the mission of the college has been fulfilled.

So we've come to see that the operation of a full 4-year liberal arts college is not longer necessary to fulfill the Great Commission. That's what I've been called to do. That's what my life has been devoted to, and will continue to be devoted to. So the college has closed its undergraduate program, and will continue to operate **only** in schools for ministerial and biblical studies. In other words, we will no longer have courses for job or professional training.

All the colleges and universities of this world, they devote their time mainly to teaching people for the various professions, various jobs or positions. And this college has never had that, except partially. But to what extent we have, that will now be eliminated; and it will be, as I said, a school for ministerial and biblical studies. This school, by the way, is a fulfillment of the concept that I invented and that I had back in 1951. And just this morning a copy of The Plain Truth from that time was shown to me, where it is stated out. And I am glad that we are doing what God has shown us must be done. That will greatly reduce the expenses and allow funds to be spent for the radio broadcasting and for getting the gospel around the world, which is the thing that we will be committed to from now on.

God Created Angels

Now last night I told you that above all God is the Creator. But God also is perfect, holy, and righteous character. God first created angels and put them on the earth. He created angels BEFORE He had created the earth and

the physical, material, universe. He put them here to have a **part** with Him in Creation. In other words, I wonder if you have seen and we have stores here in this area of unfinished furniture. It is furniture that is made complete except the polishing, or painting, or finishing has not been put on. Now you can buy very fine furniture that way if you can finish it yourself and save a lot of money.

Well, in a sense, that is the way God created the earth and the other planets around the world. He put the angels here to **finish** it, **to build it up**, to glorify it, to make it more and more beautiful. In order to do that, as I explained last night, He put His **government** over those angels. And to do that, He sat a super-archangel (one of the three top ones that He's ever created) on a throne to administer the government of God. But that super-angel [1](#) did not administer the government of God. Rather he led his people into the very opposite; Instead of building up, tearing down; Instead of light and truth, darkness and error. And instead of love, it was vanity and all of the things that we call human nature (which do, incidentally, come from the Devil and not from God) – vanity, lust, and greed, envy and jealousy, a spirit of competition and strife and violence and tearing down.

So I read to you last night of the angels who **sinned**, and they are now demons. And the archangel Lucifer has had his name changed from Lucifer, which means shining star of the dawn (which he is not any longer); and God has named him what he now is – Satan, which means adversary, competitor, rival, or the one working against you. That's what Satan is doing.

Choosing Godly Character

The one most necessary thing – the one that is first of all in God Himself – is **holy, righteous, perfect spiritual character**. The angels were made of spirit, not of matter. But there's one thing, as I explained last night, God cannot just create as it is and as a finished work of creation, and that is that kind of character. That must be participated in. Of course, it has to come

from God; but the angels had to make the decision, and **man** has to make the decision. And it's like God said before Israel. He said, "I have set before you light and darkness, truth and error, God's way of love and the other way of hate, and jealousy, and envy." And He said, "CHOOSE!" **Humans have to choose.** He said, "Choose God's way."

Now, of course, He never forces anyone to do that. We are creatures of free choice. And character can only be built by those who have made that choice, and who have then opened their minds and their hearts to God to put His love, His Holy Spirit, His character within them. Now unless you have come to that point, unless you have repented of the way of this world – as I say, of vanity, lust and greed, jealousy and envy, and competition and strife – you are not on the way to that kind of character.

I told you last night that the angels went the wrong way. That left only God in the Person ... As I explained last night from John 1:1, one was God and one who was the Word. Now the Word later, about 2,000 years ago, was made flesh and dwelt among us. In other words, it was Jesus Christ; and God then became His Father. He had been with God for all eternity. There never was a time when they did not exist. Now don't try to understand that, because your minds can't understand it; but nevertheless you can't imagine it any other way either. You can't imagine anything else. Where did God come from if He hasn't always existed?

Chaos And Confusion

Anyway, the angels failed and did not go ahead; and the result is (we read it in the 2nd verse of Genesis 1):

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*

But, as I say, there was part of that Creation that He did not finish at

that time, and like the unfinished furniture; and the angels were intended to finish it, they didn't.

***Genesis 1:2** And the earth was [or, had become] without form, and void.*

That comes from the Hebrew words, tohu and bohu, which really means chaotic, in confusion, waste and empty or deteriorated. And that was the thing that had come to the earth. It was covered by water. It was in darkness. The sun was no longer shining. Lucifer had been a bringer of light, but he had turned to darkness. And even the sun was not shining.

***Genesis 1:2** And the spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.*

The Spirit of God was there. Now I'd like to read to you from the 104th Psalm [{2}](#) and verse 30.

***Psalm 104:30** Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou RENEWEST the face of the earth.*

Now notice that. God **renewed** the face of the earth. That's what you read of in Genesis 1:1. Not the original Creation at all! In verse 1:

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning God created the heavens [and it should plural] and the earth.*

But He put angels here first; and they had turned the wrong way, and turned light into darkness – righteousness into sin. And so now, here was the Spirit:

***Psalm 104:30** Thou sendest forth thy spirit ...*

Here was the Holy Spirit of God over the watery surface. There was no land. It was all water.

***Genesis 1:3** And God said, Let there be light: and there was light.*

The first thing God did was to restore light upon the earth. Now we are not told just how that light was. Because apparently it did not come from the sun because the sun did not shine on the earth until what is mentioned in the 4th day of this 7-day creative week – which is **not** the original Creation but the **renewing** of the face of the earth for man.

Now then, as I said last night, when the angels had sinned, God was the only One ... God and the Word (who was to become Christ but had not yet become Christ), the only Ones! And you could say it was the God Family – those Two – who would not, and therefore could not, sin. God had to have people that He knew could be relied on never to go the wrong way, to do the job He wanted done. Not only this earth, but the whole vast **universe**!

This earth was a **training ground**. If the angels had made good, they would have gone on to Mars and Jupiter and Saturn and then after this solar system, to other planets of our galaxy and then to other galaxies. But they failed! And deterioration, and ... Ah, that word I tried to think of last night; it came to various planets. And that's the condition we find on the moon, and now we find it on Mars.

As I said last night, the first pictures of Mars – photographed right on the surface of Mars – were shown on a screen right on this platform by people about 5:05 to 5:10 in the morning when they began to come through. And I ... in fact some of you were here, and I was. I got in about 5 minutes before five, because I knew I'd been checking on when the picture would come through; and I was here in time for it.

After His Kind

Now God had to do something because He had tried angels, spirit beings composed of spirit. They are not composed of matter at all. There was no matter and no material universe when He first created the angels. They

were already here when He created the material universe and the earth. And I read that to you in the 38th chapter of Job last night.

But it left only God, who had that kind of character and who could be entrusted to go on with the **Creation** and **carry** the Creation to its ultimate limit – because, first of all, God is Creator; but He **rules** over His Creation. And He was the One who is the basic Source of truth, and knowledge, and understanding to those that He creates. A lot of people don't understand that much about God, which is too bad.

Anyway, God now saw that the only way was **to reproduce Himself**. To do that, He knew it was necessary to make man in His form and His image. God is formed and shaped just like we are. He looks like us except, instead of our pale faces and other colors of faces, God's face shines like the very sun for brightness. It'd probably put your eyes out if you looked straight at it because His face is so bright. It's not the sun but He created the sun. But now God had to create man in His own form and His own image. So He restored the earth, renewed the face of the earth; and then, coming down to verse 24, the 1st chapter of Genesis now:

***Genesis 1:24** And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind.*

There is no evidence that there was any such thing as reproduction before this time here. God started reproduction in animals, in fishes, in birds, and then finally in human life. Now notice: “*God said, Let the earth bring forth the living **creature**.*” The original word is the same word that is elsewhere translated “soul.” Souls are made of matter; and they are not immortal, as the world has been misled to believe.

***Genesis 1:24-26** ... after his kind , cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind : at it was so. (25) And [then] God made the beast of the earth after his kind [And so on. And then in verse 26.]*

(26) *And God said, Let us [Not “Me” because God was Elohim, which is a uni-plural name and meant the One that became the Father of Christ {3}, or originally God and the Word. He said, “Let us ...”] make man in our image, after likeness.*

So man was created in the image of God, but so there could be reproduction because God was going to reproduce Himself. And He put reproduction in the fish family, the bird family, the animal family, and the human family. And there probably had never been any such thing as reproduction before that time. There’s certainly no evidence of it anyway. But now God made man male and female. Verse 27:

Genesis 1:27-28 *God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him, male and female created he them. [And told us to reproduce ... Well now, wait a minute.] (28) And God blessed them, and God said unto them, [I want to read this.] Be fruitful, and multiply, and **REPLENISH** the earth.*

It had **already** been “plenished” by angels, and “replenish” means fill it up again. A lot of people read right over that word and never get the meaning. **Replenish** the earth! Now you take back in Genesis, after the Flood, and you’ll find that God said the same thing to Noah – to reproduce and **replenish the earth**. Fill it up again after all had been destroyed except Noah and his family.

Well, now next I want to come to the creation of man. God spoke to the man He had created, and the woman. It says here in the 7th verse of the 2nd chapter of Genesis:

Genesis 2:7 *The [Eternal] God formed the man of the dust of the ground.*

Believing God

He had formed angels out of spirit, but now He formed man out of the dust of the ground. That was necessary so that, if man went the wrong way (as the angels did), God had **a plan** to have Christ come and be born as a human being, to live a perfect life and never bring on Himself the penalty of sin. But then to take **our** penalty on Himself and die for us, so we could be forgiven if we change our minds, repent, and begin to BELIEVE GOD.

God had thoroughly instructed this Lucifer, but he didn't believe God; and he turned angels away, so they became demons. Now "*The LORD God formed man out of the dust of the ground.*" Ultimately, after the character of God has been formed in us, we will be changed to immortal spirit beings too; but only after that character has been formed in us in this first life.

Genesis 2:7-9 ... and [God] breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (8) And the [Eternal] God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. (9) And out of the ground made the [Eternal] God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden [of Eden], and the tree of [the] knowledge of good and evil.

Adam had to make a choice. God first talked to him and instructed him. Then He allowed Satan (the former archangel Lucifer) to get to him. And it was to see **whom he would believe**. Now Adam believed on God all right. That is, he knew that God was the Creator and that God was his Maker. That he knew. But he didn't believe what God **said!** That's the big point, and that's exactly what people have not been doing ever since.

Very, very few; as a matter of fact, only 120 out of the thousands to whom Jesus talked after He came 6,000 years ago (and 4,000 years after Creation, approximately), there were only ... Let me see, it says 120 wasn't it

that were left. You'll find that in the 1st chapter of the book of Acts, where all that really **believed what Christ said** and believed in Him – had repented and believed and received the Holy Spirit on that day of Pentecost.

So there were the two trees.

***Genesis 2:15** And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden [This is verse 15.] to dress it and to keep it.*

I have been criticized for building such a fine college here, but that is the way God does things. Whatever God has ever made, He looked at it and “*Behold, it was very good.*” Not very bad! And God has not criticized, but some people have. Well, I'll go on taking that kind of criticism because I'm dedicated to the way of God. And if you don't like it, as the old saying goes, you can lump it. You know I mean that in love. But I'm glad that you people here do like it. But he took the man and put him in the Garden to dress it and keep it.

Twice, two years in succession, which is the limit allowable, this college has been honored by receiving the award of being the most beautiful, the best landscaped and the **best MAINTAINED** campus in the United States. Now, why? I saw right here God put man in that beautiful place “*to dress it and to keep it,*” not let it run down to weeds.

***Genesis 2:16-17** And the [Eternal] God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou may freely eat: (17) But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eat thereof you shall surely die.*

Or “*Thou,*” as it is in the King James, “*shalt surely DIE.*” Now he was not an immortal soul. God said, “You will **die.**” YOU, not just some kind of body that you are in, He said, “**You** will surely die.”

***Genesis 2:18** And the [Eternal] God said ...*

Well, that's when He said it's not good for man to be alone; and He was right. And, of course, the apostle Paul talked to the unmarried and said it was better if they remained unmarried; but God said it isn't good for man to be alone, and I've always believed God. And I believe what God said! And He said it isn't good for man to be alone. Well you can make of that what you want.

God Instructs Man

But the thing is, after God had talked to Adam and Eve and had thoroughly instructed them ... Now, they were created on the 6th day of this what we call "creation week" but was only a renewing of the face of the earth; and the 6th day ended at sunset. Now undoubtedly that evening, after the sun had set, God talked with them for an hour or two and began explaining things to them. And then the next day until sunset was the Sabbath.

That was the first Sabbath, and God talked to them on that Sabbath day, just as God in the form of Jesus Christ later entered into the synagogue on the Sabbath day. God thoroughly instructed Adam and Eve in the ways of His government and of the possibility (if they chose life, instead of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil) that they could enter into the Kingdom of God and be BORN of God until they're His absolute children.

Now get this: God is the ruler. Now He is God the Father. The Father is the head of the Family. And even though we can become His children, and even though we can be made immortal and composed of spirit – changed from matter into spirit at the time of the resurrection – authority will always reside in the Father. And the Son as the executive, because He agrees 100% with the Father, will rule the earth. God will be King over all of the universe. And Christ, then, will come back again to this earth and will restore the government of God. **And the Kingdom of God IS the Family, born**

children of God, that have the government of God. So its more than just the government of God, we have to become the very children of God.

Well, I don't need to go into it. You know that Satan then got to Adam through his wife. God may have talked to them just until sundown, and then the Sabbath ended and Satan came along on early Sunday morning. Now Satan's churches started keeping their religious services early, about sunrise, Sunday morning. That is the source and the beginning of the sunrise services on what they call Easter. And you'd be surprised if you get... well some of you have gotten the history of all of these things, and you know how the world has been so terribly deceived and has not known what went on.

Rejecting God's Revelation

But Adam did not believe God. And then Satan came along and he believed Satan, and believed what Satan said. And so finally, it is here in the 3rd chapter:

***Genesis 3:6** And when the woman [That's Eve, Adam's wife.] saw that the tree [that God had forbidden] was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.*

Now, modern science has a certain ... I call it the tools of science that they use. But first of all of the tools, basic ones, of modern science today is to **reject revelation** as a source of knowledge. In other words, God's Bible is the Word of God and is the basic source of knowledge. The first thing they do is reject that.

In this world's education you will not find anything about the exodus of the Israelites out of Egypt. You will not find anything about the Flood. They

don't teach that in the colleges, or in school. Whatever God has said, they don't believe. They rely on what the human man has written from way back and what they imagine. And mankind has always been like that.

God knew that probably man would go that way. And that's why He provided all in advance, before THE WORLD WAS, for Jesus to give up His great position as the Word of God, the One by whom God created **all** things, and to come down and to take on the form of a human being and become human so that He could die. Now He was man, He was human; but He was also God.

I was asked just this morning by one, "Did Christ ever marry?" He was God, and He is going to marry. But He is going to marry the Church after we are made immortal. And if He had married a human woman, it would have been one who was half divine (divine as well as human) marrying a human. And what would have happened? What would mankind have done to their children? It would never have done.

But Christ, you see, is engaged to the Church of God. And after the Church has by a resurrection or an immediate change from mortal to immortal, from matter into spirit, He is going to **marry** the Church. And God the Father will be Father over us all. And we will be Husband and wife; and we will bear fruit, but the children will be ... At that time, God will open the doors of salvation to all that live; and they are not open now.

Now let me explain that much right now. Adam followed his wife ... Oh I started to tell you about the tools of science. The first thing is to reject the knowledge of God and the next thing is observation with measurement and the third thing then is experimentation. Then human reason, and through human reason then based on those things they come to conclusions they do in modern science. That's precisely what Eve did because, as I read to you:

Genesis 3:6 *When the woman saw that the tree was good for food*

[There is what she saw.], *and that it was pleasant to the eyes* [which aroused lust in her], *and a tree to be desired to make one wise.*

She thought that she would come to know what is good and evil **herself!** She did not have to believe what God said was good and what God said was evil. She would decide that herself. And then she took of that tree. Now, when she and Adam took of that tree, they **TOOK TO THEMSELVES** the creation of knowledge, or decision of the knowledge of what is good and what is evil. Men ever since have tried to decide himself what he thinks sin is.

I have even questioned ministers, “What is sin? Give me a Bible definition.” And they won’t do it. They may know what it says in I John 3 verse 4, that “*Sin is the transgression of the law.*” But they won’t say it, because they try to say the law has been done away.

Choice And Consequences

And so it is. Adam had made his choice. In other words, Adam said to God in effect ... And let me just paraphrase it in my own words. In effect, he said: “God, I want you to keep your nose out of my affairs. I will not accept you as my ruler. I reject you as my king, as my ruler. I reject you as my God for salvation. I reject you as a source of knowledge to tell me what is good and what is evil, and I will decide it myself.”

And God said, “Well, I’ve given you **the choice.**” Now, instead of choosing character, he chose the wrong way; and God allowed that. God has not going to **force** you to choose the right way. Adam was able to choose whatever he pleased, and **so are we.** But, if you make the wrong choice, you’ll never have the character of God. And God is able to take care of that too.

From then in effect God said, “Okay. You have rejected me. You have

said you will create your own knowledge. You rejected me as your ruler and my government over you. You have rejected me as a Savior and a God and as the source of knowledge. So now I sentence you and **your children after you** – THE WHOLE WORLD that will come (and we have all come from Adam) – to **6,000 years** of being **cutoff** from ME. **All** except the few in the world that I will decide I need to call and choose to do something for me in my service. Them I will call. But otherwise ALL HUMANITY will be **cut off** from me.”

Now you read over here towards the end of the 3rd chapter of Genesis, and I want to take time to just read that:

***Genesis 3:22-24** And the [Eternal] God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us [That is, God and the Word.], to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever [Lest he **gain** eternal life, lest he **have** salvation.]: (23) Therefore the [Eternal] God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. (24) And he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden cherubim [angels, or super-angels], and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life [lest people get salvation and immortal life].*

So God took it away. And God said, “I will cut you off from me, and myself off from you.” Now let me just explain a little further. 4,000 years later, Jesus Christ said:

***John 6:44** NO MAN CAN come to me, except the Father which sent me draw him.*

Population Explosion

God left it that He could choose certain ones. And He has only chosen

those He had a job He wanted performed in this 6,000 years. God has left Satan here on the throne until a successor shall have qualified (which Christ did just 2,000 years ago), and then be installed in office (and Christ is coming very soon to be installed in office). But until then Satan is still here. And he is the one who is *“the prince of the power of the air”* and who is broadcasting through the air. And the spirit in every one of us, our human spirit, picks up the message.

He doesn't broadcast in words. He doesn't broadcast in pictures, like a telecast. He merely broadcasts in **attitudes** and in, well, certain desires and impulses. And he puts it in human beings from the time they are little children – selfishness, greed, vanity, wanting to “get” instead of “give” and help and serve; and all the things that we call human nature.

Now, we turn over next to the 6th chapter of Genesis. We notice that about 2,000 years have gone by and it's about 1900 and some.

***Genesis 6:1** And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth ...*

They did multiply at first. That is, there was a great rapid population growth – a population explosion! We are now at that time once again when there's a population EXPLOSION. Do you know there are 2 or 3 times as many people on earth now as when I was born? That's how fast it's growing. And it will double in; well I don't know, within the lifetime of most of us. I hope that includes me. [And] “When men began to multiply” as there was a population explosion at the time “on the face of the earth.”

***Genesis 6:1-2** ... and daughters were born unto them, (2) that the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took [to] them [selves] wives of all which they chose.*

Now “the sons of God” were merely human beings, not angels; because

humans reproduce after their kind, and angels can't reproduce at all.

Genesis 6:5-6 And [verse 5] God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. (6) And it REPENTED the [Eternal] ...

He changed His mind about it! And it isn't wrong, when you find you're wrong or have made a mistake, to change your mind.

Genesis 6:6-7 And it repented the [Eternal] that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. (7) And the LORD said, "I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast ...

It had come to the place there was only one man that believed God, only one, Noah. Noah was the only one. Noah was the only one who was perfect in his begettal, his generations (plural) – of the original race of Seth, the son of Adam. By that time, of course, there were the various nations. But God did not intend intermarriage between the races, and does not today.

Some human being is going to disagree with that, because people decide on what they want. And I have been a little bit distressed to find that some of the girls on the campus want to date men of the other color, and that should not be – because marriage is a different thing. It should be love the one for another, and no difference whatsoever because of race and other things. But in reproduction we are to reproduce “after our kind.” I hope I've made that plain without further explanation.

Genesis 6:5 The [Eternal] saw that the wickedness of man was great on the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

God's Plan Revealed

Now, there was no way to go on and save man. If you understand what God revealed to me 50 years ago, that we not only had been commanded to keep God's Sabbath, which is the very **test commandment** of the Commandments; but also the annual Sabbaths and festivals have very great meaning. I am quite DISTRESSED to be **told** that **most of our ministers on the Feast of Tabernacles do NOT PREACH THE MEANING OF THE DAY**; and I am going to take steps on that direction.

Today's holy days, annual holy days, are called TO TEACH US A LESSON. **And the minister's sermons should be on what that lesson is.** The first one, the Passover is the crucified Lamb. And it starts with our being changed from mortal to immortal, and it starts with **Christ**. The second, the seven days of Unleavened Bread picture our coming out of **sin**. **AND I WANT THAT PREACHED IN THE CHURCH from now on!**

And I say that with **AUTHORITY**, and I say it with **POWER**. If any of you think that I am senile and too old to carry on the Work of God, I think you are hearing it a little differently right now (because quite a few have suggested that, who are of opposite belief). And I speak with the authority of Jesus Christ! Jesus Christ called me and put me in the seat where I am. I didn't go to men. And it's something no man can do, and no man can put me out. Now then:

***Genesis 6:11** The earth was corrupt [verse 11] before God, and the earth was filled with violence.*

And, if you know now, God destroyed all the life forms. Some will say, "God isn't fair." Well, if you understand the annual holy days, the 8th day of the Feast of Tabernacles is to open our eyes to the Great White Throne Judgment. That's the time when **ALL THOSE PEOPLE** that were then

destroyed are going to be **resurrected** and live perhaps a hundred years. The one scripture that has that can be translated another way. But anyway it will be the time that God has in mind, whatever that is – whether it's 10 years or 100.

And then they will have the chance to come to see the truth. God has taken away all chance of salvation from them. Those people were NOT lost. They were NOT condemned, because God had **cut them off**. Now I want to make that plain. I've said and used the expression that God adopted a hands-off policy. I find that doesn't make it clear enough to people. People then assume that everyone is lost unless they've accepted Christ. **THAT IS NOT TRUE!** In other words, except those that God has **CALLED** – no man can come to Christ. They are not lost, neither are they saved.

Now all who are living after the beginning of the Millennium, or after Christ comes, will have their chance then of salvation. All, everybody! But Satan will be removed. And now, with Satan here, God is not putting us where everybody has to overcome Satan. Christ had to, to lead. Christ had to overcome Satan in order to **QUALIFY** to take Satan's place and **rule the earth**. Jesus said, **if we also** overcome (and it means, overcome Satan.), we shall sit with Him on His throne.

And I told you last night how we are cleaning the debris and rubbish of 2500 years off of the throne where Jesus Christ is going to sit and rule. We are the preparing the way for Christ's coming and for the Kingdom of God, and **no one** else on earth is doing that. I want you to understand this great call and commission, and the great Work that this Church, and this is **the Church of the living God**, and not the church of man or the ideas of man in any way at all.

Now then: **All** of those people that God destroyed in the Flood will be brought back to life just as if ... They don't know anything in the meantime.

And it's just like the next split second from the time they drowned and died, that they will wake up in the Great White Throne Judgment, after the thousand-year reign with Christ. And there won't be any Devil around. And God will show them the truth; and then I think most of them will take it, because they'll look back and see what they did. They'll look back and **see** that the 6,000 years have shown that if we go contrary to God's way, which the world has, it only brings all of the terrible **wretchedness** that we see in the world today. There is nothing ...

God said in effect to man (and I didn't complete that a while ago.), to Adam and to the whole world afterwards, "**You go form your own governments.**" They've done it. Look what the governments of man do. They are at war all the time, and someone is plotting to overthrow every one of them. "You go and form your own religions." Look at the religions in the world. And not even those called "Christian" are not the Church of God at all; and do not get their truths out of the Bible, but try to read them **into** the Bible. I had to learn that 50 years ago, and that was the biggest upset in my mind that I had ever had in all my life. But nevertheless, let me just show you the wonderful justice of God as it is. Anyway,

***Genesis 6:12** And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt ...*

And, by the way, that's the word "corruption" that has come from the planets of the whole universe because of what the angels did. And man, when he is finally converted and saved (and there will be BILLIONS of us), that are finally going to be converted and will HAVE THAT HOLY RIGHTEOUS CHARACTER OF GOD. We're going to be sent to the planets all over the universe. That's after the Millennium. This earth will always be God's headquarters. Even God the Father is coming down to this earth. But the whole earth was corrupt:

Genesis 6:12 ... for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.

God Uses A Few

Well, so that is the way it started. Now God called one man back here, who was righteous and who believed in God – Noah. God saved Noah from the Flood, as a type of saving from the eternal extinction of humanity. However, I want to show you now some things about how God has ruled; and God is the real Ruler, although He is allowing Satan to stay on the throne and to operate.

Now next we come to Abraham. And I would like us to turn now to the 12th chapter of Genesis and read the first verses.

Genesis 12:1-2 Now the [Eternal] had said unto Abram [his name was to begin with, but it became Abraham. To Abram] *get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will show thee: (2) And I will make of thee a great nation [and so on].*

Now he just simply said, there's no quibbling, there was no talking back. "Well, do I have to and can I do it tomorrow or next year? Can I go somewhere else?" That's about the way the average human would have resulted. But it says ... Let's see. Well it just says:

Genesis 12:4 So Abram departed, as the LORD had spoken.

Abraham went. He didn't quibble. You know, when I first saw 50 years ago that we should keep the annual holy days as well as the seventh day of every week, I didn't know why. I didn't know the meaning of it, and I didn't know the real meaning until 14 years later. I talked to the people in the Church of God up in Oregon, that we call the Sardis Era of the Church now; and they only laughed me to scorn. And for **7 years** my wife and I had to keep those annual days alone, by ourselves. But we did. I DIDN'T KNOW WHY. I DIDN'T ASK GOD "WHY?" I didn't say, "I won't do it until You

show me why.”

God said, “DO IT.” I saw it was **forever**. I saw it was **commanded**. And that was enough for me. I said, “In due time.” I craved understanding, and I wanted to understand it. But I knew that, in His own time, God would give me the understanding as to why and now I know. You’ve been taught why. You haven’t had to wonder. You haven’t had to just take it like God said. But I did, and that’s the way Abraham did (and Abram, as he was originally called).

Now his sons Isaac and Jacob also followed with God. Jacob, of course, had a little trouble at first and was a supplanter; but finally repented and came back; and then Moses. But 430 years after Abraham, the children of Israel were slaves in Egypt. Now God called Moses. Moses was a ... (I’m not going to take time to read all of the scriptures on all of that, because the time is getting short; and I still have quite a little I want to say.)

God called Moses. Moses was not seeking God. Let me say this. Noah was not seeking God. He was obedient to God and all that but he wasn’t seeking salvation or anything. But God called him out and said, “Noah I’m going to use you to preserve human life alive on this earth.” God said, “I want you to do something. I want you to build a great ship right here on dry land.” And for a hundred years Noah [{4}](#) he was building the ship. And he was mocked at, ridiculed by the other people. It seemed so crazy to them. And some of the things God tells us to do do seem crazy to people who don’t understand.

Well, anyway, he didn’t seek God; but God sought him and called him in this world of Satan’s. Then later He called Abraham, and Abraham was not seeking God; but God, it says here, let me read that again, “[Now] *the [Eternal] said unto Abram.*” Abram didn’t seek Him. God sought Abram, and called him; and he OBEYED. And he obeyed; he became the father of

the faithful (spiritually speaking).

Then later we come to the time of Moses. No I won't go through all of it, but let me just tell you this much. Moses had been over at his father-in-law's place, who was the priest of Midian; and he was returning back toward Egypt. He was walking, and he came across a burning bush. It was just a small bush, but it kept burning. Now he saw it for some time before he had walked up even with it and then he eventually passed it. And finally he turned back to see well what could keep that little bush burning all this time.

And God spoke to him out of the bush and said, "Moses, take your shoes off your feet because the ground whereon you stand is holy ground." God's presence had made that ground holy. God was there, and calling him. Well, **Moses was not seeking God**. God wasn't trying to get people converted or saved in those years. That's the point I want to get through to you. The others were not lost. They'll come up to the Great White Throne Judgment. But if I've never made that plain before, I hope I'm making it plain now so you can understand it.

There's not injustice with God, in any way at all. But God wanted us to write the lesson. He knew that man would be misled and deceived by Satan, and would live Satan's way. And for **6,000 years of human wretchedness**, and human **anguish**, and **suffering** and **death** have proved that only living the way of God is right. Satan teaches people to live just the opposite way. And Satan's churches on this earth try to say God's law is done away. They don't believe in the government of God. That's exactly what has happened.

Now we come a little later to others. God selected Joshua. God selected and chose the; well they are called 'judges' in the Bible or the one translation calls them 'heroes' that rescued Israel when they were taken captive by other nations. And here we have the nations all over the earth.

But in the time of Moses, God made a proposition through Moses to the

people. And He said, If you will obey My voice, and do what **I** tell you, and live **My** way – I’ll make you the greatest nation on earth. I’ll make you the **richest**, the most **prosperous**. I’ll make you the most **powerful**! So that five of you can chase 100, and 100 of you will put 10,000 others to flight. But if you do not, there is going to be a 2520-year time period when it would be withheld before that kind of blessing came.

God did not promise them any spiritual salvation. Only Moses, who led them out and the prophets that God called – them God gave His Holy Spirit to; but it was not to others. Now later there was David and God chose him. However, David was out tending the sheep. He wasn’t seeking God. But God had sent the prophet over to the house of Jesse, and they thought every one of Jesse’s sons except David was the one that men had chosen. But God chose David. And so it goes. And it has always been like that. Now God chose the prophets of Israel, but the people stoned and killed many of them.

And then we come on down to Christ. And Jesus Christ preached the coming Kingdom of God and how the whole earth then would be freed from Satan and would have peace and would have salvation, and that this character would be built within them. Christ came to live the perfect life, with the kind of character that God wants us to have; and set us an example in that. Christ let Himself be killed, and paid the death penalty in **OUR** stead! **We** have inherited the death penalty.

The Work Today

I’ll tell you the first scripture that really opened my eyes to the fact that I and the other churches in which I’d been brought up were wrong was Romans 6:23: “*The wages of sin is death.*” I said, “Well, that can’t be. I’m an immortal soul. I can’t die.” Then, the very next part of the same verse: “*But the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.*” Well, I said,

“I’ve already **got** eternal life. I’m an immortal soul.” But the Bible says, “*The soul that sins, it shall die.*” Christ said to Adam, “You are a soul; and if you sin you will die.” And I began to realize the truth finally, and that the churches are all wrong about going to heaven and their kind of a hell; and that they are wrong in saying that we are immortal souls, and practically all of their doctrines.

So God showed me those basic things, even during my intensive study of over six months before I was converted and baptized. And I don’t know of any leader that is a world leader as God has made me now, or a founder of a religion. And of course I’m not a founder of religion. But I don’t know of any that have ever come to it this way as a complete surrender to God, a complete believing what He has SAID. When Christ came and preached to thousands, only 120 believed what He had said after 3 1/2 years of the very Master, Jesus Christ Himself, being here on earth.

Jesus did not come on a soul-saving crusade. Never once did He say, “Give your heart unto Me, and I’ll give you salvation.” He didn’t say those things. Those are the things that Billy Graham and the modern Protestants say. The Catholics will say that they give you something at the time you die, and that’s going to save you apparently. But those are the ways of the religions of man and not of God, my brethren.

Now the disciples went out teaching what God preached. God brought a messenger, a message from God; I mean God sent a message through Christ. And Christ brought that message, which was the good news that the government of God will be restored; but be restored by the very BORN Family of God. God is doing things in His time and His way, and God’s way is PERFECT! But no man would do it that way, and the ways of man would be very imperfect.

Now, if **we overcome**, and **turn** from Satan’s way unto **God’s way**, and

develop His kind of CHARACTER WE will sit with Christ on His throne and rule with Him. But the reason He has called us now, and called most of you, is to stand back of me in getting this gospel to the **WHOLE WORLD**, and not just the United States only. And not just Pasadena and some place like that alone, it's the **whole wide world**. And I am being heard in Canada as well as the United States right now, this very minute, and over in Big Sandy, Texas. I wish I was being heard in England and other places, but I am heard there on various times.

Now, let me see, is there anything that I overlooked that I've got to mention before I quit. Oh, about the college, one thing I did not say. The universities of this world in the main are devoted to teaching men for a profession, or for a job, or something like that. We will not have a job or professional training program. We will have, as I said, a school for ministerial and biblical studies. We do not need so many, so it's going to be ultimately cut down to 250 students. In other words, there's a reason for the college – to provide an educated personnel to assist me, and for ministers. We now have around 700 ordained ministers all over the world. And, as a matter of fact, we have even more than we need right now on the payroll.

For **years** every student who made good was taken into the Work on graduation. But for the last several years, we've just been unable to do that. We're graduating more than we can use. And so it's foolish to go on trying to be in the college business and taking the money of God's people and spending it on that instead of what God said: Go and get the gospel around the world.

The Gospel To The World

Now I'm going to go on doing that **all around this world**. And kings, and presidents, and prime ministers, and emperors even, **invite me**. I don't go in on them except at their invitation. But I have **private, personal** meetings

with them; and they usually last anywhere from 30-35 minutes up to 2 hours. Twice I spent 2 hours with the king of Thailand, on each time I spent 2 hours with him. He appealed to me for help in certain ways that I found that I could help him. I sent a team of several men to be over there for 10 days, all over Thailand, not only in the Catholic city; but all over, and to find out what we could do and what we ought to do to help him. And finally they came back with the report, and there were about 6 or 8 of our top men that I sent over there.

Well, I will tell you one thing that has been done. We have been sponsoring portable schools for the mountain people that were uneducated. Not only are we getting them educated, but they have gone from ordinary farmers of things that are good to eat into opium and things of that kind of drugs because there was a lot of money in it. And so we've had to try to convert them back to farming vegetables. We've had to work out markets for their produce, and many things. But it is a program of the king of Thailand, King Bhumibol, which is very difficult for us to pronounce, and he is a friend of mine.

But God has given me favor in the eyes of leaders and heads of government in Central America, in Africa, in Asia, and in Europe, and all over. And He is going to continue that and I'm going to continue in that Work and the Work of God now will go ahead as it never did before. I am hoping that we will now get back, very soon, on radio until all over the United States and Canada we are covering it with half-hour programs **every day**. And they will be programs that are going to proclaim the good news of THE KINGDOM OF GOD!

Now I tell you, so far as the finances is concerned, I've found that it depends more on our pleasing Jesus Christ, the Head of this Church, than it does on any methods we use to try to raise money. And I know that, as we do that which is pleasing to God, He will back us; and He will provide every

need, as He always has and as He will continue to do.

Well, I didn't want to carry it on to a full 2 hours today; and I think that that covers it enough. It has finally come up to today, when God has called me to get this out to the world. We're living in the generation when it is going to happen, and God wants it **announced** to around the world. I'm not trying to convert people in these other nations. Don't misunderstand. That isn't what **God called me to do**. But He wants it announced so that they can't say, "Well, God, why didn't you tell us?" He'll say, "I did, but you didn't listen." And that's what I'm doing. I'm telling them and announcing, and that's all. I don't have to get them converted.

The cooperation that we've had in Israel, and the dozens and dozens of times that I've gone to Israel and Jerusalem, never once have we sought a single convert; nor, as far as I know, have we made one. And they know that. This is not the time God is trying to save the world spiritually, but to **get out the message**. Now the way is open to carry the message in the 40th chapter of Isaiah, to tell them of the cities of Judah, that the Lord is coming **with A STRONG ARM** – Armstrong. Is it a coincidence in the fact that God chose a man with that name to carry that message, to rule them in the Kingdom of God and to bring them peace? And they and the Arabs will all be at peace one with another.

We are helping to do it now and helping it with the Moshe Koll's Foundation, with the young people. And when I go over there, both Arabs and Jews are on the program. And they did for our students when they went over, and it's wonderful to see things like that happen.

And, by the way, the last time I saw the king of Thailand I asked him how was our program coming? He said over 90% (in fact, he said 95%) have been turned away from this drug production into food production. Now that's another wonderful thing that's been done. But at the same time it opens the

door to have me, as I have had hundreds of times in Bangkok and over in Thailand, and get the truth of God there as an announcement. And that's all I am called on to do. It is being done, nobody else is doing it. This is the Work of God, and God has prophesied that He would send someone to prepare the way before Christ. That is being done, and not by anybody else – as you brethren ought to know.

So now, I'm going to say "Goodbye" for this time. I'm getting back, and I'm going to be writing more than before. And I'm just coming along fine. I need to be more physically fit. In fact, I need to get in more walking. But my heart is back into fine condition. It was swelled way up. In fact, I had heart failure. Not a heart attack. It was heart failure, and it completely stopped. My breathing completely stopped, but it was restored. But God had not taken my spirit or my mind. And He has restored my mind. If anything it's better than it was before. And I still am not over 55 years old in actual mental powers and abilities. And I just want you to know that I'm coming back into active service again. I've had to take a lot of time off, and I haven't even done an awful lot of writing. I've done a little. But I will be doing more from now on.

So God bless all of you, and let's carry on. We are now in complete **unity** and we're **going on together** to get this job finished that God committed to me almost 50 years ago. So thank you all, and God bless you.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - A false start, which Mr. Armstrong corrected himself, was deleted here. He originally said, "But that man, or that angel ..."

[{2}](#) - Mr. Armstrong originally said the 50th Psalm, but he corrected himself.

[{3}](#) - Mr. Armstrong actually said, "the Father that became the Father of Christ," but "the One that became the Father of Christ" is undoubtedly what

he was referring to.

{4} - While talking about Noah, Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said “Moses” here.

Warning To The Church

(Sometimes Called: Day of Fasting and Prayer)

Sermon (July 1, 1978)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Warning To The Church.....	107	A Little Strength	124
Leaven Of Intellectualism	108	God's Great Purpose	128
God's Kind Of College	110	Adam's Choice	129
Carnal Scholarship	112	Man Cut Off From God	131
Inspired Preaching	113	Some Selected By God	132
Going Into The Laodicean Condition	115	God Can Hold Something Up	134
Time To Wake Up!	116	Acknowledge Sin And Repent	136
Accuser Of The Brethren	118	Departing From The Living God	138
Petra?	119	A Better Covenant	139
The Church's Dominant Condition	121	A Call To Repentance	142
An Open Door	123		

Well, greetings everybody. I have called a special day of prayer and fasting today because God's church is IN FATAL DANGER! And I can't say that loud enough to hammer it home to you. We don't realize, my brethren, the way we've been drifting. We have been doing just what you heard in the sermonette—doing our own thing. We have been getting lukewarm.

There was an announcement that we have discontinued the Bible Studies for the summer. I'M CHANGING THAT RIGHT NOW! I don't know who decided that, but I wasn't consulted. But I am going to tell you right now, I'm going to be here next Friday night; and I am going to talk to you. I'll say, "God willing." And I am pretty sure He is willing.

The Word of God says: forsake not the assembling of yourselves together, SO MUCH THE MORE as you see this day approaching. We see it approaching; and we are going to sleep, sound asleep. "Let's just go off and do our own thing for the summer." I don't care if there are only two or three

here. I don't care if all the rest of you... Well, I do care too. But, with me, I would rather have two or three filled with the Spirit of the Living God than to have this Church packed full (and a thousand other Churches like it) of lukewarm people getting into the Laodicean condition, doing their own thing.

Leaven Of Intellectualism

I have good news for you, and I have bad news for you. The bad news I will give you first. God was doing really a great Work—through me and through this Church—up to about 10 years ago (9 or 10, right around 1969). We were “one.” Nobody was in doubt about who was in charge. And then many, near the top, began every man to try to do his own thing. He wasn't trying to do God's thing. He was trying to do his own. And a spirit of competition began to come in. At the same time, what I call **the leaven of intellectualism** was coming in and gripping the college, and also gripping our congregation locally here, and more or less the whole church. I had noticed that thing of intellectualism ever since the college was started (in fact, before that; but especially then). I noticed it the first year of Ambassador College. I am going to tell you just a little about it, and digress from what I intended to say that far.

I had a brother-in-law who had been a schoolteacher all his life, and he had a master's degree from the University of Oregon. I didn't intend to go into the college business; but I knew that God needed a college to train personnel to back me and assist me—not only in the ministry, but in other more or less administrative jobs in getting the Work done—because, as the Work grew, we were having to come into organization. And I asked my brother-in-law if he would come down and help me.

My brother-in-law said, “Well, what you say appeals to me. I agree with you, that education has become decadent, that education has gone into

materialism.” He said, “I agree with you that we need a different kind of education.” He said, “I really consider that you probably understand the Bible better than anybody. And while I haven’t followed it, and I haven’t studied about the Sabbath; but I know that you are probably right about it. But I have been unable to keep the Sabbath up here in Portland (in Oregon City, Oregon) because all my associates... Well, I have to think: What would they think if I would do that?” And, of course, he couldn’t do what they would disagree with; could he now? But he said, “If I go down to California, I’ll be among other people; and I’ll be able to do it.” So, he came down; and he started out to help me.

I made the mistake of giving him the title of “president.” I see that’s something that goes right to the head of everyone that gets the title of “president.” Somehow, we sort of extol the President of the United States. And that title seems to carry something that intoxicates the average person, who isn’t big enough to handle it yet. Anyway, he came down here. And we had as registrar and dean of the faculty at that time Dr. Holly Otis Taylor—who had a PhD first from Cornell University, had taught there; then later had been on the faculty of Harvard; and he had been on the faculty of M.I.T.

Now, Harvard probably ranks number one among the universities in this country. And M.I.T, even on the whole, is larger; and might even rank slightly ahead of Cal. Tech. And they are the two great technological institutions of the world, and he had been on both faculties. Then during the war, he was a member of the Bureau of Standards of the United States government, and assisting the government in the war. Then he had gone on to Wheaton College, where he was professor of physics; and, finally, he became chairman emeritus of the department of physics of Wheaton College. (Now, Wheaton is the College where Billy Graham went to school, and Billy Graham studied under him.)

Well now, Dr. Taylor was a gentleman. He was one of these

unassuming, quiet, gentlemen; and still 100% inoculated with the leaven of intellectualism and of higher education. He had been through the mill of higher education. On the other hand, he believed in God. Now there are any number of people that believe in God. I had an argument not too long ago with a woman that said, “Why, all the scientists believe in God.” Well, I denied that. But I said, “You can have that opinion if you want.” I said, “Some of them **believe in God**. But,” I said, “I’ll guarantee you, you don’t know one—and you can’t find one—who **BELIEVES GOD**.” That’s something else again, isn’t it? In other words, they don’t believe what God says. They don’t obey what God says.

There were many who believed on Jesus Christ when Jesus was on Earth over 1900 years ago. To those Jews who believed on Him, He said, “You seek to kill Me and to put Me to death because you won’t believe My words. You don’t believe what I say.” They believed on Christ, but they didn’t believe Christ. Now there is too much of that in this world. In fact, there is quite a lot of it; and I think that, as I go along, you’ll understand why nearly everybody is not **believing God** at least.

God’s Kind Of College

Well, about 9 or 10 years ago, along about 1969, a spirit (of not only intellectualism) was getting into the College until it became no longer God’s college, I’m ashamed to say. And I am going to change that! This is going back... I struggled the first three or four years to see that this would be God’s kind of College. I had to struggle against professors with their PhD’s and their master’s degrees. They wanted to make it just like all other colleges. They wanted to get this intellectualism. There is a leaven of intellectualism that gets in and just puffs you all up.

Now then, I wanted to say more. Here was Dr. Taylor. My brother-in-

law looked at Dr. Taylor with great awe. Well he was a quiet, gentlemanly man. He had all of this higher education. He had the dignity, and he had the language that they speak; and they speak a different language. It's what my wife of fifty years would have called "put on." They put it on. I'm going to root that out of Ambassador College! It doesn't belong here. And anyway, my brother-in-law, now he found it much more difficult to keep the Sabbath than he had up in Oregon, because Dr. Taylor didn't believe in the Sabbath; he was a Baptist. And he stood in awe. And then we had other PhD's on that faculty of eight that started this College.

I had written what we'd call the advertising man's part of the catalog, part of the comments up in front. But I left the main part of the catalog, which is the curriculum and so on, to the faculty. And I had to be out of town for a while. I came back, and college was starting; and they had finished at the last minute the catalog. And they had reduced the course in Theology and Bible to a minor. Instead of a three-hour course, they had cut it down to a little dinky two-hour course.

Well, I got even with them. I made it obligatory that all faculty members must attend the Bible classes, and I taught them. And I had the pleasure of seeing them sit there and squirm, because they couldn't answer me back. I had **the proof of God's Word**, and they knew it; and it embarrassed them. And for one whole year they sat there, very uncomfortable. For three years I had to fight to let this be God's kind of College, instead of the intellectual leaven that has leavened this world and its education.

Now, there is something about that. Well, I am going to write on it in the Good News. But those underneath look up and stand in awe of it. It, uh, maybe I could say hypnotizes them. I don't know that that's just the right word, but they are... Oh, what is the word that Wilt Chamberlain used to do to all the other basketball players on the other team? I can't just think of that

word right now. It'll come to me. Anyway... Intimidate! And it seems that others are intimidated by that polish—that intellectuality, that mannerism that has been put on—that they had.

Now someday that's all going to burn up, when this whole Earth is going to burn up; and there won't be any of that left. And some of our intellectuals are going to burn up with it, if they don't wake up in time; and if they don't realize that that intellectualism is **of Satan the devil**.

Carnal Scholarship

Let me explain a minute about that before I go on with the main sermon: This type of intellectualism and scholarship. They all want to be scholars. They want high scholarship. It is 100% carnal. It is material and materialism. There is none of God, none of Christ, in it. It is an intellectualism that throws Christ right out the window, and that has been like leaven getting into the College. You know Baptists, of course, don't have all of the truth. Fundamentalist Methodists, Congregationalists, or Presbyterians do not base their religion, did not get it out of the Bible. They try to read it into the Bible. Also, the Quakers. I was born and reared in the Quaker Church. I had to get rid of and sweep clean my mind of everything I had been taught from a child in Sunday school, before I was converted.

I don't know any leader of a worldwide religious movement as this Church is (The Worldwide Church of God), who has ever started out with having his mind swept clean of everything he ever believed, and going right to the Bible (or to Christ when He was on Earth), and being taught like that—not in our day. Of course, the apostle Paul went through that. The original apostles did, over 1900 years ago. But you won't find it now, and you won't find any leader of religion. He's just simply meditated in his own thoughts, and according to his own vanity, when he allocated...

I tell you: that kind of thing reminds me of a movie that came out right after World War II, quite a while ago. Jack Oakey and... oh, much better known than Jack Oakey. The original comedian, well, not just slapstick so much; he was of the silent movie days.

Anyway, he was Hitler; and Jack Oakey was Mussolini. One of them was visiting the other one, and he had his private barbershop (and it was just like our barbershop on this campus, a two-chair shop). So they each got in a chair, and the barber hadn't come in yet. Well, Mussolini got a hold of this little lever; and he jacked it up a notch, and made himself maybe a couple of inches higher than Hitler. Hitler reached down for the lever, and jacked himself up an inch higher than Mussolini. Mussolini reached down, and jacked himself up another inch higher than Hitler; and it kept on going until they bumped the ceiling. Must have been special chairs that would go up that high.

Well, of course, that was funny. But why can't I think of this other comedian. He died not too long ago. His body was carried away; and they recently discovered it, and they brought it back. [A voice in the audience says the name.] Charlie Chaplain! I don't know why... "Chap Charlie" we used to call him, I don't know why that name wouldn't come to me.

Inspired Preaching

But anyway, that has been seizing us. Now, I am going to be here next Friday night; and I hope at least two or three of you will be here—because, I tell you, Jesus Christ says that where two or three are gathered together there He will be in our midst; and JESUS CHRIST WILL BE HERE next Friday night! Now maybe you don't want to be in company with Jesus Christ. Stay away, if you don't. But I am going to try to see that the Friday night services get set on fire.

Now there is another thing: Lately it has become stylish to say that Mr. Armstrong is very much out of date. There is a word “prophecy” in the Bible that does mean receive prophecies from God (like the ancient prophets) and foretell; but also, in more cases, it means to preach. And it means **preach with inspiration**—a fired-up kind of preaching. Today it seems like we’ve got to have a very mild modern intellectual classroom lecture. And it’s gotten to be out of style on this platform and in this Church for someone to really **speak out**. I was glad to hear a little speaking out in the sermonette this morning. I want to hear more of it. I want to hear more of that absolute conviction. Now the Holy Spirit of God in us is not emotion; but there certainly is an emotional content, and it certainly does work on our emotions. Now some people, they just have emotions on their shirtsleeves; and I don’t mean that at all.

Well, brethren, we are all humans; and Satan is infinitely more powerful than we. And he has been getting into this Church! And it had come to the place that no one seemed to know who was in charge around here. It came to the place where some of you’ve said, “I am of Paul;” and others of you were of Apollos, and others of Cephas. And I don’t know whether any were **of Christ** or not—maybe one or two.

There was an effort to overthrow the Church in a grand coup and take over, just like taking over a government, in 1974. But Jesus Christ is the Head of this Church, and He didn’t let it happen. Now, we lost some 30 or 35 ministers. We’ve probably lost a couple thousand members. In six months, we had more than made up for it and gotten others back to take their places; and I will tell you, so far as I know (and I haven’t heard, and I don’t know exactly for all of them. But, so far as I know), practically all of those ministers who went out in that rebellion—and that’s what it was—are working at physical labor with their hands at any kind of job they can get today. They are not in the ministry.

They were going to take members with them. They were going to build a big church themselves. They said, “Well, Herbert Armstrong did it. So can I.” Well, Herbert Armstrong did not do it! JESUS CHRIST BUILT THIS CHURCH, and I was only an instrument that He used. I gave myself to Him, and He has used me. I didn’t do it. And you have never... Not one of you have heard me take credit of it. (I know someone else that says he built this Church, and he did not. Jesus Christ did.)

Going Into The Laodicean Condition

Well, the bad news is that we have been going that way; and we are going into the Laodicean condition of sleeping and slumbering like you read in the 25th chapter of Matthew. And while the Bridegroom—Christ—tarried before He came, they all slumbered and slept; and that’s the condition we are getting into. We are getting very close now to the time of the Second Coming of Christ. But, because it didn’t happen in 1972, some people think, “Oh well, it’s not going to happen now.” And so Jesus Himself said, “At such an hour as you think not” He’ll come! The door will be shut, and it will be too late! And that’s what’s going to happen to a lot of you. I’m trying to wake you up today! And if I can’t wake you up, you can get angry and walk right out—right now! I invite you to, if that’s the way you feel, because I don’t want people here that don’t have **the Spirit of God** (pretending that they do). Now, visitors are welcome and all that; but that isn’t what I mean. But I don’t want people here—to pretend and profess membership—that don’t have anything but **the spirit of Satan** in them.

But, anyhow, the spirit of Satan began to grip us. Everyone started to do his own thing. There was a power struggle to get into the top. Mr. Armstrong was getting old and was going to die. Everyone wanted to be the one that could take over and be the head of the Church, and their wives wanted to be the first lady of the Church; and don’t you think that was not there. And so

some of us were of one leader, and some of another; and no one seemed to know who really was in charge. I'll tell you who was in charge: Jesus Christ. Only we were all going to sleep, and just letting the Church go its own way.

Time To Wake Up!

Now, the good news: JESUS CHRIST IS MOVING TO PUT THIS CHURCH BACK ON THE TRACK! We are going to stamp out all of that spirit of competition that got in—that spirit of vanity, self-exultation, lust and greed, envy and jealousy. That is the attitude of Satan the devil. And the good part of it is that God has reorganized His church, and I am going to do all I can to bring it back.

Now I completely stopped breathing. My heart stopped completely for at least 30 or 45 seconds. It wasn't 30 or 45 minutes. But it completely stopped, until my face was blanched and white, back here last August. God brought me back. And it's pretty important that God brought me back, brethren, because Jesus Christ knew which way YOU are going.

He brought me back for two reasons. One is to try to revive you, TO SHAKE YOU UP if I can. To get you to realize that YOU ARE IN **DANGER!** I'm not going to purr that out like a college professor. I'm going to **shout** it at you—in **power!** You can take the warning, and wake up, and maybe go on into God's Kingdom. Or you can go the other way, and burn up, and be ashes under the soles of my feet and some others that are going into the Kingdom of God. You take your choice! And if I've offended you and you're angry, I feel sorry for you. I'm saying what needs to be said. That's why I called this day as a day of fasting and prayer.

Well, we are all human. We need to remember that there is a devil, called Satan; that he is infinitely more powerful than we are. And Satan

knows better than we that he has now but a short time. And he wants to destroy this Church! Let me read you the 12th chapter of Revelation and beginning with verse 7. We're down to this time when...

Revelation 12:7 There was [or, is] war in heaven...

Michael and his angels fighting against the dragon; and the dragon fighting with his angels, and prevailed not. That is, the dragon prevailed not.

Revelation 12:8-9 Neither was their place [and his angels] found any more in heaven. (9) And the great dragon was cast out, [Who was he?] that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which **DECEIVETH THE WHOLE WORLD**...

And he is **deceiving** I say over half of you people in front of me right now! I don't mean the person next to you. I MEAN YOU! God brought me back because someone has got to put a little life into this Church! That's why I am back here. That's why I didn't stay dead. There's a reason.

And I want to tell you that, back in those first days in August and September, I couldn't do any work. I couldn't do anything but just try to take it easy and recuperate. And I felt it'd be so much nicer if I could just sink back into that, because I didn't know anything was happening. I was totally unconscious. The dead know not anything. I was dead, temporarily; and I didn't know anything (just as the Bible says). [Ecclesiastes 9:5] Those that have been brought back and say they saw this and that are lying, or they had a hallucination. I know. I have been there. You haven't, have you?

But I thought that for myself how much nicer it would be. I've worked hard all these years. For 50 years, I have had to strive; and the devil has been after me as after nobody else. He would rather destroy me than anybody on this Earth. You better believe that! Some of you don't. He has wanted to destroy my son, Garner Ted Armstrong; and he wants to destroy all of you.

Now, that's where the real fault is; and that is the place where all the blame has to go. Well anyway, it says here that this was the devil; and he didn't prevail.

Accuser Of The Brethren

*Revelation 12:9-10 The great dragon...that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels [who now became demons] were cast out with him. (10) And I heard a loud voice saying...Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom [Or "now is coming," because it hasn't come yet; but it is coming very soon.]...and the power of his Christ [The strength of our God and the power of His Christ.]: for **the accuser of our brethren** is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.*

People are accusing now. People are accusing Mr. Stanley rader. And, let me tell you right here, I don't know how much that leaven has got into some of you. That is **character assassination**. You may feel that Stanley rader is a wrong kind of man. He is my top assistant. That's why they try to assassinate his character. Satan had been trying to get to me; and, if he can't destroy me, he'll destroy those that are working with me closely. You tell me. I challenge you to show me one evidence, one iota of proof, of anything wrong about Stan rader. And yet there are ministers in this Church that I understand would walk right out, and leave the Church, if I try to uphold Stan rader.

How did this Church come to that? I want to tell you, I'm heartsick today. I'm just grieved clear to the bottom of my heart, because you brethren have gone to sleep; and not just you [here]. When I say "you," this is being recorded. It's going to be played in all the Churches. So when I say "you, brethren" I mean all of the Church. It's time we have to WAKE UP! But he

[Satan] accused the brethren, the Church.

Revelation 12:11-12 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony [and the Word of God too]; and they loved not their lives unto death. (12) Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. WOE to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having **great wrath**.

SATAN IS ANGRY! He is stirred up. He's not asleep, but he is trying to lull you to sleep. I'm trying to wake you up. About all I can wake up is myself. I'll probably offend a lot of you. I'm doing this **in love** in the only way that I know to wake you up. If I come and say nice things and everything like that, I'm not going to wake anybody up. So I'm not going to pull my punches.

Revelation 12:12 Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having **GREAT WRATH** [It is the wrath of Satan. The Great Tribulation, almost upon us now, is not the wrath of God but the wrath of Satan.], because he [Satan] knows he has but a short time.

How does he know? Because in Matthew 24:14 it says, Jesus said, **when** you see this gospel of the Kingdom being preached around the world, **then** you know that the Kingdom of God is near at hand and that the time is here. Satan knows that, but a lot of you don't believe it. Satan knows this Bible better than you do, and he knows he has but a short time. But some of us don't know what a short time he has, do we? I say, "Wake up, brethren." We've been asleep. This church has been drifting off into some kind of a spiritual dreamland.

Petra?

Revelation 12:13-14 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto

*the earth, he persecuted **the woman** which brought forth the man child. [That is **this Church**.] (14) And to the woman [Now we are coming down just before this Great Tribulation. “And to the woman...”] were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly...*

Now before this (back here in the sixth verse), beginning in 554 and even before that, for 1260 years the woman fled afoot. This time she is to fly. The woman is the Church. In other words, the Church...

***Revelation 12:14** ...were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place.*

Now the place, where is it? There's been great contention. I used to preach of the possibility it would be at Petra. Well, I don't know it will be at Petra; and I never said that I knew it would be. But others say, “Well, that's something we can get back at Herbert Armstrong. Let's just say he was wrong about that.” And some very high in the Church were saying that's a lot of rubbish and hogwash. I say to you now, I don't know whether it is Petra. I don't know where it is, or where it'll be. I know God knows. But I know this: there are many indications that it is Petra. And if it isn't Petra, then the Bible gives us absolutely no indication of where it will be. Now that much I know, and I'll stand my ground on any of you that want to come and face me with it. I have been to Petra, and it is not a very pleasant place to be. Well anyway, we're to be taken where we will be...

***Revelation 12:14** ...nourished for a time, and times, and half a time [That's three and a half years.], from the face of the serpent.*

We will be protected from the devil, but then now notice what the serpent does. Here comes the Laodicean Church that follows us.

***Revelation 12:15** And the serpent cast out...*

We are getting into the Laodicean condition, but we are not the

Laodicean Church; and this shows it—because the Church of Philadelphia is to be taken into this place, and we have not been taken (nor any other church, as yet). But after that:

***Revelation 12:15-17** The serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman [Now, that's the last part of the Church, the Laodicean Era.], that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. (16) And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened up her mouth, and swallowed up the flood, which the dragon cast out of his mouth. (17) And the dragon was **wroth** with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed.*

The remnant is the last one, or the Laodicean Era. But a lot of ministers now come out with some of the younger ministers and say, “Oh, that’s all hodge-podge and all. Mr. Armstrong is wrong.” We had here a doctrinal committee of intellectuals, and the whole idea was “Let’s try and study intellectually to find out how wrong Mr. Armstrong is, and where he’s misled us.” That was THE REAL OBJECT. Well, there isn’t any such committee any longer; and there isn’t going to be. God doesn’t reveal His will to intellectual scholars, on the intellectual basis, that go into it in little tiny ways. (Oh well, I don’t know. I get disgusted with some of that.) Anyway, [Satan, the dragon] he...

***Revelation 12:17** ...went to make war with the remnant...that keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.*

Now the Laodicean Church will be keeping the commandments of God and the testimony of Jesus, or they wouldn’t be the Church of God. But they are lukewarm, and they are asleep; and we’re not Laodicea yet.

The Church’s Dominant Condition

Now then, I want you to turn back to the third chapter of Revelation,

and notice something about this Church; and we begin here with the seventh verse.

Revelation 3:7 And unto the angel of the church in Philadelphia...

Oh, let me tell you what I have always said for fifty years. Fifty years ago I was writing this. The message to the seven angels of the seven Churches in the second and third chapter of Revelation has a **dual** interpretation and meaning. Number one: it is telling of the seven successive eras, or stages of time in 1900 to 2000 years, of the Church. But number two: it was telling of the condition in the Church at all times. But it starts out with the Church at Ephesus; and that was the situation that was the dominant situation in the first and second century, and so on—back at the beginning, in the days (and right after the days) of the original apostles.

Laodicea is the **DOMINANT** condition in the **FINAL** Church—drowsy, and asleep, and lukewarm. And Christ is going to spew them (most of them) out of His mouth (or at least half of them). Matthew 25 would indicate half of them, and I sometimes wonder if there are half of us that... We're just not very much **on fire for God**, brethren. I say that to your shame, every one of you. I say wake up! I'm not going to say, "You're right, and everything is so wonderful, and everything is going fine." and flatter you. I'm going to tell you the truth, and sometimes the truth hurts. And I hope it hurts. I hope it hurts enough that you wake up, and realize, and do something about it. And I hope that you go home from this service, and get down on your knees, and ask for the mercy and the forgiveness of God, and ask Him to come back into your life—because that's what you need to do. And your eternity may depend on it!

Well, now then, I have said that the Laodicean condition will dominate at the tail end. But I have said that all of those conditions—all the way from Ephesus up to Laodicea, all seven—are present at all the time in the Church;

but that now, in the Philadelphian Era, **we** have the Laodicean condition. That's what I am talking about today. It's here. But we are not Laodicea. We also have the condition of Ephesus. We have lost our first love, and it is time to get back to it. Every one of those conditions is in this Church, but the dominant one is what I want to read you now.

An Open Door

***Revelation 3:7** To the church [of] Philadelphia [write], these things saith he that is holy, he that...*

I wish I didn't have a red letter Bible. It's so hard to see the red print, for these are the words of Christ.

***Revelation 3:7-8** These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that opens, and no man shuts; and shuts, and no man opens. (8) I know your works: Behold, I have set before you **an open door** .*

Now, if you trace that open door, in Paul's writings God set an open door before him. And you'll see there that an open door merely means, and it's a figure of speech that means, that **God opens the way** to get the message—and that's to get the gospel message—out. And He's opened a door (to go to the Gentiles and the nations of the Earth, and to the kings of those nations) **to us**.

***Revelation 3:8** Behold, I have set before thee an open door.*

That is, an open door to get the Gospel out. And the other Churches, before us, did not. The Gospel did not go to the world until this Church came to start taking it to the world. It absolutely was NOT preached at all. The Gospel is not just a man's message about Jesus Christ. It is Christ's message, which is the good news of the Kingdom of God; and that message has not

been preached for eighteen and a half centuries. Now then, for half a century it has been going out—through this Church, and through me. And, as they say today, you'd better believe it!

A Little Strength

Revelation 3:8 I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it. [They've certainly tried to shut it, but no one has been able to.] *For thou hast a little strength ...*

Another translation is “you have only a little strength,” but a little strength. They don't have much strength. And I've had very little, and you've had very little. But God has given us tremendous **power** to reach the world, and facilities that magnify that power—like radio, and television, and the printing press, and airplanes to fly us to all parts of the world, and telephones with instant communication to any and every part of the world. They didn't have that back in the first apostles' day.

Revelation 3:8 Thou hast but a little strength [here], and hast kept my word.

Brethren, often I have said this: that I have known scores of men with better minds than I have—not only more scholarly (because they have gone on with that), but more aptitude to be scholarly; with better personality; with more of everything that could be used. And God did not call a one of them. Now why did He call me? Well, I go right back to this. And, you know, some of them say that this “message to the angel of the Church” might mean to the one God placed as a leader, the human leader in the Church. And I would say that this does apply to me personally, and it should apply to the whole Church.

But there has been an effort to **water down the truth**. That's another

thing that has happened in the last 9 years. We're trying to water down the truth of God **with false doctrines** that have been creeping in; and ministers are teaching them, around the world even. Ministers of this Church! Now, believe you me, I AM GOING TO GET AFTER THOSE THINGS, AND FAST! **JESUS CHRIST IS IN POWER.** Jesus Christ is THE POWER back of it, and He is going to set these things in order. And, if any of you want to fight Christ, you start fighting Him; and see where you get off. Or if you want to go with the devil, maybe you'll suffer the devil's fate. I am speaking very plainly today. I'm a little wrought up about it.

Revelation 3:8 I know... [He knows our works. So there are **works**; and they're good works, and not rituals.] *Behold,* [He set this open door.] *you have but a little strength, and hast kept my word.*

I was going to say, if there is any one reason why God called me, it is because I was willing to believe what He said, and because I had kept His Word; and I have not compromised. Now there has been an effort on the part of some of our younger ministers to **compromise** in this last 9 years. They want to water down. They want to do away with tithing. Some of them wanted to do away with keeping the annual holy days and the annual festivals of God. They want to do away with God's truth in every way they can. Let me tell you, IF YOU DON'T TITHE (and some of you don't), YOU ARE STEALING. YOU ARE A THIEF, AND YOU ARE **STEALING FROM GOD.** I SAY THAT ON THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHRIST. Now, if you think I've insulted you, get up and walk out. I won't care a bit.

Revelation 3:9 ...which say they are Jews [You see, in the New Testament, he is a Jew who is one spiritually and not by birth. In other words, the Church; and they're not of the true Church.], *and are not, but do lie: Behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet* [Not to worship us; but worship before our feet, worshiping God.], *and to know that I have loved thee.*

You know that this Church is the only one of the seven that God doesn't find some fault with. He doesn't mention any fault, and yet we're full of faults. But God has told us this is one thing here—that **He has used us to get this message around the world.** And I have not... God has called me back for two reasons: One is to try to set this Church back in order, and to wake you people up. That's why I am here. Now, I feel like the apostle Paul. He said that he would rather go, depart and be with Christ. In other words, go to the sleep of death and wake up in the resurrection and be in the Kingdom of God. But he said, "It is more necessary for you that I shall stay on." And that's why I am here, brethren.

My job is hard. It's not easy. And I have to push myself. To do things now, I have to push myself about 10 times harder than I did twenty years ago. And still I am no older in mind and in power than I was twenty years ago. The rumors are going around that I am senile, that I don't know what's going on, my head is in a cloud. Do I sound like it? Did some other minister tell me to say these things that I'm saying? There are ministers sitting before me today that are going to disagree with what I have said. And no man gave me this, but **Jesus Christ did.** You better realize where it came from.

It didn't come from Stan Rader. But Stan Rader is a helper. And Stan Rader is NOT running this Church IN ANY MANNER, SHAPE, OR FORM. He is of very great value to me; and that's why they're trying to hit back at him, because he is serving in the Work. And nobody has one iota of evidence of anything wrong about him. But people will slander. And you people have been swallowing and believing a lot of that rot. You'd better swallow the Word of God and believe that, instead.

Revelation 3:10-11 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience [been faithful to the Word of God], I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. [In other words, the Great Tribulation.] (11) Behold...

Now other translations say: “I will keep thee from the great tribulation.” Other translations have it that way, that we are not to have to go through the Great Tribulation; and that’s what I showed you in Revelation 12. We are to have the two wings of a great eagle to fly. Now, of course, that is symbolic language; and I don’t know whether that means literal airplanes or what.

I will tell you one thing: Satan gets some ministers, even, to try to criticize the fact that God has opened doors for me before kings, and presidents, and prime ministers, and emperors; and they try to say that’s all wrong. I was supposed to be on July 4th in Jerusalem for the inauguration of a big downtown city park. And, because we’ve had something to do with the children’s playground part of it, someone said (and a top minister at that), “Mr. Armstrong wants to go over there to be there for a little kiddy park.” Now that is the kind of sarcasm, that is the kind of reflecting and accusing, that is **of Satan**. And I want you to recognize it for what it is, when you see it.

Let’s quit this slander. Let’s quit this defamation of character. Let’s quit this trying to assassinate people’s character. Character assassination. It’s been going on. I’m of this, that, and the other leader. Let’s get back of Christ. I say, “Follow me (as you heard in the sermonette) as I follow Christ.” I’d never ask you to follow me any other way.

Well, anyway, we are to be protected. I wanted to read that, part of that to you. Now, I’d like you to understand. Let’s go back and bring ourselves up-to-date. There was a time when the government of God was on this Earth. It filled the entire Earth; but, at that time, the Earth was inhabited by angels. We read in II Peter the second chapter [{1}](#) of “the angels that sinned.” And you read in the 14th chapter of Isaiah and in the 28th of Ezekiel about the super archangel, Lucifer (that was on the throne over the angels, and that led them into that sin), who was perfect in all of his ways from the day that God created him **until** iniquity or lawlessness and rebellion was found in him. He

became Satan—no longer the archangel, Lucifer. He is now Satan, and his angels that sinned are now demons. They are perverted and perverted in mind.

God's Great Purpose

God's greatest feat was what He then started. God's great purpose, and His greatest feat, (what He even intended for the angels) was to develop holy, righteous, perfect character. That's **the character of God**. That is, well, it comes from a right and a righteous attitude. It's the attitude of love, of giving, of serving, of helping. The other attitude is self-exaltation, of ignoring God and exalting yourself, of lust and greed, of coveting, of vanity, and of jealousy and envy, of competition and strife, and rebellion. And that is what has seized this world, and that is what has caused all the trouble in the world. To people in other nations (that don't understand the English language quite so well) I put it: the two ways. One is the way of get. The other is the way of give. Love is giving, and all this other is the way of getting for self.

God's greatest feat is to try to develop and create character, but God cannot Himself just automatically create it. Character is something that the one in whom the character comes has to make his own decision. And God has to leave us free to make that decision. He can't cause us to make it His way. He has to let us make it our own way. And that's what God did, and the angels chose the wrong way.

Now then, God then made man. But He made man out of matter, because the spirit beings (the angels) had failed. Now God says, "I am going to reproduce Myself." God said, "I..." And that "I" meant God the Father **and** the One who later became Christ. In other words, the Word [John 1:1] who was with God and who was also God—two different Beings, but forming **one God**, because God is a Family and not a person. (Of course, there is a

Father at the head of that Family that we think of as God.)

Adam's Choice

Anyway, He now created man for the purpose of forming that character; that we can do what the angels could have done, and which was their potential, but which they never realized. Now God made us of flesh, of matter of the ground, so that IF we followed Satan (and He left that decision to Adam, because He didn't know which way Adam would decide) that He had the plan of redemption through Christ—that we could then be forgiven, and brought back, and start all over again, and still develop that character.

Now man's great potential is this: When God created the Earth and when He created all of the planets, it was a good deal like, uh... Have you ever visited one of these shops of unfinished furniture? Well, I have; and we have. I have some furniture in my home that was purchased there. You save a little money because it's perfectly done, but it's all raw wood. And the varnish, the polish, or the paint or whatever has not been put on; and you do your own finishing; and you save some money. Brethren, that explains how God created the planets all over the universe, including this Earth, including our moon,

God never created anything in a state of decay, like we find them now. That is NOT the way God created it. Decay is the result of something that has gone down, that was once much better. But God DID NOT FINISH the work. And He had put angels on this Earth to finish the work—to beautify it, to glorify it and make it more beautiful; but, instead of that, they destroyed the earth. They went into destruction. He put man here for the same reason. Let's just notice next now, back in Genesis the first chapter.

Genesis 1: 1-2 *In the beginning God* [And the original Hebrew word is Elohim, which means more than one Person but only one God.] *created the*

heavens and the earth. (2) And the earth was [It came to be, or became...] without form and void.

The Hebrew words “tohu” and “bohu” mean chaotic, in confusion, waste and empty, or decayed.

But notice now, in Genesis, God had given Adam his **choice**. First God talked to him, and explained all about His own government, about His law, about His way of life. He explained of the opposite way. He explained the way of love, the way of giving, and helping, and serving, and sharing. He also explained how wrong the other way is. And he didn't allow Satan to come to the man and the woman, that He had created, until after God had taught them; and they had instruction directly from God.

Now, they believed in God. They knew He was their Creator and their Maker. But they did not believe Him. Then Satan came along, and they believed Satan. Adam said, in effect, “Look, Lord.” (I'll just put this in modern language. This is not the language in the Bible.) “I want You to get Your nose out of my affairs. Now I will decide for myself what I think is right and what I think is wrong. I reject You as my God that I should worship. I reject You as my Ruler, and I will not obey You. I want You to keep out of my affairs. I'll take care of myself.”

And so, then, God said in effect (and I am putting this in modern language) “Okay, Adam. It was your decision. You heard me. You heard Satan. You believed Satan. You did not believe what I told you. **YOU HAVE MADE THE CHOICE**. You have made **THE DECISION**. You have passed up the Tree of Life that would connect God's Holy Spirit and would have given you immortal life. You have chosen to take for yourself the knowledge of what is right and what is wrong, the knowledge of good and evil. **THEREFORE I SENTENCE YOU** to just what you have asked for: For six thousand years, to be absolutely... You and your children after you (that form

the whole world) to be cut off from Me for six thousand years. Now after that, I will come down and rule. (And the One who is talking was the One who is Christ and who is coming.) I will come and rule Myself for a thousand years.”

Man Cut Off From God

So, notice here now in the third chapter of Genesis, verse 22:

Genesis 3:22-24 The [Eternal] God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now , **lest he** put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever [Lest he gets God’s Holy Spirit.]: (23) Therefore the [Eternal] God sent him [That’s Adam.] forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. (24) So he drove out the man [But He placed a curse on that ground even, “thorns and thistles it shall bring forth.” So He drove out the man...]; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims [or angels, archangels], and a flaming sword which turned every way, to **KEEP** the way of the tree of life [**LEST he** go back and gain immortal life].

Man was shut off. Now, that is God’s responsibility. If God shut mankind off and if God has sentenced man to be cut off from Him, God is not condemning them; and they’re not going (as most churches believe) to hell. They are not saved, but they are not lost. Understand that. The world has been going its own way. And God knew that Satan would be here; and, in all probability, man would follow Satan. But remember that He had a way that we could come to our senses; and we could see how wrong that way was after having tasted of it, vomit it up, and get rid of it. And through Christ, we could be redeemed; and we could yet get eternal life, and have that Tree of Life—or the Spirit of God.

Some Selected By God

God also reserved to Himself the right to choose—for His own special service, or use, for whatever He would want to be done—certain ones. Now then, God called Noah. Here was the world, and there was not a one of them that knew anything about God. There was not a one that was righteous. Of all the millions and billions of people that were on Earth in the time of Noah, there was only the one, Noah, who would listen to God and believe God and do what God said. So God saved Noah and his family, because of Noah, to start humanity all over again; and the rest were drowned in the Flood.

Later, God called Abraham. And, lo and behold, there was a man that, when God called him, he didn't say, "Well, but Lord, I can't do it." Or, "Can't I wait?" Or, "Do I have to?" Or, "There is some reason why I think I couldn't do it." It just says that, when God called Abraham to get out of the bright lights and the gaiety of Babylon (where he was in his father's country) and go to a land that God would show him—it just says Abraham (or Abram, as he was called then) **went**. He departed. He did what God would say. That is a rare thing.

But later, God then called Moses (430 years later) to lead the descendants of Abraham, that now were at least 3 million people, out of the slavery they had gotten into in Egypt. Now Moses didn't say okay right away. Moses said, "Oh, but Lord, I can't do it." (At that burning bush, where God spoke to him.) Moses was not seeking God. **GOD WAS CALLING MOSES**. But Moses said, "Lord, I can't do it. You see I've got an impediment of speech. I stutter, and I couldn't. The people wouldn't understand me."

Well, God said, "Look, I know all about that; and I've taken care of that. I've provided your brother, Aaron, to be your spokesman. But you will do what I said." And Moses did. Now Moses was 80 years old when he started. And 40 years later Moses—his strength of mind and force—had not

abated one iota. But his job was finished, and God let him die. God buried him; and no man knows where, and has ever found out, from that day to this.

Under Moses: after the children of Israel arrived over into Mount Sinai, God propositioned them that they could become His nation, and have His government over them, and gave them great promises. Now in Exodus the 19th chapter, beginning in verse 4:

Exodus 19:4-5 You have seen [God said] what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto myself. (5) Now therefore, **IF YOU WILL OBEY** my voice [That is, come under His government, let Him be their ruler.], and keep my covenant [which is a marriage agreement, and an agreement that set them up as a nation], then you shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine.

He **did not** promise them salvation. He **did not** promise them the Holy Spirit. He **did** give His Holy Spirit to Noah. He **did** give His Holy Spirit to Moses, but not to these people. He only promised that they would be the leading nation on Earth. They would become more wealthy than any other nation, and they would be the leading nation.

That nation, that God then called through Moses, was a type of the Church; and Moses was a type of Christ. That Church was a flesh-born Church with only fleshly promises. They had no promise of eternal life or salvation. They were a type of the Church today, and Christ is the Head of this Church. We have the promise of immortal life.

Now, notice the difference and how the one is the type of the other. Israel was carnal. The Church today is supposed to be spiritual, but most of us have gotten ourselves carnal. Now, how did the Israelites perform? If you will notice next now, in Jeremiah the third chapter, God said here to them:

Jeremiah 3:2 Lift up your eyes unto the high places, and see where thou hast not been lien with.

He said they were harlots and had committed more harlotry than any whore, any human whore, that had ever lived. He said a human harlot charges for her services, but you have paid. You're the woman who has paid others. (In other words, your allies that you have made an arrangement with.) And today we have our allies. We are doing the same thing, the United States. That's why I tell you the United States is doomed and is not going to exist a certain number of years from now, and that's in our time.

God Can Hold Something Up

I want to tell you, brethren, while I think of it: There was a picture that I happened to see on television in this past week, called "The Earthquake." I don't know whether some of you happened to see it or not. I don't know whether it was shown here. I saw it down in Tucson.

And, incidentally, I have not moved away from Pasadena, or away from headquarters, at all. I am still at headquarters; and I still have my home here, the same as I always did. But I have a home on the campus in Big Sandy. And I still have a home on the campus in England—although I've taken a great deal of things out of it, and lots of furnishings and things; and I never go there anymore, but it was there. That doesn't mean that I'd ever move away from here. That's another lie that they're trying to get over to you: that I have moved away from headquarters. I have done nothing of the kind! I am right here at headquarters. I had a very hard day, all day yesterday, in my office; and expect to have more tomorrow morning.

Anyhow, here all of a sudden, this earthquake hit people just like that (when they least expected it, and all of a sudden); and it was a frightful picture. It showed the havoc. It showed big buildings just crashing and

coming down, the epicenter of the earthquake right under, and I think it was supposed to be Los Angeles. Of course, they didn't say just what city and so on. It was showing what an earthquake can be like, and it was showing what might happen; and it could happen right here.

Here is the thing, brethren, that you don't know: We go along day-to-day careless, each doing his own thing. And we don't realize, in the meantime, Satan is very busy; and Christ is also on the job. And **suddenly**, like a mouse getting caught in a trap... He doesn't know it. He doesn't see it. The first thing he knows, he's caught and can't get out.

I used to catch a lot of rats in a trap when I was eight years old, and nine years old. I remember I had had my ninth birthday. I was in Union, Iowa. We had moved up there for a little time. I tell you, those rats would get in that trap. They didn't know until they were in it, and it would snap shut on them; and they couldn't get out. That is going to happen to many of you! I am warning you now. Some of you—matter of fact, maybe most of you—will ignore it; and you will just go on taking it easy. All of a sudden, it is going to strike; and Christ warned us that, "*in such an hour as you think not,*" it is going to happen. We are very close to the end time.

I was asked by a minister just the other day: did I think that our Work would come to an end and be finished within a year? No, frankly, I don't; but I don't know. I do know this. I know that apparently God has been holding off things, and delaying our coming to the end, for at least 6, 8, years now, or more. Maybe it is because this Church was getting drowsy; and He wanted time for me to come to realize it, and maybe for you to realize it and wake up.

You find, in the seventh chapter of Revelation, how God sent an angel to say, "Wait, **hold up** (what was going to happen, the plagues that were coming) **until** I have done something that I want done." That was the sealing

in their forehead of the 144,000 and another innumerable multitude of all nations. Now, God can hold something up; and there's an example of where He did. On the other hand, Jesus said that, when the time comes, He would cut everything short; and make a speedy, quick, work of it. These things can happen so quick you wouldn't know it. So you can't afford to take chances. All I can do is warn you. You can sit there, and ignore it, and be caught like a rat in a trap. That's up to you.

Acknowledge Sin And Repent

Let's see. I wanted to begin a little more here in verse 12. Well, I didn't read all of this here. They were in harlotry. In other words, going after other gods instead of the true God. They were considered as God's wife, and He was their Husband. Now the Church is the affianced Bride to marry Christ in the resurrection. So we're engaged to Christ; but they had already formed a union. They were physical; and we are spiritual, if we have God's Holy Spirit.

Jeremiah 3:2-3 In the ways hast thou sat for them [like a whore], as the Arabian in the wilderness; and thou hast polluted the land with thy whoredoms and with thy wickedness. (3) Therefore the showers have been withholden [God sends the rain on the just and unjust alike, but sometimes He withholds the rain; and God has the power to do that.], and there hath been no latter rain; and thou hadst a whore's forehead, thou refusedst to be ashamed.

What about some of you, brethren? Do you refuse to be ashamed? Do you refuse to acknowledge that we've been lackadaisical—in going along and taking it easy, and beginning to forget God? Will you acknowledge that you have been lax in your prayer life, and in the study of the Bible; and you've grown disinterested in the Bible Studies? And maybe... I don't know what

you have been getting in the Bible Studies, but maybe you have been getting something that was not inspiring. Well, I am going to continue on the same line I am talking now. And, if you don't like it, don't come next Friday night—because I am going to be here, and the Bible Studies are going to continue. I didn't ask anybody. I didn't get a vote of a group, or a committee, or any thing of the kind. I just simply tell you that because I know what Christ wants. Christ has told me to tell you that, and I have told you. (Now, beginning with verse 12.)

Jeremiah 3:12-13 Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, RETURN, thou backsliding Israel, saith the [Eternal]; and I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you. [That is what He is saying to us now. Now, that Church is a type of us. And the things written about them were written for our learning and admonition, on whom the ends of the world are coming, in the New Testament. “And I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you.”] *For I am merciful, saith the [Eternal], and I will not keep anger forever. (13) Only **acknowledge thine iniquity*** [And I say to you—and I am speaking by the authority of Jesus Christ, and Jesus Christ says to you through me now—only acknowledge your lethargy; only acknowledge you're sleeping, and drowsiness, and that you have been getting away from God.], *that thou hast transgressed against the [Eternal] thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the [Eternal].*

Notice that Israel, how they went until finally they were driven out into slavery. The first Church lost its first love. Solomon started out like a whirlwind; and he just wanted wisdom so he could rule the people better, to serve God. But he ended up with a thousand women and serving their gods. Many of the kings of ancient Judah were like that. They started out all right, but they wound up wrong at the end.

I have seen that. And now, as I am, well, like Moses was in older years,

that God is using me. That does not mean that I am going to die tomorrow or next week. I think God is going to keep me here until this Work is finished. I said that I had been brought back **to try to wake you up**. But there is another reason. That is **to finish the Work** around the world. God is going to give me the strength to do it. He says:

Jeremiah 3:14 Turn O backsliding children, saith the [Eternal] [And He says the same thing to you today.]; for I am married unto you. [Now, for us today, He is not married to us; but He is engaged to us. But it is virtually the same thing, where the marriage won't take place until we are made immortal.] And I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion.

Now, that was what He said to ancient Israel; but that is a warning of what He is saying **to us** today.

Departing From The Living God

Now then, I want you to go a little further. Notice in Hebrews, in the New Testament now if you will, the third chapter. The third chapter of Hebrews, beginning with verse seven. I don't want to read the other verses. You read it all at home. I don't want to read it all now.

Hebrews 3:7-9, 12 Wherefore as the Holy Spirit saith, Today if ye will hear his voice, (8) Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation [In other words, like those Israelites did that I just read to you about. Now He says... This is New Testament. This is to us, brethren. And some of us have let our hearts get a little bit hardened.], in the day of temptation in the wilderness: (9) When your fathers tempted me [provoked Me]... (12) Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

If ever this Church needed that, it's right now today. Now God just says to **take heed**, and I am telling you. **AND GOD IS USING MY VOICE TO DO IT! AND YOU BETTER LISTEN, BECAUSE IT COMES FROM THE CREATOR GOD. Do you TREMBLE BEFORE THE WORD OF GOD? I'M GIVING IT TO YOU. YOU BETTER TREMBLE BEFORE THESE THINGS. I AM FRIGHTENED, BRETHREN. THIS CHURCH IS IN MORTAL DANGER!**

Hebrews 3:12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

That's exactly what we've been doing! And, always, it seemed that people started all right; and then they want to ease off, as time goes on.

Hebrews 3:14 For we are made partakers of Christ [Have you forgotten that, brethren? We are made partakers of Christ.], IF we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end.

But we are not holding it steadfast to the end. We are slipping, and we're getting on very dangerous ground; and Satan is winning that battle. But Christ is on the Father's throne! And if we are willing, He will **restore everything** to this Church; and that is the good news. Jesus Christ has shown me, and He has awakened me to the condition of things. Now maybe I was slumbering a little bit. All right. I've repented, if I did. So, I'm awake. And I'm going to have guts (if that's what it takes) and the courage TO TELL YOU WHAT NEEDS TO BE SAID. If you agree, you will save your own eternity. And if not, it will be a witness against you.

A Better Covenant

Now the eighth chapter of Hebrews, verse one.

Hebrews 8:1, 6 Now of the things which we have spoken, this is the

sum: We have such an high priest [They only had Moses back there. But we today have such an high priest, Christ...], who is set on the right hand of the throne [of God] of the Majesty in the heavens... [Let's see. I want to read now the sixth verse.] (6) But now hath he [Christ] obtained a more excellent ministry [That is, more excellent than Moses had.], by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant.

That covenant made them a nation, but with no spiritual promises—no salvation, or eternal life. We have the promise of eternal life. We have the promise of going throughout all of the universe and finishing (like you finish unfinished furniture)...and finishing God's creation. But now it is in a state of decay; and God is going to use us, if we'll develop this character, to go into all of the Universe some day. That's after the thousand years on Earth though. **A better covenant—the new covenant**— will make us the Kingdom of God, God's nation to rule the whole world.

***Hebrews 8:6** ...a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.*

Their promise was only to be a great nation in this world—physical, material wealth and leadership. We have the promise of immortal life and the tremendous... (Why can't I think of that word now that I want? Sometimes a name will escape me, and sometimes a word.) But the potential, that's what I was trying to think. The tremendous potential that is ours! Now go back to the fourth chapter of Hebrews for a moment. Hebrews 4, and beginning with the 14th verse on to the 16th.

***Hebrews 4:14-15** Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. (15) For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities.*

Look. I know this: I have been weak. I have not been perfect. But I

know that I can go to that throne of grace; and Christ is there on His Father's throne listening, and the Father is listening. And Christ has gone through all of this, just like I have. Now the difference is Christ was tempted in all points like we are, but He didn't sin. But He had been tempted, and He knows what it is. It is not only the temptation described in the fourth chapter of Matthew, when He had fasted 40 days and 40 nights; and the devil came at him. But listen. The devil gets at us through the human spirit that is in us. And Jesus Christ was hearing that temptation, and Satan was trying to pour it into His mind every day—and every hour of every day—that He lived. The difference is this: that He was so **close to God**, and He **knew the will of God**. When Satan was pouring opposite things, He just rejected it right there. He never got into it, and never let it conceive and take root in Him, and to sin. That's the difference between Christ and us. We have done it.

But we have Someone that can understand that we are human. He knows we are human. He knows our weaknesses. He is a forgiving God. And if we'll only turn back to Him, He will just open up His arms and receive us and love us. And you don't know how **the love of God** can come into your minds and your hearts, and how much He can love you. God loves this Church. I have been sort of shouting out at you today, because I think we have to have it. But God is love; and I love you all, and I want you to love me. But sometimes it takes some plain speaking. Sometimes a parent has to speak that way to children. And, directly or indirectly, you are all my children in the Lord; and I have to speak to you as a father would.

***Hebrews 4:14-16** Seeing then that we have A GREAT HIGH PRIEST [Christ], that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God , **let us hold fast our profession** . [Some of us are letting it slip. We are not holding it very fast.] (15) For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feelings of our infirmities [He understands, and He knows; and He will forgive our weaknesses that we have had.], but was in all points tempted like*

as we are, yet without sin. (16) Let us therefore come BOLDLY unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

Now that's what Christ wants; and He is just waiting with open arms to receive all of us, if we will come back to Him.

Now there is Satan, who is the prince of the power of the air; and he is broadcasting. And he is getting just through into our minds—not in words, not in pictures (like radio or television). But he is putting **impulses**; and he is putting into our minds **attitudes** of vanity, of trying to do our own thing, of self-exultation, of competition. And there has been competition among the ministers, and we've got to have cooperation together. I want to tell you that the ministers at the helm today are as one unit, cooperating; and we're going to have that cooperation. And anyone that will not cooperate will be talked to. And then, if he isn't willing to cooperate, he just won't be part of the team any longer. That's all.

A Call To Repentance

Satan is the prince of the power of the air. Now, in II Corinthians 11, the apostle Paul said to the Church at Corinth [paraphrasing verse 3], "I fear lest, as Eve was tempted by Satan, so you will be misled and deceived by that same Satan." And that's to us today, in the New Testament. II Timothy 3 and on, where he says how it will be in the last days: that men would love themselves, and how they would come to be sleepy, and asleep at the switch. And that is the way we are. I Peter 5 {2}, how Satan is going about like a roaring lion seeking whom he may devour. God is calling us to a repentance. And this Church needs to repent, and it needs to go to its knees.

Now, brethren, all I can do is tell you. I know I am going to fight to try to see, through the great mercy of Christ, that He will be forgiving to me; and

let me into His kingdom. I want all of you to be there with me. That is why I poured out my heart to you today, and I hope that we are going to begin to take this a little seriously. This Church has needed a shaking up.

I hope that there will be at least two or three of you here next Friday night, and I will be here to see you at that time. And then on the Sabbath, next Sabbath, I probably will do another television...in fact, it will be two programs. I already have eight television programs that will start a week from tomorrow on many stations; and as fast as we can get the stations, it will be coast to coast. People have said that without the radio this Church is going to go down. Well, the radio and television are going right on—more powerfully than ever, brethren.

You'll find that, once our hearts are right, God will build this Church up. If this Church has not been growing, it is not. The membership is even going down, not gaining. Brethren, **THAT OUGHT TO WARN YOU!** That ought to **WAKE US UP!** All we have to do is get ourselves right with God, each one of us. I can only get myself right, and I can plead with you; and that is all I can do. But, once we do it (and if you will join me in trying to **get back to God**, as I am for myself), I want to tell you that this Church will leap forward bigger than it did for the first 35 years when it grew faster, and more steadily, than any organization I have ever heard of.

But God has withdrawn His blessings on His Church. The Work has not been growing. The Church has been even going down, and losing; and there are not as many members today as there were a year ago. There were not as many members then as the year before. Now the time has come for us to get a revival within our own hearts. It ought to strike home to us and condemn us, to think of that. **IT'S OUR FAULT.** And I'm not only talking to you that I see here today. I am talking to the other Churches that will hear this on tape recording all over the world.

Unitedly, brethren, let's get back. Let's get on our knees, and let's get back to Christ.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - The correct reference is II Peter 2:4. In the original Mr. Armstrong said, "in II Peter the third chapter."

[{2}](#) - The scripture referred to is I Peter 5:8. In the original Mr. Armstrong said, "I Peter and 5, 4 and 5."

Zerubbabel's Temple

Sermon (July 21, 1978)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Zerubbabel's Temple.....	145	Back To Malachi	166
God Held Things Up	147	Tithing For Us Today	168
F.O.T. Opening Night Message 1978	148	Closing The Campus In 1948	170
Talking To The Church	155	Preaching For Pay	172
How Did Mr Armstrong Know He Was An Apostle?	158	What If Something Happens To Mr. Armstrong?	173
We Must Work!	158	Who's In Charge?	173
Why Not Stay In Pasadena?	160	Ministers Changing Doctrines	173
A Different Temple	161	Burying The Truth	175
The Book Of Zechariah	164	Apostle, One Sent	176
Messenger Of The Covenant	165		

Greetings everybody. I just want to first announce to you that, before the Bible Study tonight, I'm going to do about a 15 minute televised talk that will be shown in all the Feast sites on the opening night. And it'll be quite brief. When I've been making the circuit, speaking at every Feast site, of course I had to give a full sermon on the opening night wherever I was; or I couldn't get around to enough different sites in the eight days. I've been visiting as many as I believe 12 sites in the eight days. And in some cases I had to speak twice, at two different Feast sites the same day. And so, I'll record this first; and then we'll have a Bible Study.

I'm a little disappointed that there're so few people out tonight. Someone told me they didn't know that I would be here. And that is very discouraging, and very disheartening. I tell you, brethren, I'm going to write an article on the purpose of the Church. I don't think many of our people know it, or else most of our people just want to finally become ashes under the soles of the feet of the few of us some day, in the Lake of Fire.

We're not taking this thing seriously. We're in the very last days. There isn't much time left. And I tell you the reaction is pretty discouraging. This Church has been going down, **DOWN, DOWN!** I can't bear it all up single-handed and alone. I've got to have some of you to back me up. I get letters from one now and then, "We're back of you 100%". Well, I need more—100% of the people to be back of me.

This Church has to been letting down **spiritually**. We're told to not forsake the assembling of ourselves together, and so much the more as we see the day approaching. And I guess we don't see it approaching, do we? Well, I think I may talk on that a little bit. And I will announce now that the next time I'm here... I can't tell you now if it'll be next Friday night, or not. But the next time I'm here, I'm going to get back to prophecy. **WHERE ARE WE NOW IN PROPHECY?** I understand that our ministers are not, so far as I know, not any of them have been preaching on prophecy for the last two years.

It seems like we've all got discouraged. Maybe we didn't understand the prophecies? Maybe they're not being fulfilled? Maybe they're not working out? Well, **I'LL EXPLAIN THAT!** It's a lot later than you think! But God has been holding up things. Did you ever read in the seventh chapter of Revelation how, when we get to the place that we haven't reached yet—that will be after the Great Tribulation, and after God sends these terrific, well, mind-shattering-almost signs in the heavens (in the stars, the sun, and the moon) to sort of shock this world into realizing that there is a God after all; and that He's beginning to intervene; and instead of the things going right on that are scheduled to go at that time, and the last plagues, and the Second Coming of Christ—God sends an angel, and says, "Wait a minute. Hold up. I still got something else, that we've got to hold up till it gets done."

God Held Things Up

Do you know that is what happened after 1972? And GOD HAS HELD THINGS UP UNTIL THIS JOB GETS DONE. So, we get discouraged. And we decide, “Well, my Lord delays His coming. Maybe He’s not going to come at all.” Now, what I’m saying is for the empty seats that are not filled. Obviously, it’s not for you people that are here. It’s just too bad that the ones who need it aren’t here to hear it. (It was very disheartening to me to find that we were going to suspend the Bible Studies for the summer.)

Now, where are the ministers? We used to have the front row filled with ministers. I don’t see a one. Is there a minister here? I can’t see you over there. [Laughter] I’m glad there’s some one here. A lot of the ministers think, “Oh well, I don’t need to go unless I speak. And if it’s that Herbert Armstrong speaking, I don’t want to hear him any more anyhow.” I don’t know whether that’s what you think or not. I know none of you would be here if God hadn’t used me. I wonder how many of you think you would be here if I hadn’t been used? Now, if you do, you had better think twice.

Brethren, let me tell you, I’ve been working harder these last 3 or 4 weeks than I have worked at any time in the last 15 years. I’m getting more done. I’m getting more accomplished. It’s pretty hard to go against everything, when everybody just lays down and does nothing. We need to wake up! I tell you; but, if you don’t wake up, I can’t do it for you. God have **mercy** on your soul if you don’t! (That’s all I can say.) And some of you are going to need it.

And now I want to get my voice down a little bit, if I can, for this; because you will hear this again on the television screen the opening night of the Feast, wherever you are. I might mention now, before I start, that I am planning tentatively, if God is willing, to be at the site they tell me is the largest of the Feast sites—at St. Petersburg, Florida—for the opening night and

for the first holy day. And they probably will have to hear this a day or so later, or else not hear it at all, because I will be there in person on that opening night. And I won't say much more than I'm saying here, because I'm not going to preach a whole sermon on that night (I believe it's a Sunday night. I'll have to check that with the calendar again.); and then preach a whole sermon on the next day.

But, naturally, I'm not making any effort to cover all the Feast sites in the United States and Canada again this year, as I have done. (At least one Feast site in Canada several years, up until last year.) And last year I was just starting to recover from complete heart failure, and I wasn't able to attend the Feast at all. But God has brought me back, and I am here. Well, I tell you, the day is coming; and Christ needs the Church all **prepared and ready**. And I think we're a long way from that. I don't know how to wake you people up! I frankly don't. I just sort of give up.

Now, if you men with the television screens are ready, I'll open up. And we're going to have to pretend that this is the opening night now of the Feast of Tabernacles, if you will for just about 15 minutes.

F.O.T. Opening Night Message 1978

Well, greetings everybody! Once again, let me ask—as I used to ask time and time again, year after year, at these Festivals—WHY ARE WE HERE?

I wonder if you realize that this is the largest annual Church conclave, or convention, on the face of the Earth. Now there was, at one time, I think a larger number of people than we have at any one site, meeting in the Rose bowl. I don't remember whether it was Jehovah's Witness, or Mormons, or who; but there was something. But that was only one time; and it didn't happen the next year, or the year before. But ours is a Festival that comes year after year, in Feast sites all over this world. And we have almost 100,000

attending in the combined Feast sites all over the various parts of this world.

Now, these annual Festivals were **ordained of God**, not by man. And, if God did it, then He had a reason. And, if God did it, it's very IMPORTANT that we REALIZE THAT REASON. Very important! Now, why did He ordain these Festivals? Because our God, our Creator, knew that His people need to be reminded, year after year, of what is the most important thing in the lives of us who are His people—to be reminded of what God has prepared for us, if we love Him.

[** *Loud noise at 10:56.*]

I Corinthians 2:8-9 Which none of the princes of this world knew {1} [heads of big business; big banks; leaders in every walk of life in the world]: *for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. (9)* *But as it is written, [Now listen.] Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, neither has it entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for them that love him.*

How does knowledge come into your mind? How do you come to know anything at all? How do you know everything you ever came to know? Well, it's about 95-98% through your eyes and ears; and the rest will come through the sense of smell, taste, or feel. But it continues:

I Corinthians 2:10 *God has revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yea the deep things of God.*

And so these things are revealed by God—the things that God has in store for us. To us, these Festivals are the most important things in our lives. But the last few years we've been getting lazy. We're getting into **the Laodicean condition**. And that is the condition in which Jesus Christ says He will SPEW US out of His mouth! You spit out of your mouth things you don't want in there any longer, and I think we'd better wake up!

To us, these Festivals are important; but many of us are not considering them any longer as important as we ought. Now, last year, I heard reports of some Feast sites that **NOT ONE WORD** during the whole eight days was spoken **BY ANY MINISTER** of telling **WHY THEY WERE THERE; WHAT THE FESTIVALS MEAN; WHAT IS THE MEANING OR THE PURPOSE OF HAVING THE FESTIVAL ANY WAY.** And some wrote, “I could get better sermons if I’d stayed at home than if to have gone.”

I tell you, we need to **wake up!** And the ministry needs **to wake up!** God’s ministers need a new **SPIRIT OF URGENCY** and **POWER.** Jesus Christ, the **LIVING HEAD OF THE CHURCH,** has been moving swiftly these last couple of months (these three or four months) to put His Church **BACK ON THE TRACK**—and so much the more, because we now see the day approaching when Christ is going to appear.

WE are in that generation. And **WE** are the ones that are getting sleepy. And we’re **ASLEEP AT THE SWITCH,** brethren. And we’re deciding that “**MY LORD DELAYETH HIS COMING. LET’S SLUMBER, AND SLEEP.**” We read in the 25th chapter in Matthew, while some of them were sleeping like that—the Lord came, and **THE DOOR WAS SHUT.** And they pounded on the door, and tried to get in. But Christ is going to say to those, “Go away, I never knew you. You haven’t known Me. And you haven’t cared.”

So I’ve assigned, to the ministers that are speaking here and at the various Feast sites, **THE IMPERATIVE OBLIGATION** to preach the meaning and the purpose of these Festivals. Not only the Feast of Tabernacles, but **all** the Festivals that show **THE MASTER PLAN** of God working out His purpose here below. Now, I plan to speak on this very theme tomorrow, on the first of the holy days.

Let me say that this is the 51st year of these Festivals for me. I first

began keeping them with my wife—my wife of 50 years, who was taken from me in death now way over 11 years ago. (But, God has given me another wife, finally.) But she and I began keeping these Festivals alone for seven years because we told the brethren that I had discovered that they were ordained forever; and that we should be keeping them now. That Christ did. The early Apostles did. The early Church did. And, when I told the brethren in the Church then (and they were the Church that we find described as the SARDIS CHURCH in the Bible, the one that was spiritually dead), they laughed me to scorn. That’s all. And they would not keep these festivals. And, so far as I know, those same people have not begun to keep them even to this day.

And my wife and I kept them for 7 years until the parent Church of this PHILADELPHIA ERA of the Church was founded, in August of 1933 in Eugene, Oregon. And that is the parent Church. And so, I’ve been continuing to keep these Festivals for 51 years. I know, I’m the only one here that can say that. But I just want to tell you how much gratitude it gives me to see that it has grown into what is now the largest Festival, or convention, or conclave held by any Church, or religious organization, or group on the face of this Earth every year. So now, there will be announcements. I will see you again tomorrow. And so I will say, “Good night.” until tomorrow.

Zerubbabel’s Temple, Bible Study

Now maybe we can get back to what I thought I would bring you tonight as a Bible Study. Maybe I should have gone right into the prophecies, but I had something else that I thought I would go through. Did you ever wonder about **THE TEMPLE THAT CHRIST IS COMING TO?** Now, you read in Malachi, the first chapter. I mean the third chapter, and the first verse:

Malachi 3:1 Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me.

Now, that messenger was a human messenger and for Christ's First Coming. You'll read in the first chapter of Mark and beginning with verses 1, 2, and 3, and along in there, that it was John the Baptist, preparing the way before the First Coming.

***Malachi 3:1** And the Lord whom you seek [which is Jesus Christ], shall SUDDENLY come to his temple...*

Well, what about that? Where is THAT TEMPLE?

Now, I remember we were discussing that over at Bricket Wood some ten years ago. And we said, "Well, is there any indication that the Jews are going to build a Temple?" And there was a rumor that maybe the Jews, when they took Jerusalem in the Six Day War... And that was back. In fact, that was just after my wife died, in the year 1967. The Israelis took over the old city of Jerusalem. And Jerusalem (You know, like the city of Berlin.) had been a divided city up to that time. And many of us wondered at that time if the Jews were going to demolish the Dome of the Rock, which is the large Moslem Temple there, and build a Temple to which Christ would come. But I don't know why we didn't understand. IT'S VERY, VERY PLAIN IN THE BIBLE ABOUT THAT TEMPLE, and I thought maybe it would be good if I explained that to you tonight.

The Book Of Haggai

Now these books in the Old Testament are not so called "Old Testament stuff." THEY WERE WRITTEN FOR US. I'm going now to the book of Haggai. What I just read was in the last book in the Old Testament [{2}](#), in Malachi. But, these books were written at a time when BOTH Israel and Judah were IN CAPTIVITY. And the only people in Jerusalem was that small contingent, comparatively small, of the Jews who had been sent back 70 years after the destruction of the Temple (which means about, let me see, that would be right around 475 BC) to build the second Temple. And so, as a

matter of fact, this book of Haggai talks about the building of that second Temple. As it starts out, you may think this is just some old history. Oh, no, it isn't. This is **a prophecy for NOW**. So, let's listen.

Haggai 1:1 In the second year...

This is Haggai—just about the second or third to the last book in the Old Testament.

Haggai 1:1 In the second year of Darius the king [And this was the Medo-Persian Empire now], in the sixth month, in the first day of the month, came the word of the [Eternal] to Haggai, the prophet, unto Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel [Now Zerubbabel is the governor of Judah.], and to Joshua [who is the high priest] the son of Josedech, saying, Thus speaketh the [Eternal] of hosts, saying, This people say, The time is not come, the time that the Lord's house should be built.

You know, that's a prophecy for today. And that's what we're saying today. And when you see what **the Lord's house** is, you will see that what I've been saying to you up to now is absolutely true.

Haggai 1:3-4 Then came the word of the [Eternal] by Haggai the prophet saying, (4) Is it time for you, Oh ye, to dwell in your ceiled houses, and this house lie in waste?

The Temple—they were sent there to build the second Temple of God, and that's the one that was still there extant at the time that Jesus Christ came. Only the Roman king, Herod (who was king over that part of the Roman Empire occupied by the Jews at that time) had added some to it, and had enlarged it somewhat; but it was the same Temple.

Haggai 1:4 Is it time for you, Oh ye, to dwell in your ceiled houses, and this house lie waste?

Many of us are more concerned about the houses in which we live than the House of God that I'm going to show you about.

Haggai 1:5-6 *Now therefore thus saith the [Eternal] of hosts; Consider your ways.* [Now, this is true today. Notice this.] *(6) Ye have sown much, and ye bring in little; ye eat, but ye have not enough; ye drink, but ye are not filled with drink; ye clothe you, but there is none warm; and he that earneth wages earneth wages to put into a bag with holes.*

Do you recognize that as being true today? Inflation is going up, and the value of the dollar is going down. Now, there was supposed to be a postal strike today. It's been postponed a day or two. And we have taken precautions that, if that goes into effect; our Gulf Stream II airplane will go around and pick up the tithe money of the people at various places. Local churches will have someone take it by automobile to each of these places. We'll have our own postal service, if they're going to strike. And God has provided us with a way to do it. And "where there is a will, there is a way" brethren. The only thing is, I think we lack a lot of that will. (Now, continue verse seven.)

Haggai 1:7-8 *Thus saith the Lord [or the Eternal] of hosts; Consider your ways.* *(8) Go up unto the mountain, and bring wood, and build the house; and I will take pleasure in it, and I will be glorified, saith the [Eternal].*

Now he's talking here literally about the second Temple that was built at that time. As I say, about 475 years before Christ.

Haggai 1:9 *Ye looked for much, and, lo, it came to little; and when ye brought it home, I did blow upon it. Why, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. Because of mine house that is waste, and ye run every man unto his own house.*

Talking To The Church

Now you're going to see pretty soon that **the house** it is speaking of is the Church of God and the Work of the Church of getting this Gospel out. And we are growing weary, and we don't want to work on building this Temple—**THIS CHURCH, WHICH IS THE TEMPLE!**

***Haggai 1:10** Therefore the heaven over you is stayed from dew, and the earth is stayed from her fruit.*

God sends the rain on the just and unjust alike, and God can control the weather. Now, I don't mean that He always does every little bit of a change in weather. God has set laws in motion that pretty much work automatically, and all that. God has sent lightening to strike certain ones dead that I guess were better off than if they were to go on living. And He did it for a great and good purpose.

***Haggai 1:11-13** And I called for a drought upon the land, and upon the mountains, and upon the corn, and upon the new wine, and upon the oil, and upon that which the ground bringeth forth, and upon men, and upon cattle, and upon the labour of the hands. (12) Then Zerubbabel...and Joshua...the high priest, with all the remnant of the people [This was just a remnant of Judah that remained now, that had gone back over there to build this second Temple.], obeyed the voice of the [Eternal] their God, and the words of Haggai the prophet, as the [Eternal] their God had SENT HIM, and the people did FEAR before [And I hope that is true for us today, that we really will. They did fear before...] the [Eternal]. (13) Then spake Haggai the [ETERNAL'S] MESSENGER in the Lord's Message unto the people, saying, **I am with you** , saith the [Eternal].*

Look brethren, IF we are only **with Him**, let me tell you, the Living Christ is **with us**. We've noticed attacks in the public press. Not only our two

newspapers here in Los Angeles and Pasadena, but in Time magazine and other magazines all over the world. There's been a lot about us in the daily newspapers in London, England. And people read about us all over. But let me tell you, whenever something like that happens, I don't worry about it. But I do go to the Throne of Grace. I do go to my knees, and go to Jesus Christ—the Living Head of this Church. And He has delivered us every time, and He will! But we've got to BELIEVE that **HE IS LIVING—THAT HE IS HERE!**

While I'm thinking about it, let me tell you something else that has come to my mind. I'm going to have to write something and get it into The Good News on this line, and try to get it to the whole Church as soon as I can. There are too many people that are wondering, "Well now, who's going to take over if Mr. Armstrong dies?" I'm supposed to die right away because, of course, a lot of people do die before they are as old as I am now. But whether or not I die is going to depend on whether the Living Christ lets me, or whether He keeps me alive. And maybe we'll see something about that before we get through right here. But someone says, "Well, have I appointed someone to follow and take my place?" THE ANSWER IS, **NO! That is NOT MY PLACE to do! I HAVE NO AUTHORITY TO DO ANY SUCH THING!**

You know, it's a great deal like the woman who was the mother of two of Christ's apostle; and she came to Jesus. She said, "Lord, when You come into Your Kingdom, I want to make a request. Please let one of my sons be on Your right hand and the other on Your left hand, when You come into Your Kingdom." He said, "Madam, you don't know what you're talking about. That is not Mine to decide. I have nothing to say about it. My Father only—God the Father—will decide who will be on My right hand and My left. I can't do it! That's out of My hands."

And let me tell you, **THE HEAD OF THIS CHURCH IS ALIVE!** Do

you believe it? Jesus Christ! **DO WE BELIEVE HE LIVES? Do we believe He's on the job?** Do we believe, if I am in need of correction, that He is able to see to it and give it? Let me tell you, I BELIEVE IT! I believe it through and through. And I FEAR IT! And I TREMBLE AT IT!

If anything should happen to me... And it will only happen if God allows it. God can keep me alive as long as that is necessary; and He will, as long as He feels it is necessary. And I don't think He is going to take me from THIS WORK until this job is finished. But if He should (if I should be wrong about that), can you trust the Living Christ to provide the man that will take over?

If you'd ask me to choose, I couldn't do it. I wouldn't know who to choose right now. And I have no authority to do it. THIS IS GOING TO BE A **TEST OF YOUR FAITH!** Or, do you want to take it into your own hands, and know who it's going to be—someone YOU can know in advance? Some one YOU can approve? Some one YOU CAN VOTE FOR? Oh, sometimes I say, “Shame on us.” Let's wake up.

Now, let's see if I can find my place here.

Haggai 1:13 Then spake Haggai the [Eternal's] messenger in the [Eternal's] message unto the people, saying, I am with you, saith the [Eternal].

I think that's where I was. And we need to realize that He is with us. And He's going to take care of His part of it.

“Did you know back in 1933, when this ERA of the Church was started, that you were God's Apostle, that you would be?” NO, I DIDN'T!... Well, how do I know now? Because I looked back on all these years, and I see the Fruits! And you're here as part of it. YOU'RE PART OF THE EVIDENCE!”

How Did Mr Armstrong Know He Was An Apostle?

I am not here because a lot of people decided to vote for me, or put me here. You had nothing to do with me becoming GOD’S APOSTLE. Someone says to me, “Well Mr. Armstrong, how did you know you’re God’s Apostle? Did Christ appear to you? Did He speak to you? Did He say, ‘Now, Herbert Armstrong, I make you My Apostle?’” I answer, “No.” “Did you know back in 1933, when this era of the Church was started, that you were God’s apostle, that you would be?” No, I didn’t. “Did you know how big, or how great, this work was going to be?” No, I didn’t. I just knew that God had called me. He was using me. And, I would go as far as He wanted me to go—no further and no less, whatever that is. If it meant the whole world, I knew I would be able to do it, because I would do it in THE POWER and STRENGTH of **THE LIVING CHRIST!**

So then, how do I know today? Well, I will answer just as Jesus Christ answered when the messengers of John the Baptist came to Him and said, “Well, John wants to know, are You really the Messiah that was to come?” Jesus didn’t say yes or no. He said, “You go tell John what you hear and what you see being done. Go and show him THE FRUIT of what you see coming from Me.” And *by their fruits you shall know.*

No, back in 1933, I didn’t know. Well, how do I know now? Because I looked back on all these years, and I see **the fruits**. And YOU’RE HERE AS PART OF IT! You’re part of THE EVIDENCE because you’re here; and I had something to do with that, and so did Jesus Christ. And He was using me. I didn’t do it myself. And woe be to me if I ever take credit for doing it!

We Must Work!

Haggai 1:14-15 The [Eternal] stirred up the SPIRIT of Zerubbabel...

and the SPIRIT of Joshua...the high priest, and the SPIRIT of all the remnant of the people; and they came and did work on the house of the [Eternal] of hosts, their God, (15) in the four and twentieth day of the sixth month, in the second year of Darius the king.

Now, come to chapter two.

***Haggai 2:1-4** In the seventh month, in the [twenty-first] day of the month, came the word of the [Eternal] by the prophet Haggai, saying, (2) Speak now to Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and to Joshua...the high priest, and to the residue of the people, saying, (3) Who is left among you that saw this house in her first glory? [Meaning Solomon's Temple. It had such great glory, more than any building that had ever been built up until that time on the face of the Earth.] And how do ye see it now? Is it not in your eyes in comparison of it as nothing? [Well, it had been completely torn down, demolished. It was gone.] (4) Yet now be strong, oh Zerubbabel, saith the [Eternal]; and be strong, oh Joshua...and be strong, all ye people of the land, saith the [Eternal], and WORK; for I am with you.*

And He says to us today to **BE STRONG, AND WORK!** And, **GET BACK OF THIS THING!** Now I tell you, if you look into the New Testament, you will see that Christ did NOT train all of the people. And there were, oh within a few days after the Day of Pentecost (It might have been the very next day.) the Church had grown up to a total of 5000 people. But Jesus Christ had NOT taught them to go out and carry the gospel message. It was only those that became **His apostles.**

Later, He taught (and apparently appeared, after He had gone to heaven, and yet came down) and appeared to Paul the apostle, in Arabia. And taught him just as He had taught the other apostles. **GOD SENT THEM!** "Apostle" is a word that means **one sent forth. ONE SENT FORTH.**

Why Not Stay In Pasadena?

I AM **SENT FORTH!** And if I go forth, and leave here, some people say, “Well, why isn’t Mr. Armstrong staying here in Pasadena and taking care of the Church?” I’ll tell you why! The Church is supposed to **HELP ME**—not me take care of you! I am **one sent forth** with the gospel message! That’s what God has laid on ME!

Christ didn’t work from nine to five, in an office! He went from one city to another. Christ, there is a great deal of evidence that He had even gone over to Britain and to Western Europe. That was before He started preaching, however, at the age of thirty. There’s nothing in the Bible about it, but there is other evidence that He probably was there.

I’ve often thought that He probably was at the very place that is the site of Ambassador College at Bricket Wood, in England. There we have five of the most beautiful cedars of Lebanon. And there are not over 20 or 30 cedars of Lebanon left in Lebanon. They’re up high on a mountain. I’ve seen them, and photographed them. They’ve all been cut down. But the more beautiful of all are on our campus over there. And I think, though, we are about to consummate a sale of it because we have no further use for it now.

Let’s see. I’m losing my place here.

***Haggai 2:4-5** For I am with you, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. (5) According to the word that I covenanted with you when ye came out of Egypt, so, my spirit remained among you: fear ye not.*

Brethren, is **God’s Spirit** still with us in this Church? We’re getting a little spiritless; and we need to **REVIVE** with the energy and vitality of the Spirit of the Living God!

***Haggai 2:6** For thus saith the [Eternal] of hosts; Yet once, it is a little*

while, and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land;

NOW, WHEN IS **THAT**? He hasn't done that yet! Now, He begins to talk about US **today**! That's the point I want you to see! That all of this (about Zerubbabel and Joshua, the high priest, building that Temple) was about the building of the REAL Temple today, to which Christ is going to come. Now, let's listen.

A Different Temple

Haggai 2:7 I will shake all nations; and the desire of all nations shall come [meaning Christ, in that case. Now, they don't really desire Him.]: and I will fill THIS house with glory, saith the [Eternal] of hosts.

Now, I don't think that He ever did, in that sense that it is intended here, fill that second Temple with glory. But now He's talking about a DIFFERENT Temple. That was only a TYPE of it, TYPICAL of it, A FORERUNNER of it. Now He carries on and says:

Haggai 2:8-9 The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. (9) The glory of this LATTER house shall be greater than the FORMER.

The glory of that second Temple NEVER remotely compared to the glory of Solomon's Temple. And yet, He's talking about a Temple that will be FAR GREATER in glory than Solomon's Temple. He's talking about the Temple to which Christ is coming—**now** in our time, in our living generation. Now, keep your ears and your mind open, brethren. You're going to hear something here.

Haggai 2:9-14 And in THIS place will I give PEACE, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. [There's no peace on Earth yet! You see, it's coming when

this happens!] (10) *In the four, and twentieth day of the ninth month, in the second year of Darius, came the word of the [Eternal] by Haggai the prophet, saying, (11) Thus saith the [Eternal] of hosts; Ask now the priests concerning the law, saying, (12) If one bare holy flesh in the skirt of a garment, and with his skirt do touch bread, or pottage, or wine, or oil, or any [food], shall it be holy? And the priests answered and said, No. (13) Then said Haggai, If one that is unclean by a dead body touch any of these, shall it be unclean? And the priests answered and said, It shall be unclean. (14) Then answered Haggai, and said, So is this people, and so is this nation before me, saith the [Eternal] ...*

He's talking about our nation today. And he's talking about our Church today. And I'm going to prove it to you.

Haggai 2:14-18 ...and so is every work of their hands; and that which they offer there is unclean. [And we better take heed.] (15) *And now, I pray you, consider from this day and upward, from before a stone was laid upon a stone, in the Temple of the [Eternal]. [Or, the beginning of today's Church of God in the Philadelphia Era of the Church today.] (16) Since those days were, when one came to a heap of twenty measures, there were but ten: when one came to the pressfat for to draw out fifty vessels out of the press, there were but twenty. (17) I smote you with blasting and with mildew and with hail in the labours of your hands; yet ye turn not to me, saith the [Eternal]. [He's speaking of us today, my brethren.] (18) Consider now from this day and upward, from the four and twentieth day of the ninth month, even from the day that the foundation of the Lord's temple was laid, consider it.*

Now, I've marked here in my Bible: Is the glory of the second Temple greater than Solomon's? No. This is speaking of the Day of God, and the Temple yet to be built—which is THE WORLDWIDE CHURCH OF GOD; and it's pretty well built already.

[**Glitch in tape at 44:23.]

Haggai 2:19 *Is the seed yet in the barn? Yea, as yet the vine, and the fig tree, and the pomegranate, and the olive tree, hath not brought forth: from this day, I will bless you.*

And God has blessed this Church. But we are getting very lazy in returning His blessing, and being appreciative.

Haggai 2:20-21 *And again the word of the [Eternal] came unto Haggai in the four and twentieth day of the month, saying, (21) Speak to Zerubbabel, governor of Judah, saying, 'I will...*

Now he doesn't mention Joshua, the high priest now. But "speak to Zerubbabel, governor of Judah." He was the one who was sent to build this Temple.

Haggai 2:21-22 *I will shake the heavens and the earth; (22) And I will overthrow the throne of kingdoms, and I will destroy the strength of the kingdoms of the heathen.*

You know, that has been occurring in the last four to five years at the rate of one a month. The kingdoms haven't been completely overthrown. It was THE THRONE of the kingdom being overthrown—a military coup, turning it into a military government. That happened in Greece; and then, about a year or more ago, the military government decided to turn it back to civilians. And it's just a change in the government, just like we have a change when we elect a new President. It's talking about a time when He would overthrow the throne of kingdoms, or governments, all around the Earth; and that never happened until now. It's speaking of today.

Haggai 2:22-23 *And I will overthrow the chariots, and those that ride in them; and the horses and their riders shall come down, everyone by the sword of his brother. (23) In that day, saith the [Eternal] of hosts, I will take*

thee O Zerubbabel, my servant... [And it's talking about today, and not that day. Zerubbabel was only, as I say, a type.] saith the [Eternal], and will make thee as a SIGNET; for I have chosen thee, says the [Eternal] of hosts.

Now that is the entire book of Haggai, which consist of only the two chapters.

The Book Of Zechariah

Now, I'd like you to turn to the third chapter of, or the fourth chapter rather of Zechariah.

***Zechariah 4:1-2** And the angel that talked with me [Now, this is the Zechariah the prophet's book. "And the angel that talked with me..."] came again, and waked me, as a man that is waked out of his sleep. (2) And said to me [And we need to wake up, brethren. He "said to me..."], *What seest thou?* And I said, I have looked, and behold a candlestick all of gold, with a bowl upon the top of it, and his seven lamps thereon, and seven pipes to the seven lamps, which are upon the top thereof.*

Now a candlestick, you'll find in Revelation the first chapter, is symbolically referring to the Church.

***Zechariah 4:3-6** And two olive trees by it, one upon the right side of the bowl, and the other upon the left thereof. (4) So I answered and spake to the angel that talked with me, saying, What are these, my lord? (5) Then the angel that talked with me answered and said unto me, Knowest thou not [what these are] what these be? And I said, No, my lord. (6) Then he answered and spake unto me, saying, This is the word of the [Eternal] unto Zerubbabel, saying, Not by might, nor by power, but **by MY SPIRIT**, saith the [Eternal] of hosts.*

THIS BUILDING IS BEING BUILT BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD! Not

by might and power. Not by brick, and mortar, and wood, and plaster, and other physical materials; but **by the Spirit of God!**

Zechariah 4:7-9** Who art thou, O great mountain? Before Zerubbabel thou shall become a plain: and he shall bring forth the HEADSTONE thereof with shoutings, saying, Grace, grace unto it. [Which is Christ, of course. Speaking of Christ's coming, and bringing forth Christ in OUR GENERATION.] (8) Moreover the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, (9) The hands of Zerubbabel have laid the Foundation of **THIS house** ; [What house is it talking about? The one to whom Christ is coming.] **HIS HANDS SHALL ALSO FINISH IT: AND THOU SHALT KNOW THAT THE [ETERNAL] OF HOSTS HAS SENT ME UNTO YOU.

I have taken great courage in reading that, more than once. Maybe you can understand why.

***Zechariah 4:10** For who hath despised the day of small things? For they shall rejoice, and shall see the PLUMMET in the hands of Zerubbabel with those seven; they are the eyes of the [Eternal], which run to and fro over the whole earth [and so on].*

Now, I'd like to go back to Malachi again. And let me just say that **in the New Testament** you will find that the Church is built into a holy Temple unto the Eternal. And it talks about every joint, and every part of it, is built by Christ; and it is built perfectly. Now some are going to be cast out. But those who really are in the Temple of God—in the Church—are going to be here for the coming of Christ.

Messenger Of The Covenant

On over now to Malachi once again, and I'd like to go right on from where I was. Now, he talked about a messenger coming to prepare the way

before Christ. And, as I say, you will find in a number of places (in Mark, and Matthew, and so on) that the one who prepared the way before Christ's First Coming was John the Baptist. But I'm going to prove to you now that this is talking about not just a First Coming but **a Second**. Let's go on reading the second part of the verse [{3}](#), which I didn't read before. It says that:

Malachi 3:1 The LORD...shall suddenly come to his temple [which is the Church. And that Church—by the power of God, and with the Holy Spirit in it—it will be made immortal. And its glory will be greater than the glory of Solomon's Temple; but no human physical Temple ever was, or will be.], even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the [Eternal] of hosts.

That is speaking of Christ. He is the Messenger of the New Covenant. Now, the Old Covenant set up the children of Israel as one of the nations of this world. But Moses was the mediator of that Covenant. It was a material physical Covenant, of a material physical people, with only physical and national and material promises. No promise of the Holy Spirit whatsoever was given to ancient Israel—only some of the prophets. Moses will be in the Kingdom of God and some of the prophets, of course; but not the people as a whole.

Back To Malachi

Now then, let's go right on—verse two.

Malachi 3:2 But who may abide the day of his coming? [The Coming of Christ.] And who shall stand when he appeareth?

This is in, if you remember, the oratorio that we have had sung. Let's see. I don't know whether we've had that yet on this particular stage up here or not. But we have had it here. We did have it over in the Civic Auditorium.

And we brought people all the way from England for it—The Messiah. And you've heard this being sung in The Messiah. Who shall abide the day of His coming and shall stand when He appeareth?

Malachi 3:2-5 For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap: (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and a purifier of silver [Now, Jesus didn't do any of these things when He came the first time. Not a one of these things.]: and he shall purify the sons of Levi [He didn't do that, when He came before.], and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the [Eternal] an offering in righteousness. (4) Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the [Eternal] as in the days of old, and as in the former years. [That didn't happen when He came before. The Jews rejected Him. Judah and Jerusalem was not a pleasant offering that was so happy and peaceful and joyous and all that.] (5) And I will come near to you to judgment; and I will be a swift witness, against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers.

Jesus didn't come doing that, when He came the first time. But, when He comes **to RULE WITH A ROD OF IRON** over all the nations, that's when He's going to do this. This is talking about the Second Coming. Now, it talks about a messenger coming before Christ. But Christ's coming is...the only coming described here is **the Second Coming**.

Do you think, if He had John the Baptist preparing the way before the First Coming of Christ, He wouldn't have someone **preparing the way before His Second Coming** (when He's coming in glory, in the power and Spirit of GOD ALMIGHTY, in all the supernatural power to rule the whole world, and to take over the thrones of every nation on this Earth)?

Malachi 3:5-6 And I will come near to you to judgment; and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers [I guess I read that.], and...against those that oppress the hireling in his wages, the widow, and the fatherless, and that

turneth aside the stranger from his right, and fear not me, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. (6) For I am the [Eternal], I change not.

But some people think He's changed! Some people say, "This is OLD TESTAMENT STUFF. This doesn't apply to **US, today.**" The only people that could have read this were a little contingent of a part of the tribe of Judah. There might have been a little of Benjamin and Levi among them, but none of Ephraim and Manasseh. None of the Ten Tribes were there, and not even but a small part of Judah.

***Malachi 3:5-7** ...that turneth aside the stranger from his right [4](#), and fear not me, says the [Eternal] of hosts. (6) For I am the [Eternal], **I change not**; [Some people think He does change.] therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed. (7) Even from the days of your fathers you are gone away from my ordinances...*

THIS IS TALKING ABOUT US TODAY! It's talking as coming just before the Second Coming of Christ! **THIS IS A PROPHECY!** It's not a case of some old ancient history. We need to see what the prophecy's all about here.

***Malachi 3:7** Even from the days of your fathers ye are gone away from mine ordinances, and have not kept them. Return unto me, and I will return unto you, says the [Eternal] of hosts. But you said, Wherein shall we return?*

Yeah, we don't know where we've gotten away from God. Well, let me tell you, we have in more ways than one—in this Church!

Tithing For Us Today

But He comes to this one thing:

***Malachi 3:8** Will a man rob God?*

That is NOT some OLD TESTAMENT STUFF! **THAT IS FOR US TODAY!** And if you think it isn't, and you think stealing is all right, and you're withholding your TITHE—"God have mercy on your miserable soul," is all I can say. **THIS IS A PROPHECY!** It's for NOW! And GOD SAYS, **"I CHANGE NOT."** You think He's changed today? Jesus said you tithe with mint and anise, and so on. *"This ought you to have done."* Why did He say you "ought"? Because it is commanded! And TO WITHHOLD IT IS **STEALING FROM GOD.** God doesn't want THIEVES in His Church.

They say, "There's no law." And the ministers have tried to come out. And I'M GOING TO CHANGE ALL OF THAT. And any minister that doesn't want to go along with it can just GET OUT OF THE CHURCH, and OFF OUR PAYROLL! Now those are pretty strong words, and I MEAN EVERY WORD I SAY. I would rather have one or two faithful ministers with me, than four or five hundred that have gone the way of Baal; and they wanted to make this a secular work, and get Christ out of it! They say there is no law at all about **TITHING.** THEY ARE MISLEADING YOU! And THEY ARE LIARS! Now, if anyone wants to come to me and say, "Ok, let's... I challenge you to a duel on that." All right, let him come. I'M SPEAKING WITH **THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHRIST!** And these others are not.

Is stealing part of the law of God? *"Thou shalt not steal."* Is that part of the law of God? It says, *"Will a man rob God? Yet, you have robbed me."* YOU'RE STEALING! We ask Him, "How?" And he says, "How have we robbed Thee?" And He answers, *"In TITHES AND OFFERINGS. You are cursed with a curse."* And this Church has been CURSED WITH A CURSE, and this is one of the reasons. And I'm going to try and KNOCK THAT OUT. I think maybe we're going to lose a few members. You know if you've got a crate of apples and one or two of them become rotten, they're going to rot the ones next to it. And that'll keep on, if you don't get them out of there. They'll

rot the whole crate. Now if we've got any rotten apples among us, I'll tell you the quicker we get rid of them the better, brethren

Malachi 3:9-10 You are cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed me, even this whole nation. (10) Bring ye all the TITHES into the storehouse [That's to God's Church, and not just to any individual you want to.], that there may be meat [or, food] in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the [Eternal] of hosts, if I will not [He says, "Prove Me...if I will not"] open the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.

Closing The Campus In 1948

Brethren, back in the early days, we (what few of us there were then) were tithing. Most of you weren't in the Church yet. I'm talking now about 1948. And very few of you were in the Church in 1948. There may be three or four here. I doubt if there's any more than that. And, if you are, you're pretty faithful to have still been here all that time.

But in 1948 we were going to lose all of the campus that we had at that time. And we had to come up...I didn't know how much money; but, I found out later, it was going to take \$50,000. At that time, how much do you think was the income of the Church? The whole Work of God was averaging \$500 a day.

Now we thought that was pretty big. That was pretty big compared to what it had been when I had to hitchhike in order to preach in a country schoolhouse. And the only reason I had to go up to the country schoolhouse was because I didn't have money to hire a hall in town; and I could get the country schoolhouse without any charge whatsoever. That is the way THIS WORK was built! Others that have come along later saying, "Oh, I've devoted my life for the last so many years to this Work." But YOU DIDN'T

go through the hell I DID TO START IT! I lived—and I sweat, and bled, and died—that this Church could be built, and this Work could go on, and that Ambassador College could be built.

And we were going to have to turn a lease, an option, on what is now just the Library building, into a sale. And there had to be back taxes, and back property tax, and insurance to be paid. And what I didn't know is that the man we were purchasing it from had also borrowed about seventeen or eighteen thousand dollars that he was delinquent on, and he had not paid. And he couldn't turn it over to us until that was paid. And we had to have enough money to pay him that much before we could even get the property.

I had done everything I knew how. I had sent letters telling people of the situation. The money didn't come. I had gone... And this is before Mr. Rader's time, when we had Bolivar O'Rear (who had been for some ten years an attorney in the Internal revenue department of Washington D.C). And Mr. O'Rear died a good many years ago now. But he was our attorney at the time. And he and I went to Washington, and to a lawyer friend of his that he thought was the specialist with this kind of thing, and could help us raise the money. We tried every way we could. The money didn't come.

Then I got on my knees. And I asked another, "Let's fast and pray, and let's take it to the Lord Jesus Christ." And we did. And do you know that, about Thanksgiving time... I had to have this by about the 15th of December, and about Thanksgiving time, lo and behold, one day—instead of the five hundred dollars—two thousand. Let's see. Was it two, or three, thousand dollars? I believe it was three thousand dollars, came in. I've got to go back. I've printed this before. Some of you may remember it better than I do. I believe it was three thousand. Anyhow, the next day, to our amazement, three thousand dollars came in. And we couldn't account for it. But we had fasted and prayed, and we had put it up to Christ.

And that kept up for over ten days, until we had over \$50,000 on hand. I finally came to find out that we had to have more money than I had dreamed of. But Christ had answered, and had sent every bit of it. I KNOW. I've been through this. I've seen the **answers to prayer**. I KNOW that Christ is living, and I KNOW that He hears us when we pray. And some of you have never had that experience. It's time that some of you get it. Get down on your knees, and wear them out! I'll buy you a new pair of stockings or trousers, or whatever, if you wear them out. And some of you may need it!

But this Church is cursed with a curse if we don't tithe. So, I'm going to correct that—no matter “come hell or high water,” or whatever else. And if some of our ministers say, “Oh well, we're not for tithing.” All right. Goodbye. The Baptist probably will open up for you. They don't believe in it either. Maybe you can get a job with the Methodist.

Preaching For Pay

Maybe they're like the man that came to me up in Oregon about 35 years ago, and he said... No, this was about 40 years ago. Anyhow, this man came to me and said, “Well, I've just recently married.” And he said, “Now I've got a wife to support.” And he said, “I am a minister, but I've not had a pastorate for some years. I've been out of employment.” He said, “Mr. Armstrong, do you know of a vacant pastorate in some church in this county?” He says, “I have to be in this county because my wife wants to live here.” “Well,” I said, “I know of just one; and, so far as I know, that's the only one. But, that won't help you a bit.” Well, he says, “Why?” I said, “Because that's a Church of Christ, and you're a Methodist. And you'd have to preach different doctrines than the Methodists believe if you...” “Well,” he says, “That's all right. I'll preach whatever they want me to. I just got to have a job!” That's the way it is! Now, if we've got any of that kind of ministers, I'll be very happy to say, “Good riddance.” And God will supply us with men

filled with His Spirit.

What If Something Happens To Mr. Armstrong?

Well, He goes on to show the blessings He will pour out then, if we do obey Him and we trust Him. Can YOU believe that Christ is alive? Are YOU worried about if anything happens to me? I'M NOT. I know that God will do one of two things: He'll either keep me alive OR He'll raise up the right man, that'll be His man. And it won't be someone that you people are going to vote on. You'll have nothing to say about it!

Who's In Charge?

You have nothing to say about the fact I am where I am. CHRIST DID IT! And there's no way you could've stopped it, is there? **CHRIST PUT ME IN.** And all of you put together couldn't put me out, not if you wanted to! Some have said the Church would desert me in the last three or four months, with some of the actions that Christ has led me to take. The Church is 100% solid! Believe you me, brethren, **THE CHURCH IS SOLID! AND WE ARE NOT DIVIDED ANY LONGER!** Up until two or three months ago, for the last ten years, this Church has been divided. And people have said, "Well, who's in charge around here?" There's no doubt about **WHO IS IN CHARGE** any more now.

Ministers Changing Doctrines

Then they tried to play this thing: That I was old, and imbecilic, and that I had become senile in my mind. And even one of our own main—or **WHO USED TO BE** one of our main—ministers, (And I'm just shocked that I heard this on a tape and heard his sermon that was preached in one of our

other auditoriums, but not this one.) saying, when he was changing a **doctrine that I had taught all these years** (and which **IS TRUE**, and I'LL CHALLENGE HIM if he wants to debate on it). And he said, "Of course, now, Mr. Armstrong is old and feeble; and we just have to consider him as just a sort of father figure." Some of you will remember! Some of you heard this sermon! I won't tell you who it was, but some of you will know.

He said, "His mind wouldn't be capable of going into this." Well, let me tell you, my mind is a lot more capable than his mind! And it's going to be **the way that Jesus Christ shows ME!** And NOT the way some scholarly someone wants to get in a scholarly kind of a NON-Christian type of attitude, with a carnal mind, instead of the **spiritual** mind of Christ. And get into this leaven of intellectualism, and higher education! It's being kicked right out of this college, and out of God's Church!

Well, there are many promises here. Let's prove God. He says, "Prove Me," if He won't do this. I've been proving Him. He's taken care of me, all of these years. So, I think that I'd like to go on and read all of the rest of that in the fourth chapter. But I think we've taken enough time tonight.

And I will tell you that, two weeks ago when I spoke here, I'd had a very busy day all day. I had been in the office. I had conference after conference, with so many different ones; and some of it a little more strenuous than others. And then I finally had to work out something to say for the Bible Study that night. And I tell you, when I got home that night after the Bible Study, my blood pressure was down to an alarming place. It was really alarming, and my life was in danger. But I was just exhausted. I was tired. I had been over reaching, and going a little faster. And I haven't regained full physical strength yet. Let me say, I've regained about 80% of it. But, my mind is 100%. My mind is better today than it was twenty, and thirty, and even forty years ago! It is actually better. And you be the judge—by what you are hearing, and what you are reading, and what you are seeing.

The Incredible Human Potential

I've been turning out more articles, and more books. And there's a big book ready to go to press now that will be sold in bookstores all over the United States—the first time I've ever been willing to do that. But there is a great audience of people that will not ever read *The Plain Truth*; will not reply for many of our broadcasts, or telecasts; are not going to be reached by us now. But they do go into bookstores and buy books. And if it's offered free, they won't take it. They want to pay for it. So, we're going to let them pay for it, if that's what they want. And I'm going to make it the highest price that the experts tell me will sell. Now, I'm not going to make it \$50 a copy, because it wouldn't sell enough. But it will probably be in the neighborhood of say \$9.90 or \$10. In this day in age, you know the businessman always has to cut it down to about \$9.90 or \$9.99. Sounds less. They always try to fool the people. I don't believe in that. So maybe we'll just put a straight price on it, and let it go at that.

But I turned most of that copy over today. I still have to write one or two chapters. But that will be done within the next two or three days. I will tell you this: I consider that it is **the most important book**—the important writing—that has been written through any human being, or by any human being, in the last 1900 years. That's how important I consider it!

Burying The Truth

Now, it has already appeared (most of it) in *The Plain Truth* of two years, or more, ago—in the tabloid edition. But I doubt if you read it. I told the one who was then the managing editor that I wanted this put in big type; and I wanted it right up front. But he got orders. I was apparently not the boss, and I didn't know it. **THIS WAS KEPT FROM ME!** Boy, would I have **COUNTERMANDED THAT** if I had known. He was told to **BURY IT IN BACK** and put it in the kind of type that nobody will read it. And that's what

happened. Well, those days are gone. Nobody else is going to say, “Just countermand what Herbert W Armstrong says.” No one BUT JESUS CHRIST; I mean, but no one!

So I hope that will be ready by the Feast of Tabernacles. And I don't know if books of that kind go out to the bookstores about twice a year (once in the fall, and once in the spring). And we're hoping, if I don't extend myself too far, that we'll have it ready for the fall. But, anyway, I don't want to over extend myself now tonight. And I'm going to rest you and let you go home and get some rest.

Now, tomorrow afternoon I expect to speak with the cameras. You see they're all here. And it will be the message that... I will not have a message for you people tomorrow. But you can sit in on it. It will be the message that will be televised and sent to every Feast site in the world. I can't appear at all of the Feast sites in the United States and Canada this year, as I've done in past years. But I will appear AT EVERY FEAST SITE on the screen. And it will be shown on sixteen-millimeter film. On good-sized screens like the big one we have up here, when they let it down, under the curtains. At every Feast site all over the world—and not just the United States, but Australia, South Africa, South America, New Zealand—everywhere. And I will be doing that now tomorrow.

And I still have to prepare that tomorrow, before tomorrow night. So, I always have something to do. Well, I working harder now than I worked ten years, fifteen years ago, even twenty years ago. And I'm having to come back and do it. God will give ME the strength, and the energy, and the vitality. But, will you let Him give YOU the strength, and energy, and vitality YOU need for YOUR PART, brethren?

Apostle, One Sent

The apostle is the **ONE SENT**. Not you. YOU are TO BACK. You will find, in the New Testament, the Church didn't go out. THE APOSTLE'S WENT OUT. Then there was one who had the Holy Spirit and had been beaten, who went out preaching, and that was Philip. And God blessed him because he had been with the apostles. But he then became a minister, and became an evangelist.

But the people as a whole were just back of those sent. An **“apostle”** is a word that means **one sent forth with Christ's message**. And I just look back at the fruits of the last fifty-one years. And I know by the same way that John the Baptist knew whether Christ was the real Messiah or not. I know, because “by their fruits” you know; and that's how I know.

Now, have a good night's sleep. And I think I'm not as badly worn as I was two weeks ago tonight. And I hope I'll have a good night's sleep And I'll see you tomorrow afternoon.

Editor's Notes

{1} - During the loud noise on the tape, Mr. Armstrong was evidently reading this scripture. The original simply has the noise, followed by: “heads of big business; big banks; leaders...“etc.

{2} - Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said the wrong Testament. The original reads: “the last book in the New Testament, in Malachi.”

{3} - Mr. Armstrong referred to the wrong verse. The original said: “Let's go on reading the second verse.”

{4} - Scripture misquoted. The original said: “And I will turn aside the stranger from the right.”

Why The Holy Days?

Sermon (October 13, 1979) – given on the Last Great Day
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Why The Holy Days?.....	178	Man Cut Off	189
Holy Spirit Shut Up From Mankind	180	God Has Been Calling Some	192
Second Stage Of Creation	181	God's Master Plan	196
The Two Trees	185	What About The Billions?	199
Re-establishing God's Government	188		

I am speaking now to everybody from down in Florida, up into northern New York, from Seattle, Washington down to Pasadena, California and to at least four or five Feast sites in Canada. Greetings to all you brethren, all over the United States, the South, the North, the Middle West, the Atlantic and Pacific coasts. This is a wonderful thing. Now we are planning something even bigger for next year and perhaps a way to reach Feast Sites in other parts of the world by satellite.

The reports I've had, is that all of you have been having the best Feast **ever** this year. I'm sure we had the best year for many years last year. This has been even bigger and better this year. You've been literally, through sermons and through sermonettes, **living** through the coming thousand years of peace. The time with Jesus Christ here, ruling the whole world and all nations; and many of us, hopefully, ruling with Him on His throne. A time without any Satan, a time when the Earth will be as full of the knowledge of God as the ocean beds are full of water, and the Earth has almost none of the knowledge of God today. What a difference that will be!

But today, after the Feast of Tabernacles we have a different Holy Day. Actually, the Feast of Tabernacles ended at sundown last night. The Feast of Tabernacles is a seven-day festival. Yesterday was the seventh day of the

festival, and today is another festival altogether. But as soon as the one ended at sunset last night, the other began. So here we still are. In many ways, we have traditionally regarded this as the Great Day of the Feast.

Now if we try to view the conditions in the world from the point in time of today, where we live today, it is good deal like going into or rather say, tuning in a movie on your television set. And you tune in when it is about three fourths of the way along. You do not know what has gone before. You do not know what has led up to the place where you are now. And you are bewildered because it does not make any sense to you. You do not know what they are talking about, unless you know what went before and what led up to it. So, what led up to our day today, to **our kind** of world today? Now the world is different than it was two thousand years ago in many, many, many ways. In some ways, it is still the same, unfortunately.

Now in John 7, verses 37 and 38, Jesus Christ stood up and said:

***John 7:37** In the last day, that great day of the feast*

Now, there might be some little problem of discerning, exactly, whether that meant the day that really followed the Feast of Tabernacles. Because they were still all there, just like we are today. Or whether that meant the last of the seven days, which would have been yesterday in our time of this Feast this year. Anyway,

***John 7:37-38** Jesus stood up and cried saying If any man thirst let him come unto Me, and drink... and (38) out of his innermost being shall flow rivers of living water.*

Unfortunately, I have a red-letter bible. The words of Christ are in red letters, and I can't read them very well without a magnifying glass.

***John 7:38-39** He that believeth on Me [said Jesus] as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. (39) (But this*

spake He of the Spirit, [that is, the Holy Spirit of God], which they that believe on Him should receive: for the Holy Spirit was not yet [that is, at that time 1900 years ago. "was not yet" ...] given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified).

Holy Spirit Shut Up From Mankind

Now there is a point that you should notice. The Holy Spirit had not been given to the church of the Old Testament. In the Old Testament, it is called the congregation of Israel, but congregation is just another English word for church; and in one passage in the New Testament, it's called the "**church in the wilderness**" in the days of Moses (Acts 7:38). But, they did not have the Holy Spirit. And I may say more about that as we go along. The Holy Spirit had been shut up from mankind, until **Christ was glorified**. Now there is a lot more to it than that and I am coming to a lot more. So, just bear that in mind, if you will. The Holy Spirit was not yet, at that time, **given**. The Holy Spirit had come, up to that time, **only** for prophets. Now at that time, even the apostles had not yet received the Holy Spirit. In ancient Israel, only the prophets had the Holy Spirit of God.

Now another scripture I want to read right here in connection with this, just a page or two ahead of it. John 6:44, where Jesus said :

John 6:44 *No man can come to me, except the Father which sent me draw him.*

Now that is a MOST REMARKABLE **statement!** He said "**No man CAN.**" Even if he wants to, he is unable, unless God the Father **draws** him. I want you to notice one thing. The **initiative** must be taken by **God**. It isn't up to the average man, the man in the street, the man wherever you find him, out on a farm or in the city to just say "Well, I want to come to God." Now no man can come to God except through Jesus Christ. Jesus said, "I am the way,

the light and the truth (John 14:6).” But Jesus says No man can come to **Him**, unless the **Father** takes the **initiative** and draws him, through the Holy Spirit. But, that doesn’t mean he had the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit will only be used as an instrument in **drawing** him towards Christ, and the choice has to be God’s.

Now, that leads us back to something. That’s why I say you cannot understand the conditions with the things that the Bible says of our time, if you don’t go back to know what went on way, way before.

Why could only those called come to Christ? Now that has a lot to do with **predestination**. Yes, there’s something about predestination in two different chapters in the New Testament. It has nothing to do with whether you are already predestined to be saved or lost, because we must all make our own decision. It has only to do with the time, with who is called and at what time, the time of being called. To understand, we need to see the panorama of events that led up to the time we are in now. If you’re tuning in on a motion picture, you’re tuning in on today. But we need to know what led up to today, what led up to this condition. Why do we have the conditions in the world we do now?

Now, God Almighty is the Creator. Jesus Christ said, I work and my Father works (John 5:17). They’re not lazy and They’re not laying around. They work. Well, what do They work at? What’s their job? CREATION. Of course, God is creator. God is also Revealer of knowledge and truth. He is also the Ruler of the universe. And, He also is the Giver of life. He has life within Himself and life to give.

Second Stage Of Creation

Now God creates in a system, or a process, of **duality**. Two and two seem to go together in almost everything God does. For example the creation of man, it started in a **physical** creation. So there’s the physical creation and

then a **spiritual** creation. Now the physical creation began about 6,000 years ago in the creation of Adam and Eve, human beings. But the spiritual creation began less than 2,000 years ago in Jesus Christ. That is the second stage of man's ultimate creation. That is the stage that is going on now. And that has a lot to do with why we are here right now. And why you brethren in the other Feast sites, all around over the United States and up in Canada, are where you are right now.

When Adam was created, Satan was right there. He was here on the Earth. Now how did Satan come to be here? Where did he come from? God had created the super archangel whose name was Lucifer, long, long before Adam. Well how long before we don't know, because the time is not given or revealed.

Back in Ezekiel 28:15, I want you to notice something about him. Speaking now of this Lucifer, God says:

Ezekiel 28:15 Thou wast perfect in thy ways. [In his ways, in the way he acted and lived, the way he thought], ...perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created until iniquity was found in thee.

Now iniquity is lawlessness. Actually, before man was created God populated this Earth with angels. God set over them this great, super archangel Lucifer, the greatest, most powerful being that God ever did, ever can, create just automatically. Apparently, there are two other archangels of equal power today; but he was next to God in power and ability. He was perfect in his ways from the day God created him. God did not create an evil person. But iniquity was found **in him**. Now, what do you think is the ultimate thing that God is creating? The ultimate thing God is creating is perfect righteous character; and that's something that even God Himself, alone by Himself, CANNOT **create**.

He created **man** that character can be built within us. But each of us has

to make his own decision. And we have our part in it. And if we decide against it, there's nothing God—God has so **willed** that there is nothing He, can do about it.

This Lucifer was instructed in all of the Government of God. He was sat on a throne over the angels, governing and ruling with the Government of God. The Government of God was sent here to carry on this process of developing character within those angels. Now Lucifer had been on the very throne of God. He had been instructed at headquarters of the universe. Just like we have instructed future ministers at Ambassador College; and then after their graduation at headquarters we send them, as we say, “out into the field.”

Well, this Lucifer was one that was instructed at headquarters in God's heaven and then sent out into the field, this Earth. He had been instructed in the Government of God; and the Government of God is merely the government to lead into **the right way of life**.

A Philosophy Of Life

Now then again, we get down to a philosophy of life. And as I have said to the leaders of many nations, to kings and emperors, prime ministers—there are **two** ways of life, or if you please, two **philosophies**. Only two general ways; and I have put it in language that a five or six-year old child ought to understand. The one way is the way of GIVE and the other is the way of GET.

Now the way of give is really the way of LOVE because love is not lust. Love means an out-going love, an out-going concern for the good and welfare of others. It is the way of wanting to serve and help and cooperate, wanting to share with others, of having in your mind and heart only the good of others. But **getting** is that “I want to get all for me. I don't care about anybody else. I am looking out for number one. What do I care what happens

to anybody else.”

Now, the Government of God is based on a LAW. You don't know any government anywhere that is not based on a basic law or constitution of some kind. Right here in the city of Tucson, Arizona, where I am just now, we have a local city government; and it is based on ordinances and laws. The state of Arizona is based on certain state statutes and laws and a state government. And it is supposed to conform, in many ways, to the government of the United States, over all states. And the United States is founded on the Constitution of the United States. And we're in the process right now of testing whether that constitution, the law of this land, can even stand; and whether Christ is going to be able to lead His **church**, or whether the politicians can. And as Mr. rader has been explaining to you, if the state of California can win this battle against the Worldwide Church of God, then they will go after other churches. And if the state of California can do it, then other states will begin to do it, until **all** churches will be **wiped out**. They have been in **Russia**. **Don't SAY it could never happen here**. It is **just that serious**, as Mr. rader said. Let nobody be misled or misunderstand that point.

Now this world has really been ruled by Satan, and I am coming to explain that right now; and of course, the real instigator of it is Satan. But Satan has **deceived** the entire world, and many people are doing things of which Satan is the real instigator; but they're unaware of that. They don't realize that they were really led into that by an evil Satan.

Well, iniquity was found in this Lucifer. He led all of his angels into rebellion against the Government of God, and the Government of God no longer was administered on the Earth. That is, physical destruction came to the Earth as a result of that. In the 104th Psalm in verse 30, it speaks about God "*renewing the face of the Earth*" by sending forth His Holy Spirit. And so, you find the Earth in a state of chaos and destruction in the second verse of Genesis 1, the first chapter of Genesis. And the Spirit of God is there

brooding over the watery surface. It was all oceans. There was no land at that time. And it was all dark because the sin of the angels brought darkness. And God is the God of Light and not of darkness. So, the first thing that God did, He said “Let there be light” and so light appeared. Then in six days, He RENEWED the face of the Earth **for mankind**. **Angels had failed**. You read in II Peter, second chapter and the fourth verse in the New Testament, of how the ANGELS SINNED and God has not spared them who sinned. And so we are told fear not, lest He will not spare us.

Lucifer had his name changed to Satan, and we know him as Satan today. He has deceived the whole world. Well, God first created man, and He created a woman from the man. Adam and Eve they were called. Just as God had instructed Lucifer at the headquarters of the universe, Lucifer was on the very THRONE of God before He sent him out. So God **first**, instructed **Adam**, and He **talked** with Adam the very first Sabbath day. God did not allow Satan to have any contact with Adam until God had thoroughly instructed Him about the **Government of God**, about the coming **Kingdom** of God, which is the family of God ruling with the Government of God (a different thing than the Government of God). And He had shown him that God’s way, God’s government, is based on LOVE—on the way of GIVE and not on the way of GET, just use my own phraseology for it.

Now Adam had an opportunity to qualify to replace the former Lucifer on the throne of the world and to administer the Government of God. Now God was determined to RESTORE the Government of God to this Earth when He intended to do it through man. Now the first man, Adam, was given a chance. But, just as Lucifer had rejected and rebelled, so now did the first man rebel.

The Two Trees

There were the two trees in the Garden of Eden. One was the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. That was taking to **yourself** the decision of what you think is right and what you think is wrong. The way of man that God says is never right and leads to death. Then there was the tree of **life**, which represented the Holy Spirit and the gift of eternal life, which God was willing to give Adam free. He did not have to repent. He had never done any sinning yet, at the time God spoke to him. But Adam had to qualify by rejecting **Satan and Satan's way**, the **get** way; and by accepting God as his ruler, as the revealer of knowledge and truth, and as Savior. So, he had to also not only reject Satan and Satan's way but obey God and accept God's way. As I say, this was symbolized by the two trees.

Now Satan, when he was allowed to, Satan got through to Adam by way of his wife; and Satan's gotten through to many men through their wives. Let that be a warning to you husbands and you wives. Eve finally tried the first scientific experiment in this world. I wonder if you realize the tools of science? Of modern science?

1. The rejection of revelation from God as the source of knowledge. They will not receive knowledge from God.
2. Observation and measurement,
3. Experiment,
4. Human reason.

So, Eve rejected what God had said—that she would surely die if she took of that tree. She looked at it and had observation and reason. It looked desirable, good for food. It was beautiful. She couldn't see anything wrong with it, and she was not about to believe God when He said it was wrong. She was going to determine that for herself.

So, she used human reason, and then she decided to make an

experiment. She **TOOK** of the tree to see what would happen. **RESULT OF THAT FIRST SCIENTIFIC EXPERIMENT, SHE AND HER HUSBAND DIED** and they're not living today. That was the first scientific experiment.

Now then, let's go back to Genesis the third chapter, at the very end of the third chapter.

***Genesis 3:22** And the [Eternal] God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil.*

That is, he took to himself the knowledge of good and evil, instead of letting God give it to him. God is the revealer of knowledge; and if you shut off revelation, you shut off the real source of knowledge.

***Genesis 3:22-24** ...And now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the Tree of Life [which he had not taken yet] ...and live forever: [Because that represented the Holy Spirit, the Tree of Life; and lest he do that.] (23) Therefore the [Eternal] God sent him forth from the Garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. (24) So He drove out the man; and He placed at the east of the Garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the Tree of Life.*

God then shut mankind off from the Holy Spirit. And God, in effect, said to Adam, to put it in modern language, my own language, He said, "Adam, you have made the decision. You have had the chance to make a great decision, not only for yourself but for all that would be born from you, which would be the entire world of humanity. You have decided for yourself and all of them. Therefore, I **sentence you** and your progeny, **mankind**, to **6,000 years of being completely cut off from Me**. All except the **few** that I shall **specialy** and draw to Me for special service or activity, preparing for the Kingdom of God, when I will re-establish the Government of God on this Earth; and with the Kingdom of God."

Re-establishing God's Government

The Government of God. You know, the only place on Earth today where the Government of God is being administered IS IN THIS CHURCH – The Worldwide Church of God. Now our present world headquarters are in Pasadena, California. At least they have been. And right now, I sort of moved them with myself over here to Tucson, Arizona, as I think most all of you know. And so, the largest state in the union has decided to attack and to try to do away with the Government of God. The men there don't know that. They have been moved by Satan. But Satan is the great deceiver, and they do not know what led them. They are looking at it from a human political point of view. But the whole object is to destroy the Government of God. But fortunately, God previously moved me over here into Tucson, Arizona. Had He not done that, number one, when I had complete total heart failure (Let's see. I guess that's over two years ago now.), I probably would never have come back because I was utterly dead for a certain, small, short length of time. It might have been 30 seconds, it might have been a minute or half or more, because no one was clocking it at the time to be sure.

Anyway, my heart had completely stopped. There was no heartbeat. There was no blood pressure. There was no pulse. There was no breath. I was not breathing, and my fingernails turned to whatever they do turn to under those conditions. My face was, I think, all blanched and everything of the kind, but by mouth to mouth resuscitation, they brought me back. Secondly, if I had been in California on January 3rd of this year, I don't know whether the state's attack might have succeeded or not. Fortunately, I was here, and I was able to send letters to **all** of you brethren all over the United States. The first letter I had mailed from Pasadena, and the state's agent stopped it at the post office from going out. They weren't even going to let me communicate with **you**. So, I sent another letter, and it wasn't mailed in Pasadena. And the response was over-whelming.

And so now, you send the tithes and offerings to me **personally** here, but I am incorporated in the **corporation-sole** as custodian for the Church of God. So in a sense, that makes the headquarters here, doesn't it now. But of course, our properties are still in California, and we are going to protect them. You can believe that. The state wants some eighty million dollars worth of beautiful property, the most beautiful campus in the United States or in the world; and they want to **stamp** the church. The cost to run it would be ridiculous. They wouldn't know how. They would not know the first thing about it.

Man Cut Off

Now, God had cut man off. He said, "Go form your own governments." He said, "Go form your own **religions**. You rejected Me as your God." All right, look at all the different religions formed under the **sway of Satan**. God said, "You go form your own fund of knowledge, since you reject knowledge from Me." So, man has done that. In man's store of knowledge, he has built his institutions of learning; and our educational system is all what man has done **UNDER THE SUPERVISION AND GUIDANCE OF SATAN THE DEVIL!** And mankind doesn't even know that. And I say to you today, that the most **ignorant men we have in this world** are the most highly educated. Because they have been educated in so many **fables** and so many **non-truths** that they're going to have to unlearn those before they can ever begin to learn real truth. So, man has gone off to form his own institutions, his own governments, his own churches, his own knowledge, his own civilization. Now, for 6,000 years, man has been cut off from God in a way man does not realize.

Again, as Jesus Christ said "No man could come to Him unless the Father would draw him." God must take the initiative. No man was able to do that. **BUT MAN HAS NOT BEEN CUT OFF FROM SATAN.** I want to

emphasize that point. Now for 5,700 years, man had stumbled along, about the same old keel in this sense. So far as what human beings called “progress,” there has been very little progress in 5,700 years of man’s development on Earth. For example, in travel, men originally had to walk, go horseback or mule-back, or row boat or sail boat. That is why most cities were built on a harbor on the seashore, on the sea coast.

It is only in the recent years that man has begun to come out of it and make what humans call “progress”. Now I have to put quotes around that word “progress.” However, the modern progress, so-called, started with the invention of the printing press. Let’s see, what is that, about 400 years ago. But it took some time after the invention of the printing press before knowledge could be, man’s knowledge could be, disseminated and spread. First, they had to teach teachers before they had teachers to teach others. And so, the so-called progress was slow even at that for a long time, but it gained momentum as it went along. Now, most so-called progress has come in this century since I have been here.

Now this thing that man calls progress, it’s dual. Or, what God would call progress are two kinds. One is physical or material progress and the other is spiritual. Now, the physical progress that man has made, much of that is very good and some of it is very bad. Spiritual progress has been in reverse, going backward. Not progress at all, but backsliding. Physical progress... well, when I was born, before the beginning of this century, we had in the cities horse-drawn little dinky streetcars, with a team of horses pulling them. And the first kind of streetcar I can remember was when I was about 5 years old; and they had what we called the little dinkies, the first little tiny electric cars with a trolley on an electric line. No one ever thought of flying in the air until I was 11 years old—when I believe it was Orville Wright who made the first flight about as far as across this auditorium right here, and not out of the sight of anybody, when I was 11 years old. Telephone was still in its infancy.

Communication and transportation were still elementary in every way.

In the United States, we were primarily an agricultural country at that time with the overwhelming majority of our population living on farms or in smaller towns. Today it is just the reverse. But, at that time, agriculture was not mechanized. In other words, they had horse-drawn plows. And my, how I have seen that, and farmers plowing out by the roadsides in the country in Iowa, **singing** at the top of their lungs as they worked all day. **THEY WERE HAPPY THEN.** Not any more.

I have seen developed the machine age, the age of science and technology - you might call it the “air age” - the automobile age and of rapid transportation, and air age, the nuclear age and now the space age.

Now today, the number one question in the world is the question of human **survival** because now science and technology have developed the weapons of mass destruction that can erase all human life from off this Earth. And if God doesn't intervene, it would be done. But God will intervene before that happens, and it won't be done.

Now that's the physical progress. Let's look at the spiritual progress or retrogression. Anything like spiritual progress has been going **backward** in almost exactly the ratio that the physical progress has been going forward. As science and technology have developed and advanced, morals and spiritual progress have **waned** and gone **backward just as rapidly**. Did you ever think of that before?

When I was a boy, we didn't have any such problems as divorce and remarriage. I never thought about divorce. There had never been a divorce in any of my family, none of my aunts, uncles or cousins or anybody that I knew in the family. Marriage was FOR LIFE! And when I married, it was for life; and it lasted 50 years, until my wife died. Now God has provided me with another wife, and that's according to God's own plan.

Now the very foundation of human civilization is **the family unit**. The family unit has been broken. Families are breaking up today. Divorce now is rampant. About every third marriage ends in divorce, and in some places even more than that. Morals have been on a toboggan slide. Crime and violence have just increased and been rampant. Wars were increasing with greater means of mass destruction, until now the next war, if it is a nuclear war, can erase all humanity from this Earth. And that is the number one problem on Earth today. In other words, what we have had is human DEGENERATION. Now measure that against the advancements of science and technology. All of the benefits of science and technology are no good with degeneration. There is no benefit to us whatsoever. And yet, science and technology have brought us the weapons that will finally destroy us—in cosmocide.

We have come to the place where only Jesus Christ can save this world alive. And of course, we know He is going to do it. And the first thousand years of His reigning on the Earth as the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords is what we have been celebrating here the last seven days, and what all of you brethren all over the United States have been celebrating in your various places.

God Has Been Calling Some

Now in the meantime, God has been calling some. And He has **called only** those that He was going to use in the development of the restoration of His government on Earth and the formation of the Kingdom of God, which **IS THE BORN FAMILY OF GOD** administering the Government of God. God called them to reveal the knowledge to them, to make them His government, and see if they would obey Him and His government. Now He gave them statutes and judgments to be the national laws of their government. He gave them His great overall Spiritual Law of love, which is

defined down into the Ten Commandments. It is love towards God and love towards neighbor. Then in addition, He gave them a ritualistic law. Now that is a physical law, not a Spiritual Law. It was a law of physical rituals to do morning, noon and night, to teach them the habit of obedience because He did not give them the Holy Spirit. He gave them this physical ritual law as a substitute until the Holy Spirit came. But a substitute didn't do the job, a physical law. And He also gave them a law of animal sacrifices because Christ had not yet come. Now the sacrifices could not forgive sin, animal sacrifices; but they were a reminder of sin.

Let's see, I've lost my place here in my notes.

Now then, we come down to our time now. Christ came and preached the good news of the Kingdom of God, restoration of the Government of God on this Earth. That's the most important thing to God right now, in a sense. Because that is the basis of developing character and for God's ultimate overall purpose for the whole universe, which very few know or understand. And, I read to you how Christ said "*Let him who is athirst come...*" to Me and drink (Revelation 22:17) that the Holy Spirit would come to Them. But the Holy Spirit had not yet, at that time, been given yet. Because Christ had not yet been glorified. Now that's why ancient Israel had animal sacrifices as a substitute, to remind them that Christ would come. Although, their animal sacrifices didn't forgive their sins.

Now, God had called some. The Father did call some to Christ. Jesus said that *no man could come to Him unless the Father drew them*. And God did begin to draw some. Only 120 had been drawn for the whole three and a half years of Jesus Christ's ministry. And, on the day of Pentecost, the Holy Spirit came and entered into that 120. But there were many others there from all the nations around the Earth. And Peter preached a sermon. They were convicted because they realized, especially those who had been in Judea at the time, that they were the ones who had killed the very Savior,

Jesus Christ—or had caused it. They said,” **What shall we DO** ” Peter said **” Repent and be baptized ...and you SHALL receive the gift of the Holy Spirit”** So about 3,000 were converted. (Acts 2:37-41). Now **they** were those that God had **drawn**. But the other people in other places outside had not been drawn and were not converted then.

There was one time that God wanted the apostle Paul to go to a certain place; for He said, I have many people there (Acts 18:9-10). In other words, God was going to draw many people **there**. Jesus said to Peter and others of the apostles, *“Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men.”* (Matthew 4:19) because they were fishermen, fishing in the Sea of Galilee. I have been all around it. I have not tried to walk on the water as Peter did yet, and I think I won’t do that right away. But Jesus [{1}](#) [51:24] said, “I will make you fishers of men.”

Now when you go fishing, you may let your fishing rod or the fish hook down in the water; and maybe you can stand there all day and never get a fish. At another time or another place, you will let it down; and you will get fish one after another, just as fast as you pull them out. Because they run in schools and you never know where the fish are, and you don’t know what fish you are going to get. You can’t pick out and say, “I want to get that one.” and think that one will take the hook, and you are going to pull him out. Well that’s the way it is with men. I know, when I was first converted, I wanted to see all my family and relatives converted. So, I tried to talk them into it. They just thought I was crazy. Have any of you had that experience? **NO MAN CAN COME TO CHRIST UNLESS THE SPIRIT OF THE FATHER DRAWS HIM.** And God the Father had not drawn those people. I could not help that. That was not my doing.

Now let me tell you something else, begin to explain something else a little farther. Over here in I Peter

I Peter 4:17 For the time has come that judgment must begin at the house of God.

In other words, WE ARE the house of God, brethren, just as the church that was first started and converted on that day of Pentecost in 31 AD. Judgment was on them. They were then being judged. We're part of that same church today in our generation, and WE ARE BEING JUDGED.

Now here is the point I want you to get: **no man can come to Christ.** God has cut others off from Him. People think that it's man that has cut God off. Oh no. God has cut man off. Now does that seem fair? A lot of people say, "That's not fair then." God did not give them any chance of conversion. That is true, He didn't. He didn't give them any chance of salvation. Well now, the human reason would say "Then God is not fair. Why does He give some a chance and others not?"

There is no partiality with God, brethren. Let me tell you that. The reason God has drawn some, I've said that He only draws those He is going to have a part in preparing for the Kingdom of God. He is not drawing them just to get them saved. EVERYONE is going to be drawn to salvation in the end. Well what about all these millions and billions that have lived and died, and have never been drawn, and they were **CUT OFF FROM GOD; AND GOD CUT THEM OFF, AND THEY NEVER HAD A CHANCE?** Oh, well God's going to take care of that too. That's what I am here to explain to you right now. That's what **THIS DAY** is all about, and the world doesn't understand it.

Now let's go on from there. "Judgment" is on us. But we are only the **FIRSTFRUITS**. We are represented by the Day of Pentecost in our annual Holy Days, just the first harvest. But we who are called now have to overcome this world, ourselves, and Satan. Now let me tell you something. The others that God has not called, He just hasn't called them **YET**. And

when He does call them, they won't have to overcome any Satan. They won't have to. We've got a lot tougher time than they will have. On the other hand, we are going to be rewarded according to our works; and those of us that do overcome Satan are going to rule with Christ in His throne. Jesus had to QUALIFY to sit on that throne. He had to overcome Satan who had been sat on that throne when he was the archangel Lucifer. Jesus had to overcome Satan. He had to reject Satan's way, and He did. If we're to sit with Him on His throne, do you think we can get on there **without qualifying also**? Well, you better think again. If we're going to rule with Christ, we have to overcome Satan same as He did.

Now, those that God has not called, He has not called YET. But when He **does**, there won't be any Satan around; and they'll have so much an easier time of it. There is no impartiality with God, absolutely not. But we can have a greater reward, although we have a tougher time getting to it.

Now, those that have been cut off from God, that could not come to Him unless God would draw them, have **NOT YET BEEN JUDGED**. Now their works have been recorded. Whatever they have done, they are still going to be judged for it; but they're also going to be given a chance to repent and be forgiven for it, when their time of judgment comes. There are a number of judgments mentioned in the Bible. I don't have time to go into all of those just now.

God's Master Plan

I tell you that there is only one church on Earth today that understands God's master plan. His master plan is unfolded and given to us through these seven annual Holy Days and the seven annual festivals. And this is the only church on Earth that observes them. God revealed that to me fifty-two and a half years ago, and at that time, my wife and I began observing these annual Holy Days. We didn't yet understand all of the festivals. We didn't

understand “why.” We just knew God said to do it; and we found it was binding forever, and that it was also observed by Christ and by the church in the beginning, the New Testament church. Now I preached it to others that were supposed to be even the Church of God. They laughed me to scorn. They would not accept it. For **seven years**, my wife and I had to keep these Holy Days alone by ourselves. Then the beginning of **this church** was raised up in autumn 1933. They were my own converts. I taught them these annual Holy Days, and they began to keep them, starting with 19 members. And that is the way this church, now scattered all over the world, and that is when we started.

Now for seven years, we kept these annual Holy Days, or Sabbath Days; and we didn't really understand why we were doing it. But all the brethren and the church started to grow, and the radio broadcast was going, the Plain Truth was being published, starting very small. Just growing gradually, little by little, and yet it was growing thirty per cent a year on the average. Then after seven years of that, now fourteen years from the time that we had begun, God revealed to me WHY we are to observe these days and festivals; and that they pictured God's great master plan for the redemption of human kind. I saw that we should get out and keep the Feast of Tabernacles for seven days as a type of the Kingdom of God, to get away from the world as a whole. So then, I went out and found a fine little place in Belknap Springs up in Oregon.

Well, you know, even my own church members that had been my own converts, most of them would not observe anything more than just the Annual Sabbaths. They weren't going to accept anything new they didn't already have. But from then on all new converts DID, and that's the way it is. **Why is it** so many will go just so far and they will not go any farther? They can't receive any new knowledge. Well, look how many we have now keeping the Feast of Tabernacles. Almost 100,000 of you listening to me right now all

over the United States and Canada. It's a marvelous thing, and I don't know of any other body on Earth that is doing it. But God revealed it to me; and it had to start **with my wife and myself alone**, AND WE DID IT. I've been keeping these days a lot longer than you have, as I'm sure you all know.

Now, as you know, the Passover is to picture to us the sacrifice of Christ, the Lamb of God slain for paying the price of our sins. The Feast of Unleavened Bread for seven days pictures our coming out of sin or putting of leaven out of our homes, the putting of sin out of our lives. The Feast of Firstfruits or Pentecost is to picture to us that we are only the **FIRST FRUITS**, that God is **NOT TRYING TO SAVE THE WHOLE WORLD NOW. THIS IS NOT THE TIME THAT GOD IS TRYING TO SAVE THE WORLD. THIS IS THE TIME GOD HAS CUT THE WORLD OFF, AND THEY CAN'T BE SAVED. Now I say, does that mean injustice with God? NO. It is God's responsibility and HE WILL SEE TO IT.** And they're going to have a better chance than we. It is just a case of deciding when the time comes.

The first of the fall festivals, beginning the first day of God's sacred seventh month, the feast of Trumpets picturing the second coming of Christ. We're looking forward to that now. That can't come within one or two years because other things have to happen. But it could come within oh say five, six, seven years. It could. I don't say it will. Then the Day of Atonement, the tenth day of the seventh month, primarily that pictures putting **our** sins that Christ has taken and paid the price for us. But Christ is not paying the price for Satan; and the **REAL AUTHOR OF OUR SINS IS SATAN**, and Satan is going to have to bear that himself. Christ is going to put it on him, and then he is going to be taken away.

Then we come to the Feast of Tabernacles, the sixth festival, which ended last night. That pictures the Millennium. The thousand years reign with Christ. Now then, you have been learning all through the last seven days that

then all, who are left alive on Earth, will be ruled under Christ and under those of us that are converted. I am afraid that many who profess to be will find that the door is shut; and they can rap on the door, but Christ will say, "*I never knew you*". You had better read the 25th chapter of Matthew beginning with verse one again, about the ten virgins.

You know some say that "I believe in being an individual Christian and just worshiping Christ on my own." But Christ formed a church, and He formed a church with a job to do and a body. And if I had to leave that body, I wouldn't give you a plug nickel for my chance of salvation. However, I haven't time to explain all of that now. But all, who are still living when Christ comes, are then going to be called and drawn to Christ by Almighty God the Father. Now that's when He begins to save the world. **But Satan will be taken away.** There won't be any Satan around. The Kingdom of God will be ruling. Those of us who have been converted and who have the Holy Spirit and are being led by the Holy Spirit of God, if we have died between now and then, we will be resurrected. Not as human beings, but **immortal**; and we will rise to meet Christ in the air. We will then be AS GOD, composed of spirit (not flesh and blood any longer), immortal, not mortal.

Those of us who are living at that time—and I still say I could be, if God so wills—will then be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, and rise with them in the air to meet Christ as He's coming back to Earth. He is not coming to meet us as we take off for heaven. We're going up to meet Him in the clouds as He's coming back here, and He is going to be here. His feet are going to stand that very same day on the Mount of Olives. And where He is, we are going to be also with Him. Now a lot of churches get that mixed up.

What About The Billions?

Now then, what about the billions and billions of people that could not come to Christ, could not come to God? They were cut off from God, no chance of salvation at all—from the time of Adam, on. What about all of them? God's responsible for them. That's God's responsibility, and there can be no unfairness with God. Some people would say, "Well, it doesn't look like God is fair. He lets us be called now, and not a lot of others." No, that's poppycock. God is fair with everybody.

Let's go to the 20th chapter of Revelation and beginning with verse 11. Now you find in the beginning how Satan is taken away, and then is the first resurrection, and the people reigning with Christ 1,000 years. We have been observing that and have had sermons about it for the last seven days, but now let's begin with verse 11.

***Revelation 20:11-12** And I saw a great white throne [Now this is after the thousand years is over and John in his vision saw a great white throne.], and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. (12) And I saw the **dead, small and great** , stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of **life** . And the dead were judged out of those things that were written in the books, according to their works.*

Now there was the book of life. That shows that many are going to be saved, and there will be no devil around at that time. The devil will appear just briefly after the thousand years, and then he'll be put away again before this happens.

Now, ancient Israel had no salvation, except the prophets. I mean spiritual salvation. Let's turn now, if you will, back to Ezekiel 37 [{2}](#). I will read the whole first 14 verses. This is about ancient Israel, who was not given the Holy Spirit of God.

***Ezekiel 37:1-5** The hand of the LORD was upon me [that's the prophet*

Ezekiel], and carried me (out) in the spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones, (2) And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, there were very many in the open valley; and, lo, they were very dry.(3) And He said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? [Now, they are dead. They are skeletons. They are bones. Can a skeleton live?] And I answered, O Lord GOD, Thou knowest. [At least he knew God knew.] (4) Again He said unto me, Prophecy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the LORD. (5) Thus saith the Lord [Eternal] unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall LIVE [these skeletons, these bones].

Now these bones are, I will show you later, **the whole house of Israel**. Now I heard a sermon preached on this by a very famous woman evangelist one time, and she said “These dry bones are all the other churches in the world, but we’re not the dry bones, we have got life in us.” Well, if she had just read it right here, it tells who the dry bones are.

Ezekiel 37:6 And I will lay sinews upon you [these bones], and I will bring flesh on you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you [Now that breath is what we have to have for physical life. In immortal life, spirit life, we won’t need any breath. So, this is speaking of bringing people back to human life, just like they are now. It’s not speaking of an immortal, of a resurrection to immortality], and you shall live; and you shall know that I am the LORD [the Eternal].

Ezekiel 37: 7-11 And I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. (8) And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no breath in them. [So naturally, this is talking about human life. They still didn’t have life in them]. (9) Then said He unto me, Prophecy unto the wind [or air], prophesy, son of man, and say unto the wind, Thus saith the Lord

[Eternal]; Come from the four winds O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live.’ (10) So I prophesied as He commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army. (11) Then He said unto me, Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel: [They are not the church of the lady preacher. These bones are the whole house of Israel. That is, the ancient Israel prior to the time of Christ.] Behold, they say, ‘Our bones are dried, and our hope is lost: we are cut off from our parts.

Because they **never received the Holy Spirit** and, they never received **salvation** and they did not understand that they could still receive it. Now **here is a resurrection** at the end of the thousand **years** .

*Ezekiel 37: 12-13 Therefore prophesy and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord [Eternal]; Behold, O my people, I will open your graves [now this is Israel], and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. (13) And ye shall **know** that I am the [Eternal], when I have opened your graves, O my people...*

You see they never did really understand it. They committed adultery. They were supposed to be married to Christ, well we know it was the one who became Christ, but to God; and they never really knew He was the LORD, or the Eternal.

Ezekiel 37:13-14 ...and [I] brought you up out of your graves... (14) And shall put my spirit in you...

Now when He brings them up, get this point, first He puts breath in them and now they are going to come, after they have that breath, to KNOW God. Now, God is going to draw them to Him.

Ezekiel 37:14 And shall put my SPIRIT IN YOU [Now that is when they will receive the Holy Spirit], and you shall live, and I will place you in

your own land: Then shall you know that I the [Eternal] have spoken it, and performed it, saith the [Eternal].

Isn't that a wonderful teaching? Isn't that wonderful, the ways of God? Not only Israel, but **all** nations are going to come into such a resurrection.

Let's turn now to Matthew 12 beginning with verse 41. Jesus is speaking, and He said:

Matthew 12:41 *The men of Nineveh shall rise up in judgment.*

Now it's speaking about a judgment, the great white throne judgment after the millennium.

Matthew 12:41-42 *The men of Nineveh shall rise up, [that's a resurrection from the dead], in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here. [He was talking to the scribes and Pharisees, and He is much greater than Jonah, but they would not believe Him. He says now...] (42) The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: [and that's a gentile nation] for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.*

So, they're going to be in this judgment too, in the resurrection. Now then, another very important one is Luke 11:31-32; and again, it's Jesus speaking.

Luke 11:31-32 *The queen of the south shall rise up in judgment [speaking of the great white throne judgment, in the resurrection] ...and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here. (32) The men of Nineveh shall rise up in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a*

greater than Jonas is here.

Now, wait a minute. Also, He spoke about it will be in this judgment. I guess I did not get that scripture down. But the men of Sodom and Gomorrah will fare better in that judgment than these that were rejecting the very Christ Himself when He was on Earth 1900 years ago. And it shows that there will be a resurrection of all of those that a God had cut off from Him.

Brethren, can you get this into your mind? We have always assumed that God is trying to save the whole world. All Protestants believe that, and I suppose all Catholics in their way. God has CUT THE WORLD OFF, except those that the Father calls. But there is this judgment coming; and they're going to have it easier than we do, when their time comes. Let's understand that. All shall have been called. It is only the church and the prophets that have to overcome Satan, and we shall rule with Christ. We have a chance at a greater reward, but we pay a bigger price to get it too. Let me tell you.

Now then, in closing finally, will you turn to

***Romans 11:33-36** O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments... [These judgments of His that I have been telling you, judgment is on us now. It will be on those who are alive in the Millennium. It'll be on everybody else that never had been judged before after that, in the Great White Throne Judgment]. (34) For who has known the mind of the Lord? Or who hath been His counselor? (35) Or who hath first given to Him, and it shall be recompensed unto Him again? (36) For of Him, and through Him, and to Him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.*

And with that, brethren, we come to the end of this eight day festival. It's been here in Tucson, Arizona, the most wonderful festival that I know of. From reports of other feast sites, I think it has been there too. And, I hope that

all of you listening have had the most wonderful festival ever. We are beginning greater plans for the festival next year immediately. There are some who will be working all year on it. So, we can come back to a still greater feast next year. And we are looking forward now to the great time in the millennium when there will be no Satan; and then after that, when all that have been cut off by God and from God will then be called and they won't have any Satan to confront them. What a wonderful time that will be.

So now, carry this thought of the wonders of God as you go home. And I hope and pray that God will send angels along to see that you have no automobile accidents of any kind. Drive carefully. Keep your eye on the ball, and that's right ahead on the road where you are going, on both sides at intersections. I hope you all get home safe and sound. I hope to see you next year, and I hope to see all of you. Now some of you have not had the picture this time. Most of you have. Next year we hope that we can have it so that you can all see the festival from here, just the same as most of you have this year.

So, with that, I'll say goodbye to all of you from now until next year.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong meant Jesus. The original said: "Peter."

{2} - Editorial note: Mumbling deleted. The original said: "Let's see. Ezekiel 37. Oh, here I was and didn't know it."

Times and Seasons

Sermon (March 15, 1980)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Times and Seasons.....	206	The Abomination Of Desolation	224
Counting Pentecost	207	The Day Of The Lord	227
New Translation	208	Opening The Seals	228
Bible A Jigsaw Puzzle	209	The Gospel Suppressed	230
How Truth Came Into The Church	210	Gospel Preached Once More	232
Authority Of The Bible	212	Of The House Of David	234
Two Ways Of Life	213	Exact Time Cycles	236
Signs Of The Times	215	Gospel To China	238
Gospel Suppressed	218	Invitation To Visit Russia	239
Opposition To The Truth	220	Governments Of The World	241
The Sign Of The End	222	Government In The Church	242

You'll notice I'm all 'loaded for bear' this afternoon, but I don't know any better ammunition than three different Bibles. And by the way, by way of just a few opening remarks, I always use the King James or the so-called Authorized Bible because more people use it than any other; and I think they understand me better if I use that than one of the modern translations. But any numbers of modern translations have come out in the last three or four years, and some of them are absolutely no good at all; and I want to advise you against some of these real new modern editions. I think that for accuracy perhaps the Revised Standard is even a little more accurate than the King James, and perhaps more accurate than any other.

I was talking to the chairman of the Revised committee who is revising the Revised Standard—a new revision that has not been published as yet. And there was one thing I called to his attention. He admitted he was wrong. That's when we changed the day of Pentecost. That's because **every** translation of the Bible when I first set that day, about fifty years ago, every

translation said we should **count from** a Sunday; or a morrow after a Sabbath. Now one day from Sunday is not still Sunday, or the day before Sunday, or anything like that. It is Monday. And so, when you count, one day from Sunday is Monday; and that's where you begin counting. And it comes out on a Monday Pentecost, and for exactly forty years this Church observed Pentecost on a Monday.

Counting Pentecost

I went into it very thoroughly here, some, just a few years ago. Perhaps you remember it better than I do just when it was that we made the change. But some of our Hebrew and Greek students had been looking into it. To be frank about it, I didn't really look into the Hebrew at the time, fifty years ago, because I went to **every single translation** in the English language that had been made at that time; and there were quite a number. The Revised Standard had not come out yet, but it had used the same expression in counting 'from' that day. Now some of our men came to me and said that every other place the Hebrew word is used it is translated into the English word 'ON' and not the English word 'from.'

I had a friend of mine that I know very, very well who is a lady teaching the Bible in Israel. Now, of course, in Israel that means the Old Testament; but she teaches it in the Hebrew language. I called her long distance. I asked her to just read that; and I said, "Tell me, how do you count? Do you begin counting with a Sunday, on a Sunday or from it; and tell me how it would come out? I want you to count it for me and tell me." She said, "Well, it comes out that Pentecost is on Sunday."

Later I found I talked to two of the translators of the Revised Standard translation (very learned men of course, with their doctor's degrees and a very great deal of graduate scholarship), and they tried to defend the word

‘from’ for a while; but I showed them that ‘from’ means ‘away, out of.’ It never means ‘inside of.’ One step from this building is not inside of this building. It is one foot outside of it, in any direction. If you take one foot on the I guess this would be the north side, that’s **outside**. **‘From’** means away, **out of**—never within. And he said, “Well, Mr. Armstrong, you are right.” And he said, “I am chairman of the committee for a revision of this Revised Standard, and I will see to it that we correct it in this new translation.” Well, I hope he keeps his word. That’s all I can say. (chuckles)

New Translation

There is one translation that many of our brethren have been buying that I wish I could have stopped before they did because it is not even a translation. It is merely someone who has put his own ideas of the way he thinks it ought to be into it. It is not in any way a translation from the original Hebrew or Greek languages. For example, Moses wrote the first five books all in the Hebrew language. Most all of the Old Testament is written in the Hebrew language, a little bit of it in the Aramaic. All of the New Testament is written in the Greek language, and we do have thousands and thousands of copies. In no case is the original that was written by Moses, or the original written by the apostle Paul, or the apostle John, or by Peter, or Luke or one of those extant, we don’t have anywhere the original manuscript that was written by any one of them; but it has been copied thousands of times.

And one thing traditionally: that the Jews preserved the Old Testament for us, there is no question about that. And their scribes, and you read a lot about them in the New Testament, they were hypocrites. Jesus had a lot to say about them and against them. But there was one thing they were very careful about and that is copying the scriptures. When they copied a page, several went over to check it whether it was right or wrong by a number of people. And if there was one mistake, they didn’t correct that mistake. They

had to write that page over again until they got it perfect without a single mistake.

Bible A Jigsaw Puzzle

Now where you have thousands of copies, and we know that the ones who did the copying were that careful, we can be pretty sure that we do have the original. If, out of a thousand, one of them is a little different from the other 999, we can be pretty sure in most cases that the one is an error and that the other 999 are correct. Again, any passage of the scripture must sort of jive with other passages that refer to the same thing. The Bible, you know, is a great deal like a jigsaw puzzle.

A niece of my wife has been living at our home for some time going to high school here in Tucson, and some little time ago they had a very large jigsaw puzzle. I thought they would never get it put together. The different pieces have to fit a certain way; and, if you get them put together properly, they finally turn out to make a very beautiful picture. But the Bible is that way. You don't get **all** the truth in any one place. For example, the first chapter of Genesis: There is a **great deal** that is **not** mentioned in the first chapter of Genesis that happened at the same time. And you have to find some of it in the book of Revelation, and some of it in 1st and 2nd Peter, some of it in the writings of the apostle Paul, some of it in Jeremiah, or some of it in Ezekiel or Isaiah; and you have to put them all together. But you have to get every piece that you put together **as that piece would read in its context**, and so many people have been careless about that.

Now those are some of the things that I had to learn 53 years ago. And I will say this: Everything that you people have and believe, directly or indirectly, came from me. I wonder if you realize that. In other words, putting all of these things together into the various major doctrines is something you

didn't have to do. It was done for you. Take the subject of the Sabbath, take the subject of God's law, take the subject of law and grace, take any theological subject or biblical subject; and **you** received the doctrines that you believe **all** came from me. Now **how** did I get it?

A minister that we have had to put out of the Church, he came to see me. He thought maybe he could save the situation by talking to me and unfortunately though he didn't. But he said, "Well, Mr. Armstrong, you got all you believe just from the Sardis Church. You just took what they had and memorized it." Now that was **absolutely untrue**. I did not get one doctrine from the Sardis Church. I did not get one doctrine from the Seventh Day Adventist Church, the Seventh Day Baptist. I didn't get one doctrine from the Quaker Church in which I was raised up from birth. Neither did I get a single doctrine from the Methodist, the Baptist, the Roman Catholic or any other church. I did not get one bit of what I have taught you and of the truth that you all are privileged to know and understand because it is truth. I did not get it from **man**. I did not get it in any theological school. **I was not taught it by any human being** or any **group** of human beings.

How Truth Came Into The Church

Let me just give you a little illustration of that so you can know how the truth came into this church. And I don't know of another living person on the face of the earth who received the doctrines and the beliefs in the way that God gave it to me. My wife had been visiting a woman who happened to be a member of what we call now the Sardis Church. Now that is not an epithet. Sardis is one of the real true Churches of God. It's the era of people that lived before us; and it hit its prime perhaps 250 years ago, before any of us were born. I came in with those people in the latter end of that era and that time. But I was highly prejudiced against them because one of their women had taught my wife to keep the Sabbath and I thought that was religious

fanaticism.

I used every argument I could to talk her out of it. I said, “How would you keep the Sabbath if you lived on the North Pole? We live on a round earth. You can’t keep the Sabbath at the same time here that they do in Japan or that they do in Jerusalem.” Well, she had an answer for every one of those questions; and, of course, I do now; and I think you do. **We keep the Sabbath day when it gets here** because God sets the day when the sun sets wherever you are on earth. And the sun doesn’t set the same time here as it does in Jerusalem. It sets here 9 hours later than it does over in Jerusalem. So we begin the Sabbath 9 hours later than they do over there. We observe the day when that day comes to us. But I didn’t know that then.

And so, in order to convince my wife and to save our marriage... And, incidentally, that marriage did last fifty years. I don’t know if we have any of you here who have enjoyed a marriage for fifty years yet or not. But I did, just lacking precisely $3 \frac{1}{2}$ months. If my wife had lived $3 \frac{1}{2}$ months longer, it would have been fifty years. Now I am married again, and this time again it is until death do us part. That’s the way marriage ought to be. But death finally took my wife, and she was past 75 ($75 \frac{1}{2}$), half way towards age 76), which is a fairly ripe age. And then I lived alone for ten years before I was married again. But marriage is of God, as we all know. Well, anyway, I had to start studying the Bible.

Now, at the same time, I was challenged by a sister-in-law on the doctrine of evolution. I had never researched the doctrine of evolution in a real in-depth manner. Well, I had studied more-or-less **about** it, as maybe some of you had. You can be quite an educated person and not have studied evolution all the way through, and I was having to prove to her that evolution was false because I didn’t **believe** it. And I found myself for a while—when I studied the works of Darwin and Heckle and Huxley and Lyle and going clear back to the Marx time and others—I found myself wondering if there is a

God after all. I began to realize I had **never proved** whether God exists.

I'd been brought up to believe there is a God. Now, why did I believe? Well, I had been taught it since I was a **child**; and I took it for granted. **I had never seen proof.** And now I said, "I have to see **proof. I've got to PROVE** whether God exists." Now before I began to learn any of the doctrines that **you** have now learned, **I had to PROVE**, absolute PROOF, that God exists; and I have proved it by several infallible proofs. And I have been able since to convince Atheists and Communists that they are wrong and that God does exist and make them **admit** that I had proved it to them.

Authority Of The Bible

The next thing I had to come to, well, is the Bible. Now I know the Koran is the religious writing of the Islamic people. Which of these writings is the real revelation of God? And how does **God** talk to man? I started with the Bible; and before I got doctrines, I had **proved** that this Book—the Holy Bible—is, in its original writings, and that we do have different translations; and it was originally, of course, mostly in two different languages, and part of it in the third language, Aramaic. But I had to find (and you can get at the original if you will have the patience and study) that it **is** the inspired and **authoritative Word of the living God.** I found I could **believe** this Book. But I had to, in some cases, go to the original languages. I had to study different translations. That much I did have to do **in some cases**, but not many, because the King James Bible is about 99.9999% correct as far as that goes. And, as I say, the only one I know that might have been an improvement on it is the Revised Standard.

Now I brought along with me today the Moffat Translation. I use Moffat quite a little because wherever Moffat is correct, Moffat did not exactly transliterate, he put what he thought was the meaning, and in some

cases he was wrong. I can't recommend Moffat as authoritative; but I will say that, wherever he is right, he puts it in language that makes it a little more clear and plain to us in today's English. And so I like Moffat in some cases for that reason, and only where I have proved that the part of Moffat I quote is correct. And in some places he even makes the truth more plain than others.

So I would recommend that you use the King James as your main Bible. And if you can afford two, and I think that any of you could, I would say get the Revised Standard. But these modern translations that have come out in the last 2, 3, 5 years, I will not recommend a one of them because today there is an absolute tendency everywhere to water down, to change, to liberalize and to, in other words, to go more towards Satan's way.

Two Ways Of Life

Now when I talk to audiences overseas in other nations, and in some cases they speak a different language. But I speak to the chief people and people high in government and in education who also understand English; and, when I do, I speak in very simple language. I don't talk to them about the 10 Commandments. They don't understand that. I just say that there are **two ways of life**, and you either go one way or the other. There is no other way at all, **two broad ways**. And I make it so simple a little child... Some of you kids can get this, so if you children will listen right now for just a minute. There are two ways to live; and one is the way that I call **give**, and you know what that means. And the other is the way I call **get** or **take**. **Everything** is give or get, and there are two different ways.

Now God's way is the way of **give**, and that is the way of **out flowing love**. You children each have a mother, and your mother loves you because you mean an awful lot to her; and that is real love, and that is 'give'. That's

mostly give. Maybe some mothers get a little bit of ‘get’ in it here and there, but mostly a mother is one who gives to her child. So I just put it in that kind of plain language, and they begin to understand it.

Now the way of get, the way of this world, is self-centeredness. It’s everything comes to me. I, me, I’m number one. I don’t care about you. I’m only concerned about me. No one else is going to look after my interests if I don’t. I want to **get** what I can get. I want to **take** whatever I can take. If I am a child, I want to take the other child’s toy and play. I want to **get** everything I can get. I want to **have** what I can have. I want to have this, and I’ll cry if I don’t get it. Now that is the way of vanity then, of self-love, of self-centeredness; and it is the way of **coveting** what someone else has, or the way of lust and greed. It is also the way toward other people of **envy** and **jealousy** and the way of **competition**, to **compete** with others.

Now every one of our games and sports (at least almost every one) is a matter of competition. You take football, basketball, anything of that kind; it’s a matter of trying to keep the other side from getting anything if he can. Don’t let him get anything. But get all you can get yourself. And the one that gets the most and has the highest score wins. That’s the Devil’s way of life. And competition leads to strife, and finally violence, and then to war. And that’s why we have war all over the world. It is also the way of jealousy and envy, and it is the way of **resentment** of any authority over you.

But now GIVE, that’s the way of love going out towards others, the giving way. Not lust, but LOVE. And love is giving. And the greatest giver of all is God. God is the Great Giver. Now the way of love is cooperation, not competition. It is the way of **giving** instead of taking away from others. It is the way of SHARING. You say, “I have it, I want others to enjoy what I have too. I want to share it with them if I can.”

Now it’s all right to look after your own interests, you have to look after

number one. But it is stated in the Bible of love towards others that you should *"love your neighbor AS yourself."* You have to love yourself too. But loving yourself you have to remember that this self, that is you, is something God created and gave you and made you responsible for. And if you love yourself you take good care of this self, or this body that is yours, this mind that is yours. And you take good care of it. And it isn't giving to others to the extent that you harm yourself. You don't want to harm others. You don't want to harm yourself. You want us ALL to be happy.

It is the way of cooperating, of sharing, of giving, of helping, of SERVING. Jesus came as a servant. He came to serve others and help. He didn't come to lord it over others and say, "You listen to Me, or I'll do so and so to you." He didn't come like that. He came with love. He came wanting to help and wanting to share. Now all of this I hadn't intended to say a word, I just got started; and the first thing you know I could go on and talk for the next several hours. And I had a message prepared I wanted to bring you, and it's going to take me about three hours; so I may keep you here a long time.

Signs Of The Times

Now it just happened that, on the Wednesday night before, I had listened to a Billy Graham program on television, and perhaps some of you saw that same television [program]. It was a Billy Graham Crusade in Halifax, I believe, Nova Scotia. And it gave me something to think about that I thought would trigger a message that I would bring you. Now Dr. Graham, as they often call him and as I addressed him the one time I did talk to him. The only time I ever talked to him direct was in England, and it was a telephone conversation. And the managing director of the great Harrods store there was one of the pillars of the church leaders that were sponsoring a Billy Graham Crusade.

Well, it happened at that time that we at Ambassador College there were the chief customer of the Harrods store; and they were buying everything for the College through them, and even through some construction and building through their constructors and builders as well as some, all kinds of, retail goods. And you can even buy animals off them, horses. And I bought a pony for a grandson of mine off Harrods store. But the manager of the Harrods thought it would be good for Billy Graham to talk to me, so he got me on the telephone. He called me “Dr. Armstrong” and I called him “Dr. Graham.” Anyway he was telling me that he hoped I would never forsake my prophecy ministry. He said, “Your ministry is prophecy, and that is a very needful ministry.” Well, he looked at it that one man has this ministry and that ministry; and we don’t look at it that way, you know that.

But Billy Graham that night was speaking on the signs of the times, and he spoke to quite an extent from Jesus’ prophecy in Matthew 24. Now I’ll show you his sermon outline. It began with Matthew 16 and the first 3 verses of Matthew 16.

Matthew 16:1-3 The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired Jesus [{1}](#) that he would show them a sign from heaven. (2) He answered and said unto them, when it is evening, ye say, it will be fair weather; for the sky is red. (3) And in the morning, It will be foul weather today; for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times?

Do you know what kind of times you are living in? Do you know what is prophesied? Do you know what God says is going to come next? In other words, WHERE ARE WE NOW in the panorama of prophecy? **What is going to happen? WHY ARE THINGS HAPPENING THE WAY THEY ARE HAPPENING TODAY?** Well, then he turned over to Matthew 24. Now let me say that Matthew 24 is, in a sense, the report of exactly the same things that Luke, that’s another writer, recorded in Luke 21. Now they

asked Him for a SIGN that would let them know when the end of the world was near and when His coming AGAIN was near. They understood He was going to leave and go to heaven. They understood that He would come again. They didn't know all the details, but they did know that. And they knew that, when He was coming, He would come to set up the Kingdom of God and rule the whole earth. But their minds were still a little cloudy about it at that time. But they asked Him for something that would tell them how they would know when that time was NEAR.

Matthew 24:4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive YOU.

Now He was speaking to people somewhere back in the year of 27 and the year of 31 AD in the first century, and He was saying that even at that time someone would deceive them. He wasn't saying that the people must be careful that someone doesn't deceive them 1900 years from now. And what He said—“*take heed that no man deceive YOU.*” He was talking to His disciples who were living in 27 AD, or between that time and 31 AD.

Matthew 24:5 For many shall come in my name, saying I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

Now Mr. Graham read that a different way. “Many, in the last days...” He took it that it meant that many will come today. Why would Jesus say to them “*take heed no man deceive YOU*” 1900 years after they would be dead and buried and gone? Billy Graham read it that He was saying many would come and they would say that THEY are Christ. And he said, “There have been some that have come and said they are Christ.” Well, I know of one that gained a little bit of publicity and got into the news; and that was a good many years ago. It was a fellow from India by the name of Krishnamurti; and there was a woman by the name of Annie Besant who brought him over, and said he was the Christ.

Gospel Suppressed

Now a man walked into the office of one of our ministers who said, “I am Jesus Christ.” And our minister said, “Oh, are you?” So he said, “If you are Jesus Christ, you’ll be so strong I won’t be able to put you out of my office. Now we’ll just see.” So he rose up, and grabbed him by the nape of the neck and the collar of his coat and the seat of his pants, and shoved him out and said, “I don’t think you are Christ. I was able to throw you out.” Well now, that was funny; but that is not the kind Jesus was talking about. Jesus said, “Many will come saying...” THEY will say that JESUS is the Christ. Jesus was talking: “Many will come saying I (Jesus) am Christ.”

Now that is what happened beginning in the lifetime of those same apostles. They turned to another doctrine by the year of 52 or 53 AD. They had done away with the doctrine of Christ. It had been suppressed; and it was not preached for 1900 years, one century of time cycles. And when it was again preached to the world, I did the preaching; and it was not preached again until that time. They had been preaching another **doctrine, another gospel**. They had preached about **another, a different Christ**. They had preached about a Christ that came to do away with His Father’s law. And they said, “The law is done away. Don’t you obey God. You must disobey God.” That isn’t the Christ I believe in, or you believe in. You know that. So He was talking at first to them. Now let’s carry on here a little bit. And that has happened all since the time from 31 AD when Christ ascended into heaven until now.

Matthew 24:6 And you shall hear of wars and rumors of wars; see that you be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, BUT THE END IS NOT YET.

Now that shows that is NOT the time of the end. Billy Graham says all these things are the sign of the end. Oh, no! He says THAT is **not** the time of the end. Wars and rumors, they’ve had wars and rumors of wars ever since

that time.

Matthew 24:7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be famines, (and pestilences) and earthquakes in divers places. (8) [and] all these are the beginning of sorrows.

Really there are two kinds of sorrow. One, we are sorrowful as we come to the Passover that Christ had to die for us, and we're partly sorrowful that He had to pay that price; but **we** caused it. It's because **we** have sinned and **we** have done wrong that He had to give a life that had never sinned in our stead. That is one kind of sorrow. We're sorry **He** had to pay that price. But I think along with it perhaps we should be a little bit sorry that we have done what we did to cause Him to have to die for us. But there is another sorrow, being sorry for what you did. You did something wrong; and you wake up to it and say, "Well, I am sorry I did that." But this sorrow alone, being sorry or remorseful, is not repentance. Repentance is something very much deeper than that. And He said, "*all these are the beginning of sorrows.*" So we've had a time of sorrow for 1900 years.

Matthew 24:9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted and shall kill you and you shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

Now that began with the early apostles. Many of them were martyred. And I wonder if any of you have read Foxe's Book of Martyrs. That shows actually how millions of Christians were martyred, and tortured, and put to death for believing in Jesus Christ. That has been happening for 1900 years. That is not the sign of the end.

Matthew 24:10-11 And [He says] then shall many be offended and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. (11) And many false prophets shall rise...

Now false prophets have risen and they began rising almost

immediately, and they had actually turned the Churches in Galatia to another gospel by the time Paul wrote the book of Galatians (as you read in the first chapter in verses 6 and 7). Galatians 1 verses 6 and 7, already the true gospel had been **suppressed**. The gospel that Christ brought is the gospel He **PREACHED**. The gospel Christ taught is the message God **SENT BY HIM**. **He was the Messenger with a MESSAGE**. So what gospel are they preaching today? They're preaching a message **about the person of the Messenger**, but they don't preach anything about His message.

Now we believe in His message, and that is the Kingdom of God is coming. He came preaching the gospel of the **Kingdom**, the gospel of the Kingdom of God, and that's what they turned away from.

Matthew 24:12-13 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. (13) But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

In other words, He was telling them then, and all others since that read this, that we have to endure these trials and these things; and the one who endures to the end will be saved. Paul used it like a race. You can have a mile or a two-mile race; and one man may be pretty well in the lead half way, but he can't endure; and others can; and so he falls back, and he doesn't run at all. The one who wins is the one who is there at the finish. And that's the way it is. He says that "*he that endures to the **end**, the same shall be saved.*"

Opposition To The Truth

I know when I was preaching the first evangelistic campaign that started the raising up of this present Worldwide Church of God, and that was back in the year of 1933. Now some of you weren't born yet at that time. But there was quite a Bible scholar there, and he tried to heckle every speaker who came in that community. So I was speaking in a little 36-room

schoolhouse. We couldn't have an audience as big as we have here today. I think we averaged about 41 or 2 because several had to stand up quite often, we didn't have enough seats. But this old fellow said... He would always try to question the ministers that would come there to preach; and he would trap them because he was a pretty clever Bible scholar, he thought.

He said, "Mr. Armstrong, may I ask you a question?" I said, "Why yes, Mr. Belshaw, you may." He said, "I want to ask you before all these people: Are you saved, Mr. Armstrong? Are you saved?" I said, "Mr. Belshaw, you ought to know how Jesus said as recorded in Matthew 24 and verse 13, '*He that endures unto the end the same shall be saved.*'" They all began to laugh, and he didn't ask any more questions that night. Then he knew that, and he also knew that the average preacher who came out didn't know this little verse was in there. And he was going to quote this, so I quoted it to him.

Oh, he tried to get me several times later. One time was after we'd even started the Church. He came to our meeting one time, and it was on the Sabbath; and he was always trying to get me about the Sabbath. He didn't believe in the Sabbath. And he finally, when the service was over, he didn't interrupt me in the service this time, but after it was over he asked me as I was meeting with others in the rear of the... It was being held in the schoolhouse at the time, a little one-roomed schoolhouse. And he said, "Well, Mr. Armstrong, may I ask you a question?" "Why," I said, "Yes, if you've got another question Mr. Belshaw, you ask it." So everybody gathered around quick. Some of them were about to leave, but they didn't leave. They wanted to hear this question.

He said, "Mr. Armstrong, haven't you said that Paul said he had not shunned to declare unto them the **entire** gospel?" I said, "Yes, Paul said that. That's true." "Haven't you preached too and didn't Paul say that he had kept nothing back that was profitable to the Gentiles?" "Yes, Paul said that." "All right, Mr. Armstrong, can you show me where Paul ever commanded the

Gentiles to keep the SABBATH?” I said, “Yes sir, I can Mr. Belshaw.” And he looked so funny. He didn’t know of any place where the Bible said that. I said, “Now that’s a scripture you don’t quite understand.” I said, “But now, Mr. Belshaw, I want to ask **you** a question. You asked me and heckled me a lot, now I’m going to ask you a question. **If I show you that Paul commanded the Gentiles that they must keep the Sabbath, that means YOU’VE got to do it; and I want to ask you, if I show you that, WILL YOU REPENT AND KEEP THE SABBATH?**” That really got him. He thought a minute and he said, “**No sir I won’t,**” and out he stomped; and the rest of them all laughed. And I said, “Well, maybe I had better show the rest of you where Jesus did command the Gentiles to keep the Sabbath.”

I turned where Paul said, “*Be ye followers of me even as I follow Christ.*” I said, “You see, that’s a command; isn’t it—that they should follow him **as** he followed Christ?” “Yes.” All right. I turned to another scripture where Paul for three Sabbath days entered into the synagogue and preached. And another time for a year and a half he entered the synagogue and preached and kept the Sabbath, and how Paul kept the Sabbath “*as his manner was.*” Now I said, “He said “*follow me as I follow Christ.*” Back in the 4th chapter of Luke you will find where **Jesus** kept the Sabbath “*as his custom was.*” **So Paul commanded them to keep the SABBATH!**

The Sign Of The End

Mr. Belshaw never asked me another question. I tell you, our young ministers who start off have got to know their Bible because someone like Mr. Belshaw is going to come up to them sometime and catch them napping and really make a laughing stock of them. But now we come down to the next verse where Jesus finally gave them the only place that He gave them a **sign** of how we’ll know that the Kingdom of God is coming, that Christ’s Second Coming and the end of this world is at hand. It doesn’t mean the end

of the earth. It's just the end of this world, this civilization. That's in verse 14.

Matthew 24:14 *And this gospel [this gospel Jesus was preaching] of the KINGDOM shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations ; and THEN SHALL THE END COME.*

When will the end come? When the gospel of the Kingdom... They had turned to another gospel. They turned to a message about the person of Christ. What did Billy Graham preach that night? He read right over this and said, "Well, we've preached the gospel." But he overlooked that word 'of the **Kingdom.**' It could not be a sign that Christ is coming if that gospel had been preached all along. The very fact that that gospel was not preached for 1,900 years shows that someone was going to come and preach that gospel just before the Second Coming of Christ. So He said, "*then shall the end come.*"

Matthew 24:15-18 *When you therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth let him understand ;) (16) Then let them which be in **Judea** [not those who are in Tucson, Arizona; but let them which be in Judea] flee into the mountains; and (17) Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take anything out of his house; (18) Neither let him which is in the field return (back) to take his clothes [for they're going to have to run and flee in a hurry].*

Now, another little joke I want to take time to tell you right there, how some people distort the Bible. This goes back to my great grandmother's time I guess (and you're great, great, great, great grandmother's time) when the latest style in women's hairdos was when they would bring their hair from the back up and turn it around into a little knot right on top, a little forward from the middle of the head, almost in the middle of the head in a kind of a top knot. And that was the latest fad. And there was a fiery old Methodist preacher one time. The old Methodists, you

know, were pretty strict and stern some of them. And this old preacher one Sunday he says, “I am telling you women you must take those top knots down. The Bible commands you and says ‘top knot come down.’ He said “I want to read that to you in Matthew 24 and in verse 17 ‘top not come down.’ Now you women take those top knots down.” Well, I just read that to you. Did you get it? And here it is in verse 17 “*Let him who is on the house top not come down.*” So forget ‘the house top’, and just say ‘top’; and it says ‘top not come down.’

Now that’s sort of distorting the Bible out of its intended meaning, and that’s the way some people are doing around the world today; and some modern translators do that too, and then call it the Bible. That’s why I don’t recommend these modern translations.

The Abomination Of Desolation

But now here He says:

Matthew 24:15 *When you (therefore) shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet stand in the holy place... [then you shall flee to the mountains, those in Jerusalem{2}].*

Now then, what did He mean? Many of our ministers even have tried to say, and I am trying to straighten them out on this, that that was a case of Antiochus Epiphanes in the year 168 BC. That Antiochus Epiphanes put a statue of Jupiter Olympus, which is an idol of course, into the Holy of Holies, an abomination; and that that’s what it means. Well, I’d like to show you what it means. If we would turn over to Luke 21 and in verse 20:

Luke 21:20 *And when ye shall see [Now Luke was writing the same thing, but he puts it in a little different language. The same thing and says, “when ye shall see”] Jerusalem compassed with armies then know that the*

desolation thereof is nigh.

It's those **armies** that are going to make Jerusalem desolate. It is not a statue thrown into a holy place. And besides, there is no such holy place in Jerusalem now. Anyway, I can show you that back in Daniel's prophecy—in Daniel 11, and it comes in verses 30 and 31.

***Daniel 11:30-31** For the ships of Chittim shall come against him: therefore he shall be grieved, and return, and have indignation against the holy covenant: so shall he do; he shall even return, and have intelligence with them that forsake the holy covenant. (31) And **arms** [Now that means an army, speaking of Antiochus Epiphanes, arms] shall stand on his part, and **they [these armies]** shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice and **they** shall place the abomination that maketh desolate.*

It is the **armies** surrounding Jerusalem that are going to make it desolate, not a statute of Jupiter Olympus. Well, I just wanted to clear up that little point as we get along. Now He says:

***Matthew 24:19-22** (And) woe unto them that are with child and to them that gives suck, in those days! (20) (But) pray that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day: [But that is really those that happen to be in Jerusalem at that time. That might be some of us.] 21) For then shall be **GREAT TRIBULATION** [Now that's spoken of in about say two or three other places. Daniel 12 speaks of it, a time of trouble such as never was before. And in Jeremiah 30 it speaks of trouble such as never was before. It couldn't be more than one such time, and it then calls it 'the'. Really it's the trouble that comes on America and Britain, if you understand it.] For then shall be great tribulation... such as was not since the beginning of the world to this [same]time, no, nor **ever** shall be. [Now how great is that time of trouble? That's just ahead of us now.] (22) And except those days should be*

shortened, there should no flesh be saved: [and other translations have it “saved alive.” That isn’t talking about spiritual salvation, it is talking about saving your life. Saved alive, the physical life. “No flesh should be saved alive” meaning every human being would be killed.] *but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened.*

And we are that elect. Now, if you go, on it comes down finally; and I am going to have to skip some of it now because time is going.

*Matthew 24:29-30 Immediately after the tribulation of those days [verse 29] shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: (30) And then shall appear the **sign** of the son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall SEE the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.*

That is the Second Coming of Christ. Now, in other words, that will come right after this Great Tribulation; but it is those **signs** that God will set in the heavens that are going to cut short those days and stop that terrible Great Tribulation.

[***Tape turns over at 46:38.*]

[One third] of our people are going to be killed because all of our cities will be destroyed. Now that means nothing but nuclear energy, hydrogen bombs and other forms of nuclear destruction. Nothing else could destroy enough cities to kill one third of all our people. Another third will have died just prior to that as a result of a disease epidemic caused by famine and lack of rain. And the third that remain are going to be taken as slaves over to Europe, and perhaps some of them will even be taken to South America. The Bible doesn’t give the exact definition of where they will be taken. Now if you have a copy of our booklet, ‘The United States and the British in Prophecy {3}’ that will explain all of that. I won’t go into it further at this

time.

The Day Of The Lord

Now Matthew 24 is explaining the book of Revelation, and I would like to turn for a moment over to Revelation and show you how it starts out. You read in your bible ‘The Revelation...’ Oh, my bible says ‘The Revelation of Jesus Christ to John.’ I never noticed that before. But in most versions it says ‘The Revelation of St. John the Divine.’ It is **not** the revelation of John, but of Jesus Christ.

***Revelation 1:1** The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to show unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass...*

It is a message to the 7 churches; and in the 10th verse he shows the theme of the whole book of Revelation: how in a vision, in the spirit, he was taken into the Day of the Lord. And there is the only place in the Bible it is called The Lord’s Day. But the Lord’s Day is the Day of the Lord. We used to have a bank in New York called the Bank of Morgan. I don’t know whether it is still there. I think it has gone into consolidation with other banks now under a different name. So anyway, it was a bank that was owned by Mr. J.P. Morgan (J. Pearson Morgan), and it was Morgan’s Bank. Well, the Kingdom of Heaven is heaven’s kingdom. The 2nd chapter of Revelation goes a little further and shows the setting in heaven and the throne of God. And the 3rd chapter; well the 3rd and 4th chapters are the messages of Christ to the Churches. Now we are one of those Churches; but we are in what we call The Philadelphia Era of the Church, which is the time element considered. Now chapter 4:

***Revelation 4:1-2** After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven... [And so on.] (2) And immediately I was in the spirit: [or, I was in a vision] and behold a throne was set in heaven... [and it shows God sitting on*

the throne].

Now it shows later here (I think that's in the 5th chapter.) the one sitting on the throne has a **book**, and it's a scroll. Now when I was in Peking, China very recently, I went over to the library; and they showed me some very old manuscripts in the Chinese language, and they were rolled up like a scroll. And they would unroll it with part of the roll here, part there; and you could see what's in the middle. Then they'd roll this up, and then it unrolls on this side, and then you read more of it. Well, that's the way books used to be. They weren't like this where you come to page 13 and 34 and 147. They weren't that kind of book, like we have today. They didn't put them together that way. They were just one **­long** roll. And it was sort of interesting for me to see how those scrolls were and how they'd been in these old days. I was able to handle some of these old scrolls that were many hundreds of years old.

And the one sitting on this throne has this book. And no one is able to release the book from its 7 seals that seal it, so you can't unroll it and read it. And then finally one comes up who is able to loose the scrolls and tell you what's inside of it and explain it. And that, of course, represents Christ. So Christ is the one who can **reveal** what was there, otherwise it was hidden from mankind except as Christ reveals it.

Opening The Seals

Now you come to the main prophecy in chapter 6, and just to give you a little bird's eye view in a hurry:

***Revelation 6:1** I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals...*

Now chapter 6 gives six of those seven. There were seven seals altogether that sealed it. That is explained by Jesus in Matthew 24, and Luke

21, and Mark 13. I really have gone through it, but I should have gone back here to Revelation first to show you that. And, by the way, you can get all of that if you will write for another copy (if you don't have one on hand, because it hasn't been circulated now for several years); and that is "The Book of Revelation Revealed at Last." And if you'd like to study that you'll find it very, very interesting; and it gets right down to the time we are living in now.

Now in Matthew 24, the first thing Jesus saw was false Christs coming. And that really represents what was seen there of the white horse, because the white horse is not the same white horse that you see pictured in the 19th chapter of Revelation. In the 19th chapter of Revelation is a white horse, and that is Christ on it. He has a sword, but that sword is in His mouth and the words that He speaks. And Christ's words sometimes cuts us pretty deep, like a sword would cut. But the one in the book of Revelation in the 6th chapter; I might just read that to you. Let's see.

***Revelation 6:2** ...a white horse and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.*

That is the picture of the ministers of Satan, and not of Christ—the false prophets. And the black horse is famine, and the pale horse is the death that follows the famine. And then when he opens the 5th seal it's the Great Tribulation; and the 6th seal is where the tribulation is ended by the great signs that God will have in heaven, the sun and moon being darkened and the stars falling to the earth which will probably mean a meteor shower. I don't know how else to explain it because many of the stars are a million times larger than the earth, and it would be pretty for many of them to fall on the earth. But that will rather explain that.

Well now, let me get along a little further here. I wanted to show you that it comes down though to the time when this gospel of the kingdom was

to be preached in all the world, and that is the sign that we are reaching the end. Now that can only be the sign if the world had not heard that gospel for a long, long time. No one living today had ever heard it before.

The Gospel Suppressed

Now I want to give you a few things. Maybe they are just coincidences, and maybe they are not. The gospel was suppressed; you read in Galatians 1 verses 6 and 7. And now let's see, I brought along these Bibles. I might as well make a little use of them. Here is the Revised Standard translation. Now in Romans chapter 1, verse 18:

Romans 1:18 (RSV) For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and wickedness of men who by their wickedness suppress the truth.

The gospel was suppressed. You read of that in Galatians 1, verses 6 and 7 as I mentioned. It says, “who **hold** the truth” and it means “hold back” in the King James. But that makes it very plain there. Also Galatians 6 and 7 show that the gospel was to be held back from about 52 when Paul wrote that or 53 AD, the gospel was to be held back. Now Jesus said the gospel of the Kingdom would be preached in all the world as a witness and THAT is the sign of the coming of Christ.

Now let me give you something about the way God has set things in the heavens to measure time for us. Actually God set certain signs in the heavens to mark off spaces of time. He set the sun and the moon and the earth in their orbit as they are to mark off spaces of time. One revolution of the earth on its axis is a day, but how do we tell? There is only one way that you can mark off where that day begins or ends, and that is according to the sun. And God starts it...the day starts; one day ends at sunset and another begins at sunset; and it's the earth turning on its axis as measured by the sun.

Now one revolution of the moon around the earth is a lunar month; and, according to God's sacred calendar, He counts the months beginning with the new moon, a revolution of the moon around the earth. One revolution of the sun around the earth is one solar year. Now the only thing that God ever gave us to set apart a week, so that you know when one week ends and another begins, is **the SABBATH**. That's why Satan has tried to destroy the Sabbath and get people all over the world observing Sunday, because that is **the sign God gave** by which we would know who God is, because it is a memorial of creation, and by which God knows who His people are because they're the only people that obey Him. And there is no reason in the world to observe Saturday instead of Sunday except to obey God. That's why we do it, to obey God; and nobody else will do it.

But now, what is the next largest number of years? We come into a time cycle. The sun and the moon and the earth get into the exact same position, or orbit, once in 19 years. That becomes a time cycle and is measured as a 19-year period. What is the next largest number of years the way God mentions it? A century, or 100 years. What is the next largest number of years? A millennium, or 1,000 years.

Now, the gospel was suppressed about the middle of the first century; and by about 53 AD Paul was writing to the Galatians that already they had turned away from the true gospel, and the true gospel was being suppressed. A century of time cycles on taking God's units of time, 19 years is a time cycle. A century of time cycles is 1900 years. 19 centuries of 19-year periods. Now Jesus began teaching His disciples in the year of 27 AD. That's when He called them and began preparing them to go out, but He had to teach them. And they didn't... Well, He did send them out on one trip (as you'll read in the 9th chapter of Luke, and the 10th chapter of Matthew); and He told them to preach the Kingdom of God. But they were not ordained in the regular ministry as yet.

Now before Jesus rose to heaven, it was before the day of Pentecost but after Jesus' resurrection, after 40 days, Jesus told the disciples, "Don't go out and start your ministry until you be imbued with the power of the Holy Spirit not many days from now." Now it was ten days later that they came to the day of Pentecost. On that day the Holy Spirit came; and that was the time when the disciples, as they had been, were really ordained as apostles and **inspired** by the Holy Spirit to go out and PREACH. That was in June of 31 AD.

Now, in the year of 27 AD Jesus began teaching His disciples. My wife began keeping the Sabbath in the autumn, or the fall, of 1926. I was studying evolution, and the Bible, and the Sabbath for six months almost night and day. I had not come to the place where I could accept it and was baptized until in the spring of 1927, or **exactly a century of time cycles** I began being prepared for the gospel. I was converted and preparing and that's the time my real Bible study started, and that is when the one century of time cycles when Jesus was teaching His first disciples.

Now they were, you might say, ordained and filled with the Holy Spirit and sent out on the gospel ministry on the day of Pentecost, which came in **June 31 AD**. What is a century of time cycles from 31 AD? It would be in June 1931. **In June 1931** I was ordained and sent out to preach the gospel, exactly a century of time cycles later. And the gospel of the Kingdom had not been preached in the meantime.

Gospel Preached Once More

Now then, the gospel of the Kingdom stopped being preached around the middle of the first century. Paul wrote to the Galatians how they had already turned to another gospel in **53 AD**. I began preaching on the radio in 1933; but I had only preached over the United States, and I was 19-years of

one time cycle getting the gospel where it went finally coast to coast. And then I leaped over to Radio Luxembourg the most powerful radio station on earth. And the first broadcast went to ALL OF EUROPE on January the 7th 1953, or exactly one century of time cycles from the time that the gospel had been suppressed. The gospel was not preached then for one century of time cycles, until **1953**. And it has been going in more or less great power ever since that time.

I have talked to more kings, and emperors, and presidents, and prime ministers than Mr. Kissinger or any other man that I know of that is living today. I am the only man who is not in any official capacity, and never has been in government service, who has ever been granted a **private** interview (a very personal private interview) with the Emperor of Japan, Hirohito. I was allowed to take no one with me but the United States Ambassador; and all he could do was just to go in and accompany me, and he said not a word except to acknowledge, to bow and to acknowledge, the Emperor when we came in to his presence.

I sat down, and the Emperor and I talked for 35 minutes. Once, I didn't understand and had to talk to a translator—or interpreter rather; and I didn't understand what the interpreter said one time, and the Ambassador whispered into my ear what he said. And that's the only thing the Ambassador was allowed to say. Then we bowed ourselves out together. I had to go with morning attire. That's a cut-a-way coat with tails in the back and striped trousers and so on. No one was allowed to go into the Emperor's Place unless he is dressed like that in the daytime.

But I had that privilege, and I have been given the highest decoration and the highest honor by the Japanese government that has ever been given to any non-official who was a non-Japanese. Now some Japanese Prime Ministers, after their term was over and after they had reached 70 years of age, have had this one-notch higher honor than I have. And there are eight

different degrees of honor, and mine is the 2nd but the highest ever given to anyone who is not in a very high official position. For example, former President Eisenhower; and also he was the general of all of the united armies which conquered both Germany, Italy, and Japan. And he, of course, had a very high position. He was President of the United States. He had one, one notch higher that I have had. But I know of one or two other United States citizens that have been honored by Japan; but they have had lower honors, rated about number 5 or 6 along in there. God has given me those honors.

Of The House Of David

Now then, there is something else I wanted to read to you. Let me see. It is in Zechariah 12, beginning in verse 8; and I want to give you that as it is in the Moffatt translation. It's the same in all translations, but the Moffat just makes it a little more clear as I say he often does. Now it's beginning in... Let's see, I think it is in verse 7 or the beginning of verse 8, I don't know which.

Zechariah 12:8 (Moffatt) *On that day* [talking about the day just before Christ comes, the day we are in right now...on that day] *shall the Eternal protect the dwellers in Jerusalem even the lame among them on that day shall be like David himself.* [In other words, be powerful as David... like David himself.] *And David's house* [or the house of David] *shall be like God himself, like the angel of the Eternal who is their leader.*

Now if you look at it in the King James:

Zechariah 12:8 *In that day shall the Lord defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David;* [In other words, they will be strong as David.] *and the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the Lord before them.*

Now “angel” merely means a messenger. That is why I read it to you as the Moffatt has it, “the leader;” that the leader in that day will be of the house of David.

Several years ago (before we came down to start Ambassador College, and this goes back to about the year of I would say 1941 or 2 when we were still up in Eugene, Oregon), another minister visited me; and he stayed all night. I had been going through the Sabbath question with him the night before. And, low and behold, he accepted it and is a very rare minister. He was a minister of a church in Oakland, and they had their church services on Sunday. And I went into the Sabbath with him, and he accepted it.

Well, I suppose he turned away from it as soon as he left my home. But the next morning he was shaving in the bathroom, and the door was open, and I was standing talking to him. And he said, “Say, something just came to me.” He said, “Mr. Armstrong, you are going to find that you are of the house of David.” “Well,” I said, “now what made you say that?” He said, “I don’t know, it just came to my mind this minute. You are doing things that only someone in the house of David could be doing.” “Well,” I said, “I don’t know. If I am of the house of David, I sure never knew it.”

You know, it wasn’t very long after that until I was contacted by a certain foundation that had been left a lot of money; and the whole purpose of the foundation was to track down the genealogy of a certain family. Now my great grandmother had been a member of that family and married my great grandfather who was, I believe, Silas Armstrong, my great grandfather. My grandfather I remember when I was just a little bit of a kid, maybe about 3 years old, and he was Mason Armstrong; and my own father then was his oldest son, and his name was Horace Elon Armstrong; and I’m of course my father’s eldest son. My father was the eldest, and so on as it goes back.

So that family genealogy, they wanted me because they wanted to get

all of my children and all of my brothers and sisters because they go into this family, back into the time of my great grandmother. And so I got the whole genealogy; and, low and behold, I found that my ancestors go back—and I have it every generation back to Edward the First of England, King Edward I. That's a long time back. My ancestry splits off from one of King Edward's daughters. That's where I leave the Royal line. She became, let's see she married a Duke and she was a Duchess. Their son was a Duke; but pretty soon they came down to lower rank, and it came on down. My family left England with William Penn and immigrated to Pennsylvania, and that was 100 years before the United States became a nation even. That was about 1660 or 1670.

Anyway, the Royal Family have the genealogy all the way back to King David, every generation. And, of course, in the Bible I have my genealogy all the way from David back to Adam. How many people do you know that can show their genealogy generation by generation all the way back to Adam? Not very many, but I was struck somehow by the fact that I am of the house of **David**.

Exact Time Cycles

Now God called me and began teaching me for the ministry exactly a century of time cycles from the time He began teaching His early apostles. **I was ordained** and sent out into the ministry exactly a century of time cycles from the time **they** were sent out. The gospel was not preached for exactly a century of time cycles from the middle of the first century until I was preaching it to Europe and America in the middle of the twentieth century, exactly a century of time cycles. Now of course that probably all was just a coincidence, it just happened, or was it? Well, I won't answer that. I'll let you answer. But the gospel of the Kingdom of God had not been preached before the world before.

Now right here in Tucson I really died about $2\frac{1}{2}$ years ago. My heart stopped completely. It was total heart failure. Not just a heart attack, it was complete heart failure. There was no pulse. There was no blood pressure. I was not breathing. My face was all blanched; and my fingernails became, I don't know what color it is, I don't remember; but I only know what the nurses told me. I don't remember a thing about it, but they brought me back by mouth-to-mouth resuscitation. But if they had not done that, I would have been pronounced dead by a doctor as soon as they had gotten one there, maybe about 30 minutes or an hour later.

I know there is some reason why God brought me back. And God is giving me **strength**, and **more vitality**, and **more strength**, and **more power now year-by-year and month-by-month than He ever has before**. I had another check-up just Wednesday of this week. The first time I had seen a doctor in, I don't know, five or six months, a long time. It's a long time before I went to China. And everything is in perfect condition. He said I seem to be a little strong in potassium. I thought that's a funny thing because I never seemed to have enough potassium before. But he just cautioned me against eating bananas and things like that, but I haven't tasted a banana now in 3 months anyway. The doctor told me that I am in better condition now than I was 30 years ago.

Well, someone mistakenly said that I had claimed that I am going to live to see the Second Coming of Christ. I have never said anything of the kind. I don't know that I'll live that long at all. I will be 88 a little later this year, but this much I am satisfied with now: God still needs me and there is no one in the Church to take my place. If there was I would feel like the apostle Paul said that it would be more satisfying for him if he could just die, and in the next second of his consciousness he would be with Christ in the resurrection. But he said, "It is more needful for you that I remain." until the work is finished.

Now of course later, much later, Paul wrote again that his work was finished; and the time had come for him to depart this life. But earlier than that he wrote that it was more needful that he stay. And that's exactly the way I feel and the way it is. God has given me exactly the men that I need to work with me, and in the teamwork, to get the job done and to get this Work around the world; and I know that He is going to give me life, and vitality, and strength to do it. Now you heard it announced that I am having a new television studio build as part of my house here in Tucson; and that'll be both a combination office where I do my writing, and I really am running the whole Work from here.

Gospel To China

Now in China, you already know what happened; and let me just say this: When I go to an atheist country like that, a communist country, their religion is atheism. **They don't believe there is any God. THEY DON'T BELIEVE IN THE BIBLE. I DON'T DARE MENTION THE THINGS THAT ARE IN THE BIBLE. I can't talk about repentance. I can't talk about law and grace, about salvation,** about the grace of God, and things like that. I can't talk about being converted. SO WHAT DO I DO? I talk about the **TWO WAYS OF LIVING— ONE IS GET, AND THE OTHER IS GIVE—** and they understand that.

In China, the next night after I had given the first speech, some Chinese officials that had been there were heard saying, "Well, I have never heard anything like that before; and, you know, that was interesting. I heard this man saying, 'The two ways of living are get and give.' Now, that makes sense." And I showed them that every trouble in the world, every evil, **everything that's wrong in the world** has come from people living the way of **GET, self centeredness, of vanity of coveting, wanting to get everything, of jealousy and envy, of resentment of authority, of**

competition. And I say that we will never have peace until we **REPENT** of that. We've got to **TURN AWAY** from that, and turn to the way of giving.

That is the way I tell them to repent and turn to God's way. The Ten Commandments are the way of giving and the way of outgoing love, and I express that. I say that giving is the way of **outgoing love**, love that **flows out** from you to other people. And, you know, that impressed the Chinese. And I had a very fine full hour, private talk with one of the Vice Chairmen. There are two of them: the head man Hua (Or however you pronounce it. I don't know how he pronounces it.) and then Vice Chairman Deng they call it. I think they spell it D-E-N-G. He's the one who visited Washington and the President some time ago, and he came out and visited Seattle on the way back to China. You've seen him on television I'm sure.

Well, I didn't see either of those two. But there is one other Vice Chairman that is older than they and who fought with Mao and with Chow en Lai and was very close to both Mao, and closer than they were to Mao and Chow en Lai; and I spent one hour with him.

Invitation To Visit Russia

Now I am invited to visit the top men in the Kremlin in Moscow. And we are proposing a scholarship over there. The things that they can do on bars, and then just leaping and running and with the human body it is just marvelous. It is very, very graceful. Anyway, we are proposing such a scholarship over there; and whoever wins it will get to start a professional career in the United States at the Ambassador Auditorium in Pasadena. And then, through the Ambassador Foundation, we will see that they are booked in leading auditoriums or music halls all the way across the United States and will finally end up at Lincoln Center in New York City. And the top people in the Politburo, or the Kremlin, are very much interested in something like that.

They are very friendly to us, but they are not a bit friendly to President Carter right now. They don't like him at all. So I am invited by the government; and I am also, as I did in China, to stay in a government-owned guest house that is maintained just for their top guests, and also our airplane crew. The one thing that is not finalized yet, in China we had our television crew with us. The same television crew that was here the number of times I have spoken here and televised the program, and these same men we want to take with us into Moscow.

One thing, it will be safe to take my own plane in there; so I can go in my own airplane, and I am glad of that. I don't want to go in a public airplane because you don't know when it is going to be hijacked or what might happen to it. This way I have my own crew that I can rely on and that I feel safe with. But we haven't found out yet whether or not they are going to allow our television and camera crew to come in with us. But we hope they will. And in any event, even if our photographers can't go in, there will be USSR or Soviet camera men; and they will give us the pictures. I am sure of that because they want the publicity and to go into The Plain Truth and all over.

Now there is no reason why we even need to try to fight communism. We are not called to fight communism or to fight this ism or that ism. We are called to proclaim the Kingdom of God; and we are just not in politics one way or the other, and they know that. That's what we presented to them. They know that we are not communists; and we are not coming, not going to pretend to be communists. But we are not trying to fight against it. They know that I formally, oh 25 to 35 and up to 50 years ago, I used to write against communism; but I don't do that any more. I'm not here to fight those things. I'm only here to proclaim the gospel, or the good news, of the Kingdom of God; and that's what I am going to do.

Now the way is also open for us to go into Warsaw, and they are

anxious to have us there; but, of course, that's much smaller than getting to go into Moscow. And to think that **no other** minister from the world of Christianity has ever been invited to Communist China or to Communist Russia. I am the first one, and that is quite an honor for our Church. I hope you realize that, brethren. But I have had to learn how to get the gospel over to them. I tell them about the Kingdom of God in this way, that this world cannot go on the way it is.

Governments Of The World

Now I can say in Russia there were two men in Germany here quite a while ago, Karl Marx and Engels. What was his first name? I forget. Marx and Engels. And they saw the governments in this world were **not right** and **conditions** were not right, and they thought up their idea of what **they** thought would be right. Now then Mr. Lenin was sold on, thought it was a good idea; and he was able to put it into work and to create a new government based on that.

All right. **IF YOU ASK ME, I DON'T BELIEVE IN DEMOCRACY EITHER. DEMOCRACY IS NO MORE THE WAY OF GOD THAN COMMUNISM IS**, not at all. And I hope you brethren realize that. The national propaganda in this country is democracy is the kind of government. What actually, **WHAT** happened was, when God ruled Adam and Eve out of the Garden of Eden because they disobeyed Him and they rejected His government, He said, "You won't accept My government. So go form your own governments until the Second Coming of Christ." And **God's government** will not be on earth until Christ comes to set it up. And it will be the kind of government we have in this Church. And I don't think any of you people have ever smarted under the government of the rule that is in the Church because we don't rule that way. We rule in **LOVE**, and not in harm or in anything of that kind.

Government In The Church

But the rule in this Church is not democracy either. You don't **vote**. The government in this Church is THEOCRACY, government from **GOD**; and CHRIST is the **HEAD** of the Church. CHRIST is the real ruler. I am only following Him; and I say, "Follow me as I follow Him." You have to follow someone. Now some of those that have gone out from us said, "Oh, don't follow a man. If you are in that Church, you are following Armstrong." That is not true. My own son wants people to follow a man, follow him. We are following **Christ** in this Church. And wherever you find that I am not following Christ and I don't have the truth of Christ, I want you to come to me. My door will be open to you, and I live right here in this city. And you show me. And, if you show me, and my mind will be open, and God will see that my mind is able to see it. And I'll straighten out the whole Church, if I am wrong and you are right.

So if you think that the doctrines of this Church are not right, it's not your place to start preaching to other people. It is your place to come directly, well, first to your own pastor and then to me; and my mind will be open. I have proved that. I don't have to prove that again. Now that's the way it is.

I found that the translators were wrong on translating that word 'from,' and that changed the day of holding Pentecost after we'd had it the other way for 40 years. So all God called me to do was to **COUNT**. **And I counted 50, and I counted THE RIGHT WAY. The mistake wasn't in my counting. The mistake was in the translating of the Bible.** And I was not a Hebrew scholar, and I still didn't accept it until I made the Hebrew scholars admit that. In other words, those whose native language is Hebrew and who learned English afterwards will make the mistake of saying 'from' Sunday; and they mean 'beginning with' Sunday. But it should not be stated that way. It should state 'ON.' Count on Sunday, or beginning on Sunday, 50 days. And if you do

that, then you come out on a Sunday; and that is the way, of course, we are doing now.

I found I was wrong and CHANGED. I would have changed any time in that 40 years if anyone could have shown that to me. But no one did. And Christ didn't show it to me. So that's the way it is. And that's the way this Church is, and there is no other Church like it on the face of the earth.

Well, I have taken up a lot of time today; but it is the first time I have ever been allowed to have the opportunity. I won't say 'allow' because no one is disallowing it. But it's the first time I have had the opportunity of talking just directly to you people. Always before you were just listening in on a telecast, and I wanted to talk to you. We are all fellow citizens.

And I like it very much here in Tucson. I think this is a wonderful climate; and oh, I say oh boy, have we had some wonderful days lately. Now we can get some rain. We get some storms once in a while. But how are you going to enjoy the beautiful days if you don't have a few of those once in a while. But I don't know where you could find a nicer climate than we have. We are blessed above all the people on earth right here. So let's count our blessings and let's thank God all the time. He's been so merciful to us, and I hope I can come back and speak to you again some time. In the mean time, I know many of you are praying for me and for my health. And God is blessing my health in every way, and I do thank you for it and ask you to continue doing it and that God will bless me.

Now I don't know, President Carter may do something to prevent my going to Moscow. But as of right now the door is still open, and the invitation has come from the top at Moscow. And I think that is going to be a wonderful thing to be able to get the gospel in a language that they can understand what I mean. But I can use the language of the Bible. So I hope that I will be able to have it recorded, and you can actually hear what I say over there; and I

think you did eventually what I said in China. I learned a lot of things. I could have been a lot more bold than I was in China, and I didn't know it. But they've been so austere, and I was a little bit afraid I didn't dare go very far. I could have gone farther. So now I am invited back to China again. They want me to come again, and I am going to go again. And this time I am going to speak a little plainer than I did last time, and I will in Russia.

So thank you all, and thank you for allowing me to have this much time.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Mr. Armstrong said "tempting desired Jesus," the original reads "tempting desired him."

{2} - Mr. Armstrong said "Jerusalem," the original says "Judea."

{3} - The full name of the booklet Mr. Armstrong referred to is "The United States and British Commonwealth in Prophecy."

The Plan of God

Sermon (September 25, 1980) – Given during The Feast of Tabernacles
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Plan of God.....	245	Rebellion Against God	263
World Government God's Way	246	Satan Cast Back Down	265
False System Of Education	248	Earth Renewed For Man	266
Believe What God Says	250	Adam's Decision	269
Utopia Will Come	252	Christ Had To Conquer Satan	271
This Present Evil World	253	God Has To Call Us	272
Two Philosophies Of Life	255	Few Called Now	274
Purpose Being Worked Out Here Below	257	Overcome Satan	275
God's Master Plan	259	Christ To Reign On Earth	278
Earth First Created For Angels	260	Preview Of The Kingdom Of God	280
Angels Sinned	262		

Well, greetings everybody. This is a definite first. It's the first time in the 531/2 years I have been keeping these days and these festivals that we've ever been able to speak to more than one feast site at the same time, and even now we're having our difficulties and we've been delayed a little bit. I think at the beginning of the time that many of you people over in the United States and many of you people in England where you began at 9 o'clock (and now it's about 10 o'clock I think there, almost 10 p.m. or after) and I think you began hearing a news broadcast from Tokyo that was being beamed to the United States and to England because they got their wires mixed up a little bit on the satellite. But here we are speaking by satellite to ALL of the feast sites in the United States and Canada. That is, the continental United States and also in Hawaii and also to all you brethren over there in England. And so this is the first time.

Now I have spoken to feast sites in England a couple of times. I've spoken in the feast sites in France, and also to all of the feast sites in the

United States one at a time when we didn't have as many of them as we have this time. But even now we have had a few technical difficulties, and I hope they have ironed it out. The last that I heard, about 5 minutes ago, they were having difficulty getting the video (the picture) into the Savannah feast site. I hope you people in Savannah have got the picture by now; and I hope that the technicians will work it out very soon, if you don't have it even yet.

So this definitely is **a first** for us. It is a marvelous thing: the things that science and technology are doing in a physical manner, in a material manner. It is too bad that the world is spiritually blinded, but physically we are doing some wonderful things.

Now as I said to you last night (and I think that you all saw the program on the screen last night, although I had recorded it ahead of time), this is the largest conclave – this is the largest festival – of the largest convention held anywhere on the face of the earth every year. There are upwards of 100,000 of us meeting for eight days all over the world, besides the 27 (ah, yes 27) large convention sites in the United States. Now we have about 5,000 people right here in Tucson, which for the last 2 1/2-3 years has been my home city. We have about 5,000 people here. We have a similar number in many other feast sites.

Some feast sites (like down in Fiji and in islands of the Pacific, in islands of the Caribbean) we have a smaller number, just a few. But there are feast sites all over the United States, feast sites in Australia, New Zealand, feast sites in the Philippine Islands, with thousands of people there assembled – fifty-nine other feast sites (besides those in the United States and England) that I am speaking to right now live.

World Government God's Way

Brethren, why are we here? (We are late getting started. I want to get

right through this message because we have been delayed.) We are here to celebrate and to receive a foretaste of something that is coming that the world doesn't know is coming to this world, and that is an absolute UTOPIA! Don't laugh when I say **utopia** because I MEAN UTOPIA. Look in the dictionary for the word utopia. It's an imaginary fool's dream about a perfect civilization with a perfect government, with a perfect society, with perfect education, with everybody economically well off and everybody having a perfect time in every way. Brethren, that is what is coming to this world, and coming soon; and we're here to enjoy a foretaste of it; and we're here to prepare ourselves to help usher it in, and to be in the government of Jesus Christ when He will rule and govern the entire world.

Now it was not so long ago, there was an editorial in one of our largest news magazines in the United States, "The United States News and World Report." It said that it would seem that the only hope of survival of humanity now is the sudden appearance of a STRONG UNSEEN HAND FROM SOMEPLACE to intervene in world affairs and save us from ourselves. Let me tell you, we are very close to that time; and that very same thing is going to happen.

World famous scientists have been saying now for the past 10 years and more ... I would say for the last 20 years, they have been saying that our only hope is one world government having one military force, where there are no armies in other nations that could come to war: only the one nation, no world wars of any kind. But, brethren, they overlook something. We still wouldn't have peace among ourselves.

What about the home and the family relationships? It's on the way down and out in the United States and Britain and Europe, in the entire Western world; and the rest of the world is following a little bit slower after us. They are adopting our Western ways in China and Japan. They are adopting our Western ways in India and in other parts of the world, in South

America and all over the world. They've adopted everything that is WRONG in American music. They are adopting everything that is WRONG, that is going out ... that has been spawned in the United States and that is going out to the rest of the world; and that is the kind of a world you live in today.

Brethren, we've gone past the place where we can save ourselves! The scientists, who say that the only hope is a world government, will say in the same breath it's utterly impossible in the hands of human beings; and it is, and we couldn't bring it about. No, I tell you, it's like the editor ... Well, he is now a former editor of "The United States News and World Report" that that unseen hand from someplace is going to have to intervene and is going to have to save us from ourselves. Humanity will not save itself. Humanity is on the way DOWN, DOWN, DOWN AND OUT. Thank God there is a Creator God above that isn't going to LET US GO ALL THE WAY OUT.

SO LISTEN TO ME WITH THIS MESSAGE. Yes, I am an old man. I'll soon be 90 years of age. I'm senile? My mind isn't working any more? I was supposed to be a high school dropout. I was supposed to be a failure in business (although between ages 25 and 28 I was making from \$100,000 to \$175,000 a year according to the 1980 dollar value). So that'd be a failure! How many young men of that age are making that much today?

Well, I'm supposed to be a LOT OF THINGS TO PEOPLE THAT **DON'T LIKE GOD AND DON'T WANT ANYTHING TO DO WITH HIM. IF I DIDN'T BELIEVE GOD ... AND I SAY, "BELIEVE GOD!"** HERE'S HIS WORD IN FRONT OF ME. **I BELIEVE IT.** I know a lot of ministers that pretend to be the ministers of Jesus Christ. **THEY DON'T BELIEVE WHAT GOD SAYS IN THIS WORD {1}. I DO BELIEVE IT.**

False System Of Education

Now, in order to believe it, I had to give up what had been stuffed in my

mind. What is education like in this world? You know, back in the year of 1927 I envisioned a national magazine, The Plain Truth. It was just a vision. Of course, how would I ever start it? Where would I get subscribers? How could I afford it? How would I have it printed? I didn't know. I just knew it ought to go out. I wrote an article. I employed a professional letter artist to draw up a front cover for me, and it's the same front cover we have on there today. I left room for pictures or something on the front cover, but the masthead is the same. Of course, that magazine is being published now and has been a great many years, with a circulation going on toward 3 million copies to 3 million subscribers monthly. Today it is one of the mass circulation magazines of this world.

I had a picture of education. I wrote an article. It's never been published. I don't know what happened to the manuscript. If I could find it, I would publish it today. I might do a little rewrite on it, but I would run it. It was an article on stuffing lies into your child's head. And I had a picture of a schoolroom with children in that room sitting at their desks. Every child had a funnel stuck in the top of his head. And here was the teacher with a great big pitcher; and on the pitcher was labeled "false, untrue knowledge;" and she was pouring that false propaganda and false knowledge down through the funnel into the child's head – and they were expected to believe. When final exams come along, if you don't report on what you have been taught, you're flunked.

It's like a grandson of mine when he was in one of the grades growing up, and the teacher one day asked him to recite and said, "Larry, tell me, see if you know who discovered America." Larry says, "Yes Ma'am, the Indians." Well, the teacher said, "Larry, now you know better than that. You know Columbus discovered America." He said, "No Ma'am, I don't." He said, "Weren't the Indians already here long before and waiting here to welcome Columbus when he finally got here?" The teacher flunked him. He

was supposed to BELIEVE WHAT HE WAS TAUGHT no matter how false it is.

THAT IS OUR SYSTEM OF EDUCATION TODAY. Education is something that you get like you go to the store for a loaf of bread. Which reminds me: one of our children, when they were young, didn't like milk that came from cows. She wanted milk that came from stores. When we went down to visit some relatives on a farm one time, she saw milk coming from cows. She said, "I don't want to drink any milk that comes from cows." We lived in the city, and she only knew about milk that came from stores.

Well, you go to a store for a loaf of bread instead of baking at home of course today. You put your money across the counter. They put another piece of paper around the bread, which is already wrapped anyway; and you go out with it. So you bought your loaf of bread, and you go home. That's the way you get an education. You go to school, and you let them stuff something in your mind; and education in this country is a process of memory training. There's something wrong with it.

Believe What God Says

And so the Eternal God put it in my mind to establish a college, a different kind of college, where we wouldn't teach a pack of lies but where we would teach the truth. And where do you go to get truth? The world doesn't know. Isn't that too bad? There are a lot of people today who believe in Jesus Christ (not too many, but there still are some). **BUT DO THEY BELIEVE CHRIST? HERE IS CHRIST IN PRINT. THEY DON'T BELIEVE WHAT IT SAYS {2}**.

In the 8th chapter of John, beginning with verse 30, you'll find there were a lot of Jews in Jerusalem who believed on Christ. And to those Jews who believed on Him, Jesus said: "*He that believes on me ... out of his*

innermost being will flow rivers of living water.” [John 7:38] And {3} “If you believe what I say, you shall be free indeed.” Well they said, “What do you mean be free? We are Abraham’s children. We’ve never been in bondage to anybody. We’ve never been slaves. Our forefathers have been.” But they didn’t realize, forgotten I guess. He said, “You believe on Me, but you don’t believe what I say. You want to kill Me because you don’t believe what I say.”

Brethren, I had been stuffed with a lot of false knowledge too up until age 34. At age 34 I was challenged, and I began to study the Bible because I wanted to prove that what the churches all say and what had been taught me

in one of the very highly accredited and (What’s the word I want?) responsible, or highly esteemed, Protestant denominations ... I had been brought up in Sunday school until I was 18, but somehow religion never caught hold of me; and at age 18 I dropped out of church and of Sunday school.

Oh, I have visited different churches once in a while (sometimes a Baptist, sometimes a Methodist, sometimes other churches); but I knew that I believed certain things. I believed the immortality of the soul. I believed that when you die you go to heaven or go to hell, depending on how you’ve lived. I believed a lot of things like that. I believed if you just confessed Christ at some time in your life that you’d go to heaven.

I began to study the Bible, and I began to see that the Bible says precisely the OPPOSITE of a lot of those things that I believed. And there it was in PLAIN LANGUAGE, AND HERE I LOOKED AT IT AND IT SAID SO. Well, of course, that’s the English language; and I said, “Well, that was written originally in the Greek language, or in the Old Testament that was written originally in the Hebrew language.” And so I looked up the Greek and the Hebrew, and I found what God says. And I went on and studied, and I

proved that this is the Word of God. This Bible is God speaking to you in print, and speaking to me.

Now, was I going to give up what I believed when I saw it just exactly opposite to what I read here to what God says? I had to decide would I believe what MEN taught me, what CHURCH taught me, what SCHOOL taught me that came from other people and organized HUMAN SOCIETY, or would I **believe what God says**? And I believed God, and that's the whole difference right there. THAT IS THE DIFFERENCE. How many leaders in the world of Christianity are there like that? No, no. What they've been taught, they say, "Well, that's been church teaching all these years, I've got to believe it. Well, maybe I just don't understand the Bible?" So they GO ON BELIEVING WHAT OTHER MEN, OTHER PEOPLE, STUFFED IN THEIR MINDS. That's what they believe.

Utopia Will Come

Well, brethren, why are we here? As I said, we are here to celebrate a foretaste of that utopia that is coming – a world of peace, a world of perfect government. But the Eternal God, the Creator, is going to have to intervene (that strong hand from someplace) and is going to have to come and save us from ourselves and establish the government of God Almighty, the Creator. There will be perfect peace. There will be perfect government; and there will be, at last, perfect education. Think of that!

We will ALL be taught **education based on the Word of God**. Tell me any university or college in the United States where you can find that, except one that I know of. There will be universal prosperity for everybody, and there won't be illiteracy, and there won't be poverty. Think of a world ridded of poverty and of illiteracy and all that sort of thing. It'll be a world filled with happiness and joy. It'll be a world as full of the knowledge of God as the

ocean beds are full of water. I hope to read you a scripture on that before we are through this afternoon (or tonight, as it is for you people over in England).

Today people laugh at the word utopia. Well, WHY SHOULD WE LAUGH at that idea? Because we have never had it in this world, and we can't understand how we could ever come to have it. We ought to have it. Why shouldn't we have it? Why? We are living in a very sick, sick world. This world is full of every evil you can think of. It's filled with illiteracy. It's filled with poverty. It's filled with starvation. It's filled with violence. It's filled with wars. Another one began about, what was it, about 5 – 6 days ago now over in Iraq and Iran; and that could explode into something pretty big.

I want to tell you the governments at Washington, the governments at Moscow, and also the governments in England at London, and Paris, and in Bonn – they are watching this very carefully because they know it could explode into a world explosion. Let us hope it won't. Weapons of mass destruction exist now that can erase all human life from this planet; and, just last night, on television I saw a discussion of so-called authorities and men that are supposed to be in the know (men in government and men in educational high places) about the proposed development of chemical warfare in the United States.

Should we, or should we not, go ahead with chemical warfare? That's one of the big problems the President has to consider now, and the candidates for the presidency. I would say so far as the candidates for presidents are concerned I'm not going to take any sides on that one way or the other. I'm just going to say, "Thank God, only one can win anyway."

This Present Evil World

But this is a world that is full of crime. It is full of immorality. The

family structure is being broken down completely. Kids live a life of their own. They don't eat at home with parents anymore. Wives are not at home taking care of their children. Only 13% of families in the United States now have a husband, a wife at home, and two or more children. I think I should say one or more children, I believe the statistic is. I forget the exact figure of the statistic. We're down to 13%; and a solid family structure is the basis and the foundation of any solid, and any perfect, and any enduring civilization.

What does that mean? It means we are on the way down and OUT unless you can arrest that trend. There's one of the causes of the troubles lying ahead. So we're filled with crime, immorality, corruption – corruption in politics, corruption in business. Corruption is everywhere: A hopeless world offering NO hope to the world. Young people stare a hopeless future in the face, so they are frustrated. We are living in a world of pain, and suffering, and sorrow, and too much suicide; and suicides are increasing very rapidly like everything else that's bad.

So I say to you, utopia is coming in this generation. God Almighty ... I thank God every day and every night that the One supreme Power is a power of good – a power of LOVE, of OUTFLOWING love toward all others. I know there is another very, very EVIL power that is invisible; and, being invisible, people don't believe that power exists. It isn't fashionable to believe in a devil today. No, that's not very fashionable.

But I thank God that there is one supreme Power, and that that supreme Power is based on love that is OUTGOING love toward OTHERS (not incoming love, that isn't love but lust) – a God who is more powerful and can put down, and WILL put down, every other power. Oh, I thank God for God Himself! But most people don't like God. I'll tell you why I am persecuted, because I am a man of God, because I believe God. I not only believe IN God. A lot of people believe there is a God. That's all right. A lot of people are going to believe that. I think if I believed in the kind of hell people talk

about, I would say hell is paved with that kind of people who believe there is a God. No, it's a lot more than that. Do you believe God? Do you believe His way is right?

Two Philosophies Of Life

The government of God is coming. What is government? Government is based on LAW. Government is based on a basic constitution, or a LAW; and a law or a constitution merely is a way that regulates our lives. It's a way of life, a lifestyle. The only trouble is we have laws that allow wrong lifestyles and wrong ways of living; and we're going to have a government that will be based on the law of God, which is out flowing love.

Now that's a little too much for people to get, because love has come to mean **lust**. They CHANGED the MEANING, so I put it in simple words that a six-year-old child can understand. The right way of God is GIVE. God is the great GIVER. Jesus Christ said, "*It is more blessed to GIVE than to receive.*" The other way is GET. There are just the two philosophies of life. You have to go one-way or the other.

How are you living? Is your motivation what you can GET? Is your motivation accumulating? Is your motivation vanity; exalting yourself? You want the chief seat for yourself? You want the big things for yourself? You want to be looked up to? You want what you can get? You want how much you can own? Well, if you are not like that, you are a funny individual in this country (or in any other country for that matter), because that is the way human beings are. Yes, human nature too.

Why do we live in a world like we do? There has to be a **cause for every effect**. Something had to cause it. Something is continually causing all of the troubles in this world. But people are trying to deal with the effect, and you never can cure the effect until you can get to the cause and change that.

Now, you can say the cause is human nature; but people don't understand human nature. They don't realize what it is. They don't know what is its **origin**. They don't know where human nature came from.

You think God created human nature in people? Human nature is an evil attitude that wants to go the way of **self**. SELF-CENTEREDNESS, the way of GET! God did not create that way; and God's law and everything about God is just the opposite way, just the opposite. Something has caused the present world upset and chaos.

Now you can go to listen to the political speeches. They'll tell you, everyone says, "Vote for me. I'm going to straighten everything out. I'm going to reduce taxes, but I'm going to give you everything." And you know everything the government gives you is only what they can take from the people in the first place, and they give part of it back; and people don't realize that.

People want to GET. So they want to get from the government; and they vote for the man that promises to give them the most, so that they can GET the most. And then they don't like the taxes; and so the government then prints more money, and that causes more inflation, and people wonder why we have inflation! If government was properly run, we wouldn't have any; and in tomorrow's **utopia** I am talking about (that we're here to celebrate) there won't be any inflation, and there won't be any unemployment, and the budget will always be balanced! Now what do you think of that? And let me tell you something, children and their parents are going to eat together at home.

Kids go to movies by themselves, and they want to go to X-rated movies if they can manage it; or else they spend hours and hours a day on the one-eyed monster! And television is a business, and business is in business for PROFIT; and the television managers know that – what people want. You

know it's the old saying, 'Jones pays the freight, give Jones what he wants.' And what does Jones want? He wants to be entertained. He wants to be amused and entertained, so television is pure entertainment.

EVEN THE NEWSCASTS are entertainment. Don't you kid yourself they're not! That's why people ... Look, so they have one kind of entertainment for kids. What happens every Saturday morning on television? You don't find adults looking in. That's for kids. But kids also look in the rest of the time, and what do they see? They see illicit so-called 'love' that's only lust. They see everything wrong, everything that is contributing to all of the trouble we have in the world; and that's what kids are being fed. They see violence. They see people getting high on drugs and think, "Maybe I better try that." They see everything wrong. So that is why there are plenty of causes in this world.

Purpose Being Worked Out Here Below

But something is going to have to cause that utopia I've been telling you about. **WHAT IN THE WORLD COULD CAUSE THAT? HOW DO YOU EXPECT HUMAN BEINGS TO CHANGE?** Frankly, I don't. You people are not going to change. The people in the **WORLD** are not going to change. I think, or hope, most of you people in this audience have already changed. I hope you've let God change you by putting His Spirit within you.

During World War II, Winston Churchill, one of the greatest men in English history (at least in recent ancient history certainly), spoke before the American Congress; and he said to the United States Congress: "There is a purpose being worked out here below." Indeed, there is **a purpose** being worked out here below; and it's being worked out from God above.

Now what could be that purpose? **WHY ARE WE HERE?** Why did God put humanity on the earth? How did we come to be here? Do you think

we just grew out of a brainless amoeba and we came by evolution? Yes, I looked into that too. Thank God, I never did really believe it; but I did examine it very thoroughly. I studied Darwin. I studied Haeckel and his buddy (one of the champions of Darwin), Huxley; and I went even back before their time to Laurel and Lamarck and some of those geologists and scientists. I studied it thoroughly.

Not very many people know that Charles Darwin gave up his theory before he died; but Huxley and Haeckel wanted to promote it anyway, so they tried to hush up the fact that Darwin had lost confidence in his own theory before he died. Well, I lost confidence in it too. I didn't believe what God says {4} until I proved that this IS the Word of God. Now if you've proved it, fine. If you haven't proved it, well that's too bad. That's your ... I was going to say your funeral, but I won't say that. At least, that's your prerogative!

God is working out a purpose here below; and, FOR THAT PURPOSE, HE HAS WORKED OUT A MASTER PLAN.

Now, God called on me to build a college; and, before I got through, I built three colleges: One in Pasadena, California; one in eastern Texas; one in England. However, they were built only to teach and to train personnel, including ministers for local Churches of God's Church, but much more than just ministers. They are not just ministerial colleges by any means. They are liberal arts colleges. And, as soon as we had enough personnel, we did close up (because they had fulfilled their usefulness) the college in England and in Texas; and there is just the one college now still going on – the original college in Pasadena, California.

But I had to have, when we were building a campus, I needed a master plan. I went to the largest firm of architects and engineers in the world. I said, "I would like to have your services. I want you to help me design the finest campus in the United States." Well, they were a little shocked because we

didn't have too much then. As a matter of fact, most of that campus was built on what was the only part of Pasadena that could have been called a ... Oh, not a ghetto; but a completely run down, blighted area. But we bought up those properties, and we have built some of the most beautiful buildings in the United States in their place.

Incidentally, just recently, for the third time we received the award for having the most beautiful, the best designed, the best landscaped, and the best-maintained campus in the United States. If you want to see a better campus, if you don't believe what I say, just come out to Pasadena, California. The sightseeing buses go by there every day anyway, that's one of the stops. So, you come out by yourself and look over the campus and see the beauty and the waterfalls and the fountains and the statuary and the beautiful modern buildings and the finest auditorium on the face of the earth in Ambassador Hall that is now the leading place for the performing arts in Southern California.

God's Master Plan

Well, they designed a master plan; and they built the college according to that master plan. GOD ALMIGHTY didn't start to **build** what He is doing for this purpose until He had worked out a master plan for it. Now behind ALL was the supreme Mind of the Eternal God. We didn't come from a lifeless nothing, resident forces without any intelligence. Brain didn't come from nothing. Intelligence didn't come from the non-intelligent. Life didn't come from the nonexistent (or non-life). Creation and life demands the pre-existence of a Creator of supreme Mind, who could think it out and plan and design.

When I look out the window in my home and I see the birds (We feed the birds; and they come in there every day, just swarms of them.), and I see

the beautiful trees (Half of our grounds are desert, and half are garden and green.), and I think the beautiful leaves on the trees, the birds, the animals, the dogs (We have a couple of ferrets. I remember I had a ferret as a pet when I was a boy 11-years-old. We have a couple of ferrets now.) – they were all planned, and thought out, and designed. It took a Master Mind to do all of that! You tell me that it was never thought out by a mind and that all these things just happened; and I tell you, you insult my intelligence!

That Creator, that Mind, rules His creation; and He rules it with GOVERNMENT. His GOVERNMENT IS BASED ON LAW, ON A BASIC LAW OR CONSTITUTION; and that law is summed up in the one word: LOVE, which is GIVE – OUT FLOWING love. That is the basis of it all, and it is a way of life. And that law, the way of out flowing love, is the basis of the government that will rule the whole world.

Today we have laws and the whole lifestyle of all humanity is on **the opposite way** of GET. The opposite way of love is based on GET, on COMPETITION, on STRIFE, on HATE – not on love, because they’ve lost sight of the word “love.” They don’t know what it means. The Greeks had three words for it, if you want to look into that. You ought to study some of the Greek language and see what they mean by love.

Earth First Created For Angels

Now God is a Creator; and God began His creation (even before this earth, believe it or not) by creating angels. I wonder how many people know that God created angels before the earth even existed. Well, let me read it to you. Here it is, in the 38th chapter of the book of Job.

Job 38:1 Then the [Eternal] [God] answered Job out of the whirlwind ... [He began to talk to him. That’s in Job 38. That’s verse 1.]

Job chapter 38, now verse 4. God said to him:

***Job 38:4** Where were you [Job] when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare if you have any understanding.*

Now Job had built a **GREAT BUILDING**, the greatest building on the earth (and it remained the greatest building and the tallest and highest building on earth until the building of the Woolworth Tower in New York); and that building was the Great Pyramid in Egypt. I've been in it. I've been all through it, and through its chambers – the king's chamber, the queen's chamber, and the tunnels, and so on.

Job was not the Pharaoh. The Pharaoh of Egypt hired Job to plan it, and design it, and build it. So we say that the Pharaoh built the Great Pyramid. Well, maybe you can say I built the campus in Pasadena; but I employed architects, and we employed contractors to do the work. I didn't do the work. I had something to do with the planning of the campus and our auditorium. I designed ... It was my idea to have the great pillars rising up seven stories high of the auditorium, out of an artificial lake. That was my idea, and the architects went along with it. And they are the largest firm of architects in the world. They have built some of the highest skyscrapers, not only in Los Angeles but other cities all over the world, even over in the Middle East in some of the oil rich countries. They are a very large company of architects and engineers.

But Job had built a building. Let me show you something more about it: So God is talking to him in the language of one who is familiar with building. He says:

***Job 38:6-7** Whereupon are the foundations thereof [the earth, that is] fastened? Or who laid the corner stone thereof: [Now He is talking about a corner stone, who laid the corner stone.] (7) When the morning stars sang together, and ALL the sons of God shouted for joy?*

The only “sons of God” at that time were angels. They are only sons of God **by creation** because He created them. They were not ‘begotten’ or ‘born’ sons of God as human beings can be, as Jesus Christ was. But they were sons of God, and are here called “sons of God” – and they are also in the 1st chapter and the 1st verse; and the 2nd chapter, in the beginning of the 2nd chapter of Job. However in the 1st chapter of the book of Hebrews you find that they are **not** the ‘begotten’ sons of God in that sense.

Angels Sinned

Now, when the morning stars (or the angels) sang together and shouted for JOY at the COMPLETION of the earth. The building Job had built was one where the corner stone was the capstone, the LAST stone laid. In the ordinary building, a corner stone is laid first in the foundation before you begin to build the real building on top of it. But Job had built a building where the corner stone was the final last stone laid, and apparently it never was laid. There is no evidence that the final top stone had ever been laid, and there is a reference to it in the Bible; and where Christ is called the capstone, or the cornerstone, that the builders rejected and wouldn’t accept, and so on.

Now God created the earth; and He created it as the abode of angels first, not of man. That was LONG before man was created, and that might have been millions or billions of years ago. No one knows. The Bible doesn’t say. It does not give you the number of years. It doesn’t go into those details. But now turn over to II Peter for just a moment. There were angels; and we read here in II Peter, the 2nd chapter and the 4th verse that:

II Peter 2:4 God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell [And the word “hell” is translated from the Greek word “tartaroo” – the only place in all the Bible that word is used. It does not refer to any ‘hell’ that people can ever go to, but a special kind of ‘hell’ or ‘place of restraint’

for angels. It's a different word altogether; and I prefer to just see it say "tartaroo," because it doesn't mean anything to our people anyway. They don't know what it means.], *and delivered them into chains of darkness to be reserved unto judgment.*

So angels sinned. Now, over here in Jude, you will read that the angels "*kept not their first estate.*" I'm not going to turn to that. I want to move along. We're a little late now as it is. But on the throne over that whole time, on the throne ... God set a super archangel on the throne to rule over the angels; and He set His own government, the government of God. Now it had to have a foundation, a constitution of the government, a basic law; and that law was the law of God, which is the way of **love**, the way of outgoing concern towards others and not incoming lust for yourself.

Rebellion Against God

Now, in the 14th chapter of Isaiah, you read a little about the one who was set on the throne; and beginning here with verse 12 it says:

Isaiah 14:12 *How art thou fallen from heaven O Lucifer* [Lucifer was the name of that super archangel. He was a cherub. Notice: "O Lucifer ..."], *son of the morning!* [And it means a morning star, or a light bringer, one who brings light.] *how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!*

A better translation: "How art thou, who did weaken the nations, cut down to the ground."

Isaiah 14:13 *For thou has said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation in the sides of the north:*

That's where God's throne is – in the sides of the north, on the mount of

the congregation. He had a throne. He was going to ascend from it and go to heaven. He was under heaven. He was on the earth. His throne was on the earth. Let's read a little further. He says:

Isaiah 14:14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds ...

So he was below the clouds. HIS THRONE WAS ON THE EARTH. There was a throne on the earth, and an archangel who sat on that throne; and he was given the government of God to administer, and he had an administration. (Now we have an administration in Washington. Mr. Carter is in it right now. There are two other men that want to get his seat and take it away from him if they can. Well, I won't predict anything about that.)

Job 14:14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds [he said], I will be like the Most High.

Or, "I'll make myself in the place of God." That's what he said.

Now we see a little more about him. In Ezekiel the 28th chapter, it speaks of this same being; and in Ezekiel 28 beginning with the 14th^{5} verse.

Ezekiel 28:14 Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth ...

It's speaking of the same one. (I could have begun with that other verse, but I don't want to take the time.) "Thou art the anointed cherub ... covereth." This archangel was a cherub. There are three kinds of angels: ordinary angels, seraphs (or seraphim, which is the plural), and cherubs (or cherubim, which is the plural for cherub). Now a cherub is not a little child that you would see on a valentine or something like that. A cherub is a super archangel next in power to any created being that ever existed, next to God. "Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth." His wings covered the very throne of God. You read that back in the 24th chapter of Exodus.

Ezekiel 28:14-15 ... thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. [Now let's see.] Thou are the anointed cherub that covereth... I have set thee so ... (15) [And he says] Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created till iniquity was found in thee.

God created a PERFECT archangel. God showed him the right way to live. He had been at the very throne of God. He had been trained there, just like we train ministers at Ambassador College and then we send them out in the field to pastor a Church. He had been trained at headquarters, and then been sent out to this earth to administer the government of God; but, when he got here, he decided to turn against it. So you read here in verse 17:

Ezekiel 28:17 Thine heart was lifted up [Let's see. "Thou was perfect in thy ways ... till iniquity was found in thee." Now in verse 17 it says, "thine heart was lifted up:] because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness:[and] I will cast thee to the ground ...

Satan Cast Back Down

Well, he tried to ascend to heaven; but he was cast back down to the earth. As a result of all of that sin, they brought chaos to the physical earth. They were put here to improve the earth, to finish the creation of the earth. The finishing touches God left for them to put on; but, instead of that, they have brought confusion and wasteness and emptiness and decay to this earth. This Lucifer then became Satan; and God changed his name to Satan – which means enemy, or adversary, or competitor. That's what it means, and he's all for competition in the sense of hostile competition. There might be a competition that is all right, but not hostile competition.

He became Satan. Satan is a spirit being. He is not human like we are. He doesn't have to breathe air. He doesn't have a heart pumping blood. He has self-containing Life. He is an **immortal spirit being**, and he will **live**

forever and ever. He has IMMORTAL LIFE. Now, that Satan is still on that throne (believe it or not) to this day. But people can't see him. They don't realize WHO IS ON THE THRONE OF THE EARTH TODAY. It is not God Almighty. God is allowing Satan to be there.

All right, now let's go right on with the theme here. He's still on that throne, but the government of God has been inoperative ever since he changed and ever since he quit administering it; and so the earth came into a state of decay. Now you go back to the 1st chapter of Genesis, in the 1st verse and the 2nd verse.

Genesis 1:1-2 In the beginning God created the heaven(s) and the earth. (2) And the earth was [or became] without form and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep [or, that is, over the fluid surface of the oceans].

The earth **became** in a state of confusion. "Without form and void" as it says in the Bible is translated out of the Hebrew words that Moses wrote. Originally that was written by Moses in the Hebrew language. All we have is a translation in the English language. The Hebrew words are 'tohu' and 'bohu;' and they mean chaotic confusion, waste and empty, or decayed. That's what they mean, and that's what happened to the earth; and decay came to the earth as a result of that.

Earth Renewed For Man

Now God had a purpose, and God's purpose included something that had to do with mankind. I'm coming to that in just a minute. But first I want you to notice the 104th Psalm – 104th Psalm and verse 30. Here's something very few people realize ever happened.

Psalms 104:30 Thou sendest forth thy spirit [God sends His Spirit,

which is the **POWER** that does the creating. Christ is the Word, who **speaks** and it is done. There's a Psalm that says He spake and it was done. "Thou sendest forth Thy spirit ..."], *they are created; and thou renewest the face of the earth.*

God had **renewed** the face of the earth. The face of the earth had become devastated. It was in that condition. Now let's go right back to the 1st chapter of Genesis and notice again the last part of that 2nd verse.

***Genesis 1:2** ... And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.*

It was **ALL** waste and empty, and it was full of darkness. The light had gone out. Satan had brought darkness; and also he brought spiritual darkness, which means a lack of truth. And there was darkness; but God is the author of light, not darkness. Then:

***Genesis 1:3** God said, Let there be light; and there was light.*

And then, in 6 days, God **REMADE** the surface of the earth. He **renewed** the face of the earth in order to put man on it. Now He created the fish of the sea; then He created the birds in the air; and then He created the land animals, coming down the 6th day. And then, coming to verse 26, after He had created the cattle after the cattle kind, other animals after their kind (like horses after the horse kind, dogs after the dog kind) then:

***Genesis 1:26** God said, Let **us** make man in **our** image, after **our** likeness.*

In other words, "Let Us make man **after the GOD kind.**" He made man after the God kind. Man was made in the image of God. Man was made to have a contact with God. Man was made to have intelligence that animals don't have, and very few people know why that is: Because God put a **spirit in man** that does not exist in animals; and that spirit imparts the power of

intellect to the physical brain. I don't have time to go into that, but in the 2nd chapter of Genesis and verse 7:

***Genesis 2:7** And the [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground [He didn't make us like He had angels, out of spirit. He formed us out of matter, out of the dust of the ground.], and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.*

Not an immortal soul! There is nothing in the Bible that says that. **A living soul!** Man was made from the dust of the ground, but he has the spirit in him; and that spirit needs another Spirit to go with it. Now then, the man that He created, and He created a wife for him (so He created a man and a woman). But the man was mentioned because man was made to be the head of the family household, as Christ is the head of the Church. People don't believe that today either. Adam was the progenitor of all of the human race. He was the progenitor of humanity, of the world. He was the start of the world.

Now in the Garden of Eden were the two trees, you read on just a couple of verses after where I was:

***Genesis 2:8** And the [Eternal] God planted a garden eastward in Eden and there He put the man whom he had formed. (9) And out of the ground made the [Eternal] God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight and [it] was good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of [the] knowledge of good and evil.*

The tree of the **knowledge** of good and evil – that is, a tree of creating knowledge in your own mind; deciding for yourself what is good and what is evil. Now here was this Lucifer (now called Satan), and he was right there. He is still on the throne. However, he is invisible; and he wanted to get to Adam. And he was smart enough, and shrewd enough, to know he could get to the man through his wife.

Adam's Decision

Now we have an E.R.A. today, and I don't think very many people know who was the real creator and the one who really started the E.R.A.; but, I tell you, it was old Mother Eve. She did not agree with God, who told her that the husband was the head of the wife. She said, "No, but I want 50/50." But 50/50 means the wife's going to wear the pants every time. And it will always work out that way, because one has to take the lead. I don't care if you have 2 people, or 100 people, or any group of people – you've got to have a leader.

We have to have a leader in the United States, and that's the President of the United States. A lot of men want that job; and a lot of men, who could fill it and would be capable of it, don't want it (and they wouldn't run for it). That's too bad too, isn't it?

Now Adam made a choice. Adam had to make the choice **for ALL HUMANITY**. Here was this **LUCIFER, WHO WAS SITTING ON THAT THRONE, ADMINISTERING THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD. HE HAD MADE THAT GOVERNMENT INOPERATIVE. HE HAD TURNED TO THE OPPOSITE WAY**. And here was a MAN who could have said, "I WILL REJECT THE WAY SATAN'S GONE. I WILL ACCEPT THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD. I will administer to my children (who will be the world)."

Instead Satan was so clever that he got to EVE, and she took her husband by the nose and lead him right along; and she took of the tree of [6](#) the knowledge of good and evil. In other words, she took to HERSELF the manufacturing of the knowledge, the producing of the knowledge, of what is right and what is wrong. She took of the tree of good and evil. She took that knowledge to herself, and gave to her husband, and he went right along (the poor sap); and he did just what his wife led him into. How many husbands

are going right along with their wives today and letting their wives lead them? Well, I don't know that every wife is going to lead her husband off the wrong way; but certainly old mother Eve did.

Now, ADAM MADE THAT DECISION FOR ALL POSTERITY. HE WAS THE FOUNDER AND HEAD OF THE HUMAN RACE. He was the head of all humanity, and he made the decision for all humanity. So God decided that He would make binding what Adam had decided. Adam made the decision, not God; but Adam made it **for the WHOLE WORLD THAT WAS TO FOLLOW FROM HIM AND COME OUT OF HIM** by reproduction. So God drove them out of the Garden of Eden; and in chapter 3, beginning with verse 15 [{7}](#) of Genesis:

*Genesis 3:22-24 And the [Eternal] God said, Behold the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil [He is knowing, or manufacturing, within his own mind the knowledge of what is good and evil; and that's the knowledge that can only come from God.]: and now, LEST he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever: (23) Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. (24) So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to **keep** the way of the tree of life. [Lest Adam, or his children, and all humanity, and all the world, go back and get of the tree of life.]*

The tree of life was merely a symbolic tree representing the Holy Spirit of God. So man was CUT OFF from the Holy Spirit of God. Man was created with a spirit to give him **material** intelligence, material knowledge, material and physical thinking, but **not spiritual** knowledge and spiritual discernment and spiritual understanding.

Christ Had To Conquer Satan

Now let's get back to the purpose of God that's being worked out here below. His purpose was to reproduce Himself through mankind, and He made man in His own image so that could be. And He made man with arms and legs like He has, and with hands and feet like He has, with fingers and toes like God has. God has a nose. He has two ears. He has a mouth. He has two eyes. God has hair on His head, and the only examples that are given say it is white as wool. However, God is composed of Spirit. You will read in John 4:24, God is composed of Spirit. And God's eyes are like flames of fire, and God's face is like the sun in full strength. But, in form and shape, God is like we are.

But the purpose was to reproduce Himself and restore HIS GOVERNMENT ON EARTH **THROUGH MAN**. ADAM FAILED to restore the government. God's plan is **dual**: it's both physical and spiritual. The first man, Adam, was physical; and the physical part of God's creation started with Adam. But the spiritual phase of God's creation started with the second Adam, who was Jesus Christ – who was the Son of God as well as the Son of man. And Christ had to meet this Satan and overcome him. Now that happened 4,000 years later.

God's physical earth of men started with Adam, but the spiritual creation started with Christ. Now Christ overcame Satan. Let's turn clear back to that now, in the 4th chapter of the book of Matthew; and I just want to read a verse or two and go on. I wish I had time to go through the whole thing, but notice in verse 10. Jesus finally said (after He had resisted Satan's temptation):

Matthew 4:10 ... GET THEE HENCE, SATAN...

He gave a command, "YOU GET OUT OF HERE! I HAVE

CONQUERED YOU.” And Satan slunk away. JESUS CHRIST CONQUERED SATAN, and decided He would go the way of God, and ACCEPTED the government of God. And the government of God is based on the LIFESTYLE of God, the way of LIVING of God, the way of give instead of get. That’s the way Christ accepted. Now Christ said, “Get out of here, Satan.” So Satan got away from Him, but he didn’t leave the earth. He is still on that throne.

Now I said that God cut off mankind. Adam cut off his human race and made the choice for all the human race. And God cut them off when He sent the man out and put flaming swords to guard the way lest people go back and **get** the tree of life and take of the Holy Spirit of God and live forever. MANKIND HAS BEEN CUT OFF FROM GOD.

God Has To Call Us

All right, now next I’d like to have you notice in John, what Jesus said. John the 6th chapter and verse 44:

John 6:44 *No man [said Jesus] CAN come to me ...*

Now the only way you can get back to God – the only way you can receive eternal life – is through Jesus Christ our Lord. But how are you going to come to CHRIST? Some of them say, “ANYONE WHO WILL can come.” Show me that in the Bible. The only place it appears is in the last page of your Bible, which is way after the thousand-year reign with Christ, and in the world to come, and after Satan is gone. You can’t find it in applying to the time of the present, not once. ‘Anyone who will’ cannot come! “**NO MAN CAN COME TO ME** [said Jesus], *except the Father which sent me draw him.*” – John 6:44.

JESUS SAID THAT, but people don’t believe that. They don’t believe

what Christ said. That's the Word of God. That's what God said. That's what Christ said. He said He only spoke what His Father told Him to say. Therefore that's the Word of the Father as well as the Word of Christ. **I happen to believe that!** You think I am a little bit off? You think I am a nut because I believe Christ? Then you believe God's a nut! It's about time we wake up! It's about time we wake up. (Now I got my notes all mixed up.)

Jesus had conquered Satan. He said that no man could come to Him except the Father call him. Jesus Himself chose His own apostles. God called them. Jesus chose them. Jesus trained them. You know Peter didn't come to Jesus and say; "Look, I'd like to become the leader of Your group of apostles." No, Peter wanted to be a fisherman, so he went out to fish; but Christ called him. The others of the twelve, Jesus said; "You have not chosen Me. I have chosen you."

There is such a thing as **predestination** in your Bible, and very few understand it. Only those that are 'predestinated,' God is calling now; and the rest of the world is not called. What about the rest of the world? Are they then LOST? Oh, no. Who got that idea up? I don't know. But a lot of evangelists believe it today in the name of Christianity, but it is not in your Bible. That's not what God says. Maybe that's what a lot of preachers say, and what a lot of evangelists say; but it is not what God says. God says no man can come to Him except the Father (God) draws him. And, if you read the two places in the Bible where predestination is mentioned, it has nothing to do with the decision you are going to make. It has only to do with **whether** and **when** you are to be CALLED to be saved.

Now, what about all the rest of the people? **THEY CAN'T COME TO GOD – THEY CAN'T COME TO CHRIST** – unless the Father draws them. **WHAT ABOUT THEM?** They're just not being judged. What about those people that lived back before the Flood? What about ancient Israel? God never let them have His Holy Spirit. Are they lost? **NO!** "*ALL ISRAEL*

SHALL BE SAVED” (you’ll read in the 11th chapter of Romans in the New Testament), but not now. That’s later in the Millennium and in the Great White Throne Judgment. We are going to see about that a week from today; but not today, not now. Remember God cut off the world because Adam made that decision, and God made it binding.

Few Called Now

Now Jesus chose His own apostles. Then God added to the Church. The apostles didn’t go out and talk people into being converted. They didn’t say, “Please, oh, I plead with you, come and give your heart to Christ tonight.” You can’t find that in the Bible! The apostles didn’t preach like that. Rather Peter said, “You are wicked men. You destroyed the very Christ.” He didn’t say, “Please come.” But GOD called them, and GOD added to the Church such as were being saved. That’s what the Bible says. Let’s begin to believe it.

Now traditional Christianity seems blinded to another fact. They talk about Christ as Savior, and indeed He is. But they don’t talk about Christ in another category. Christ was born to be a **King!** And they don’t quote those passages, like back in the 9th chapter in the book of Isaiah, and you read it in the beginning of Matthew, and the beginning of Luke – where Christ was to be a King and sit on the throne of His father David and to rule over all of the earth, and Christ was born to be a King. When He was on trial for His life, Pontius Pilate asked Him, “*Are you then a King?*” And Christ said, “*You say I am a King. To this end WAS I BORN, for this cause [to be a King] came I into the world.*” That’s what He said.

God’s purpose is to restore the government of God that had been taken away, and He is CALLING OUT A FEW to be TRAINED TO SIT WITH CHRIST ON THAT THRONE **WHEN HE COMES**. MEN are not going to

create a world government. GOD is going to do it, and CHRIST is going to come with all the supernatural POWER of the ETERNAL GOD; and it's going to be done **TO** man, **not by man**. The world doesn't have to believe it. I'm not trying to convince the world. If any of you are not in the Church of God and you are here today, you may laugh at that. You may not believe that. That's up to you. I don't care what you do. I'm just told to tell you. That's my job. I don't have to convince you of it. It doesn't make any difference whether you believe it or not. It's going to happen just the same. And it's going to happen **TO YOU**, and not by you.

But God is calling some of us, and those that He is calling now have to fight off Satan. Now the others are not now being judged one way or the other. They are not lost, neither are they saved. **THEY JUST ARE NOT JUDGED**. Now get that. **The world itself cannot come to Christ. The world itself is not being judged. They can't be saved, they can't be lost – now! God is calling some now, in the Church.** And I don't know any church but the one **Church of the Living God on the face of this earth that BELIEVES THAT, BECAUSE THE WORLD IS DECEIVED;** and Satan is the great deceiver that has blinded and deceived all nations.

How many of us still want to go along with the way of the churches of this world and believe that anybody can be saved who wants to? That is not true at all! But the others, maybe they are just as sincere as you are. Maybe more so? I don't know. They could be absolutely honest. But they're not being judged. They are not lost. I'm not condemning them. I'm not trying to save them either. Neither is God; neither is Christ, believe it or not. Now some people think that's blasphemy to say Christ isn't trying to save them. He is not. We are to be kings with Him.

Overcome Satan

Now then, I'd like to have you notice in Revelation, in the 3rd chapter of Revelation and verse 21.

Revelation 3:21 To him that overcometh ...

And we have to overcome Satan. When God calls the others, Satan will be gone and the Kingdom of God will be ruling. And then we're going to call all the world to be saved, and they won't have a devil here to deceive them the way he deceives us now. Now when I spoke to those of you from Pasadena just last Thursday ... Was it last Thursday? No. Last Sabbath. Last Sabbath I mentioned to you how Satan begins to instill the **self**-way of life and the **get** way of life, and the **selfish** way, into little children during the first year of their life; and people are brought up that way. But the people, when we are ruling in the Kingdom of God, little babies won't have that, and the Satan influence will be gone, and the world won't be deceived any longer, and the world will be full of the truth of God as the waters cover the ocean. So now notice:

Revelation 3:21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne ...

We have to overcome Satan now and Satan's way, and accept the government of God; and we are to sit with Christ in His throne. **That's the throne that Satan now has. Satan is still there. Satan is still alive. But Christ** is going to come and take that throne. **He's already qualified** to do it, **and we're called now to come and sit with Him.** DOES THAT MAKE SENSE? It makes a lot more sense, let me tell you, than what the so-called evangelicals are preaching today. And how they do hate us, brethren! Let me tell you, they sure do.

Revelation 3:21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

Jesus had to overcome Satan, and He will sit in the throne of His father David on this earth; and, if we overcome, we will sit with Him on His throne. Now in chapter 2:26

***Revelation 2:26-27** And he that overcometh and keepeth my works unto the **end** , to him will I give **power** over the nations (27) and he shall **rule** them with a rod of iron ...*

Brethren, we are called to be **trained** in this life in the way of God, the **government** of God based on the **law** of God, which is a way of **LIVING**; and we have to **LIVE** in that form of lifestyle. Now that doesn't mean we wear crazy clothes. It doesn't mean we do foolish, crazy things. It just means we live the way of loving our neighbor as much as ourselves, and loving God above ourselves and everybody else: That we just have that way of loving our neighbors as ourselves, and we make good neighbors. I hope you are all good neighbors where you live, and I'm sure you are because I hear that kind of reports coming from everywhere!

You know what people say of us? We come to the Feast of Tabernacles and people will say (as I have heard said in past years and maybe they'll be saying it here this year, I don't know), they say; "Well, you people, we find you're the finest people we've ever seen. Well, you just seem Wish everybody could be like you are. But I can't understand why such good people like you, why do you have to believe that crazy religion?" Yes, it seems crazy to them; and actually their way is crazy and they just can't see it. But a crazy person I guess always thinks the other guy is crazy. Well, anyway, however that is.

Christ died for our sins; and He paid the penalty of our sins so that, even though we have sinned, the penalty is paid for us. We can receive the Holy Spirit of God. The world does not have the Holy Spirit of God. We can learn the way of God. We can come to have spiritual understanding, spiritual

knowledge, and spiritual discernment, and to be prepared. And we are the Bride of Christ, being prepared for His coming.

Now the Work of the Church in the past two years, and the prime work on me, has been to turn this Church back upside down (or right side up again) and get us back to be prepared for the coming of Christ, because it's going to be soon. It should be in our lifetime. I don't know any longer whether I will live for it; but I think very possibly I shall because, let me tell you, I can live as long as God Almighty wants me to live; and don't you think I won't. And I don't know, regardless of my age, that's what the calendar says. I know this: I have never reached middle age yet. Well, if I ever did, I don't know it. I don't know when it was. I never knew it!

Christ To Reign On Earth

So now I want you to notice a little further in Revelation about the 2nd coming of Christ. HE is that unseen hand that is coming from someplace. HE is the one who is going to come and do it and TAKE OVER the government (instead of Lucifer), and with the ALMIGHTY POWER of the CREATOR GOD! He is going to take over the rulership of all the nations on this earth.

Now the government of the United States at Washington is going to go down. The government of England at London is going to go DOWN. The government of the Kremlin is going to go down in Moscow. The government in China (where I was at the seat of government and talking with the heads of government and one of the top three men, with whom I spent a full hour, or a little more) that government is going to go down. And I've been telling them about this government that is going to take over and rule the whole world. Christ is coming in all the power and splendor of the Great God. Let me read that to you. That's back here in the book of Revelation, in the 19th chapter, beginning in verse 11.

Revelation 19:11 And I saw heaven opened ...

John is telling what he saw in a vision now. Now we're coming down to the end here. "And I saw heaven opened ..." That's just ahead of us a little while. It might be ... Well, it's bound to be 3 or 4 years at the very least because other things have to happen first. But it's VERY near to us now, very near.

Revelation 19:11-15 And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. (12) His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written that no man knew, but he himself. [I told you His eyes were like flames of fire, and in the 1st chapter you'll find His face was like the very sun in brightness.] (13) And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood; and his name is called The Word of God. [Jesus Christ is the Word of God.] (14) And the armies which were [with him] in heaven followed him upon white horses [And you'll find that in the 25th chapter of Matthew, and that's all of the holy angels.], clothed in fine linen ... and clean [which is a symbol of righteousness]. (15) And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations, [But His sword is not a sword of steel. It is a sword – the Word of God – which cuts both ways, not just one way. And He'll smite the nations, that's with the Word of God] and he shall **rule them with a rod of iron** ...

THERE WILL BE **ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT** and only one military force; AND NO MORE WORLD WAR. And under that government we'll have a new educational system: and God started it through me at Ambassador College; and it's going to go ON. It's been started through the Imperial Schools (in the 1st Grade and the 2nd and 3rd grades) and High School (junior high and senior high); and that educational system will go on in the World Tomorrow.

Revelation 19:16 *And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, **KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.***

Christ will come as a King over all of the kings of the earth, and LORD of Lords. Now come right on to the 20th chapter:

Revelation 20:1-2 *And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. (2) And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a **thousand years.***

Satan is going to be bound and taken away from this world and taken away from that throne, and Christ will sit on that throne; and YOU and I, if we are overcomers and if we endure to the end, we're going to sit there and rule with Him. Or maybe we won't sit there. Maybe we'll be sent to some other part of the world and rule.

Revelation 20:3 *And cast [Satan] into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years should be fulfilled [And there'll be a thousand years. Now, after that, Satan will] ... be loosed a little season.*

Preview Of The Kingdom Of God

And then something else will happen; and I'm going to speak to you one week from today, and I'm going to explain all of that to you at that time, one week from today. Now I'd like to give you a picture of that time, of the government of God. (Do I have a little more time? Can I see someone up here? Our time is limited. I don't know how long we are on the satellite. Have I got about another 5 minutes? Well, someone had better let me know if we don't have and I can stop right here; but I hope we have a little bit more time.)

I'd like to turn back to the 11th chapter of Isaiah; and here we take a look into that Kingdom after Christ comes and is reigning, in the prophet Isaiah way back in the Old Testament.

Isaiah 11:1 And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse ...

Now Jesse was the father of David, and the 'rod out of the stem of Jesse' was Christ.

Isaiah 11:2-3 And the spirit of the Lord shall [be] upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding [That's on Christ when He comes as ruler.], the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; (3) And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears.

He won't judge on hearsay. He won't judge on false evidence. He will be able to read men's hearts and their inner motives and intent of their minds.

Isaiah 11:4-5 But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth; and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked. (5) And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins.

And He'll be reigning and ruling over all the earth. Now, what will happen?

Isaiah 11:6 The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them.

Can you imagine that? That's the way it is going to be in the Kingdom of God. And I would like to read from the 14th chapter of Zechariah. ALL

NATIONS are going to keep the Feast of Tabernacles like we're doing. That seems crazy to the people right here in this city now. That seems crazy that we are keeping the Feast of Tabernacles. They'll ALL be keeping it then; and, if they don't, they are going to have no rain. And then if they don't do it, there will be plagues coming on them until they do, because they will do it. Now verse 9:

Isaiah 11:9 They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.

As I told you before: as full as the waters cover the ocean beds. And it goes on to show that God will call all the Gentiles to salvation. Then He is going to call ancient Israel to be resurrected from their graves. Of course, that will come at the end of the thousand years; but He is going to convert ALL of the nations, and the world will be full of peace. Wild animals will be tamed. The government of God will rule.

Under Christ, I think undoubtedly, will be Abraham. Over the nations that come from the twelve tribes of Israel will be David, sitting over and ruling over all of those nations. Over each one of those nations will be one of the twelve apostles [{8}](#). Jesus said all of that. Jesus has explained all of that, and we know that those things are true.

(Oh, I think something was laid here. Oh, it's 15 minutes I have. Okay, I'll be off the air by that time.) Now I just want to say to you people in England over there, if you are still there... It must be pretty late over there by now. It's about, it's pretty close to midnight, or is it after midnight? I guess it's after midnight in England. I hope they can get a little sleep for tomorrow's service. But I expect to be in England and speak to the Churches in and around London in about 3 weeks. I don't know the exact date; but it will be announced, and you will know in time. I'm planning to leave shortly

after the feast for a trip over there. Then I must see Mr. Sadat in Cairo and Mr. Begin in Jerusalem; and also I hope that we can have a trip to see the leaders in Poland. There has been quite an upset in Poland lately, as you know. The door has always been open to me there, and I hope that it still is. We're working on that now, and I will announce all of those things later.

However, I will speak to all of you again one week from today in this same ... by satellite and with partly ... at least Pasadena is on microwave, and at least we have a live hookup so that I can speak live to all of you; and I will hope to be back and speak to you again by one week from today. And, in the meantime, enjoy this festival to the full, every one of you. I have tried to give you a bird's eye view of what it all means: **the whole purpose of God – the master plan of God**, working it out; and these festivals of God picture that master plan to us.

So goodbye for now, and God bless you all.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Mr. Armstrong was thumping on his Bible for emphasis.

[{2}](#) - Mr. Armstrong was thumping on his Bible for emphasis.

[{3}](#) - Mr. Armstrong here paraphrases the ideas of John 8:31-32 and verse 36.

[{4}](#) - Mr. Armstrong was thumping on his Bible for emphasis.

[{5}](#) - At first Mr. Armstrong was going to begin with verse 14, changed his mind to verse 12, then went back to quote from verse 14 as he goes on to explain.

[{6}](#) - Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said “the tree of life,” but obviously meant the tree of good and evil.

[{7}](#) - Mr. Armstrong read the wrong verse at first, then corrected himself and

read verse 22.

{8} - Mr. Armstrong said “tribes” here, but he obviously meant apostles.

Building The Temple

Sermon – Seattle (February 14, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Building The Temple.....	285	Man's Wrong Choice	306
The Work Of God	286	God Works With Some Men	309
The Church Of God	288	One Man At A Time	311
Growth Of The Work	289	Why The Second Adam?	312
God: Two Persons	291	Pouring Out Of God's Spirit	314
How God Creates	293	Gospel Of The Kingdom	315
Creating Godly Character	294	The Day Of Pentecost	318
Two Ways Of Life	296	Apostles Preach The Gospel	320
Angels That Sinned	297	The True Gospel Suppressed	321
God Renewed The Earth	298	Jesus' Prophecy In Matthew 24	322
God's Purpose Through Man	300	"I Will Send My Messenger"	325
The Two Trees	301	The Temple Christ Will Return To	328
A Human Spirit In Man	302	Zerubbabel As A Type	330
Another Spirit	303	Called And Prepared	333
What Man Can Do	305		

What a wonderful crowd we have today. I couldn't see all of you before, till I got up here on the platform. But this is a very fine, nice large, auditorium; and it looks like we're packed. I understand we will seat 2500; and it looks like we have that many here.

I would like to make just an announcement or two before I begin what I believe is a very important sermon. We expect now, and I would say it's 99% sure, the Feast of Tabernacles will be held once again this fall at Squaw Valley. I think that a certain number of you here will want to go down there. I don't know how many of you will go over to Spokane, how many will go down there. But most of you will divide between the two different places, unless you go to some special Feast site of your own choice that you wish to go to.

Now, we're going back at Jekyll Island this year for the first time in two years or more. And the reason for that is the St. Petersburg new building construction is taking off a lot of the parking spaces; and we can only park about 8,500 cars down there this year, or 8,000 (something like that), where we've been having over 12,000 people down there. And so the overflow, about 3,500, will go to Jekyll Island. Now, in Jekyll there is a new facility; so we won't have to have a tent. And they have a new building there that will seat about 3,500 or 4,000. That's a little larger than this place here, and so I think that a lot of people from the east coast and the southeast will enjoy that.

And then this year we also expect to go back to Mount Pocono. You know, the snow came and broke down the roof of Mount Pocono a year or two ago. We haven't been there now for, I don't remember, is it two years or one year? I guess it's two years. But it broke down really one end of it. We find we can repair it and without restoring the whole thing. It used to seat over 12,000; and now it will seat a good 8,000. And so we will have at least 8,000 there this autumn. I thought you might be glad to know that.

The Work Of God

And, incidentally, the Work is now lunging forward in the biggest lunge forward we have ever made. I'm expecting to go out, and I hope God will give me the strength to get out, about every two weeks on a combined Sabbath service, just like this one here. (Perhaps Chicago one time; perhaps Detroit; and perhaps Atlanta, Georgia; and different centers around the country.) And I'm hoping to do that.

I am now setting a schedule to try to do four television programs a week and four radio programs a week. Now, when you take that all of that – in addition to the oversight and management of all of the Churches all over the world; and in addition to the writing of books and booklets; and articles every

month in The Plain Truth, every month in the Good News, every other week in The Worldwide News, almost every week in the Pastor General's Report – well, it's a little bigger job than I was able to do when I was thirty years old, and forty years old, and fifty years old. I'm getting along a little bit; but God is helping me, like wine, to improve with age. I seem to grow a little younger every year. And although I will reach my ninetieth year in less than six months now this year, I hope that God will give me the strength to continue on harder than ever for years yet to come; and I believe He will.

I have a message for you that I could not have delivered some years ago. Sometimes we wonder about things; and we don't know just how to size up, or judge, certain things and how to know. Jesus told us one way we may know. He said **by the fruits** you may know. Until the fruits had proven certain things, and the fulfillment of certain Scriptures, I could certainly never have had said some of the things I'm going to say to you here today. But the fruits now have made certain things very evident – very, very, plain indeed. But the time has come now that we need a new, clear, concise explanation. An updated explanation: Just what is, and why is, the Worldwide Church of God? Why this particular Church? And why **the Work** that we call the Work of God? And what is the Work? A lot of people still don't know what is the Work, and I hope to be able to explain that this afternoon.

Now, that's why it's going to take a little time. I want to begin at the very beginning. I'm going to have to give you a capsule report, a very brief synopsis. I hope I can go right along, stay with the subject, and cover a great deal of ground; and I expect to speak a little more than an hour, if you'll stand with me. If I think you're getting too tired, I'll give you at least a two or three minute intermission to stand and stretch and turn around, and stretch your arms up and one thing or another, and get a little bit of rest.

The Church Of God

Jesus said, in Matthew 16:18:

Matthew 16:18 *I will build my church, and the gates of hell* [which should be translated “the gates of the grave.” That’s what He meant. And the word “hell” there is Hades, which simply means the grave. It doesn’t mean the kind of hell that Dante thought it meant.] *shall not prevail against it.*

Satan has done everything he could to destroy this Church. He tried to destroy it before it got started, by destroying the Christ-child right after Jesus was born. He tried to kill the very Founder of the Church again, when Christ reached the age of thirty, just before He began His mission. As a matter of fact, He had to **qualify** before He could begin to preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God; and Satan’s attack is the very thing that qualified Jesus Christ. You’ll read of that in Matthew 4, beginning with the first verse – the great temptation, when Jesus was tempted as no man on the face of this earth ever has been in all history.

The Church has been persecuted. This Church has been persecuted the last two years, since just a little over two years ago, by the State of California; but the gates of the grave have not prevailed against it. The Church has been drawn closer together. We have gotten back on the track, on God’s track. We are closer together in unity and harmony than ever before. Satan, of course, will continue to try. I have been persecuted ever since I gave myself to God.

You know, most people receive Christ. They get. They want to take. They want to receive. They want to get. There are the **two ways of life** and only the two ways, broadly speaking. One I call “give.” The other is “get.”

I had... I brought it along with me; but I thought I wouldn’t bring it up here, because there wasn’t going to be any time for it. Someone in Pasadena

just discovered a recording that I have talked about that was popular in 1924, when we had arrived out in Oregon in a Flivver, a model T Ford, after an 18-day trip from Iowa – my wife and I and our only two children at that time (because our two sons were all born in Portland, Oregon later). But this song was being played, and it is so reminiscent of the very condition that does exist all over the world – selfishness, self-centeredness; and the song is, “I Love me.” ‘Oh, I love me. I’m wild about myself. I put my arms around myself, and give myself a squeeze.’

Well, someone dug up a record of that, and had it put on a cassette, and sent it over to me. I could have brought it here, but I thought you wouldn’t be ready to just put it on. I didn’t want to take the time anyway today. Maybe we’ll use it on the program some of these times. It was done before electronic recording. They didn’t have microphones when this was recorded. And you don’t realize how recent many of these things are. Our electronic recordings all come since the year of 1924, when I first reached Oregon and the state of Washington as far as Vancouver, Washington.

Growth Of The Work

I hadn’t gotten up this far then, but I visited Seattle a great many times. And I just want to say before I start with the sermon that in the early thirties I used to come up here every week, when I started broadcasting on radio KRSC down near the Boeing works. I used to be on the air there 8:30 every morning. Not every morning, every Sunday morning I should say; and that was the start of the Work up here. That is the start of this Church. And later, of course, we were on the air in other places, over at Spokane and other places all around.

But the Work has grown. It started on radio in Eugene, Oregon. It branched out to Portland. Then it came up here, to Seattle. After that, we

went on down in Hollywood. Then we went on in Des Moines, Iowa on a 50,000-watt station that brought mail from every state in the union. Then we were on the great super-power Mexican stations, until the proliferation of radio stations in the United States finally brought us to a condition where there were so many stations in the United States that they just cut out the Mexican stations; and they didn't reach the whole country any longer. So then we went on the major 50,000-watt stations all over the United States daily. And that is what built this Work – followed up, of course, by The Plain Truth, by the booklets, by the other literature; and mostly, if I may say so, by the things that I myself wrote. But I want to come to some of that a little bit later.

What Is The Church?

Jesus said that He would build His Church and that it could never be destroyed. Now, why did He build it? For what purpose? Why should there be a Church?

You know that most people just take the ideas of churches for granted. You find churches everywhere. For most people a church means a building with a sloping roof, a steeple on top pointing up to heaven, and a cross on the front facade. Well, that's NOT the Bible definition of the Church.

The Church is a group of people. The people, or the Church, goes to the building; but people today seem to think that the people go to the church. Instead of that, it's the Church that goes to the building. It's just the other way around. If I want to begin to show you why the Church – why are we today, and what is the Work, how it is conducted, all about it – we need to start at the very, very beginning.

As I become older, I have to suffer a few physical handicaps. I have to read pretty largely through fairly high-powered magnifying glasses. My hearing is somewhat impaired; but, thank God, my mind is not. My voice is

not. And though I can stand and preach at a pulpit for, oh, 30, 40, 45 minutes; and I've done it many times. But I'm going to speak a little longer than that today. So I wanted to be seated, if you don't mind.

God: Two Persons

And so now I want to begin at the beginning. I want to begin back BEFORE God had created anything – before God even started creating; and you read of it not in Genesis 1:1. That's not even the first event in time sequence begins. But, if you want to know the first historic record in the Bible, **in time sequence** it is not Genesis 1:1. It is John 1:1, in the New Testament. So in John the first chapter, and verse one... In fact, we'll read the first two or three verses.

***John 1:1** In the beginning was the Word...*

Now, there is a person who is called the Word. The Greek word that is translated into the English word "Word" there; and it means Word. It means Spokesman. It means Revelatory Thought. There was a person called the Word, who was the Spokesman.

***John 1:1** ...and the Word was with God.*

Now God is another person. There are two persons. And the Word is a person who was with another person, who is God.

***John 1:1** ...and the Word was God.*

The Word also is God. So They were both God, and there are two persons there.

Now the common idea about God is that God is a Trinity. Let me tell you that there is not a religion on the face of this earth that knows who and what God is. What do you think of that? They don't know what the Church

is. They don't know why the Church is. They don't know what man is. What is man? Why is man? Why was man ever created and put on this earth? What is the purpose? Are we here for a purpose; and, if so, what is it? The world doesn't know those things. I've been shouting it for a long time. And I hope God will give me the breath to keep on shouting it a long time longer, at least until the end of this world. Then a far better World is coming. But:

John 1:2-3 *The same was in the beginning with God. (3) All things were made by him [by the Word. All things were made by the Word.]; and without him was not any thing made that was made.*

Now we find if you turn over to verse 14:

John 1:14 *The Word was made flesh [In other words, became a human being; was born as a human being. Why? I'm going to read you that a little later, why He was born a human being.], and [He] dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.*

Now there we find that God started out with Two – not three persons, not a Trinity. When you go back to Genesis 1:1 you read:

Genesis 1:1 *In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*

But there the word for God is Elohim, which is a uniplural meaning more than one person. Church is a uniplural word. It takes more than one person to make a Church. Family is a uniplural word. It means more than one person. One person is not a family. I suppose two persons can form a family, a husband and a wife. Three persons can form a family. Sometimes there are 12. I know of one young lady here who has I believe 12 or 14 children in the family. So sometimes we have families that are quite large. Sometimes they're quite small. But a family is a number of people that are one unit. The unit is a family, though there's more than one person.

How God Creates

In Ephesians, let's see, I think it's the third chapter. I won't turn to that now.

Ephesians 3:9 [God] *created all things by Jesus Christ.*

Jesus Christ is the Word. Jesus, when He was on earth said, "I haven't spoken anything except what the Father told Me to speak." Everything He did is what God the Father told Him to do. God created all things; but Jesus, the Word, is the one He used to do it.

You know, back in 1914 in January (That's before most of you were born.), I was sent by a national magazine that I represented at the time and for which I was writing. I was writing articles for a national magazine at that time, 1914 in January and just a few days after January 1st. I was sent to the Ford Motor Company plant in Detroit. At that time the plant was out on Highland Avenue. They're out on Bull Run now, and maybe some other places besides. They've expanded so much. But I was sent there to see Henry Ford.

Now I saw Henry Ford; and he was dressed in a business suit, like I am and like most of you men are. I saw him in a breezeway between the office building and the main great factory. He is the maker of the Ford car, but he wasn't making any cars. He made the cars by workmen I saw across the breezeway in the factory. And they were wearing overalls, and work shirts, and work clothes. But they were using the power of machinery and electricity as the power by which they did it. So that's the way Henry Ford made the Ford car.

Well, it's the same way that God created everything. Jesus Christ is the Workman that He used to do the work. Well, what was the work of Jesus? He is the Word. He spoke. So there is a psalm that says:

Psalm 33:9 He spake, and it was done.

Jesus just speaks. Now there is a POWER. That's not a third person; but it's a power that emanates from God the Father, and it emanates also from Jesus Christ – the power of the Holy Spirit. Jesus is the Word. He does what the Father tells Him. The Father says, "Do this." He speaks. The Holy Spirit is the power that does it. Just like Henry Ford built cars: The workmen did the work, but they used the power of electricity and machinery. That's the way God has created all things.

Creating Godly Character

Now, let's go the next step. What was God's purpose as the Creator? God is Creator. That's His business. Well, what does He create and why? God is the Creator of spiritual, righteous, holy character. Now, get that. A lot of people don't know that. God is the Creator of holy, righteous, spiritual character. God is the perfect, holy, righteous, spiritual character Himself.

Now, through human beings, He's reproducing Himself; but His first creation was not man. He was not creating Himself through angels, but His first creation was angels. Everything that God does, or nearly... I won't say everything, but pretty much the way God works is in a plan of **duality** – a first and a last. For example: There's the first Adam, about 6,000 years ago. About 2,000 [1](#) years ago the second Adam, Jesus Christ, came. There was the Old Covenant made at Mount Sinai. Christ is going to make the New Covenant, and came to announce it 1900 and some years ago. You're going to see a lot about dualities as I go through this sermon now. All right, the first thing that God created was angels; and there was duality even there.

There's one thing God cannot create automatically, just by Himself by fiat; and that is holy, spiritual, righteous character. That is something that must be created with the assent, with the desire, with the decision and with

the effort, if you please, of the separate entity that God has created. He could create angels, but He Himself would not just automatically instill character within them. They had to have their part in receiving that character, and having that character created in them. They had to make a decision.

Now God put either all of the angels or a third of them on the earth. The Bible doesn't say which. But one-third of them went wrong. If He put them all on the earth, two-thirds stayed right and one-third went wrong; but I believe He only put a third on the earth. Anyway, the other two-thirds are holy, righteous angels. But the angels He put on the earth we find (in the 14th chapter of Isaiah, the 28th chapter of Ezekiel) that they were led by one God put on a throne on the earth. Now we come back to Genesis 1:1, for it says:

Genesis 1:1 *God [Elohim, which is uniplural, meaning more than one person.] created the heavens and the earth.*

Now let's stop right there, because a lot of other things go in before you get to verse two. He put angels on this earth before He put man on this earth. But He put one angel, a super archangel, of a higher status; higher in the way he was created than the other angels. He was a cherub. His name was Lucifer, meaning shining star of the dawn, or a bringer of light – light and truth, and everything good. He was set on a throne of this earth, and it was a throne over the whole earth. And, incidentally, he is still on that throne right now. And he's there trying to get to you and to me, and to destroy us if he can, because now he has become Satan.

He was there to administer the government of God. Now, every government is based on a constitution or a basic law. We've had a constitutional fight to preserve this Church alive in the last two years because the State of California was breaking the Constitution of the United States. Finally, they gave up the battle for the time being. We hope it's permanent. Nevertheless, every government is based on a basic law. And the government

that God put on this earth and He set Lucifer here to administer, it was based on the law of God. That law is **love**: Out-flowing love, away from yourself – not incoming lust, or coveting, or desire, or selfishness.

Two Ways Of Life

Now there are the two basic ways of life, and the law of God is the spiritual law. It is inexorable, as the law of gravity. I raise something; I let loose of it; and something drew it down. I didn't push it down. The law of gravity is there, and it works. I didn't have to have someone make it work. It just automatically works. The law of God has a penalty. If you break it, it'll break you. You don't need a policeman around to arrest you, and you don't need a trial judge sitting on a bench.

Well, this Lucifer decided he didn't like just ruling over this one little earth down here, where God had the whole universe. He became a rebel. He decided that "give" was not the best way, that "get" is the best way.

I received a letter day before yesterday from the president of a large corporation, a financial corporation, objecting to one of my Wall Street Journal full-page ads. He believes in capitalism; and he got the idea that, because I say the law of God is "give," that I don't believe in it. Oh, he's going to be surprised! He's going to get a letter from me; and he's going to find out that he gave me the headlines and the subject matter for seven more Wall Street Journal full-page ads. And he's going to agree with every one of them because, you see, the law of God for humans says to us, "*Love thy neighbor as thyself.*" It includes a little bit of self-love, and capitalism doesn't violate that. When I explain... That's a point he didn't get, but he wants to love self only and not love his neighbor. We've got to love both.

God gave you yourself. That's a human body and a human mind to protect and to take care of and to use. By loving it, you take care of it. That

song that I was telling you about: ‘Oh, I love me. I’m wild about myself.’ It says, ‘I’m going to marry me someday’ even. ‘I love myself to death, I love me till I’m all out of breath.’ That’s the way people are. That’s the way people are. They just love themselves. They don’t love anybody else. That is, most people.

Angels That Sinned

Well, now then we turn to II Peter, in the second chapter beginning with verse four.

II Peter 2:4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned ...

They did not keep the law of out-flowing love. They violated it by Satan’s way of incoming coveting and lust. They started a different way of life. God’s law is a way of life! It’s a way of life that will bring us all peace and happiness, if we would only live that way.

II Peter 2:4 If God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to [tartaroo] ...

The “hell” here is “tartaroo” and it’s the only place in the Bible that it’s used in the Greek language, and it just applied to angels only. It’s a place of holding angels until their judgment.

II Peter 2:4-6 ...and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment: [Then it goes on, he...] (5) spared not the old world, but saved Noah [in the time of the Flood. And then, after the next verse.] (6) turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them [for their sins].

In other words, it shows that God punishes sin. Well, this Lucifer who sat on the throne, you read of him. I won’t take the time. I want to hurry. As I

say, I'm going to give you this in a brief form this afternoon. In the twelfth chapter, or in Isaiah 14 I mean; and it is through from verse 11 or 12 to verse 18. And also in Ezekiel 28 you will find him described; and he started just the opposite way. He refused to enforce or to administer the law or the government of God. So the government of God was taken away; and, as a result of that, the sin was physical to the earth.

Now, they were spiritual beings; and they were on a physical earth. When they disobeyed God, they had not built the **character** that God had put them here to build. And so Lucifer became Satan, and he is now Satan the Devil; and all of his angels became demons. They are immortal. They live forever. They always will. They are the most unhappy creatures in all of the wide, wide universe that God has created.

God Renewed The Earth

Now, in Psalm 104:30. I don't know if I need to turn to that. Well, I might. I've got it marked here.

*Psalm 104:29-30 Thou hidest thy face, they are troubled: thou takest away their breath, they die, and return to their dust. (30) Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou **renewest** the face of the earth.*

God sends forth His Spirit, and then renews the face of the earth. Now then, you go back to Genesis, the first chapter in verse two.

Genesis 1:2 And the earth was without form, and void.

“Without form, and void.” The Hebrew words are “tohu” and “bohu.” And it means it was all desolate, and waste, and empty; and had become, well, decayed – in a state of decay, because of the sin of the angels. And light had been turned to darkness. Then Christ, the Word, begins to speak.

Genesis 1:3 And [He] said, Let there be light.

He spake, and it was done; and the light came. In six days, He renewed the face of the earth. That is not the original creation, as nearly everyone thinks. That was only a renewing of the earth after the angels had sinned.

Now, the government of God was the big thing. It was given to develop that kind of spiritual character. But the angels didn't do it. At least those angels didn't. Apparently two-thirds of the angels did, but they probably weren't even on the earth at that time. The Bible doesn't say whether they were or not.

Going back to Genesis the first chapter again, it was the uniplural God who created the heavens. It should be plural and not one heaven, but "*heavens and the earth;*" and every other translation has it "heavens."

Genesis 1:2 *The earth was [tohu] and [bohu, or decayed condition]; and darkness was upon the face of the deep [or the ocean face]. And the spirit of God moved upon...the waters.*

Psalms 104:30 *Thou sendest forth thy spirit...thou renewest the face of the earth.*

Remember I read you that. All right, here's the Spirit He sends forth; and here is the Word speaking.

Genesis 1:3 *And God said [The One of God that said it was the One who became Christ later. The Word said:], Let there be light: and there was light.*

And light came. The Holy Spirit caused it to come. But it was Christ, before He was ever born as Christ. He was then just the Word. And He said:

Genesis 1:3 *Let there be light: and there was light.*

God's Purpose Through Man

In six days He renewed the face of the earth **for man**. Why was God going to create man? He had created angels. He had set His government over them. His government was gone. Now, God's purpose through man is to recreate Himself, to REPRODUCE HIMSELF! That is the most wonderful, the most great, thing that even God can possibly imagine and undertake to do. And, I want to tell you; God has His hands full trying to do that – trying to make God-persons out of us – because we simply want to go the way of “get” and not the way of cooperate, and give, and help, and love.

We get our feelings hurt. We have feelings, and we have misunderstandings. We just let our little feelings rule us, and run us, all the time. What we need is a little more of the Spirit of God, and the Word of God, and the understanding of God; and then we'd be happier.

Now then, in Genesis, He recreated the earth. And He created then the vegetation, and then the sea life, and then the animal life, and the bird life. And, in verse 25:

***Genesis 1:25-26** God made the beast of the earth **after its kind** , and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after its kind [Cows after the cow-kind, dogs after the dog-kind, elephants after the elephant-kind; and so it goes. And then:] (26) God said, Let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness.*

In other words, “Let's make man **after the God-kind**.” And it didn't say, “Let me.” It's more than one person because the word for “God” there is Elohim; and Elohim is a uniplural, meaning more than one person. That Elohim (more than one person) said, “Let us (not “let me”) make man after OUR kind, in OUR likeness.” Man was formed and shaped like God. So coming over to the 2nd chapter now, in verse 7:

Genesis 2:7 And the [ETERNAL] God...

Now the word “LORD God” comes in, and the word LORD is translated from the Hebrew word Yahweh; and that means Christ, or the One that was the Word. Wherever you see LORD in the Old Testament in capital letters, it nearly always refers to the One who was later born as Christ – or who was the Word that was with God from eternity. There never was a time when They did not exist. Now, the Eternal God or the LORD God...

*Genesis 2:7 ...formed man [Out of what? What did He form man out of? Out...] of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man **became** a living soul.*

Now, a living soul... Man became a living soul. Man was made of the dust of the ground. The dust of the ground **became** a soul. A soul then is physical. It is not a spirit. That says so right there, in very plain language; and yet the whole world has been deceived, thinking a soul is spirit. The soul is physical.

The Two Trees

Now, the Lord planted a garden eastward in Eden. There were two trees there. I’m going to skim over that very, very rapidly because it is very important; but I don’t want to take up too much time, or I won’t get through with this if I’d preach to three o’clock tomorrow. There were two trees in the garden. They were symbolic trees. They represented something very, very important. One was the Tree of Life. That represented the Holy Spirit of God, which imparts divine immortal life. Adam did not have immortal life. He was made of the dust of the ground. The other tree was the Knowledge of Good and Evil. To take of that was to take to themselves the creation of the knowledge, the manufacture of the knowledge, the producing of the knowledge of what is right and what is wrong – what is good and what is

evil. They had to decide.

Now here's duality again entering in right here. The first man was made physical. But man is to be made separate later, spiritual. There's the duality again. He starts physical, and then later he is to be spiritual. The Old Covenant was physical, national, and material. The New Covenant is spiritual. There is a principal of duality that goes through the Bible.

So God told Adam and Eve they could have everything in the garden, except the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. God is the One who reveals the knowledge of what is right and what is wrong. That is SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE. I say there is a Law, which is give, cooperate, help, serve, love your neighbor as yourself. That's God's law. But the first part of that Law is "thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all your heart, mind, and soul, and strength" – even more than yourself, or your neighbor. They usually leave that out too; but that's out-going, not in-coming.

A Human Spirit In Man

God made man to have a mind. Over in... I want to see. I'm not going to turn to it; but in I Corinthians, the second chapter and verse 11:

I Corinthians 2:11 *What man could know the things of a man, save **the spirit of man** which is in him?*

There is a spirit in man; but man is made of the dust of the ground, and that man IS a soul. The soul is not a spirit, but there is a spirit IN that soul.

In man is a brain. That human brain is exactly like the brain of an animal, exactly. The brain of an elephant, the brain of a whale, the brain of a dolphin, is larger than the brain of a man. The brain of a chimpanzee is a little smaller. But they are exactly the same, and they are just as good. They're made of matter; and yet physical brute animals can't have the mental,

intellectual, output of a human at all. They can't do what a human can. They can't think constructively, and they can't think creatively.

What is the difference? Why is man so far superior? There is a spirit in man. And man couldn't have the knowledge that even a man has, except that spirit in him. But I have called it, for lack of a better term... The Bible doesn't say this. It's just my term, for lack of a better one. I call it **a human spirit**.

Now, it is a spirit that is in humans; but it is not matter. It's spirit, but it imparts to the physical brain of a human the power of intellect. An animal doesn't have that spirit, and there's no power of intellect in his mind. Animals have a brain of a kind. They have a certain knowledge. They know certain things. You can train an animal by repeated tricks, and repeated performance, to do certain things. But an animal can't think. An animal can't think constructively and creatively like a human can.

Another Spirit

A human is made in the image of God, and man was made with that spirit; but he was made to need another Spirit – **the Spirit of God**– to go with it. Now get this. This is very important. I'm giving you a good many sermons in one, here this afternoon; so listen carefully. The birth of a human being is an exact type. God is recreating Himself. He is reproducing Himself. Humans are the material He's using to reproduce Himself.

All right, in human reproduction, every one of us was born from a mother. In that mother was an ovum, or you might call it an egg; but it's a little tiny egg no bigger than a pinpoint. But that egg had no life except a very temporary life in itself. That life might have been two or three days. It might have been, I think that there is some latitude for saying it could have been up to 28 days. Doctors disagree about that. I don't know how they know

anyway. But unless that egg is fertilized, and life is imparted to it, and it is energized or given life to by a male sperm cell from a father – it is going to die in a matter of days. It has a temporary life. But it won't go on living longer, unless there is a male sperm added to it. That's the way every one of us was born.

Now then, that is an exact physical type (There again is your duality, the physical type of the spiritual.) where God is creating Himself. Each one of us is an egg. And the little egg is – as small as the period at the end of a sentence in your Bible, or in your newspaper – very small. And the male sperm cell is only one-fiftieth. It would take fifty of them to be the size of that egg. It's the smallest cell in the human body. And that had to have life added to it, or it was going to die.

It immediately joins itself to that ovum, or to that nucleus. The nucleus in the human being, which is an egg cell so to speak, is the brain; and the Spirit comes. The Spirit of God is joined with our spirit in the brain, and then gives us **spiritual knowledge**.

Now then, I quoted a minute ago from I Corinthians the second chapter and verse 11. No man could know or have the knowledge of man except **by the spirit of man**, which is in him. It's in every man, every woman. We have that. Animals do not.

I Corinthians 2:11 Even so [The same sentence, verse 11: In the same manner, or likewise.] no one knows the things of God except [by] the Spirit of God.

He has to receive the Spirit of God to come and join with his spirit, to impregnate him with divine Life; or he can't know spiritual knowledge. He can't know spiritual things. That's why the great commentators have tried to explain every verse in the Bible in their commentaries; and they don't understand it, because they didn't have the Spirit of God. You can only get

the Spirit of God if God has called you, and then by absolute surrender to God; by repentance; and then by receiving the Spirit of God; by your belief in Christ and in God; and in believing what He says as well as believing who and what He is. That's what it is. Now, that's just how important. Adam was made to need the Spirit of God; and, without it, he couldn't understand spiritual knowledge.

What Man Can Do

Now, the law of God that will give you happiness and peace is a **spiritual law**. What's all the trouble in the world for? Why do we have it? What's the cause of all of the troubles we have in this world? Just one thing! Look at the things that man can do. Look at the things that have happened in my lifetime, in this twentieth century.

I was born before the twentieth century, back in 1892. I've seen these things come, and they're mighty things. They're mind-boggling! They're awesome! We send men to the moon and back. We send unmanned spacecraft, that are made right there in Pasadena almost just a short walk from Ambassador College, up to land on Mars. Close up photographs, we send unmanned spacecraft to get close up photographs of Jupiter and of Saturn. And the astronomers say it is mind-boggling.

It's awesome, the things we can do. Look at the wonderful machines man has made. Look at the conveniences we have that man has been able to think out, and invent, and the things that man can do. But every one of those things is physical and material. Man cannot do spiritual things. Man goes to the moon and back safely; and then divorces his wife, or she divorces him. The family is broken up. Why? We do wonderful things. But the wonderful things that man has accomplished are all physical and material. But, when you get into his troubles, he is full of troubles; and he can't solve his troubles.

Why? His troubles are spiritual in nature.

Now I'm saying that in Wall Street Journal ads every week, and I'm reaching the top strata of the heads of great corporations and banks all over the United States in those ads. Right now, we're not in... They have three editions: the east coast, the west coast, and a central edition. We're not in the central edition. But we will be in a few months; and these same ads are going to run there that have already run in the east coast and the west coast. That is, the eastern third of the country and the western third of the country. Now we're going to reach the middle third of the country just a little later, in the Wall Street Journal ads.

And believe you me, they are reading those ads. I don't know whether you get them up here or not. But God has helped me in writing them. It is getting prestige, and they believe whoever-is-writing-those-ads knows something about what he is talking about. And it is making many of the great men, heads of great institutions, begin to think for the first time in their lives about some of these spiritual things. It's about time they begin to think! God has wanted them all reached, and now we're going to reach that audience. I've been reaching kings. We've been reaching prime ministers, and presidents of nations all over the world. Now we've got to reach the so-called 'great and mighty' of the United States, and we're doing it.

Man's Wrong Choice

All right, now then, Adam and Eve could have taken of the Tree of Life; and they would have received the Holy Spirit of God, and then they would have had spiritual knowledge. They would have understood God's spiritual law. They would have lived that way, and they would have had peace and prosperity. They would have all been wealthy.

God is not against wealth. He's not against money. I'm going to have an

ad in the Wall Street Journal: “Money Is Not The Root Of All Evil.” It’s the love of money that is the root of all evil. Not money. The love of it. How you use it. Money is a commodity. It can be used for good. It can be used for evil, depending on how you use it.

Now then, Genesis 3:24, Adam and Eve made the wrong choice. They decided they would take what little knowledge they had, and decide for themselves what is right and wrong. They refused to take of the Holy Spirit that would reveal the spiritual knowledge, of the spiritual law, to them. And so man has not known the way to peace, the way to happiness, the way to prosperity, the way to success. He has never known it. Now over just a page or two here in Genesis, we turn over into Genesis 3 and beginning with verse 22.

Genesis 3:22 *And the [ETERNAL] God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil. [He took of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.] Now , lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever: [He would have gained eternal life; and God didn’t want him to have eternal life living in unhappiness, and misery, and pain, and suffering, and sorrow. So then God said:] (23) Therefore, the [ETERNAL] God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. (24) So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword, which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life [lest they go back, and gain this, and have spiritual knowledge].*

Man was cut off from spiritual knowledge, and that’s why he can’t solve his problems. That is why, right there. He can do wonderful things that are physical and material. But he can’t solve his problems, because they’re spiritual; and it’s a spiritual nature, and a spiritual law.

Now, this all has something to do with the government of God. Adam

had a chance to overcome Satan, to resist Satan, and take God's way, and obey God's law. Satan had rejected the law of God that was the constitution of the government. And now Adam rejected it. Adam could have had it and he could have ruled the world; and all of his own progeny, which is the world, all born from Adam and Eve.

Now, where does that leave us? That leaves us that humanity now was cut off from the Holy Spirit. Satan, through Adam, shut man off from God. Now get that. Man wasn't shut off from God. Man was only shut off from the Holy Spirit. But God didn't shut man off from God. He shut him off from receiving the Holy Spirit so he could have Spirit-knowledge. But Satan has been shutting man off from God for 6,000 years; and he's done a very fine job of that, and he probably pats himself on the back. But God shut man off from the Holy Spirit. God did NOT shut man off from Him. Man shut himself off from God. But God shut man off from the Holy Spirit for a long, long time.

And most men are still shut off from the Holy Spirit. All right, I'm coming to that. Now, just keep that in mind right there. Man could seek God. But, as you read in John 6:44, God would not draw him unless God chose him; and he had to be one of those who are predestinated. But, I won't go into that today. That's another subject. That's a whole sermon or two in itself. But in John 6:44, Jesus is quoted as saying:

John 6:44 No man can come to me except the Father which sent me draw him.

Now get that! God has to **draw** you. By the Holy Spirit, He just draws you to Him. But He isn't drawing people to Him, and He hasn't been since Adam. Man could have sought God. But God is not going to go after and seek man.

God Works With Some Men

All right, we come now to the time of the Flood. On the way, Enoch is the only one mentioned who walked with God. Two can't walk together except they be agreed. So Enoch did agree with God, and he apparently sought after God; and God walked with him. Now, Noah was found also to be righteous in the eyes of God. Noah did not seek God. Now get this! Noah did not seek God, but God sought Noah. And God found that Noah already was righteous, and he was "*perfect in his generations.*" That is, his physical heredity. But he wasn't perfect spiritually. No man has been, but Jesus Christ.

Now there came the Flood. And Noah, and Noah only, was saved because God found he was willing to go God's way. It doesn't say whether Noah had the Holy Spirit or not. But God did use him to keep humanity alive – his wife, their four sons (three sons, rather), and their wives – eight souls altogether.

All right, we don't find much more of anyone seeking God, one way or another, after the Flood. You'd have thought they would have learned their lesson. But they didn't, and they didn't seek God. And God wasn't calling them, and He was not drawing them.

So then we come on to the time of Abraham, in the twelfth chapter of Genesis. God CALLED Abraham. God sought him. He didn't seek God. Now get the difference. Noah had not sought God. God sought him. And Abraham didn't seek God. But God called him and said, "Abraham, I want you to move from where you are, and go to a land I'm going to send you to."

The thing is: Abraham obeyed right away. So Abraham got all of the promises – that are spiritual promises, as well as physical promises – that God made. All of the promises that we get from God come through the promises He made to Abraham. God called Abraham. Abraham obeyed. So

did Isaac. So did Jacob. So did Joseph. And God blessed them all, and they were very wealthy men. They weren't just poor. They were men who accomplished something. They did something, and they became wealthy; and God blessed everything they did.

Now then, we don't find anyone that God called until the time of Moses, 430 years after Abraham. Again, Moses wasn't looking for God. Moses didn't seek God. But God picked out Moses through the burning bush experience. He said, "Moses, take you shoes off your feet. The ground where you are standing is holy ground," because the presence of God was there. That's what made the ground holy.

Moses didn't especially want to lead the children of Israel out of slavery. He protested. He said, "God, I can't do it. I, I, I stutter. You know, I got an impediment of speech." God said, "I'm going to give you your brother, Aaron, to speak for you. I'll take care of that. You're going to do what I tell you to do." And Moses did do it. God worked through Moses, and Aaron was his helper; and they took the children of Israel to the Promised Land. They didn't take them into it, but they took them to it.

On the way, at Mount Sinai, God made them the proposition of becoming His government under the Old Covenant. But that was only a national government; and the only promises God gave them were physical, material, national promises. He did not promise them salvation, or the Holy Spirit, or eternal life. He didn't promise them that they'd have the Holy Spirit, or that they would understand spiritual equations (or principles) so that they could be happy.

But He would give them His law. And without the Holy Spirit, you can't keep the law of God. But they said, "Oh, we will obey everything You say." They were anxious to do it. So they made the deal with God at Mount Sinai, but they did **not** obey. There God established a government on this

earth, but He did not give... He gave them His spiritual law, but He didn't give them the Holy Spirit; and, without the Holy Spirit, they were not able to keep it. They disobeyed God.

God told them in Leviticus 26, if they would obey him, He gave them material promises. "Your land will yield its increase the year around – not just in season, but the year around. You will be the wealthiest nation on earth. You'll be the leading nation. You'll take one hundred. One hundred of you will put ten thousand to flight." That's a very powerful nation that can do that.

That's what God promised, but they didn't obey. That was all conditioned on their obedience, and they did **not** obey. God said, "If you don't do it, I will delay the promises for 2520 years." But God had already made the material promises to Abraham, and God had to keep it. But He said, "I won't keep it in you. I'll keep it in your children, 2520 years later." And that's exactly what God has done. God has done just that.

One Man At A Time

God called or DREW TO HIM, had the power of drawing them to Him and using, one man at a time. He drew Abraham. He drew Moses to Him. After Moses, He drew Joshua to Him; and He used Joshua alone to lead Israel into the Promised Land, or across the Jordan River. After that, they didn't have any real leader. So every man did what was right in his own sight, or eyes. You read in the book of Judges next how, because of their sins, they would become a vassal nation. Some neighboring nation would capture them and come in and rule them.

Then they would cry out to God, and God would listen; and God would send a judge, or a hero, or some leader – **one man at a time**. God only deals through one man at a time. GOD DOES NOT WORK THROUGH

COMMITTEES. God works through ONE MAN AT A TIME. I want you to notice it as we go along now. Let's understand the way of God. The world has not understood it. So God worked through one judge at a time.

Then we come to the prophet, Samuel; and God was ruling Israel through Samuel. In the eighth chapter of Samuel you'll find the people wanted a king, like other nations. They didn't want God to rule them. God says, "They haven't rejected you, Samuel. They've rejected Me; that I shouldn't rule them, because I was really ruling them through you." Samuel was the man God was using, but it was God's rule. God said, "They rejected Me that I should not rule them." Go back and read it, in the eighth chapter of Samuel.

Then came David, and God drew him and worked with him. He had a lot of trouble with David. David did a lot of wrong things. He disobeyed God once or twice, or three times – and pretty badly too, as bad as any of us ever did. But he repented, and God's mercy was good. David was a man after God's own heart.

Then the prophets; and only the prophets of the Old Testament had the Spirit of God, but God did draw them. God did not draw the rest of the world. The rest of the world could have sought God; but it didn't, because Satan... Well, you read of it in... Let's see, it's II Corinthians. Is it third chapter fourth verse, or fourth chapter? Somewhere there: how Satan has blinded the world that they can't see these things, and they don't look to God.

Why The Second Adam?

All right, now we come to one man again – the second Adam, or Jesus Christ. Now we're coming right along in God's Plan for human beings, to reproduce Himself. God shut humans off for a time and let them be ruled by Satan to learn that that way doesn't pay! For 6000 years, men have been

living Satan's way instead of the way of God's law. And look at the unhappiness, and look at the misery, and the suffering in this world. That's what has happened.

Now, why the second Adam? All right, I won't take time to read it; but, in Isaiah 7:14, it says that to the children of Israel (that nation, which didn't have the Holy Spirit) that from them would be born a Son and the government would be on His shoulders. He would come and rule the government; and of His Kingdom there would be no end, and He would bring peace. His Kingdom and peace, there would be no end. That's Isaiah 7. No, that's Isaiah 9 verses 6 and 7. I beg your pardon.

You find that God said there that He was going to send Christ; and that Christ would be born as a human being, as a baby. That He was coming as a RULER to rule the government, and it's all about government. It all is a matter that Lucifer rejected the government of God, and bolted; and the government of God was taken away from the earth. Now, here's the government of God again. God is going to send Jesus; and He is going to have the government, and rule, and bring peace because it's the way of God's law.

Now, in Isaiah 7:14, a virgin was to conceive, and bear a Son; and His name to be called Immanuel. In Matthew 1, you read how the angel said to Joseph that his engaged fiance/wife was to be pregnant from the Holy Spirit of God, and not from a man. But God would be the Father of the Son that would be born. Mary would be His mother. So He would be human through Mary; but He would be also divine and be God, through God, because God sired Him. God sired, fathered, Him. No human man ever did.

Now those are prophecies for the coming of Christ. Why did Christ come? In Matthew, which is quoting from Isaiah 7:14, it says that He would be a Savior and save His people from their sins. Christ was coming for **two**

main reasons: one, to restore the government of God in the Kingdom of God; and, the other reason, to be a Savior and save people from their sins and give people immortal life. Those are the two reasons. There's duality again, two reasons why Christ was to come.

Pouring Out Of God's Spirit

All right, now there's another prophecy for the people. Not referring to what would happen to Christ, but to the people. That's in Joel 2:28. I think I just better just read that one, Joel 2:28.

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh.

Now remember: God had closed His Spirit from human reach, ability I should say. In other words, humans could not reach the Holy Spirit of God. God shut the Holy Spirit off from people. He didn't shut Himself off, but He shut off the Holy Spirit. Now, Joel prophesied that the time would come later that God would pour out his Holy Spirit upon all flesh.

Joel 2:28-29 And your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: (29) And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit.

So there is a time coming when God will start pouring out His spirit on human beings.

Back in Genesis, in the third chapter (the last three verses, or four verses), I showed you how God closed up the Holy Spirit so man couldn't get to it. Now there's a prophecy of a time coming that God will open up the Holy Spirit. Notice this prophecy.

Joel 2:30-31 And I will show wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. (31) The sun will be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come.

Now that is referring to the Day of the Lord, and that comes after the Great Tribulation. That's all ahead of us yet. That hasn't happened yet. But there is a duality in that even, the pouring out of His Spirit on all flesh. All right, now just keep that as we go along up to the next point – on the Day of Pentecost.

Gospel Of The Kingdom

Jesus came and preached the gospel of the Kingdom of God. Jesus didn't say, "Please accept Me as your Savior." He didn't come on a soul-saving crusade. Maybe Billy Graham thinks He did, but He didn't. He came announcing the coming Kingdom of God; and He came saying, "Repent." John the Baptist prepared the way before Him. And John the Baptist said, "Repent, and obey the law of God." to establish the law which is the basis of the government of God. All goes back to the government of God again.

People don't want anything to do with the government of God. They say, "Oh, the law is done away." All the Protestant churches and the Catholic Church all teach that. **YOUR BIBLE DOES NOT TEACH THAT.** God does not say that. But people don't believe God. They believe man – man organized into the Catholic Church; man organized into the Methodist Church; man organized into the Baptist churches, and so on.

Men believe other men. They don't believe God. I show people what God says; and they say, "Oh well, I'm STILL going to believe what I've been brought up to believe." They don't want to believe God. Adam and Eve didn't believe God. God talked to them in person. They didn't believe Him.

Jesus came and preached to many, many thousands. Twice there were 5,000 men; and that didn't count the women, and children that were there. How many thousands heard Him? (Probably two or three hundred thousand, all together, in the three and a half years.) How many believed what He said? One hundred and twenty, Acts one verse fifteen. One hundred twenty – all that believed the very Creator Himself, the One by whom God created all things. They didn't believe what He said. That was the voice of God speaking. They didn't believe Him.

They wouldn't believe Him today. I represent Him, and I speak for Him. They don't believe it. Oh no, they want to believe whatever men have been teaching; and that's the world we live in. That's why this world is so sick today.

Well, Jesus proclaimed the gospel of the Kingdom. Now, while Jesus was here, He said only those drawn could come to Him. He said:

John 6:44 *No man can come to me [No man can!], except the Father which hath sent me draw him.*

And, you see, very few did. They didn't believe Him. Many believed on Him, but they tried to kill him because they didn't believe what He said. You read that in John the eighth chapter, beginning with verse 30, John 8 beginning with verse 30. You'll have to read about the next 15 verses, and you'll see that they didn't believe what He said; and they wanted to kill Him. But they believed ON Him. Oh yes, many believe ON Christ today; but they're no more saved than a rat, or a guinea pig, or anything else.

Now, Jesus came proclaiming the Kingdom of God. Turn now to Mark the first chapter, verse one:

Mark 1:1 *The beginning of the gospel OF Jesus Christ, the Son of God.*

Then it talks about John the Baptist, who came to prepare the way before him – before His first coming. Then in verse 14:

Mark 1:14 *Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel...*

But, what gospel? What gospel do they preach today? They preach a gospel that Jesus is the Christ. That's all! But He came as a messenger, sent from God with a message. They don't preach that message! I do, but they don't. Notice now:

Mark 1:15 *And saying, The time...*

Now, wait a minute.

Mark 1:14-15 *Preaching the gospel [What gospel? The gospel...] of the kingdom of God, (15) and saying, The time is fulfilled...*

It is fulfilled because He had just conquered Satan. Satan is the one who sat on the throne of the world. Satan was ruling. Adam hadn't conquered Satan. Every other man obeyed Satan, except the few that God had called and drawn to Him.

Christ was tempted terribly of Satan, but Christ withstood him. And Christ obeyed God and rejected Satan's way of "get" and obeyed God's way of "love." He qualified now to reestablish the government of God, which had been taken away. So He came preaching the gospel of the government – the Kingdom of God, the Family of God that will rule the government of God and re-establish the government that God set on this earth under Lucifer.

Now:

Mark 1:15 *...saying, the time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: REPENT ye, AND BELIEVE the gospel.*

The Day Of Pentecost

He called on them to repent. They didn't; but a few, one hundred twenty, did. But now then, I read to you something in Joel. Remember? All right, on the Day of Pentecost, that 120 were there; and the Holy Spirit came and filled them with the Holy Spirit. On the Day of Pentecost, (after Jesus had been preaching and bodily ascended up to heaven)... Now we're going right along in the time sequence here; and others came rushing in, and they said, "What a wonderful thing has happened!" You see they **saw** the Holy Spirit, like flames of fire, sitting on each one. They **heard** a roaring sound, like many waters. They heard the Holy Spirit.

Pentecostal people don't do anything like that. Pentecost happened only once. It's not happening again. And the Pentecostal people don't want to obey the government and the law of God. They just want to have a good time. They like to shout, and say, "Glory, Glory, Hallelujah. Praise You, Jesus" and all that kind of thing. And there are times when we ought to say that, and maybe we ought to do a little more of that. But they just do it because they go on a spiritual drunk, so to speak.

All right, let's go right on now. He came preaching the Kingdom, or the government, of God. That is the government that Lucifer was set here for; that Adam refused to take; and now Christ had qualified to take it, and came preaching about it. The government of God is based on the law of God, the way of God. And He called people to repent, and turn to the WAY OF THE LAW OF GOD. That's what Jesus did.

All right then, the prophecy of Joel was fulfilled on that Day of Pentecost. Thousands of people came running in. They were all curious because they were speaking in various languages. It wasn't the kind of "tongues" people speak in today. Every man heard them (the 120) speak his language. The Greek heard them speaking Greek. The Parthian heard them

speaking the Parthian language. And so it went. It was in the hearing more than it was in the speaking actually. There is no “tongues speaking” like that going on today. Never has been since, never.

So those in the first century now were **drawn**. On that Day of Pentecost, 3000 were baptized. Peter preached a sermon. They were pricked in their hearts. God began to draw them. God was now... Remember He said, *“I will pour out of my spirit on all flesh.”* All right, there’s a duality of that. Now He’s doing it to a certain number, beginning on the Day of Pentecost. He will do it to ALL FLESH when the Devil is taken away, after Christ comes and the Millennium begins.

But, He didn’t do it for everybody then. It was just certain ones that were really sincere Jewish people that came there at that time, and there were 3000 of them baptized that day because Peter said, “Repent.” They said, *“Men...what shall we do?”* when Peter preached his sermon. Peter says, “Repent and be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ, and you shall be saved.”

But being baptized, you’re baptized into the death, the burial, and the resurrection of Christ. Going down into the water is going down into the grave; being buried is into the grave; coming up, the resurrection. It’s a type of believing in Christ, and His crucifixion, and His shed blood for the payment of our sins. So Peter said in effect then, “Repent and believe.” Repentance and belief are the two conditions. There again twin conditions, two, for receiving the Holy Spirit.

Now the Holy Spirit came on them. A day or so later, there were 2000 more converted when Peter had healed the cripple at the Beautiful Gate of the temple, and so on. That is only a type of what is going to happen in the Millennium. But God began now to call certain people **into His Church**. Jesus has said, *“I will build my church.”* And He did. Now those in the first century were DRAWN. Many called, but few were chosen and actually

drawn.

Apostles Preach The Gospel

All right, back to the apostles. Why did God choose twelve apostles? Because they were witnesses, eye witnesses, of the resurrection of Jesus. They had been with Him 3 1/2 years, and then they were with him 40 days after the resurrection. The apostles went out; and, while they preached the gospel of the Kingdom, they put emphasis on preaching that Jesus was the Christ. Why? Because the Jews at that time would not accept that Jesus was the Christ. That was the opposition. The opposition was against Jesus being the divine Christ, and so the apostles preached that primarily.

Now after a little while you don't hear anymore of Peter, and John, and James, and the original twelve apostles; but everything is the apostle Paul as you go through the book of Acts, and you get over a few chapters. Why is that? There are two places where you find that Jesus said He was only sent to 'the lost sheep of the house of Israel' (and they were over in Western Europe and in Britain at that time). He sent and He said to the twelve, "Don't go to anybody but the lost sheep of the house of Israel," and they were not there. It was only Jews who were there; and 'the lost sheep of the house of Israel' were not Jews, believe it or not. Now, you need to read our book on *The United States And Britain In Prophecy*, if you want to understand that. I can't go into all that, naturally, this afternoon.

Well now, the apostles were witnesses of the resurrection; but they did also preach the gospel of the Kingdom. And it was... Let me see. It was Phillip that went up to Samaria, a Gentile community; and he preached. When they preached the things concerning the Kingdom of God, they all believed and they were baptized, and so on.

The True Gospel Suppressed

Now then, I'd like to have you turn next to Galatians, Galatians the first chapter. I thought I had it all marked out there. Here we are, the first chapter. In 53 AD Paul was writing to the Churches up in Galatia, a number of Churches up there. That is Turkey today. He said:

***Galatians 1:6-7** I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto **another gospel**. [They were suppressing the gospel. They were preaching a different gospel, but the gospel they preached was not really a gospel. He said:] (7) *which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.**

So the gospel was being perverted and counterfeited, and they were preaching a different gospel; and the true gospel of Jesus Christ was being subverted at that time.

Now then, in II Corinthians, the eleventh chapter; and you will notice here beginning with verse three, where Paul said to the Church of Corinth:

***II Corinthians 11:3-4** I fear [Now this is along in the middle of the first century. Several, oh 20 years or more after the Church began. "I fear...], lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ. (4) For if he that comes [Now, a preacher is coming. Paul had some opposition. "If he that cometh...] preacheth another Jesus [They did. They preached a Jesus that came and did away with His Father's law, where Jesus said, "I have kept My Father's law" and so commanded us to do the same thing.] whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which you have not received, or **another gospel** [You see, there was a different gospel being preached. The main gospel of Christ was being suppressed.], *which ye have not accepted, ye**

might well bear with it.

Then he goes on talking about these false apostles that were preaching a different gospel and suppressing the true gospel. Then we notice here, coming into verse thirteen:

II Corinthians 11:13-15 *For such are false apostles [that were preaching these other gospels], deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. (14) And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. (15) Therefore it is no great thing if his [Satan's] ministers [the ministers of Satan, professing to be the ministers of Christ]...*

That's what's going on today, my brethren! People are so blinded, and so deceived. They don't know it, and they don't want to know it. They want to go on believing it.

II Corinthians 11:15 *Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers [Satan's ministers] also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.*

So you see there, they were going on with a false gospel.

Jesus' Prophecy In Matthew 24

Now Jesus' prophecy begins to show what they were doing. And Jesus' prophecy we find now in Matthew 24. Matthew 24, you'll find it also in Mark 13 and Luke 21; but I'll take Matthew 24, which we always have used. It's a bit more explicit. (I had it, and I'm trying to find somewhere else.) All right, let's begin at the first. I want you to get the several verses of this.

Matthew 24:1-2 *And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to show him the buildings of the temple.*

[Now notice what they were talking about, the buildings of the temple.] (2) *And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.*

The temple is going to be destroyed, and its stones all thrown down. It was built out of great massive stones. Now later:

Matthew 24:3 *As he sat on the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be?*

What? He'd been talking about the temple that they'd shown Him, and He said it would be destroyed. Actually that happened in 70 AD, which was several years later than they were taking there.

Matthew 24:3 *Tell us, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?*

Or, the end of this world. The end of this age, this time. It doesn't mean the end of the earth. It doesn't say the end of the earth.

Now, they asked Him two things. When will the buildings of the temple be thrown down? And when will You be coming back to earth again to rule? Those things would actually be happening 1900 years and some apart. So notice how Jesus began to answer. They first asked Him about things in their lifetime, and He begins answering about things in their lifetime. "*And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples.*" No, I read that.

Matthew 24:4-5 *And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.* [That was them right there, at that time. The disciples He was talking to.] (5) *For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.*

Many would come preaching JESUS was the Christ. He didn't say

many would come saying they are Christ. Jesus said, “Many would come saying I, Jesus, am the Christ. But they would be deceiving the world, because they will say that I have done away with the Father’s law. They won’t preach the gospel of the Kingdom. They’ll say the Kingdom is the Church.” Some say the Kingdom of God is the British Empire. Well, that’s all gone now; and they were all wrong about that.

Now, just a few verses on down:

Matthew 24:14 *And this gospel of the kingdom [The **gospel of the Kingdom of God**, which they were doing away with. “This gospel of the kingdom”] shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations: and then shall the end come [the end of this world].*

That’s the time of Christ coming, when the gospel of the Kingdom is preached. I call you to witness, my friends, my brethren up here in Seattle: The gospel of the Kingdom you never heard until you heard it from me. Until this Church began preaching the gospel of the Kingdom, it was not preached; and no one else is preaching it today! And you can’t gainsay that because that happens to be an actual fact; and here are the very words of Jesus Christ. But people don’t believe Christ, do they? It’s about time that we do.

After that, what’s going to follow? The Great Tribulation, and then the Day of the Lord, and those things. Now, that’s coming right up. The gospel of the Kingdom is to be preached **JUST BEFORE** the Great Tribulation and the Day of the Lord is going to come. If you read on through that chapter, you’ll find those things are described next. The Great Tribulation, verses 21 and 22. I want you to get one point here.

Matthew 24:21-22 *For then [a little later than now] shall be **great tribulation** , such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. [A time of trouble, greater trouble than ever happened since the beginning of the world or ever shall happen again.] (22) And except*

those days should be shortened, [And cut short by God is what he's talking about.] there should no flesh be saved [And he means not spiritually saved, but physically saved. "No flesh should be saved ALIVE" another translation has it. No human being, no human flesh, should be saved alive.]: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

It's down at the first... The first time, brethren, ever in the history of the world now, the WEAPONS OF MASS DESTRUCTION exist that can wipe out ALL HUMANITY. And there won't be a man, woman, or child left alive on the face of the earth. What's it talking about? What is the time? Are we at that time or aren't we? Was that possible 100 years ago? That wasn't possible when I was a young man. That wasn't possible when I began preaching, but it is possible today. You bet it's possible.

"I Will Send My Messenger"

Now there are a few prophecies about the gospel of the Kingdom being preached now at this time. I wonder if I have time? I haven't got to the main things I want to talk to you about yet. Oh boy, our time's almost up. Can we go on a little longer, Mr. Luker? We don't have to get out or vacate the auditorium? You want a two-minute rest? Would you like it, before we go on? I've got a lot more. I'm coming to the main thing that I want you to get. Would you all like to rise, and just stretch just a little bit? I think I'll rest you a little. In fact, I'd like a little myself. (Oh, yes. Thank you, Denny.)

I really have quite a little more. I'm really trying to get about three sermons in today here. But I don't get up here very often. This is the first time in years. I see all kinds of new downtown buildings that weren't here last time I was here. All right now, let's go right along.

There are prophecies regarding the preaching of the gospel of the Kingdom at this time; and then there is to be a bride ready to meet Him when

He comes, because He's going to marry the Church. That Church has to be raised up. All right, I'd like for you to turn back. This is something I would never have preached to you even two years ago. I certainly couldn't have preached it to you 20 or 30 years ago, and many of you have heard me preach a lot longer than that. Let's go back now to Malachi, the last book in the Old Testament, in the third chapter of Malachi verse one, Malachi 3.

Malachi 3:1 Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me [Now the Word is speaking there, and that is the One who became Christ later. Well, he was to prepare the way before Christ, and he did prepare the way before Christ's first coming.]: *and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple...*

He's coming TO HIS TEMPLE. I want you to get that. Jesus Christ came to the temple that was built by... Oh, why can't I think of his name? I'm going to read it to you in a few minutes in Haggai. Anyway, it's a name I know so well. It just sticks when I want to say it. Zerubbabel, I mean. Zerubbabel built the temple to which Jesus came. The temple of Solomon was destroyed. Zerubbabel's temple followed that, but it was destroyed in 70 AD. Now then:

Malachi 3:1 ...[He] shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant [Christ is the Messenger of the New Covenant.], *whom ye delight in: behold he shall come, saith the LORD of hosts.*

Now then: You read in the New Testament in a few places where it indicates that John the Baptist was the messenger that prepared the way before Christ, don't you? Some one asked John the Baptist... Well, that's about Elijah. I'm coming to that later. Let's just leave that. But, look here, John the Baptist prepared the way before His coming. But if we read on, notice what it's talking about; and that's the next verse. Just keep right on now.

Malachi 3:2-3 But who may abide the day of his coming? [WHAT COMING is it talking about here? Read on; don't stop at that first verse, read on. "Who may abide the day of His coming?"] And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap. (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi.

That's sitting on a throne. That's RULING. He didn't rule the first time He came. He didn't do these things when He came. This is talking about **His Second Coming**. This is talking about what He's going to do when He comes again. He shall sit, as He's going to sit on a throne:

Malachi 3:3-4 ...sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the [ETERNAL] an offering in righteousness. (4) Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the LORD.

That didn't happen when He came the first time. That is talking about someone coming to prepare the way for THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST.

All right, now listen, here's duality once again. There was the first, physical; the second, spiritual. John the Baptist was in the **physical wilderness** of the Jordan River, preparing the way for the coming of the **physical human Jesus coming to His physical temple made of stone**. And He came for what purpose? He came to His physical people, Judah; and He came to proclaim that some day He would set up the Kingdom of God. But He didn't set it up. That was A TYPE of the spiritual, of the Second Coming of Christ, when His work would be not in the physical wilderness of the Jordan River but the **spiritual wilderness** of the whole world – a world that is in a spiritual Babylon. And preparing the way for a **glorified spiritual Christ** – coming with many crowns, as King of Kings and Lord of Lords,

with His face shining like the very sun in full strength; and coming to **His spiritual temple** (not to a physical temple made of stone).

The Temple Christ Will Return To

Everybody's wondering what temple is Christ coming to? Are the Jews going to build another temple over there? Oh, poppycock! I'll show you the temple He's coming to! YOU, BRETHREN, ARE THAT TEMPLE; and all the rest of us. I had a crowd, just about this size, over in the Philippines just about 3 or 4 weeks ago. I had a crowd about this size in London about (When was that?) maybe two months now. I don't know. Time flies so fast. We're all over the world. But I'm going to show you that. Now, let's go on a little bit further. Well, let's turn over to the next chapter now; of Malachi, the fourth chapter, beginning with verse five.

Malachi 4:5 Behold, [He's talking about the time at the very end of the whole world, and the time at the end of the Millennium even; and they're all part of the fourth chapter. But the fourth chapter, verse five: "Behold,"] I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD.

Now, here again, just before the Day of the Lord – when the gospel of the Kingdom is to be preached to the world. And it hasn't been preached for 1950 years. In fact, it was one century of time cycles (or 1900 years) when it began. Exactly, if that means anything to you; and if it not, well, Mr.... What'd you call him? I can't think of names when I want to. Uh...

Malachi 4:5-6 ...before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. (6) And he shall turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.

The word “curse” is used in the Hebrew language; otherwise translated as total destruction, utter total destruction. It’s just before **lest** He does that, and the earth would be in total destruction if Christ didn’t come.

Now then, John the Baptist was asked, “Are you the Elijah that was to come?” He said, “No, I am not.” I have been asked, “Are you Elijah?” And I have said, “No, I am not.” Jesus Christ said one time, “But if you will bear it, the Elijah has already come.” Then they questioned Him a little further. And then Jesus Christ said Elijah in person, the same Elijah, didn’t come. But John the Baptist came **in the power and spirit of Elijah**. That prophecy meant and referred to John the Baptist coming, but that was only the First Coming.

The prophecy is someone to prepare the way for the Second Coming. The first was physical – the physical Jesus coming to the physical temple, to a physical people. Someone to prepare the way for the Second Coming is preparing the way for THE SPIRITUAL CHRIST to come to HIS SPIRITUAL TEMPLE for the marriage of the Lamb (of Christ) with the Church; and **the Church is that temple!**

Now just a minute, I want to turn back over... I was going to show you that, in Ephesians the second chapter. Give me just a second here to get to it. I ran out of markers to mark it, to turn me right to what I want right away; but here we are. Now, let me read this in Ephesians the second chapter, near the end of it.

***Ephesians 2:19-21** Now therefore you [You people up at Ephesus, who were born Gentiles. You...] are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God. [Now they are citizens. That is like a country. But they are in a household. That is, a family. Notice, they are a family.] (20) And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone*

[They're the Church.]; (21) *in whom all the building fitly framed together*
[The Church is a building fitly framed together.] *groweth unto A HOLY*
TEMPLE IN THE LORD.

“Grows into a holy temple in the Lord.” THE CHURCH IS THAT
TEMPLE. The Church is to meet Christ in the air. The Church will be
changed from human to divine. We won't be human beings. We'll be God-
beings. We'll be God-persons, just like God is. GOD IS REPRODUCING
HIMSELF. Now that temple has to be built for Christ's coming.

Zerubbabel As A Type

Now let me show you another prophecy about building that temple.
Let's go back now for just a moment in the Old Testament, to Haggai; Haggai
the second chapter beginning with verse three. Now, I want you to notice the
time he's talking about. This is a prophecy; and **duality** is here again (a first
and a latter; a first and a second). Notice it now.

Haggai 2:3 Who is left among you...

This is not a history, but it's talking about the time when they were
building the temple to which Christ came the first time. Zerubbabel was a
governor of the colony, and he was sent there to build that temple.

Haggai 2:3-9 Who is left among you that saw this house in her first
glory? [It's talking about Solomon's temple that was so glorious as a physical
temple.] And how do ye see it now? Is it not in your eyes in comparison of it
as nothing? (4) Yet now be strong, O Zerubbabel [The second temple was
like nothing compared to Solomon's. It was bigger, but it was not as fine.
Now "Be strong, O Zerubbabel"], saith the [ETERNAL]; and be strong, O
Joshua, son of [Well, his father; and so on.] ...and work : for I am with you,
saith the LORD [That is, work in building the temple.]... (5) According to

*the word that I covenanted with you when ye came out of Egypt, so my spirit remaineth among you: fear ye not. (6) For thus saith the LORD of hosts: Yet once, it is a little while, and I WILL shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land; (7) and I will shake all nations; and the desire of all nations shall come [Meaning, peace which will come with Christ.]; and I will fill this house with glory, saith the LORD of hosts. (8). The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the LORD of hosts. (9) THE GLORY OF THIS LATTER HOUSE SHALL BE **GREATER** THAN OF THE FORMER...*

The glory of the house he was building was NOT ANYWHERE NEAR as glorious as the former temple of Solomon. But he's talking about a time when the thrones of nations will be destroyed; when God is going to shake the earth, and shake nations. He's talking about our time, now. **He's talking about the Second Coming of Christ.** Can you see that? He's not... It's a prophecy. It's not a history.

***Malachi 2:9** ...and in this place will I give peace, saith the LORD of hosts.*

He hasn't given that yet; but He will, at the time He's talking about. Now, He's talking of a time of building the temple for Christ to come to. That temple is a spiritual temple. Zerubbabel was a TYPE. He built the physical temple to which Christ came the first time. Someone has got to be, not in the physical wilderness of the Jordan River, but amidst the spiritual wilderness and Babylon of religious confusion of our twentieth century, who is paving the way for the Second Coming of Christ to HIS GLORIOUS TEMPLE, a **spiritual temple**; and not to proclaim the coming of the Kingdom of God, but TO SET UP THE KINGDOM OF GOD and to rule it right then and there.

Brethren, I would never have preached that to you even one year ago. But how do we know whether anything is true or not? Jesus says **by their**

fruits you know! What are the fruits? HAS ALL OF THIS BEEN DONE? IF IT HAS BEEN DONE, YOU KNOW! **YOU ARE THAT TEMPLE. GOD HAS BEEN USING ME TO BUILD THIS TEMPLE.** I've said I hope that I am the one of which Zerubbabel was a type, because it says that this the word unto Zerubbabel (in Zechariah):

***Zechariah 4:6** Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the [ETERNAL].*

And, anyway, it says that... It really indicates that anyway, if I can keep fulfilling that, then I'll go on living until it has happened. I don't know anyone who is doing the kind of job that I am at my age. I don't know of that.

And I tell you, brethren; and I'm just going to pause right here and say one thing. There is one thing I fear. There is one thing. The Attorney General of California made a mistake. If instead of accusing us of stealing millions of dollars of Church money, which he couldn't prove and which never happened; and, when they got in, they found the best accounting system they've ever found. We simply hired the biggest, most responsible, firm of C.P.A.s in the United States (and the one that has...the biggest in the United States) to go over our records and our books; and they found that everything was perfect. They had nothing. They couldn't prove a thing because it hadn't happened. But if they had said **BECAUSE OF MY AGE** that I am senile and not fit to go on with this Work, and tried to put me in prison or to put me in some institution, **THEY COULD HAVE GOTTEN AWAY WITH IT.** And I have to **FEAR THAT VERY THING** right now. Does that make sense to you?

Who is doing a job like this? Who's writing, and turning out the amount of writing that I am, at this age? I don't know anyone, and I don't think you do. **BUT THIS IS THE WORK OF THE LIVING ALMIGHTY GOD!** **IT'S NOT MY WORK!** It isn't anything I wanted. It isn't something I chose and put myself in for. I tried to run the other way, and I want to get to that.

Called And Prepared

I want to tell you how God brought me in here. I would like to tell you now. I don't know that I should take the time; but I want to... I'll try to cut this very short. Back in 1926, I was challenged. The wife of my youth and I had only been married nine years at that time. If she'd lived, we would have been married 50 years. Our marriage was cut short by death, the only way I believe in a marriage being cut short. (That was now almost fourteen years ago.) But she had come to see in the Bible that she ought to keep the Sabbath. To me that was fanaticism taught by the Seventh Day Adventists, who were a way out fanatical group anyway. I didn't know anything about them at that time. [***Unclear at 1:56:25.*] Well, I thought a lot of things I don't think any more, as far as that is concerned, too.

However, I was not able to talk her out of it; and the only way I could do... I said, "The Bible says 'You shall keep Sunday.'" Well, she says, "If it does, show me; and I'll go back and keep Sunday again." Well, I said, "I don't know. I've never studied the Bible." And, well, she said, "If it's there, you go and find it. Maybe that's the only way you're going to get me back to it." Finally, I loved my wife and she loved me; and I was challenged to study the Bible.

I was challenged on evolution. I researched all the works of Darwin, Huxley, Haekel, all of those people, Lamarck, and others before Darwin even; then the great evolutionists since then, Donald Chamberlin, and others of that time. Of course, that's going back to 1926 now. Their arguments are so good that, the first thing I knew, my head was swimming. I said, "Well, I don't even know whether there is a God. If evolution is true, there isn't any God. You can't believe in evolution and believe in God at the same time." And that's true, you can't; not unless you want to trust the purists, you can't do it. I had to admit that I had always believed in God, but I had never proved

it. I went into a deep research, in-depth research, day and night. Often at one thirty in the morning, my wife would call and say, “Aren’t you coming to bed?” Well, I had the most intense research for that six months I’ve ever had in my life.

Now, I want to show you God had prepared me before. When I was a young man, aged 28, I was making what in today’s dollar value would be \$200,000 a year. How many men at 28 are making \$200,000 a year today? I was doing pretty well. But I was kind of cocky and pretty well stuck on myself. I had to get over that, and I hope I did. I had to be humbled, and God really humbled me. Let me tell you, He did. But I had to learn to write. I had been writing advertising. I had been writing articles in national magazines, and I was prepared as a writer; and I was prepared as a speaker, and I had spoken before businessmen’s groups. And I was the one who founded and started the idea of surveys of public opinion as the Gallup poll, the Harris poll, and all those polls. (Excuse me.) Those polls are used today. I made the first one in 1915 in Richmond, Kentucky – a survey published in a national magazine. Advertising agencies caught on to it, and then magazines even; and they began taking polls in election campaigns, but they don’t know how to do it properly. I could tell them how, because I originated it.

Now, God called me. I was questioned and challenged on a point of the law of God, the foundation of the government of God. Do you get the point now? Let’s go a little further. I began to read the Bible. I proved that God exists. I proved that the Bible is the Word of God, and that it is **infallible** in its original writings. And one thing that proved it to me was I found the promises God made to Abraham; and I found that the United States is Manasseh, one of the lost ten tribes. That is one of the most amazing things! And you get it in our booklet. Our booklet was written about 50 years ago. You can get it yet. Many of you have read it. The last is updated. I had a few little mistakes in it originally, just the little ones that didn’t make much

difference. We've corrected those. I think it's pretty well puncture-proof today.

Well anyway. I was challenged on a point of the law of God, the very foundation of the government of God. Now Jesus says the way of the Kingdom of God is to repent. I did. But I learned about the holy days. I not only learned about the Sabbath, but I found if we keep the weekly Sabbath the way... [***Gap at 2:01:59.*] ...and we did it, because I saw that the last thing...

I really didn't want to keep the Sabbath. And I found something, a booklet, an ex-Seventh Day Adventist had written against the Sabbath; and he claimed that Colossians 2:16 was not the Sabbath. Well, I found that it talks about the annual holy days. Then I proved that it doesn't do away with any of the days whatsoever. Don't let anyone judge you in respect to **what we do on those days**. That's all it's talking about. I went to the original Greek words, and got the original meaning. I saw that we had to keep the annual holy days if we keep the Sabbath. Who else does that? No other church on earth does that!

Now, the book of Revelation; I went into that. I went back into Daniel 2:45, or 2:44, about the Kingdom of God that would be set up. Then in Daniel 7, and where the saints are going to inherit the Kingdom of God. I learned about the Kingdom and the government of God, before I was even baptized, while I was studying whether I was even going to keep the Sabbath or not. I saw from II Peter 2:4, which I read to you earlier, that the angels had sinned. I looked into that, and I found out all about the angels that I've told you today. I found that before I was even baptized. And I got to prove about the government of God, the law of God. I got **the things that count** that God wanted proclaimed today about the Kingdom of God. Then about Lucifer, who became Satan (in Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28). All of this during my conversion, you might say. In six months, my studies had led to it; and

learning about Christ's Coming.

[***Tape garbled at 2:04:06.*]

I saw, in John the third chapter, where no man is ever going to heaven; and no man ever did. Jesus said so; and I got the proof of that, and the proof of the Millennium and the Kingdom of God on earth. Now even the Church of God at that time didn't know those things. God prepared me and gave me these things. Revelation 2:26, Revelation 5:10, we're going to reign on the earth. The Adventists say we're going to reign up in heaven. Revelation 20:1-4, how we'll be ruling on the earth. All of those things God taught me in those early days.

I took a whole sermon to show how and what I was taught, and what I came to see. Not by what men taught me. I gave up what men had taught me. I found it IN THIS BOOK, and I know of no one else who believes it. It is in plain language; and I said, 'I believe what God said.' Adam and Eve didn't believe what God said. The people didn't believe what Christ said when they heard Him. I proved this is what God said, and I did begin to believe it. I began to **tremble** at this Word. Now, I'm no better than anybody else. I've been a sinner, saved by grace. And any of you that say you're not, you're just lying because we all are. Everybody who ever lived has sinned, except Jesus Christ. But I know where my heart is, and God knows; and He has called me, and has used me.

What Is "The Work"?

Now, what is the Work? The Work started out once I was converted. [***Unclear at 2:06:14.*] Then I started with little booklets. They weren't ordinary little tracts, but they were booklets that amounted to something. And the Work came on. It goes out on the air, and it goes out in print. You all know, many people tell me they can hardly keep up reading it. How do I find time to write it? I don't know myself; but I do, because it's not my Work. It's

not a human Work! IT'S THE WORK OF ALMIGHTY GOD! HE IS THE ONE THAT EMPOWERS ME!

I felt I wasn't able even to come and talk to you today. But God has given me the strength to talk to you, and He always does. THIS IS THE WORK OF THE LIVING GOD. IT'S A SPIRITUAL WORK. Now, the Work is getting the gospel to the world. Who's getting the gospel to the world? Who's proclaiming? Who does the television program today? Who does the radio program? I did two more television programs this week. I haven't recovered yet from the jet lag of our last trip over to the Philippines, or I would have done four television programs this week. I really did three; but one I thought wasn't very up to standard, and we're going to throw it away. I expect to do four next week, if you will all pray for me that I get my sleep so I can have the strength to do it. That's what it's going to take. But it's that, and it's the writing; and that is what is doing the Work.

God adds to the Church such as He wants saved. I don't bring you in. I didn't ask any of you to come into the Church. You came to us. I didn't come to you. I didn't try to talk you into it. God set you into the Work. God called you. God drew you! I didn't. It isn't a case of some human being doing it. It's divine, and it's God drawing. God drew you. But I have the responsibility of seeing that you are fed; and I have been used by God in establishing Ambassador College, to train the ministers that do feed you. I trained Denny Luker down there. I remember the time when he had never led a song service yet. One day I didn't see anyone, and when it was time to begin, I said "Denny, you get up here and lead the songs." You remember that, Denny? He had never done it before. But I trained these young men that are the ministers of the Church.

Now, in a Work like this, we feed the flock. We've got all these publications. There's The Plain Truth. I write in it every issue. The Good News for the Church, I write in it every issue. There are books, and there are

booklets. I've got books in the bookstores now. If you want to buy one, they're handsomely bound and so on. Or we give them free, if you take it in a little cheaper kind of a cover. We don't solicit the public for money. This is the Work of God. We don't go around soliciting the public.

But, in a Work like that, we have to employ certain services; and sometimes we have to go to the world and to people that are not spiritual people to do it. We have to have people. I had an advertising agent. He went with me, and he opened the door; but I had to sell the program to the radio stations all over the country. We had to have an accounting system. We have to have a legal department. We have to have things like that. But, that is **not** the Work! That is only something assisting and helping in THE WORK!

Now, let's get straight: What is "**the Work**"? And **whom** is God using to do it? Because that's going to come up for you to make a decision on some of these days very soon, believe me. Can you remember what I said, when it does? Is there any work like this on the face of the earth? You don't know of any. Tell me, if you know of any. I don't. I'd like to be informed, because I just don't know. I just don't. Am I tooting my own horn up here today? I don't mean it that way. I'm trying to tell you WHAT GOD IS DOING. God has always worked through one man at a time, not through a group! But that one man has to have a group backing him and supporting him. Look how many supported Moses. Look how many supported the men of God. But there was one man that God was using. I can't help it. I have noticed that. I wouldn't have said this before. But the time has come for you to know, because you are going to have to judge who you are going to follow pretty soon. Are you going to follow Christ, as I follow Christ?

Well that's it, brethren. I've said things today you have never heard before. I've said many things today you have heard many times before; but I've also said some things today you haven't heard before, and even our ministers have not heard before. And it's time that we do have these things.

I'm writing a long article for The Good News on this very type of subject. And so you'll get it in print in the next month, or two, or three, just as fast as I get to it. It's already on my typewriter. It's already started. So I won't hold you longer. I've held you a long time.

And thank you, brethren. I love you all for coming and for the patience that you've had this afternoon. I don't get to come up very often though. And so I've taken the time to say as much as I could while I'm here, because this is **an important message** that no one else could bring it.

So, Denny, if you'll come up and take charge and close it. I'm very tired now, and I think I'd better get in the car and go. I want to see my own brother, who I haven't seen for years, who is here. I'm not sure he will come up and I'll get to have a little talk with him. Otherwise, I'd like to shake hands with all of you; but I can't shake hands with so many. I just don't have the physical strength. So will you please excuse me? And I love you just the same. And everything we do is based on love anyway, because God Himself is love.

So I hope I'll talk to you again, at the Feast of Tabernacles time. That's what, six months or more off now? But I hope that... I understand we're going to be hooked up so that I will speak live on the television, on the big screen that you will see, that everybody in the auditorium can see in all of the Feast sites, even more so than we did last year. That was just the start of it last year, and this year we hope to have it a little better reception. So I'll say good afternoon, good-bye for now, to everybody; and I hope to see you again as soon as I can. I'm going to try to get around about every two weeks for a big meeting like this, and keep it going.

Thank you, brethren, very much.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Instead of 2,000 years, Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said “about 4,000 years ago the second Adam, Jesus Christ, came.”

Microwave from Tucson

Sermon – Tucson (March 2, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Microwave from Tucson.....	341	Purpose Of The Church	359
Getting Back On God’s Track	343	The Olivet Prophecy	360
What And Why The Church	344	The Sign Of Christ’s Coming	361
Creating Holy Righteous Character	346	The Church And The Work Today	363
Angels Created First	347	Preparing The Way For Christ	364
A Throne On Earth	349	Zerubbabel, A Type	367
Result Of The Angels’ Sin	350	A Holy, Spiritual Temple	368
Earth Renewed For Man	351	Open Doors To Philadelphia	370
The First Adam Rejects God	353	How One Was Prepared For The Job	371
Jesus Christ, The Second Adam	354	Revealing Of Many Truths	372
Prophecy For All Flesh	355	We Have To Believe What God Says	374
Pentecost A Type	357		

Well greetings all you **holy, righteous** people! I say that because I was certainly shocked to hear the sermonette last Sabbath in the main auditorium in Pasadena when God’s apostle was referred to as “the holy, righteous apostle.” The reason I say that is to explain to you that I’m sure it was not meant in sarcasm, or ridicule, or criticism, or anything of the kind; because you may not know or realize (yet we should all know) that God’s people, even in the Old Testament (evil as they were, disobedient as they were) were referred to as a holy, righteous congregation. In the New Testament, the Church is referred to as holy and righteous. And so it doesn’t mean holy and righteous in the same sense as we regard **God** as being holy and righteous. And I’m sure that’s the way it was intended. So I just wanted to say that so you all understand, so that no one will take it in a wrong manner – because as God is holy and righteous, I’m sure we **all fall very far short** (all of us, the speaker included, and all the audience and myself), we all do.

But general conditions in the world recently fulfilling biblical prophecy

have been speeding up. They've been accelerating, and they indicate that the time is coming when God's Work for this time is nearing its completion. We may be further along and further towards the **completion** of this great Work; and there is a great Work for so small a people as we are, that may be nearer finished than we think, or than we realize. We are coming in now on the home stretch, and we started a program in the Work this year of speeding it up.

Now just in the last week or ten days the largest and the most powerful, the leading television stations in Chicago, in Denver (Colorado), and in Kansas City have been added; and the program will now go out on those television stations. We have WOR, a very powerful station in New York City; and they have television stations over the country. But the television coverage, the radio coverage, has been quite low. Now we are beginning to speed it up, and I am having to ask our brethren everywhere to dig a little deeper. I haven't been asking our brethren for the past more than two years. I certainly haven't been high-pressuring our brethren for special offerings, or contributions, or anything of the kind; and yet we have operated on a balanced budget, and I think we need to thank God for that.

Now I have said before that when **we** please God in the way we conduct ourselves in the Church and in the Work, God blesses the Work; and the Work speeds up, and it goes ahead, and it increases. This Work did please God, and it did grow from its beginning back in 1933 until ... Well, for 35 years we grew at the rate of 30% increase every year over the year before. Now that's a very great increase for a continued steady increase. I don't mean precisely 30% every year, I'm sure you understand that. Some years it might have been 26-27%, other years 34-35%; but it averaged 30%. It was close to that, right on for 35 years.

Then I was away, and I was not in charge at Pasadena. I had to delegate, and the Work began to go the other way. The doctrines, the teaching of the

Church, began to be watered down. The broadcast had been built up until we were purchasing more wattage of radio power than any other program on earth; and, of course, we were on radio in those days. Now back in 1955 I went on television, but it only lasted for six months because I found it took up all of my time; and some time had to be devoted to other things that were the Work, so that that only lasted for six months and then we went on radio daily. We went on the big powerhouse radio stations all over the United States. We were the biggest radio program on earth. But after some 10-12 years, our radio program was really the tail end and the bottom of what was regarded as religious programs on the air. Of course, now television is the main thing. I thought it was in 1955, but I found at that time radio was not yet dead.

Getting Back On God's Track

Anyway, the last two years I have been working as hard as I could to get us all back on God's track; and brethren, I tell you, we have been making good, good improvement. I don't think we are all the way back on God's track. I don't think, brethren, that we are praying hard enough. I don't think we are spending enough time with our Bibles. I don't think that we are CLOSE enough to GOD, and we need to get a lot **closer** to Him than we are; and, if we do, you will find that this Work will speed up faster than ever.

I have been saying that we have to sort of tighten up our belts. We have to begin to cut down our living standards, because the whole nation of the United States is going to have to cut down its living standards. There are reasons why that's going to happen to everybody in this country. And we need to put extra money now into the Work of God in order that we will be reaching more and more people, and that will in time bring in more and more co-workers to help us with the financial load.

But it's like compiling. We're going to have to put some money in it now in order to cover the additional cost of new and additional television stations; of getting the Plain Truth out on newsstands more and more; of purchasing large space in newspapers and magazines (like the Reader's Digest and the TV Guide) that have 20, 30, 40 million (something like that) circulation. That many copies going out. Each copy may be read by two or three people, or sometimes more, and that means reaching millions and millions of additional people. Now, out of those millions, God is going to cause some to begin contributing; and He is going to bring others into the Church. God will add to the Church such as HE is choosing to be saved, and that is going to come right along. So the channeling of reserves for this year has already started.

What And Why The Church

The time has come now, my brethren, when we need to have a clear update on WHAT and WHY is the Church. **What** is the Church and what is its work, and also **why** is the Church and this Work for this time now as compared to the first century when it first started? Now Jesus said, as you find recorded in Matthew 16 verse 18, He said, " **I will build My Church.** "

Now why did He want to build a Church? You know most people just take a church for granted. I've known of churches and I've seen churches, and you know most people think of a church as a building with a slight sloping roof, a steeple pointing up to heaven, and a cross on its facade. And they think that people go to the church. Actually, in the Bible, it's the Church that goes to the building to meet. So the world has it all wrong. But actually people know why Jesus started the Church and why He needed the Church. They just didn't know the real one. Just like I myself, I've seen churches ever since I was a little boy; but it never occurred to me to wonder why there

should be one, and I wonder if He ever remembered that or ever thought about it.

Well, let's begin at the very beginning. Now once again (I have mentioned this before.), if I asked you where is the beginning of everything in the Bible, the farthest back in history, you would say Genesis 1:1. Would you? "*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*" No, that's not the beginning; because God didn't create the earth and the heavens (which are spoken of in Genesis 1) at that time. He created those later. But the beginning is in John 1 and beginning with verse 1, in the New Testament.

John 1:1 *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

Now the Word is a **person** just called a personage. In the Greek, in which that was originally written, He [{1}](#) is called the Logos, a **personage**. But the personage means Word. Logos means Word or Spokesman. That is, the Spokesman. He (the Spokesman) was **with God**, and the Spokesman **was also God**. Now there are two people. There's the Spokesman and God. The Spokesman is God, and He's **with** God. So there we are.

I've mentioned now my son, and I could say he's a person. I'm a person; and there are two of us, and we have the same name. We are both Armstrong. Now then; "*In the beginning was the Word, the Word was with God, the Word [also] was God.*"

John 1:2-3 *The same was in the beginning with God. (3) All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made.*

Now over in Ephesians the 3rd chapter you'll read that God created "*all things by Jesus Christ.*" Now notice in verse 14 right here in John 1:

John 1:14 *The Word was made flesh and dwelt among us [became Jesus Christ], (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of*

the Father,;) full of grace and truth.

In other words then **Jesus** (prior to his human birth) was the **Word**, and He was **with** God, and He **was** God; and He has ALWAYS existed. Now you read elsewhere in the Bible that He is “*without father, without mother, without beginning of days, without end of life*” – Eternal (the eternally existing One), the same as God. He has **always** existed. There never was a time when the Word (who became Jesus Christ) and the One we call God the Father did not exist. But the Father directed what He should do and created all things BY Jesus Christ. He spoke, and the Holy Spirit was the power that went out from Them and did what He had commanded and what He asked.

Creating Holy Righteous Character

Now then, that is the farthest back in time sequence that we have anything in the Bible. But there were just the Two. Now there was no matter, so far as I understand; and I don't find anything in the revelation of God – His Word (which I have right here on the desk in front of me)... I don't find anything indicating there was any material substance, any matter, any earth, or any other kind of material place like the earth that existed prior to the time of this earth necessarily.

Now God is Creator. He created all things by Jesus Christ. But what does God create? Jesus said He had not spoken of Himself. He only spoke what the Father, who sent Him, told Him to speak when He was a human being here on earth. And so, in creating, God the Father is the Mastermind who said what will be done; and Christ is the One who speaks; and the Holy Spirit responds, and it is done. That is the way They create.

But what are They creating? What is Their purpose? I am reminded how Winston Churchill said (before the United States Congress during World War II) that there is a purpose being worked out here below. I have repeated that I

guess hundreds of times, but it is so true; and God is working out a purpose here below.

Now what is **God's main purpose**? What was it from the beginning when there were just the two of Them? They hadn't created anything. What were they going to create? What is God creating? What is His overall purpose? His overall purpose is to create **righteous and holy character**. Now I talked about you holy, righteous people. Well, I am no more holy and righteous than you are, nor you than I am. But God has a purpose in **making** us that way; and God's purpose is to create holy and righteous character, such as He Himself has.

Now God IS that kind of character. God IS perfect, holy, and righteous character; and God's purpose is to create that kind of character in **other** created beings. Now to do that, first He must create such beings – other beings that are living and that have mind power, that can think – because character ... Let me explain what character is. **Character** is the ability of a separately created entity to come to the full knowledge of the right from the wrong – of what is righteousness and what is evil (or sin, or unrighteousness); and to choose the right even though he may have the desire to go the wrong way. He may be tempted to go the wrong way; but to **resist** the wrong, to **choose** the right, and have the will to **do** the right, and to **live** that way, and to proceed that way in his life.

Angels Created First

Now God did not create people first. He didn't even create this earth first (and most people don't know that). God created angels first, and angels are spirit beings. God is composed of spirit. God and the Word are both spirit, and they created angels out of spirit. Secondly They created man, much later. Now I explain that now because in God's created plan, and the way God

creates, there is nearly always the **principal of duality**, a first and the second. So God created angels first, and later He created man.

In the angels: God had one super archangel that He placed on this earth, on the throne of the earth. After He had created angels, **then** He created the earth. God created the heavens and the earth (I don't know how much after). I don't know when He created the heavens and the earth. I was noticing a television program the other night where they had some scientists talking. They also had some minister, someone who was defending the Bible, talking about evolution. Some of you have seen that in the last few days. It's been on television and on television news; and it was assumed that the earth began, was all created, in six days as explained in the 1st chapter of Genesis.

Well, that is not true; because in the 38th chapter of Job we find that the angels were there and already created and shouting for joy when the earth was created (in Job 38). So angels were created first, beyond any doubt whatsoever. Now then, I want you to notice that on the earth ... And angels were to inhabit the earth, and they inhabited this earth before man; and so we read in II Peter the 2nd chapter and verse 4:

II Peter 2:4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned ...

You know, God didn't even spare His own Son. He died for us, because we have sinned. "*But God spared not the angels that sinned.*" Can you imagine angels sinning? Oh yes, they did.

II Peter 2:4 ... and delivered them into chains of darkness to be reserved unto [the] judgment.

So angels are going to be judged, and **we're** going to judge angels. I wonder how many of you know that. So there is a judgment coming of angels yet. But God had created a throne on this earth to rule the whole earth. When He put angels on the earth, He had a **government**; and on that throne, to rule

that government, God put a super archangel who is a Cherub (greater than the ordinary angels). He had been on the very throne of God where one of his wings, with another archangel, had covered the very throne of God. So he was trained at the very throne of the whole universe, on God's throne in heaven, in God's government.

A Throne On Earth

This archangel was put on this earth **to administer the government of God** over those angels. Now whether it was all of the angels or only a third, I don't know; but it was a third of them that sinned with him. The angels sinned. Now they're going to come to judgment. However, the archangel was named Lucifer. You will read of him in the 14th chapter of Isaiah and the 28th chapter of Ezekiel. We've gone into that many times, and I'll just pass over it by mentioning it in this message this afternoon. This Lucifer was a super angel, and he had complete training.

But now **character** is something that God cannot create AUTOMATICALLY Himself by fiat. Character is something that has to be developed, and has to be built with the consent and with the will of the separate entity that has been created and who has an independent mind. He must have free moral agency and independent mind, to make independent free choice. God will not make that choice. But it is the one who can come to see the right (and God will make the right and the true way clear to him), who will choose that right way, decide to go that way against any pull or desire to go the wrong way. That is character.

God could not create that kind of character in these angels. So he put His government over them. The right way of character **is** the way of God's government; and every government is based on the foundation of a constitution, or a law. Now **the law of God**, which is love (an outpouring

LOVE), was the basis of that. But these angels sinned; and they sinned evidently, according to the Bible, because Lucifer (their leader) led them into that sin. That Lucifer became Satan the devil, and those angels who followed him (a third of all of the angels) became demons. Now it may have been all of the angels on earth. Maybe only a third of them were placed on earth. But apparently a third of them sinned; and apparently two thirds are holy and righteous angels today, because they are called “all of the holy angels” that will come with Christ when He comes at His Second Coming.

Now, Lucifer became Satan. He was on the throne on this earth. And according to God’s type of government, he must remain on that throne **unti** l a successor comes to occupy it and to RESTORE the government of God, because this archangel Lucifer destroyed the government of God. He rebelled against the government of God; and so, from that time on, practically the whole theme and God’s purpose is **the restoration of the GOVERNMENT OF GOD**, which was taken away from this earth by this Lucifer. Apparently he’s been judged.

Result Of The Angels’ Sin

Now, as a result of the sin of the angels, chaos came to this earth. It simply became waste and empty. And now I’d like to turn back to Psalm 104 and verse 30. Here’s something very few people have noticed and very few people seem to understand, and it says now in Psalm 104:30–

***Psalm 104:30** Thou sendest forth thy spirit [That is, God sends forth His Spirit.], they are created; and thou **renewest** the face of the earth.*

God renewed the face of the earth. It had become **decayed**. Now that means (before Genesis 1 and verse 2) that the earth had been decayed. And decay is the result of something that occupies a long time, a period of time. So the earth had been created long before the time of Adam and the creation

of man. Very few people know that. God has revealed these things to His Church today, that are not generally known. Now I'd like to go back to Genesis 1 again. Now we come to verse 2. Verse 1 in Genesis "*In the beginning God*" and the word for "God" is "Elohim," which is uniplural (like the word "family" or the word "team" or "church"), more than one person, a number of people. It could be two, it could be thousands or more; but one church, one family, one whatever.

Genesis 1:1-2 *In the beginning God [which is uniplural] created the heaven(s) [It should be plural and is in all other translations.] and the earth. (2) And the earth was [The word 'was' – the Hebrew word is translated 'became' and to be that way it had to become that way. Anyway,] The earth became ...]* *without form, and void ...*

In the Hebrew language in which Moses wrote this, '*without form and void*' is the Hebrew words 'tohu' and 'bohu.' Now those words mean 'became waste and empty.' That is a better translation than the one given here in the King James. (To become waste and empty, as a result of the sin of the angels.) Now God is going to renew the face of the earth, but look at the condition of it in the latter half of the 2nd verse:

Genesis 1:2 *... and darkness was upon the face of the deep. [It was all ocean.] And the Spirit of God moved upon ... the waters.*

Earth Renewed For Man

Now "*Thou sendest forth thy spirit,*" and then He **renews** "*the face of the earth.*" (*Psalms 104:30*),

It was all in darkness. God is light. But this Lucifer was filled with darkness, and rebellion, and sin; and so darkness had come on the whole earth and everything evil. And now God said ... This is the One who spoke –

the Word spoke, and it was done by the Holy Spirit. He said:

***Genesis 1:3** Let there be light and there was light.*

Now the light came, and then on the 5th day God renewed the surface of the earth. It was **renewed for man**, and so we read about man. And now in verse 26:

***Genesis 1:26** God said, Let **us** make man in our image, after our likeness ...*

He'd made animals – cattle after the cattle kind, dogs after the dog kind, and so on. Now God said, “*Let us...*” Not “Me.” There's more than one person. That was God the Father and the Word. [John 1:1] “**Let Us make man after Our kind.**” Man was made to become God. God put man on the earth in order that God now ... the greatest feat of creation that God had **EVER** undertaken – to reproduce Himself through **you and me**. We can and must, if we are ever going to avoid the final Lake of Fire, we must become holy and righteous. We must receive God's character. We must be filled so God can reproduce Himself into very God beings, or God persons, with His holiness and His righteousness.

We were made to have that contact with God. Man was created with a spirit; but he needed another spirit, the Spirit of God. Adam was given that chance. There were the Two Trees. You know the story. I won't go into that just now; but Adam did not take the Tree of Life, which God offered him. Adam did not have Life. He had a chemical existence, a temporary chemical existence. God offered him the Tree of Life. That was immortal Life, the Holy Spirit that would impregnate him with the very Life of God – immortal, self-containing, self-existent Life. He didn't get that kind of Life. Instead he took the knowledge of good and evil to himself, instead of believing God and letting God tell him what is good and what is evil.

The First Adam Rejects God

He rejected God because God had told him what is good and evil, and he took to himself the knowledge of good and evil **contrary** to what God had told him. He sinned. He rebelled against God, just as Lucifer had done; and Lucifer is now Satan. Lucifer was still on that throne, and Lucifer got to Adam (and has been getting to you and me). He's still on that throne today. Lucifer has always been on that throne. Adam could have replaced him and restored the government of God. Adam didn't.

So there again is the duality. He was just the first Adam. It took a second Adam, Jesus Christ, to come. But before I pass on: After Adam made the wrong decision, he made that for his family. His family is the human family. You and I, every human being who ever lived, has been born from Adam and Eve. They are our ancestors, Adam and Eve. **He made that decision for all of us!** Now notice in the 3rd chapter of Genesis, beginning in verse 22:

Genesis 3:22, 24 ... God said ... now lest he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life ... and live forever:

(24) [Then God] ... drove [him out of the garden of Eden] ... and He placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword [that pointed] ... every way to keep the way of the tree of life. [Lest he go back and gain immortal Life in sin.]

To have eternal Life, immortal Life, while you are sinning would only bring on misery, unhappiness, pain and sorrow and suffering; and God is not going to give you immortal Life that way. He gave us a temporary existence. The result of that is you are **dying** every minute you live. Now Adam only lived 930 years, and he died. That's a long time for us. We don't live that long today. Some live 70 years today and some very few live to 100; but some die

in the first hour of their birth, as little infants. And so it is a temporary chemical existence.

We don't have Life! That is (why in Ephesians the 2nd chapter and the 1st verse) Paul said: you ... "*were dead in trespasses and sins.*" We are in the process of being dead every minute we live, unless we receive **Life** through the Holy Spirit of God. Do we understand that? You don't hear that preached much in the world today. My brethren, let us understand it. We **MUST** have the Holy Spirit of God. But now God shut OFF the way to the Tree of Life, which **is** the Holy Spirit; and it was shut off from the world.

Jesus Christ, The Second Adam

All right, now we come to the 2nd Adam. The 2nd Adam was Jesus Christ; and we come over here to John the 6th [2](#) chapter and verse 44, where Jesus said this. Now remember: man had been shut off from the Holy Spirit. Jesus said:

John 6:44 No man can come to me except the Father which hath sent me draw(s) him ...

Except the Father draw him, **NOBODY** could come to Christ. People think **EVERYBODY** can come to Christ if only they will. "**Whoever will**" may come. You know, that's in the Bible; but that's over in the last chapter in your Bible (in Revelation) and that's after the Millennium. That's not in this world today. That is not true now. It is not true now. It will be true at that time.

So the 2nd Adam had come, and a lot of people don't understand why Jesus came. Now you will find that, back in Isaiah the 9th chapter and the 6th verse, it talks about Jesus being born. He lived to be born because (This was a prophecy long before His birth.) it said that He would be born as an infant,

that the government would be on His shoulder, and He was going to reign on the throne of His father David. He would be a son of David, and He would reign on the throne of David forever and forever.

He was born to be a **King**. He was born to rule and to reign, to come to be a King to replace Lucifer who had been on the throne of the earth. Now do you see? The world doesn't see that my brethren. They don't understand these things. They think you are living in an immortal soul already. They think that you're just going to heaven, if you are good in your own sight; and, if you are bad in your sight and you do what **you** think is wrong, you'll go to hell. Well, nobody does what he thinks is wrong. So he thinks he is doing good. He thinks he's going to go to heaven. Well, nobody is going to go to heaven.

Now there's another prophecy, and that was in ... that other prophecy was in Isaiah 7:14 where Christ was to be born as Immanuel, which means "God with us." And in Matthew the 1st chapter that is explained that He was to be born to save His people from their sins. So He came as a **Saviour**, and He came as a **King**. He came to save us from sin so we could receive eternal Life and receive the Spirit of God. And He came to **qualify** to sit on that throne that Satan is on, and that Lucifer had rejected, and **restore the government of God**. And He came as a **Ruler** over government. Let's understand that, my brethren. Very few understand it. The churches of this world don't understand that at all. He came as a King to restore the government, which Lucifer had taken away, over this earth. And Lucifer is now Satan.

Prophecy For All Flesh

All right, now a prophecy for the people. I gave you some prophecies of Christ. There is a prophecy for the people of the world, and that is in Joel the

2nd chapter and verse 28.

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass afterward that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh ...

Now God had held His Spirit back, remember; and had angels at the Garden of Eden so people couldn't get in. And Jesus said no man could come to Him unless the Father draws him. God reserved the right to call and draw **a few**. Otherwise people are not now being judged. There is a judgment day coming for all others. But judgment is on **the Church**, and is on you and me. We're being judged right now as to whether we shall have eternal Life or whether we are going to sin and receive the punishment of the 2nd death in hell fire.

Now, *"it shall come to pass **afterward** that I will pour out my spirit upon **ALL** flesh."* That is not now! Only those that God calls can come to Christ now. But there will come a time when He is going to pour out His Spirit upon ALL flesh. Now, that also is **a duality** and happens twice. I want to go into that.

It happened on the day of Pentecost – after Christ was crucified, after He had been resurrected, and after He had ascended to heaven. Ten days after He had ascended to heaven came the day of Pentecost, and the Holy Spirit came for those God had called. It was only 120. Jesus Christ had preached to thousands upon thousands. Twice there were 5,000 men (not counting women and children) and different groups of 5,000. And He preached to thousands at other times, just a few here and a few there many times.

But of all those multiple thousands who heard Jesus Himself, how many do you think really believed what He said? Only 120! Some believed ON Him, but they didn't believe what He said. You know, you have to AGREE with God to walk with Him. Two cannot walk together except they be agreed {3}. That's in Amos, I think the 3rd chapter in about verse 3 (something like

that); and you have to **agree** with Him to walk with Him.

Pentecost A Type

All right. So on Pentecost 31 AD, after Jesus' ministry, there was "a type;" and Peter said:

Acts 2:16-17 This was that which was spoken by the prophet Joel, (17) [That He would pour out His Spirit on all flesh].

But even then it was **only those God was calling**. That was "a type" of the Millennium, when He will pour out His Spirit on EVERY human being then living on the face of the earth; but that has not come yet. There's a duality principle there.

Now I want you to notice that Jesus proclaimed the Kingdom of God. Mark the 1st chapter. I've gone into that so many times, and I think we should all know that; but at "*the beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ ...*" (Mark the very 1st chapter, Mark's gospel.) They call it gospel; it's just his biography really, of Jesus.

Mark 1:1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.

Then it talks of John the Baptist preparing the way for Him, and about Jesus being baptized, and then Jesus being tempted of the Devil and overcoming Satan. Then coming down to verse 14: After Jesus had **qualified** by overcoming Satan; He **qualified** now to restore the government of God. He had CONQUERED Satan. He had CONQUERED the Lucifer who sat on that throne and STILL sits on that throne on this earth. He's after you and after me; and he hates us, my brethren. He hates us above all the people on this earth! And he's been antagonizing me a great deal the last few months, and it is really Satan who is doing it through people who don't know what they are doing.

Mark 1:14-15 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel [What gospel? “The gospel ...”] of the kingdom of God. (15) And saying, the time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand.

HOW is it fulfilled? Jesus had just overcome Satan and that temptation. You read of that in Matthew the 4th chapter beginning with verse 1. It’s quite a long description (there in Matthew’s gospel) about how He overcame Satan. “*The time is fulfilled ... the Kingdom of God is at hand.*” Someone had qualified now to RESTORE the government of God and set up the Kingdom of God. Now the government of God and the Kingdom of God are **two different things**. There’s a duality. The Kingdom of God is the BORN Family of God. We can be born into that Family. But the Kingdom of God is a government, and that Family will rule the government over the whole earth.

Now then, “*the time is fulfilled ... the Kingdom of God is at hand.*” And then he said:

Mark 1:15 ... *repent ye and believe the gospel.*

Repent and believe. Very few people believe what God says, and very few people repent.

Then, on the day of Pentecost, Peter said to the people that now the Holy Spirit was coming as a first type for those that God would call. “For all,” not yet; but for all that God was calling. He said:” **repent and be baptized,**” which means **believe** in Christ. That’s what it represented.

So now Jesus Christ came for the purpose of proclaiming the Kingdom of God. He also came to proclaim that we could be born again. He came as a Saviour to save us from our sins, and that we could be born again. You read of that in the 3rd chapter of John, when the Pharisee Nicodemus reached Him at night to see Jesus. He didn’t want the other Pharisees to see him come. He

said: “We (we Pharisees) **know** that You are a Man sent from God.” In other words, we know you are the Messiah. Yes, they knew Him; but they thought He was going to set up a Kingdom and destroy ... [***tape skips at 37:53*] ... that they instituted as the person that they believed in Jesus.

Purpose Of The Church

On the day of Pentecost now there were the 120; and later that day thousands came in, and there were 3,000 baptized that same day. God began to pour out His Spirit on many that He was calling, and so the first century Church got started from that time on.

I would like to read a little something that I wrote, and I have had to read it, about the first century Church. What is the Worldwide Church of God? Well, it is first a Church – that is, its purpose is to carry the Great Commission to all the world – proclaiming the gospel to the world, the gospel of the Kingdom (No one else is doing that today.); and secondly the feeding of the flock (or the ministry to minister to the people). Now those are spiritual duties. The Church is not a secular organization. It is **a spiritual organism**. And that is the entire mission of the church.

Now the Church has certain supporting functions. In the first century, it had deacons and deaconesses. That’s all. That’s all the supporting functions it had, deacons and deaconesses. If they wanted to travel, they had to walk, or ride on a donkey (or a mule, or a horse, or something), or in a rowboat or a sailboat. They didn’t have any transportation. They didn’t have the kind of mechanized things that we have today at all.

Now even these (you find in Acts 6 and in verses 2 and 3) had to be fully converted people in those offices, filled with the Holy Spirit. But their operations were physical and not spiritual, but they were the supporting people that only supported the Church in its physical functions. And the

functions of the Church are spiritual. Now then, after the day of Pentecost, the gospel started out. The Church did multiply there for a little while, and then persecution set in. Finally, (It wasn't very long.) in about 53 AD ... The Church had started in 31, and by 53 AD the gospel was **suppressed** and was not preached any longer. Turn to Galatians the 1st chapter verses 6 and 7.

Galatians 1:6-7 I marvel [That's Paul to those Churches in Galatia] that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel [A different gospel]:(7) Which is not another [because it is the real gospel after all], but there be some that trouble you and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

The Olivet Prophecy

The gospel was suppressed. I could go into a lot of other scriptures about that; but, nevertheless, I think that suffices and that will explain it. The gospel was suppressed from that time. You might say quelled or suppressed until 1953, for exactly 1,900 years. That is **one century of time cycles**, one century of time cycles. And now we come to Jesus' prophecy in Matthew 24 Matthew 24. They were in the temple at the time this prophecy begins. And they went out of the temple, and they departed from the temple, and Jesus' disciples came to Him to show Him the buildings of the temple. Now this is the outstanding prophecy in the New Testament.

Matthew 24:2-3 And Jesus said unto them, see ye not all these things? [Now what things is He talking about? Notice.] Verily I say unto you there shall not be left here one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down.

[The temple is going to be destroyed. Now that happened in 70 AD, in their lifetime, in 70 AD. And now later ...] (3) ... *he sat upon the Mount of Olives the disciples came unto him privately saying, Tell us when shall these things be?* [That is, when the temple would be destroyed. That's what He'd

been talking about.] *And [now they're asking something else] what shall be the sign of thy **coming** and of the end of **this** world?*

They knew He was coming as a great Ruler to rule the world. "Tell us when these things shall be ... and what shall be the sign of thy coming and of the end of the world." That is, the end of this age. Not the end of the earth or the end of people on it, but the end of this time and this age.

***Matthew 24:4-5** And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. (5) For many shall come in my name saying, [that] I am Christ; and shall deceive [the] **many**.*

[***tape garbled at 43:15*] They had their own gospel. Not the gospel Christ brought, but they their own gospel about THE PERSON of Christ; and they just said ...

[***tape garbled again at 43:28-44:07*] ... the Family of God. They had left all that out, in the gospel had not been preached for 1,900 **years** over this world. Now He said then further:

***Matthew 24:6** And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars [and other things that were going to happen in the meantime.]*

Now He was talking about things that began then and up to 70 AD. He didn't come quite yet to what would be the sign of His coming, but in verse 14 He did. He said:

***Matthew 24:14** And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in **all** the world for a witness unto **all** nations; and **THEN SHALL THE END** [of this world] *come*.*

The Sign Of Christ's Coming

My brethren, that gospel was not preached into all the world until the

first week in 1953. Now prior to that, 19 years earlier, it had begun in the United States, one time cycle earlier when it went on the air in Eugene, Oregon; and God used me to do it. And by 19 years we had covered the United States coast to coast. But it was 19 years from the time it started, and **one hundred 19-year time cycles precisely**, when the gospel went out on the most powerful radio station on earth, Radio Luxembourg in Europe. We were on a band at that time that reached all of Europe and Britain. Later we went on the one that reached England almost exclusively and late at night, but it reached them more powerfully and was a better channel for it. But it started going to the world after 100 time cycles.

Now that is the sign that we are getting nearer the time of Christ's coming; and if we don't realize it, my brethren, let me tell you Satan knows it! He knows he has but **a short time** right now. He knows that, and it behooves us that we know it. The time is short! And what we do in this world, and the fun we can have in this world, the good time and everything, doesn't amount to anything. All that amounts to anything now, let me tell you, is getting into God's Kingdom. This world is about over. It is a very unhappy world. It is a very bad world. Now let's go on a little further. After this gospel of the Kingdom is proclaimed, a lot of other things begin to happen. We come to a climax down here in verses 21 and 22.

Matthew 24:21-22 For then [It hasn't come yet, but that's when the gospel of the Kingdom is going out. "then ..."] shall be great tribulation [That is, world trouble.] such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. [There can only be one time like that.] (22) And except those days) be shortened, there should no flesh be saved [alive].

That word 'alive' should be there, and is in other translations. It is not talking about spiritual salvation, but people being left ALIVE. In other words, it is a time **when human life could be erased** from off of this earth; and

that's never happened until the last few years of this generation. It never happened until the hydrogen bomb; even with the odd atom bomb would they destroy certain cities of well over 100 or 200 thousands. We couldn't destroy great cities of several millions. But ONE HYDROGEN BOMB HAS MORE POWER than ALL of the bombs exploded in World War II on both sides, **all combined**: ONE hydrogen bomb. And there are enough hydrogen bombs to destroy all human life off this earth FIFTY TIMES OVER. All we would need is one. That's all we would need. Now then, it goes on to say:

Matthew 24:22 And except those days should be shortened ... no flesh would be saved [alive] ...

GOD WILL NOT INTERVENE UNTIL ALL OF HUMANITY would be destroyed, but then He says:

Matthew 24:22 ... for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

"For the elect's sake." If you read on just a bit, it talks about the signs in the sun and the moon and the Day of the Lord coming; and then the coming of Christ is described further in that same chapter. Well, we're getting close to the time; and this prophecy in the 24th chapter of Matthew covers all of that.

The Church And The Work Today

Now look at the Church and the Work in the Church today. I'd like to go on reading from what I have, some of it. Today we live in a far different world. Now after {4} a century of time cycles, we're living and getting the gospel to the world for the first time in more than 1,900 years; and THIS IS THE WORK, AND YOU ARE PART OF IT. IT IS GETTING THAT GOSPEL OUT for the first time just as Jesus said it would happen. Brethren, can we WAKE UP? Can we REALIZE what we're doing, and what is going

on, and how GOOD it is in God's sight? We need to realize it.

Today we live in a far different world than the first apostles did, back in Jesus' time. Multiplied population (many, many, many times over more people on earth), modern transportation, modern communications. I could talk anywhere in the world just in a few minutes time by telephone. I can get on an airplane and go to any part of the world, half way around the world the same day. If I was going west and I started in the morning, I would get there before evening at least.

And today we have modern transportation, modern communication facilities. We have sophisticated technological instruments, the facilities in printing and in the publishing services to get the gospel out through print and by publishing, and by television, and by radio, and the many ways that are open to us today. They didn't have anything like that in the first century. Facilities management, legal services they weren't bothered about legal services in those days. Today we are in a complicated, mechanized world. Accounting and data processing functions, these are not spiritual. They are physical functions, and there is a great deal of that today.

We have those facilities to be used, but they are not spiritual. They are **NOT THE WORK**. They are only support functions OF the Work, and that's one thing that I am trying to bring out now. The WORK is **SPIRITUAL!** And THE WORK NEEDS SUPPORTING SERVICES. But, my brethren, everyone here in the supporting services (just like the deacons and deaconesses in the New Testament) should be filled with the Holy Spirit of God; and we just don't have people that have that critical kind of expertise to do those things that have been filled with the Spirit of God necessarily; some one way, some the other. But some are in the Church and some are out.

Preparing The Way For Christ

Now then, the gospel of the Kingdom is going out and preparing the way today for Christ and for the 2nd Coming of Christ. We're preparing the way; and I would like to show you a few prophecies about that, and what is going on today. Back in Malachi the 3rd chapter, I want you to notice now the first 5 verses of Malachi 3.

Malachi 3:1 Behold I will send my messenger and he shall prepare the way before me [That's Christ speaking. He's the Word.]; and the Lord whom ye seek [who is Christ] shall suddenly come to his temple ...

What temple, my brethren, is He coming to? We used to worry about that. We used to wonder: Are the Jews going to knock down the Dome of the Rock that the Arabs have there and build a new Jewish temple? No, they're not. They're not doing it. It isn't going to be done. What temple is Christ going to come to the 2nd time? (All right, I'll bring that out a little later.)

Malachi 3:1 The Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant [Christ is coming as the Messenger of the covenant.] whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the [Eternal] of hosts.

Now, you will read how John the Baptist fulfilled that. But again there is a DUALITY. That was all about His 1st Coming. But John the Baptist was a **type** of someone that has to prepare the way for the 2nd Coming. Let's read on, I want you to notice. What coming is he talking about here? The very next verse says, right on.

Malachi 3:2-4 But who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's soap; (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver; and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the [Eternal] an offering in righteousness (4) Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the [Eternal] as in the days of old,

and as in former {5} years [And so on.]

Well, none of that happened at Christ's 1st Coming. That is what He is going to do when He comes again, to rule. So it is talking about a messenger preparing the way for THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST, and John the Baptist was a **forerunner**; and it is to happen **again**. Christ is coming a second time. He came the first time. He is coming a second time. Again, the first coming was "a type" of the second. At the first coming, John the Baptist was a voice crying out in the physical wilderness of the Jordan River. And he was crying out preparing the way for a PHYSICAL Jesus, BORN AS A HUMAN BEING to come to His people JUDAH, a physical people and coming to a TEMPLE built of stone, and wood, and gold, and silver, and so on.

He came to announce that someday, 1,900 years or more on, He would set up the Kingdom of God. And He was coming for the Kingdom of God and to change and PROCLAIM the GOOD NEWS of the Kingdom of God. And that was the purpose of His coming, and to call people to be born again into and be CHILDREN of God in the FAMILY of God. And the Family of God IS the Kingdom of God, the **born** Family of God that will then rule all nations of the world.

But now there must be a messenger preparing the way for the Second Coming of Christ. A voice crying out (not in the physical wilderness of the Jordan River) in the SPIRITUAL wilderness of religious confusion [***tape garbled at 55:28*] in the world today: And preparing a way before the SPIRITUAL Christ in POWER and GLORY, who is coming to His SPIRITUAL temple. I'm going to show you what that is in a moment.

He is not coming to a physical people, but to a SPIRITUAL people. And He is coming not to a temple made in stone and wood, gold and silver; but made out of spirit because the Church is going to rise UP and meet Him.

It will be “*the dead in Christ*” will rise first and “*we which are alive and remain*” will be caught up to meet Him in the air; and we will be changed and will become GOD BEINGS in the FAMILY OF GOD. And we will then constitute the Kingdom of God, the **Family** of God. Christ is coming to RULE all nations; and we’re going to rule with Him, as you read in the latter part about the, well, the Laodicean Church and the Philadelphia Church; or it’s one of the other Churches. Anyway, it’s Revelation 2:26.

Zerubbabel, A Type

Now then, I’d like to have you notice again ... Well, let’s turn now for a moment back to Haggai the 2nd chapter. I want you to notice something here. This is a time, 70 years after Solomon’s temple had been destroyed, when the people were coming to build that first temple that Jesus came to the first time. Now let’s learn a little about THAT temple, and then we are going to learn something about the **second** temple. Here again is the duality, the first temple that Jesus came to and the second temple – the SPIRITUAL He’s coming to the second time.

Now then, a colony of Jews had been sent back from the Chaldean Empire, which had been succeeded by the Persian Empire. The King of Persia had sent them back there. And a man by the name of Zerubbabel was leader of that colony, and he was the governor, and also he was the one that was the builder of the second temple. That is, he directed it all. He directed those who did do it. Now we begin reading about that here in Haggai the 2nd chapter beginning with verse 3:

***Haggai 2:3** Who is left among you that saw this house [That is, the temple of Solomon 70 years before. “saw this house”] in her first glory? And how do you see it now? Is it not in your eyes in comparison of it as nothing?*

It had all been destroyed. There might have been some of the stones left

at that time, but it was nothing. It had been totally destroyed. So then he said:

***Haggai 2:4-6** Yet now be strong O Zerubbabel ... [and then] O Joshua ... [who was with him] the high priest ... and work for I am with you ... [That worked to build this physical temple. “I am with you”] saith the Lord of hosts: (5) According to the word that I covenanted with you when ye came out of Egypt so my spirit remaineth among you; fear ye not. (6) For thus saith the [Eternal] of hosts; yet once it is a little while and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land.*

That is when. That is talking about the DAY OF THE LORD, when He is going to do that very thing. That hasn't happened yet in our time, but it's going to happen in just a very few years. Right now, we're coming right down to that time. And then he continues, verse 7:

***Haggai 2:7-9** And I will shake [the] ... nations, and the desire of all nations shall come: and I will fill this house with glory, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. (8) The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the Lord of hosts. (9) The glory of this LATTER HOUSE [Now, he is talking about the END time now. It's a prophecy for the end time, but he is using the house that Zerubbabel was building as a TYPE of the former house. Now notice it. “The glory of this latter house ...”] shall be greater than of the former [greater than Solomon's temple].*

A Holy, Spiritual Temple

Well, the temple that he built was not of glory as Solomon's temple, not anywhere near. It was larger, but it was not as great, not as beautiful, not as fine, didn't have as much gold and precious stones and things like that. So he is talking about a temple that will be more glorious even than Solomon's temple. He is talking about a temple to which Christ will come. Zerubbabel was a **type** of someone who would build the temple to which Christ is

coming to. And that has to be someone preparing the way for the Second Coming, proclaiming the good news of the KINGDOM of God just before and in the very generation where that Kingdom is going to be set up.

We're at that time now, my brethren. We're at that time; and it means raising up the Church, because you'll find over here in Ephesians ... Let me turn to that. Ephesians now. The 2nd chapter of Ephesians, and God says here (beginning with verse 19) to the Church at Ephesus:

***Ephesians 2:19** Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners [They'd been Gentiles. They were born Gentiles. They were not Jews.], but fellow citizens with the saints ...*

They are no more foreigners, but in the same "nation" as the saints. Now he is speaking of the Church as a nation. Notice, he speaks of the Church as many things here. First he speaks of it as a nation, and now it says:

***Ephesians 2:19-21** ... of the **household** of God [Now it's a **family** ... We're to be the Family of God. Now go on:] (20) *And are built upon the foundation* [Now we are a building. "*And the foundation ...*"] *of the apostles and prophets* [That's the foundation of the Church. That's what it's talking about. "Built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets"], *Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;* (21) *in whom all the building* [Now the Church is a building.] *fitly framed together grow into a HOLY TEMPLE ...**

That's the temple to which Christ is coming! Not a temple made of stone, or buildings; but a **spiritual temple**. Brethren, YOU are that temple. YOU ARE THAT TEMPLE, with me; and I hope I am part of it. That's why God calls US **holy and righteous**. We are to become that! Maybe we are not as holy and righteous as we ought to be. Let's spend a little more time in prayer. Let's spend a little more time in Bible study. Let's spend a little more time and come to the place of thinking more about the things of God than

we've been doing. We've had our minds too much on the things of THIS WORLD, on the CARNAL things, on the things MONEY will buy. Let's put a little more of the money into the Work of God and get it DONE. We don't have much time left. We're coming in on the home stretch right now.

Now then, there is a **duality** between Haggai 2 and Ephesians 2. Did you notice it? Haggai 2 was speaking of the first temple, which Zerubbabel built. Ephesians 2 is speaking of the second temple, which Christ is building through one He has called to do that.

Open Doors To Philadelphia

Now I'd like to give you one little prophecy in the New Testament (in Revelation 3 and verses 7 and 8). This is the Philadelphia Church, and it is speaking of our Church today. (Verses 7 and 8.)

***Revelation 3:7** And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write ...*

Now there are some that think ... The word "angel" merely means **messenger**. And in the Greek language the word is "angelos"; and often it is used for human messengers. When it has to be human, the same was used. Also it means spirit angels, composed of spirit; and they were immortal and invisible. But the same word is used for humans who are messengers, and so this could be either.

***Revelation 3:7-8** ... w rite;these things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth and no man shutteth; and shutteth and no man openeth [That's speaking of Christ.];(8) I know thy works [He says to this Church. And that's speaking of you, you brethren. There are something like ... I am speaking to more than 5,000 of you right now. "I know thy works ..."]; behold I have set before you an open door and no man can shut it; for thou has a LITTLE strength ...*

A better translation is ‘you have ONLY a little strength.’ We are very weak physically. Now speaking (over in Zechariah) about Zerubbabel in the Old Testament, it’s “*not by power...*” [Zechariah 4:6] He wasn’t such a strong man either, but he says: “**by My Spirit**, says the [Eternal].” It is by the power of the Spirit of God that this Work must move forward, not on human power.

Revelation 3:8 I know thy works; behold I have set before thee an open door ... no man can shut it ... you have but little strength and hast kept my word ...

Has believed what He says; and kept His Word, and has not watered it down and has not compromised. And when I found it watered down, brethren, we got back onto the track. We’re almost back there, if not entirely; and we must get **all** the way back.

Revelation 3:8 ... and hast not denied my name.

The doors have been opened. First there was the door of radio and television, the printing press. Then doors as you read in the 10th chapter of Revelation. But finally, after we thought the Work was all done, you must go now to many nations speaking many languages and to kings and to leaders of nations. And that has been done in the last 10 years, my brethren. God has opened those doors; and you, through me, have been walking through those doors; and the job is getting done.

How One Was Prepared For The Job

Now I would like to show you a little bit of how God prepared one for this job. Back in 1926, after a successful business career, I was challenged; and I was challenged about the law of God as the foundation of the government of God. God used that very thing to challenge me [{6}](#). I was

challenged on the Sabbath; and that is in the law of God, and the one point of the law of God that is **a test commandment**– the one commandment the world will reject and is not willing to keep; and I didn't want to keep it either.

You know, I found out I didn't agree with God. I believed what I'd been brought up to believe. I thought we were immortal souls. I thought we'd go to heaven if we were good, and to hell if we were bad, and that we would live forever. I saw (in Romans 6:23) "*the wages of sin is death.*" And I said, "Well that's not what I've been taught. I've always believed the wages of sin is immortal life, but it's in hell fire." ... *but the gift of God is eternal life.*" I said, "Why would it be a gift of God if I already have it?" If I **already have** immortal life – which I thought I had, but I apparently didn't.

And I didn't have God's Spirit. I didn't have the presence of immortal life within me at that time. So I found out a lot more. Now I came to the place where it finally came to a challenge. I proved the truth about God's Sabbath, except one thing. I came to Colossians 2 and verse 16, and that stumped me. I thought "Well, that does away with the Sabbath." Then I found out that it **didn't** do away with the Sabbath at all, but it also included the ANNUAL HOLY DAYS. And I said, "Well then, if it doesn't do away with the Sabbath, it doesn't do away with the annual holy days." And I found out that Jesus kept those days, and the apostles; and they were all ordained forever.

Revealing Of Many Truths

And so, when I was converted, my wife and I began to keep the annual holy days; and nobody else we knew of on earth was doing it. We knew of no one that would. I went to the Sardis Church, and they laughed me to scorn when I tried to show them the truth about observing the annual holy days and the festivals of God. (I didn't understand altogether about the festivals yet,

but I did about the annual holy days.)

Now I learned at that time about the resurrection of Christ after three days and three nights, and I learned that Easter ... I began to learn about Christmas, and I learned that Easter did not celebrate the resurrection of Jesus. Then I learned what is in “The United States and Britain in Prophecy {7}.” That was written way back there, more than 50 years ago when I wrote that. It still is fine. It’s all up-to-date. It’s been updated a little bit, but primarily that booklet “The United States and Britain in Prophecy” was written over 50 years ago. And I learned then about the gospel of the Kingdom, which was not taught and nobody seems to know about it today.

Then, in the book of Revelation, it led me to Daniel. I was going through the book of Revelation (especially Revelation 13 and Revelation 17) and going back to Daniel 2 and Daniel 7 that explains it. And in Daniel 2:44 I saw the truth of the Kingdom of God. Then I came to find out there were angels on earth and the government of God had been over them. I began to find that during ... That was BEFORE I was converted even. God was giving me the truths that NO CHURCH ON EARTH has during those early days when He was **preparing** me for a conversion. And I was finding that I didn’t agree with God; and I had to begin, if I wanted to walk with Him, to agree with Him. Two can’t walk together except they be agreed.

Then I came to the prophecy in Luke 19, the parable of the pound, where Jesus is going to get a kingdom and to return; and I saw He was coming back to earth.

*[**tape garbled at 1:10:56-1:11:14]*

There is much basic knowledge and understanding that came before my baptism. God was preparing someone for this very job, and that is how YOU came to know these things. That’s how YOU’VE come to be keeping God’s holy days, and now we are planning a wonderful holy day for this coming

Fall. We are just coming up very close to the Passover time now.

We Have To Believe What God Says

I began to agree with God, and I began to realize we had to agree with God if we're going to walk with Him. Now brethren, in closing I want to read one passage. We have to **agree with God**, we have to **believe what He says**. Adam and Eve didn't believe what God said. People heard Jesus and didn't believe what He said. This is what He says – in the Bible! Do you believe it? Are you going to believe it, or are you going to water it down, or are we going to get RIGHT back to the truth once delivered? (The 66th chapter of Isaiah.)

*Isaiah 66:1-2 Thus saith the [Eternal], the heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest? (2) For all those things hath mine hand made, and all those things have been, saith the [Eternal]: but to THIS man will I look [Who is God going to look to? Who is He going to accept? “To this man will I look,”], even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and **trembleth at my word.***

DO YOU BELIEVE THIS WORD? Do you **TREMBLE** at this Word? When the Church was not trembling at the Word of God (but watering it down, there for about 10 years), the Church didn't grow. I hope that it will begin to grow again. As a matter of fact, in the past year much of the Church has grown 30% once again. In the United States, we have grown not up to 30 but we're up to practically the 20% mark; and it looks like we're on the 30% increase this year. If we would tighten our belts, if we would sacrifice, we've got to have our brethren put in more money. We've got to go on more television stations.

Brethren, I am trying to do four television programs a week, and four

radio programs a week, besides keeping up with all of the writing and all of the preaching and everything else that I do. Last Sabbath I was preaching over in Big Sandy. We had over, let's see, it was over 3,000 (over 3,000 people last week); and even more, to 5,000 of you today. Next Sabbath I am going to be speaking to a combined group in Denver, Colorado. Three weeks ago I was speaking to 2,800 up in Seattle; and I'm trying to plan now to go off to a group every two weeks and speak. I am putting on the pressure! If I can do it at my age, I think you can do your part; and I ask all of you to **do your part**.

I ask you to pray more, and PRAY FOR ME. I NEED IT. Believe me, Satan is trying to DESTROY me. He would love to destroy me. But he can't do it if God doesn't let him; and I need your prayers, and I need you to pray that I can keep praying because Satan makes it very tough sometimes. Brethren, we've got a great job to do. Let's get in there and put our whole hearts and souls into it and do it. So thank you all, brethren; and I know I can count on you. I know we'll count on one another; and we'll go in the door, and it won't be too long until we will. Thank you very much.

Editor's Notes

{1} - At first Mr. Armstrong said, "It is called the Logos." But then he corrected himself and said "He is called the Logos."

{2} - Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said the wrong chapter, when he said: "We come over here to John the 5th chapter and verse 44."

{3} - The original states it this way: "Can two walk together, except they be agreed?"

{4} - At first Mr. Armstrong said, "Now after 19," but then he corrected himself.

{5} - Mr. Armstrong said the word "recent" instead of "former" years.

{6} - Mr. Armstrong lost his place in his notes at this point, and stumbled with his words a bit.

{7} - At first Mr. Armstrong said the name of the booklet was in “The United States In Prophecy,” leaving out the “and Britain” part of the title. When he referred to the same booklet shortly thereafter, he said the complete title.

The Church in Prophecy

Sermon – Chicago, Illinois USA (March 28, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Church in Prophecy.....	377	“This Latter House”	394
The Great Red Dragon	379	The Spiritual Temple	396
Christ Is Born	380	Zerubbabel, A Type	398
The True Church Flees	381	War In Heaven	400
Christ’s Own Prophecy	382	Place Of Safety	402
True Gospel Suppressed	384	Heavenly Signs	404
Second Question Answered	385	Day Of The Lord	406
In Vain Do You Worship	387	The Laodicean Church	408
The Philadelphian Era	388	Christ’s Second Coming	410
God’s Messenger	391	Satan Removed	412

... you people very often. This is the first time in a long, long time; and today I’ve decided to speak to you on prophecy. I would speak on another subject, but you are going to hear it anyway very soon; and I hope that you will, in your respective local Churches. But I telecast from the studio, an office in my home (that we built in) in Tucson.

It was carried by satellite into Pasadena, and we had a crowd of around 5,000 or a little larger in Pasadena. We filled the Ambassador Auditorium. We filled the college gymnasium. We filled the high school gymnasium. We filled the recital auditorium, and we filled the student center (which is the general dining room and cafeteria space for the students). They were all filled with people that day. So, I believe this was also on film; and that you will get it that way, because it was filmed in Tucson.

Now today I am going into a theme of prophecy. I don’t think the scriptures individually are new to you. It may be new the way I’m going to put them together. In fact, I know it will be new because I’ve never put them together this way before. You know, a story should have a beginning, and a

middle, and an end; and that's what I'm hoping to have, that I can bring to you now today – and prophecies that concerns God's Church more than the conditions of the world.

Now many of the prophecies are concerned with conditions in the world – world conditions. But I think we are vitally concerned with where are WE in God's Church right now? Where are we in the chain of prophecy? What's happening now? What has just happened? What is going to happen next? We need to understand that; and we need to get **a new perspective**, and have it brought up to date. That's what I hope to do right now.

So I have chosen the 12th chapter of the book of Revelation, and I'm going to intertwine in with it a great many other scriptures that fit right in at the proper place. But beginning with the 12th chapter of Revelation, I'll take first just the first six verses. And it begins back with ancient Israel, as a matter of fact, who were the people of God. They were looked on as a “woman;” and a woman symbolically represents a church in the Bible, and especially in the book of Revelation. The book of Revelation is in symbols, but it explains its own symbols. So I read, beginning verse one:

***Revelation 12:1-2** There appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: (2) And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.*

That is speaking of Israel of the Old Testament time and prior to the birth of Jesus Christ, who was born of the tribe of Judah (in Israel) in apparently the year about 4 B.C. And so it is speaking there coming down to, prior to, and now the birth of Christ. This 12th chapter of Revelation carries a theme right through from then up to the coming of Christ, and the World Tomorrow, and the doing away with Satan the devil. Satan is mentioned in this, and what he's doing is mentioned in this chapter, of course.

The Great Red Dragon

Revelation 12:3 [Now] *there appeared another wonder in heaven* [Now we come to see Satan also in this.]; *and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.*

That ties right in with the 13th and 17th chapters of Revelation, speaking of the governments of this world which were manipulated by (deceived by) the former great archangel, Lucifer – who rebelled, who was set on a throne on this earth to rule the whole earth over [1](#) angels. Angels inhabited this earth before mankind. But angels rebelled, because this Lucifer led them into rebellion; and they are the angels that sinned, as you read in II Peter (the second chapter I think it is, and verse 4).

Revelation 12:4 [This great red dragon ...] *And his tail drew the third part of the stars ...*

Now in many cases “stars” represent angels in the Bible. Sometimes the word “angel” means spirit angels, composed only of spirit; and sometimes the word “angel” (I think in the Greek the word is angeles, or angelis, or angelos.) ... Anyway, it is used in some cases and translated in our Bibles in English to mean certain human leaders. It is used interchangeably, both ways. Anyway, in this case it is referring to spirit-composed angels. A third of them followed him – a third of all of the angels. The other angels, apparently, are still holy angels. Let’s see. The woman was ready to be delivered:

Revelation 12:4 ... *and the dragon stood before the woman* [which is the Church].

Now remember the woman represents the Church, but this was the Church in the Old Testament. It was called the ... in the Old Testament, as the Church, it was called the “congregation of Israel.” Now “congregation” means the same thing as “church.” It’s a word that is synonymous with the

word “church.” Many churches today call themselves congregations. Many, even of Jewish synagogues, are called Congregation of this or that, or Congregation of Israel, or something like that.

The Old Testament children of Israel were called both the kingdom of Israel and the congregation of Israel. As a government, they were the kingdom of Israel; but as a Church, they were the congregation of Israel. Now you are going to see that the Church today is both called a nation, and a Church, and also something else that we are going to come to a little later. Now let’s try to get right along with this.

Revelation 12:4 ... to devour [{2}](#) her child as soon as it was born.

Christ Is Born

That was Jesus Christ, who was born.

Revelation 12:5 And she [meaning the congregation of Israel, now, through the tribe of Judah] brought forth a man child [That was the Child, Christ.], who was to rule all nations ...

Do you know that in most preaching in churches today they leave out entirely that Christ came to be a King? That He came to rule! That there is government mixed up with the gospel of Jesus Christ! They don’t preach that much today, but you do hear it in God’s Church.

Revelation 12:5 ... who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God.

Now that skips quickly over the 3 1/2 years of Jesus’ ministry (between the ages of 30 and about 33 and 1/2) up past 31 A.D., when the Church was formed and Jesus had ascended up to heaven. So the “Child” now was the Lord Jesus. After His crucifixion, after His resurrection, He ascended;

Revelation 12:5 ... was caught up unto God, and to [God's] throne.

He now is sitting on His Father's throne; and WE may be granted to sit on His throne on this earth, when He comes again to earth, **as** He now sits on His Father's throne in heaven – IF we are overcomers, IF we have His Spirit, IF we begin to live God's way and turn away from the way of humanity and the way humanity is living in this world.

Did that come off? [Someone answers, "Yes."] Did they hear me? I'm sorry, but I'm speaking through a microphone; and I think it would be hard for you all to hear me without it. Anyway, it came off. Well, I wouldn't know where to go back to, to begin; so I'll proceed right along.

The True Church Flees

Revelation 12:5-6 She brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations ... [He] was caught up unto God, and to his throne. (6) And the woman fled into the wilderness...

Now we get into the Middle Ages. This happened along in the Middle Ages for 1260 years, where the Church had to flee. They had to meet underground, and secretly; and many times they had to flee: The time of the Waldenses, and of Peter Waldo, and of other leaders of the Church through those Middle Age years.

Revelation 12:6 ... where she hath a place prepared of God...

I want you to notice that, at that time, the woman fled. Now you flee on your own feet. I want you to keep that in mind, because we are going to see something else a little later that is a little different.

Revelation 12:6 ... that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

Now I'd like to mention here that that brings the Church up to now, past the Middle Ages. We are all past all of that now, and up to our time. But you will notice that the Church was fed there 1,260 days.

Now, there is a duality running all through the prophecies of God and in the plan and purpose of God. When it speaks of "days" in prophecy, of prophecies that are in Old Testament or medieval times (and prior to this end time in which we live) a "day" is a year being fulfilled. The 1260 days means 1260 years, and the Church was persecuted; and the **true** Church of God had to FLEE for 1260 years.

Now there's a great false church, pictured in the 17th chapter of Revelation, who was ruling over the governments of this world during those same years. But you read of the true Church of God right here, and the true Church of God was **persecuted** and had to flee for 1260 years; and that brings us up to the present time.

Christ's Own Prophecy

Now then, I'm going to depart from this for a little while and go to some other scriptures that fit right in, into the story flow right at this point. So, to bring you up to date now, I'd like to turn back to the 24th chapter of Matthew. Matthew 24, and I want to first read the first five verses. I going to have to read a lot of scriptures, and I hope it won't take me too long this afternoon.

Matthew 24:1 Jesus went out ...

Now this is the one great prophecy of Jesus Christ Himself. This is the greatest prophecy in the New Testament.

Matthew 24:1-2 Jesus went out [He'd been at the Temple in Jerusalem and He went out ...], and departed from the temple: and [the] disciples

came to him for to show him the buildings of the temple. (2) And [He] said to them [When they showed Him the buildings of the temple, He said:], See ye not all these things? I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down.

Now that actually did take place in their lifetime, in 70 A.D. But they thought the Kingdom of God and the Second Coming of Christ was going to happen in their lifetime too. So a little later, Jesus was up on the Mount of Olives. In the next verse:

***Matthew 24:3** And as [Jesus] sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be?*

What things? The things He'd been talking about: the destruction of the temple. As I say, that happened in 70 A.D. – in their lifetime.

***Matthew 24:3** And what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?*

Now that didn't mean the end of the earth, it's just the end of this civilization – this world, this way of things, this way of living – that is bringing so much unhappiness, and sorrow, and violence, and war, and suffering upon the suffering humanity. They thought it was all going to happen in their lifetime, so they asked Him two things; and actually they were to happen about 1,900 years apart. Now Jesus knew that, so He answered them a little differently. First He answered what was going to happen in their time, in their lifetime. So:

***Matthew 24:4-5** Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. (5) For many shall come **in my name** ...*

You search the scriptures; and every place anyone comes in Christ's name, he comes as a representative of Christ – saying he's a representative

(he's a minister) of Christ. He's speaking **for** Christ. They don't come saying they are Christ.

Matthew 24:5 Many shall come in my name [They will come as ministers of Christ.], *saying, I am Christ* ["Saying that ..."] (Jesus is speaking here); "Saying that I, Jesus, am Christ." Saying that Jesus is the Christ.]; *and shall deceive* [the] *many*.

True Gospel Suppressed

You turn to ... I won't turn to it now. I've published this so many times. I've spoken of it so many times. You've heard it in broadcasts, and you've read it in The Plain Truth and The Good News, in the Worldwide News, and so on. But in Galatians the 1st chapter you will find that the gospel that Christ preached was SUPPRESSED. That was written in 53 A.D., and it was already being suppressed at that time; and it was completely suppressed by the year of 70 A.D., when the temple there was destroyed in Jerusalem. Completely suppressed!

Jesus preached **the gospel of THE KINGDOM OF GOD**. That's the government of God, ruled by the Family of God. Now the Kingdom of God is the Family of God (people born into that Family). The world doesn't know what it is to be born again, born of God. When you are born of God, you will be God.

John 3:6 That which is born of the flesh [Jesus said to Nicodemus] **is flesh.**

That's what you are. That's what I am. That's what we all are. But when you are born of the spirit, you will BE SPIRIT (not flesh and blood at all). You'll be composed of spirit. God is not made of flesh and blood. God is composed of spirit. And we'll be His children. We'll be born of Him. **We'll**

be spirit.

In other words, we'll be God-beings (God-persons); Never as great as our Father, God. He'll always be our Father. Jesus Christ will always be – not only our Elder Brother, as He is now – but the Church is to marry Christ. He'll be the Husband, and the wife has always got to be (in God's way) obedient to her husband. Not many wives like that today, in this world; but that's the way it is with Christ.

So you will notice that they were coming and DECEIVING the many! Doing away with the gospel of the Kingdom of God, just proclaiming about the **Messenger** that was to bring the message – that **Jesus**, who brought the message of the Kingdom of God, He was **the Christ**; and that's all. They say, "Receive Christ, and you go to heaven when you die." The Bible says no such thing. The Bible says, Jesus Himself said:

***John 3:13** No man has ascended up to heaven.*

And you read, on the day of Pentecost Peter's inspired sermon, he said that David was dead and buried, and his sepulcher was with them "unto this day;" but David had not ascended to heaven. Yet he's a man after God's own heart; and in the resurrection he's going to rule over the nations that have come from the various the tribes of Israel.

Second Question Answered

So now, that part is what Jesus answered that was to happen in their lifetime. He knew that part of the question they asked – about the end of the world and His Second Coming – would happen a lot later. So He didn't come to that till you get down to verse 14{3}.

***Matthew 24:14** And this gospel of the kingdom ...*

That's the gospel He was preaching – "*This gospel of the kingdom,*" which was DONE AWAY between 53 A.D. and 70 A.D. And the world has not heard about the Kingdom of God, the government of God, the Family of God, being born into; become God in the God Family. The world doesn't hear that. That's the gospel! That's the gospel in your Bible. Why don't they agree? This is God's speaking in the Bible. This is not me speaking. This is not Herbert Armstrong's word. This is the Word of the Eternal God! And I agree with God. I believe what He says. Do you? I hope you do.

So, finally, He said:

*Matthew 24:14 This gospel of the kingdom [that He was preaching] shall be preached into all the world for a witness unto all nations; and **then** shall the end come.*

My brethren, that gospel was not preached after 70 A.D., to the world, until God raised me up to begin preaching it. And it was precisely 1900 years (one century of time cycles) from the time it was stopped in 53 A.D. till 1953 A.D. That it went on the world's most powerful radio station in Europe, the first Sunday in 1953 A.D. – exactly 1900 years later. You know these things ... God works things out perfectly on time. God's timing is something very perfect. Now, that gospel of the Kingdom was to be preached in all the world. That brings us up to where we are **now!**

Now, in this train of prophecy, I began back before the birth of Christ. We came through the birth of Christ, through His ministry, His crucifixion, His resurrection, ascending to heaven. Then, in the Middle Ages, the Church had to flee. And now it comes down to the time when finally, before the Second Coming of Christ, the gospel of the Kingdom would be preached. In the meantime, they would simply say that "Jesus is the Christ" but deceiving the world.

In Vain Do You Worship

Jesus Himself said, “*IN VAIN do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*” – and making the law of God of no effect by “your traditions” (teaching human traditions). That’s what they were doing, and merely preaching human traditions.

Now, I think that we should go back to Revelation the 3rd chapter and show a little something in the gospel of the Kingdom being preached around to the world. Revelation 3, you will begin in verse 1. It says:

Revelation 3:1 *Unto the angel of the church in Sardis write: These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars [And I might go back and show you what they are.]; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, [but] are dead.*

That is the state of the Church when I first came among it and began to wonder, “Where is the true Church of God?” I began studying the Bible with Romans 6:23 – “*The wages of sin is death.*” I said, “I can’t agree with that. No, the Bible is all wrong. The wages of sin is eternal life. It’s not eternal death.” That’s what I’d been taught every since I was a boy in church. I was raised up in Sunday School (a very respected denomination). I said, “Well, the Bible has got to be wrong. The wages of sin is eternal life, only it’s a place. It’s in hell fire.” Then I read the next part of that same sentence:

Romans 6:23 *... but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.*

I said, “That can’t be. I can’t agree with that either, because I’ve already got eternal life. I don’t have to get it as a gift from Christ.” Then I began to see where Jesus said no one goes to heaven. I began to see where the Bible says, “*As in Adam all die,*” all will be made alive in a resurrection. That’s the only way you’ll ever be made alive after death – through a resurrection.

I began to see that the Word of God was right, and I was wrong. That led to my conversion. I had to find **how wrong I was!** Not only that I was wrong in what I believed. I was wrong in WHAT I WAS: How I was. How I was living. What I believed. What was in my mind. What was my intent in life. Why was my goal in life.

And I had to completely change my whole life's direction. I had to not appropriate and get Christ. I didn't try to just receive Christ. I gave myself to Christ. How about you? How about you? Are you on the giving side or on the getting side? This world is on the **getting** side. God's law is giving. "*Thou shalt love the Lord thy God (and loving) thy neighbor as thyself.*" That is **out-flowing love**. The world is in getting, in-coming lust, and greed, and vanity, and all that sort of thing.

The Philadelphian Era

Now then, that's the Church when I first came about it, and came to know something about it. But there's another Church that came a little later, and that begins here in the 7th verse of Revelation 3:

Revelation 3:7 *And [to] the angel of the church [of] Philadelphia ...*

Now, let me tell you, "angel" can have one of two meanings here: Either it can mean there is a spirit angel assigned to the Church, or it can mean the human leader that God raises up for that Church. It can mean either one.

Revelation 3:7 ... *write [these things]: These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and [he that] shutteth, and no man [can] openeth.*

In other words, that's talking about Jesus Christ; and He said:

Revelation 3:8 *I know thy works ...*

Now, He's either talking to a human leader or He's talking to the whole Church called "the Philadelphia Era" of the Church. It is speaking of the different conditions in the Church at all times, I know – all seven conditions; but also it is speaking of **the dominant condition** of seven different successive Eras. That is what it is speaking about; and, when anyone says that is not true, they don't understand the Bible (and they don't have the Spirit of God to understand it).

Revelation 3:8 *I know thy works; behold, I have set before thee an open door, and **no man can shut it** : for thou hast a little strength ...*

And that's better worded, really better translated, "You have **only** a little strength." You don't have much strength physically, mentally, humanly: But what else?

Revelation 3:8 ... *Thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word*

...

How many people have BELIEVED, let alone **kept**, God's Word? You can't keep it if you don't believe it. Adam and Eve didn't believe what God said. God talked to them in person, just like I sit and talk to someone right here beside me. But Adam and Eve didn't believe God.

Jesus Christ came. He preached to multiple thousands of people. Twice He preached to 5,000 men (not counting women and children). He preached to numerous audiences. Small audiences and great audiences! How many do you think believed what He said? Only 115, isn't it? (Acts the 1st chapter and the 15th [{4}](#) verse.) Very few ever believed. 120 it was, who believed what He said. Now:

Revelation 3:8 *I know thy works ... [and that] thou hast a little strength, [but you] hast kept my word* ["You have kept my word." That means

everything to God.], *and hast not denied my name.*

You see some churches have to be named after Luther, some after Wesley, some after other men or after like a “Congregational” where the congregation rules the church, and others like the Presbyterian where the presbytery or the ministers rule it (and always in a democratic manner, by vote, of course). But keeping His word and keeping His name – God’s Church was to be in His name.

Revelation 3:9 *Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan [meaning other churches that claim to be of God], which say they are Jews [He is a Jew who is one inwardly, Paul said in the New Testament – spiritually speaking; and this is spiritually speaking.], and [they] are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.*

I don’t know whether this could fulfill that prophecy or not, but do you know that the great churches of this nation came to our aid in our recent struggle against the State of California trying to take over the Church, and all of its assets, and property? The Roman Catholic church, the Methodist church, the Baptist church, the Jewish congregation, the Lutheran church, the Presbyterian, the Congregational, the Baptists – they all came to our aid. I don’t know whether that fulfills this prophecy or whether God will do it another way.

Revelation 3:10 *Because thou hast kept [{5}](#) the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation [or that’s the great time of the Great Tribulation], which shall come upon all the world, to try them ... on the earth.*

Now, we’re going to come to the Great Tribulation just a little later. Let me say, this can mean the whole Church or this can mean the human leader of the Church. I don’t know which. I’ve always supposed it meant the whole

Church. But it's going to be pretty hard for the whole church (which is in South America, in Mexico and Central America, which is in North America, which is in Europe, and which is in Britain, and which is in Canada, and which is in Australia, and which is in Asia, and which is in Africa and South Africa, and ALL OVER THE WORLD) – I don't know how we are all going to go to some place of safety. But maybe we are, maybe we are. Anyhow, that is something for God to show us when the time comes definitely.

Revelation 3:10-11 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience ... (11) Behold, I come quickly.

Well, that practically ends this to the Church of Philadelphia.

Revelation 3:12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God.

I'm going to show you what that temple is, just a little later, (a pillar in the temple of God). What about that temple Christ is coming to? Well now, I think we need to get back to that. I've covered that.

God's Messenger

Now that brings us up to the time of **proclaiming the gospel of the Kingdom**, and Jesus Christ raised up His apostle and the leader of YOUR CHURCH to proclaim that gospel for the first time in 100 time cycles, or 1900 years, **WORLDWIDE!** And it has gone to all the world, and no one else has done it. So what are you going to do about that? No one else has done it. IT HAS BEEN DONE. It has been done.

Now, how did God **prepare someone** for that kind of a job? I want you to go now back to Malachi. I'm going to fill in other prophecies right here, and we're going right along the story flow now. How was he prepared to do that thing at this time? We're coming right down to our present time, in what

is going on. All right, the 3rd chapter of Malachi. Malachi 3, the first 5 verses:

Malachi 3:1 Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me [That's a human messenger.]: and ...

Now could that be an “angelos”, an angel? Maybe it could mean the same kind of angel that was spoken of back there in the 3rd chapter of Revelation? Anyway, this is speaking of a human messenger. We know that because in the preliminary manner it did refer to John the Baptist.

Malachi 3:1 ... prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple ...

Now I wonder what temple it is speaking of? This is speaking IN A DUALITY! Jesus came the first time to a physical temple built of stone and wood, with a lot of embellishment of gold and silver and precious stones and things like that. What kind of a temple is He coming to the second time? But let's read on right here in this prophecy right now.

Malachi 3:1-2 ... he shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. (2) But who may abide the day of his coming?

Now, we are talking about the coming of Christ and someone preparing the way, as a messenger, before Him. What is it talking about? What coming is it talking about?

Malachi 3:2-3 Who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth [at this coming]? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap: (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi.

Did Jesus do that when He came the first time? He never did anything like that at all! That's what He's going to do when He comes again, in your

time and mine, right now in this generation.

Malachi 3:3 ... and [He will] purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.

That didn't happen when Christ came the first time. It will when He comes again now.

Malachi 3:4-5 Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the LORD, as in the days of old, and as in former years. [That didn't happen then. It will now.] (5) And I will come near to you to judgment: and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, and against false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in his wages, the widow, and the fatherless [and so on].

That's talking about what Christ will do when he comes to **RULE WITH A ROD OF IRON**. That's talking about **the Second Coming of Christ!** It says that there will be a human messenger to prepare the way before His coming.

Now John the Baptist was a forerunner. John the Baptist was a type. You read of that in the 1st chapter of Mark. You read of it in Matthew. Jesus talks about it. John the Baptist was a messenger before the First Coming. But listen: As John the Baptist was **A VOICE IN THE WILDERNESS** of the Jordan River (the **physical** wilderness of the Jordan River) crying out to prepare the way for a physical, human, Jesus to be born of a physical, human, woman; and coming to a physical temple (built of stone, and wood, and gold, and other metals); and coming to a physical, human, Judah (His own), who received Him not; and coming just to **announce** that there **would be** a Kingdom of God (1900 and some years later) – so, **in the same way** for His Second Coming, this is saying that there would be someone preparing the way who would be **A VOICE CRYING OUT IN THE SPIRITUAL WILDERNESS** of religious confusion in the Twentieth Century, preparing

the way before THE GLORIFIED CHRIST, **coming in power and great glory**, His face shining like the very sun. And coming to a His SPIRITUAL temple (a **glorified** temple), and coming not to just announce He's going to set up the Kingdom of God but coming to set it up: And coming to His SPIRITUAL people, and not a human people.

Now I've got to go a little further to explain some of that, but at least you see that much. Now turn one page in your Bible, over here in the 4th chapter of Malachi; and you read in the 5th and 6th verses:

***Malachi 4:5-6** Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD: (6) And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.*

That word "curse," did you ever look it up? It's the same Hebrew word as you'll find in the 14th chapter of Zechariah where it is translated **complete utter destruction!** "Unless I come and smite the earth with UTTER, TOTAL, DESTRUCTION." It will be at a time when men can annihilate and erase all human life from the earth. Brethren, for the first time in all the history of mankind, the weapons of mass destruction now exist that can erase all human life from this earth and BLAST all human life out of existence. **And it will happen if God does not intervene and stop it!** Otherwise, it will happen; and I'll show you that in just a few minutes, as we proceed now in the story flow of this thing.

"This Latter House"

Now what about the temple He's coming to? The first time He came to a **physical** temple made of stone. That temple was the temple built by Zerubbabel. Now the original temple, built at Jerusalem, Solomon built; and it was a very glorious temple. A very glorious temple! But it had been

destroyed; and, 70 years after it was destroyed, a Jewish colony was sent back from captivity. The Jews were all in captivity by that time. But a Jewish colony was sent back to Jerusalem to build another temple. Ezra and Nehemiah were prophets, along with them; but the leader, and the governor, and the one to build that temple was a man called Zerubbabel. Zerubbabel was the governor of the whole colony. And so we pick up Zerubbabel here in the book of Haggai, the 2nd chapter beginning with verse 3, where God says:

Haggai 2:3 *Who is left among you ...*

He's saying that now to the colony that were there to start building the second temple. This would be the temple that Jesus **did** come to the first time.

Haggai 2:3 *Who is left among you that saw this house in her first glory? And how do ye see it now? Is it not in your eyes in comparison of it as nothing?*

It was totally destroyed! Solomon's temple was gone. Now He says:

Haggai 2:4 *Yet now be strong, O Zerubbabel ... and work: for I am with you.*

He said, "Be strong, and work." That is a type of us; and God says to us today "Be strong, and work." We've still got WORK to do, and I'm working harder right now than I ever did in all my life. Are you working harder with me in the Work of God, in backing me up? That is the challenge. I know I'm taking it very seriously. I have to work harder now than I did when I was 20, 40, 60 years of age; and I'm quite a little more than that right now (although I don't feel like it).

Haggai 2:4-6 *Be strong, O Zerubbabel ... and work: for I am with you, saith the LORD of hosts. (5) According to the word that I covenanted with you when ye came out of Egypt [That is, with the Israelites. Of course,*

Zerubbabel himself hadn't been there; but his people had.], *so my spirit remaineth among you: fear ye not. (6) For thus saith the LORD of hosts: Yet once, it is a little while, and I will **shake the heavens** ...*

Now, that's in the future. He's going to shake the heavens. That is talking about something that is going to happen in our time, very soon now. It hasn't happened yet. Now notice: This is a prophecy, not a history. It's a prophecy. God says:

***Haggai 2:6-9** I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land; (7) And I will shake all nations; and the desire of all nations shall come: and I will fill this house with glory, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. (8) The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the [Eternal] of hosts. (9) The glory of **this latter house** shall be greater than of the former, saith the [Eternal] of hosts; and in this place will I give PEACE, saith the LORD of hosts.*

Why, it's the time when the world is going to have PEACE. That wasn't talking about Zerubbabel's time. He's talking about the time when He's going to **shake the thrones of nations**, when He's going to **shake the whole world**. That is the time just ahead of us, and the Day of the Lord; and that hasn't hit yet. It's to hit in a very few years at the most – a very, very few, in our time, in our generation now. And I hope that God will spare my life on into that time.

The Spiritual Temple

Now there is someone of whom Zerubbabel was a type, a forerunner, who was to prepare the temple to which Christ will come the second time. Now let's just see for a moment what was that temple. I have to go back in just a second to the 2nd chapter in Ephesians. I forgot to put this in my Bible, but I want to go to it; the 2nd chapter of Ephesians – speaking of the Church

– and beginning with verse 19{6}: This is speaking of the Church up at Ephesus, and they’ve been born of Gentiles; but now they are all in the Church of God. It says:

Ephesians 2:19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners [They’d been foreigners, of a different nationality. “You are no more strangers and foreigners.”], *but fellowcitizens with the saints* [Now it’s talking about national citizenship, and the saints have a citizenship with God and you’re fellowcitizens with the saints.”], *and of the household of God* [Now it’s a **family** relationship.]

Now the Church is a nation. The Church is a family, and a family relationship – the household of God. Now notice what else the Church is.

Ephesians 2:20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets ...

You build a building of stone, of wood, and of materials like that on a foundation. Now notice, he’s talking about a building now.

Ephesians 2:20-21 ... on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; (21) In whom **ALL THE BUILDING** [Now **the Church is a building**. “All the building ...”] *fitly framed together groweth unto* **A HOLY TEMPLE** ...

Now the building becomes a holy, spiritual temple. That, my brethren, is the temple to which Christ is coming! Did you think maybe the Jews were going to tear down the Dome of the Rock across there (on ... just to the west of the Mount of Olives) on Mount Moriah in Jerusalem, and build a temple for Jesus? Oh, no. He’s not coming to a physical temple. He’s coming to a temple that will excel Solomon’s temple by far in glory. Well, the temple that Zerubbabel built didn’t excel Solomon’s temple in glory. But Christ the second time is coming to a temple that will!

Now, what temple is He coming to? He's coming to the Church. And when He comes, the dead in Christ (that have died in the Church) will rise first in a resurrection; and we (which are alive and remain at that time) will be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye – this mortal will put on immortality. And we will become **God Beings**, no longer physical beings. Our faces will shine like the very sun.

That is the glorious temple to which Christ is coming! We are to rise to meet Him in the air as He's coming, and His feet will stand on that same day on the Mount of Olives. It's talking about this Church.

Now, Zerubbabel built the temple to which Christ came the first time. He was a type, a forerunner, of someone to build **THE SPIRITUAL TEMPLE – THE CHURCH – TO WHICH CHRIST IS COMING** the second time. **BRETHREN, YOU ARE THAT TEMPLE! That ought to thrill you clear from the top of your head to the bottom of your feet.**

You are that temple to whom He is coming – a glorified temple, glorified and raised up to meet Him in the air in a glorified form, no longer human flesh and blood, now composed of spirit and absolutely God just as Christ is God and just as God the Father is God. That's what God has in store for you and for me – if we will overcome, if we will walk with Him, if we will agree with Him, and if we will do as He said to Zerubbabel (get in there and work, which is what we will have to do).

Zerubbabel, A Type

Now I'd like to go a little farther here in Zechariah, where it still continues about Zerubbabel. Zerubbabel was a type of someone God is going to use to raise up the Church that will be the temple to which Christ is coming **NOW**. Now Zerubbabel wasn't the greatest man in the world. God had to stir him up. He wanted to lounge around and take it easy for a while.

You read the whole history back there. You'll have to read a lot more than I read to you. God had to get after him to get him to get busy and work; and I wonder if He doesn't need to get after us a little bit, so we'll work a little harder? But notice over here in Zechariah the 4th chapter.

***Zechariah 4:6** Then he answered and spake unto me, saying, This is the word of the LORD unto Zerubbabel [Now Zerubbabel's still here in the picture.], saying, Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the LORD of hosts.*

Zerubbabel didn't have a lot of physical, human, power either. But God was ... He was a type of someone God was going to choose that would not have much physical, mental, human POWER – but whom God would use through the POWER OF GOD'S HOLY SPIRIT. Notice: “Not by your physical power, but by My Spirit, saith the LORD of hosts.”

Now here's another thing: If this means this – if God's Church is being built, to which He's coming; and if I have had something to do with it (and if I haven't, I don't know who did) – notice verse 9:

***Zechariah 4:9** The hands of Zerubbabel have laid the foundation of this house [Meaning in this antitype, prototype or whatever you call it today – THIS CHURCH. As he did in that temple that Christ came to the first time ...]: his hands shall also finish it.*

Maybe God will keep me alive until it is finished. How near finished is it now? I don't know. Maybe it's more nearly finished than we think. But he says, “*His hands shall **finish it.***” God will keep him alive until he does; and someone with little power and little strength in himself is going by the power of the Spirit of God. Let me tell you, that's the power that created the whole earth and everything in it. That's what it is. So there is the temple to which Christ is coming.

War In Heaven

Now, let's get back to Revelation 12 again. I've been filling in a lot of things as we've gone along, and now we are ready to come up to verse 7. We're getting down to our time. We've gone through the 1260 years in the Middle Ages. Here's the Church. God has raised up someone to do it. You are that Church. The Sardis Era had gone to sleep spiritually. They were virtually dead. God has raised us up, and we have come alive. (I hope we have.) So now, coming back to the 12th chapter of Revelation, beginning with verse 7, now we get down to our time, now – when this Church is either already raised up, or still being raised up.

Revelation 12:6 *And the woman [meaning a Church] ...*

No. It's verse seven I want.

Revelation 12:7-9 *And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels; (8) and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. (9) And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were [now demons] cast out with him.*

Now there again is **duality**. Back in the 14th chapter of Isaiah [and] the 28th chapter of Ezekiel, you read of this Lucifer that was on the throne on earth, who became the Devil and he ascended up to heaven to try to knock God off the throne. But he was knocked back down to earth. Now that was before even Adam was created. That was before mankind was ever created on the earth.

But here it shows a time now, **in our time**, when he's gone up a second time to try to conquer God. This time God just simply delegated it to Michael and His angels to contend with him, and Michael and His angels were given

power to cast Satan and his demons back down to the earth. I think that happened just before the State of California tried to attack this Church.

My brethren, I have been persecuted ever since I gave myself to Christ. I was never persecuted in all my life before that. I had troubles before that. But our troubles were financial sometimes, and it was just little things. But there was no persecution. No one ever persecuted me. The minute I became a minister of Christ, the persecution set in; and it's been coming ever since. But that was on me.

But **the Church as a whole** was never persecuted until the State of California attacked us with all of the power of the greatest state in the United States. California now is the number one state in the country. It's bigger than this state of Illinois, as wonderful as this state is. So I think we just probably passed this time, when that war in heaven has taken place; and Satan is back down, and now notice what he's been doing. He's been attacking us.

Revelation 12:9-10 The great dragon was cast out ... called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world ... (10) And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation ...

You see, we're getting right down to the time when Christ comes, His salvation comes with Him. Salvation doesn't come when you accept Christ. It comes at the Second Coming of Christ. He brings that salvation with Him.

Revelation 12:10 And ... saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God [You see, the time when He comes to set up the Kingdom of God.], and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

Satan was up there accusing the brethren, and has been for about 19 ... Well, I don't know how long he's been up there. But, when he was up there,

that's what he was doing.

Revelation 12:11 *And they [the brethren] overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony: and they loved not their lives unto the death.*

That doesn't mean that they all died; but, at least, they put the Word of God ahead of their own life and they loved it more.

Revelation 12:12 *Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them, Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having **great wrath** [The devil is now just FULL OF WRATH. He's so FULL OF ANGER. He knows he has but a short time. Notice here:], because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.*

How does he know? Because this gospel of the Kingdom is now being preached for the first time in 1900 years around the world; and, when you know that, you KNOW that the coming of Christ and the end of this world is near. I read you that a while ago. Now notice it:

Place Of Safety

Revelation 12:13-14 *And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. (14) And to the woman [Now this is the Church. This is not just the leader of the Church. This is the whole Church. "To the woman ..."] were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might FLY into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time ...*

Now this is 3 1/2 years, not "a day for a year" but "a day is a day" and "a year is a year" here. This is only 3 1/2 short years in the end time. Before the end time, back in Middle Ages, a day was a year being fulfilled. Now it isn't. That's the duality plan of the prophecies of God. She will be protected

for 3 1/2 years. That's the duration of the Great Tribulation. The Church is to be taken to a place of safety. I've been preaching that for the last, how long? 30, 35, 40 years – I've been proclaiming that.

Now I want you to notice: This time, she is to fly on the two wings of a great eagle. The first time, in the Middle Ages, the Church had to go on her own power. She had to flee on her own feet. But now she is to be **taken** to a place of safety. It's a different time all together. I don't know how God's going to do that. I think He'll reveal it, in time; and if He reveals it to me first, I'll get it to all the rest of you. Now let's see. I want to carry on now to verse 16.

***Revelation 12:15-16** And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. (16) And the earth helped the woman [So the earth is going to help us. I think that has something to do with the place of safety, where we are to go.], ... and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.*

That's all I want to read now. That brings us up. There's another period coming up later, and I stop right there in Revelation 12. Now we have to go to some other scriptures right at this point. Next now, (that's where we are now), now what's going to happen next? Not the next verse there. That happens later. But next, now, we go back to Matthew 24 once again, (Matthew 24 and verse 21 and 22.) Now we come to Great Tribulation.

***Matthew 24:21-22** For then shall be **great tribulation** , such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. (22) And except those days should be shortened, there should **NO FLESH BE SAVED ALIVE** ...*

And that word "alive" ought to be there, and it is in some of the other translations. In other words, it's a time when humanity would be destroyed. Like it said about Elijah; unless God comes and smites the earth with **TOTAL**

DESTRUCTION, THE WHOLE EARTH, no one would be saved alive. But, verse 23 – oh, no, it's still verse 22.

Matthew 24:22 ... but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

For the elect's sake, those days shall be shortened. Now then, I want you to get the time. What will happen right after the Great Tribulation? That's the Great Tribulation. But something else will happen at that time. I'll have to come to that a little later, and that's the two witnesses and what they are going to do. But we'll get to that in just a minute. So now, come right on to verse 29, which is the next event in this same 24th chapter of Matthew.

Heavenly Signs

Matthew 24:29 Immediately after the tribulation of those days [Now this is immediately after the Tribulation.] shall the sun be darkened, [and] the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken. (30) And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: ... [that] all of the tribes of the earth shall mourn ...

Just consternation is going to fill people on the earth because God is going to start to intervene with great supernatural signs up in the sky for the first time. Now then, that's immediately after the Tribulation. Now I'd like to have you turn back to Joel, the 2nd chapter and verse 28. Joel 2:28, where He's speaking of the same thing. It says:

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass afterward ...

No, that's not it. Wait a minute. Well now, just a minute here. Oh no, it's verse 31. I just hit the wrong verse.

Joel 2:31 *The sun shall be turned into darkness, [and] the moon into blood [same thing that I just read], before the great and terrible day of the LORD come.*

The Day of the Lord is God's intervention and when He intervenes on the earth to stop the hellish Great Tribulation, which is the wrath of Satan the devil. That's what it will be, and we are getting very close to that time. Now there's one thing else to happen just before that, maybe I'll have time to cover that pretty soon. But now back to Revelation the 6th chapter. Revelation 6, and the 5th of the seals that is opened (and this is the Great Tribulation); and now right after the Great Tribulation (when the sun and the moon are to be dark, and those things) notice here it is in another scripture, in Revelation 6 verse 12:

Revelation 6:12-16 *And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood; (13) And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth [That's right after the Great Tribulation now, and], even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs [That can't mean stars that are bigger planets than the earth, or bigger than our sun. That has to mean sort of a meteor shower, I would think.], when she is shaken of a mighty wind. (14) And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together [That's when they see the sign of the Son of Man up in heaven.]; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. (15) And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men and every bondman, and every free man [getting into all kinds of people, from slaves up to the greatest], hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains. (16) And [cried out] to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hid us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb.*

Day Of The Lord

They see the wrath of Christ now. They can see it coming up in the sky. These things are going to frighten people out of their wits! They won't know what to do. They're going to try to seek death even.

Revelation 6:17 *For the great day of his wrath [That's the Day of the Lord.] is come; and who shall be able to stand?*

Now that is the coming of the Day of the Lord at last. Now we go right on to the 7th chapter, which comes next.

Revelation 7:1 *And after these things [After those signs in the sun and the moon. That hasn't happened yet. That's going to happen just a little later now and after the Great Tribulation. "After these things ..."] I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, [neither] on the sea.*

Now these are trumpet plagues. You blow into a trumpet, and the trumpet plagues are now about ready to be blown; but here comes an angel.

Revelation 7:2-5 *I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God [which is the Holy Spirit]: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea. (3) Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees [It's not people. It's going to fall on the earth itself, rather than people.], till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. [Now, you'll notice a reference on that in Ezekiel 4 and verse 30.] (4) And I heard the number of them which were sealed, and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel. (5) Of the tribe of Judah ...*

Well, it goes on to mention them; but you'll notice the children of Israel

are mentioned in a different time order than they are back in Genesis and other places in the Bible. Here Judah is mentioned first, and then Gad and Asher, of the tribe of Naphtali, the tribe of Manasseh comes next; and then Ephraim comes in as Joseph later on (next to the last), the tribe of Zebulon and finally it gets down to Benjamin – each one 12,000.

Revelation 7:9 *After this [now verse 9] I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of ALL nations, and kindred, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands.*

White robes of righteousness of saints. Here are people that have come out of the Great Tribulation. This is after the Great Tribulation. This hasn't happened yet. We are getting into the near future right now.

Revelation 7:10-13 *And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb. (11) And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts [or four living creatures, it is sometimes translated], and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God. (12) Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honor, and power, and might, be unto our God forever and ever. Amen. (13) And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? And whence [did they come]?*

This great innumerable multitude (besides the 144,000) – who are these?

Revelation 7:14-15 *And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of [and you'll notice in the Revised Standard translation it is] **the great tribulation** [They came out of the Great Tribulation.] and have washed their robes [In other words, they've repented of their sins is what that means. "And have washed their robes ...], and*

made them white in the blood of the Lamb [after the Great Tribulation]. (15) Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night.

The Laodicean Church

That will be a Church that will follow this Church, and they will come out of the Great Tribulation. We are the Philadelphia Era of the Church. Now I want to carry you just a little further about that. Now we have to turn back to Revelation 3 once again and carry on right after the Philadelphia Era of the Church. Beginning now with verse, let me see, verse 14:

***Revelation 3:14-16** And unto the angel of the church of [the] Laodiceans write: These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God [which was Christ]; (15) I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. (16) So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.*

There is the Laodicean Church. Other things are said there. I won't read any further about that right now, but you find a little more about that in Matthew 25. I'd like to turn back to now Matthew 25 and the parable here that Jesus is speaking at the beginning of Matthew 25.

***Matthew 24:1** Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him.*

Now, wait a minute. I'm in Matthew 24. I mean the 25th chapter. Now, Matthew 25:

***Matthew 25:1** Then shall the kingdom of heaven ...*

Matthew says "kingdom of heaven;" but Mark, Luke, and John all call it the "kingdom of God." It's not a kingdom in heaven or a kingdom in God,

but a kingdom **owned** by God and owned by heaven.

Matthew 25:1 Then shall the kingdom of heaven [or Kingdom of God] be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

Now this is getting right down to the time of the coming of Christ. This is after the Great Tribulation. This is not speaking of our Church. This is speaking of a time just ahead of us and the Laodicean Church, which is yet to come.

Matthew 25:2 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

You see the lukewarmness. Half of them were all right and half were not. But the wise took oil in their lamps. Ah, let's see ...

Matthew 25:3 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them.

They didn't have any oil [{7}](#). Now the lamp is the Bible. The Bible is a lamp unto our feet. The oil is the Spirit of God that will open the Bible to your understanding. Without the Spirit of God you can't understand the Bible. That is the light that lights up the lamp so you can understand it, and makes it light so you can see it and understand it.

Matthew 25:4-6 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. (5) While the bridegroom tarried [Now Christ had been, as they say, "tarrying" or not coming quite a soon as some people thought. "While the bridegroom tarried ..."], they all slumbered and slept. [They just went to sleep on the job.] (6) And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh: go ye out to meet him.

Now the midnight hour was approaching. Here comes the Second Coming of Christ.

Matthew 25:7-12 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. (8) And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are [going] out. (9) But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. (10) And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came [The Second Coming of Christ had happened.]; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage [and into the Kingdom of God, the marriage when we will become the wife of Christ!] ... (11) Afterward came [also] the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. (12) But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, **I know you not.**

Therefore, Jesus said we'd better watch and be sure that our lamps are full of oil: In other words, the Bible. We have the oil of the Holy Spirit in our minds so that we can understand the Bible, and know the Word of God, and be close to God. Are we getting lukewarm, or are we close to God? Well, that's exactly what we need.

Now let me see. Then Matthew 24:30. Why did I have that here? Oh yes, Matthew 24:30. I read right up to it, the 29th verse, immediately after the Tribulation the sun and moon will be dark. Now here's the next verse after that:

Matthew 24:30 And then shall appear **the sign** of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall [all] the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall SEE the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.

Christ's Second Coming

And that comes down to the Second Coming of Christ. Now we turn back to Revelation once again, and this time to Revelation 12:17. Now the last verse of Revelation 12, I didn't cover that before. We just got right down to it. (Wait, where am I here?) Revelation 12 and verse 17:

Revelation 12:17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with **the remnant** of her seed ...

That is the Laodicean Church. He will rend the remnant, the **last** part of the Church, the **last** one of these seven Churches that are spoken of (of the Churches in Asia, that are spoken of back in the 2nd and 3rd chapters of Revelation).

Revelation 12:17 ... the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

They were in the Church all right. The Laodicean Church is the Church of God. But they were **lukewarm**; and half of them, they'd lost the Holy Spirit; and that's where they were.

Now we're ready to close this thing. I don't know how much time I've taken. I'm going to look and see. Oh, I think I'm right on time. I'm a little over an hour, but I expected that. Now we go to the 11th chapter of Revelation. Revelation 11 and verse 15, where it says:

Revelation 11:15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms [or the governments] of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign forever ...

And then we turn over to the 19th chapter of Revelation, and you will read here in the 19th chapter that, let me see, in verse 11 ... beginning with verse 11:

Revelation 19:11-15 And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. (12) His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were **many crowns** [The coronation ceremony will have taken place up in heaven before He comes back.]; and he had a name

written, that no man knew, but he himself. (13) And he was clothed in a vesture dipped in blood [showing that it is the blood of Christ that is shed for the remission of our sins]; and his name is called *THE WORD* of God. (14) And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses [Matthew 25 says they are all the holy angels.], clothed in fine linen, white and clean {8}. (15) And out of his mouth goes a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations; and [he shall] rule them with a rod of iron.

That sword is the WORD OF GOD because it shows you what you are doing that's wrong, and that seems to hurt people – to know how wrong they are. But it's only straightening them out so they'll do the right way, and live the right way, and do the right thing.

Revelation 19:15-16 And he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. (16) And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, *KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS*.

And that comes down to the Second Coming of the glorified Christ.

Satan Removed

Now we go on into the 20th chapter.

Revelation 20:1-2 And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. (2) And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years.

At last, GLORY BE TO GOD, Satan the devil will be **GONE!** Oh, how glad I'll be. I want to tell you, brethren, you don't know how Satan has been smiting me lately; and it's a horrible, terrified, thing. I just can't see ... the most ugly, terrifying faces that are coming at you, just like you could see them. But Satan is going to be put away.

Revelation 20:2-3 *He laid hold on ... that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. (3) And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.*

And people are going to follow him once again when that happens. I'm not going to go that far today.

Revelation 20:4 *And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given [That's the saints. That's you and I. Judgment will be given to us. "And judgment was given ..."] unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus [That goes back to the martyrs that were martyred, and there are going to be other martyrs yet ahead of us.], and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads ... and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.*

And that will be the thousand-year reign of **peace** – the Kingdom of God will have come at last.

Brethren, the mission of this Church is this: As John the Baptist was a human messenger who was a voice crying out in the physical wilderness of the Jordan River, there is a human voice crying out today IN THE SPIRITUAL WILDERNESS of religious confusion – of every confused kind of religion in this Twentieth Century. That voice was crying out to prepare the way of a physical Jesus coming to be born of a virgin. Today the voice is crying out preparing the way for THE SPIRITUAL CHRIST to come IN POWER AND GLORY – as King of kings, and Lord of lords.

That Jesus came to a physical people. This Jesus is coming to a glorified people that will rise to meet Him in the air and be changed from mortal TO IMMORTAL and be GLORIFIED even as He will be glorified. He

came then to a physical people. He's coming to A SPIRIT BEGOTTEN AND SPRIT BORN PEOPLE this time. He came then to proclaim that more than 1900 years later He would set up the Kingdom of God: This time He is coming TO SET UP the Kingdom of God and BRING PEACE to this whole earth for the first time in the history of mankind.

Well, brethren, that is the message of prophecy for our day – starting from the time of Christ, on down. I've just given you a quick, hurried, brief summary. I've never put it together that way before myself, and I don't think you've ever heard it put together that way before. But I thought it would make a good message for you, and would show you WHERE WE STAND TODAY. And, as God said to Zerubbabel, **“Get busy and work!”** **“I AM WITH YOU,”** says the Lord. **“It's not by your own power, but BY MY SPIRIT.”**

Let's get closer to God. Let's pray harder than we ever did. Let's get closer to Him, until we are **walking with Christ** as we never did before. That's my appeal to you, brethren.

Time is going fast, and rapidly. I am working harder than I ever did before. I think God can keep me alive as long as He needs to. I know in less than three months I'll be in my 90th year. I don't know how time has gone by. I suppose I've passed middle age, but I never reached middle age. I never knew of it, if I did. I don't know when it was. I never grew older. I never even believed in it. But all of a sudden I look on the calendar, and I see that the calendar says I'm older. I don't feel it. I don't believe it. I'm doing a lot more work than I've ever done in my life.

I'm trying to write more for you to read. Some of you have a hard time reading enough to keep up with me. [Laughter] But I'll continue. I'll continue my part. Will you? Hundreds and thousand of you write in (Many of you, all together) that you are backing me 100%. Oh, thank you, brethren. But are

you praying as hard as I am? Are you working as hard in this Work as I am? Nothing else counts. Nothing else counts at all. The things of this world are of no good any more. Let's look forward to the World Tomorrow. It's coming, and I've shown you what will happen between now and then. I've shown you right where we are, where the Church is. I didn't go so much into world conditions this time as I did the condition of the Church, but that is my message for now.

So thank you all, brethren. I wish I could see you. All I see is darkness and a lot of lights up around the ceiling and the roof, and I've had to preach to you without seeing you. And I would much rather look into your faces. I wish I could have. However, I've enjoyed coming back – to know that I'm in Chicago and talking to our dear brethren here in Chicago. God be with you, and God bless you.

Keep praying for me and praying for the Work. Remember that while Satan is very angry right now, that God is still on His throne. And I tell you, the Work is still going ahead; and it is gaining everywhere. I hope it won't be long until we'll be on television here every day. But we are on a very fine station here now; and, I tell you, record results are coming in. And your local ministers are going to have a lot more people to talk about being baptized very soon now. And I hope there'll be more of you – more to join you, and more to be with us in the Church and to carry on the Work: So goodbye everybody, and God be with you and bless you all. [Applause]

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - At first Mr. Armstrong said “under,” but then he changed it to “over angels.”

[{2}](#) - Mr. Armstrong said the word “deliver,” but the Bible text reads “devour.”

{3} - Mr. Armstrong made a false start here, and he said “And he ... No, verse 14.” Then he continues at the right place.

{4} - Mr. Armstrong said Acts 1:10, but he was referring to Acts 1:15.

{5} - Mr. Armstrong stammered around here a little bit, saying “kept my word, and of my patience.”

{6} - Mr. Armstrong said verse 18, but he read from verse 19.

{7} - Mr. Armstrong said they didn’t have any “lamp,” but he undoubtedly meant “oil” (as the Bible says in the verse he was reading).

{8} - Mr. Armstrong said the word “clear,” but the Bible text reads “clean.”

Revelation 12

Sermon (April 18, 1981)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Revelation 12.....	417	Zerubbabel's Temple	433
A Prophecy Of The Church	418	Coming To A Spiritual Temple	434
Church In The Wilderness	421	Whole World Deceived	437
God's Measurement Of Time	425	A Place Of Safety	440
Sardis Church Era	426	Parable Of The Ten Virgins	443
Preparation Of The Temple	432	Christ's Second Coming	448

Well, greetings to all of you. This is the third time I've spoken here since I've come back to Pasadena, but the first time to the Church. The other two times were at college forums. I've had a little attack of the Asian Flu again. I seem to get that about once every seven or eight years; and it seems to last for sometimes three, four, five weeks with a low temperature, a head cold, sore throat. But I decided I wouldn't stay away another Sabbath. I'm going to be here, and I'm going to do the best I can to bring you a message today anyway, and I believe God will give me the strength to do it.

I'd like to speak today on a prophecy. You know I think we seldom think of it this way, but the Bible gives us prophecies in about two or three different categories. There's one prophecy or series of prophecies found several different places in the Bible, probably somewhat based on Daniel (especially Daniel 2 and Daniel 7, although some of the other chapters in Daniel go along with it; in fact the whole book in a sense) and connected up with Revelation 13 and Revelation 17. Now those prophecies are concerned about conditions in Satan's world, the governments of this world, that are now replacing the government of God, the Kingdom of God. Which...of course the Kingdom of God has never been established yet. But the

government of God was on this earth, under angels at one time, only there was rebellion and the angels sinned; and so we read of the angels that sinned in II Peter the second chapter and verse four.

A Prophecy Of The Church

Now there is another prophecy in the twelfth chapter of Revelation which is a prophecy concerning the Church, and especially the Church and its relation to Satan. There are two churches mentioned in the book of Revelation. One is the true Church of God – a small, persecuted Church – persecuted by Satan; persecuted by the governments of this world, which are the governments of Satan. The world doesn't realize it, of course; but they are actually the governments of Satan.

Then we have the prophecies ... the principle prophecy, you might say, of the New Testament is the prophecy of Jesus, which you find in Matthew 24 and Mark 13 and Luke 21. Jesus there is speaking also of the conditions in the world and of the Church, and the condition of, well, the effect that the Church is having in the world. What would happen **in** the world and those of His disciples who were **in** the world? I'm going to touch on some of those things; but today I'm going to take as my theme, something I have never done before, the twelfth chapter of the book Revelation; and in a sense it spans the entire course of the Church.

Now the Church did not begin in the year of 31 AD as sometimes we mistakenly think. The New Testament Church did, which we call and we think of as the Church. But you find the Congregation of Israel, which was both the Congregation of Israel and also the Kingdom of Israel. It was one of the world's governments, one of the world's kingdoms or nations. But it also was a spiritual or religious, not spiritual, but a religious congregation. It was not called "Church." It was called "Congregation." But the two words mean

exactly the same thing – a called out assembly, or group of people. And so, in a sense, the Church started back there under Israel.

Now I would like to begin in Mathew, rather in Revelation the thirteenth chapter, where John says.... I mean the twelfth chapter. I'll get this straight after while. I still have a little temperature in my head. If I go off the beam, please forgive me today. I'm doing the best I can. But when you have a head cold and you have a temperature on the thermometer, temporarily until that gets straightened out (believe me, I am not senile) but temporarily my head gets a little bit fogged up. The twelfth chapter of Revelation:

Revelation 12:1 *And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun...*

Now the book of Revelation is primarily written in symbols, symbolic language; and a woman is simply a symbol of a church. So, it's speaking of a church; and this is the Congregation of Israel that was also the Kingdom of Israel back beginning with the days of Moses.

Revelation 12:1-2 [This] *...woman was clothed with the sun and the moon under her feet and upon her head a crown of twelve stars. [Symbolic of course of the twelve tribes of Israel, although stars are often referred to as angels or as sometimes human leaders]. And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.*

In other words, Christ was born of the tribe of Judah of the kingdom of ancient Israel – although Judah had split off and become a separate kingdom in the days of Rehoboam, after the death of king Solomon.

Revelation 12:3 *And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.*

Now that ties right in with Revelation 13 and also to a certain extent

Revelation 17, although the same symbols are not in the seventeenth chapter. But it is referring to the governments of this world under Satan that you'll find in Daniel 2, Daniel 7, and in Revelation 13 and 17. Of course, that great red dragon (as we see as we proceed) is Satan the Devil.

Revelation 12:4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven...

That is, a third of the angels. Stars again are a symbol of angels; and they are sometimes used as a symbol of human leaders, or human messengers.

Revelation 12:4 ...his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.

That of course is the Christ child, born of Judah. Jesus came to His own, the tribe of Judah, the Kingdom of Judah; and His own received Him not. But Satan tried to devour Him through the Roman king and through the Roman government that was in authority in Palestine at the time as soon as Jesus was born. God had to warn Joseph and Mary (Mary was the mother of Jesus.) to flee with the Christ child into Egypt until king Herod (I believe it was Herod, wasn't it?) was dead. And then they came back, and they went up to Nazareth where Jesus was brought up; and he failed in that attempt. Again Satan tried to devour Jesus when he was thirty years old – before He began to preach, before He began His ministry.

But she brought forth a man child who was to rule all nations. So much in the Bible speaks of Jesus as a coming King. The prophecies in the book of Isaiah (for instance, in Isaiah 9:6-7) speaking of Jesus as a coming King to rule over nations and that His kingdom would endure forever. It was spoken to Mary, before Jesus was born, by the angel. Jesus said He was born to be a King, for that cause He came into the world. But His kingdom was not of this time, this age, or this world. This is Satan's world; and His kingdom is for the World Tomorrow, which is soon to dawn now in our time.

Revelation 12:5 ...she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne,

Now there quickly it travels over the time from ancient Israel, the birth of Christ, Satan's attack, Jesus' ministry, His death, His resurrection, His ascension to heaven caught up to God. All that has been covered in that little space that I have just read to you.

Church In The Wilderness

Revelation 12:6 And the woman (the Church) fled into the wilderness...

Now we get into the Middle Ages. Part of the time the Church had to flee. About the year of 53 AD, when the apostle Paul wrote the book of Galatians, you find that the gospel was already beginning to be suppressed. Jesus came preaching the gospel, taught it to His disciples who became the original apostles – the original leaders of the Church. And the Church, of course, followed that doctrine and that teaching. That began in 31 AD. But by 53 AD the Church had hardly become of age; and false doctrines were being substituted, counterfeit gospels were coming – primarily a gospel, as it turned out to be later, about the Messenger who brought the gospel message. Now we're going to see just a little later that Christ was the Messenger of the New Covenant. He brought that message, and He came as a Messenger; and that **message** was His gospel.

But it was the government again, under Satan, that persecuted the Church. They had to meet secretly, and they finally even had to flee into the mountains through the Middle Ages (the Waldenses and other people like that).

Revelation 12:6 ... where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

That's twelve hundred and sixty years. Now that particular twelve hundred and sixty years is not synonymous with the twelve hundred and sixty years of the revival of the ancient Roman Empire. It was revived in 554 as the Holy Roman Empire, and it lasted twelve hundred and sixty years until Napoleon's Waterloo, as we call it, in the year of 1814, and that was twelve hundred and sixty years. But that is a different twelve hundred and sixty years, apparently.

Anyway, that carries us through the Middle Ages and brings us up to approximately our time now. So, you notice how many **years** are covered in just a few short verses here in this twelfth chapter. Now this twelfth chapter of Revelation will cover clear up to the Second Coming of Christ.

Now I want to begin to fill in other prophecies with it and some of the other things that are not mentioned at this place. I'd like to show you first one thing about a duality of the twelve hundred and sixty days. There were two of those, and they were not synonymous. But this flight of the woman into the wilderness was a forerunner of a duality of prophecy, you might say, of the Church today – **this Church**, our Church – that is to be taken on the two wings of a great eagle to a place of safety. And it's time that we get back to that again now; and I noticed that some of our ministers are beginning to speak on it, and it's time that we get back to it. I've not said much about it now for about twenty, twenty-five years, because at least one minister was ridiculing the whole idea (as much of the Bible was ridiculed at the time). And again, I was only speaking about this time of fleeing ... not fleeing, but being taken to a place of safety. I guess I was just ahead of my time a little bit. I was in a lot of things.

Way back in the time of World War II, and even prior to World War II, I

was speaking a great deal on the air about the Day of the Lord. I thought it would be here almost immediately. Yes, so I was wrong. But you see Peter was wrong, and all the original apostles, and the apostle Paul was wrong. They thought the coming of Christ was going to be immediately in their time, in their generation, nineteen hundred and fifty years ago. So, they were wrong; and of course I had to be a little wrong too, or ahead of my time.

And so I have not been speaking so much about the Day of the Lord now for some twenty-five or thirty ... no, it's more than thirty, thirty-five years or more. But it's time to get back to that now because we're coming into that time very quickly now. That's one reason I've selected this subject to speak to you today. I want you to know **THE TIME we're in now. Where are we** in the time of prophecy, as a Church? As I say, some of the prophecies speak about conditions in the world. This speaks of the condition of the Church in relation to Satan.

Now at that point I want to go back to Matthew 24, and I want to cover the first five verses back here. Matthew 24, well, Jesus was speaking to His disciples in the temple, or at the temple.

Matthew 24:2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

He was speaking of the temple, all the buildings of the temple; and it was to be destroyed. Now that did happen in their lifetime. That happened in the year of 70 AD. He was probably speaking to them around 29 or 30 AD, or it might have even gotten into the beginning of 31 AD.

Matthew 24:3 And (later now) as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us when shall these things be? [What things? He had been speaking about the destruction of the temple. But now they asked another question.] And what shall be the sign of thy coming,

and of the end of the world [age]?

The reason they tacked that question on was because they thought it was going to happen in their lifetime, the same as the destruction of the temple did happen in their lifetime. So, here was Jesus' answer to them:

***Matthew 24:4-5** And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. (5) For many shall come **in my name**, saying, I am the Christ; and shall deceive many.*

Many will come in Jesus' name, saying Jesus is the Christ. It's Jesus speaking; and He said, "Others will come in My name, saying I am the Christ." Not saying they are the Christ. I know there was a man named Krishnamurti, I believe his name was, brought over by a woman named Annie Besant, or something like that, from India, claiming to be Christ. And I think a man claiming to be Christ walked into one of our offices across the way over here one day and said, "I'm Jesus Christ.". But the answer was "Well, if you're Christ, I won't be able to grab you by the nape of the neck and seat of the pants and throw you out of here." And he got him out, and dusted off his hands; and said, "No, I've decided you are not Christ." And he got thrown out of the office, or I don't think he was really manhandled. I may have exaggerated that a bit, but he was put out.

Anyway, Jesus told them what would happen in their lifetime first; and He didn't tell them what would be the sign of His coming (because that was going to be more than nineteen hundred years later) until a little later. So He started out, and He said:

***Matthew 24:5** Many shall come in my name saying, I am the Christ, and shall deceive many.*

Now that happened in their time. The gospel was suppressed. Another gospel was given, but they claimed to be the ministers of Jesus Christ. Satan

claims to be (**and is**) the god of this world, and claims to be. Now Jesus didn't come to answer the second question until we get down here to verse 14, because that didn't happen in their lifetime.

Matthew 24: 14 And (this gospel which He was preaching) this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

God's Measurement Of Time

Now, Jesus was preaching the gospel of the kingdom. As I said, another gospel suppressed it, supplanted it. The gospel of the kingdom was NOT preached for **nineteen hundred years**. That's one hundred time cycles. Now God put the sun, the moon in the heavens in relation to the earth, to mark off certain spaces of time. One day is marked off by one revolution of the earth as it is measured by the sun, by what appears to be a sunset to us. Actually, the sun isn't setting. It's the earth that just turned past the sun. The week is measured by God's Sabbath – not by the sun, or the moon, or the earth; but by God's Sabbath. But the month is measured by the moon, and one revolution (yes) of the moon around the earth is one lunar month; and one revolution of the earth around the sun is a solar year.

Now those three bodies – the sun, the moon and the earth – which mark off time come into precise, or almost precise, conjunction once in nineteen years. Now that's another thing that has been scoffed at by those who will not go along with the true teaching of Christ, and of God, and of the Bible. But there is a nineteen year time cycle; and nineteen years is a cycle of time as measured by the sun, the moon, and the earth.

Apparently, the gospel was suppressed about 53 AD. It went on the most powerful radio station on earth (after it had gone coast to coast in the United States for one time cycle of exactly nineteen years, beginning in 1934

on the first Sunday beginning of January) and in the first week of January 1953, nineteen years later, the gospel began going to the world; and that was one century of time cycles from the time it apparently was suppressed according to Galatians chapter 1 verses 6 and 7. God does things right on time, and we need to sort of wake up to that fact and realize it. Maybe we should be on time a little better than we always are.

Now let's get the time now. That gospel is going to the world; and it has gone through this Church, and through the one that God raised up as the leader of this Church. That gospel has been going to the world for the first time in **nineteen hundred years**. And you know it's another funny thing, today is the crucifixion anniversary of the death of Christ. We celebrated that last night as a memorial, and it is nineteen hundred and fifty. In other words, it is a century of time cycles plus fifty years **exactly** from the time that Christ did die. God does do things on time. All right, now Revelation 3; and in verse one I'd like to read:

Revelation 3:1 And unto the angel of the church in Sardis...

Remember these... notice that these messages in the second and third chapters of the book of Revelation, the actual message is given to the **angel** of the Church. Now that word comes from the Greek word (I don't know whether they pronounce it angeles, or aggelos, or angelos.); but it is also translated in many cases "**messenger,**" speaking of a human messenger – like John the Baptist, for example. It could be either; and, in any event, it is not speaking just to an angel. It is speaking either of and to a human messenger of the Church and leader; or it is speaking to the Church as a whole.

Sardis Church Era

Revelation 3:1 And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars [that

you found in the first chapter]; *I know thy works, that thou hast a name, that thou livest, and art dead.*

That Church was spiritually dead. I came among that Church myself. I came among that Church back in nineteen... I first heard of them in the latter part of 1926 and beginning of 1927, and they were spiritually dead. But they did have the right name. They still went by the name "Church of God." They were the Church of God. They did believe in obeying God to the extent that they kept the Sabbath. But they'd lost so very, very much of the truth. They had lost a very great deal of it. They didn't know about the annual Sabbaths. They only knew of the one weekly Sabbath. They didn't know about the Kingdom of God. They didn't know what the true gospel was. Instead of the true gospel of the Kingdom of God, they were preaching what they called a "third angel's message," which is not a gospel at all, just something that's mentioned. Whether that is a real angel or another human messenger must be decided; but, nevertheless, that is mentioned in Revelation. Most people have never even noticed it there, but they made a whole gospel out of it.

Now we come onto the next Church, because I came among them; and God did use me in the raising up of this Church. So, now we come to verse 7.

Philadelphia Church Era

Revelation 3:7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia [Now, this is the Philadelphia Era now, following the Sardis Era.] write: These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth; (8) I know thy works; behold, I have set before thee an open door.

"An open door." You'll find that Paul explains how an open door was opened before him to preach the gospel, to go to another place and preach the gospel. It's a door that is an opening to preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God.

Revelation 3:8 ...*And no man can shutteth* [They tried to shut it, but they've never been able.]: *for thou hast a little strength* ...

And often that is translated, “but a little strength”. You have very little strength, very little strength. My name may be “Armstrong,” but only the arm is suppose to be strong; and it is not as strong as it is suppose to be. I might just mention that in passing.

Revelation 3:8...*and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.*

I would like to tell you one thing: one difference between the raising up of this Church and the other churches in the world today. You take the leader or the founder of any church. Take the Wesleys, the founders of the Methodist Church; Luther, the founder of the Lutheran Church; any of them that you want; and ask where did they get their teachings that they taught to their followers as the doctrines of their church. How did they get it, and from whom did they get it? **AND IN EVERY CASE THEY GOT IT FROM OTHER MEN. THEY GOT IT FROM OTHER PEOPLE. THEY DID NOT GET IT FROM CHRIST!** But where did the original apostles get it? They got it from Jesus Christ **IN PERSON!** Now get this: Jesus Christ in person is the personal Word of God. He is the Word of God **in person**, but the Bible here is the Word of God **in writing**; and it's the same Word exactly.

Early Scriptural Discoveries

Now, I had been raised and taught by men in one of these Protestant Churches, a respected church, yes. I turned in my study, when I was challenged and I was trying to have my own way and I was trying to prove just the opposite of what the Bible says, as a matter of fact. That is, I hoped I would find that was true. I wasn't trying to prove the Bible wrong from that point of view. That isn't the way I mean it. But I mean I was trying to prove that what is right is the opposite of what the Bible says; and I came across Romans 6:23: "*The wages of sin is death*" And I said," Well, that's

not what I'd been taught!" What I'd been taught by men is that the wages of sin is eternal life. Of course, it's eternal life in hell fire. That's a little different than heaven, but it still would be eternal life. You're going to live forever, and burn forever, and never burn up. You'd be suffering, and suffering, suffering every second as long as ... well, as long as you live. You'd live forever, because you're an immortal soul.

Then I read the last half of that verse; and it says that "*the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.*" "Well, that can't be right! I've already got eternal life. Why do I have to get it from God? Something I already have. I'm an immortal soul...or I have an immortal soul, whichever." That's what I supposed. But you know, as I went a little further in the Bible, I found other things that weren't what I supposed. I found Jesus said, "*No man has ascended up to heaven.*" I found where, in the first inspired sermon on the day of Pentecost, Peter said, "*David is not ascended into the heavens and his sepulcher is here with us even to this day.*" And David was a man after God's own heart, and David is not ascended into heaven. Jesus said no man was.

Then I looked up the immortal soul, and I found "*the soul that sinneth will die.*" That's stated twice in the Bible. Then I found Jesus talked to a couple of souls – Adam and Eve; and in the, let's see, second chapter of Genesis in verse seven:

Genesis 2:7 *And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, [Now what is...man formed of the dust of the ground] and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man [formed of the dust of the ground] became a living soul.*

Not an immortal soul! **So what became A SOUL came out of the ground.** Not spirit, not immortal life; but something out of the ground that had to breathe air to live. And in other places in the Bible you'll find that the

blood thereof is the life thereof. So we get a chemical existence from the breathing of air, the circulation of blood, the eating of food and the drinking of water to constantly give us fuel. And that's what keeps us going. It's just a chemical, temporary existence. It's not life. We don't have **life**. Adam was offered life in the Garden of Eden, but he didn't take it. All he had was a temporary chemical existence. He didn't have life. That's why you read in Ephesians 2, verse 1, that the people in Ephesus had been dead in trespasses and sins. They hadn't been alive. They were dead. But now they are alive by having the Holy Spirit of God.

People who do not have the Spirit of God do not have life. They are **dying** every day they live. From the minute they were born, from the second they were born, they began dying. Dying is a long process. Sometimes it takes a couple of three hours, and some little infants die right at about the time they're born. Some take seventy years before they die; and some few of us live quite a little longer than that, but not too many. But it's a temporary existence.

Now the Bible says that 'it is appointed to men once to die' and 'if in Adam all die, so in Christ shall all be made alive.' We need to remember those things as we go along. Well, let's see. Now He said He would open a door. I think I want to come back to that a little bit later. I won't read the rest of that right now. I'd like to turn now back to Malachi, the last book in the Old Testament. Malachi 3. And I'd like to read a little more than verse one this time. We usually stop at the end of verse one. You don't get the real meaning if you stop there.

Malachi 3:1 Behold, [It's a prophecy.] I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me [Who's speaking? Why the Lord, Jesus Christ was the God of the Old Testament. He's the Word of God.]: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple...

Now we want to know something about that temple too. Christ was coming to a temple; and He **did** come to a temple when He came, didn't He? All right.

Malachi 3:1 ... even the messenger of the covenant,

Jesus came as the messenger of the New Covenant. Moses was the mediator of the Old Covenant. The new is a different covenant, based on better promises but the same law.

Malachi 3:1-5 ...whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. (2) But who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers soap. (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness. (4) Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the LORD, as in the days of old, and as in former years. (5) And I will come near to you to judgment; and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, and against false swearers [and against a lot of other people].

Now what I want to ask you is: Did that happen when Christ came? The answer is, "No, it didn't." Those things didn't happen at all. Those are all things that are going to take place when Christ comes the second time. Therefore, this is speaking primarily of the Second Coming of Christ, and not the first. But remember I said there's a duality. There's a first Adam and a second Adam. There's the Old Covenant; there's the New Covenant. There was the government of God; there's going to come later the Kingdom of God, and the government of God will be restored to the earth. God often does things in a dual manner. In fact, most prophecies are fulfilled that way. Now go back:

Malachi 3:1 Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare

the way before me: and the Lord... shall suddenly come to his temple,

And it is speaking about the Second Coming. What temple is He coming to? What temple is He coming to? And who is to prepare the way? Now you will read (in Mark the first chapter, you'll read it in Matthew and, yes, I believe it is in Luke too) that John the Baptist really sort of fulfilled that prophecy. He prepared the way before Christ. But this is speaking really of the Second Coming and not the first coming; and John the Baptist just prepared the way before Christ's first coming. So, this is really speaking of a Second Coming.

Preparation Of The Temple

Now there's another prophecy I'd like to read to you back here in Haggai the second chapter. Here was Haggai building a temple, a temple to which Christ came the first time. John the Baptist prepared the way before His coming the first time. Let's get something about the preparation of the temples of the first time and the second time.

The temple had been destroyed at Jerusalem, that is Solomon's Temple. It was so glorious, you know, and probably the finest building ever built on earth. I don't know whether St. Peter's at Rome would be considered finer now today or not. It's ugly and filthy and dirty though, and Solomon's Temple was just glistening with shiny gold and silver and beautiful things. It was very, very beautiful. Of course, St. Peter's Basilica in Rome is beautiful in a way; but it is dirty. But in Zechariah four, verses six and nine:

***Zechariah 4:6** Then he answered and spake unto me, saying, This is the word of the LORD unto Zerubbabel, saying, Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the LORD of hosts.*

Zerubbabel's Temple

He's talking of the type of, the forerunner of, one who would have very little strength or very little power or spirit. **YOU CAN'T DO IT WITH YOUR OWN POWER. YOU HAVEN'T GOT IT. YOU'RE A HUMAN BEING! YOU DO IT BY THE SPIRIT AND THE POWER OF THE LIVING GOD!** Brethren, **I didn't build this building here.** I had something to do with it though. But it was Jesus Christ who built this building. **I didn't build this campus. Jesus Christ did.** But He used me in doing it. And I had something to do with designing almost every inch of this building and every inch of this campus, and I knew that God had shown me He wanted it to be beautiful.

Three times we have won the award of being the most BEAUTIFUL, the best landscaped and best maintained, campus in United States of America. God's campus **ought to be**, and it is. And I say, "Praise be to God!" – not to any human beings though. We're only instruments. I didn't do it. Christ did it. To Him goes all the credit and glory. It's been done by faith. It's been done by the **power of the Spirit of God.** Let's **realize** that.

I've noticed in this Work that, when some **men** get advanced to a certain higher position, they want to climb a little higher in the Work. They want a little bigger salary. It isn't always a bigger salary they want. So often, it's a little more power. They want the power, and God doesn't give it to them; and many of them are out, out in the world. Out in the cold, cold world going nowhere. They are just like (Oh, that man back in Moses' time. Why can't I think of his name now?) Korah and the people with him. Moses said to him, they said, "Korah, you had a high position, you had been elevated to quite a lot of authority; but it wasn't enough. You wanted **more** authority, **you** wanted...you were thinking of yourself, and your position, and how much position you could get it."

What did God do? (Moses didn't do it. God did.) God just let the earth fall away from under them, and they sank down, and the earth swallowed them up and covered them; and they were buried alive. And God is the same yesterday, today and forever. Well, today there are those who do that and are coming to nothing. Those who get to glorifying themselves and want power for themselves, God doesn't give it to them. He just does not give it to them. There's one other verse I'd like to read here. Verse nine:

Zechariah 4:9 *The hands of Zerubbabel have laid the foundation of this house [Now that was a type of the house, or the temple, to which Christ is coming.]; his hands shall also finish it; and thou shalt know that the LORD of hosts hath sent me unto you.*

If that...if he was a "type," I hope that the-one-he's-the-type-of will finish the work and will be kept alive. So I go back to Isaiah 40 and the last three or four verses there; and I find how God renews our youth like the eagles, and how God can keep us alive and can even bring us back from death as He has brought me back from death – because I died, and I was brought back.

Coming To A Spiritual Temple

Now what about the...what about the temple? I'd like to turn to something I hadn't...I didn't have it marked here. I didn't intend to, but I want to turn to it – to Ephesians...Ephesians, the second chapter; and just a few words here:

Ephesians 2:19 *Now therefore ye [That's the Church at Ephesus; and this would be the same as the Church of God anywhere that day, or of today, or at any time.], you are no more strangers and foreigners [They had been Gentiles.], but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God.*

Now, if they're citizens, that's speaking of their citizenship in a nation. They're no more foreigners; but they're also of "the household of God," and now He's speaking of the Family. A household is a family. So they're in a family relationship, the Family of God.

***Ephesians 2:20-21** And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone [Now he is talking about them being a building.], (21) In whom all the **building** [That's the Church. The Church is a building.] all the building fitly framed together groweth unto [A holy ... what?] a holy TEMPLE in the Lord:*

That's the temple to which Christ is coming! People have argued about are the Jews going to destroy the Dome of the Rock that the Arabs have in Jerusalem – standing on the very sight where Solomon's temple once did, and where the temple did to which Christ came the first time? And are the Jews going to build a temple for Him to come? Oh, no! The temple it's speaking of is a spiritual temple.

Now someone is to prepare the way for His coming. John the Baptist prepared the way for His first coming. John the Baptist was a voice crying out in the PHYSICAL wilderness of the Jordan River, and he was preparing the way for a PHYSICAL Jesus to come in the human flesh; and He was coming to a PHYSICAL temple built of stone that Zerubbabel built. Now just as John the Baptist may have been a type, so Zerubbabel was a type of the one who would build the second temple. That is, that Christ would **use** in the building – because, actually, it's God doing all these things anyway. Now God's doing it through Christ, and Christ does it through the Holy Spirit.

But He came the first time to a physical temple and to a physical human, Judah. And He came announcing that He **would** bring about the Kingdom of God, but that was to be more than nineteen hundred years in the future. Was that a type of someone crying out in the SPIRITUAL wilderness

of religious confusion of this Twentieth Century? Of the **SPIRITUAL CHRIST COMING IN POWER AND GLORY! NOT AS A PHYSICAL JESUS; BUT THE GOD, JESUS, in power and glory to His SPIRITUAL TEMPLE THAT WILL MEET HIM IN THE AIR, in the clouds.** The dead in Christ of that temple will rise first. We, which are alive and remain, will be changed instantly from mortal to immortal, and rise and meet Him as **IMMORTAL** people. A far more glorious temple than Solomon's!

A spiritual temple, that's what we shall be! Your faces won't be the color they are now, pale or whatever color they are. Your faces will all be as bright as the sun itself, full strength. Your eyes will be like flames of fire. You will be spiritual! You'll be composed of spirit. **You'll have life**, and you won't be dead. You'll have life! You'll have the kind of life so you **never can die**. You'll have the kind of life that can never be unhappy. You shall always have joy and happiness. You shall always want to help others and do good, as God does.

He's coming this time to establish the Kingdom of God – which is a spiritual Kingdom, which is the Household of God, the Family of God that will **RESTORE THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD ON THIS EARTH** and put away Satan the Devil. That is what is going to happen.

Now we're just tracing the history of the Church here, and its relation to Satan the Devil, and some of these things. I want to get this history of it over to you. So now we'll go back to Revelation 12 once again and verses... beginning with verse 7. Now we get down to our present time, and here this Church has been raised up by one that God taught through the printed Word of God. The one that was taught by the printed Word, as the original apostles were by the personal Word. Same Words exactly.

You tell me any other religious leader in the world that got his religion that way and gave it out to the whole Church that way. There is none! This is

the only Church that has been built that way, brethren. You are the only ones that have that precious knowledge; and much of that knowledge had been lost through the Middle Ages, and God has restored it. You have knowledge that the Church didn't have a hundred years ago, two hundred, three hundred, five hundred, seven hundred years ago. You are privileged to have that wonderful knowledge. Do you appreciate it? Do you value it? Do you realize how precious it is? It's time we wake up and that we do realize.

Whole World Deceived

All right, begin with verse seven now. I had read the first six verses back here in Revelation 12.

***Revelation 12:7-9** And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels. (8) And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. (9) And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world [**The whole world – not part of it, all of it!**]; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.*

Now that is right near the time of the coming of Christ, because the next words say:

***Revelation 12:10** And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation and strength and the kingdom of our God...*

Salvation comes at the Second Coming of Christ and the Kingdom of God. So this is prior, just prior. Now, it could be as much as ten or fifteen years or thirty years prior; but it's getting close, considering the time of the thousands of years that things have been going on here on the earth. In nineteen hundred and fifty years for the Church itself, comparatively short time. But "*the great dragon was cast out.*"

Now, wait a minute...this war in heaven, Michael won it. This is again, there's duality. You read back in the... in Isaiah 14 of how the archangel Lucifer had been put on a throne on this earth and said, "*I'll exalt my throne above the stars in heaven, I will ascend...*" and he was going to knock God off the throne and take over the whole universe. You also read of him in Ezekiel 28 where he was perfect in all of his ways from the day he was created, until iniquity was found in him. The great archangel Lucifer became Satan the Devil. He had tried to swoop up to heaven with his angels and knock God off the throne. He was cast down. There's a duality. It's happened again, and I think that has happened just recently in our time.

Now the Bible doesn't tell us when. We have to judge by what has happened. By the fruits you know, and what are the fruits? What has happened? The persecuting power always was the governments of this world – the governments of Satan. Satan persecutes through his government – the world's governments, the world's kingdoms, the world's **laws**. They are all masterminded by Satan the Devil. It's time that a lot of people begin to wake up to that fact because they exalt the governments of this world, the **courts** of this world. **The Bible speaks of the UNJUST JUDGE!** When it comes to **judges** in the courts of this world, there isn't justice there. And we should have learned it in a recent lawsuit where the government tried to overthrow and take over this Church, and did not succeed, and shall not succeed because this is the Church of the living God. And God did protect His Church and did preserve it; and He said the gates of the grave will never prevail against it; and this is the only Church that Jesus was talking about at that time.

Now let's go on here in this twelfth chapter again of Revelation.

***Revelation 12:10** And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ, for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, ...*

When people begin to accuse the brethren, they are doing the work of Satan; and I have heard a lot of that in the last three or four months – ACCUSING THE PEOPLE AND THE LEADERS OF GOD . Satan is **the accuser** of the brethren.

Revelation 12:10-11 ...which accused them before our God day and night. [That's what he was doing up in heaven.] (11) And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto death.

I don't think that is speaking of the time of a martyrdom. That is yet to come. But I think our people did not love their lives unto death when you filled this auditorium and the hall of administration and the other buildings so that the officials of government could not get in; and you were holding religious services so they were afraid to enter and disturb a religious service. God was with us, and the power of God.

Revelation 12:12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

How does he know? How does he know that he has but a short time? Jesus said when this gospel of the **Kingdom** has been proclaimed to the world then shall the end COME! **Satan KNOWS that's been going around. He KNOWS he has a short time.** Many people don't know that though. I wonder if we know it in God's Church. It's time we do know it. He knows he has but a short time.

Revelation 12:13 And when the dragon [which is the devil] saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.

And that is us; and he has been persecuting us, and he will continue to persecute us. Satan is not through, and we're going to be persecuted from now until Christ does come and put Satan away. So, prepare for it brethren; and, if it doesn't hit you, maybe you don't belong to Christ as much as you think you do.

A Place Of Safety

***Revelation 12:14** And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle [when this persecution comes to its full strength, it hasn't come to that yet] that she might fly into the wilderness, into her **place**, [God has a PLACE, and there is a place.] where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time...*

This time it will be three and a half years. Now the time, time and half a time – that's twelve hundred and sixty days. And at the end time, when you come down to this end time, a day is a day being fulfilled. But prior to that, back in history, a day is a year being fulfilled in prophecy. Back in Numbers and in the Old Testament you find the key to that. It's all explained. I can't go into that today; but I hope you've read much of our literature, or heard it preached, and so that you understand all that. Anyway, she is...

***Revelation 12:14-16** ...from the face of the serpent. [This twelfth chapter is showing us the history of the Church (that is, the future history from Christ's time) in relation to the devil.] (15) And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. (16) And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth and swallowed up the flood [not the woman] which the dragon cast out of his mouth.*

Now that leaves one verse yet that I'll come to later. Now I want to fill in a few other verses at this point. Next I'm going to go back to Matthew 24,

what is just coming next now and what we're leading into. It's a result of Satan's wrath, and we will very soon be coming to it. Mathew twenty four and verses twenty one and twenty two. Now, this is coming very soon now. We're almost up to that time.

***Matthew 24:21-22** For then shall be **great** tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. (22) And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved [**alive**. It's speaking of keeping humanity alive, not spiritual salvation in that case.]; but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.*

That is the Great Tribulation, and this Church is to be taken to a place of safety for that three and a half years of that Great Tribulation. Now at this point I'd like to turn back to a prophecy in the Old Testament again, in Joel 2 and verse 31.

***Joel 2:31** The sun shall be turned into darkness , and the moon into blood, before the great and terrible day of the LORD come.*

Now, that was before the Day of the Lord. Now I want to show you here in verse 29 of Matthew 24...

***Matthew 24:29** Immediately after the tribulation of those days [just after the Great Tribulation] shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:*

But that will be before the **Day of the Lord**. So you see, first comes the Great Tribulation, after that the signs in the sun, and moon and the stars; after that the Day of the Lord. And Christ comes in the Day of the Lord, or very soon after its beginning; and I don't know whether that is a few days, a few weeks, or a few months. I don't know. I don't think it's a few years. But God doesn't give us the time; so I don't know, and you don't know.

Now back to Revelation 6 this time. Revelation 6, and I want to show you about the sun and the moon being dark. Beginning with verse 12 in Revelation 6.

***Revelation 6:12-17** And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake [Now this follows the Great Tribulation which is the fifth seal in this chapter in Revelation.] and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood. (13) And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, [I think that means it has to be a meteor shower, not stars that are bigger than our sun, of course.] when she is shaken of a mighty wind. (14) And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. (15) And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and **every bondman, and every free man**, **HID** themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains; (16) And said to the mountains and rocks, **FALL** on us, and **HIDE** us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb. [Because they SEE the sight of this in heaven, and it's going to FRIGHTEN them as they have never been frightened in all their lives. They're going to want to die and **seek** death, and won't be able to.] (17) For the great day of his wrath [God's wrath] is come; and who shall be able to stand.*

The Great Tribulation is really caused by Satan's wrath, but the Day of the Lord will come upon us as a result of God's wrath on Satan and the people that are following his way. Now, I'd like to go on just to mention a little bit about the seventh chapter of Revelation here, while I'm on it.

***Revelation 7:1** ...After these things there were four angels holding up the four winds of the earth that they should not blow [on the earth and the seas and the trees and so on] ...*

Then appeared the hundred and forty four thousand and another great innumerable multitude of all nations. Now when they ask, “Who are they?” They are people that come to Christ out of the Great Tribulation. A **great...** not revival; but a great conversion of people is going to happen as a result or during the Great Tribulation. Many people have heard our message. **Millions** have heard it that we have not heard from, believe me. They haven’t paid too much attention to it now; but, when these things happen, they’ll say, ”**That was the truth** that we heard”. They’ve heard it on television. They’ve heard it on radio. They’ve read it in the Plain Truth.

Millions of copies of the Plain Truth are going out now every month, over two million. And I hope we will get it built back up over three million again very soon. We are reaching millions of people, and I think we don’t realize it. We don’t hear from all those millions. We just hear from those that are a little bit interested. So many of them get it. They say, “Oh, yeah;” and they go on, and they don’t pay much attention. But, believe you me, they’re going to pay attention when the Great Tribulation comes. Now we’re in a time of trouble now such as the world never had before, but it is going to be a lot worse than this. This is a forerunner, you might say of the Great Tribulation, that we’re into right now.

Now those of the hundred and forty four thousand, the great innumerable multitude, they will be the Laodicean Church that is to follow this Church. The Laodicean Church has not appeared as yet. You want to know about that? Well, that’s it. It will come out of the Great Tribulation. You find the Laodicean Church in Revelation 3 and again in Matthew 25. The Laodicean Church – they’re lukewarm. They’re only half filled with the Holy Spirit.

Parable Of The Ten Virgins

But now I'd like to have you notice in Matthew 25 just a moment. Here's something you might devote a lot of time to in studying, Matthew 25 beginning with verse 1.

Matthew 25:1 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins...

Now that's speaking of those in the Church, and the ten virgins. This ties up with the ten pounds and also the ten ... the parable that follows this of the ten, of the parable of the talents. That wasn't ten, was it? But the pounds were ten and their result ... they're talking about the Church in this time before Christ comes.

Matthew 25:1 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins [That's the Church in this whole Church Age.] which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

They were told of the Second Coming of Christ over nineteen hundred years ago. Now "their lamps" is symbolic. As I say, Revelation is symbolic. "Thy word is a lamp unto our feet," the Bible says. The lamps then are the Bible. Now these were a Bible-loving people. They didn't have Bibles to take back in the days of Christ, but they...they took the Word of God that they had heard proclaimed nevertheless. But they didn't have oil, the Holy Spirit. Now I want you to notice something right here:

Matthew 25:2-4 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. (3) They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: (4) But the wise took oil [not in the lamps] in their vessels with their lamps.

Now the lamp is the Bible. The lamp is the Word of God. But the vessel that they took the oil in was the person, and in your mind; and you can't understand the Bible without the Holy Spirit. The oil is the Holy Spirit, and those that were foolish did not have the Holy Spirit. They had the Bible; but

they couldn't understand it correctly, because they didn't have the Holy Spirit.

Matthew 25:6 And at midnight...

Now that's the way it has been for nineteen hundred years, but now we get down to our time. They thought Christ was coming right then, in their day. Paul thought so. Peter thought so. He didn't come then. But you know...

*Matthew 25:5 While the bridegroom tarried [Christ didn't come that soon.], they **all** slumbered and slept.*

The whole **Church** slumbered and slept; and, in that **slumber and sleep, they lost sight** of the Second Coming of Christ. They **forgot!** And the Second Coming of Christ **was not** PROCLAIMED through the Middle Ages. **The Second Coming of Christ**, there was a duality there; and the first, it began with the William Miller Movement in 1843, or just prior to 1843. And he had it all figured that Christ was coming in 1843 on a certain date. I forget the date. You can research it and look it up, if you want to get it. He didn't come on that date, and so a lot of people were terribly discouraged. He tried to set the date. You can't do that, of course.

But a lot of people followed a woman, a Mrs. Ellen G. White. And that developed into what became ... And they were people of the Church of God for a while; but they then had a meeting about 1860, and they changed the name to Seventh Day Adventists. But they also had proclaimed the Second Coming of Christ, but they got it all wrong. Christ was only coming to meet us as we were going to heaven, where the Bible says that we're going to meet Him in the clouds as He comes to earth. So they invented their doctrine of the Investigative Judgment in the Seventh Day Adventist Church. And they have their doctrine of the Twenty Three Hundred Days, and the Spirit of Prophecy and some of their particular Seventh Day Adventist doctrines. So they wanted to get rid of the word or name Church of God. They threw it away, and

adopted the name Seventh Day Adventists.

The Church of God continued on. It's headquarters had moved from a place in Iowa to Stanberry, Missouri by the time I came among them back in 1926 and seven. Now we are getting down to our time. But people didn't believe it; and they didn't have the truth about it, or the purpose of Christ's coming, or what He's coming for, or anything about it. It was not the gospel. But...

Matthew 25:6 And at midnight there was a cry made ...

I guess it's like they expected Him about seven or eight o'clock; and they went to sleep, you know. Makes me think of when I was in a church to see the old century out and the new century in. I was seven and a half years old. 1899 was going out, and the year 1900 was just coming in. I was just a little kid, seven and a half years old; and they made me sit there in church until midnight. There was no program. There was no music. There was no speaking. Nothing. I wanted to turn over and go to sleep, like these virgins. My parents wouldn't let me. My father would kind of thump me on the side of the head once and awhile and say, "Wake up there, son". And I'd try to wake up, but it was very difficult. But these virgins were sleeping, and they lost a lot of the gospel.

Matthew 25:6 And at midnight there was a cry made [A voice started to cry out, now, in the spiritual wilderness of the Twentieth Century], Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him.

Now, as I say, there was a one-two there. A one-two shot, "type and antitype," or whatever you want to call it. And William Miller gave a little bit of something about it in 1843, or just prior to that time. But we've been proclaiming it, and people haven't paid too much attention to it; but still there are thousands in God's Church today, and it is the Worldwide Church of God, and we are worldwide today.

Matthew 25:7-9 *Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. [That is, they began to dust off the Bible and look into a little bit.] (8) And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us your oil, for our lamps are gone out [Or “they’re going out,” as some of the other translations have it.]. (9) But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.*

You know you sort of have to “buy” the Holy Spirit, when you stop and think about it. You have to give up, not money. You don’t give up money. You have to give up yourself. You have to give up your own way of life. You have to repent, and you have to begin to believe, and you have to give yourself to God; and that’s the way you receive the Holy Spirit. I was writing something this morning. I won’t take time on it. How do people get demon possession, and how do they get the Spirit of God? There’s quite a difference, a great contrast between those two; but I won’t go into that now.

Matthew 25:10-12 *And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came [the Second Coming of Christ], and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. (11) Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. (12) But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.*

When they didn’t have the Holy Spirit, they didn’t have the life of God; and He did not know them. It made me think there are a lot that understand part of the Bible, but they’ve never received the Spirit of God. Just believing certain parts of the Bible doesn’t save you, brethren. The Spirit of God is a different spirit, a different attitude that comes into you. It does not possess you like a demon might possess you, but it will open your mind to understand and comprehend the Bible. And the Holy Spirit of God will lead the way, and will show you the way, and say, “This is the way, walk you in it.” And the question is whether you will do it or not.

Well, at that time, now we get back to Matthew 24 again, just one verse here. Oh, my, I get so many scriptures here I get lost trying to go from one to the other. Matthew 24 and verse 30. I read 29 a while ago. And... Wait a minute. I'm in the wrong chapter.

Christ's Second Coming

***Matthew 24:30** And then shall appear [after the signs in the sun and the moon and the stars that I read in verse 29] the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.*

And that will be the Second Coming of Christ. Now we turn back to finish Revelation 12, in the final verse, verse 17.

***Revelation 12:17** And the dragon was wroth with the woman [That's the Church.], and went to make war with the **remnant** of her seed [The remnant is the last part, the tag end of a bolt of cloth that you buy in a dry goods store; and the remnant then is the Laodicean Church.], which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.*

A lot of them may be commandment keepers, but they won't have the Spirit of God. That is a spirit and an attitude. We have to have the life of God, the Spirit of God, within us. Now in Revelation 11 and verse 15, finally, to just bring this down to something complete. Revelation 11 and verse 15.

Revelation 11:15** And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, **THE KINGDOMS OF THIS WORLD** [That's all the governments of this earth.] **ARE BECOME THE KINGDOMS OF OUR LORD, AND OF HIS CHRIST; AND HE SHALL REIGN FOR EVER AND EVER.

And then you go on to the twentieth and the nineteenth chapter and that

you'll find how Christ is coming as the "*KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS*," and then in the twentieth chapter how Satan is taken away and the saints will rule with Christ in the Kingdom of God. And so that will complete the history of the Church up to the coming of Christ as it is, in the twelfth chapter of the book of Revelation and other scriptures that I have used to fill in a lot of the little points along the way.

We're right now I think at the time just after that war in heaven between Michael and his angels fighting against Satan the Devil and his demons. And the devil is down and full of wrath. It hasn't come to the final persecution yet. We're not right at the Great Tribulation, but it is next to happen. We're very, very close to it. There isn't much time left. And I thought it was necessary to have that. I might have said some things today about the annual holy days and the festivals of God, but I'm going to hope that God will give me the strength to be back and talk to you tomorrow afternoon; and I'll reserve that for tomorrow.

But I thought that you needed this message today. You need to know just where we are and what is happening. We need to remember how this Church has been resurrected, and how God's knowledge has been restored that had been lost while the Church slumbered and slept through the Middle Ages. They lost so much of the knowledge of God. It has been restored. Can you realize that, brethren?

Now tonight is the Night To Be Much Observed; and it is also a memorial of the Israelites coming out of Egypt, as we are to come out of sin. Last night we had a memorial of the death of Christ. We're to remember those things. There was something said in the morning service about remembering these things and why we should, ah, why we should observe and remember the dinner that we shall have tonight. We come to have it with small groups. We tried to all eat at once; and it's too big a group to all eat at once, and you can't do it very well. But I'm having a group at my home, and

I presume you'll all have groups; and we should remember these things. We should remember Christ and His death, and we did last night – a memorial for his death. We should remember how this Church is not just something, just another church. It is something special that God has raised up.

God revealed truth to me; and if there is any reason why He has chose me, there's only one. It's not because of any righteousness of mine. It's not because of any abilities or powers of mine. I've known scores upon scores of men with better minds than I have, better personality, better appearance, more leadership. I'd say about more of everything that you think of humanly. But God has not called them or used them. Why? Why did He pick on one as inferior as I am? Because I was willing to **believe Him**. Adam and Eve didn't believe Him. Jesus Christ talked to thousands who didn't believe Him. Only a hundred and twenty still believed Him after Christ had talked for three and a half years to multiple thousands of people.

But I did believe Him, and I have NOT COMPROMISED WITH THAT BELIEF ONE IOTA; AND I'VE BEEN WORKING HARD THE LAST TWO AND HALF YEARS TO GET THIS CHURCH BACK ON THE TRACK AFTER OTHERS WERE GETTING IT OFF THE TRACK. I don't think we are a hundred percent back yet. I don't think we have gotten **all** of the **leaven out yet**. But it's going out, believe me; and we're going to get it out.

Let's not be part of those virgins who don't have any oil in their lamps. If you have any doubt in your mind, begin fasting and praying, asking God to give you His Spirit. But His Spirit will only open your mind to understand His Word. And you will have to follow it. The Holy Spirit is not going to pull you. It's not going to push you. It's not going to compel you. It'll show you the way. You have to begin to want to walk on it in your own power, and you'll have to ask God for extra power and help.

Brethren, we're in the very last days; and we need to be sure that we are ready. And I hope that you'll all take this very seriously. The things in this world are of no importance from now on at all. Forget them. I used to want to go down and see Lakers basketball games. I haven't any time for that anymore. I'm just having to learn to forget everything of that kind.

How You and I Came to Be Here

Sermon – Melbourne Australia (May 16, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

How You and I Came to Be Here.....	452	The Creation Of Man	473
The Early Church	453	The Two Trees	474
How Paul Received The Truth	455	Human Reproduction	475
How Truth Came In Our Time	457	Spiritual Reproduction	477
Taught By Christ	460	Tree Of Life Shut Off	479
Mind Swept Clean	462	After This The Judgment	480
Hidden Truths	463	Every Man In His Own Order	482
The Origin Of Life	464	God’s Annual Festivals	484
Angels Created First	466	Divine God-Life	486
The Law Of Love	469	God’s Government In The Church	487
Result Of Angels’ Sin	471	The Truth Of God	489

Well, greetings everybody. I’d better wait until I get this microphone on, so you can hear me. So once again I’ll say, “Greetings, everybody.” It’s been just about eleven years since I’ve been here, and I’m glad to be back in Melbourne once again. You have a lovely city here, and you also have quite a little larger number here than we had last time I was here. We’ve been growing, and I hope we have been growing spiritually as well as in numbers.

I think I have a very important message for you today. I want to speak on how you and I both came to be here. Jesus Christ started the Church a little over 1950 years ago (or just about that) in the year 31 A.D. The Church jumped the track of the truth that He had given them between 53 and 70 A.D. The true gospel of Jesus was suppressed. A false counterfeit was substituted. Instead of preaching the message that Christ brought, they preached about the person of the Messenger. You’ve heard a lot about Christ; and Jesus Himself said many would come saying that He (Jesus) is the Christ, but deceiving the

many. And that's been happening now for more than 1900 years. It's happening all over the world today.

I think I saw out front, as we were coming, some people with some banners talking about a religion of fear. Well, let me tell you, the religion I want to bring you is one of faith, and one of hope, and one of a coming world peace such as no one dreams of, and one where everyone who ever did live (and everyone who lives today) is going to have a great opportunity to come into that world peace and come to have everlasting life. It's just as far from fear as it's possible to get. It's too bad that some people can't know the truth, but this is a very deceived world that we live in.

Well, the true Church (as I said) jumped the track of God's truth that Christ had given us. Now Christ gave us that truth through the apostles. Christ talked to many of the people. He preached to thousands while He was here, many thousands. But of all the many, many thousands to whom He preached, only 120 {1} believed what He said (as you find in Acts the 1st chapter and the 15th verse). Very few people ever believed Him, and that's too bad. People don't believe God. But why do people believe what they do today?

The Early Church

Now the Church had to go underground by 70 A.D. All history of the Church had been sabotaged and has been missing ever since. We came to what is known as the lost century, so far as Church history is concerned. For about 100 years, there is no historic record of what happened at all. And about 100 years later (about 150-170 A.D.) we find a church calling itself "Christian" but just about as far from the Church that Christ had started as you could get. It was the Babylonian Mystery religion that had come in and taken over. They had taken the name of Christ and called themselves

“Christian.” They had borrowed one thing of Christ that the Babylonian Mystery religion had not had, and that was grace for the remission of sin. But they turned grace into license to disobey. They did away with the law of God. They had done away with the message of Christ – the Kingdom of God.

The true Church had gone underground. The true Church continued on. But it was persecuted. It was small in numbers. They had to meet often secretly. Sometimes they had to flee. Hundreds and even thousands were martyred. They were persecuted for their beliefs. They had to flee through the mountains of Europe and even of Asia. We come on down ...

Now let me tell you how they got the truth. The truth came from Jesus Christ, and Christ got it from God. Jesus said He had spoken nothing of Himself. He is the Word. He had said nothing of Himself the Father who sent Him – God the Father – had told Him what to say and what to speak. Now He called His apostles, and He taught them; and the Church got the truth through the apostles. That’s the way the Church got the truth. Now a generation or two later, the apostles weren’t there.

I wonder if you ever heard of a game. I think they used to call it the whispering game. I don’t remember the name of it. I played it many, many, many years ago, when I was a young man. You get a group of people (oh 15, 18, 20 people) around in a line. One starts a little sentence of maybe, say 10 or 12 words, and he whispers it to the first one. That one listens, and then he whispers that sentence to the one next to him. And that one whispers the sentence as he thought he heard it to the one next to him. It keeps going on to the end of the line. By the time you get to the end of the line, the one who heard it says what he thought he heard; and it’s as far from the sentence the way it started out as you could get.

Now when you get truth from man to man, and man gets it from other men, it gets distorted as it goes along. You hear a rumor. You get it 2nd hand,

3rd hand, 4th hand; and every time it gets twisted a little bit. Even the true Church had gotten its message that way. Now there were no Bibles at all extant. There was no printing. That came about 4-500 years ago. Even after printing came, a Bible was so rare they had to have a chained Bible so that people would come one at a time and look at it and pass on, but they couldn't take it with them. There weren't enough copies.

Well, they did have Bibles for a while; but they were all hand-written. But even after printing, it was some time before there were enough Bibles. It's only in the last 100 to 150 to 200 years that enough Bibles have been printed so most people can have it. Today the Bible is the world's number one seller. There are more Bibles in more homes (and more other places where a Bible might be) than any other book today. And yet the Bible is probably one of the least read. It certainly is the least understood. It is the MOST distorted, maligned, twisted, perverted of any book that has ever been written; and people simply do not understand it.

How Paul Received The Truth

Now, where did the apostle Paul get his truth? The apostle Paul had been trying to persecute the Church, even to the extent of having them killed and martyred. He was assenting to the stoning and the martyrdom of the first martyr, Stephen. He was, at least, agreeing with it. But Jesus Christ, who had ascended to heaven, had been given ALL POWER in heaven and in earth. And Jesus Christ is the head of the Church, although He is in heaven. And Jesus Christ struck the apostle Paul down with blindness. He fell down. He was on a walk toward Damascus. He knew immediately that something had happened to him.

Christ spoke to him, and others with him; and told them to take him (although he was now blind) into Damascus, where a man was going to show

him what to do. That woke him up, and he realized that everything he'd been believing was just the opposite of the truth. Paul later stated (in some of his writings in the New Testament) that he had been with Christ, that he had seen Christ actually. He also mentioned that he had been over in Arabia for three years, and that is the place where **Christ in person saw him, taught him** what he had. Everything that he had believed before was erased from his mind, and he started ALL OUT NEW and afresh with the truth of God.

When he came back from Arabia, he went over to Jerusalem to compare with the apostles who had been taught by Christ when He was here in physical person (before His crucifixion) to see if they were speaking the same thing – because Paul had been instructed by Christ that we must ALL speak the same thing; and that “same thing” must come from God, through Christ, through an apostle, to us. That’s the way they got it. That’s the way we have to get it today. And when Paul came to Jerusalem, he talked to Peter and others there and found he had been told the same thing by the same Christ that they had been told, and they had absolute harmony and agreement. He wanted to be sure that they all had **the same truth – direct from Christ.**

All right, since then, Christ in person has not spoken to any man. The next generation got the truth from those that had gotten it from the apostles. The 2nd generation and the 3rd generation got it from the generation just before them. And like the whispering game, they got a little less of it; and they got it a little bit twisted. So the truth and the doctrines in the Church (even in the true Church, now I’m talking about) became twisted and mixed up a little bit; and they began to loose a lot of the original truth. Now it’s hard to believe that; but that is what actually happened, my brethren.

In the meantime, of course, the big church was going on – ruling over governments, and was part of the governments of this world. Now nearly all persecution has always come from government; and today it’s coming from the media, the public media (the press, radio, and television as well as from

government). You can search all you want, and that's where you'll find the persecution is coming from.

It was the government that persecuted Christ. You say the Pharisees persecuted Him. Yes, but they were in the government. They had lowly positions in the government of the Roman Empire. The Roman Empire was letting them do all of the minor work of ruling the government so that they didn't have to have too many administrators over in the land of Palestine.

Now that is the way it came on down. If I can get that light just right. I don't see much of you out there. I just see the light up here. I vaguely see you out there. I know you are there. But I couldn't see a single individual of you, to recognize you. However, I'll go on speaking to you just the same. All right; now then, I came among ...

How Truth Came In Our Time

God first opened my mind, to look into the Bible and to study it, in the fall of 1926 when I was challenged both on the doctrine of evolution – which is taught in the colleges and universities of this world, and which is the eyeglasses (you might say) through which they see all truth today. Now the truth they know today is all mechanical, physical, materialistic. They have no spiritual truth whatsoever. The natural human mind cannot receive spiritual truth unless it is revealed, and it can be revealed only by the Holy Spirit of God. Very few have ever had the Holy Spirit of God, or very few have it today.

But when I came among them, I came to see the truth in the Bible; and I want to tell you a little of my experience. Now Jesus Christ was the Word of God in person. The Bible is the Word of God in writing, in print. It's the same Word of God. The Bible is the same Word of God and the same Words that taught Peter, the original apostles, and then taught the apostle Paul. But after

that other people got it from the people that they had taught, and the next generation got it from the 2nd generation. The 4th generation got it from the 3rd generation, until they lost a lot of the original truth.

Now I'd been brought up in a Protestant church; and, when I first began to be challenged on the law of God and the Sabbath of God (as well as on the doctrine of evolution), at first I came to wonder if there even was a God. I had to PROVE whether God exists. But to my mind it was proved! I found absolute proof that God does exist.

The next thing is the Bible, the medium by which God reveals Himself to us and speaks to us. Now I had been in business for a number of years; and I knew, of course, that every manufacturer who has a product (a commodity that he sells) sends along with his product a little instruction book or an instruction manual to show you what the product is, how it operates, how to operate it, what its purpose is, how to make it perform its purpose.

Alright, the greatest product every created or put together is the human being, and God is the Manufacturer of the human being; and God sent along an Instruction **Manual**. The Bible is that Instruction Manual. He tells us what we are, why we are, what we are here for, how we should live and why, and where we are going, and how to get there. Most people don't know anything about that because they have never understood the Bible. The Bible is written in a way that it is mysterious to the world.

Now the Bible is concerned with two things primarily. Of course, it has materialistic physical knowledge. It is speaking to material people, made of the dust of the ground. Therefore, it speaks to them in a language that they should be able to understand; the only language that they can understand, as a matter of fact.

Human beings have accomplished a great many things in this Twentieth Century. We've flown to the moon and back. We've sent unmanned

spacecraft to send back photographs right on the very close-up surface of Mars. We have close-up photographs sent back to the Earth from Saturn and Jupiter. We have manufactured some marvelous mechanisms (like the computer, the modern automobile, motion pictures, television) – many, many things that have come, not most of them in my lifetime, because we didn't have any motion picture.

We didn't have any television or radio. In fact, we didn't even have automobiles when I was a little boy. When I was eleven-years-old, no one had ever flown in the air yet. No human being ever had. But while I was eleven, during my ... I was in my twelfth year when I was eleven, and it was during that year that one of the Wright brothers flew about as far as from one end of this auditorium to the other. That was the first flight a human being had ever taken. That's the first flight, and I was eleven-years-old.

Now, we've accomplished many things in a materialistic way. But we have also found our troubles have escalated. And the world is full of troubles and evils, and of suffering of every kind. And all of our problems that we can't solve – all of our troubles and evils – are spiritual in nature. All of our accomplishments are physical and materialistic in nature. But the human mind is so constructed, without the Holy Spirit of God, it CANNOT understand, it CANNOT conceive **spiritual truth** or **spiritual knowledge**.

Now the Bible is concerned with physical knowledge, but also with **spiritual** knowledge – and primarily with spiritual knowledge and spiritual truth; and **the natural mind cannot understand that part of the Bible**. And that is the main part of the Bible. So they DON'T UNDERSTAND THE BIBLE! They just don't understand it.

I began to see things in the Bible. First I read in Romans 6:23, "*The wages of sin is death.*" I said, "Well, that's not true. I've always been taught the wages of sin is eternal life in hell fire." Then I saw the next part, the last

half of the same sentence, ”*The gift of God is eternal life.*” Well, I said, “Why should we have to have eternal life as a gift when we are already immortal souls?” Then I began to see that the Bible says, “*The soul that sins, it shall die.*” I began to learn where Jesus said that no man has ever gone to heaven, and where the Bible teaches that no man ever will. The earth has God given to the sons of men, and we shall inherit the earth forever – not heaven. I began to see that what I had been taught was absolutely wrong.

Taught By Christ

God did something to me that He did to the apostle Paul, way back there 1950 years ago. He just **erased** everything I had ever believed from my mind, and I started **from scratch** all over. Brethren, I know of **NO OTHER** religious leader in the **WORLD** – in these last **1950 YEARS** even (today, or a hundred years ago, or a thousand years ago) – who ever came to his knowledge **directly from Jesus Christ!**

Jesus Christ gave the truth to the Church through the apostles. The Church got it from the apostles. Other people (the next generation) got it from the apostles. The 2nd generation got it from that generation. The 3rd generation from the 2nd, and finally they lost a lot of it.

Now the true Church still existed, and I came among them in 1927. They are called the Sardis Church in the 3rd chapter of the book of Revelation – the Sardis **era** of the Church. I found they had lost so much of the knowledge that God was opening to me in the Bible. Christ was speaking to me! This is the Word of God, the same as Jesus Christ in person is the personal Word of God. I was being taught by the same One. I find that other leaders didn’t get their knowledge out of this Book, the Bible. They got it from other people.

Now just two or three days ago, the Pope of Rome – the head of the

Catholic Church, the biggest church on earth and the largest in Christianity – he was shot in an assassination attempt. Alright, where did the Pope (looked on by many millions of people as the greatest religious leader on earth), where did he get all that he knows about religion? Where did he get his knowledge of what he believes is the truth of God, the doctrines that he teaches his people? He got it from other men. He didn't get it direct from Christ. He didn't get it direct from this Book. **He was taught from a child on.**

Where did Charles and John Wesley get their knowledge that started the Methodist church? They got it from other people. They got an idea or two of their own that they added, and made it a little bit different religion than the others, and they started the Methodist church. Another man started the Baptist church the same way. They ALL got their religions from other people. Where do ministers get their religion today? They go to a seminary of their particular denomination, or their kind of religion; and there they are taught by other men. And I'll tell you, if you go and examine the seminary, they are not taught by this Word – the Bible.

The time had come at the end for God to raise up someone to **raise up the temple** that Christ is coming to (That is a spiritual temple, which is the Church.) and to **restore THE TRUTH** that had been LOST for 1950 years. Well, it was about 1900 years at that time because this was about 54 years ago. But just as it was in the days of the apostle Paul: Let me read you what Paul said, the same thing happened to me. He says here:

***Galatians 1:15-16** But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, (16) To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood.*

He didn't go to a seminary. He didn't go to other men. He did not get

the truth that he began to proclaim from other **people!**

Galatians 1:17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me.

Mind Swept Clean

Now, I say the same thing. Neither did I, when God began to open my mind, go to other people. I did not go to a religious seminary. I went to this Bible. I began to find that **EVERYTHING I'D BEEN TAUGHT WAS WRONG! AND I THREW IT ALL OUT.** I began from **scratch!** Other people don't do that. They take what they have, and they may change one or two ideas. They may grab one or two new truths. Most people won't even do that. Instead of that, they lose one or two truths they already have. It was a different experience. And that's how you came to be here today, and how I came to be here today. I want you to realize that: that **God reveals His truth through Christ, and Christ reveals it through those whom He calls to be apostles.**

Now, it had gone down; and they had lost ... I found that the Sardis Church still had the truth about the Sabbath day and the law of God to an extent. They didn't have all of the truth even about the law of God. They still had the true name, Church of God. That's all they had. They knew that we don't go to a burning hell if we're wicked. They knew we don't go to heaven. They knew that Christ would come and there would be a thousand year reign on earth; but they had no idea what that thousand year reign would be like. They didn't realize the truth about the Kingdom of God and what it will be like.

We have a whole book on "The World Tomorrow – What It Will Be Like." They didn't know any of those things. God revealed all of that to me. God revealed to me about the annual Sabbaths. When I went to them and

taught the Sardis people about that, they laughed me to scorn. God revealed to me the truth of who we are, that we are the lost tribes of Israel and the birthright tribes of Ephraim and of Manasseh. When I went to them about that, they refused to accept a bit of it (although their leader said he knew God had revealed that to me, and it was true, and God would use it some day.) But he couldn't accept it. Because of political reasons, he couldn't accept it for his position in his church. So that church never accepted it.

But God raised up this Church through me, and this Church has accepted those truths. We had gotten rid of the errors, and swept it clean, and come to the truth of God; and that has not been done in 1950 years on the face of this earth. I just wanted you to know that.

Hidden Truths

Now then, I want to give you some truths that have been hidden from this world for about 1950 years. It is to them a mystery. It's so mysterious they just don't understand it. In a world, there's a gigantic missing dimension in knowledge. The knowledge they teach in schools, and in colleges and universities, is all together materialistic knowledge. It is knowledge just for this present mechanical, materialistic, existence that we have, which is not Life. (But I'm coming to that. Let's go on.)

Man today does not have Life. Man only has a temporary physical, physio-chemical, existence. We are made from the dust of the ground. We get our life through the blood circulating in our veins, through the breath of air; and we have to constantly refuel by eating food and drinking water, usually about three times a day. In other words, we have a **temporary existence**. It is **not life**.

Now that's the first point I want you to get. We do not have ... As we are born, we do not have Life. We have a temporary existence, and it comes

out of the ground. We are like an alarm clock, wound up, that is constantly running down. When it runs down, it stops. It's dead. In other words, human beings have a temporary existence. They are running down towards death. They are dying gradually every day they live, and every human being is one breath away from absolute death – the cessation of life.

I know. I've gone through it, almost four years ago. My breath stopped. My face was all blanched, a different color. I don't remember because I wasn't conscious. I believe it was blanched white, whatever it was. They brought me back by mouth-to-mouth resuscitation, but for {2} a great many seconds I was not breathing. There was no circulation of blood. My heart was not beating. I was as dead as you can be. But they brought me back. I've gone through that experience. I don't fear death any longer. I just don't. I hope God will keep me alive for a little longer because I believe it is needful for you.

The Origin Of Life

Man does not have **REAL LIFE**. (I can't even read my own writing here.) No, he doesn't know how to obtain it. He doesn't have real Life, and he doesn't know how to obtain it. **All life has to come from God**. The very first law of biochemistry, which is a scientific law, is that life comes only from life. Life can't come from dead matter or from the not living. It only comes from other life.

God has Life inherent in Himself – self-containing Life; and He has Life to impart and to give. Now it's important that we understand how all life comes. Everything begins with God, and the world doesn't know anything about God. Do you know that of all the religions in the world – not only Christianity; but you can take Taoism, Shintoism, Mohammedism, all of the religions in the world – and you know not one of them knows who and what

God is. They do not know **who** and **what** God is!

Alright, let's go a little farther. They don't know what man is, or why he is. They don't know why man was ever put on the earth or how he came to be here. They don't know whether he was put here for a reason, for a purpose. They don't know why or what lies ahead, where we are going, or if we are going anywhere. They just don't know. The religions don't know. Science doesn't know, and education doesn't know and doesn't impart that knowledge. You don't get that in the colleges, or the universities, because they don't know.

Now, if we want to know about God and about the very start of Life, we don't start with Genesis 1:1. We start in the New Testament with John 1 and verse 1.

***John 1:1** In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

Alright, “*In the beginning was **the Word.***” The Word was a divine, supernatural, spirit-composed personage – a Word that had LIFE, was immortally alive, was inherent self-containing Life. Not a temporary existence, but immortal Life. The Word was a personage. That Word was with another personage called God. There you have two personages together. But the Word also is God. So both of Them are God. But one was just called “God” and the other was called “The Word” originally. Now, the next verse:

***John 1:2-3** The same was in the beginning with God. (3) All things were made by him [That is, by the Word.]; and without him was not any thing made that was made.*

***In Ephesians 3:9** ... Well, now wait. Before I go to that, the 14th verse [{3}](#):*

John 1:14 *And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.*

The Word became Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ is the One who **originally HAD ALWAYS EXISTED**, and He had existed as God; and He was with God. His name originally was The Word, which means He was the divine Spokesman.

John 1:3 *All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.*

Now in Ephesians 3: 9, we read that God “*created all things by Jesus Christ.*” God is the Maker. God told Christ what to do. Christ is the Word. He spake, as one of the Psalms says. The Holy Spirit, emanating from God and from Christ, is the POWER that actually did what Christ said to do. That is the way Creation came about. That is the way you and I were formed, made out of dust of the ground, and got our temporary existence that we have.

Angels Created First

Now then, let’s go a little farther. Remember that God had Life inherent, and this Word had Life. They were composed of Spirit, not of matter; and They are Creators. The first thing that They created was angels. There was no matter. There was no universe. There was nothing physical. There was no matter. But They created angels first.

Now let’s go a little farther. I want you to notice in Genesis 1:1 now (the 1st chapter of Genesis, and verse 1) – the beginning of the Bible:

Genesis 1:1 *In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*

That should be the plural. As Moses wrote it in the Hebrew language,

this word is plural – heavens. He created the heavens (That’s the entire universe.) and the earth.

Now the word here says “God.” That’s an English word. Moses wrote in the Hebrew language, and the word Moses wrote was “*Elohim*” in the Hebrew language; and Elohim means ... It is a uni-plural word meaning more than one person forming one God. It’s a word like family, like group. There can be a number of people forming a group, but it is still one group. You can have two people, you can have five people, in a family – more than one person; but it is only one family (the Jones family, the Smith family, the Anderson family): One family, but more than one person.

There is **one GOD**, and ONLY ONE GOD; but that one God is composed of more than one personage! The Word is one of those personages, from all eternity; and the other (called God) is a personage.

Now, Jesus was born of the Virgin Mary and was made flesh. He – the Word – now came as a human being. He gave up all of His divine great power, and came to be a mortal human being; but He still was God as well as man. He was “God with us.” And then God the Father became His Father, after Jesus was born as a human being (begotten of God, and born of the Virgin Mary).

God created the whole universe. He created matter. “*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*” Turn to the 2nd chapter of Genesis and verse 4.

Genesis 2:4 *These are the generations of the heavens [plural] and of the earth [See, the heavens and the earth] when they [Both the heavens and the earth. That’s the whole universe, including the earth.] were created, in **the day** that the [Eternal] God made the earth and the heavens.*

IN THE SAME DAY He made the earth and the heavens. Now that may

have been billions of years ago. We don't know how far back that was. But there is one thing we do know that the Bible does reveal. Most people have never found, because you don't get all of the Bible in one place. It's like a jigsaw puzzle, a little of it ... You have many pieces, and you have to put all the pieces together, so one of the pieces is here. Another piece is over in the book of Job, in the 38th chapter and beginning with verse 1.

Let me read you a little of that, in Job the 38th chapter, where Job had just created the greatest building on earth – the great pyramid. Job was the master craftsman that hired all of the men and supervised the building of the great pyramid. He did it for a pharaoh of Egypt. He was not a pharaoh. He was not an Egyptian at all. But he was a very great man, and he was a very self-righteous man; and finally God was speaking to him and sort of whittling him down to size because he was very self-righteous.

***Job 38:1** Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said [to Job] ...*

***Job 38:4** Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth?*

Job had laid the foundations of the greatest building on earth, but God (Jesus) had laid the foundations of the ENTIRE EARTH! – The One who became the God of the Old Testament. In the Hebrew, it was called Yahweh. It is here called “the LORD.”

***Job 38:4** Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare, if you have understanding.*

***Job 38:6** Whereupon are the foundations thereof [of the earth] fastened? Or who laid the corner stone thereof?*

Now the only building on earth where the cornerstone is the top capstone (the last stone to be laid) is the great pyramid. And, actually, that top capstone never was laid. It isn't there. But on the earth it was laid (but not on

the great pyramid). “Where were you when I laid the cornerstone thereof?”

Job 38:7 When the morning stars [or angels] sang together, and all the sons of God [And the only “sons of God” at that time were the angels, because He created them. And all the angels ...] shouted for joy?

So the angels had already been created before the earth. The earth was created the same time as the rest of the universe and all of the galaxies, the entire universe; and there they were at the earth, and shouting for joy. Why? Because the earth was to become their abode, and they were to be put here and to live here on the earth! It was very beautiful as God originally created it. But now they did something to it; and they marred it, so that it was not beautiful any longer.

The Law Of Love

Alright, God now was going to develop character into the angels. He put them here to improve the earth, and to even make it more beautiful. In the earth, of course, was matter; and some of that matter contains energy. There’s a lot of energy in the material earth. They were to do things with the earth to improve it, and really to finish it (although it was beautiful as God turned it over to them).

But God put the angels on earth; and, in order to supervise their lives together one with another, God set over them His government. Now God has LIFE. God lives. The next question is: HOW DOES GOD LIVE? He lives the way of out-flowing love. There are different ways you can live; and primarily there are just two different philosophies, or ways of life. I call one the way of ”give” – out-flowing love. The other is incoming lust, and incoming greed, and coveting; and I call that ”get” (so that even a little child can understand it). God’s way is out-flowing love.

Now, He has a law; and that law is **love**. There are two divisions of God's law. That is, love to God is the first part of it, in worship and in obedience; and also love to your fellow creatures by out-flowing love towards them, cooperation, helping, serving, sharing with them altogether.

Now the opposite way, then, is rebellion against God and fighting against your neighbor, trying to take away from him and get from him, get everything for yourself, trying to have all you can and get, the way of competition, the way of strife, the way of what we have on this earth (so much of today), violence, and destruction.

God set a throne on this earth, and He set a super archangel on that throne **to govern** the angels. That archangel's name was Lucifer. He was the super archangel, of a higher grade of creation than the ordinary angels. He had been on the very throne of God. His wings had covered over the very throne of God in heaven. He had been instructed by God, and he knew the way of God – the way of love.

Every government is based on a foundation, a constitution, or a basic law. Now what do you have in Australia? I don't know. In the United States, we have a Constitution; and ALL LAWS have to be based on that Constitution. It's the basic law. Other laws are based on it.

The **law of God** is out-flowing love – love to God, love to your fellow beings. And then you can define it. In the case of men, it finally was codified in the Ten Commandments. The first four tell you how to love God: The last six, how to love your neighbor. That is the law of God.

Alright, now in the 14th chapter of Isaiah, you'll find about this Lucifer – how he was put on earth. His name was Lucifer. And, let's see, Isaiah 14. (I don't think I have it. No, I've got it wrong ... Here I have it.)

Isaiah 14:12-13 How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the

*morning! ... (13) For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven [So he was below heaven. He was on the earth.], I will exalt **my throne** above the stars of God ...*

He had a throne. There was a throne on earth, and he was sitting on it TO RULE THE WHOLE EARTH with the government of God! And the government of God was founded on a constitution, which is the law of God, the way of give, the way of out-flowing love.

Isaiah 14:13-14 I will exalt my throne above the stars [or angels] of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north [where God's throne is – in the far, far north . That's the only thing we have in the Bible that tells us anything about where God's throne is, God's heaven.]. (14) I will ascend above the heights of the clouds [So he was below clouds. He was on earth!]; I will be like the most High.[Or, he was going to become the Most High.]

Result Of Angels' Sin

Now you read more about him in Ezekiel 28, and beginning with verse 14, where it says:

*Ezekiel 28:14-15 Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God ... [And verse 15:] (15) Thou wast perfect in thy ways [all thy ways] from the day that thou wast created, **till** iniquity was found in thee.*

God created him, and he was perfect in the way he lived UNTIL he turned away from the way of God and REBELLED. Rebellion seized him, jealousy, envy against God, competition, strife. He wanted to war against God; and he turned his angels into an army, and they swooped up to heaven to knock God off the throne. He wanted to rule. He wanted to rule the entire

universe. He wasn't satisfied with this one little earth down here. He wanted everything! (We have too many men like that today.)

Now he was perfect from the day he was **created**. He was not a born human being. He was a created archangel. And iniquity was found in him. His heart was lifted up because of his beauty.

Ezekiel 28:17 Thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness.

He became perverted in mind and everything. Lucifer then became Satan the devil, and his angels all became demons. As a result of their violence and their wrong way, physical destruction and decay came to this earth. Instead of beautifying the earth, they made it ugly; and it came to a very decayed state.

Now his angels sinned along with him. In II Peter 2:4 you read, "if God spared not **the angels that sinned.**" So God didn't spare them either. The angels all sinned and followed Lucifer. Now there came to be darkness and decay on the face of the earth. Now we go back to Genesis 1 again – the 1st chapter of Genesis and in verse 2:

Genesis 1:2 The earth was [Or, became. That same word is translated "became" elsewhere] without form, and void ...

The Hebrew words Moses wrote were "tohu" and "bohu." A better translation than "without form and void" would be "chaotic and in confusion," "waste and empty" or "desolate and decayed." That is **not** the original created state at all! That is the way it became after the angels had been here, and they may have been here millions of years. We don't know. We don't know how long they were here before they went the wrong way.

Now, the earth then came into a very devastated state and condition and very ugly. In the 104th Psalm and verse 30{4}:

Psalm 104:30 Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou renewest the face of the earth.

Psalm 104, verse 30 – God sends forth His Spirit, and He renews the face of the earth. The Spirit goes forth, and He does His creating. Now go back to Genesis 1 {5}. The earth had become in this chaotic condition.

Genesis 1:2-3 And darkness was upon the face of the deep. [It was all ocean surface, no land. All was ocean, and it was chaotic.] And the spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. [Now, He sent forth His Spirit. Then the Word speaks.] (3) And God said [That was the Word who did the saying.], Let there be light: [The Holy Spirit came forth.] and there was light.

The Creation Of Man

Now, in six days God RENEWED the face of the earth FOR MAN! Now God was going to create man **out of matter!** He had created angels. He had set His government over them. They (1/3rd of them) had turned wrong and followed Satan. Now God was going to do the most ... the **greatest** feat of creation possible.

God was going to reproduce Himself. He was going to take dirt, matter (made out of matter, material earth). He was going to form and shape it into a man in the same form and shape as God. Out of that man, ultimately, He was going to have man reproduce; and out of all of the millions of men that would be reproduced, He was going to ultimately convert millions of them into God Beings – just like God Himself. (No religion on earth understands this. No religion understands it whatever.)

In six days, God remade the surface of the earth for man. In verse 26 of Genesis 1:

Genesis 1:26 God said, Let us [Not “Me.” You see, it’s Elohim,

more than one person forming God – God and the Word. “Let us ...”]
*make man in **our image** , **after our likeness** .*

Animals were made after their own kind – cattle after the cattle kind, dogs after the dog kind. But now He was making man **after the God kind**, altogether different. But how did He form man? God is made of Spirit, but not man. In the 7th verse of the 2nd chapter of Genesis:

***Genesis 2:7** The [Eternal] God formed man out of the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man [what He formed out of the ground] became a living soul.*

So a soul came out of the ground! A soul is not an immortal soul. A soul is mortal and comes out of the ground. THAT’S WHAT GOD SAID. The devil said, “Oh, no. You won’t surely die. You are an immortal soul.” The churches today all believe that. They believe the devil. They don’t believe God. But God made the soul out of the dust of the earth.

The Two Trees

Genesis 2:8-9** The [Eternal] God planted a garden eastward in Eden [In the very next verse here.]; and there he put the man whom he had formed. (9) And out of the ground made the [Eternal] God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; **the tree of life** also in the midst of the garden, and **the tree of [the] knowledge of good and evil.

Two special trees! There were a lot of other trees; but these two are very special, and they are symbolic; the Tree of Life that symbolized the Spirit of God. If Adam had taken of that, he could have taken immortal Life. Now remember, Adam was only created out of the dust of the ground with a physio-chemical temporary existence; a physical, physio-chemical existence, out of the dust of the ground. Now let’s drop down to verse 15:

Genesis 2:15-17 *The [Eternal] God took the man, and put him into the Garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. (16) And the [Eternal] God commanded the man, saying, of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: (17) But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for [if you eat of it] you shall surely die.*

Now, He gave him freely the Tree of Life! All he had to do was reach out and take it, and he would have had immortal Life. But God was not going to let him do that unless he denied and made a choice between that and the other Tree.

The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil simply represented the way Satan had been living. Satan did not agree with **God's way of living**. God's way of living is out-flowing love. The Tree of Life would have given him the love of God shed abroad in his heart – the love to fulfill that law. The Tree of Life would have given him the Holy Spirit that would have opened his mind to spiritual knowledge, so he would know HOW TO LIVE spiritually. The Tree of Life would have imparted **divine Life** to him!

But He made man – man and woman – “male and female created He them,” and He told them to reproduce and replenish the earth. It had been “plenished” before with angels. He said, “and replenish the earth.” [Genesis 1:27-28]

Human Reproduction

Now let me tell you a little something right here. Do you know how you came into being? Every one of you originally started with an ovum in your mother's ovary, in one of the ovaries of your mother. That ovum had only a temporary, physical existence – just a short existence of not more than 28 days. It could not have existed longer than 28 days. Every time an ovum left your mother's ovary, by the time it went through the fallopian tube and got

into your mother's uterus (or womb) it died there **unless** it had been fertilized by a male sperm cell.

God made it so that the male and the female work together. The male's sperm cell, coming from the very body of the male, a sperm cell is only 1/50th of the size of an ovum. An ovum is only the size of a pinpoint, the same as a period at the end of a sentence of ordinary small type in a newspaper. The sperm cell coming from the human father, to give it physical **human** existence and reproduction, is only 1/50th as large; but it imparts life. If that life is imparted within that 28 days, then that ovum becomes **an embryo**. And that's what you became and what I became (every one of us) in our mother's womb. For 4 months we were an embryo.

At the end of 4 months we became a fetus, and we had begun to take on human form and shape in our mother's womb. A head began to appear. Arms and legs began to appear. A heart began to form, and lungs and other organs in the body. They began to develop over the next 5 months until you had come ready to be **born**. You came out into the world, and you were **born**. You gave a cry of "Whaaa, whaa" when you were first born because that first breath hurt your lungs. Also with that first breath came a spirit into you that imparted the power of intellect to the physical brain that had been born and that had grown within your mother.

Now then, during that 9 months that you were first an embryo and then a fetus, you had to be fed on physical food to **grow** large enough to be born. That came through your mother. We today are in the Church, and the Church is "Jerusalem ... above ... the mother of us all" your Bible says. [Galatians 4:26] So the Church is the mother of us all. The duty of the Church is to feed and nourish the brethren in the Church on SPIRITUAL FOOD. We have to grow spiritually. (I'm going to come to more of that, if I don't forget it, later. I want to explain that.)

But, you see, there is **physical** reproduction.

Spiritual Reproduction

Now God is reproducing Himself, and that is SPIRITUAL REPRODUCTION. God made us. Listen, that ovum {6} coming out of your mother's ovary, it had a nucleus in it. Each of us is an ovum; and each of us has a nucleus, and that's the physical brain. But there is a spirit in that physical brain. That **spirit in man** – I call it a human spirit, because it is in man and is not in animals – imparts the power of intellect that brute animals don't have. (We call them dumb animals.) But it only empowers you to think and reason about physical, material, things because it acts as a computer and it stores up the knowledge you have, and it gives you instant recall of all of the knowledge that you have.

But how do you obtain knowledge? You obtain knowledge through the eye (things you see), through the ear ... Now the spirit doesn't see. The spirit in you doesn't hear. The brain hears through the ear. The brain sees through the eye. The brain smells through the nose. You only get knowledge then through what you see, or hear, or smell, or taste, or feel (by the sense of touch). You can't get any other kind of knowledge in your mind normally and naturally. You just can't.

You can't see spirit. You can't hear spirit. You can't taste it, smell it, or feel it. So you can't get spiritual knowledge in your mind, and it can't come **unless** you have God's Spirit. Now the coming of God's Spirit is the coming of the sperm cell from the very body of God into you, and that comes in with the spirit in your brain and enlightens your brain now to understand spiritual knowledge.

No wonder the people in the world don't understand spiritual knowledge. You know that the most highly educated people in the world,

with the greatest degrees of letter after their names, are the most ignorant – because they don't have any spiritual knowledge. They've been educated in a lot of materialistic knowledge. They don't have any knowledge of spiritual things. **ALL OF OUR PROBLEMS AND TROUBLES AND EVILS ARE SPIRITUAL** in nature and so they can't solve them. The greatest minds can't solve our problems in this world. That's where our troubles come from.

Now God is reproducing Himself. The way He reproduces is the Holy Spirit is the sperm cell from God that imparts **immortal GOD-LIFE** into **us**. That was offered to Adam, but Adam first had to decide he would **LIVE** that Life in the way of God of out-flowing love to help him be happy: Out-flowing love towards others that would help him make his neighbors happy. His neighbors could only have it too if they would have that spirit of love, which would make him happy and make them happy; and we would all help one another. We would have peace. We would have cooperation. We would help our neighbors to produce more. They would help us to produce more. We would share, and we would all have much more. Oh, how much more we could have if we lived that way; and we would have a utopia; and we would have peace.

But, no, man has got to **fight** his neighbor. Man has to live the other way. That's the way Satan showed. Adam let his wife Eve lead him to take to himself, of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. That meant he decided for **himself** the way of life. The Holy Spirit would have showed him **GOD'S WAY OF LIFE**, would have opened his mind to understand the **SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE of God's way of life**.

Adam rejected that and instead took to himself the idea that whatever knowledge he could produce in himself of how he thought he ought to live. And there was Satan there to lead him in the way of competition, the way of strife, the way of hostility, the way of vanity, the way of glorifying the self, the way of selfishness, and of lust, and of greed, of vanity, of envy and

jealousy towards others. And that's the way humanity has been living ever since. That's where our problems are. That's where our troubles are.

Now then, God intended that man should take of the Tree of Life. It was **freely** offered to Adam, but he had to **reject** the way of **Satan!** **He could have restored the government of God to earth** and Adam could have sat on that **throne** of the whole earth, and ruled it over his own children. But instead he went the way of Satan.

Tree Of Life Shut Off

Now then, what happened? In Genesis 3 and verse 22, after Adam made that decision:

***Genesis 3:22** The [Eternal] God said ... now, lest [Adam] put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever ...*

If he did that, he would live forever in the way that was making him unhappy, the way that would make him miserable, the way that would bring sorrow, that would bring **suffering** and **pain** and **anguish** on him and on his neighbor. And his neighbor would live that way and bring pain and suffering on themselves and on Adam. And every man would harm and make every other man unhappy. And, lest he do that and live forever in that kind of misery and unhappiness:

***Genesis 3:23-24** Therefore the [Eternal] God sent him forth from the garden of Eden ... (24) ... and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword [pointing every way], to keep the way of the tree of life.*

GOD SHUT UP THE TREE OF LIFE! GOD SHUT THE HOLY SPIRIT OFF FROM MANKIND.

Adam sinned; and that cut him off from God. Adam's son, Cain, sinned and killed his brother, Abel and then he lied to God about it. He brought on himself the penalty of death, and shut himself off from the Spirit of God. He shut himself off from God. God didn't shut Himself off from man, but man shut himself off from God. But God shut up the Holy Spirit – the giving of Life to man; and all man can have now is a temporary physio-chemical existence **until** the Second Adam could come. That's until Jesus Christ could come.

Now right here is where Christianity jumps the track. Life – the Holy Spirit – was shut up until the Second Adam could come and pay the penalty of man's sin in his stead and reconcile man to God, wipe the slate clean so that man could RECEIVE the Spirit of God, when man would start to live the right way to have eternal Life in happiness and in peace.

The churches don't know that. The churches of this world don't know it. The religions of this world don't know it. Humanity doesn't know it. Our educators don't know it in your colleges and universities. The scientists don't know it. Your captains of industry, your bankers, and your industrialists don't know it. They only know material, physical things and business, manufacturing out of material goods and things like that. That's all they know. So here's where they jump the track – “until the time of the Second Adam.”

After This The Judgment

Alright, now then we want to turn over to Hebrews the 9th chapter and verse 27.

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die ...

God said to Adam, “If you take of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good

and Evil, **you will surely die.**” He did. He was like an alarm clock running down. He ran down after 930 years, and then he died. He only lived 930 years, and he never got Life in all that time. So, it says:

Hebrews 9:27 *And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but **after this the judgment** [by a resurrection].*

Other scriptures point that out, and tell us that ALL who died in Adam are going to be resurrected in Christ and are going to come to a judgment. When? After Christ has paid for our sins, they will have a chance to give account for what they had done; and, if they repent, they will be given a time to prove their repentance and that they want to live God’s way by a certain amount of time, whatever God will give them, in mortal life. And, if they do, they will have the Holy Spirit and be given immortal Life. That’s the kind of “a religion of fear” that we believe in. I wish that some poor simpletons, like people with signs out front, could understand some of the truths of God. Too bad!

Now, judgment was on Adam; but he made the wrong choice. When judgment comes on people, they have to make a choice; and they have to determine which way they are going to go. LIFE was offered to Adam, but he made the wrong decision; and eternal Life was withdrawn until the Second Adam, Christ. So we read in I Corinthians 15 now, and verse 22 (if I can find it here).

I Corinthians 15:22 *As in Adam **all die** [We all die. We have this temporary physical existence, and we all die in Adam.], **even so in Christ shall ALL be made alive** [in a resurrection to **judgment**].*

It’s appointed to man once to die, and after this THE JUDGMENT; and that will come by a resurrection through Christ: (Through Christ.)

Every Man In His Own Order

I Corinthians 15:23 But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits [He rose from the dead 1950 some years ago.], afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.

That's only the Church, only the few that are going to be resurrected to immortal Life at Christ's coming. Now I'm coming to more about that in just a minute. I have to cover these things one at a time, to show you what God's **whole program and plan is** in a way that I think you've never heard it put this way before.

Adam and universal sin cut humans off from ... Well, God cut us off from the Holy Spirit or from Life until **the judgment**. But, through Christ, judgment has been opened first to the Church of God. Judgment is on us, and we are given an opportunity to repent and accept the sacrifice of Christ, have our sins forgiven, and **now** the Holy Spirit is open to **us**. I Peter 4 and verse 17:

I Peter 4:17 For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God [or the Church of God. That is the "house of God."]

We are the first. We are the firstfruits and the first to have salvation. The world as a whole does not have it yet. Now understand this: Through Adam (try to understand this, brethren) through Adam the world was **cut off** from the Holy Spirit. But through Christ judgment and access to the Holy Spirit was opened up to the CHURCH, **and not to any but the Church!**

Now I want to show you something – a prophecy back in the book of Joel. Joel 2 and in verse 28, where Joel (an Old Testament prophet) made this prophecy:

Joel 2:28 It shall come to pass afterward, [says God] that I will pour

out my spirit upon all flesh.

God shut up the Holy Spirit after Adam's sin; but the time would come when He would pour out His Spirit on **all flesh**. Now first judgment **starts on the Church**, after Christ; and it only started at the time of Christ, and only on the Church. Now there's something more there I've got to come to right away. On the day of Pentecost, in Acts 2 and verse 17 [{7}](#), Peter was giving a sermon; and he said this. The Holy Spirit, which they saw coming as flames of fire sitting on the heads of each of them, they heard the sound like a rushing mighty wind, and they were quite excited as the Holy Spirit came that day – the first time the Holy Spirit had been opened up since Adam. And he said:

Acts 2:16 This is that which was [prophesied] by the prophet Joel ...

And he quoted the scripture of the prophesy I just read that the days would come when God would open; He would pour out His Spirit upon all flesh. Now then, that was only the start – just to the Church only.

Physical existence now began with Adam. Well wait a minute; before I come to that I want to mention this: that God called the Church of the Old Testament; but the Holy Spirit had not been poured out yet, and they did not have Life. They did not have the Holy Spirit. They had the knowledge of God. They had the law of God. That was spiritual but they were carnal, and they never did comprehend it and they never did obey it spiritually. They just never did. And they had no Life.

They are to be resurrected. They died, and “after this the resurrection.” Judgment will come to them in the Great White Throne Judgment. We celebrate that on the last day, after the great Feast of Tabernacles – on the Last Great Day.

God's Annual Festivals

Now, physical existence began with Adam. But LIFE – or eternal Life – began with Christ. Israel was a type, or duality, and was given the seven annual festivals to picture this whole Life.

The Passover, for instance, pictures the sacrifice of Christ to pay the penalty for ... [A loud crashing noise was heard.] What was that? Are you hearing me all right? [Someone in the audience answers, "Yes."] I thought something had happened to the microphone here or something. Anyway, (I have to catch my place, where I was, here for a minute.) the Passover pictures the crucified Christ so that our sins can be paid in our stead, making it possible (if we do repent, and if we believe) that we can now receive the Spirit of God.

Now the second annual festival, or the seven Days of Unleavened Bread, which we had a little over two weeks ago; and that pictures putting sin out of our lives. That pictures the fact that we must begin to GROW **SPIRITUALLY**. We must be fed on spiritual knowledge. Now we have a SPIRIT LIFE, and that must begin to grow in us.

Then the third festival is the time of the coming of the Holy Spirit. We can't put sin out of your lives alone, by ourselves. We have to have the help of God and the Holy Spirit. And we are the **firstfruits**. The day of Pentecost is merely, it was called originally in the Old Testament the feast of firstfruits; and we are the firstfruits – showing that God has called the Church and the Church only, FIRST. Not the whole world! Now Jesus said:

***John 6:44** No man can come to me, except the Father which sent me draws him.*

Now get that! The world cannot have salvation now. It has not been opened up. It is only those that were predestinated to be called **now**. Others

will be called. Everyone who ever lived is going to have a chance! Everyone is going to be called. Everyone can find eternal Life, who ever lived.

I don't know whether Adam had his whole judgment then, or whether he'll have a chance in the Great White Throne Judgment {8}. I don't know. But nevertheless, everyone will have had a chance; and either Adam did have, or he will have.

The fourth annual festival is the first day of the 7th month, the Feast of Trumpets. That pictures the Second Coming of Christ. The Church will then be **born**, as He was, **by a resurrection** at Christ's coming; and we will be God Beings, the same as Christ is. We will then rule the world, when He will begin to convert all that are still alive (in this mortal life) on earth. That will reign for a thousand years. They'll be having children, and population will grow during that thousand years.

The Millennium {9}: The Feast of Tabernacles pictures that thousand-year rule and reign with Christ. Satan will be put ... Well, I skipped one. The fifth is the Day of Atonement. That means the putting of Satan away so that Christ and the Kingdom of God can rule a thousand years. That's the fifth of the festivals.

The sixth is the Feast of Tabernacles, or the thousand-year reign with Christ on earth – the Kingdom of God ruling; and the seventh is Day of Judgment at the end of the thousand years, when ALL who have ever lived are going to be resurrected, and they are going to have their chance to repent of the way they did. They are going to be called to give an account for every evil thing they ever did. But, if they repent, they are going to find that the blood of Christ has already paid the penalty in their stead. They will be given a little time to see if they mean it, if they say they want to live the way of THE LAW OF GOD – the way of out-flowing love. They'll have to prove it by their performance.

Now we come to Hebrews 9 and verse 27: “As it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.” I read that once before.

Divine God-Life

We are called now. Those of us called now, you’ll read in Ephesians 2 and verse 1, have been “dead in trespasses and sins.” In other words, we have been **dying** every day we lived. We have only had a physical existence up to this time. But now we are going to have a chance to have the Spirit of God. The Spirit of God will open our minds to understand the Word of God and the way to live – according to God’s way of out-flowing love. The Spirit of God will be **the love of God** in our hearts to fulfill that law. The Spirit of God will be the POWER of God to help us to overcome Satan and to live that way. And the Spirit of God will impart to us **divine God-Life!** We will rule with Christ as God Beings.

But the thing I want to point out is this: the Church is called first, now; and we start a new Life. It’s beginning... just as you were born, you started a physical life. We start a new SPIRITUAL LIFE from the time the Holy Spirit comes into us. The Holy Spirit **in us** opens our mind to understand the SPIRITUAL TRUTHS in the Bible.

The world cannot understand. God is only CALLING A FEW **NOW!** A few that are predestinated: As Christ said: no man could come to Him except God the Father draws him, and God is only drawing a few. Judgment is not come to the world. The chance of the world to understand these things has not come. God’s Spirit cannot be poured out on the world as a whole at this time; but only on those that are called – in the Church. Brethren, I wonder if you realize what a precious thing it is that we, of all the people in the world, have been **called** out from the world.

Now the word “Church” comes from the Greek word “ecclesia.” It

means a group, but it also means “called out ones” – called out from the world to **be separate** in this way. Not to be separate to wear a funny kind of hat or a garment. Not to be separate in physical things; but to be separate in understanding the spiritual truth of God, in understanding the way of Life of God – out-flowing love towards others. We have to express that, and we have to grow.

We have to GROW in grace and knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. Just as I explained to you how we grew in our mother’s womb before we are born, so now in the **SPIRITUAL REPRODUCTION**, we have to grow in **spiritual** truth. The Church is the mother that feeds us, and we have to grow spiritually day-by-day.

Now in the world they feel that if (Christianity feels that if) you just accept Christ, hocus-pocus you’ll be saved. You can live any old way you want to the rest of your life; and, when you die, you’re going to go to heaven. Now that’s all wrong. In the first place, no one’s going to heaven. In the second place, just receiving Christ alone isn’t enough. You have to repent of your sins. You have to begin to WALK with Christ; and two can’t walk together except they be agreed. You’d better begin to agree with Christ to walk with Him. The world is not walking in THAT WAY, but we are to walk that way.

God’s Government In The Church

We are being fed and nourished. God has raised up this Church at this time in order that we will be in that first resurrection and will become God Beings in the Kingdom of God. And the Kingdom of God is the **Family of God**, which will RULE with the government of God. When Christ comes, He will RESTORE THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD on the earth (that Lucifer took away). The government of God has not been operative on earth since

Lucifer rebelled.

The government of God is operative on earth and administered only one place, and that is in this Church; and that is GOVERNMENT IN THE CHURCH, and it comes from **God the Father**. From God the Father it comes **through Christ**. And from Christ it comes from the **apostle that He Himself has chosen**, and that He PREPARED, and that He **educated**, and He **trained**; and through whom He's given you the **truth** and the **knowledge**. And then there are **others under me** – to help you, and to feed you, and to bring you on to a **SPIRITUAL growth** and a **SPIRITUAL maturity**, and developing the very **CHARACTER** of the living God. That is the purpose of our lives.

Then we will have the responsibility of helping to save the whole world at the time of Christ's coming, and we are coming closer to that all the time. I don't have time to go into prophesy and things like that. But we are getting very close to the time of the end of this present time and this present age. We are coming very close to the time when God is going to intervene in the world affairs of this world, and when He is going to take over. Christ will come, and the devil will be put away; and then we shall reign. Without any Satan here to deceive you, the world is going to learn the truth of God.

There's so much more of this, so many little details. I haven't time to fill all of them in. Your local ministers will have to do that from time to time, and from Sabbath to Sabbath. You'll have to do it in your study. We'll try to get it to you in our various publications. And by the way, brethren, do you know that we have more publications than any church on earth, I believe. So far as I know, we do.

There is The Plain Truth, with a circulation over two million – reaching the world, and also for our own brethren. Then we have The Good News, a magazine reaching our brethren, and also some coworkers and a few that are interested besides. Then we have The Worldwide News, which reaches only

our own brethren and gives us news of Church activities; news of various people in the Church and people that you've met at the Feast of Tabernacles and things like that; and also news (every two weeks or so) of how the Work is going on, and what is happening in this Work that we have to do and in the Church. Then there is The Pastor General's Report that goes out every week to your ministers. There's much in that that they can take and give to you in a Sabbath sermon. Then we have for the children, we have the Youth '81 – a magazine for youths (primarily those from, say, about age 12 on up to and through 18).

Of course, we have Ambassador College; and we're opening Big Sandy again (as a junior college) this autumn, so we'll have the two college campuses. We have so many other activities that other churches do not have – like the Feast of Tabernacles, and these festival services and meetings. Then we have books, and pamphlets, and many booklets on various subjects to feed you on the truths of God.

But we must **GROW SPIRITUALLY!** Just having accepted Christ is only **the start!** It's only the **beginning**. If you don't go on from there, you will **die** spiritually; and you'll just die period. Some day you will be as though you had not been. You will be ashes under the soles of the feet of those that do grow, if you don't continue to develop and grow in spiritual character day-by-day, week-by-week, year-by-year.

The Truth Of God

That's what I wanted you to know, and I wanted to give you this message. How you get the truth. How you came to be here. It comes from God. It comes through Christ. Christ has imparted it to His apostle. I don't know of any apostle from the time of the original apostles until today and where Christ Himself ... Christ taught me by this Word. But He taught me in

a way that I had to rid my mind and sweep it clean of EVERY religious belief and doctrine, and thought, that I ever had; and get it **out of the Bible**, pure and simple. That's what I am passing on to you.

Brethren, I hope you realize how we are organized. There have been times when every man went his own way, the way that seemed right in his own eyes. One man this way, another man that way, another man this way – every one going off his own way. Paul teaches us we must **all speak the same thing**. That thing comes from God the Father. It comes through Christ. It comes through the apostle. Through the apostle it comes down through your other ministers, and through our literature, and our magazines, and our ways of printing that we have today – to you, so that you get GOD'S TRUTH pure and simple.

No other church on earth has it! No other church has **EVER** had it for 1900 years or more. I want you to realize how wonderful it is, how blessed we really are. Well, it's been a blessing for me to be here. I haven't seen you; I haven't been here with you, for eleven years. I don't know whether it will be another eleven, and I don't know that I'll still be here 11 years from now.

I hope that Christ will be here before that time. I don't know. I don't know when He'll be here. I know He can't be here within 3 1/2 or 4 years. It's going to be longer than that. And beyond that, we don't know. We know we are getting close to the time. That's all we know. And we know that we'd better be prepared to rise with those that will be raised from the dead, to rise and meet Him as He is coming – coming in clouds. And His feet are going to stand that same day on the Mount of Olives; and I hope we'll all be there with Him.

So if I don't see you again until then, I'll see you then, brethren. I hope we will; and I hope you realize the real seriousness of everything that I've

said to you today, and how serious it is. Now, we've had some trouble in this Church here within the last year. Trouble had been brewing for a long time, but within the last year this Church has been put back on the track; and I hope we are back on the track where we belong. I hope you realize where the truth comes from, how God channels it on down to you, how you get it.

It is in your Word^{10}, the Bible. If you see something you disagree with, go to your pastor with it. If he sees something, he must go to those that are higher up above him, or he can come to me about it. If I am wrong anywhere, I want it to be set right; and you'd better believe it – that I don't want to be wrong. And you'd better not want to be wrong either. We want to have the truth, and be right, and know what is right.

So with that I am going to say good-bye. We'll be on our way now over to New Zealand, to see the brethren over there. I believe ... I'm not sure I understood it correctly. I believe that one or two other of our Churches and groups are tuned in, and have been hearing this with you. I'm not sure; if so, I bid them 'God speed' the same as you.

Editor's Notes

^{1} - Mr. Armstrong stumbled around with the number he was trying to recall. He said, "only a hundred and ah, I mean, yes, only a hundred and a ... What was it? 130? All of a sudden that skips my mind." But then he gives the scripture that tells the correct number, which is 120.

^{2} - At first Mr. Armstrong said, "but for some little ...". But he then corrected himself and continued.

^{3} - Mr. Armstrong said the 12th verse; but he meant the 14th verse, and that is what he read.

^{4} - Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said "verse 31;" but he read and was referring to verse 30.

[{5}](#) - Mr. Armstrong said to go back to Genesis 2, but he meant verse 2 of Genesis 1.

[{6}](#) - Mr. Armstrong stumbled with his words here.

[{7}](#) - Mr. Armstrong said Acts 2:15; but he undoubtedly was referring to Acts 2:17, where Peter quoted Joel 2:28.

[{8}](#) - At first Mr. Armstrong said: “I don’t know whether Adam had his whole judgment then, or whether he’ll have a chance in the Millennium;” but then he caught himself and said correctly “[or] in the Great White Throne Judgment.”

[{9}](#) - Mr. Armstrong had two false starts here in his speaking, when he said “At the end of the thousand years ... And that’s pictured by the fifth ...”

[{10}](#) - Mr. Armstrong said “your Word.” Of course, he was referring to God’s Word, the Bible; but he undoubtedly meant your personal copy of it.

A Pentecost Message

Sermon (June 6, 1981)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

A Pentecost Message.....	493	Impregnation Of Immortal Life	509
Why Observe Pentecost?	495	How The Human Spirit Works	513
This Present World	496	Revealed Knowledge	515
Understanding the Beginning	498	What Adam Would Have Received	517
The Creator's Law	499	What Adam Took To Himself	519
God and The Word	501	Holy Spirit Shut Off	520
Man, a Mortal Soul	504	Judgment Now On The Church	523
Adam's Decision	506	God's Annual Holy Days	525
Result Of Two Opposite Trees	508		

Greetings, everybody! It's nice to be back here again. Tomorrow will be the annual holy day of Pentecost. I will be off to Stockton tomorrow, so I cannot be with you; and I have to bring any Pentecost message I have today.

You know, most churches pay no attention to Pentecost. I remember as a boy growing up in a Protestant church ... The Quaker church it really was. There are several kinds of Quaker churches, by the way. The original old-fashion type where I understand they'd twiddle their thumbs; they'd wait for the spirit to move them. I was not brought up in that type of a church at all. Ours was more like the Methodist or Baptist church of today in the Protestant world – not much difference, and believing a good deal the same type of doctrine.

But I remember, as a boy, hearing the preacher talk about Pentecost. That was a strange word to me. I had no idea what it meant and you know what I think now? I think the congregation of the church, of the grown ups, didn't know any more than I did of what it meant. It didn't really mean

anything to them.

Tomorrow is the day that we call Pentecost. Really it begins now in just a few hours from now, at sunset this evening. It's been called Pentecost in the New Testament. Originally, it was called the feast of firstfruits; and it also is called the feast of weeks in the Old Testament.

It means nothing to most people. Well, it should because it is the day on which the Church was founded. And, beginning at sunset tonight, is the 1950th anniversary of the Church of God – one time cycle plus 50 years exactly, precisely (beginning tonight at sunset). I prefer to call it an anniversary, rather than a birthday, because we don't celebrate birthdays. But it is an anniversary!

Now, the word “church” comes from the Greek word “ecclesia.” It means not only a crowd or a group. Of course, the church of Luther merely means Luther's crowd or Luther's group. The Church of God means the people of God. “Congregation” means the same precisely as the word “church.” It has the same meaning. It's a group of people. But, in the Old Testament, we have the congregation of Israel. They were the firstborn children of Israel. We are the Church of God, and we are the **spirit-begotten** Church of God. We are already now the children of God because, if we have the Spirit of God, His Spirit witnesses with our spirit that we are the children of God. As you read in I John 3:

***I John 3: 2** [Behold, already] **now** are we the [children] of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be.*

In other words, what we shall be is not visible so we can appear as **yet** – not until the time of the resurrection at the coming of Christ and the time we will be **born** as God beings, actually.

But the word “ecclesia” also means “called out ones,” and it means

we're called out from the world. Now, WHY? What's wrong with the world? Why should we be called out from the world? Now, Pentecost has a (well, I'd say, a) terrific meaning; but it's been glossed over. The world hasn't recognized it. The churches have not recognized it. Of course, science ignores anything like that altogether – and modern education, government, business and industry, technology, all of the other facets of society in the modern civilization.

Why Observe Pentecost?

Why do we observe this day that is called Pentecost? Why is Pentecost called by these different names? Why is the name “Pentecost” in the New Testament, “firstfruits” in the Old, and “feast of weeks”? I'll give you a hurried explanation of that, but it will be made plain as I go through. I'd like to, if I can remember it, come back to it before I close later.

It's called Pentecost because you count 50. You count 50 from, or beginning on, the [Lev. 23:15, morrow after the] Sabbath in the midst of the Days of Unleavened Bread. That is the day of the wave sheaf, and the wave sheaf typified the risen Christ. So 50 days from the risen Christ, the Holy Spirit came; and the Holy Spirit came on the day of Pentecost. So you count 50. “Pente” means 50 in the Greek language, and “cost” is count; so it's “50 count.”

The feast of firstfruits means that the Church is the firstfruits of God's salvation. Almost no one has ever understood that! I have to go through the sermon before you'll understand that. It is also called the feast of weeks. Why? Because it is ... seven is God's number of completeness. The 7th day is the Sabbath unto the Lord our God. The 7th millennium will be the Day of the Lord, just like the Sabbath is also the weekly day of the Lord. Therefore, Christ is Lord of the Sabbath. So it is His day. You count exactly 7 weeks

beginning on the particular day – “*morrow after the Sabbath*” or a Sunday – the day of the wave sheaf during the Days of Unleavened Bread. So that is why it is called those three names.

This Present World

But why is it important, and why should we come out of the world? What is wrong with the world? Well, as we look into the world, we see the world has produced some very awesome accomplishments. I’ve often said that (speaking of the politicians and of a, well, a great writer or an author and a great financier or capitalist) if a Lincoln, or an Emerson, or a Vanderbilt could come back to life, they would be **AWESTRUCK** at the things they would see that have been accomplished!

You know that even the very fact that, if we just had it going out on the air on a station, you could see and hear me – and see me and hear me all over the city right now – if we were on the air. In fact, on my television at home, if anyone happens to be listening over there (though they should be here instead), they’re seeing me and hearing me right there in my home. Television, radio – **awesome** things, when you think of it! The picture and the sound are right there. It’s right there in my room at home, in one room.

Many sounds are in this room here that you don’t hear because your ear isn’t tuned into that wavelength. Those are marvelous things – sending men to the moon and back, the modern computer, the automobile, the motion picture, sending unmanned spacecraft to get us close-ups of the surface of Mars and close-ups of Saturn and Jupiter.

Why I tell you, anyone who died in the 19th century coming back to life today would be awestruck with those things; but also they would be **HORRIFIED** to see the changes that have taken place morally, spiritually, and in troubles, in woes and human suffering, in violence, in every evil that

has beset humanity. They would be perplexed. What has caused all of this? We didn't have that kind of evil a century ago. Nothing like it! And yet we are called **out** of this world. It was bad enough then. It's just a lot worse today.

So this world – if you take our Western world, if you take the developed world (and you can include Japan with that) – you find a great development of technology, of industry, and of education. On the other hand, you also find unhappiness. You find human discontent.

I tell you, I remember when I was a boy around the turn of the century, in the early 1900s before 1910. (1902, 1903, 1905 – which I remember very well because I was a growing boy at that time, approaching my teens.) Now I had an uncle who lived down on the farm, away from Des Moines, Iowa where I was born and raised. Of course, I was supposed to have been raised in the city. It wasn't a very big city, but we thought of it as a city. And you know, the farmers (not only my uncle, but other farmers), they didn't have tractors yet at that time. They would be plowing behind a horse. But they would be singing at the top of their voice. They'd come in, "Well hi," they'd say to their wife; and it was all jolly and cheerful. Everybody was happy. They had a smile.

Today you have to buy a Coke to have a smile. [Audience laughs.] So that's their slogan. It seems like nobody smiles any more today. I think that Bob Hope will tell you that the one good thing he's done for the world is made them smile and laugh. There isn't much laughter any more today. Well, I just got you laughing a little bit. That's a good thing once in a while. We need to have a lot of good cheer and that kind of thing. It seems like it's almost gone from the world today.

But now you get other parts of the world – China, India, many parts of Africa – and you find illiteracy. You don't find education. And you find near

starvation. You find people living in filth and squalor. You find absolute poverty, people starving to death. Such things ought not to be. There's no need for things like that. No need at all! It's all wrong! There is something wrong in this world.

Understanding the Beginning

And this is a world, because it is wrong, the Church is called out of this world. We need to understand why. We need to understand the beginnings of this world. What **started** this world on the wrong track? What **started** the Church? Why did Christ say, "I will build My Church"? And how did He build it, and why? Why are we in it today? And why are we here today? We need to understand.

Most people just go along. It gets to be the fashionable thing. I talked to one woman, who had been a Church member. She dropped out. I said, "Tell me, do you honestly think you were ever really converted – did you receive the Holy Spirit of God?" She said, "No." She said, "When I was in college, the other students were all being converted; and I just wanted to go along. I thought it was the thing to do. So I got soused in water, and they called it being baptized." But God, apparently, had not called her. Actually, she never was a member. She was just counted as one.

We can't understand, brethren, all of this if we don't go back to the beginning. Now you get to the beginning; and there again is something that humanity, and civilization, and the Church has just glossed over. They have just passed over it. It has not meant anything to them at all, and you have to go back and understand it.

Now before mankind inhabited the earth; (and it began with the creation of the first man, Adam; and God created his wife, Eve); but before man there were **angels** on the earth. God placed them here. The angels sinned; and we

find that they were led into that sin by a super archangel, Lucifer. Now Lucifer was placed on a throne on the earth. I've gone into all of that before. We don't need to read the scriptures (in the 14th chapter of Isaiah and the 28th chapter of Ezekiel), and how the angels sinned (in II Peter 2 verse 4), and so on; but they did. A throne was set on the earth. God set the throne there; and He set this super archangel, who was a cherub, Lucifer, on the throne to administer **the government of God.**

Now the government of God had been administered from the throne of God in heaven. That is God's heaven. There are three heavens mentioned in the Bible. The one is the earth's atmosphere, where the birds fly and where some of us fly in airplanes. The second heaven is what we call outer space, on beyond. But the third heaven may not even be as far as outer space. We don't know because we don't know where it is, except I think we have one sign that it's in the far, far north. But that is the throne of God. That is not necessarily a planet at all. God is invisible to us. We wouldn't see if we could see that throne, because God is Spirit; and we can't see Spirit, unless it is especially manifested in some manner so that our physical human eyes can see it.

But there was the government of God; and the super archangel, Lucifer, was one of the two cherubs whose wings stretched out over the very throne of God. He had been trained at the very throne of God, in the government of God; and he was sent here to administer that government. Now God had created angels, and they are spirit beings.

The Creator's Law

First of all, God is Creator. But what is God creating? What is the ultimate thing that God is creating? Sure, He's created beings. He created angels. He created men. But those are only certain entities. But there is

something greater He's creating, and that is **righteous perfect spiritual character** IN those created entities that God has created.

Now, the way to that character and the way of any government – any government is based on a foundation, constitution, or law. In the United States government, it is based on the Constitution. We know that. ALL LAWS have to conform, or be based on, that basic law or constitution.

God's basic law is **love** (L-O-V-E.), and love is out flowing towards others. Now love is first of all to God; and God is love, and God has love out flowing towards us. But we must return His love – in love and in obedience, and letting God direct and help and give to us. The second is love towards your fellow beings. (Now, in this case, it was love towards the angels.) That is the basis of God's law. It isn't a lot of just separate, ah, little specific laws. You know, we have so many laws that any policeman could not remember one-sixth of all the laws he's supposed to enforce on his beat. But God's law is just simply one word, and it's magnified into two: love towards God and your fellow – the two great commandments.

Now towards man, it's been codified in the Ten Commandments. The first four are toward God, and the last six tell you how to love man. But they are just broad principles, and you **apply those principles!**

Now we derive all of our doctrines from God, and they come from the law of God. We have a 'no smoking' doctrine in the Church. You can't find anything about that in the Bible, but it comes from applying the spirit – or the principle – of the law of God of out flowing concern for others equally as concern for yourself. Now actually, except for the stink of it in your nostrils, the smell (because you can't taste smoke anyway) ... A lot of people don't know that. You might try an experiment sometime, and you'd find you can't taste smoke. You smell it. So instead of saying it tastes better, like the cigarette manufactures do, they should say it stinks worse! [Laughter] I guess

that's what they should say.

But God has a basic law to create happiness, to create cooperation and peace and mutual well-being between one another and in relation to God. Now this Lucifer rebelled and led his angels [{1}](#). (They inhabited the earth before man.) As a result, the earth became without form and void. Or the Hebrew words are *tohu* and *bohu*, and a better translation than ... Well, it really means it became, what's the word I want? Not decadent; well, anyway, in six days God **renewed** the face of the earth for man. The seven days that you find in the first chapter – or the six days in the first chapter – of Genesis were renewing the face of the earth actually, beginning with verse 2. Anyway, we won't need to go back into that today.

God and The Word

But go back to the beginning – the beginning of God Himself, in John 1:1. I've gone into this a number of times. Let me just read it once more.

John 1:1 *In the beginning was the Word* [That is a personage called the Word. He was the spokesman [{2}](#).], *and the Word was with God* [God is another person. There were two persons, and one person called the Word was with another person called God], *and the Word was God* [The Word also is God.].

Now you could say that John is with Smith. But John is also Smith, and John is [with] Smith. Well, you see, Smith is John's father; and John is the son of Smith, so he is also Smith. Of course, now, the Word was not at that time the Son of God but did become that later.

John 1:2-3 *The same was in the beginning with God. (3) All things were made by him* [because, in Ephesians 3 ...]

Now in the 14th verse [{3}](#), we find:

John 1:14 *The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us [and became Jesus Christ].*

And in Ephesians 3 verse 9:

Ephesians 3:9 *God ... created all things by Jesus Christ.*

He is the Word. He said, “I have done, I have spoken, nothing of Myself, the Father who sent Me has told Me what I should speak and what I should say;” and the Father told Him. He is the Word. He spoke. The Holy Spirit is the power that did it, and that’s the way creation was accomplished.

John 1:4 *In him [the Word] was life [L-I-F-E, Life.]*

In God was Life. In the Word was Life. And “*the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us,*” and “*all things were made by him,*” and He spoke only as the Father told Him. So They are absolutely together. Another time, when Jesus Christ was on earth, He said “*My Father and I are one.*” “*I have kept My Father’s commandments.*” They were 100% together. Two can’t walk together except they be agreed. The Word and God were in perfect agreement. Jesus agreed perfectly with His Father. He agreed perfectly with His Father.

Now, the Word had Life; and He gave Life and imparted Life to the angels. They had Life. That is, Life inherent – immortal Life, eternal Life within themselves, self-contained Life. He sent them here to accomplish things on the earth; but they had to get along with one another, and God’s law regulated their conduct with one another and with God. But it resulted in rebellion, and they followed Lucifer in rebellion. And so the government of God, which was established on earth (by a throne on the earth by Lucifer), became non-existent. It was no longer enforced, and the government of God was now no longer in force on earth. So here’s an earth without government.

Now God is the Creator and primarily what He is creating is character.

He gave His law, which is the foundation of building that character, to the angels. They did not build that kind of character. So Lucifer, the great archangel, later became Satan the devil; and his name was changed to Satan. His angels now became demons. They had perverted in mind. They had mind greater than the human mind. They were spirit beings. They were immortal. They had LIFE, and now they have to LIVE that life FOREVER – in unhappiness, in mental torture.

Man Made After The God Kind

Now God said He would now reproduce Himself out of man, made out of matter. Now He said, “I will create man in My own image.” You turn back to Genesis 1, and you read in the first chapter:

Genesis 1:1 In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.

Here the word for “God” that Moses used in the Hebrew language, in which he originally wrote, was “Elohim;” and Elohim is a uni-plural noun {4}. It means more than one person. In other words, “God” now meant the two persons of God and the Word. But how did God create? By the Word! The Word spoke, and it was done. Later you find Him renewing the face of the earth. The Spirit of God moved on the waters, second verse {5}. The earth had become, ah ... What’s the word I want? I couldn’t think of it a minute ago. Well, chaotic and in confusion. Now God was renewing it.

So the Word SPOKE and it was done. The Spirit was there to move; and He said, “*Let there be light,*” because darkness had come from Satan. He had turned light and truth into darkness and error, and now it became light. Then He proceeded to divide the land from the water. It was all an ocean surface at the time, and so He brought out the dry land. In six days He renewed the surface of the earth for man. In the 26th verse ... after, in the 24th and 25th verses, He had created on the 6th day – the latter part of the 6th day – He had created land animals, each after his kind (cattle after the cattle kind). Well, of

course, that means dog after the dog kind and horses after the horse kind. But then He said:

Genesis 1:26 Let US [not “Me” Verse 26, “Let us” – more than one person.] *make man after OUR [kind], after OUR likeness.*

In other words, let Us make Man after Our kind. Cattle were after the cattle kind, elephants after the elephant kind; whales after the whale kind, and dolphins after the dolphin kind, birds after each bird kind. But man was made AFTER THE GOD KIND because now God was going to take man and **reproduce His own self** and put His own holy, righteous, perfect, spiritual character into man. What an accomplishment!

Man, a Mortal Soul

All right, so He made man; but how did He make man? He had made the angels immortal. He’d given them Life. He did not give man Life. Now the Word, in Him was Life. He had Life. But notice He didn’t give man Life. The second chapter and verse 7:

Genesis 2:7 *And the [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man [made from the dust of the ground] became a living soul.*

Not an immortal soul! What was made of the dust of the ground became a **soul**. A soul is made from the dust of the ground and is mortal. It’s material, not spiritual at all. Man himself is wholly matter. He does not have Life. He has a physio-chemical existence. He breathes into his nostrils the breath of life, and man gets his life from breathing air into and out of his lungs. The lungs oxidize the blood as it circulates through the lungs and back to the heart.

The breath is called “the breath of life” – all, the only kind of life, we

have; and it isn't really Life. It's a temporary existence. That's all. Every breath you breathe is just one more, but constantly you are like a wound up clock running down. Some run down the first breath or two of life, and die in childbirth. Some live. I had a sister who lived until she was 9-years-old, and she died. Now, I was her brother; and here I am almost in my 90th year (next month); and I'm still existing. But that's all. It's an existence. I have Life in myself, but not Life inherent. I'll come to that later. I hope you have that same Life in you too.

But there was no Life. God did not put Life into the man, as He did in the angels. He gave him a chemical existence. Now remember that. Man did not have Life. He has a chemical existence. The angels had Life, and then they were tested as to whether they would live the way that would produce happiness, and joy, and production, and accomplishment in happiness. But they didn't. They went the selfish, self-centered way.

God is going to give man an opportunity, but man will have to demonstrate and build the character first – before he gets Life; and God did not make man with Life. He only made him with a temporary existence, and he is wholly of the ground. Do you know that there is energy in the ground? We've had an energy crisis; we've talked a lot about it. Now we are beginning to find that there is so much gas and other things in the ground that, if we had only known it, we wouldn't have had an energy crisis; but we just haven't worked at it and produced those things. Now we have to depend on the oil countries, and they hold that as a club over us in the United States.

But all the energy that we have is only what energy we get temporarily from food and water, and it comes out of the ground. Now I know there are some foods, and they advertise, that will give your children energy. Yes, it will; and it will give them a lot of other things you don't want too – starches, and things of that kind, because starch will give you energy. But your blood can only take 1/2 of 1% of ... I forget whether its weight or its volume in

carbohydrates or energy; and anything more than that goes into rheumatism, or colds, or fever, or diseases of some kind. That's why we have all of those fevers, and diseases, and all that sort of thing.

But now, God did not give the man Life. I want you to notice. In verse 7, He gave him this chemical temporary existence. In verse 8:

***Genesis 2:8-9** The [Eternal] God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. (9) Out of the ground made the [Eternal] God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight.*

Now God is love, and He wanted to make everything pleasant to the man. He didn't try to make things unhappy and unpleasant. He wanted the man to enjoy beautiful things through the sense of sight, pleasant to the eye – to the sight, that's one of the senses.

Adam's Decision

***Genesis 2:9** ... and good for food [And that's one of the senses: taste.], the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil.*

Now then, God had put the man in the garden of Eden, and God said:

***Genesis 2:16-17** Of every tree of the garden [verse 16] thou mayest freely eat: (17) But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt **not** eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*

Here are two trees; and they are opposite, and they represent opposites. Now right at this point, let me tell you, here is where all of Christianity jumps the track right at the beginning. They gloss right over that. That means nothing to the average person. "Ah, yeah, I know about the garden of Eden. I've heard all of this about Adam's apple." Well, let me tell you something.

Adam didn't take an apple. It says nothing about an apple here. What he took to himself was the knowledge of good and evil. He took to HIMSELF knowledge production. That's what he took.

Now the one tree was the Tree of Life. In the Word was Life. He gave Life to the angels. He did not give Life to men. But here He's offering Life to the first man, and said "You may freely have it." But He said, "I command you **not** to take death," because the other tree would result in death. Now, how would it result in death? I'll come to that later. The first tree would result in Life. The first tree would result in Life, and God offered that to him. God WANTED him to have Life; but, to have it he had to reject the other tree; didn't he? He couldn't take both. He had to decide. He had to make a choice! Oh, how we have passed right over this.

Brethren, let me tell you, right here – the lives, the happiness or lack of it, of billions and billions of people depended right on **this decision** that this first human was going to make. We are all his children. We came from him. Now he had a number of children, sons and daughters. A lot of people, you know, they have a joke; and they say "Well, where did Cain get his wife?" Well, he married his sister, of course. At that time, some way or other, it was all right for him to marry his sister [6](#).

Today... Well, I knew of one child that was born from a brother and a sister; but he was abnormal. I remember he liked to play pranks. He would go into a grocery store. He was a little bit of a kid, and he would say, "I want to make a telephone call." They would have to bring a chair that he could stand on, so he could reach up to a telephone that was on a wall. Then he would call for the Fire Department, and he would say there was a fire and give an address so that the fire trucks had to go pass this store to get there. Then he'd go out front and wait to see the fire trucks go by. Now that's a prank for you, for a kid. I was writing an editorial for a newspaper years ago when that happened, and I knew about it. So there was something a little abnormal

about it, but a brother and sister could have children; and, in this case, they did.

Result Of Two Opposite Trees

Now the meaning of those two trees, that's been just glossed right over. You know, we've even glossed over it ourselves. When Basil Wolverton wrote the book for children years ago (of course, it had to be years ago; before he died.), Basil was very careful to try to write that book precisely according to our teaching. I've been amazed in going back to it, and seeing what he was teaching children about those two trees. He didn't even mention the Tree of Life at all. He just said that the only thing wrong about the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil was that God told him not to eat it (and he didn't give any reason) and that God said he would die if he disobeyed.

Now God didn't just say this arbitrarily because "If you disobey Me, if you don't jump at the crack of My whip, I'm going to kill you and you are going to die." No, there has to be a reason. God says only what's good for the man. It wasn't good for the man that he'd take of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. It was good for the man if he'd take of the Tree of Life, and that's what God wanted him to do. So we have to get a little bit of the meaning of those two trees.

Now the one was the Tree of Life. He would have received Life if he had taken that. Let's go back and consider that. Let's not cloak over that Tree of Life. **WHAT IF ADAM HAD TAKEN THE TREE OF LIFE?** Brethren, we wouldn't even have a Church today. We wouldn't have a Day of Pentecost. We wouldn't have troubles in the world today. **THIS WHOLE WORLD WOULD HAVE BEEN DIFFERENT!** Right there's where the whole thing happened. Remember Satan was still there. Now he's Satan, no longer Lucifer; but he's still there. He didn't get to Adam directly, but he did get to

him through his wife.

Now one of those trees was **Life**. The other was going to result in death. How would the first tree give Adam Life? It would result in that. It didn't mean that God would have given him immortal Life immediately. He'd done that to the angels. He created them that way. He didn't create Adam that way. Why? How does He give Life today? WE have a chance to receive Life today. How do we get Life?

Now, to understand, everything isn't made plain in one place in the Bible. It's like a crossword ... like a jigsaw puzzle (not a crossword puzzle, a jigsaw puzzle), you have maybe 1,000 different pieces here; and no one of them makes sense at all. Two or three of them put together don't make real sense. You have to get more than that. But, if you get them all together in the right manner (together the way they belong together), then you have a beautiful picture. In fact, it is a beautiful picture, just cut by a jigsaw here and there into a lot of little pieces; and you have to put them together.

The Bible is like that. Some of the things in Genesis you have to find filled in – in the New Testament, or in the prophets, in Isaiah, some in Revelation, some in Ezekiel, some in the minor prophets, some in Matthew, Mark, or Luke, or John. You have to get a piece here and a piece there, and put them together in a proper way; and I'm putting something together for you here that even this Church has never had put together properly before. So OPEN UP YOUR EARS AND LISTEN! Who was it (Mark Anthony?) who said many hundreds of years ago: "Ladies and gentlemen, give me your ear." I ask you, not only open your ears, open up your mind. Think on this. This is something that is new to this Church. It is something you need to understand.

Impregnation Of Immortal Life

God does not give Life, and He was not going to give man Life inherent

instantaneously. If He was, He could have created the man that way in the first place; couldn't He? That's the way He created angels. Why did God create man without it, and then let him make a choice? How does God give Life now? How does He? Man did not have Life.

Let's look at the New Testament, and we'll see how God gives Life today. Turn over to the 8th chapter of Romans. Now you'll notice verse 16.

Romans 8:16 *The [Holy Spirit of God] beareth witness with **our spirit***

...

So there is a **spirit in man**. We have a spirit, and yet man is wholly mortal. I'm coming to that a little bit later. We are wholly mortal, but there is a spirit in us. That spirit is not part of us, just something in us [{7}](#). A man swallows a little tiny marble. That marble is not part of him; and we hope that it will pass through, or that the doctor will get it out somehow because it doesn't belong there. But there is a spirit in man, and it does belong there. That's different.

But, if you receive the Spirit of God [{8}](#)... On the Day of Pentecost, Peter said:

Acts 2:38 *Repent, and be baptized in [{9}](#) ... Jesus Christ for the remission of sins"* [and that meant you repent and believe, and your baptism is a public demonstration of your faith and belief], *and you **shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.***

Now, if you receive the gift of the Holy Spirit:

Romans 8:16 *The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.*

We become the children of God when we have the Holy Spirit. We aren't immortal. We're still mortal flesh and blood. We still have a temporary

existence. But the Spirit is an **impregnation** of immortal Life . That's all. We are begotten, not yet born. Notice the very next verse here:

***Romans 8:17** And if [we are] children, then heirs: heirs of God, and ... [of] Christ.*

”**Children of God**” and His ” **heirs** ”(of our Father). But, you see, an heir doesn't get his father's estate until there is a death, usually in human life the death of the father. In this case, it was the death of Christ; and it really comes after our death or change (which is an instant death) and resurrection. But we are “*heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ*” **if** we have the Spirit of God. Now then, notice verse 11.

***Romans 8:11** But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken [that is make immortal, give Life to] **your mortal bodies** by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.*

That shows a resurrection. Now, if you have not the Spirit of God, (verse 9) you are none of His. You are not a Christian. I don't care how many churches you have your name on, as a member. Just being a member doesn't mean you're Christ's. You are not Christ's unless you have the Holy Spirit.

How Knowledge Is Received

Now if you have the Holy Spirit, let's go a little bit further now, in I Corinthians the 2nd chapter, now notice this. As man is made mortal:

***I Corinthians 2:9-10** As it is written, [As God made man, of the dust of the ground.] Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. [In other words, spiritual knowledge. Spiritual knowledge can't enter your mind.] (10) But God hath revealed them [spiritual truth, spiritual knowledge] unto us by his spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things*

of God.

You can only receive spiritual knowledge through the Spirit of God. Man receives the knowledge of things through the eye, the ear, the sense of smell, taste and feel. You cannot receive knowledge of anything, normally, any other way – just those five ways, five senses. No other.

Now stop and think about that. You are LIMITED, and you can only see what is material or physical. You can only hear vibration, which is physical. You can only smell something that is physical, as a physical fragrance or odor. You can only taste physical things. It is a physical sense. You can only hear, smell, taste anything. In other words, no knowledge can ever enter your mind except through the eye, the ear, the nose, the sense of taste, or the sense of feel; and you are LIMITED to **physical materialistic knowledge**. You are limited; and God created Adam in a manner that he was limited to physical materialistic knowledge, and he could not have other knowledge.

Now let me just give you one other thing while I'm on it, right there. Look at the wonderful things man has created. They are all physical and materialistic. Look at the troubles of man, and every bit of them are getting along with his neighbor or with God; and he can't get along with God because the carnal mind is hostile against God – "*enmity against God*" (Romans 8, verse 7) and "*is not subject to the law of God [which is love], neither indeed can be.*"

A natural mind is hostile against God. A natural mind is self-centered. It's covetous. It wants everything for self. Towards others, it is competitive. It's hostile. It wants to get from. It wants to take. In other words, it believes in "get;" where God is love, and love is out flowing, and that's the way of GIVE (not "get"). The law of God is the way of **give**. The other way is the way of **get**.

Now then, if we have the Spirit added, (I want you to notice.) God

reveals spiritual knowledge. You can't see ...

I Corinthians 2:9-10 Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard [You don't get it through the eyes, the ears, or smell, or taste, or feel.] ... (10) But [notice this.] God hath revealed [spiritual things] ... by his Spirit.

Now take verse 11, the next verse:

I Corinthians 2:11 What man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him.

Man has a spirit in him. It's not man. It's not part of man. It's just something inside of him, and it came in him with his first breath; but it is a spirit. Now that spirit in man can't see anything. Your brain sees through the eye. Your brain hears through the ears. Your brain smells through the nose, and tastes through the mouth; and it feels through the sense of the nerves. So the spirit only imparts the power of intellectual to a physical brain.

How The Human Spirit Works

Animals don't have that spirit. They have an automatic instinct. Humans don't have that instinct like animals do. Did you ever see a little calf born? Inside of two or three minutes, certainly less than five, it's up on all four feet and knows how to walk right away; and it knows where to go. It goes for its dinner, and the old mother cow just stands there dumbly and stupidly waiting for the calf to come and get her dinner. In one case I happen to see on a movie screen where the calf went to the wrong end. The mother just nodded the calf right back to the right end to get its dinner. But usually the calf knows exactly where to go.

A human baby can't walk for one year. A human baby is helpless and has to be taught everything. A human baby has to learn how to think, and it is motivated by its mind. Animals don't have mind. They just have a plain brain

and instinct. The human spirit is a computer. All of the memory is stored up in the spirit, not in the gray matter of the brain. In a computer, you program knowledge into the computer. The computer cannot give you anything back that has not been programmed into it. But you can program millions of pieces of knowledge into a computer; and it will give you whatever you want back instantaneously, with instant recall.

Now the spirit is like that in man. I can get ... if someone asks me “What happened when you were five years old?” instantly, I go back; and the spirit gives me instant recall of things when I was five years old. I swore off of chewing tobacco when I was five years old. [Audience laughs.] Yeah, you won’t believe that. Well, I think a lot of you would because you’ve read my autobiography. But the men were digging a ditch out in front of our house, and they were all chewing tobacco. I said to one of them, “Well, what is that there?” I saw him biting something, and I thought maybe it was good to eat. He said, “Why, here bud, have a chaw. This is something good. I like it.” So I took a chaw. I had an awful time biting it off. I chewed a little bit, and then I swallowed it. [Audience roars with laughter.] Right then and there, I swore off of chewing tobacco; and I’ve never chewed any since. I was only five years old.

Well now, the spirit in me gave me instant recall. Anytime I want to think about that, it’s still there. I mean the memory of it is still there. You die. The body that comes up in a resurrection is not the body that died. The brain is buried, and it rots and decays. Yet in the resurrection you know everything you did know. You look like you did look. Why?

The spirit in man is like **a mold**. Now a, oh, the man who made the big fountain out in front here. I saw that fountain when it was made. I believe it was plaster-of-Paris, or whatever it was made of in the first place. Then they made molds of the various parts of it that were later welded together. I was in the foundry where that was done. The mold was just the same thing but

exactly the opposite – so that, when they poured the molten bronze into the mold, it came out exactly like the original.

Now the spirit is like a mold. In the resurrection, the spirit will bring a new body; but it will put in that new body precisely the same knowledge, the same memory, the same character, the same fingerprints, the same footprints that you had in this life. But it will be different matter. Of course, that's the resurrection to judgment. But if you are resurrected in the first resurrection, you'll be composed wholly of spirit but in the same identical form and shape – because man is in the form and shape of God, but he's composed of different material.

Revealed Knowledge

Now man was made to have a relationship with God. There are two differences between man and an animal. An animal is not made to have a relationship with God. First, it is not in the form and shape of God. Secondly, it doesn't have the spirit. God put a spirit in man, and that spirit needs **another Spirit** – the Holy Spirit. I just read you in Romans 8 where, when we receive the Spirit of God, it joins with our spirit; and it WITNESSES WITH OUR SPIRIT that we are the children of God.

We are only half there if we have – we are born with the one spirit. Every human who's ever been born was born with that one spirit, but you are only half there mentally. I say that the most ignorant men in this world are the ones with the most letters after their names (the most highly educated) because ALL EDUCATION in this world is materialistic education. They have no spiritual knowledge at all; and all of our troubles, and our discontent, and all of the evils and sufferings come from a lack of spiritual knowledge and breaking spiritual laws towards self, towards neighbor, towards God – because the law of God is love to God and loving neighbor as self. It means

the right kind of self-love and self-concern too, for that matter.

So, if you have the Holy Spirit, now notice this:

1 Corinthians 2:11** For what man knoweth the things of a man [I say, a man is confined to physical materialistic knowledge.], save **the spirit of man which is in him?

That spirit makes it possible for you to have this knowledge, and give you instant recall, and to be a thinking kind of a being. Animals are not. They can't think. They can't reason. They don't come to conclusions. They can't think creatively. Humans can. Humans have to learn slowly. A child begins to walk after about one year. But listen: Satan begins to get to a child when he's 2 or 3, 5 or 6 months old; and parents neglect their children until they are about six years old and they can send them to school. Satan does not neglect your children! Satan gets after them when they are 2 or 3 months old, or less.

By the time they are 6 or 8 months old, those children already have a selfish something instilled within them. Put two children down, and give them one toy. Watch them fight for it. Or put a number of toys down, and one desirable toy and others that aren't so desirable; and watch them try to get the desirable toy away from the others. Oh, that instinct is in there early. Yet parents will neglect their children, while Satan is not neglecting them. I say shame on some of us.

Well, let's go on with this. I only read half of this 11th verse.

1 Corinthians 2:11** Even so the things of God [or spiritual knowledge] knoweth no man [No man has spiritual knowledge.], but **the Spirit of God.

Or through and by the Spirit of God, because spiritual knowledge is REVEALED KNOWLEDGE – revealed by the Holy Spirit being in your mind with your spirit; and you cannot comprehend spiritual knowledge, or the law of God, without the Holy Spirit. We wonder why the world can't see

these things. We wonder why, when we are converted, we try to convert our friends and relatives; and they laugh at us. They think we are crazy. I'll show you why. Read verse 14.

***1 Corinthians 2:14** But the natural man [That's what they are.] receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God [You try to give them those things, and they won't receive them.]: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED. [God has to reveal them through His Spirit.]*

What Adam Would Have Received

Now, Adam would have received ... The first thing he would have received ... God wouldn't have given him immortal Life right away. He would have given him the Spirit. He would have been **begotten of God** if he had have taken of the Tree of Life. That's what he would have gotten first. The next thing he would have received would have been love – the love of God; because love is the fulfilling of the law, and the law is love. Now read Romans 5:5.

***Romans 5:5** The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit, which is given unto us.*

The Holy Spirit **gives** you the love of God to fulfill the law! You don't have the love by natural birth to fulfill the law of God. You can fulfill it to some extent by the letter, but not in the spirit. You can't do it without the Holy Spirit of God. Adam then would have first had knowledge – REVEALED KNOWLEDGE, a spiritual knowledge – if he had taken of the Tree of Life. The next thing he would have had was the love to fulfill the law of God plus he had the knowledge of that law and of that way of life.

The next thing he would have received, if you will turn with me now to

Galatians (Galatians 2 and beginning verse 15 and 16):

Galatians 2:15-16 WE [it says in verse 15] ... (16) know that a man is not justified [verse 16] by the works of the law, but by the faith OF Jesus Christ.

Justification has to do with your past. That is, justify a guilty past by squaring it up and paying the penalty in your stead. It doesn't say your faith in Christ. It's the faith **OF** Christ. That is given to you through the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit gives you a divine faith you never had before. You don't work up that kind of faith. That is a **gift** of the Holy Spirit of God, and the next thing Adam would have received would have been that kind of faith. It's the faith of God and the faith of Christ.

Now the next thing that he would have received, you find in Acts the 1st chapter. Acts the 1st chapter and in verse 8, where Jesus said to the disciples ... After His resurrection, they asked Him if the Kingdom of God would come immediately. He said, "No."

Acts 1:8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you.

You will receive POWER. The Holy Spirit will give you the power to overcome; power to do what you have to do for God, power to follow what the Spirit of God gives you the knowledge to do, what the love of God gives you the love to perform with, and what faith in Christ gives you to rely on Christ for guidance, for deliverance. You know, we need that because "*many are the afflictions of the righteous.*" You are going to have many afflictions. "*But the Lord delivereth them out of them all.*" You have to have a connection with God to get help to be delivered when you are in trouble.

I want to tell you, brethren, this Church has been in trouble more than once (troubles I haven't told you about) when I have had to pray and pray my

heart out. But God has heard, and God has delivered this Church; and He's delivered me again, and again, and again. God not only gives us knowledge, but God gives us help when we need it. God is the greatest GIVER that there is!

What Adam Took To Himself

Now then, let's go a little further. All this has to do with Pentecost. You'll see why a little bit later. Now Adam had to choose. One was the Tree of Life. He wouldn't have gotten it immediately, but he would have immediately had knowledge from God. He would have lived a different way. He would have taught his children a different way. Oh, I think Satan would still have been there for a while, until Adam himself had been made immortal. Then Satan would have been put away.

But, in the meantime, Adam would have known how Satan was not neglecting his children when they were 2 or 3 months old. He would have taught them, and he would have taught them so much; and he would have been in constant communion with God. He would have had the help of God in teaching his own children. You can have it, but do you have it? You have to go after it. You have to ask for it. So the question is whether you do have it or not.

But Adam made the other choice. Adam TOOK TO HIMSELF the knowledge. He didn't get the Holy Spirit to reveal God's spiritual knowledge. He took to himself knowledge, and the only knowledge he could take to himself was materialistic knowledge. He took to himself the knowledge of the way towards good or towards evil. He took to himself the knowledge of what IS good and what is evil. He took to himself the knowledge of how to get it, and what he took to himself was self-centeredness. What he took to himself was vanity. What he took to himself was hostility towards others.

He rebelled against God, and he had a carnal mind that is hostile against God and is competitive against other people. Instead of cooperating with other people and helping them, and they then helping us, we end up fighting one another; and one impedes the progress of another. Yet they say that competition is the way today. Oh, it's competition – competition in sports, competition in business, competition in society, competition in government, in politics and everything. Competition in business, competition in everything! He took to himself that knowledge, and he **cut himself off** from THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD. So he produced knowledge.

Now in the 1960s, the world's fund of knowledge was doubling; and during that decade Dr. Clark Kerr, who was then president of the University of California [{10}](#) at Berkley, said that (and I mentioned this in the graduation ceremony) the university of today – the modern university – is a factory. It is manufacturing knowledge. The purpose of the university is producing knowledge, but they only produce materialistic knowledge. They cannot produce the knowledge of our troubles (of how to solve our problems, our troubles) because those things are spiritual problems, and the knowledge that is required to solve them is spiritual knowledge. Men can't manufacture that kind of knowledge.

Adam started **manufacturing knowledge humanly**, and the world has been doing it ever since. Now it never got to a knowledge explosion until in our time, in this 20th century. Vanity! It's looking to self-knowledge, self-love, vanity, coveting, hostile against God, and hostile against neighbor. Romans 8:7 – *“The carnal mind is hostile against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be;”* and it is hostile to neighbor.

Holy Spirit Shut Off

So now what happened? When Adam made that choice, go back again

to Genesis; and in the 3rd chapter of Genesis and you find in verse 22:

Genesis 3:22-24 The LORD God said, ... now, lest he [the man] put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever [Lest he gain immortal Life going the way he is, in the kind of knowledge production that will only bring on trouble, and heartache, and suffering, and anguish. Lest he do that and live in unhappiness, and wretchedness, and suffering forever.]: (23) Therefore the [ETERNAL] God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. (24) So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to KEEP the way of the tree of life [lest a man go back and gain immortal Life living the wrong way].

In other words, my dear brethren, God will NOT give you immortal Life in suffering and unhappiness. God wants you to enjoy eternal Life! God is love; and He loves you so much that, if you are going to bring suffering on yourself, He'll stamp you out. You'll finally become as if you had never been. You'll be ashes under the soles of our feet; if that's the way you want it. You make your own choice.

But God shut off the Holy Spirit from that time on. The Holy Spirit was shut up until the time of judgment. Now God's judgment: you have to understand, **judgment** is not just the sentencing and punishing. Anyway God's punishment is corrective, not revenge. Until the time of judgment – until others could have a chance (like Adam did) to make a choice – God shut up the Holy Spirit of Life.

Right here is where so-called “Christianity” jumps the track. Life was shut up from human beings, and human beings only have a temporary existence (not Life). They don't have Life until the time of the Second Adam, which is Christ – until Christ should come. Meanwhile, as you read back here

in Hebrews 9:27,

Hebrews 9:27 As it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.

Adam did die, and it's appointed to other men to die; but after that comes judgment. Now the judgment is a trial and test as to what choice you will make. Even if you make the decision to make the right choice, then you have to receive the knowledge of God and receive the love of God, and the faith of God, and power from God; and you have to GROW in that knowledge and the Spirit and grace before you get immortal Life – because that is open to us today.

Judgment was on Adam. Life had been offered to Adam; but it was withdrawn, when Adam made the wrong choice, **until** the Second Adam, Jesus Christ. So it is that we read in I Corinthians 15 verse 22 [{11}](#).

I Corinthians 15:22 As in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

Now death came by Adam and in Adam **all die**; and it is appointed to men once to die, but after that the judgment. Christ came. The Second Adam became a human being. He had to make the choice, like Adam did. He chose to reject Satan. He chose to obey God. He kept the law of God. He said, “I have kept My Father’s commandments. I’ve set you an example that you should also keep God’s commandments.” That’s what Christ said.

Christ – who never sinned, who never brought a penalty of death on Himself; but who is the one by whom God made all of us, and was therefore our Maker – Christ paid the death penalty for us in our stead so that if WE will now make the choice, that brings judgment to us; but not to everybody (only to those that are called).

Judgment Now On The Church

Adam and universal sin of Adam's children cut humans off from the Holy Spirit (or from **real Life**) until the time of judgment. But through Christ judgment was opened to the Church. Now in I Peter 4 and verse 17:

***I Peter 4:17** For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God.*

That's the Church of God. JUDGMENT finally has begun! Judgment was cut off from man, and Adam was driven out of the Garden of Eden. Humanity has never had a chance of salvation. Ancient Israel was called. Ancient Israel was given the law of God, but they were not given the Holy Spirit. They were not being judged. They did not have a chance for Life. They were not given a chance to earn **Life {12}**, and they never received any Life. They still had a chemical, temporary existence.

Now understand this: Only certain ones that were predestinated are called first – called now. Ultimately, God will call everybody; but God has a plan. The first man rejected it. Now, billions of people have lived and gone the wrong way. He wants to save all of those billions. God is not willing that ANY should die, but that ALL should come to repentance and immortal Life. But God has a master plan for bringing that about.

The Church are **called first**, and they are **the firstfruits**. Today, or beginning tonight at sunset, and tomorrow is the anniversary of the beginning of the Church. That is the firstfruits, the first that God has called to have a chance of judgment. Judgment is on the Church, for judgment must begin at the house of God. But now I want you to notice in John 6:44, where Jesus said:

***John 6:44** No man CAN come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him.*

God isn't calling everybody. It's ONLY THE FIRSTFRUITS, and the Day of Pentecost was just the starting of the firstfruits (not salvation to everybody). Now there is a reason why God couldn't call everybody all at once, and a very, very good reason: because we – just the same as Christ had to do, the same as Adam had to do (and Adam failed; Christ succeeded, the Second Adam) – WE have to face Satan and overcome Satan. Just the same as Adam faced Satan, just the same as Christ did, WE have to. So it is only those that are called by the Father.

Now I want you to notice in Ephesians the 1st chapter, verses 11 and 12. Speaking of Christ in verse 10, verse 11:

***Ephesians 1:11-12** In whom also WE [within the Church] have obtained an inheritance, being **predestinated** according to the purpose of him who worketh ALL THINGS after the counsel of his own will: (12) That we should be to the praise of his glory, who **first** [put our hope] in Christ.*

The firstfruits! The Day of Pentecost was the beginning of the firstfruits, just the first to be converted. It doesn't mean that everybody is converted now. Only a few are called, and only those few have a chance – those who were predestinated.

Now Adam, (and through Adam) the world, was cut off. But through Christ judgment was opened first to the Church. Now let me show you a prophecy. It's back in Joel: Joel the 2nd chapter and verse 28.

***Joel 2:28** And it shall come [This is a prophecy. "It shall come ..."] to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh.*

Now the time of pouring out His Spirit to ALL FLESH hasn't come yet. But the time of pouring out His Spirit to just all that part of "all flesh" that is the firstfruits had come on the Day of Pentecost because, on that day – on the Day of Pentecost, Acts 2 beginning with verse 15, I want you to notice. (Let's

see, Acts 2. Now I didn't put a marker in there for that.) In Acts 2 and beginning with verse 15, the Holy Spirit had come on that Day of Pentecost. The first time the Holy Spirit came for a group of people!

The Holy Spirit came with a sound of a rushing, mighty wind that they could HEAR; and the Holy Spirit came visibly like flames of fire, of tongues, but in fiery tongues sitting on the head of each one of them and they could SEE it. That was a terrible manifestation, and a great crowd came running and gathering. They began to speak with other languages so that everybody there from every country heard the whole 120 speaking in his language and understood what was being said. You don't hear that kind of tongues speaking any more. It never happened before or since. But Peter said, on that day when many thousands came running in, he said:

Acts 2:15-17 These are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day [about 9 o'clock in the morning]. (16) But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel; (17) It shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh.

Now this is only the firstfruits of "all flesh" and a type of everybody that will have the Holy Spirit beginning in the Millennium and in the Great White Throne Judgment to follow. But let's understand that.

God's Annual Holy Days

God called the Church out from this world. Now the Church of the Old Testament had an existence, and human existence started with Adam. But Life coming into human beings started with the Second Adam, or Christ. Israel was a type of the Church; but Israel was physical, and the Church is spiritual – begotten.

God gave the seven annual festivals to Israel, but they didn't understand

it. They didn't know why. When I first heard it, for several years I didn't know why. I just knew God commanded it, and He said it was forever; and I was willing to obey. So I kept all of these feast days (at least, all of the holy days) for some years till I found out the meaning. When I did, I found we are to keep more than just the holy days; but keep the Feast of Tabernacles seven days, which I did from that time on.

Now, let me see. One other scripture I wanted to read here. I guess I lost another one some way. Oh, here it is. The 10th chapter of John and verse 10, where Jesus said:

***John 10:10** I am come that they might have **life** , and that they might have it more abundantly.*

That's why Jesus came in the likeness of human flesh. Adam had not gotten Life. Life had not been given to the people until that time, and Jesus came that we might have LIFE. They didn't have Life. They only had a human existence. But the first thing you get with Life (before that immortal Life is given to you) is spiritual knowledge, then the love of God, then you receive the faith of Christ, and then you receive power. If you grow in grace and in knowledge, and you endure until the end, you shall then receive Life eternal.

Now we, which are called now, are going to sit with Christ on His throne. We're going to be given power over the nations [{13}](#). When Christ is coming, He is coming to His temple; and we are that temple. We are going to rise and meet Him in the air. We are the affianced Bride of Christ, to marry Him. We will be God beings; and we, in the Church (and, of course, that begins back in the Church of the original apostles) – and there are going to be many, many thousands. There are many thousands of us today. There will probably be even a few million. I don't know. It isn't going to be an awful lot, but we will be God beings; and it will be enough to do the real ruling of

all that are left alive in the beginning of the Millennium.

At the end of that time, there will be more. We will be God beings, and then there'll be the resurrection to judgment of ALL WHO HAVE EVER LIVED! Frankly, I wonder if that included Adam. I think maybe. Judgment in God's form is a time of trial and test. Adam had to make a decision, but living a time of trial and test over years, of proving it by your performance. Adam didn't, and it was taken away from Adam before he could live that long. He had no chance of repentance because Christ hadn't come. We have. It may be that even Adam will be in that resurrection to judgment at the end of the Millennium. It's a wonderful thing.

Now the feast days picture God's plan. Of course, the first is the Passover. Second is our coming out of sin. Third is the receiving of the Holy Spirit, which gives you (as I say) the knowledge of God, the faith of Christ, the love of God to keep the law, the love to fulfill the law. All of those things; and finally, at the coming of Christ, eternal Life!

But we are the firstfruits, and that is the meaning of the Day of Pentecost that we will observe beginning at sunset tonight. I hope that makes it a little more clear to you than it ever has been to you before. Let's see where we are getting along here. Oh, well, we began at 2:30; and it isn't 4:30 yet. I'm supposed to keep preaching till 4:30, and I'm not going to do it. [Audience laughs.] That's all you get to hear.

Well, brethren, I'm sorry I won't be with you here tomorrow. But you are going to have Dr. Hoeh tomorrow, and also you are going to have Mr. LaRavia; and you will have Christ here with you. Isn't that wonderful! Christ and His Spirit. Our fellowship is with God the Father and with Christ, as well as with one another. So you come tomorrow morning and tomorrow afternoon, and have that fellowship.

I'll go up and be having fellowship with the group from San Francisco,

and Oakland, from Sacramento, from all the other cities up in the Joaquin Valley, the big valley. (They had it on a series of movies.) I'm trying to get around every few Sabbaths. Let me see. I don't remember whether it's the very next Sabbath now (I think it is.) that I am to go to Cincinnati. Or it is the week after, whichever.

Let me see. Last Sabbath, I spoke to more than 4,000 of our brethren over at the Lake of the Ozarks. It was a great crowd, and generally it looked like a lot more people than I see of you here; and it was very nice to meet with all of them over there. I'm trying to get every other Sabbath off to speak to another group of a number of Churches in a certain area; and so I will continue that as long as God gives me good health, good mind, and good everything that it takes.

So I don't know when I'll see you. I forget. I'm a little mixed up, whether it will be next Sabbath or a week from then. If it's a week from then, I'll be here with you next Sabbath, whichever. In the meantime, remember Christ is here, and God the Father is here; and our fellowship is with Them and with one another. What a wonderful fellowship it is, and to have the truth of God – a wonderful, wonderful thing.

Be sure to notice the broadcast Sunday morning, Sunday afternoon. Keep praying – praying for one another, praying for the Work; and (if you will) praying for me, because I need it. I need it constantly all the time. I was only able to come today because I prayed and asked God for the strength and help to come, and He gave it to me. He always does. So I'll need strength to go up there tomorrow, but God will give it. But you pray that He will, and He will; and God be with all of you. Bye, bye for now.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong gave a false start, and later repeated himself when he said "and, as a result" at this point; so the redundancy was

removed here.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong repeated himself and said "He was the spokesman" twice at this point.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said the 14th chapter, but he meant the 14th verse of the same 1st chapter.

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong corrected this concept in his 29 September 1985 sermon "HOW GOOD AND HOW PLEASANT," when he explained (at 48:50 of the audio file) that Elohim is indeed a plural word and not uni-plural, as he had previously taught.

[{5}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said the 2nd chapter, but he was referring to the 2nd verse of the 1st chapter of Genesis.

[{6}](#) - Editor's note: For a fuller explanation, see PCD 900 series article "924 – Cain get his wife"

[{7}](#) - Editor's note: In his sermon on the first Day of Unleavened Bread, 6 April 1985, "RELY ON GOD" (from 33:30 to 37:25 on the audio file), Mr. Armstrong gave further understanding about the spirit in man actually being a part of the man.

[{8}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "If you receive the spirit of man;" but he undoubtedly meant "If you receive the Spirit of God," because that's what the verse he quotes is about. The spirit of man is present at birth and doesn't have to be 'received,' as he points out later in this sermon.

[{9}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong left out the words "every one of you, in the name of" from the verse he was reading here.

[{10}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong first said the University of Chicago, but then he corrected himself.

[{11}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said I Corinthians 50, but he meant chapter 15.

[{12}](#) - Editor's note: Eternal Life is a gift of God (Romans 6:23), and cannot be "earned." However, as Mr. Armstrong explains, we must do certain things before God gives Life.

[{13}](#) - Editor's note: A false start (where Mr. Armstrong said "We are the ... We are ...") has been deleted here.

What If Adam Hadn't Sinned?

Sermon (June 13, 1981)
by Herbert W Armstrong

Table of Contents

What If Adam Hadn't Sinned?.....	531	Man Needs Two Spirits	549
When We Please Christ	533	Revealed Knowledge	550
Totally Different World	535	Man's Helplessness	552
The God Family	536	Man's World	553
Difference Between Animal And Man	538	How Life Came	555
Human Development	541	The Day Of Pentecost	556
A Spirit In Man	542	Preparing The Way	559
God's Holy Spirit	544	How Truth Came	560
Adam's Choice	546	God's End Time Church	562
Help From God	547	Prophecy For Our Time	563

Brethren, after speaking here on last Sabbath, I spoke to a group of virtually 3,000 – or 2800 – of our people up at Stockton on the Day of Pentecost, which was the next day or last Sunday. And on next Sabbath, God willing, I hope to be speaking to a still larger group of our brethren; and we expect about 5,000 in Cincinnati, Ohio. We should, perhaps, find a larger facility than at any local center like that outside of Feast of Tabernacles in Cincinnati. We're expecting it to be a larger crowd than we had in either Big Sandy when we had a very large crowd, or Chicago, or New York. As long as God is willing and gives me the strength, I expect to continue just about every other week (if I'm not traveling abroad or somewhere) to be speaking in groups in other parts of this country and Canada.

I had a telephone call last night from my executive assistant, Bob Fahey, who is in Manila in the Philippines. I had had to send Mr. Fahey and Gerald Waterhouse over there; and we had also asked Mr. (Why can't I think of our own people's names?) from Canada, who was a former pastor in the Philippines, to fly on over there and join them. They'd had a little trouble,

and they were getting a little static from certain local elders. There seemed to be a division forming in the Church in the Philippines.

Brethren, the apostle Paul was inspired to say that we must **all speak the same things. We must be together.** There can be no division in the Church of God. So immediately I sent them over there. We know that the trouble in the world is people get to looking at people. People can deal with things, but they can't deal with people. And so it seems that they look to other people, and they can't get along with them, and this and that and the other thing happens. Very often it's only a misunderstanding, and a misunderstanding will develop feelings.

Now, our brethren are trained to look to Christ. He is the head of the Church. That is how we remain together. We all speak the same thing, but it must be **the thing that Christ speaks.** He is the head of the Church. And when we take our eyes off of Christ, we are like Peter. Christ was walking on the water on the Sea of Galilee; and Peter and some of the apostles were in a boat, and Christ came walking on the water towards them. Well, Peter wanted to try it. Christ told him, "Well, come on. Come on and walk." And he did! And, lo and behold, Peter was walking on the water; and it seemed like the water was holding him like a firm piece of ground or a pavement under him. That is, for just a moment or so.

And then, you know what happened? He took his eyes off of Jesus. As soon as he took his eyes off of Jesus and looked down at the water, he began to sink. Now that is the trouble with so many of us. As soon as we just forget a little bit and take our eyes off of Christ, the first thing you know we begin to sink; and we get into trouble.

Well, I have very good news. Bob told me last night that they got over. They prayed. They had the former minister and the present minister get together. They said, "Now, you two get together. You pray about it, and you

discuss this thing and see where we stand. And remember that Christ is the head of the Church.” So they went out and let those two alone, and they got together. As soon as they got their eye on Christ, they quit sinking. They began to walk on the water, and the waters weren’t troubled any longer.

Now we found that there’s nothing but a sort of a misunderstanding. Neither minister had done wrong. The one minister has been transferred to Canada. The other is in the Philippines. And we really needed to get our eyes on Christ a little bit. Any of us can make that mistake – of getting our eyes off of Christ and getting it on troubled waters. I just wanted to say that, because that has happened in the last two or three days.

When We Please Christ

When our eyes are on Christ, and as long as WE PLEASE CHRIST, we have peace, the Church goes ahead, we are prospered, and Christ blesses this Church and this Work. Now the Church was not being blessed. For thirty-five years this Church did go along as an increase in membership and, well, just about everything (in the amount of radio time and even getting up into the beginning of television, in number of Churches, and in income) at the rate of 30% every year over the year before.

That’s means we were doubling our size and the impact of our power and growth every two and approximately two-third years. We were multiplying our size and the impact of our efforts eight times in eight years and sixty-four times in just sixteen years. I don’t know of any record like that in any organization, any society, or even (in commercial business) in a company. Most businesses (if you notice) in the commercial world, they stand about the same place year after year until they finally fold up, or go bankrupt, or quit. The average store, the average business, is no bigger today than it was five years or ten years ago.

But the Work of God cannot stand still. We must go ahead. And for about twelve years this Work was not going ahead. Thank God, He didn't let it go backwards; but it still did not go ahead. And between two and three years ago, I found this Church was sadly off the track; and I've been working very hard to get it back on the track, and we are back on the track.

Now I'm glad to tell you that I just had a report, yesterday afternoon late, that the income for this month is already going up somewhere around ... let me see, I think it's around 40% so far; and for the year it is 22% and it's climbing up. It looks like we may make up to 30% this year over last year, and get back on the track once again. It is over 30% in Canada. It is over 30% in Australia, and New Zealand, South Africa, England, Germany, and many other places around the world.

The one factor, more than anything we do, is the matter of whether or not we are **pleasing** Jesus Christ. He's not only the head of the Church. He's not human. He is divine. He is God. He is the One who has THE POWER. If we have any power, it's only power that comes from Him and power that He gives us. Let us remember that. Let's keep our eyes on Christ. Let's keep Him **in our lives** every moment of every day.

I want to speak along that line today. I want to say, though, that the most important **new knowledge** that God has revealed and that's come into the Church in years is the clear understanding of the incident of the forbidden fruit back in the Garden of Eden. I've been speaking quite a little on that subject, and I thought yesterday "Well, what will I speak about now this Sabbath?" I said, "Well, the brethren will get weary and they'll say 'Well, is Mr. Armstrong going to harp on that same question all the time?'" Well, I decided: "You bet I am!"

We haven't exhausted that subject at all. We haven't begun with it yet. I haven't exhausted this new understanding that has been recently **revealed**,

and so we will continue until we do.

Totally Different World

Brethren, WHAT **IF** ADAM had taken of the Tree of Life? I wonder if you realize what that would have meant? You'd be living in a **totally different world** today. If Adam had taken the Tree of Life (instead of taking to himself fruit from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil), let me tell you, we wouldn't have the system of education we have in our schools, colleges, and universities today at all. We would have a far different and a far better one. And we might even find parents teaching their own children anyway, which we might find would have been a much better way.

We wouldn't have the system of commerce and business we have in this world today at all. It wouldn't be anything like it is today. Do you know there wouldn't be any tobacco industry today if Adam had taken the Tree of Life? Do you know there wouldn't be any medical profession today? And all the doctors and nurses are at work with something, and they'd be doing something more profitable IF Adam had taken of the Tree of Life. DO YOU REALIZE HOW IMPORTANT THAT DECISION WAS, THAT ADAM MADE AT THAT TIME?

Do you know we wouldn't have the kind of governments in this world that we have? We wouldn't have the kind of politics that we have, and people blaming the government for everything. They want to get everything from the government; and the government wants to get everything from us, doesn't it? It's all the same. Everything is "get" – get from everybody else. No, we wouldn't have this kind of government.

We wouldn't have the kind of society we have, and we wouldn't have the kind of sports we have. We wouldn't have the kinds of amusements and entertainments we have. You wouldn't have this kind of a life at all! Now I'm

going to say something about that later, because God has called us out of this kind of life. And I think we don't understand or realize that fully, and many of us have not come out of this kind of life. We're STILL PART OF IT! And God says "COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE." Well, brethren, when are we going to do it?

Yes, what if Adam had taken of the Tree of Life? Well, let's begin all over again because there's an awful lot more to say on this subject. It means **everything in our lives!** Everything! The WHOLE WORLD would have been different!

The God Family

Now we have to realize that God is the Source of our existence, such as we have; and God is the Source of life, and God is the Creator, and God is creating righteous, perfect, spiritual character in separate entities that He has created. (Of course, He created angels first. I won't need to go back into that today.) But He created man.

Now, what about God? We read of God in John 1:1-4, and we find two personages mentioned there.

John 1:1-2 In the beginning was the Word. [Now the Word was a personage.], and the Word was with God, [And God is a personage. So you have the two personages.] ... (2) The same was in the beginning with God. (3) All things were made by him [the Word].

But in verse 14 we read that the Word was made flesh, ultimately. That was only about 1900 and let's see, '50, '60, '70, '80 years ago; but at that time God became the Father and the Word became the Son. But in Genesis 1:1 we read:

Genesis 1:1 In the beginning [Elohim] ...

The Hebrew word was Elohim, meaning more than one person but forming one God. Now, They're not two Gods. They're two personages, but They form God. Now God is not a person. God is A FAMILY, and God is consisting of more than one person. God is **reproducing Himself**. It is a Family reproducing itself and adding to the Family.

I am the father of a family. I've become the father of four children, and now grandchildren and even a few great-grandchildren. By reproduction, a family will grow, and grow, and grow. And Adam's family did grow until there have become billions of people on earth today. About four billion now; and, if you take all of the other billions that have lived in past years, there are a great many billion that have lived since Adam.

And so we find that in the beginning was God, and God is more than one person. The Hebrew word is Elohim; and Elohim is a uni-plural, meaning more than one person – and that simply included the one who was God and the one who was the Word. And they have, since Christ was born, become the Father and the Son. But they are both God; and God is a Family, and God is not one person.

You and I should have been already **begotten** into that Family. And we shall ... If we overcome, if we are filled with the Spirit of God, if we grow (in knowledge and character, in grace, in spiritual character) and endure until the end – we shall also become members of the God Family. We shall be God in the sense that we are part of the God Family, the same as the Father is and the Son is now.

And so God said: "*Let Us make man in Our image* (Genesis 1:26), *after Our likeness.*" Not "Let Me." "Let Us." There was more than one person involved in Elohim. But God did not make man as He had made angels or as God was composed. God is a Spirit. John 4:24^{1}. Anyway, God is composed of Spirit. He did not form man out of Spirit. He formed man out of

the dust of the ground. And so, in Genesis 2:7 we read:

Genesis 2:7 And the [Eternal] God formed man out of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

What was formed out of the ground became a **soul**. A soul came out of the ground; therefore, a soul is matter and not spirit. A soul is matter and not spirit!

Difference Between Animal And Man

Now, let me give you first now ... It's very necessary at this point that we understand something I hadn't been bringing out quite as thoroughly as I would like to. What is the difference between animal and man? If you go back just a few verses:

Genesis 1:24-25 God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature [or land animals] after his kind, cattle and the creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so. (25) And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind [and so on].

Each animal reproduces after its kind: dogs after the dog kind, elephants after the elephant kind. But He said **“Let Us make man AFTER THE GOD KIND.”** Man was made after the God kind, and man is different from animals!

Now then, I want to take a little bit of time this afternoon to get into this matter of what is this difference between an animal and a man. Man is not an animal! The educated are trying to tell us that man is only the highest of the animals in the process of evolution. Man is not an animal, not an animal at all! There's a great difference.

Animals have brains. Animals have eyes like humans do. Animals have ears to hear with. Some of their hearing is much better than human hearing too, let me tell you. And animals have mouths and they can eat, and they can taste food like we can. They can smell, and animals have a sense of feel through nerves. Now, so does man. And the only way that knowledge can enter through a man – into a man’s mind – is through the eye, the ear, the nose, the mouth (the sense of taste), or the sense of feel and touch. He’s not different from an animal in that respect.

He is different from an animal in the fact he’s made in the form and shape of God. Let me give you one illustration: the hands of a man. No animal has anything like human hands. Look at what human hands make. I have a watch here, which keeps just virtually perfect time. Human hands made this. I have another watch that was hand made, not machine made; but even hands made the machine.

What animal could make a computer? What animal could form and make a watch out of matter? No animal could do that with hoofs, or claws, or paws, or whatever an animal has. They don’t have a human hand. No animal could play a harp, or a piano, or a violin. Just think of what the human hand can do. An animal couldn’t even operate a typewriter like we can. And I do a great deal of that myself, because I do my own writing on a typewriter – all the writing you read from me.

Now an animal has a brain, and a human has a brain; but there’s a great, vast difference. Humans are made in the image, the form and shape, of God. God has hands, and God has feet and toes. Animals don’t. We are in a different form and shape than animals. We are made out of the same substance as animals. We get the same kind of life as animals – by the circulation of blood, and by a heart pumping blood, and by the breath of air. So do animals! What is the difference? Well, in that respect, none; but there’s a difference in form and shape. And an animal cannot do what a man can

because it doesn't have hands. It cannot do what a man can because it doesn't have a mind. It has a brain.

Now we come to another difference between man and animal. And let me tell you something. For example, did you ever see a little calf born? If you've lived on a farm in the country, you have. I was not brought up in the country, but I had cousins about my age that were, and aunts and uncles; and we visited them down on the farm quite often. I've seen a calf born. I've also seen babies born. I've seen three of my four children born. And I'll tell you, there's quite a difference.

When I saw a calf born, it was able in less than five minutes (It might have been 2, 3, 4 minutes.) to get up on its four legs and walk. I've seen babies born, and they don't learn to walk for about a year. Look at the difference! Now I saw the calf, as soon as it got on its feet (in less than 5 minutes), it began to walk, and it knew where to go, and it knew what to do, and went for its dinner. And the stupid old cow, mother, just stood there stupidly **by instinct** waiting for the newborn calf to go for its dinner.

I saw one movie one time where the calf was going to the wrong end for the dinner, and the mother just whipped around and shoved it back to the right end. That was a real funny movie; but it was caught in action, and not trained. It just happened that way. Anyway, there is a difference.

Now a newborn human doesn't know how to go for its dinner. A calf doesn't have to be told how to suck on the tits of the cow mother. It just knows how – BY INSTINCT! But humans are not equipped with instinct. Humans are equipped with **mind**, and the human has to be taught how to even suck its mother's breast. The human has to be taken care of. We have to put diapers on little humans for a while until we teach them how to go to the toilet for themselves, and that takes a little teaching.

They have to learn EVERYTHING, and everything they do has to be

actuated by a mind; and an animal doesn't have that kind of mind. An animal can't think. It can be taught certain things by repetition, but it can't think. Humans can think, even for themselves; but they need to be taught also. But humans have to be taken care of. Now the human has a mind to think with. An animal doesn't. An animal only has a brain, and there's quite a difference. That is another difference between man and animals.

Human Development

Now I said that man was made to have a relationship with God, but he was also made to have a relation with his fellow – with other humans. Man was equipped with what we call “mind.” Now that originates in the brain. The human brain is precisely like the animal brain. The elephant, the whale, the dolphin have larger brains than humans; and they're just as good in quality. And they are larger, but they can't think like humans. They don't have the mental output of a human. They can't reason. They can't think creatively. But they do have instinct, and they know automatically what they need to do. They take care of themselves. A human is helpless. He can't take care of himself. A little child has to have parents to take care of him, or somebody, because he's helpless. He can't take care of himself.

Now, let me tell you something, there's another way in which we never when we grow up have been able to take care of ourselves. (I'm coming to that.) I want you to get this point and the difference between man and animals. A man has a mind, and it takes time for that mind to grow and develop until he comes to maturity. A human being only comes to a sort of pre-maturity at about age sixteen or seventeen. Until then, a child – a human child – only thinks about fun. That's all his life is, just having fun. That's what kids think about.

Along about sixteen or seventeen, they begin to think a little bit

seriously about life for the first time. Now that's only part of their thinking. That's not all of it. They don't suddenly change into thinking about serious adult things; but they begin to think part of the time about more adult things and about life. By eighteen they begin to think a little more seriously about life. By age twenty-five the average human has come to a place of maturity of mind where he's more or less mentally set in his ways, and after that it's a little bit harder to begin to change his mind and change his ways.

A human has not developed into the place (and I will speak now of the male sex primarily in this regard) where he is recognized by others as an adult and where he might have some leadership over others until age thirty; and you'll notice that Jesus did not start His ministry until He was about thirty years of age. Now those are just some things that I have noticed in life, along the way, about human development.

The human mind has to be developed. The human body had to be developed from a tiny size of a pinpoint, of an ovum fertilized by a male sperm from the body of our father. And it had to be fed on physical food out of the ground to grow into a material being made from the dust of the ground; and it has a mind. But what gives man mind-power when animals have the **same kind of brain** (and some even larger) and still can't think and reason like a human can? What, then, is the difference?

A Spirit In Man

Well, we turn over to one place (I'll tell you) in Job 32:8. "*There is a spirit in man.*" You can't find any place where the Bible says there is a spirit in animals – in a cow, or a turkey, or an elephant. But **THERE IS A SPIRIT IN MAN**, and that spirit empowers the physical brain with materialistic intellect; and I say "materialistic intellect" because that's all it does. That's all it does.

Man is made in the image, the form and shape, of God; and man is made with a mind, which an animal doesn't have. That is the way in which man is different from an animal. He has a mind like God. He's in the form and shape of God. He has hands, for example, which an animal does not have. MAN WAS MADE TO HAVE A RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD; but he was also made to have a relationship with his fellows, with his neighbors, with his children and other people's children as the earth became populated.

Now, God made man **incomplete!** GOD MADE MAN WITH A **SPIRIT**. (I'll go into more of that again, and I have before, and before, and you should already know that.) God made man with a spirit, but that spirit can't think. That spirit can't see. The human physical brain sees through the physical eye. It hears through the human physical ear. The spirit in man can't do the thinking. The physical brain thinks. But the spirit is like a computer; and what knowledge comes into the brain – through the eyes, the ears, the nose, the mouth, the sense of feel and touch – is instantly programmed into the spirit. The spirit then contains [2](#) the memory. It gives instant recall, and that instant recall the human brain puts together in a process we call reasoning and thinking; and an animal can't do that. That is the difference.

But ALL that it can reason, and ALL that the human mind and brain naturally (as Adam was created, and as you and I were born) is to think about physical material things! We can even think about people, but we don't know how to conduct ourselves with people. We can't deal with people. We are made with a mind that can deal only intelligently with **things** and cannot deal intelligently with people.

It was made to deal with God and to have a contact and a connection with God. Animals were not! Now, I want you to get this difference. Man needed another spirit. He was made incomplete, and in his mind man is mentally only half there. I have said that the most ignorant people on earth are the ones with the greatest education and the most PhDs, or MDs, or other

doctor degrees after their names. The more of this world's education you have, the more ignorant you are because that education is 100% materialistic and physical – because the human mind can't see spirit or spiritual things. It can't reason about spiritual things; and in our contact with God and our contact with neighbor (with other humans) we are dealing with **spiritual** equations, not merely with materialistic equations. We are dealing with spiritual principles.

God's Holy Spirit

Now, that gives us some idea about the world that had been developed. Man needed another spirit. He's only half there mentally. Now man was offered LIFE through the Holy Spirit. If he had taken of the Tree of Life, he would have received Life. But how does God impart Life to human beings? God imparts Life to human beings only through the Holy Spirit. Adam would not have had immortal Life just “bang” right off like that. God created angels like that, and they did not make the right choice (a third of them).

God was not going to let man have immortal Life until man had already **learned to LIVE that way** – in the way that he could get along with other people and with God. He had to have a **right relationship** with his neighbors and with God.

Now all of our troubles come in dealing with other people, and because we can't deal with God, and because men have lost all contact with God. They are cut off from God's wavelength, but they are on Satan's wavelength. Now all the time you have to remember that there was Satan on the throne of the world, and Adam was created in a manner that his mind was on Satan's wavelength materialistically. It could have been on God's wavelength **if** he had taken of the Tree of Life. God offered it freely.

Now when the Holy Spirit comes, which would have happened to

Adam, the first thing the Holy Spirit gives you is **knowledge**. The first thing the Holy Spirit does is to open your mind to the way of God, the way of Life – your relationship towards God and your relationship towards neighbor. That is THE LAW OF GOD. The law of God is a way of Life, and the law of God is out-flowing love to God and to neighbor.

And it is because we don't do that and don't have that ability to have that kind of love towards God and towards neighbor that mankind has had all of his problems and all of his troubles. Look at the world that has developed. I'll go into that a little more in just a minute, but I want you to notice: man has been cut off from the ability and the power for a relationship with God and a relationship with his neighbor.

Now, just as the newborn baby needs help from and guidance from a parent and teaching from a parent, so even does an adult human needs teaching from and guidance from and help **from God**; and without it he is helpless, especially in his problems which are spiritual in nature. He needs contact with God. He needs guidance and help from God. For example, in Psalm 34:19:

Psalm 34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the LORD [The Eternal, or God] delivers him out of them all.

We get into trouble, and we don't know how to get out of it; and the way to get out of it is we need the help of God. A little baby gets into trouble, and it needs the help of the parent. Now just before I came out here this afternoon, there was a little boy who started running. He started running right out here on the stage, and his father had to come running after him. He needed a little bit of help and guidance. So did you and I when we were that age.

We have to have help and guidance; and God is not only one who guides us, but God is one who will help us when we get in trouble. We need

God to reach down and take hold of us and help us, just like a little child needs someone to put on its diapers and take them off and put on a clean pair; and to feed it and take care it; and it needs the guidance of a parent or an older person. And all humans have needed that guidance from God.

Adam's Choice

But when Adam took to himself the knowledge of good and evil, he took that to himself. Now, if he had taken of the Tree of Life, the first thing would have been the knowledge of the law of God, which is THE WAY to good and to avoid evil. In other words, the first thing he would have gotten from the Tree of Life would have been spiritual as well as material knowledge. What did Adam take? He took to himself the knowledge. He didn't want to get it from God. He didn't want help from God. He said, "I'll take care of myself."

It's just like a little boy, who says, "I'll run out there. I'll take care of myself, I don't need a father to help me." And man is like that yet! He's a conceited, great big ass. That's what he is. He thinks he can take care of himself. He says, "God, get out of here. What are You trying to get from me? Get Your nose out of my business, God. I don't want anything to do with You."

When Adam made that choice, he cut himself off from God! And most humans have cut themselves off from God through sin ever since. Your sins have cut you off from God. And man is on Satan's wavelength, and ALL have sinned and been cut off from God. But when Adam made that choice and instead of taking the Holy Spirit, which he would have had from God that would have first given him knowledge of the SPIRITUAL LAW – the way of Life: love toward God and love out-going out-flowing towards neighbor ... In other words, I help my neighbor. My neighbor helps me. We kind of help

one another mutually. And, if we get into trouble, we go to God.

Help From God

Now, we had trouble over in the Philippines. What did we do? If people tried to solve that by themselves, it would only have blown up into a bigger thing; and the whole Church over there would have been blown up by today. But, no – WE NEEDED HELP! WE WENT TO GOD FOR IT. God straightened it out right away, and all is harmony and peace. Of course, they've had their service today long ago. As a matter of fact, when Mr. Fahey called me last evening our time, it was just ...

As a matter of fact it was during the Bible Study, which I was looking at on my own television set. Whatever you do here when I'm not here, I'm looking at you anyway at home. I've got my own television hook-up, and I can see what all is going on. But anyway, he was just getting ready to go to the afternoon service – this afternoon already over in the Philippines, because it was already this afternoon over there (only it was only last night here). And they were going to have a fine service, and all was going to be harmony. Why? Because we looked to God, and we had THE HELP that we needed FROM HIM!

You can't live your life alone without God! Human beings are **helpless** trying to get along without God, as a little child is without a parent. I want you to get that comparison and realize it. Yes, many are our problems and troubles all through life; but we need the guidance of God, and He will deliver us out of all of our troubles.

Now Life – as this Tree of Life – meant the Holy Spirit, of course. It meant **spiritual knowledge**. Man doesn't have spiritual knowledge. He only has materialistic knowledge: all that can come through the material senses of the eye, the ear, the senses of smell, feel, and touch – material knowledge.

But his problems are spiritual in nature, and he has no knowledge of spiritual things. He would have received knowledge had he had the Holy Spirit. Then he would have received also “*the love of God shed abroad in our hearts*” **by** the Holy Spirit.

Now once he received this knowledge of the law of God, that’s the WAY OF LIFE. That’s the knowledge that is the right knowledge of what is good and what is evil. And that way is fulfilled by LOVE. Love is the fulfilling of the law, but that is the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit; and God would have **given** him that love, and that is **GOD’S LOVE**. It is not a love that Adam was born with. Adam didn’t have that kind of love.

Adam said, “I’ll just manufacture my own knowledge. I’ll manufacture my own love. I don’t need faith in God, or from God. I have faith in myself – self-confidence, look what a great guy I am. Look what I can do. I’ll go on my own power.” He should have received **faith** – the faith of Christ – from the Holy Spirit. He should have received **power** from God. The **love of God** to fulfill the law. He didn’t get any of those things, so he couldn’t fulfill the law of God. And when you break that law, you get in trouble; and man ...

[** *Tape skips at 44:41 and there is a part missing here.*]

... of good health, and you have to have drive to energize and to push yourself on. Some people are just lackadaisical. They don’t ... You know, they just take it easy; and they don’t drive themselves at all. If you get anywhere in this life, you have to really have drive on yourself.

Now, the next one is resourcefulness – the next of the laws of success. When you get in trouble, it’s the resourcefulness to find the way around it; but man doesn’t have that resourcefulness in his troubles. He needs to get that from God, and he needs guidance from God. When you get down to it, all of these things he needs to get **from God**. I think now that I need to write that

booklet on “The Seven Laws of Success” all over again. I’ll add a little something to it I didn’t have in it.

Finally, it is enduring to the end. In other words, sticking to it – endurance, tenacity, and just don’t give up (because just a little more and it can turn what appears to be a hopeless failure into an overwhelming success). But you would get knowledge, love, faith, power, all of these attributes FROM GOD; that God would pour in through the Holy Spirit.

Now, as was explained in the sermon in the morning service, of how God **pours** the Holy Spirit. He will pour it into us. It is like water. Jesus said, “If any of you thirst, come to Me and drink.” The man who thirsts, out of his innermost being will **flow** RIVERS OF LIVING WATER; but it has to come first from God. It flows into him.

Man Needs Two Spirits

Now man has one spirit. But man is like an electric ... Now, let me see. I have an electric light here. I don’t know whether you can see it or not, but there is a double wire coming in here. They are joined together, but there are two wires there. (Two wires coming in there.) One electric wire alone wouldn’t give us any light. You have to have a return circuit, and it takes two. Well, it takes the two spirits in man; and also the love of God, and faith in God and in Christ. And all of that has to come FROM GOD, and then it flows back to Him again on the return circuit.

But man needed both, just like you can’t get a light (you can’t get electric power) without the two; and man only has the one spirit. As in electricity, you have to have the two wires coming in. But man only has the one spirit **until** God gives him the Holy Spirit.

Now the other tree [{3}](#) (It wasn’t offered to Adam. God forbade him to

take it.) was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. And that was man creating his own knowledge with his carnal mind with the one spirit, which limits him to **physical knowledge** {4}. And he can't know anything about spiritual principles, about spiritual dealing with other people or with God. He needed the other Spirit.

Revealed Knowledge

All right, let's turn over now to I Corinthians 2 once again. I've gone into this before, where Paul says:

I Corinthians 2:9 But as it is written, Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man [or, that is, into the human mind] the things which God has prepared for them that love him.

In other words, **spiritual knowledge** cannot come through the eye, or the ear, or the sense of smell, taste, or feel. You can't see spirit. You can't hear it. You can't feel it. It doesn't vibrate. You can't hear it. You can't see it. It has no odor. You can't smell it. You can't taste it or feel it. And yet some people have a feeling of emotion, and they think that's the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is NOT a feeling! The Holy Spirit is NOT an emotion!

Now sometimes, if you are filled with the Holy Spirit, there is an emotional content; and there ought to be. But that is minimal compared with what it really means in the way of enlightening the mind, and giving you the love of God, and the faith of Christ, and the power, and the things that you need, and guidance from God. No, with your eye, your ear, the five sense, you can't know the spiritual things, or the things of God, or spiritual knowledge you need even to deal with other people.

I Corinthians 2:10 But God has revealed them unto us ...

But he's talking here to Christians, in the Church. God did NOT reveal

it to Adam. He WOULD HAVE if Adam had taken the Tree of Life; but Adam didn't. Now then:

***1 Corinthians 2:10** God has revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God.*

The Holy Spirit is open to some of us now, and has been since Christ; but not after Adam had made the wrong choice.

***1 Corinthians 2:11** For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man, which is in him?*

A man, well ... Let's say a chimpanzee, a dolphin – they're smart animals. An elephant, a whale – they cannot know the things a man knows. They don't have human knowledge because there's no spirit in them to impart that to them. They just have physical brain only. That's how man differs from animal.

***1 Corinthians 2:11** Even so the things of God [Or SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE that we need for a contact with God and a contact with our neighbors. That kind of knowledge.] knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.*

Except by the Spirit of God, you cannot have that knowledge; and man doesn't have that knowledge! Our wisest men, our best educated men, do NOT have that knowledge! That knowledge is **revealed through the Holy Spirit**. Adam did not take that Spirit (that Tree) that was offered to him.

***1 Corinthians 2:14** But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God [or spiritual knowledge]: for they are foolishness unto him: [He just can't even ...] know them, because they are spiritually discerned [and revealed through the Holy Spirit, which Adam would have had if he had taken it].*

Man's Helplessness

Now Adam did not take it. Adam chose the other Tree. He chose to go it alone by himself. It's like a little child saying, "I won't have any help from my parent. I'll just take care of everything myself." And man is helpless in his problems and his troubles and doesn't know why. So Adam **took to self** the knowledge of the right way and the wrong way, of what is the good and what is evil. Man decides what is righteousness and what is sin, and he decides the way. So man has materialistic knowledge ONLY, and he is confined to materialistic knowledge. So he's able to deal with matter and with things, but not with people or with God. He's cut off. He's cut himself off from God.

Now he is as helpless as a newborn baby, as I've said – to work with other people; to have peace, contentment, happiness of mind; and to have a contact with God. We read now in Romans 8 and verse 7:

***Romans 8:7** Because the carnal mind [which Adam chose, and which mankind has had every since – the carnal mind] is enmity against God [that is, hostile. Enmity means hostile, or hostility towards God and against God.]: for it is not subject to the law of God [which is outpouring love to God and your neighbor], neither indeed can be.*

It just is not and cannot be. Now THE WHOLE WORLD has been **cut off** from God and from the knowledge to solve man's problems or to deal with one another. He's cut off from God, and he can't even deal with his neighbor. THAT IS THE KIND OF WORLD YOU'VE BEEN BORN IN! And people think this is God's world, and people think this is a pretty good world. Oh, they don't know how rotten it is!

And they don't know how wonderful the World Tomorrow will be when all of the people in it have a contact with God, and have the Spirit of God so

they can be deal in harmony, and peace, and love with one another. When a misunderstanding comes, they'll both go to God; and God will straighten it right out. (Just like He's straighten out, in the last two days, the situation over in the Philippine Islands. We have Churches all over the Philippines, and a number of Churches over there.)

So now we go back (and I've read it to you so many times before; but I want to go back once again) to the 3rd chapter now of Genesis and the last three verses:

***Genesis 3:22-24** So the [Eternal] God said ... now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of **life**, and eat, and **live forever** [and gain IMMORTALITY, and immortal life while he's going the wrong way and only has one spirit; and he'd chosen to live his own way]: (23) Therefore the [Eternal] God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. (24) So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life [and prevent people from getting the Tree of Life].*

So God shut the Spirit of Life off from man! Now, in God is LIFE. In Christ, the Word, was LIFE. Christ came and He had Life in Himself. He said, "I am come that they might have Life." So it remained for the Second Adam to come and bring Life. The first Adam failed. But Christ said, "I have come that they might have Life and have it more abundantly."

Man's World

The whole world, then, was cut off from God. It had some knowledge of God, but no spirit content or connection **with** God. Now how has man's world developed since Adam? Let's just take a minute for that. For about 5,000 years the world went along on a pretty even keel. Transportation had to

be walking, or on horseback, or mule-back, or a camel. Yes, or an elephant. Some of them do ride elephants I guess in some parts of the world. Or they would go by a rowboat or a sailboat.

There was very little knowledge. There was no printing. The only way that they could transmit anything by writing one to another was by writing out by hand; and their books had to be written, just one book written one page at a time and one book. No printing! Just think of that.

Education didn't developed. But they did develop a world cut off from God; and it was a world half illiterate and ignorant, almost half starvation (many starving), living in filth and squalor. Now the last century and a half, the world seems to have awakened a little bit **materialistically**. And we've come to the time of modern science and technology, modern education. And it's all since the printing press, when we have had more of the diffusion of knowledge, especially in the western world. It didn't reach the old world of China very much, or India, or many parts of Africa. It didn't even reach parts of South America.

Now, man in the western world has had what we look on as AWESOME PROGRESS in materialistic production; but EVERYTHING that he thinks is great and awesome that man has done has been materialistic in dealing with **matter**. Man can deal with things. He can deal with things out of the earth. But he can't deal with people. Man has been able to even solve getting up out of the earth's atmosphere and going to the moon and back, and coming back without being burned up as he comes back through the atmosphere. But a man goes to the moon, comes back, and then breaks up with his family because he can't get along with (I don't know.) it's either his wife, his children, or something. The whole family is broken up, and they are in trouble.

Man has great progress MATERIALISTICALLY; but he has nothing

but RETROGRESSION when it comes to dealing with man, and no connection with God (even after Christ came). Now when did all this thing happen? Men cannot deal with people! He's out of contact with (or help from) the Creator, which he needed. Now man has developed the hydrogen bomb. Man has developed the engines of destruction that can become the Frankenstein monsters that destroy man! And now, it's a fearsome thing.

And NBC, I believe it is, is going to have a program (I didn't get the date. Whether that's tonight, tomorrow night, or Monday night – I didn't catch.) on if a hydrogen bomb hit Omaha, Nebraska, what would happen? Any of you from Omaha or let's say Sioux City, Iowa, Des Moines, or Kansas City? They would all be affected if a hydrogen bomb hit Omaha. It's going to be **a frightful thing!** And they are going to show you with, well, with what am I trying to think of? All the little stations that they have. They are not real, not real photographs; but... (I can't think of the word. Anyway, they are all manufactured.) to show us what would happen.

So now our number one problem is self-preservation. Or, can mankind even stay alive on the earth? Or are we facing nothing but billions ahead [{5}](#)? And here we are in a physical existence. **We don't have LIFE.** We only have a temporary, physical existence. I've been emphasizing that the last two or three weeks before. Only a physical existence! And a physical existence where we are CUT OFF FROM GOD! A physical existence where we are helpless to deal with one another; and where we only have a temporary life, and it's going to end. It's appointed to all men once to die, and after this the judgment. Think of what is **the state of man** today.

How Life Came

But Life came only by Christ, the Second Adam. Now we get down to the time when Life came by the Second Adam. But Jesus said in Matthew 16,

and verse 18 I think it is ... Jesus said:

Matthew 16:18 I will build my church, and the gates of hell will not prevail against it.

Jesus said He would build His Church, and He did. He revealed His truth to the apostles. And on the day of Pentecost (after He had taught His apostles for 3 1/2 years and there were 120 there to follow Him), on that day something happened. Now the prophet Joel had prophesied:

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass ...

This is a prophecy. The main prophecy is ahead of us yet, but the preliminary part happened 1950 years ago (1950 years ago last Sunday).

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass afterwards, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh.

The Day Of Pentecost

Adam had rejected the Holy Spirit. God had shut off the Holy Spirit. Now, after all of these years (approximately over 4,000 years), God started the Holy Spirit for the few that were predestinated and called to be in the Church of God. And there were only 120 (after 3 1/2 years of Jesus' preaching) who were there on the day of Pentecost. And on that day, that day of Pentecost, I want you to notice beginning with the 1st verse of chapter 2 of the book of Acts:

Acts 2:1-2 And when the day of Pentecost was fully come [After Christ had ascended to heaven.], they were all with one accord in one place. (2) And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind ...

That's a real roar. If you ever heard a wind rushing that way, there's quite a lot of sound to it. I happened to be back in Indianapolis, Indiana just a

couple or three nights ago; and a hurricane came very close. You may have read about it, or seen about it on television news. It played havoc. In just a short distance, there was terrible lightning right there in Indianapolis where we were eating up on the top floor of a, I don't know, 20 or 30 story hotel.

Acts 2:2-3 Suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. [It was a real noisy occasion.] (3) And there appeared unto them [That's the 120 who were there.] cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them.

They say the Holy Spirit is a person, a holy ghost, because it is always spoken of as "he." Oh, no! It's called "it" here.

Acts 2:3-4 It [It's not a person.] sat upon each of them. (4) And they were all filled with the Holy ...

"Spirit," it should be; and it says, "ghost" here. That wasn't a ghost that filled all of them at all. It was the Holy Spirit. (Now on to verse 15.) A crowd came rushing in, and they wondered what had happened. Peter stood up to talk to them, and Peter said:

Acts 2:15-17 For these are not drunken, as you suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day [Nine o'clock in the morning]. (16) But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel, saying, (17) And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh.

Firstfruits Of "All Flesh"

Now this is only the preliminary, the FIRSTFRUITS. Not "all flesh," but it was all flesh of those God had called at that time. Just the Church, and it was only 120 out of all of the population of the earth at that time. Now later that same day another 3,000 were baptized however, and undoubtedly received the Holy Spirit that same day.

Now then, they listened to Peter in the sermon; and they were filled with consternation; and when Peter had got through preaching, the people asked him what to do. In verse 37:

Acts 2:37 Now when they heard [Peter speaking], they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, **what shall we do?**

They were rather frantic when they heard it, and heard how guilty they were of putting Christ to death. Now they wondered what to do.

Acts 2:38 Then Peter said to them, **REPENT**, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit [what had been offered to Adam 4,000 years before].

Now the Holy Spirit was opened up because the Second Adam had come and paid the penalty with His life, for the sins of those people – who had sinned. And now they could repent and be reconciled to God the Father, who had eternal Life to give. He says:

Acts 2:39 For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even **as many as the Lord our God shall CALL**.

Just to those that God calls, because Jesus said, “*No man can come to Me, except the Father which sent me draw him.*” So it’s not for all flesh even yet. That was THE FIRSTFRUITS of all flesh, and that only at that time.

Now Christ had preached His gospel. But, as you read in Galatians the 1st chapter, the gospel was suppressed. (Verses 6 and 7 of Galatians 1) The gospel was suppressed, and it had been suppressed then for 1900 years. The true Church of God had moved underground, and the true Church of God continued generation after generation. But how did the Church receive its knowledge? Originally the Church received its knowledge from the apostles,

and the apostles got it direct from Christ.

Jesus is the Word of God in person. The Bible is the same Word of God in writing. It is the same Word exactly! This [{6}](#) is Jesus Christ in writing. The same Word exactly that He taught the apostles. No different!

Preparing The Way

Now then, we have a prophecy back here in Malachi the 3rd chapter and the first 5 verses.

Malachi 3:1-5 Behold, I will send my messenger [It's a prophecy for the future.], and he shall prepare the way before me: and the LORD, whom you seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom you delight in ... [That's Christ, the Messenger of the New Covenant. Now go right on, the next verse.] (2) But who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap. (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness. Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the LORD, as in the days of old ... (5) And I will come near to you to judgment.

THAT DOES NOT DESCRIBE THE FIRST COMING OF CHRIST!
THAT'S DESCRIBING THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST. John the Baptist was only a forerunner, preparing the way for the first coming of Christ. And as John the Baptist was a voice in the wilderness of the Jordan River – the **physical, material wilderness** of the Jordan River – preparing the way before a **human, physical Christ** born of the human flesh to come to His **human people** (Judah) and to come to His **materialistic temple** built of stone, and wood, and other materials, and coming to announce He would restore the Kingdom of God (or build the Kingdom of God and restore the

government of God)...

So it's speaking of the Second Coming of Christ where there would be one to prepare the way of Christ's coming by PREPARING THE TEMPLE He's to come to. The temple is the Church. YOU are that temple! And this would be a voice **in the spiritual wilderness** of the Twentieth Century religious confusion! Crying out in that spiritual wilderness, to prepare the way for the **spiritual Christ** in POWER and GREAT GLORY to come to set up the Kingdom of God and to come to His **spiritual temple** – the Church (not a physical temple), and this time to set up and to establish the Kingdom of God on earth. Brethren, we've come to that time; and God has raised up one, and you have heard the truth from him just as the early Church heard the truth from the apostles.

How Truth Came

Now, how did God give me the truth? I got it from the same Christ (only in print) that the original apostles did. I began to find that everything I'd been taught religiously, and which I never paid much attention to anyway, was contrary to the Word of God; and this {6} was Christ speaking. I saw when He said:

Romans 6:23 *The wages of sin is death.*

I'd been taught the wages of sin is eternal life instead of death, but in hell fire. I'd been taught I already had the gift of God, but the next part of that same verse said eternal life is the gift of God. Adam could have had it as a gift, but he didn't. Nobody has had it as God's gift since; but Christ brought it **as a gift**. "*Through Christ,*" the gift of God.

I began to learn we don't go to heaven. I began to learn that almost everything the churches are teaching today is false and contrary to the Bible.

I began to realize that the Bible ... I had to PROVE that God exists and that the Bible is the authentic Word of God, and that it is the authority, and the authoritative Word of God. I was taught ... My mind was swept clean of every other belief, and I was taught right from the Bible. I didn't get it from any college. I didn't get it from any seminary or Bible school, from other men. I didn't get it from other people.

Now the second generation of the Church got it from the people of the first generation. The third generation of the Church got it from the second generation. Then they went underground, and people got it from people in the generation before them. And when I came into the Church, I found they had lost about 90% of the truth of the gospel. Now they did have the law of God. They did have the Sabbath day, but not the annual Sabbaths. They didn't know about the Kingdom of God though. They only knew a little about the Holy Spirit. They knew there was a Holy Spirit, but they didn't understand it at all. They didn't know what it meant for them to have the Holy Spirit.

They were an arguing people. They could argue from certain Bible truths, but they only had a part of the Bible. **GOD HAS REVEALED THE TRUTH TO US** in a way that NOBODY in 1900 years has ever had it. DO YOU REALIZE THAT, BRETHREN? Do you realize that the Methodist church doesn't have it? The Roman Catholic church doesn't understand it. The Presbyterian church, the Baptist. None of these churches understand this truth. The thing that God has given us is as different as day is from night, and they are in darkness when it comes to the light of God.

I'm not condemning them. God says the world is deceived, and Satan has deceived the whole world. Deceived people can be ever so honest. They don't know they are deceived. Maybe they mean well. I wouldn't criticize. But if God hasn't called them, He will later. This just isn't the time yet, but He's called some of us now. Judgment is on us now, though it isn't on them as yet.

God's End Time Church

Now the truth has been **restored** at last. We are in the end time. The Church is the firstfruits of the very Spirit of God. Now to the Church, let me show you what God says to us. And as I say, the Church went underground; but it's been **revived**. The 18th chapter of Revelation:

***Revelation 18:1-2** And after these things [the prophecy] I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. (2) And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of [demons], and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.*

And Babylon is shown in the 17th chapter as “*BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH*” – a woman riding on the governments, on a number of governments. Babylon is a great false Church, and she is the mother of harlots and abominations of the earth. Protestants came out of her in protest, and we are called “*Come out of her, my people!*” That's out of Protestantism, out of Roman Catholicism [{7}](#). But ...

***Revelation 18:3-4** For all nations [All nations have been deceived, as you read in the 12th chapter of Revelation. All nations ...] have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. (4) And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, **Come out of her, MY PEOPLE**, that you be not partakers of her sins, and that you receive not of her plagues.*

And this is FOR THIS CHURCH NOW, just before the Day of the Lord and the plagues of God are poured out. Just before that time. Now I would

like to have you notice next, let's see, II Corinthians 6:16-18 where Christ says:

II Corinthians 6:16-17 *For ye [speaking to us as a Church, and especially in this last time and this last generation] are the temple of the living God: as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. (17) Wherefore come out from among them [of this world, and of their religions, and of the ways of this world, and the world's entertainments] ...*

Some of you will go home from this sermon, turn on the radio and be entertained, or go to some entertainment tonight. God says COME OUT OF THEM, MY PEOPLE!

II Corinthians 6:17-18 *Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, (18) And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord [of hosts].*

That is what God is saying to us in this last time, but before the final plagues that precede the Second Coming of Christ. Now we come over again to II Peter 3:18. II Peter 3:18 ... I didn't put a marker in for that. Well, II Peter 3:18 says (I know what it says without turning to it.) "*But GROW in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.*" We have to grow in that kind of knowledge. Adam took to himself knowledge. We have to grow in the **knowledge that God imparts** through the Holy Spirit.

Prophecy For Our Time

Now for our time there is another prophecy back here in Joel, in Joel the first chapter. Notice the first three verses. I want to read you a little of this prophecy.

Joel 1:1-3 *The word of the [Eternal] that came to Joel the son of Pethuel, (2) Hear this, ye old men, and give ear, all ye inhabitants of the land. Hath this been in your days, or even in the days of your fathers? (3) Tell ye your children of it, and let your children tell their children, and their children another generation.*

It's prophecy for the far, far future. Now turn to verse 14. Drop down to verse 14.

Joel 1:14-15 *Sanctify ye a fast, call a solemn assembly, gather the elders and all the inhabitants of the land into the house of the LORD your God, and cry unto the LORD. (15) Alas for the day! For the day of the LORD is at hand ...*

It hasn't come yet. No, the Day of the Lord isn't here yet. The Great Tribulation isn't, and the Day of the Lord will come to cut short the Great Tribulation. But it's "at hand."

Joel 1:15 *The day of the LORD is at hand, and as a destruction from the Almighty shall it come.*

Now in the 2nd chapter of Joel. Well, I think that's enough for right now. It's, let's see. In the 2nd chapter and the 12th and 13th verses.

Joel 2:12 *Therefore also now, saith the [Eternal], turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning.*

That's A MESSAGE TO THIS CHURCH NOW! Brethren, are we taking this lightly? Or do we come here to be entertained this afternoon, and then go out to more of the world's entertainment tonight? THESE THINGS ARE REAL, AND A TERRIBLE THING THAT IS COMING ON THIS EARTH. I don't know that a hydrogen bomb is going to strike Omaha. Maybe it will strike Pasadena. But we are coming to the time when we need to be thinking about going to a place of safety for protection against the

things that are coming. We are coming to the time when it says:

Joel 2:12 Therefore also now, saith the LORD, turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning.

Did we do that? No. WE'RE TAKING IT LIGHTLY, my brethren. I've been trying to get this Church back on the track. We're **NOT FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT** like we should be! WE'RE STILL TOO MUCH IN THE WORLD! WE'RE STILL CARELESS. I mean YOU, AND YOU, AND YOU, AND YOU, AND YOU, AND YOU UP THERE in the balcony. YOU ARE CARELESS; and you are IN DANGER, and I'd like to see you get out of danger – where you are safe and where you are under the protection of God.

We just take it terribly for granted: “Well, we're a member of the Church. God will take care of us.” DON'T KID YOURSELF! Do you remember when Christ came right up against it? He departed and prayed, and He even sweat blood. He was in such earnest. It wasn't an emotional fervor, like Pentecostal people – just physical emotion. It was **spiritual earnestness**; and that's the way we've got to be now towards life, and in our prayers and in our Bible study. And we are not awake, brethren. WE ARE ASLEEP AT THE SWITCH STILL. And I say, “Wake up!”

Some have been purged from the Church. It's too bad. We hate to see it. But the Church has to be cleaned up. But it's all ... The Second Coming of Christ, the Great Tribulation – these things are near! We need our minds first on the Bible and on the things of God. I think we have our minds more on the picnic that's coming up than we do on the things of God and the serious things.

The Holy Spirit is a mind that is not just filled with physical emotion, but it is a mind that is **earnest**. And it is in earnest about this condition in the world, and that we are to COME OUT of this world and BE SEPARATE

from it, and that we are to GET CLOSER TO GOD than we are. Brethren, we are not that close to God.

In the last week, I've made arrangement to go back over to Jordan and renew acquaintances with King Hussein and renew a program that we had that we didn't go through with over there. I wasn't responsible for that, but it will all be taken care of. I don't know that Petra is the place of safety where we are to go. I don't know that. I know this: That, if it is not, then the place is not revealed as yet in the Bible. And there is plenty of evidence that that could be the place. King Hussein of Jordan controls it; and he is a friend of mine, and I need to renew that acquaintance.

And some day you may find that my acquaintance with kings, presidents, prime ministers, and head of states over the world may save your lives. We need to realize we're getting into the most serious days that this world has ever known. We are in the time when we need to **watch and pray**, as Christ warned. And that warning wasn't for two or three generations ago. It wasn't for people 500 years or 1,000 years ago. When Jesus said, "Watch and pray, for you know not the hour." He was talking about our time and our generation now. And we are not taking it seriously enough, brethren. We are taking it nonchalantly.

Oh, yes, we've got the truth. The other churches haven't got it. We're pretty cocky. We think we're pretty good. Or do we? We'd better quit thinking that, and we'd better get a little better and a little closer to God than we are. I hope you'll take this home to yourself, and that you'll spend a little more time on your knees from now on. Thank you very much, brethren.

Brethren, I meant it. I'm in dead earnest about it. I didn't mean to entertain you – to be applauded, or for applause. This is very, very serious. I hope you'll take it that way.

Editor's Notes

[Table of Contents](#)

{1} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong was confused about the correct verse for a few seconds and his "thinking out loud" was omitted here.

{2} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong first said, "The spirit then is the ..."
But he caught himself and changed his word to "contains."

{3} - Editor's note: At first, Mr. Armstrong said, "The other tree that was offered ..."
Then he corrected himself and continued: "It wasn't offered to Adam."

{4} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said "the one spirit, which limits him to spiritual knowledge" when he undoubtedly meant to say "the one spirit, which limits him to physical knowledge" as he always taught and as the rest of the context explains.

{5} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong must have been referring to billions of people killed by things like the hydrogen bomb.

{6} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong was thumping on the Bible at this point.

{7} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong had a hard time pronouncing Catholicism when he said: "out of Roman Catholicism (if I can say it). I got a little twisted on that one. But ..."

The Spirit In Man

Sermon (June 20, 1981)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Spirit In Man.....	568	Needing God's Spirit	584
Knowledge Production	570	Love, Faith, And Power	586
Two Kinds Of Knowledge	571	Receiving Knowledge	588
God Is A Family	574	Satan's Influence	589
Temporary Existence Is Not Life	576	How Man's World Developed	590
The Spirit In Man	577	Until Christ Came	593
Differences Between Animals And Man	579	God's Plan Of Redemption	596
Keep Your Eyes On Christ	581		

Well, this is a Feast of Tabernacles crowd! I'm glad to see all of you, and very happy that I can be here. First I want to just bring you up very, very briefly on the progress of the Work. For the last three years, we've been striving to get God's Church back on the track. I'm sure you all know all about that. Well, we are on the track, maybe not 100%, and maybe we're not steaming ahead several thousand miles an hour yet.

For thirty-five long years, this Work was growing at the rate of 30% every year over the year before. That was up until about twelve years ago. Then I was called around the world, carrying Christ's message into other countries all over the world (Africa, South America, Asia, Europe, Australia – all over the world); and the Work didn't grow, because there was mismanagement at Pasadena while I was away. However, we didn't go backwards.

Now, once again, I'm glad to report to you that we are lunging ahead. We had a gain last year over the year before. Not a big one, but it was a gain. This year we're getting back up towards 30% increase once again. Back on

track! We are close to 25% in the United States. We're gaining as high as 60-65% or more over last year in other countries (Canada, Europe, Britain, South Africa, Australia – other countries). So I would say that the Work the world round is very close to a 30% increase right now.

When we please God, He blesses the Work. We are His people. If we please Him, He blesses us. It's just that simple. If we don't please Him, He corrects us. You know, God punishes every son He loves; and people don't understand God's punishment. God never punishes out of revenge, a desire to hurt, desire to cause pain and sorrow and suffering. God's punishment is always corrective. God only punishes **to help**, because we need it to get us back on the track where we're wrong. That's all. It's just that simple. But we are getting back on the track. We are beginning to please God a little more. Let's go on pleasing Him more and more, because we haven't got much time left now. We're coming right down into the latter days.

Now here it is in June. We're still just barely past the middle of June. Yet, for the last week or ten days, we've been having forest fires out in California. This is very early in the summer to have forest fires. They usually come in September (late August and September) when it gets very, very dry. Drought is prophesied to come before the Great Tribulation. As a matter of fact, that is part of it and leads into the Great Tribulation. This **MAY** be the beginning of it. We're watching. Jesus Christ told us to **watch** and be sober. We don't know the day or the hour, and we don't really know when these things are coming. We know that they are very near. Very near.

Today I want to speak on a truth that has never before been understood, even in this Church (and certainly never understood in the world). Today we are in danger of nuclear annihilation of all humanity. We are in danger of a nuclear war. I don't know whether you have been noticing it; but, on the CBS network, this week they are running a series about nuclear armaments and possible nuclear war. More and more nations now have nuclear weapons.

Some smaller nations could start a war – a nuclear war that would trigger a great nuclear war. However, I don't see World War III coming from Russia according to the Bible prophecies. It's going to come from a source the world doesn't expect. But what is happening now in the world is certainly leading up to it, preparing the way; and it could happen and all come together very quickly and very, very suddenly.

Knowledge Production

Scientists have been saying now for some time, because we are in the age when science has been emerging greater ... As a matter of fact, the real birth of modern science has been in the last couple of centuries or less, most of it in the 20th century. They've been saying that, given sufficient knowledge, we will solve all of humanity's problems. We will eradicate all of our evils and troubles.

Back in the 1960s, when they were having a lot of trouble on the Berkeley campus of the University of California, Dr. Clark Kerr (who was then the president at the University of California) said that universities are factories. The function of a university is to manufacture knowledge, knowledge production.

In the 1960s, the world's fund of knowledge **doubled**. Now, you didn't double the amount of knowledge you had in your mind. Most of the increased knowledge was in the fields of medicine, and technology, and things of that sort that the average person in the grass roots wasn't familiar with; but knowledge did double. At the same time, in the decade of the 1960s (just ten short years), our troubles **doubled also!** While the increased knowledge didn't cause it, they certainly didn't solve the troubles or eradicate them.

Now, WHY? What is wrong with knowledge production? What is the reason? Why with all of the knowledge we have – all of the technology, all of

the knowledge of higher education in the universities – but we have more troubles than we ever did before? WHY is that?

We have an absolute paradox today in human achievement. On the one hand, humanity (through science, technology, government, in higher education, and other sources) has been producing **marvelous**, absolutely **awesome** things have been produced – sending men to the moon and back, sending unmanned spacecraft (manufactured at the JPL just a walk from our headquarters at Ambassador College in Pasadena) to land on Mars and send back photographs close-up on the surface of Mars. Other unmanned spacecraft sending back photographs close-up of other planets (like Jupiter and Saturn) that the astronomers say are mind-boggling. ALL OF THIS KNOWLEDGE, and yet our troubles are growing. More and more trouble! WHY? Why the paradox? More knowledge, more trouble.

Two Kinds Of Knowledge

Well, brethren, it all began back in the Garden of Eden; and that has never been fully understood – not even in the Church of God. Certainly science doesn't understand it. Certainly it's not understood or taught in any way in the colleges, or universities, or the schools of this world. Certainly no church comprehends it. Yet it's in the Bible, every bit of it; and it's been there all these years. But they never saw it before. It's been there all these years, but we never fully grasped it before. We grasped this part, that part, and the other part; and we never put it together. We never saw the whole picture before. I want to bring that to you this afternoon. I want to bring you **NEW KNOWLEDGE** you never heard before! I want to bring you something that's very important for this time and **in your life!**

Now, I don't know how many of you came here to see Mr. Armstrong? All right, have a good look. You could see me on television or anywhere else.

I look the same. That's only a photograph. The camera shows it as it is. Did you come to see me? Or did you come to hear a message? Well, I say OPEN YOUR EARS AND LISTEN!

It all gets back to the Garden of Eden, and it has to do with the incident of the forbidden fruit and the two trees that were there in front of Adam and Eve. When God created man, man needed two things. I'm going to go into that a little more. He needed two kinds of knowledge. One kind of knowledge he needed was to deal with matter, with things. God created him with ability to do that, and he has done that; and he has done miraculous things. At least, they seem miraculous to us.

But he **also** needed knowledge to have a relationship with his own Maker, God, and to deal with his fellow man; and God did **not** make him with that kind of knowledge. Very few people know how it all began. Very few people know what happened way back there.

Let me ask the question: What IF Adam had taken of the Tree of Life instead of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil? No one ever thought to ask that question, did they? You never heard that question put before, I imagine. What IF he had taken of Tree of Life? What did his choice have to do with YOUR LIFE TODAY? (The way you are living right here in Cincinnati and surrounding territory – down in Kentucky, maybe some of you came over from West Virginia, other parts of Ohio.) Well, it gets back to Creation.

Who And What Is God?

God is the Source of all life. He is the Source of everything. God is the Creator, and what He is creating is **character**. That is, righteous, perfect, SPIRITUAL character in entities of His own creation, (in His created entities.) But what is God? Who and what is God? Do you know that of all the religions in the world – including the religion called traditional

‘Christianity’ – not one of them knows **who and what is God?** They don’t know what God is! They don’t know who God is! Is God one person? Is God a trinity? Most of Christianity thinks God is a trinity – three persons in one God; and they are all wrong. They just do not understand.

The first place that God is mentioned in the Bible in time sequence is John 1 verses 1-4. You should be familiar with it. There it says:

***John 1:1** In the beginning was the Word.*

Now, the Word was a personal being; but He was called “the Word.” It was written in the Greek language (the book of John and all of the New Testament); and the Greek word was *logos*, which means spokesman, revelatory thought, or the one who speaks. That was one personage. But:

***John 1:1** ... the Word was **with God**.*

God is another person. So now we have two persons. Then next it says:

***John 1:1** ... the Word **was God**.*

Here we can have a man by the name of Smith. But here is someone whose name is John and John is with Smith; and John also is Smith. In other words, John’s father is Smith; and John is the son. But they are both Smith. They are both of the same family, but they are two different people all together.

It says that:

***John 1:4** In him was life ...*

In this Word was life: L-I-F-E. God is the Source of life; and life can only come from life. It cannot come from dead matter. It cannot come from the not living. God is the Source of everything. He is the Creator of everything, and on the 14th verse you read that:

John 1:14 *The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us.*

He became Jesus Christ. That was only about nineteen hundred and eighty some years ago. But He became a human being. He has existed always, and in Hebrews 7 you will find He was:

Hebrews 7:3 *without father, without mother, without decent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life [having ALWAYS EXISTED].*

Your mind can't understand that. I know. Neither can mine. You can't understand someone having ALWAYS existed. There never was a time when He didn't. That's true of both the Word and the one who is called God, and yet the Word is **also** God.

Now, in Ephesians, the Word became flesh. In Ephesians the 3rd chapter, I believe it is, you will read of how God:

Ephesians 3:9 ... *created all things by Jesus Christ.*

Psalms 33:9 [The Word] *spoke, and it was done.*

It done by the Spirit that emanated from the very person of God and from the person of the Word, who became Christ.

God Is A Family

Now let's go back to Genesis 1:1, and we see a little more about God and the beginning. Here again it says:

Genesis 1:1 *In the beginning God ...*

Now it says "*In the beginning **God** created.*" The word for 'God' here was written originally by Moses in the Hebrew language; and the word Moses used was Elohim, which is a uniplural noun {1}. It means more than one person. It's a word like the word 'family' – more than one person in the

Jones family, or the Smith family, or whatever family you want to mention; but one family. Like the word ‘church’ is one church but many members. Like the word ‘group,’ a group of people. Look, we are a group. We are only one group here today, but there are many people – about 5,000 of us here.

God is more than one person, but **one God**; and God is **a Family**. He created man to be born into that Family and become part of that Family, and to come into the God Family until we become God. The world doesn’t know that at all! They don’t know what’s going on. They don’t know the purposes of God. God has a great purpose. Now then:

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*

Now in verses 24 and 25, God said “*Let [us] bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle and creeping thing ... And God made the beast of the earth after his kind and cattle after their kind.*” He made elephants after the elephant kind, dogs after the dog kind, horses after the horse kind. But then:

***Genesis 1:26** God said, Let us make man in OUR image.*

Not “MY image.” You see, God is more than one person. God is a Family – one Family, one God but more than one person. “*Let us make man in our image.*” He didn’t say, “Let ME make man in MY image.”

***Genesis 1:26** Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.*

Now, He did. Man is the same form and shape as God. God has hands. God has fingers. God has feet. God has arms and legs. So does man! God has a mind, and so does man. But He didn’t make man out of the same composition of which God is composed, because God is a Spirit. John 4:24, God is composed of Spirit. But God has formed matter, and the earth is made of matter. That’s all together different. Now in verse 7 of the 2nd chapter of Genesis:

Genesis 2:7 *The [Eternal] God formed man [not out of spirit, but out] of the dust of the ground [Just like He had formed animals. “Out of the dust of the ground”], and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life [Animals breathe in and out of their nostrils the breath of life.]; and man became a living [but not an immortal, “a living”] soul.*

Man was made out of the dust of the ground. In other words, what came from the ground became **a soul**. Twice the Bible says, “*The soul that sinneth, it shall die.*” [Ezekiel 18:4, 20] To that very soul, God said, if you take of the forbidden fruit, “*you will surely die.*” [Genesis 2:17] But the man didn’t believe God, and people ever since have never believed God.

They didn’t believe Christ when He came. Christ talked to thousands upon thousands of people. Christ talked to 5,000 men (not including women and children), but they were there for the food they could get. I don’t think they paid much attention to what He said. But after three and one half years of preaching, only 120 believed what Christ had said and followed Him. That’s all. Not many have ever believed God, but they have believed Satan.

Satan came in the form of a serpent; and he got to Adam through his wife, Eve. He said, “Didn’t God hold back something? He held a Tree back. God wasn’t fair, was He?” So Eve said, “Well, He said we can have all of the trees of the garden; but of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. If we take that,” she said, “we will surely die.” Satan said, “Oh, no. God knows better than that. You won’t surely die. You are an immortal soul.” And ALL OF HUMANITY has been BELIEVING THAT ever since – that we are immortal souls. That was the first lie ever told by Satan.

Temporary Existence Is Not Life

Now, the thing I want you to get at this point is there is a difference between animal and man. I want you to notice the difference. There’s a

difference between God and man. Man is made in the image of God; but man is made out of matter, the same as an animal. Man is made out of matter – the same as a computer, the same as a machine, the same as your automobile. Your automobile has to breathe air. It has to be fed fuel in the gas tank. It has a carburetor that oxidizes the air. You'd be surprised how near an automobile's life is like a human life.

Animals have only a temporary existence. They do not have Life inherent. God is composed of Spirit. He doesn't have to get Life from the breath of air, the circulation of blood, and fueling Himself with food and water from the ground. Man comes from the ground. Man lives from the ground. You only have **a temporary existence**, like an animal and like a machine, until you run down.

You are like a wound up clock, running down. So today we try to beat all of that by electric clocks and others that are powered by the light or the sun, and this, that, and the other thing; but something has to empower it and keep it going, or it will run down. It will stop. We have to take on fuel. Just like you do in your gas tank, we have to take on fuel by eating food and drinking water that comes from the ground. We usually do that about three times a day.

MAN DOES NOT HAVE LIFE! Man only has a temporary existence; and, every breath he takes, he is in the process of dying. Man does not have Life. *"In [the Word] was Life."* He is the source of Life, but He didn't give man Life. Man only has a temporary existence.

The Spirit In Man

Now I'd like to show you a little difference between the man and the animals before I go any further. Man was made with a spirit. Animals do not have a spirit. Man has a brain. Animals have a brain. Do you know that

animal brain is precisely like a human brain? Some are larger. The elephant brain, the dolphin, the whale brain are all larger than a human brain. Chimpanzee just slightly smaller, others are still smaller; but they are just the same, and in quality (qualitatively) they are almost identical. One, the animal brain is virtually as good as the human brain. WHAT'S THE DIFFERENCE THEN between a man who can think and an animal who can't think and reason?

An animal has instinct automatically born in him, and it was created in the first animals as God created them. He didn't create man with instinct. He created man with **mind power**, and yet the brain is the same. What is the difference? The world doesn't know. Science doesn't know. Higher education doesn't teach it. The psychologists don't understand the human mind. They don't know of what it is composed.

The human mind is composed of brain that is just like animal brain with this difference – there is a spirit added to man, and there is no spirit in the animal brain; but there is a spirit in man. In Job 32 and verse 8,

Job 32:8 But there is a spirit in man.

Man needed this spirit to empower his brain with MIND POWER. Now the spirit in man is in the form of essence, and it comes with man's first breath^{2}, it is not part of the man. For example, if a man should swallow a very small marble (smaller than the tip end of my little finger), the marble would be in him; but the marble wouldn't be part of the man^{3}. It would be in him, but it doesn't belong in him. He'd want to try it out of there as quick as he could.

But **the spirit** in man is in the form of spirit essence (like air, or wind, or water), and it is compared to spirit. Spirit is compared in the Bible to wind, and water, and air. The Holy Spirit is compared to water, it pours. God pours out His Spirit. It is compared to air. Jesus said everyone born of the spirit is

like the wind. You can't tell where it's coming from or where it's going, but you see what it does; (Similarities, comparisons.) THE SPIRIT IN MAN – psychologists don't understand it. The Bible explains it. It is the source of man's memory.

Differences Between Animals And Man

Now how does knowledge come into a human mind? It comes into the brain through the eye, the ear, the nose, the mouth, the sense of feel and touch. Knowledge can only come ... It doesn't come through the spirit. The spirit can't see. The spirit can't feel, taste, or smell. But the brain sees through the eye. The brain hears through the ear. It isn't your ear that hears. It's only an instrument that allows the brain to hear. But, as soon as it hits the brain, it is programmed instantly and recorded in the spirit in man. That is the memory.

It is like a computer. We have six computers at Pasadena, and I have one on my airplane. It figures a lot of things out, and it figures them out in a hurry. You have to program information into the computer. You program information, facts, knowledge. All it does is give you instant recall of whatever has been programmed into it, and that's what the spirit in man does. The reason a man can think (and an animal can't) is that the spirit of man gives man **instant recall** of what's been stored there. An animal doesn't have anything to store up that knowledge that long, that many pieces of knowledge as long as a man. An animal has a certain limited memory of a certain few limited things; but not compared to man; and an animal can't put all those facts together in a process we call reasoning and thinking. An animal is not a thinking animal. Man is, but man is not an animal.

Now there is another big difference. Man is like God in every way except he's made of matter. He's in the form and shape of God. For instance,

God has a hand. Man has hands. Look at the things man has made by thinking out with his brain and the use of his hands and his fingers. An animal can't play a piano. An animal can't play on a violin very long, not like a man. An animal can't do the things a man could and design a fine watch with claws, with paws, with hoofs. An animal doesn't have a hand. Did you ever think what a wonderful instrument is the human hand? Well, God has a hand; and man is made in the form and shape of God.

Man was made to have A CONTACT WITH GOD and a relationship with God. An animal wasn't. God has mind. Animals don't. Man has mind, and **man's mind is given him by one spirit added to and functioning with his brain.** Now get that! No animal has it. Animals can't reason like man can. However, man was produced to need two things. Man was made to need a relationship with God. Man was made to need a relationship and get along with his fellow man.

Man needed two kinds of knowledge. Man not only needed knowledge to make things and deal with matter (And men have been very successful at that, he's produced almost miraculous things – awesome things.), but man have also been made to have to deal with his fellows, with his fellow man; and he needs the contact with God. But man was not made by creation with ability for those things.

Man was made with a spirit that gave him ability of mind that can receive knowledge of the physical and the material. But you can't see spirit. You can only see matter. You can only hear its vibration, and only matter vibrates. Spirit does not. You can't smell spirit. You can't taste it. You can't feel it. So you can't know anything about SPIRIT.

Now you need to know about spirit because dealing with your fellow man is a spiritual principle. Man was not born with that. Adam was not created with it, and you were not born with it. Man was given one spirit that

gives him knowledge and the acquisition of **physical and material** knowledge ONLY. You go into the greatest universities, and all they teach is materialistic knowledge.

Spiritual knowledge is foolishness to them. It is a mystery to them. It's mysterious. They don't know anything about it, so they turn thumbs down on it and ridicule it. To them it is foolishness. The things of God are foolishness to the highly educated because the highly educated are educated only in materialistic knowledge. In other words, their brains (their minds, their bodies, their beings) are only half there. The spirit in man gives you physical knowledge, materialistic knowledge – the ability to acquire that kind of knowledge and to work with it.

It does not give you **spiritual knowledge** which you have to do because you get into the spiritual realm when you deal with other people and when you deal with God and man was made to need God – very seriously to need God! Notice, for example, in Psalm 34 and verse 19:

*Psalm 34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous [Yes, even the righteous have afflictions and troubles.]: but the **LORD** delivers him out of them all.*

MAN NEEDS HELP FROM GOD to deliver him out of trouble. Man's going to get in trouble, but he needs God to help him out of that trouble. "The LORD delivers him out of them all." Man is not equipped with the knowledge to solve his troubles.

Keep Your Eyes On Christ

Let me give you an illustration. It happened just in the last week, even within the last ten days. We were having trouble in a few of our Churches over in the Philippines. I'll let you in on a secret. Yes, there was trouble; and

division was brewing over there in the Churches in the Philippines. Somehow, one of the local elders was writing against the man that was now in charge, who had only been put in charge at the first of the year. The man who had been in charge of the Philippines was moved in to Vancouver, in charge of Canada (where Mr. McCullough had been previously).

One side was on the side of the man who now was in Vancouver, and the other side were lining up on the side of the man who is now the manager over there. I had to act. I had to do something about it, didn't I, because we're trying to get this whole Church back on the track; and there was a part of it derailed. That's only one car of the train, I guess, that was derailed.

So I sent Mr. Bob Fahey and Mr. Gerald Waterhouse back there immediately. Now, they know that the troubles all come when you leave God out of the picture. *"Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but [God] the LORD delivers him out of them all."* Sure enough, they got over there; and they found that they were looking to one another, and looking at people, and looking at things – and they got their eyes off of Christ.

Let me give you another illustration. In the days when Jesus was on earth, Peter and some of the disciples were in a boat; and they were out in the Sea of Galilee (which is just a fairly large lake, not as big as one of our Great Lakes at all. I've been all around it.) Here came Jesus Christ walking on the water. Well, they were amazed! The disciples in the boat could see a Man walking on the water.

Peter wanted to walk on the water. So Jesus beckoned to him, "All right, come along." So Peter got out of the boat. He looked at Christ, and he started ... and actually Peter was **walking on the water!** But He was looking at Christ. He wasn't looking at the water. But, all of a sudden, he had to watch that water. So he looked down at the water, and he took his eyes off of Christ. What happened? Peter began to sink right away. He got in trouble

when he took his eyes off of Christ.

That's the trouble with you and me. We take our eyes off of Christ, and we get in trouble. "*Many are the afflictions of the righteous* [You have them in your life. We have them in the Church. I have them in my private life. You have them in your private life.]: *but THE LORD DELIVERS him.*" You can't deliver yourself! You get in trouble, especially if it is with other people; and you can't think your way out of it. You need the help of God!

So Mr. Fahey and Mr. Waterhouse got over there. They arranged to be there one day and to have the former manager come from Vancouver and be there (arrive) on the following day. You know what they began to find? They began to find they had, for some reason, got their eyes on these local things and had gotten their eyes off of Christ. The whole thing was beginning to sink in the Philippines, and all the Church would have gone down.

So the former manager arrived the next day. They got them together, and they got them into prayer; and they got them looking to Christ. Do you know what they found? They found there was nothing but some misunderstanding, and it was all straightened out. Neither man was bad. Neither man was wrong. We didn't have to fire one of them, or remove him from his job. They are both good men. There was just a misunderstanding. As soon as they looked to Christ, HE SETTLED THE MATTER; and the Church is back on the track in the Philippines. Isn't that great news?

Well, that's the way it will be in your private life. That's the way it is in the Church. That's why everything is going along fine at headquarters in Pasadena now. I'm back at Pasadena, and that's headquarters again now. Headquarters moved away from there for two years; but it's back there now, and it's all going fine back there now. Yes, "*Many are the afflictions of the righteous, but the Lord delivers him out of them all.*" That is wonderful!

Needing God's Spirit

Now, man was made with one spirit. He can deal with things. He was made to need another Spirit – the Spirit of God – to connect him with God. The Spirit of God would give him other things. That is the Spirit of Life. You see, before Adam were the Two Trees. One was the Tree of Life. I said “What if Adam had taken of the Tree of Life? What did it mean?” The Tree of Life meant the Holy Spirit.

God is the same yesterday, today, and forever. [Hebrews 13:8] God is offering us in the Church eternal Life. How? It comes through the Holy Spirit. We first receive the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit witnesses with our spirit that we are the children (the sons) of God. [Romans 8:16] It's a **begettal**. It's **an impregnation of eternal God Life**. It is the Spirit of Life.

Let me give you another illustration. How were you born? You started as a little tiny ovary ... sorry, ovum I mean, in your mother's ovary; and it is released into a fallopian tube which had a hand that grabbed it. The fallopian tube is like an arm. You started going through that towards the mother's womb, or uterus. But you only had a temporary existence not to exceed 28 days. It might have been a lot less. Nobody is absolutely sure about how long its existence is, but we know it cannot be over 28 days.

But somehow, in that 28 days, a sperm cell from the very body of your father entered you – that ovum – and imparted life to you. That is, physical (just mechanical, you might say, but physical) life only – physical existence. So you didn't die at the end of 28 days. You would have. In your mother's womb, or uterus, you were nourished and fed through her. Her feeding, accrued from the ground, also nourished you; and you began to grow physically through physical food that came through your mother's eating of food from the ground.

At first, you were merely a ... (if I can ever think ... I stumble on this every time I want to use it.) **an embryo**, for the first four months. You hadn't even attained human form yet. At the end of four months, you were beginning to assume human form. Arms began to develop, legs began to develop, a head, a heart began to develop inside of your breast; and you became known as a **fetus**(what doctors call a fetus). There are five more months yet to go, and you had to grow and be developed and fed on PHYSICAL food to grow big enough to be born as a PHYSICAL BEING. Then you finally were born. But you were not born UNTIL you had grown and developed.

That is an exact parallel, an exact analogy, of the way God is reproducing Himself. God's great purpose is to reproduce Himself out of you and me; and you and I are each an egg, or an ovum. You are a human egg, so to speak. The nucleus of this egg is in the human mind. There is a spirit, but it must be fertilized by another Spirit that must come from the very body of the Father, who is God; and that is the Holy Spirit. When the Holy Spirit comes and enters into you, that imparts LIFE – **eternal Life**.

But at the moment you are only begotten. You are so far only ... Oh what is it called? I don't know why that word won't come to me ... You are not even a fetus yet. You are only started towards Divine Life. You are **not born yet**, by any means. You are **begotten**. You are an heir of God.

Now the Spirit of God, when we receive it, witnesses with our spirit. (Romans 8, and that's the verse about ... What, about 12 or 13 around in there – 14 somewhere.)

***Romans 8:16** ... with our spirit, that we are the children of God.*

So there is a spirit that we have and the Spirit of God must come and join it, and we need the other Spirit. Until we receive the Holy Spirit of God, our minds are only half there! We are **only half intelligent**, and we have no

knowledge of spiritual things. We have no knowledge of how properly to get along with other people. We have no knowledge to connect us with God, and to get along with God, and have a relationship with our Maker. You need that knowledge; and you need it very, very seriously.

Love, Faith, And Power

Well, when you receive the Holy Spirit, God imparts to us ... And He's not changed. Wouldn't He have done the same thing to Adam? God is the same yesterday, today, and forever. We receive **spiritual knowledge**. Peter says that we must:

II Peter 3:18 ... grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

You've come to have spiritual knowledge. The Bible is full of spiritual knowledge, and you know that the natural mind cannot understand it at all. They can only understand the physical and the carnal things – the natural things – that are in the Bible. The Bible does have both, but they can't understand the spiritual things. It is foolishness to them. Absolute foolishness!

The Holy Spirit, then, gives you the knowledge of **the law of God** – which is a way of life. It is a spiritual law! The law of God doesn't tell you how to make a computer. It doesn't tell you how to operate an automobile. The law of God tells you how to get along with your neighbor and how to get along with God. The first four of the Ten Commandments, you find your relationship with God. The last six tell you how to get along with your neighbor. **IT'S A SPIRITUAL LAW.**

That's why men have had all of his troubles. It's **in the spiritual realm**. All of man's troubles are **spiritual in nature**, and man can't solve them! His

knowledge doubled in the decade of the '60s, but his troubles doubled too. Why? Because he didn't get the Spirit of God, he was going on a mind that is only half there. But he wants to increase his physical knowledge, his materialistic knowledge; and that's what the universities are doing. Oh, how foolish. They study psychology, and they don't even know the composition of the human mind. They don't know about the spirit that is in the mind. They don't know about the mind of God, and the Spirit of God, and those things.

Now, the Spirit of God not only goes in your mind to have the knowledge of the law of God, the way of life of God, and how to get along with God and neighbor; it will give you **the love of God**. Love is the fulfilling of the law [Romans 13:10]; and it is the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit, Romans 5:5; and that's the only kind of love that will fulfill the law. You weren't born with the love to fulfill God's law. You have to get that love from God. You have to love God first of all, and its love that comes from Him returning right back on the return circuit.

In this light here, here's the cord; and they are fastened together – there are two wires going through there. And, you know, that electricity coming in here to pour out that light, it flows in and it goes right back. It's on a return circuit. That's the way you can love God. We only love Him because He first loved us [I John 4:19] and because He pours His love into us.

Now another thing, once you have the Holy Spirit, you begin to have the faith OF Christ. Not your faith in Him. (That you have to have to start with.) But then He begins to give you **divine faith** – faith to RELY ON GOD and FAITH TO KNOW that HE WILL DELIVER YOU out of every time of trouble and distress. Oh, how wonderful it is to know we've got that insurance, and we can always be delivered.

Then it gives you **power** – spiritual power! You only had physical, material power.

Receiving Knowledge

Now, the mind then has a lot to do with what goes on within you. Take, for example, in I Corinthians. Beginning with verse 9 of I Corinthians 2 (the 2nd chapter of I Corinthians, verse 9):

***I Corinthians 2:9** As it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart [that is, the mind] of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him: [In other words, spiritual knowledge.]*

Spiritual knowledge does not come through the eye, or the ear, the nose, the mouth, the sense of taste or feel. How then do you get spiritual knowledge that you need for contact with God and to get along with your neighbor?

***I Corinthians 2:10** But GOD HATH REVEALED THEM UNTO US by His Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God.*

And it's knowledge a little deeper than our intellectuals in the universities have been able to penetrate into so far.

***I Corinthians 2:11** For what man knoweth the things of a man [What man can have the kind of knowledge that man has, of being able to think like he does?], save the spirit of man which is **in him**? [That spirit that you are born with gives you the knowledge to deal with things.] *Even so the things of God [or **spiritual** knowledge] knoweth no man, but [by] the SPIRIT OF GOD.**

You can't have that kind of knowledge – you can't understand how to get along with others, how to get along with God, and how to have help from God – without the Holy Spirit. You are only **mentally half there** until you receive the Spirit of God. How many scientists know that? How many great

educators, with a lot of letters after their name, understand that?

Now, the Tree of Life before Adam meant eternal Life; but it also meant receiving these things from God and that kind of knowledge! Now look at the other tree. The other tree was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. That was a tree that had to do with knowledge also, but that was the knowledge ... When Adam took of that, he **took to himself** knowledge production! He **TOOK TO HIMSELF** the knowledge. He would make up that knowledge in his own mind. He took it to himself – the production of knowledge. That’s what men have been doing ever since, and they have their great universities and their knowledge production factories.

Are you getting this message, brethren? You’ve never heard one like this before. Did you come for what you could hear, for what you could learn? Or did you just come to get a look at me? I hope you are getting it, because this is important. It’s important to your life and your eternity, and there is nothing more important.

Adam took to himself the knowledge. In other words, with his one spirit he was going to create all the knowledge. He said, “God, I don’t need you.” And in so doing, he **rejected** the Kingdom of God. He **rejected** the government of God.

Satan’s Influence

Now at this point, Satan enters the picture; and Satan came across Eve, and got to Adam through his wife. How did Satan get there? Well, I haven’t time to go into all of that. Satan was a former great archangel called Lucifer. You read of him in Isaiah 14 [{4}](#) and verses 12-14. He had a throne. His throne was on the earth. He said he was going to rise above the clouds, so he was on the earth below the clouds. He was going to exalt his throne above God. He was going to go up, and take his angels with him, and conquer God.

Now **all** of the angels shouted for joy when the earth was founded. You'll read that in Job 38, beginning with the first verse (the first 4 or 5 verses) [{5}](#). The angels inhabited the earth before man. Most people don't know that! There are a lot of things that people don't know that they ought to know.

The only college on earth that I know of that teaches these things is Ambassador College at Pasadena; and Ambassador College is being founded all over again in Big Sandy, as a two year college. Of course, if some of them look like they have the qualifications and if the Work might need them for further education, they can be transferred for the next two years back to Pasadena. So they don't have to be limited if they really have the ability to go further, and need to (if there is some reason why they should).

How Man's World Developed

But here was man going to rely on himself to produce the knowledge. He wasn't going to let God reveal "revealed knowledge" to him – the spiritual knowledge. He took to himself the knowledge, and man has been doing it ever since.

Now do you understand why man has produced great things that are material, and why his troubles have grown? The world doesn't understand that. Your greatest businessmen don't understand it. The bankers don't understand it. The professors in your great universities don't understand it. I'm giving you knowledge that none of them has!

Man is left as helpless as a newborn baby. He's absolutely helpless. He is left with a natural mind, a carnal mind. Romans 8:7, the mind of man. Maybe I can just turn to that in a second. I thought I had it here. Romans 8 and verse 7:

Romans 8:7 *Because the carnal mind is enmity [that is, **hostile**] against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.*

That's the way you are born, with that kind of a mind. You are born with that kind of a mind. So now what happens? Now we go back to Genesis again. Adam took of the forbidden fruit. He followed his wife. He disobeyed God. He rejected the command of God. He rejected the government of God. He rebelled against the authority and the government of God.

Lucifer had been set on the throne of the earth, and over angels. Lucifer had been perfect in all his ways from the day God created him (You read that in the 28th chapter of Ezekiel.) until iniquity was found in him. But his angels had followed him IN REBELLION. You read of the angels that sinned in II Peter 2:4. The angels sinned; and Lucifer now became Satan, and his angels that sinned with him became demons. (I am writing an article that will explain a lot of this when it comes out in the May issue of The Plain Truth, you can be watching for it.)

But notice what happened **after** Adam had made that choice. Genesis 3:22 –

Genesis 3:22 *And the LORD [or Eternal] God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us ... and now, lest he put forth his hand, and **take also** of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever ...*

If he had taken of the Tree of Life (He had already taken knowledge to himself. He would have rejected knowledge from God. He had already rejected that!) But now he would have had eternal Life living in the kind of trouble, and agony, and suffering that man has brought on himself; but God loved man too much to let that happen.

Genesis 3:22 *... lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever ... [which he could have done, even after*

making that choice.]

But look: Adam had no Sin-bearer. Christ had not come. There was no one to pay the penalty in his stead. He would have lived forever in **agony**, and **trouble**, and **suffering**. So, what did God do?

Genesis 3:24 So he drove out the man [from the garden of Eden]: and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubim, and a flaming sword which turned every way, TO KEEP the way of the tree of life [lest man go in there and get eternal Life and live forever going the way of man, without the Spirit of God].

God locked up Life. God locked up the Holy Spirit and shut it off from man right then and there; and THE WORLD DOES NOT KNOW THAT! The world thinks the Holy Spirit has been – that salvation has been open to anyone who would and all along. It has not been. Salvation has been **closed** to the world. Salvation was closed to the world. The whole world was cut off from the Spirit of God. The world had some knowledge ABOUT God, but it was cut off from **contact with** God and having **a relationship** with God.

Now notice how man's world developed; and it has taken man through discontent, and sorrow, and ordinary suffering, through violence, and coming down to the point now where we have nuclear war looming that can destroy and erase all human life from this earth, and destroy every one of us. That's what man has done. For 5,800 years man lived about the same level, on an even keel. Man didn't advance even in material development and science.

The only means of transportation still for hundreds and thousands of years was walking, or on a mule or a donkey or a camel or something, or a rowboat or a sailboat. Even the steamboat was only rather fairly recently invented, in the last (what is it?) one, two hundred years or so. I don't have those dates right at hand right now. But the last century and a half, medical science, technology, modern education in the Western world has made

awesome progress they say – MATERIALLY; but there has been nothing but **retrogression** and **decadence** in life, and spiritually, and in our condition in every way.

Why? Man cannot deal with people. He can deal with things. Man does not have help from God. Man is leaving God out of the picture. Let us not leave God out of the picture in His Church! Let's keep God in the picture. Keep God in the picture in your life. Think about God every day.

In the Bible Study last night at Pasadena (I didn't get much sleep because I stayed up to listen to it; and Mr. Meredith was giving the Bible Study, and as usual he talks way over time.), he was talking on prayer; but, believe me, the people needed it. They needed more prayer, and I think what I said last Sabbath there inspired that sermon.

Until Christ Came

Man now has his greatest problem, that of survival. Man only has a temporary existence. His mind is only one half there; and it remained for the second Adam, Jesus Christ, to bring us Life. Now Life came with Christ. Material existence came with Adam. The single mind came with Adam, and Adam rejected the spiritual mind. But the spiritual mind came with Christ! Life came with Christ. Adam didn't take Life. But Christ brought Life to us, and Christ came to pay the penalty of our sins.

Now why did God wait so long? There's another reason. In the first place, He couldn't let Adam get them, or any of Adam's children until Christ came to take the Holy Spirit because then they would have lived forever in agony, and trouble, and sorrow, and pain, and suffering. But Christ is the second Adam, who brought us Life; and He gave His life to pay the penalty of our sins, so that our past could be erased and we can now receive the Holy Spirit.

We are in the same position today as the very firstfruits, and the Spirit of God was not opened to people **until Christ** – from the first Adam until the second Adam; and it is not open today except those few who have been predestinated to be called now, and won't be until Christ comes the second time. Why? Because Satan is still here, because Satan has gotten everybody going the wrong way, and because ...

Well, take the angels who sinned – demons. I've talked to some of them. Ever talk with a demon? I have. I've cast them out of people, and I've talked with them for a while before I cast them out. I've found that they are sassy, and they are impudent, and they are hostile, and they are bitter, and they are resentful. They are unhappy, and they are angry. They don't want to come out.

The first one I ever cast out was a woman. I spent some time with her. I told her, "Come out;" and she got sassy and said, "You come out." I told her that I was commanding her in the name of Jesus Christ to come out. I told the demon, "Come out of that woman." I wasn't talking to the woman. I was talking to the demon in her. Finally, it said, "I won't come out! I had been paying on this place here, and been paying payments on this house for so many years, and I've got a right to stay here." You know, I inquired; and the number of years she had mentioned was the time when she became insane.

They thought she was insane, and I thought I had failed. I didn't see ... You can't see a demon. I didn't see it come out (or him, or whatever a demon is) of the woman. The next morning they took that woman to the state insane asylum. The insane asylum said, "What did you bring this woman here for? There's nothing wrong with her. Her mind is as sound as anybody." She didn't remember a thing in all those years. She had been demon possessed.

I have talked to other demons who are just sassy and insolent. Demons don't recognize that what they did wrong, that's more than 6,000 years ago,

was wrong. God knows we judge things by comparison; and God wants us to know, and He wants the angels to know that **God's way is right**. The way of man and the ways that Satan went, and the angels went that are now demons is THE WRONG WAY; and it does not pay! God has given us 6,000 years of man doing the wrong way and going the way of Satan; and it has brought nothing but heartache, and trouble, and woe, and suffering, and nothing else.

Now we are going to have 1,000 years, and that's about to begin with the Second Coming of Christ. Then Satan will be put away, and we'll have 1,000 years where Satan won't be troubling people. People will be having God's truth. They'll be receiving the Spirit of God. They will know how to deal with other people. They'll deal in love, and in cooperation, and serving one another, and helping one another (instead of trying to take away from one another and tear the other man apart). After that 1,000 years, they can look back and compare the 1,000 years where they lived the way of God (and the way of Christ) and the 6,000 years where they were living the way of Satan in opposition to God.

Then will come THE JUDGMENT. It's appointed to man once to die. The people that have been denied the Spirit of God ... The Tree of Life was CUT OFF, and it's still cut off from the world as a whole. It's open to a few. God has called you and me. You are a few – the very precious few – God has called. Why? We have to **overcome**, and we have to begin ... There's one difference. We are the same as Adam. Adam would have had to overcome Satan, if he had taken of the Tree of Life. But Satan would have been ultimately put away, I'm sure. We have to overcome Satan. Others, when God opens up the Tree of Life to them, they will not have Satan. He will have been put away, and they won't have any Satan to overcome; but we do. We have it a lot harder than others will in the Millennium.

We have it a lot harder than others will in the Great White Throne Judgment that we celebrate on the Last Day after the Feast of Tabernacles.

Then the WHOLE WORLD will be resurrected, and ALL will be called to judgment. They'll have to give account for what they did in this life; BUT, if they confess their sins, they will find the Savior has come (way back there from the year about 4 B.C to 31 A.D.); and that He paid the penalty of their sins in their stead; and that their penalty and all that they are held account for can be taken away; and they can ... God can say, "Come, ye blessed, receive the gift of the Holy Spirit and of Life." They can all yet have it, and EVERYBODY WHO WAS EVER BORN is still going to have a chance.

You know, we've been studying one thing. What about Adam? Will he be in the Great White Throne Judgment? I now begin to fairly believe he will be. Adam sinned, but there was no Savior to forgive his sins. He had no chance. You and I have sinned, but the Savior has come before our birth. We can confess our sins, repent, and be forgiven. Adam couldn't. No Savior had come for him. Adam has to wait for ... You see, there's another scripture that says:

Hebrews 9:27 It is appointed unto men once to die and after this the judgment.

I Corinthians 15:22 As in Adam ALL DIE, even so in Christ [the second Adam] shall ALL be made alive [in the Great White Throne Judgment, and come to everlasting Life].

God's Plan Of Redemption

Now ALL OF THIS, brethren, is pictured in the feast days; and no church on earth knows about it except this Church. It has to do with God's plan of redemption (not with what Adam did, but with what the second Adam did), and it starts with Christ. It starts with the Passover showing the sacrifice of Christ. The second festival of seven days, the Days of Unleavened Bread, shows our putting sin out of our lives and repenting, since Christ has come to

pay the penalty in our stead. Now we have to come out of sin. The third is the coming of the Holy Spirit. We can't do it on our own power. We have to have the power of God and the Spirit of God. That is the day of Pentecost, which was just a week ago tomorrow. No, that's just last Sunday. {6} That was the Feast of Firstfruits, and we are the first to be called, the first of God's salvation, the first to be called.

Next will come the Feast of Trumpets, picturing the Second Coming of Christ as King of kings. After that, the Day of Atonement, which pictures the putting away of Satan immediately. Christ will be ruling and will be on that throne. Satan is still on his throne, but Christ will then be on the throne. {7} Then comes the Feast of Tabernacles, which is seven days that pictures the 1,000 years. After that the Last Great Day that pictures the final judgment, when ALL THAT EVER LIVED will be resurrected and brought into judgment.

Now judgment is a trial and test to see whether you are guilty or not. But, if they plead guilty, they can also plead the blood of Christ. The books will be opened in that judgment, and one is the book of Life. L-I-F-E. **Life!** Life will be offered to them, and that is a wonderful thing.

I have a great deal more, but I don't have time; and I've talked to you a long time. We started a little late, and I'm very tired. I'm going to show you some things about the Last Day and about this particular Church. We'll get those things to you in another message in another way, maybe in the Good News or maybe in the Worldwide News.

God has raised up this Church because we are very near the end, and we have not much more time. Brethren, this Church has not been ready! We have not been ready, but we've been getting back on the track. I'm going to say what Mr. Meredith said to a packed auditorium last night in Pasadena: How much do you pray every day? How close are you to God? How much is

Christ in your life? How much is He in the picture? How much do you just have your mind on other things and other people? But not on God, or on Christ!

Brethren, we're not as close to God as we ought to be. We're not back on the track fully yet. Or, if we're on the track, we're not going ahead full steam yet. But we are starting, and we're growing, and we're increasing. Now it is "*he who endures unto the end [that] shall be saved.*" God is looking to YOU PEOPLE to be KINGS and PRIESTS, and to be made VERY GOD! You have to have the whole RIGHTEOUS CHARACTER of God, and rule under Christ, and rule this whole world for 1,000 years. Are you ready?

Are you ready? There is so much more. I have only had the beginning. The real sermon should come after this, as it didn't a week ago in Pasadena. I'm going to leave that to your pastors to get that to you, because I'm tired and I'm going to leave now. I'm still trying to keep myself going, brethren. In just about a month and ten days, I will reach my 90th year. I'm older than most of you. I've been serving God now for 54 years. I've been keeping His holy days now for 54 years. As a result, you are all observing them. As a result, you have come to know the truth.

God is keeping me alive. I don't know how much longer He will. I do need your prayers. I need them for physical condition. I'm trying to keep alive. I'm trying to keep right on the job. I've got to do about four more television programs this coming week. Two weeks from today I expect to be speaking to a combined group up at Vancouver, British Columbia and all of western Canada. I'm trying to keep going. I'm not retiring. I'm in my office every day. I have all of the executive management of a very great worldwide operation – the Work of God, the Church of God. I have to travel a great deal. In just a month from now, I have to go to Britain, Germany, and France.

I hope I can limit it to that and come on back. But I can't think of retiring yet. Others have retired twenty years before my age. I'm glad you all stand back of me. I get so many signatures (that come in by the hundreds and thousands) that you are back of me 100%. Well, I need it, brethren. But you need God back of you, and you need to be in close contact with God. See that you are! Pray more. Read and study the Bible more. Think a lot less about the pleasures and the interests of this world and this life. Remember the time is very, very short. That's all I'm going to say now. Thank you very much, brethren. I love you all, and I know you love me. Thank you very much.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong eventually stopped applying the term 'uniplural' to Elohim. In his April 1983 sermon "Spiritual Health Checkup," he explained (at 28:50 on the audio file) that Elohim is indeed a plural word and not uniplural. This is further clarified in his book, MYSTERY OF THE AGES (page 50) where he said: The Hebrew word translated "God" is Elohim— a noun or name, plural in form, but normally singular in grammatical usage.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: On page 110 of his 1985 book MYSTERY OF THE AGES, shortly before his death, Mr. Armstrong wrote: "The human spirit enters the human embryo at conception."

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: In his sermon on the first Day of Unleavened Bread, 6 April 1985, "Rely On God" (from 33:30 to 37:25 on the audio file), Mr. Armstrong gave further understanding about the spirit in man actually being a part of the man.

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said chapter 12, but he undoubtedly meant Isaiah 14.

[{5}](#) - Editor's note: The specific verse Mr. Armstrong was referring to is Job

38:7.

[{6}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong began a sentence, saying, "And next we come to the feast ..." But then he caught himself, and went on discussing Pentecost for a bit.

[{7}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong stumbled around a bit here. His actual words were "That will last 1,000 years. Then comes, I mean, the Feast of Tabernacles..." and then he regained his thoughts.

HWA Speaks To The Brethren

Sermon (July 4, 1981)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

HWA Speaks To The Brethren.....	601	Prophecies For The Church Today	619
Bible Like A Jigsaw Puzzle	603	New Testament Prophets Differ	620
Tohu And Bohu	605	In The Image And Character Of God	623
Here A Little, There A Little	606	Christ's Blood Does Not Save	624
A Philadelphia Lawyer	608	Trying To Convert Others	626
Persecution By Sardis Ministry	610	Carnal Mind Hostile	627
What Is Christ Doing Today?	612	All Have Sinned	629
Begotten, Not Yet Born	614	Competition Vs Cooperation	630
Times Of Trouble Coming	616	Tree Of Life Opened To A Few	632
Ahead Of Their Time	617		

Greetings, everybody: nice to be back here again. Last week I was up at Orr, Minnesota speaking to many of our young juniors up there; and we had about as many, well, neighboring Church people from surrounding Churches that had driven some distance to be there (some parents I think were there also) as there were students or children. So we had quite a little crowd up there last week. The week before that in Cincinnati ... no, let me see ... yes, I guess it was Cincinnati. Boy, I am losing track. With being around so many places lately, I'm sort of losing track.

From Cincinnati we went right on into New York, where we had a meeting on Sunday with some people that I think are taking over Quest magazine. I think that Quest will be closed up. Let me see, today happens to be the 4th of July doesn't it? Well, I think it will be closed on the 15th; and that is going to mean a saving to the Work of some 4 million dollars a year, and with inflation it would probably have run 4 1/2 or 5 million dollars next year.

I am glad that can go into additional telecasting, broadcasting, additional publishing and getting the gospel out to the world, which Quest was supposed to do but was never allowed to do (although it had been started with the supposition that it would). I find that contracts were made with the editors and people that there would never be anything religious in it whatsoever, although promises were made to me that there would be. Well, at least we will be rid of that.

Now next Sabbath, let me see, we are going back to Charlotte, North Carolina where a group of Churches in that area will all meet together; and on the following Sabbath I hope to go up to Vancouver, British Columbia for a number of Churches in western Canada and perhaps some from northern Washington will be up there. Then during the following week I will be again to this next session of the children up at Orr, Minnesota on the way to Europe. And then on the Sabbath of that week, which will be (I see, it'll be 3 weeks from today.) a combined service again for the Churches in England, somewhere in London.

I think the Sabbath after that in Germany with a service of the people from Germany and Holland, perhaps Belgium and countries, at least German speaking countries. I think there may have to be some German translators there. Then to at least one of the Churches in France, and perhaps down to Switzerland; then back home and speaking to a group of young people at Orr, Minnesota on the way back; or the final group at Orr for the summer. We are having three groups up there this summer, by the way. The 2nd group is just starting this week; and I will speak to them, God willing, on the way back over to England, and Germany, and France and then to Orr, the next group on the way back. After that I hope I'll be back here with you again, and so it will go.

Bible Like A Jigsaw Puzzle

Now I have been speaking the last several times I've been here, and in other Churches also, going right back to the beginning in the Garden of Eden. God has been revealing new truth to us. It's not new truth. It's truth that's been new for a long, long time. But God's truth is always new, by the way. It never gets old. It's not old truth. It's perpetually new; but a lot of it is new to us, because we hadn't seen it before. Now, it's all been in the Bible; but, you know, the Bible is like a jigsaw puzzle.

I'm sure you all have worked out a jigsaw puzzle at one time or another. It's a large picture. Sometimes it's, oh, about so big; and sometimes they're smaller. It's cut up with a jigsaw with little curlicues all here and there, in about anywhere from 100 up to quite a little more than a thousand different pieces, all curlicues around different ways; and you have to put them together. They're cut in such a way it's very difficult to know what piece goes next to what other piece. Now, when they are unscrambled, you don't see any picture at all. You don't realize there is any picture there; and yet there is a picture there when you get it all together, and when you get them into place one next to the other where it belongs.

Now, the Bible is like that. I've often thought of starting to explain that in Genesis 1 verse 1. And in Genesis 1 verse 1 to explain and go to other parts of the Bible that talk about the same thing and throw additional light on what is there. Well, I would go next to John 1:1, in fact in John 1:1 to John 1 verse 4. And to make it still more clear, I think I would go on to verse 14 in John 1. And then I think I would go to the 3rd chapter of Ephesians and verse 9 where the Word, who became Jesus Christ, was really the maker of all things. How God made ALL things by Jesus Christ.

Now the Word of John 1:1 was with God {1} and He was also God. I mean, He was with God, and He became Christ. But originally when He was

just called the Logos in Greek (or in the English language it's translated into the word "Word") which means Spokesman, revelatory thought. He **was** God, and He was **with** God. It's just like John can be with Smith, but John is also Smith because he's the son of Smith. Now at the time of John 1:1 the Word was not yet the Son of God. I wonder if you realized that. He did not become the Son of God until He was born of the virgin Mary; and that's only a little over 1900 and, oh, about 1980 some years ago. Then He became Christ; but originally He was The Word, but He also was God.

Back in Genesis 1 verse 1 you find "in the beginning **Elohim,**" and that was written in the Hebrew language. The word for "God" translated into the English word God is there Elohim, which is a uniplural noun like the word family or church, or team or group: more than one person forming one group, or more than one person forming one church or one family. God is only one God, but there's more than one Person in God. And you find that if you go to John 1:1 that explains a lot about Genesis [2](#) 1:1 "*In the beginning God,*" Elohim, a uniplural. That's why when you come to verse 26 God said "Let (not) **Me** make man in **My** image." God said – Elohim, the uniplural, more than one Person, said – "*Let **Us** make man in **Our** image.*"

Now, as you go on through, you can explain a great many other things from other parts in the Bible. "*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth*" – and it should be plural heavens, not heaven as it is in the King James. You'll find that other translations, as far as I know I think about all of them, give it 'heavens,' plural. In the Hebrew Moses wrote it plural 'heavens,' not one, just heaven.

There are three heavens mentioned in the Bible: the heaven where the birds fly, where we find airplanes today; then the heaven which is above that, which we call outer space today, where our astronauts have gone and where the other planets exist; and then the heaven of God's throne, and I think that is sometimes called the 3rd heaven. That's not necessarily still further away.

It is the 3rd heaven, and we don't know where that is. There is only one place in the Bible that gives us an idea, and that's in the (let me see) the 14th chapter of Isaiah where it speaks of it as being in the far north. I think it is referring to the throne of God and God's heaven at that place.

Tohu And Bohu

Now as you go a little further you find that that throws a great deal of light on what is in Genesis 1:1. The very next verse begins to lead to a lot of other things. "*And the earth was without form and void.*" Now you go back to the Hebrew word, "*and the earth was,*" and in this case it means 'became' because the same Hebrew word is used "became" in other places in Genesis. It "came to be" would be a better translation. Now "*without form and void*" is the English translated from the Hebrew words 'tohu' and 'bohu,' and that means chaotic, in confusion, waste and empty, a condition of decay. That is not a newly created condition at all. A thing doesn't become decayed when it is first made, or first created, or first brought into being. It **comes to be** decayed later.

Then you have to go to the 14th chapter of Isaiah, the 28th of Ezekiel; and you have to go into II Peter 2 and verse 4; and you have to go into many other scriptures in the Bible to begin to learn WHY it had become that way and what had happened. Many other scriptures fit in there before you even get to the next verse. Now that's the way the Bible is. If you are going to understand the Bible, you are going to have to read it like that. You have to find a part here, a part there, and a part somewhere else that fits into the Bible – clear into the beginning in Genesis or any other part of the Bible.

Now again you must put the Bible together – every verse that modifies it, or describes it, or goes along with it and fits in with it like a jigsaw puzzle, one piece fitting next to another. You must get every other scripture in its

context; and not put a different meaning on it because you can take a certain part of a scripture, a whole sentence or a part of a sentence, and make it mean something else.

That is like the old preacher (I almost called him the Methodist preacher, but I'm not sure he was a Methodist. He might have been Presbyterian, Baptist, or something else.) back in the time of our great, great grandmother's about. In other words, this probably was back in the latter part of the 19th Century, and we are living in the 20th Century. There was a new fad in women's hairdo. (I think you've heard me tell this before, but I know it has been some time.) The younger girls had a new hairdo. They were doing their hair up and rolling it around in a top knot, just slightly forwards in the middle of the top of their head.

Now frankly I've seen women's hair done that way; and I don't like it very well. I don't think it's very beautiful; and so you don't see many women doing it that way today, because I think they don't think it is very beautiful either. And you know a woman's hair is really her glory physically, and a woman can just change her whole appearance by changing the way she does her hair. As I say, usually you don't see any two women who do their hair up the same way. Well, I think every woman should do it the way that is more becoming for her and it fits her face better; and I guess that's what most of them do, and that's alright.

Here A Little, There A Little

Anyway, this preacher was preaching a scorching sermon. He was preaching a corrective sermon last Sunday morning. Of course, it was a Sunday morning; and he was scorching these young women of that new modern fad. He told them to take that top knot down. He said, "My sermon this morning, my text is found in Matthew chapter 24, verse 17. You can turn

to it and read it if you want. Matthew 24, verse 17 '... **Top not come down** ...'" Now he says, "Young woman, God says for that top knot to come down;" and he preached a whole sermon on that one scripture.

It does say 'top not come down' there because Christ is talking about a time of trouble coming when he says that "*he that is on the house top* [should] *not come down*" to take anything out of his house. So the 'top not come down' is there alright, but that isn't what it means in that context. So you see what I mean, in understanding the Bible you take a little here, a little there, a little somewhere else and put them together. But you've got to know that you get the meaning as it is in its own context and see that it makes sense put together with the other scripture in its context until you have a complete picture; and that's the way the Bible is.

Now if you start to read the Bible, and you just start in Genesis 1:1, and you start to read the Bible through; and I've heard people say, "Well, I know about the Bible. I've read the Bible all the way through from beginning to end." Well, you know, I was brought up in church, until I was 18 years old, and Sunday school. I didn't know what the church believed. I did know some things. I know that they believed and I believed (and I just took it for granted) that I was an immortal soul [and] that I would live forever. If I died that I'd pass on or pass away out of this body; and if I'd been good I'd go to heaven, if I'd been bad I'd go to hell! But I was going to live forever because I was an immortal soul, or else I had one, or something. I didn't know which.

Well, I had to come to find that I was all wrong. And I know that after I was married when I was age 25; a marriage that lasted, well, 50 years from the time we fell in love and were engaged, and it just lacked 3 months and 15 days exactly it would be 50 years from the marriage date. But I'm sure we'd been in love with each other for that long because we were engaged some little time before we were married. Most young people are, or used to be, or should be. And, anyway, my mother sent us a Bible right after we were

married.

Now I didn't read it so much because I was a slow reader; but my wife was a more rapid reader, and I thought we'd get through it quicker if she read it. And the main thing was just to get through it, because I didn't understand it anyway. She'd read it to me. It was like saying "dah dah dah dah dah dah dah dah." I didn't get anything out of it. If you start to read and read through the Bible verse by verse, chapter by chapter, book by book, you will **not** get the meaning. You just won't get it that way, because what you read in one place must be put together with some of the things that you will read in other places; and I didn't know that then.

A Philadelphia Lawyer

Now it wasn't until I was (well, let me see, it was in 1926 and I was) 34 years of age that I was challenged, and for the first time began to look into the Bible, because I thought it said something it didn't, and I wanted to make it say something that I wanted it to say. Of course I was quite disappointed because I said it didn't say what I wanted it to say at all. Then I began to learn something about the Bible. But I've learned all of that since I was 34 years of age. I was really a biblical ignoramus before that, or a biblical illiterate, whichever way you want to say it, the first 34 years of my life.

I did know that we'd gone through the book of Proverbs in Sunday school instead of the usual quarterly, as they called it, or the Sunday school lessons that the church used in all the other Sunday school classes. Our boys' class, and we all grew up together from little kids up until I was 18, all together, the boys' class. I don't know where the girls were, they must have had a class of their own or something because I remember we were only boys; and we had a young man teacher. To me, we thought he was quite an old man. But as I look back and think now, I think he must have been in his

young, or not over his middle, twenties. But we all liked him.

So we just went through the book of Proverbs; and when we'd finished the book of Proverbs, we went back and started going through the book of Proverbs again; and after that we went through the book of Proverbs again. Now that's about all I knew; but that did put one thing into my mind – that I wanted to have understanding. And I know when I was 5 years old my father said I was going to be a Philadelphia lawyer when I grew up because I always wanted to know why. I wanted to know how, and whether, and everything else about anything. I wanted to understand it. I asked so many questions.

Well, I didn't know then I **would** be a Philadelphia lawyer some day when I grew up because here I preach the law of God and the government of God in the Philadelphia Era of the Church. So I AM A PHILADELPHIA LAWYER, am I not? So my Dad was right. Oh yes, I tell you from the years of 18 to 20 I felt sorry for my father. I knew more than he did. And then he moved out. We had been living in Des Moines, Iowa when my father moved out to the west coast, first to Idaho and later out to Salem, Oregon. So I didn't see my father any more from 1912 until 1924^{3} (so 12 years later when I saw my father). I had a lot of respect for him because I found he had learned so much in that 12 years, and he now knew more than I did. But I didn't know that when I was 18 or 20. And of course a lot of boys of 18 or 20 are like that. At that age they know more than their parents do.

But, nevertheless now, that's all just a prelude to what I was going to get into for a sermon today. I wanted to tell you a little something about the Bible. And I was wondering, I have been going back to those two trees in Genesis; and that's the foundation of everything in the world. If you want to know why anything is like it is today – Why is the world like it is? Why do we have the kind of world to live in that we do have today? – you have to go back to that time; and I have been developing a lot of time to that recently.

I wanted to get to something else today. Well, I thought about whether I should bring a message on prophecy. Now, I'd like to get back to the prophecies once again; and I think it's about time that we do, and I think that I shall very soon. But it just seems that the way things have been breaking I haven't been able to speak here just regularly every Sabbath; and I don't get any of it but once every 3, 4 or 5 Sabbaths. But perhaps I will sometime soon.

Persecution By Sardis Ministry

But there is another type of subject: I found years ago up in Eugene, Oregon, before we started Ambassador College and before I ever moved down to Southern California, Pasadena, that just taking one chapter in the Bible and going through that chapter verse by verse, could form a very good sermon, the material for a good sermon.

Now once I remember up in Eugene, Oregon, I had not had time to prepare a sermon. I was caught short and didn't have time. So I quickly told the congregation that Sabbath that I would take a chapter in the Bible and go through it. I said, "Now why don't I let one of you select a chapter, and I will go through it and expound it." Well, there was a Sardis minister there; and he did not like me. I have told you the Sardis ministers persecuted me. The Sardis brethren all loved me, but their ministers did not. They felt competitive, and they did not like me, and they persecuted.

This man was sitting in the front row. He said, "Mr. Armstrong, may I suggest that you preach on the first chapter of Isaiah." I said, "Fine, alright." You know for the minute I didn't know why he wanted me to preach on that. I just remembered one thing, "*though your sins be as crimson, they shall be as white as snow.*" I knew that was in that chapter, and the rest of it for a minute I just did not remember. But I knew he had some motive. I didn't know what it was, but he wanted me to preach on that.

Now, I had been taking the truth about God's annual holy days to the Sardis people; and they had rejected it. And he wanted to lay a trap for me just like the Pharisees did for Jesus. He wanted to trip me up and **trap** me, and he thought he had me there. So it came to where God says, in the 1st chapter of Isaiah as I was going through it, that God hated ... and wherever it is. Well, why don't I just turn to it for a minute? That is not what I intended to preach on today at all, and I'll get to something else in a minute; but let's go back to that just a second. I want to show you, it is rather interesting and I think if we just get to something interesting like that for a change it will be a little bit of a change in sermon material here; and I think it'll be good for all of you. Isaiah the 1st chapter, I didn't have it marked because I hadn't intended to use it. But he says here:

*Isaiah 1:11 (To) what purpose is the multitude of sacrifices [And by the time I got to that point, I believe that's the place, I was emphasizing the word "your." It was **their** sacrifices that God was against.] unto me saith the Lord: I am full of burnt offerings of rams, and the fat of (fed) beasts; and I delight **not** in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of (he) goats.*

Now, let me see. Yes, verse 13:

*Isaiah 1:13 Bring no more vain oblations; incense is an abomination unto me; the new moons and Sabbaths, the calling of assemblies, I cannot away with; it is iniquity, even the solemn meeting. (14) **YOUR** new moons and **YOUR** appointed feasts my soul hateth: they are a trouble unto me; I am weary to bear them {4}.*

"**Your** appointed feasts," and I put the "YOUR". They were **their**. They were not God's appointed feasts! And did I wallop that minister in the front row. I said, "That's just it." I said, "YOU want to have YOUR CAMP MEETINGS. You want to have **YOUR WAYS**. But **GOD'S HOLY FEASTS, GOD'S HOLY DAYS**, you don't want to observe." So his trap

came right back on him. But God has always helped me in a case like that.

What Is Christ Doing Today?

Well, I just wanted to explain a little about that sort of thing; and today I thought I would do that. I would not only take a chapter, perhaps I'll continue on later; but I would start in the book of Hebrews. Now I find that it has been almost 20 years ago (19 or 20 years ago) in England I started a series of sermons on the book of Hebrews, and I believe I continued it even here in Pasadena at that time. Well, that's almost a generation ago.

Then I had a long series of programs on radio, and that series of programs on the book of Hebrews was repeated on radio about a year or so ago. I haven't been following it in the last year. I don't know just what they've been running just recently, but I didn't expect so. I thought that was a fairly good series, an interesting series of television, or radio programs rather; and I think it may be repeated again, because it was not dated. It was not timed. It is just as good now as it was 20 years ago. But I think we need some of that again. In other words, the book of Hebrews is the book about Jesus as our High Priest.

Now one might ask this question: What has Jesus been doing this past 1900 years? Is Jesus dead? Well, He died; but your Bible and mine says He rose again, and He is not dead any longer. The last we saw of Him, He *"ascended up to heaven and a cloud received him out of their sight."* That was about 10 days before the day of Pentecost and 40 days after His resurrection. But where's He been since? What has He been doing? He has been **very much alive**, and He has been doing something for **us**. He IS the head of the Church, but He is not a dead head of the Church.

You know, that reminds me, I was having a luncheon one time and holding a series of meetings up in Umapine, Oregon. There were some 7th

Day Adventists people up there, and one of them had come to one of my meetings. Of course, they didn't come to more than one of them. But they came to one, and to invite me to their home for, I think it was a Sabbath or a Sunday dinner. Well, I accepted. I went.

Well, of course, they got into an argument with me; and they talked about their having a prophet in their church. And they said, "Well, Mr. Armstrong does the Church of God have a prophet?" I said, "Oh, yes." I said "Jesus Christ is our Prophet." "Oh well, well." they said, "We mean a **living** prophet. But do you have any living prophets?" "No," I said, "Do you?" (because Mrs. Ellen G. White is their prophet and she died quite a while ago). And they looked at one another rather astonished. They had forgotten their prophet is dead.

I said, "Your prophet is dead, but our Prophet is still living. Our Prophet is Jesus Christ. He is the head of the Church. He is the greatest of all prophets." He still today is living, and He is the head of the **Church**. But where is He today? "*He ascended to the right hand of God in heaven*" and there He has been the High Priest of the Church ever since. Now, He's not the High Priest of the world. The world rejects Him; and even individual Christians are not members of His Church. They reject Him as the head of whatever church they belong to because He is not the head of any other church but His own Church; and, if they are not members of it, He is not the head of their church. That's all there is to it.

His church is "*fitly joined together.*" It is "*compact in every joint*" just as if it is welded together, **solidly bound together** and organized. The organization is explained in the 12th chapter of I Corinthians and the 4th chapter of Ephesians; and how God has organized His Church. It is an organized body, but it is not a human organization. It is a **spiritual organism**, and yet it is well organized.

Now I might just say, by way of a little news I might put in right here, that in the past week the board that I have surrounding me now in the human level of the Church, at the headship of the Church, the leadership, is an Advisory Council of Elders. And in this past week we have been going over a constitution, and forming and carefully going over every line, and sentence, and paragraph of a constitution and bylaws of the Worldwide Church of God, an **unincorporated** spiritual organism. But it is organized, and well organized.

Begotten, Not Yet Born

Now the unincorporated Worldwide Church of God does have a number of corporate entities under it, one of which is the Worldwide Church of God Incorporated, a California corporation. We are incorporated actually in a number of States, but the only members of the corporation are merely the officers of the corporation. But the general laity of the Church are only members of the Church of God. In other words, we are all children of God; and the Church's congregation is the assembly, group, family. We're the begotten Family of God, not yet born.

Now, there are plenty 'born again' people all around. They don't know what 'born again' means. They don't know what Jesus meant by that word, but in God's own Church we do know. We are begotten of God, and we do have the promise of being born of God; and too bad that others cannot understand that. We are in the process of spiritual growth of overcoming Satan and this world, coming out of this world; and of growing in the grace and the **knowledge** of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ; and also of enduring until the end of this life, or the end of this time, whichever comes first.

So God has given us that understanding because this is the Church of God, and it is based on the Word of God. And of the foundation of the

Church, we find in Ephesians the 2nd [5](#) chapter that it is founded on the apostles and the prophets, “*Jesus Christ himself being the chief cornerstone.*” But it is “*fitly joined together.*” And Christ pictured it in the 15th chapter of John when He spoke about Himself being the vine and we are the branches. But did you ever notice that the branches are all joined to the vine, and the branches are joined to one another **through the vine**. Through CHRIST, we’re **JOINED** to one another. We’re **FITLY** joined together.

You break one of them off and let it go alone, and it’s also broken off from Christ. A lot of people who want to be lone Christians say, “Well, I don’t have to belong to any set church.” Well, God has one Church. He doesn’t say, “I will create several different groups of churches.” “*I will build my church and the gates of hell [or the gates of the grave, which it should be translated] shall not prevail against it.*” And He did build His Church, and the gates of the grave have not prevailed against it. It is still here. We have a number of congregations; but we are all organized, we are all together, and we do all speak the same thing – and that one thing has to be what Christ speaks. Christ is the Word of God. He is the Spokesman.

Well, now finally I’ll get around to what I was going to speak on for a sermon today; but come back to the book of Hebrews. But speaking about prophecy, I do want to get to it because ... Before I start this, I want to say another word; and I would just like to sort of talk to you a little bit today. I don’t get to do that very often. Lately I have been coming with a planned, set sermon. I’ve tried to stay right on the beam and not sidetrack with something else, and I think I’ve been doing that fairly well lately. All my life I have had to try to avoid getting sidetracked and jumping off onto some other thought that will flash in my mind as I go along, but to stay right on the subject. Well, I’ve been doing that lately.

Times Of Trouble Coming

But today I just wanted to say what comes to my mind. That's what I am doing. I just want to talk to you as one of you, and we need a time to talk like that and be together because we are all one in Christ. But speaking about prophecy, how many of the 4 million people that exist on earth today do you think are still going to be alive when Christ comes? Now I think Christ is coming very, very soon because ALL of the prophecies and everything in the Bible that has to do with the time of His coming, the conditions of the world at the time of His coming, show that we are in the very last days just before the actual coming of Christ.

Now by that I don't mean that He can come tonight or tomorrow, because a number of things have to happen before that. At least there has to be a 3 1/2-year period. There has to be a Great Tribulation, and it's coming. There has to be the forepart of what we call the Day of the Lord, and the Day of the Lord is when God intervenes and begins to supernaturally intervene in the world's affairs and take over PRIOR to the coming of Christ; and then He will take over completely when He comes.

But even prior to His coming, there are going to be frightful signs up in the sky. There are going to be plagues, and you know you will find that a tribulation is coming on this nation and 1/3rd **of our nation** is going to die of disease epidemics resulting from famine. In other words, famine and the disease epidemic that will follow – pestilence, as it is in Matthew 24, and again back in Ezekiel (Let's see, in the 5th chapter I believe it is of Ezekiel.), and our cities are to be destroyed. Then another 1/3rd of **our** people are to **die** by military warfare, which in our day now means nuclear warfare.

Our cities are to be destroyed. Isn't it significant that it's the cities to be destroyed? Most of the people are living in cities today. They've moved off of the farm. And it is cities that can be destroyed now by hydrogen bombs,

atomic warfare. That was never possible until our time. Just since World War II has that become possible. The United States did not have another atomic bomb when Hiroshima and Nagasaki were bombed. Now the Japanese didn't know that. They wouldn't have surrendered if they'd known that, but they didn't. They thought there were going to be more, and so they surrendered before any more of their cities were bombed; but we could not have bombed any more because we didn't have another atomic bomb. The only two we had were used. You might say it was a bluff; but the bluff worked, and they surrendered.

But soon after that they began to announce the hydrogen bomb, so great an atomic bomb only triggers it and sets it off. I don't know, what is it, a hundred times, a thousand times more powerful, more devastating, something like that? I haven't kept up on the technicalities of those things as I used to even.

But then if you read in the plagues that God is going to send at the end of the Great Tribulation and in that time, how many people are going to die in other countries and all over the world. I want to go into that again myself because I think we need to go into what is going to happen between now and then **all** anew and **all** afresh – because somewhere between a 1/3rd and 90% of ALL LIVING people **on earth today** are going to be DEAD before the 2nd coming of Christ. Did you know that? That's the kind of time we are **LIVING IN**, and very few people KNOW IT.

Ahead Of Their Time

Now I want to go back into prophecy once again. I was going into prophecy on radio 30, 40 years ago. I was about 30-40 years ahead of my time. Well, I tell you, the apostle Paul and the original apostles were way ahead of their time by 1,900 years. They thought the coming of Christ was

going to happen right then in **their** time and their lifetime, their generation. They didn't know it ...

[** *Tape skips at 43:10, and the subject has changed when it starts up again.*]

... a couple of Canaanites; and I was over there in about 1956, I believe it was, in a cave inside of the rock. And, well, if you have to get up in the middle of the night, that's quite a provoking place to be, as I found out, because even in summer it is rather cold nights over there.

No it's not a pleasant place to be either. It's a frightening place in a way because the amount of arrangement and all of those caves and some of the things that ... the carvings that they've actually carved a facade of buildings out in the front of one building, right in the mountainside in the rock; but it is not a pleasant place, believe me. Now if that's where we're to go, you are not going to like it. And yet a lot of our people want to get to Petra. "Oh, can we go to Pe(e)tra?" or to Petra, which ever you call it. Well now, get that right out of your mind because it is not a pleasant place.

I will just say this: **If** the Bible tells us WHERE we're to go on the "*two wings of a great eagle*" (and the Bible does say that we will do that), that is where we would go. But I am not sure the Bible tells us where we are going to go. So you still can't be sure of it. But, if that is not it, then the Bible does not tell us; but God will show us in His due time. We are getting near that time, and I do want to go back into those things again.

So now I just had a little talk with you for quite a while now, and it's alright because as I start in this book of Hebrews I can stop at any verse I want to. So let's begin now in the first chapter of Hebrews, chapter one.

Hebrews 1:1 God [now that's the Father], *who at sundry times and in divers [or different] manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the*

prophets. (2) Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son whom he hath appointed heir of all things ...

Now I want to stop right there and comment on that a while, and we may have to go to a few other scriptures. You can't understand the Bible if you just go right on without knowing what is in other scriptures that have something to do with it and say the same thing. Now a while ago I had a [rustling sound] ... When you lose something and you can't find it, look on the floor. That's where it probably will be [6](#).

Anyway, the prophets that spoke unto the fathers. Now the fathers go back prior to the time of Christ, don't they? Well now, in the days of Israel and of Judah and prior to the time when Judah was taken captive and became a slave people and no longer a nation, the prophets who wrote were Moses, and Samuel, Isaiah, Jeremiah, (I'm not quoting them in order. I just jotted some of these down.), Hosea, Amos, Micah, David in the Psalms, and Solomon in the Proverbs, and Hosea (Let's see, I mentioned Amos and Micah and Hosea.), and Joel, and Zephaniah. Now that is all before the fall of Judah. Some of those wrote in the days after **Israel** had been taken captive and taken away, but Judah was still there with its capital in Jerusalem.

Prophecies For The Church Today

Now second, there are two very important prophecies that were written IN the captivity when they were slaves; and that message DID NOT go to the fathers back then, but were only retained to the Church today – Ezekiel and Daniel. They wrote during ... They were slaves and in the captivity. Ezekiel was among the captives on the river Chebar, and Daniel was in Babylon.

Now 70 years after the captivity of Judah, a number of Judah (not any of Israel, but a number of Judah) – and it's only A FEW of Judah even, and Judah consisted only of the tribes of Judah and Benjamin and Levi; and it's

only a part of them – were sent back to Jerusalem to build the 2nd temple.

The temple that Solomon had built had been destroyed finally by 580 BC, beginning with 604 and on down to 585; and I think it finally was finished by 580 BC. But 70 years later a colony was sent back to build another temple under Zerubbabel. Now Zerubbabel was a governor. He was not a prophet, incidentally. But the prophets of that time were Ezra and Nehemiah, Haggai, Zechariah and Malachi. Now they did write for that portion of Judah that had gone back.

But the great 10 tribes had long since, over a 100 years before Judah's captivity, had gone north and west, or northwest to Western Europe and Northwestern Europe and the British Isles. Now many people don't know that. They don't know where they went. They're called the **lost** 10 tribes. But it is interesting to know that and to know the order of these prophecies. Now the prophecies, for example, of all of Israel: many of these prophets prophesied after Israel had been taken captive and were only prophets to the kingdom of Judah after Israel had gone into its captivity. Now there are some other prophets that didn't write books of the Bible (like, for example, Elijah was the prophet and Elisha [{7}](#)), but they didn't write books. You don't find II Elijah 6 verse 7. You don't find that in the Bible, but it is interesting to notice that.

New Testament Prophets Differ

And yet we find that the Church is “*founded ON the apostles AND THE PROPHETS, Jesus Christ being the chief cornerstone.*” I want you to get this. Now I have to go back to Ephesians the 2nd chapter to pick up that scripture that fits in right here; and, to understand this, we need to know all of that. Yet you only find, let's see, about four prophets mentioned in the New Testament. One was an elderly woman past 80 years of age who picked up

the infant child Jesus, took Him in her arms and blessed Him as just a little infant, and then went on and apparently died soon. Nothing more was heard of her at all.

There was a prophet by the name of Agabus; and God spoke to him and used him to carry a message to one of the apostles (to Paul) and telling Paul that God sent a message to him that if he went on to Jerusalem, where he proposed to go, that he would get into trouble in Jerusalem. Well, Agabus told Paul. Now Paul didn't doubt that, but Paul went on anyway; and he did get in trouble. A great deal of trouble! That's why he appealed finally on to Caesar, and later went on his very perilous trip to Rome. He had a shipwreck on the way at one of the places where we are going to have a Feast of Tabernacles this year, the Island of Malta, just south of Italy in the Mediterranean Sea; and we'll have a Feast site there this year. So that's a rather historic place.

Anyway, there were two other prophets at least to whom God revealed that they should lay hands on Barnabas and Saul and anoint them as apostles and send them as apostles to the Gentiles. Now they did that, but they didn't contribute any doctrine or any belief to the Church. They didn't have an administrative position in running the Church or administering the affairs of the Church in any way. Not ANY of those four prophets [{8}](#) did. So there were no New Testament prophets that had anything to do with being founders of the foundation of the Church. So it refers to the OLD Testament prophets.

Now every one of these Old Testament prophets is quoted in the New Testament, and they ARE a part of the foundation of the doctrines and of the belief of the Church. The WHOLE of Ezekiel and the WHOLE of Daniel were written FOR THE **CHURCH** and were **NEVER** given to the people of Israel while they were a nation. They were written **after** Israel and Judah were both slaves in captivity, and were not a nation; and they were **not** ever proclaimed to Israel and Judah under the Old Testament.

How important is Daniel to the book of Revelation? How important is Ezekiel to understanding many of these other prophecies and knowing the things WE need to know in our time? Yet those books never were given to Israel or Judah while they were a nation, and there was no way for one of them as a slave to get his writings to the rest of them who were scattered here and there as slaves. So it is good that we know that.

But EVERY bit of the Bible that was written is the Word of God! Even the word of these sad prophets and even though, “*God ... spake in times past unto the fathers by the prophets,*” [Hebrews 1:1], what He spoke and what is recorded in writing in the Bible IS part of the Word of God. And Who is **The Word** of God? The Word of God (John 1:1 and verse 14) “*became flesh and dwelt among us*” and became Jesus Christ. So it is the Word of CHRIST regardless if it was that God was speaking to them, beginning with Moses. It also is for us and for the Church today. We’ll just notice that as you go along.

Now, the 2nd verse: [Hebrews 1:2] God “*has in these latter days spoken unto us by his Son.*” Now ‘His’ you’ll notice is in italics in the King James and some of the other translations ‘by a son’ or ‘**His** son’ and I think ‘His son’ is very good there. At least the translators of the King James put it there. “*Whom he hath appointed ...*” God the Father then appointed Christ what? “*HEIR of ALL things.*” Now the Moffatt translation translates ‘all things’ to mean the entire universe. The entire universe! So Christ is the heir of the whole universe.

Alright, Ephesians 3 and verse 9, God created **EVERYTHING**. God created the world by Jesus Christ. He is the One by which (and Christ is the Word of God) “*he spake,*” as you read in one of the Psalms, “*and it was done.*” Well, the POWER that did it when Christ SPOKE was the HOLY SPIRIT. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit that comes from Christ and from God – not a separate person, but a POWER that emanates from them.

Now notice this: that Christ then is the HEIR to inherit the whole universe. Well, God used Him in creating it all. *“By whom also he made the worlds.”* That is, by Christ. He made the world. There again God made everything by and through Christ.

In The Image And Character Of God

Now verse 3 [Hebrews 1:3] *“Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person ...”* Now some of the other translators have that a little different. *“Stamped with the very **CHARACTER** of God”* in the Moffat Translation. **STAMPED WITH THE VERY CHARACTER OF GOD.** “The express image of His person,” but ‘image’ sometimes means character. God made man in the form and shape of God. God said *“Let us make man in our image, after our likeness”* [Genesis 1:26]. We are made like God in form and shape, and we are made to **BECOME** in the very image in the sense of His character. God did not create Adam in God’s character, but God gave him a chance to **COME** into God’s character through the Tree of Life; and Adam rejected that and took the forbidden fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and said he would go along without any help from God.

The express image of God’s person (in His very character, and stamped with the character of God the Father), and *“upholding **ALL THINGS.**”* Now then, I’d like to read that. I have the ... Let’s see, I have here the Revised Standard translation. I have to use two or three different magnifying glasses, and I have to use a little stronger one for this Bible.

Hebrews 1:3 (RSV) *He reflects the glory of God and bears the very **stamp** of his nature* [Now, the Revised Standard says ‘his nature,’ and Moffatt says ‘of his character,’]; *upholding the **UNIVERSE*** [‘All things’ means the universe; and here the Revised Standard calls it ‘the universe’];

upholding the universe.] *by his word of power* [In other words, the power that is in His Word. He speaks. The Holy Spirit performs whatever He speaks. ... the **entire universe**. Now I want you to notice that ALL THINGS here means ‘the universe’ by the Word of His power.] “*when he had by himself purged our sins,*” (KJV {9}) [In other words, by His death on the cross, Jesus had purged our sins to reconcile us to God.]

Christ’s Blood Does Not Save

Now our sins had cut us off from God; and we could not get back to God, because He had shut up the Tree of Life (in other words, the Holy Spirit) until Christ came. But, when Christ died, His blood reconciles us to the Father. Now, to understand that, you have to go back to the 5th chapter of Romans; and you will find there the blood of Christ **DOES NOT SAVE YOU**. A lot of people don’t understand that. A lot of preachers will preach the blood of Christ saves you. It doesn’t.

The blood of Christ forgives your sins up to the minute of your repentance and the minute of your belief and acceptance. But it does not forgive any future sins you commit tomorrow and next year, in advance, before you commit them. It simply does not. And the blood of Christ doesn’t save you. **THE DEATH OF CHRIST CAN’T GIVE YOU LIFE. LIFE CAN’T COME FROM DEATH. LIFE COMES FROM LIFE.** And so you read in the 5th chapter of Romans that we are reconciled to God by the **DEATH** of His Son. **Not** “saved by the death of His Son.” “*Reconciled TO GOD by the death of his Son,*” but “*we shall be saved by his LIFE,*” – by His resurrection! And we’ll be saved by a resurrection.

Now go back and read the 5th chapter of Romans, and you will understand that. So, you see, you have to fit in other parts of the Bible with this as you go along to really comprehend it and understand it. He purged our

sins, reconciling us to God the Father. Now on the other hand, does that mean just anybody can say, “Alright, I’ll go and ask Christ to reconcile me to God the Father?” Oh no, because **JESUS** said “**NO MAN CAN COME TO ME except the Father which hath sent me draw him.**”

And in the 1st chapter of Ephesians you learn that we in the Church were **PREDESTINATED** before the whole world, **PREDESTINATED** to be called now by God. And it is only those that God the Father calls and **DRAWS**, through the power of the Holy Spirit, who can come to Christ.

Now, the Pharisees came to Jesus with trick questions; and someone might come to me with a trick question. “Mr. Armstrong,” they would say, “here’s a man who really sincerely in his heart wants to come to Christ, and to come to God, and wants to obey Him, and wants salvation, and wants to come out of the world, and wants to have God’s Spirit and live God’s way. Do you say that he can’t come to Christ unless the Father draws him?” “Yes, I do.” “Well, is he shut off?” “No.” “So, what then?” “Well,” I say, “**If** he does want to do that, the Father **DID** draw him (Didn’t He?) or he **WOULDN’T WANT TO.**” Do you get the answer? But what about the world? They don’t **WANT** to! And any man who **DOES WANT TO, WANTS TO ONLY BECAUSE GOD THE FATHER DID DRAW** him. But you take most people, they **don’t want** to.

Now go back to the time when I gave myself to God. I gave up trying to disagree with Him. I saw I disagreed. I saw He was right and I was wrong. But (Instead of saying “I **GET** Christ, I **appropriate**, I **accept** Christ, and I’m going to get and take.”) I said: “I will give myself to Him. He bought and paid for me, and I **belong** to Him.” So I did. I gave myself to Him. But I know now that He had drawn me and called me, otherwise I wouldn’t have wanted to do that.

Trying To Convert Others

But what do you think is the first thing I did? Oh, I was so filled with happiness about it all, and the TRUTH that God had revealed to me was so WONDERFUL, that I just wanted to share that right away with those closest to me – my family and my relatives. So I went to them. I was just in awe, an eager beaver. I was all enthusiastic. I was all lit up with it.

Now you see, my wife, when she first learned about the Sabbath, came and she said, “Oh, I must go tell Herbert. He’ll be glad to hear this.” That was a wonderful truth to her when she saw in the Bible that we must keep the Sabbath on Saturday instead of observing Sunday, which is not the Sabbath. Well, I didn’t want to hear it. I didn’t like it a bit. God used that to start drawing me, but He hadn’t drawn me very much yet.

But, after 6 months **intensive** study, I saw how wrong I was; and I **proved** that God exists; and I **proved** that the Bible is His Word. I saw that I disagreed with it, and I saw that He was right; and everything He said made sense, and everything I believed did not. Then I received His Word with joy, and happiness, and enthusiasm; and I wanted all my relatives to believe it. They thought I was insane. They thought I’d gone crazy. “What happened to you? Well, I don’t want any of that.” They didn’t want any of this truth AT ALL.

No, you see, God had not drawn them. Some of them are still living, and He still hasn’t drawn them even to this day. How many of you had that experience when you were first converted? You wanted to get members of your family and others that were close to you, and you wanted to get the truth to them; and they wouldn’t have any of it. They just thought you were crazy. And that’s the way it is.

Carnal Mind Hostile

The natural mind of man (the carnal mind, which is the mind we're born with) "*is enmity*" which means hostile, "*against God; is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed CAN be.*" That mind has to be changed and receive another Spirit. There is a spirit in with your brain that imparts the power of intellect to your brain, but you are only half there mentally. You only have HALF of a MIND. You need the Spirit of God to complete your mind. That's the other half, and the more important half. And without that you will find that the things of God are foolishness to you, and your mind is just hostile against them. You are not subject to the law of God, which is God's way of living, "*neither indeed can be.*" And that's the way it is.

Now, as we go on through this, we see all of these things. "*When he had purged our sins,*" and as I say that only reconciled us to God the Father, "*sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.*" Now why did He do that? Why did He go up there? Why didn't He just ...? He'd qualified. He'd overcome Satan. He had qualified to restore the government of God. He had qualified to sit on the throne of the WORLD, and to establish the Kingdom of God, and to be the **Ruler** of the WHOLE EARTH.

Why did He not take it then? Why had God waited FOUR THOUSAND YEARS BEFORE THE SECOND ADAM CAME? God had SHUT UP the tree of LIFE, and SHUT UP THE HOLY SPIRIT, **FROM MAN**. MAN HAS A MIND, AND GOD CREATED THAT MIND; AND, AS GOD CREATED IT, IT'S HOSTILE TO HIM.

But the first man, Adam, had a right to make a choice; and he had an opportunity, and a right, and a command from God to take of the TREE OF LIFE. HE COULD HAVE HAD A WHOLE **COMPLETE** MIND, BUT HE **DIDN'T**; AND, WHEN HE SINNED, HE BROUGHT DEATH ON HIMSELF. **SATAN** WAS THERE; AND SATAN HAD GOT TO ADAM

THROUGH HIS WIFE, EVE. His wife, Eve, was the first woman of the ERA movement. Ever think of that? That started back with Mother Eve, and the women still want to wear the pants.

I was just trying to think where I mentioned that the other day. I know: I was speaking to all of the visiting ministers the other day, just a few days ago; and I was mentioning how the wife of one of our Evangelist rank ministers, one of our oldest ministers in the Church . . . I mean not in physical age but in years of service and leading the Church; and, of course, both of them graduated from Ambassador College, he and his wife, years and years ago. I think their children are aged to be in College now, maybe are. I forget how many of our former students now have children in Ambassador College. But I remember I asked her one time – I said, “Did you ever try to be the boss in your home and wear the pants?” She looked kind of funny. She began to grin a little bit; and she said, “Well, yes, once.” I said, “Oh, once; and did you find who the boss was?” She said, “You’re telling me, I sure did!”

Well, I’ve had two wives (and the first one was my wife until death, as she should have been), either one of whom perfectly capable of being the boss, but neither one has been; and I think that’s the way it should be. But a husband not only should rule his wife; he should rule her in LOVE, and in patience, and in kindness, and in absolute consideration for her in every possible way.

It’s like when we were in conference this week. My wife called me on the telephone, and they told me later that she called, and I called her back. And she said, “Well, I called you; but I didn’t want to interrupt you in conference.” I said, “Well, my wife always gets in to me no matter where I am.” She said, “I knew that; but I didn’t want to interrupt just the same.” Well, my wife has always had a privilege that other women don’t have some ways. I’ve wanted to treat a wife with love, with kindness, with consideration, and with honor, and to give them every honor like that; and I

think every husband should do that.

But the husband still is "*the head of the wife;*" and, if he can't be the head of the wife, there's something wrong with him somewhere. He should be able to BE the head of the wife; but he should be in all love, and patience, and kindness, and goodness in every way.

All Have Sinned

Now, "*He sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.*" Oh, yes, so I was saying: Why did God then wait 4,000 years for the second Adam? (And even after the second Adam came and purged our sins.) Now the first Adam, as I say, he had sinned; and Satan was still there, and the world sort of overlooked **Satan**, and so their children began to sin. None of the sins of Abel were recorded; but we know he did sin, because they are specifically not recorded, but in general they are because another scripture says "*All have sinned*" and that includes Abel.

Cain sinned. He was a murderer and killed his brother; then he lied to God about it. He got punished too, didn't he? But God's punishment is corrective, and intended to correct us and can help us. His punishment is in **love**, and not in hatred or vengeance and wanting to see us suffer. God doesn't want us to suffer. God doesn't have hate. He has LOVE. He hates evil. He hates wrong things, wrongdoing; but He doesn't hate people.

But then Christ, even after he had QUALIFIED, after he had CONQUERED Satan, He went up to HEAVEN at the RIGHT HAND OF GOD as our HIGH PRIEST. **WHY? WHY IS GOD WAITING** for SIX THOUSAND YEARS before He gets rid of Satan and before He establishes everything on the earth? **WHY?** Because man had to learn, and man has not learned **yet** by 6,000 years of man's going the wrong way that his way of life is **wrong**.

I was just saying to another minister this morning: Well, what's wrong with the way the world is living? Why isn't trying to get the best of everything right? When it's good for you, look how much more you get when you try to get everything, take it away from the other. If the other man suffers, you don't feel it. It doesn't hurt you; so why isn't it alright for you to let him suffer? What have you got to worry about if he suffers or not? How do we know that God's law is better?

Satan argues that competition is better than cooperation. I have been in conferences of businessmen (and not just in conferences but in meetings of businessmen, conventions) where the speaker would say, "Competition, not cooperation, is the life of business today." There's what businessmen believe, competition. In sports, everything is competition. "Let's get the competition going. We want competition." Satan wants competition. Satan is the number one competitor.

Competition Vs Cooperation

The world still thinks competition is a better way than cooperation. Now God's law is based on cooperation. Satan's law is based on competition, and yet some of you right here still think you like competition. How about it? God knew that if humans did not have time for generation after generation to LEARN THE LESSONS – TO LET THEM GO THE WAY THEY WANT TO, AND LET THEM SUFFER – AND LET THEM FIND OUT THE RESULT OF THEIR WAYS, they would never believe it.

I tell you, if God had corrected things in Adam's time and before other children were born, and fixed it all up for Adam, and let Christ come and pay his debt for him and say, "Now Adam, it's alright, you go right on." – they would always have believed Satan's way is better. But, let me tell you, after 6,000 years ... and even then, they're going to have to see in a 1,000 years

Millennium of living to prove that God's way is better, people would never believe it.

Now God has known what He is doing. He is reproducing Himself in us so we can be stamped with His character, even as Jesus was. And His character is knowing that His law is **a way of life**, and that is the right way, and that no other way is right. And how many of us have been living in the way of this world, and going the way of this world, and doing the **things** of this world? (The practices of this world, the games, the sports, the social life, the amusements of this world.) How many of us like the amusements that you see on television or in movies? You like the entertainment of this world.

Do you think for one minute that Bob Hope thinks that the telling of his jokes is bad? He'd say, "I make people laugh, and that's good for people to laugh. I'm helping people and doing a lot of good." Now he really believes that. I'm sure he believes it. Bob Hope has been on this stage more than once. I think he was here the day that Bing Crosby was here; and, let's see, I'm really not on stage, I'm on the orchestra pit. They can put me down right out of your sight real quick if someone wanted to join the right button. I didn't realize that. I'm right here on the orchestra pit, and that's become part of the stage.

Well, it was down; and Bing Crosby was back on the stage, and didn't realize he stepped over too far, and he fell down, all the way down; and he landed on this platform that I'm sitting on; but it was way down below then. And Bob Hope had to get a joke off; and he quipped and he said, "Well, I'll tell you Bing, if you've got to take a fall like that, it's at least nice to do it in a place of class like this." So I know those great entertainers realize (and they're considered great by the world), they realize that this is a place of class. You see it's a very fine place, a very beautiful place.

No, God had to know that it did take time; and that's why Christ has

gone to heaven to be our High Priest; and the other 2,000 years ... It's more than 1,950 years now that has gone by since the death of Christ. And it's getting to be **almost** 2,000 years since the birth of Christ. I don't know, are we going to have to go up until 1994 to be exactly 2,000 years before Christ comes? I don't know. You might think about that, but don't go believing it because I just happened to say it.

Tree Of Life Opened To A Few

But He sat down on the throne of God, with the Majesty of the whole universe on high, to become our High Priest because God made it to let them know those things. Now God raised up prophets. He began to give His truth to ancient Israel. He raised up a nation. He made them actually, in a sense, His wife; but He did not give them the Holy Spirit. In other words, the Tree of Life was still CLOSED UP and not open to them. But God did begin to open it JUST A LITTLE BIT to a few prophets. God opened it to Abraham; and God then opened it to Isaac, and to Jacob, and to Joseph.

And then we find that God opened the Tree of Life to Moses. **ONE MAN AT A TIME.** Later He opened the Tree of Life to others to lead God's people: Samuel; and after Samuel, David; and to others; and to those that He could use in writing His Word. And then finally, after 4,000 years, He sent the 2nd Adam, Jesus Christ. Christ came and paid for the sins of the world. He paid for Adam's sin. He paid for Seth's sin. He paid for Cain's sin and Abel's sin. He paid for your sin and mine, and for those yet to be born so far as that's concerned, and those who will be born in the Millennium even. He came to **qualify** for the Kingdom of God.

Now God had used a few prophets. He showed that people can't have God's truth without his Spirit and a complete mind, that with a carnal mind they still would be hostile against God; and they were in ancient Israel. The

Christ came; and He started now the Church, and it started out with 120 on the day of Pentecost. But that same day 3,000 more were added. Then God had added right along, every day for a little while, those who were to be saved that He added to the Church.

Then persecution set in, and a false gospel set in; and the true gospel then was ... What's the word? [Suppressed] I never can think of it. But it never went to the world any longer. They sent a counterfeit gospel out instead of it. They began to preach about the Messenger, Christ, instead of the message He brought from God; and His message was the gospel. And then there were not so many more added to the Church, not as many as there were in that first flush of those first days, the first 2 or 3 years; and persecution set in.

And now God is raising up more of His Church in this latter time, to have a people ready for His name. And there will be several thousand having the Spirit of God so that, when Christ comes, they will be changed "*in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye*" to immortality (or the dead in Christ will be raised first, and rise, and meet Him in the air; and come down with Him on the Mount of Olives that same day).

We will be the ones that will sit with Christ on His throne. That doesn't mean we'll all be sitting on some kind of a throne over in Jerusalem either. But we will be ruling under Christ as He rules the world and rules over all nations. Present rulers will be put down. Then Satan will be taken out of the way; and Christ will be ruling, and we'll have to get the Word of God out to ALL the world. And those who remain, as I say, there may be so many that will die between now and that time (that will be killed or destroyed between now and Christ's actual coming) that maybe only 10% of the people now living will STILL BE ALIVE WHEN CHRIST COMES. And He may come within 6 to 7 years. Maybe He'll come within 4 or 5 years. I can't set dates. But I know He is coming comparatively soon, and I don't think He's going to

wait until 1996 either; but He could. I don't know, and you don't know.

But there will be enough to be the rulers and to teach the rest of the world **the way of God**, and there won't be any Satan to overrule them. God has let Satan be here, and God has let the world LIVE that way to prove (by heirs of God and people that can be begotten and then born into the very Family of God) that the wrong way has not paid; but it has only brought human suffering, and agony, and despondency, frustration, unhappiness, suffering and misery; and the whole world will have learned that lesson ultimately.

Now, in the meantime, Christ is up there at the right hand of God as our High Priest. It goes on to tell how great Christ is. Let me see how the time is getting along. It is getting along about time that I stopped, and I've only gotten a few verses here. If I go through this whole book of Hebrews, how long is it going to take me at this rate?

You see, if you put in things from other parts of the Bible and expound these scriptures as you go along, there is so much more to any one scripture than just that one verse itself. And someone just reading right through, they don't get the meaning. I hope the next time you read ... How many verses have I read here? About 4 verses, that's all. Yes, the first 4 verses "*being made so much better.*" No, the first 3 verses; "*sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.*" And I think I'll stop right there, because Christ has been sitting there ever since – to help you and me; and to be the Head of this Church, to guide this Church.

You know, since I've been called and I wake up in the morning and it just seems like Christ (Well, He is the Word of God. He does the speaking.), like He is speaking to me and getting the message through to me; and the fruits of it afterward have proved that it was Christ speaking from on high. He still works with us in this Church. He still protects this Church, and He

still is leading this Church. And is He is preparing me and you to grow spiritually and in spiritual character, to be stamped with His very own character so we can rule with Him when we meet with Him – not only to rule the world, but to save the world.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said “Christ” here but the original says “God”

{2} - Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said “Revelation” but meant Genesis.

{3} - Mr. Armstrong stumbled over the dates. He originally said 1920 to 1934 but corrected it to 1912 until 1924.

{4} - Mr. Armstrong said “of them” but the original says “to bear them”

{5} - Mr. Armstrong incorrectly said the 3rd chapter of Ephesians but read from the 2nd chapter.

{6} - There was the sound of rustling so Mr. Armstrong obviously dropped something here.

{7} - Mr. Armstrong had trouble remembering the names of the prophets, but eventually did.

{8} - Mr. Armstrong at first said “apostles” but corrected himself to say “prophets”.

{9} - Mr. Armstrong reverted to the Original Version for the remainder of this verse.

We Are The Temple

Sermon – Big Sandy TX, USA (August 22, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

We Are The Temple.....	636	Earnest Payment Of The Holy Spirit	657
Modern Science And Evolution	637	Opening Our Mind To Spiritual Knowledge	659
Is God A Trinity?	641	Knowledge Of Good And Evil	661
Why The Paradox?	643	The Carnal Mind Is Hostile	663
Babylon The Great	644	Resurrection And Judgment	664
False Christianity And Education	646	Many Called But Few Chosen	666
Man Made After The God Kind	649	How The Truth Became Lost	668
Difference Between Man And Animal	651	Down To Our Time Now	671
The First Man, Adam	652	One Body Speaking The Same Thing	673
Man Made Incomplete	654	One To Prepare The Way	675
Three Kinds Of Knowledge Needed	656	The Physical A Type Of Spiritual Temple	677

...the largest group that has ever assembled in Big Sandy. We had quite a large number when I was here (Was it February or March?) some months ago. But I think it is even larger today, and this is the first Sabbath of the re-opening of Ambassador College and the new students all here. I don't need to give a welcome to the new students (I've already done that.), and the college is already started. Classes will begin this week. I believe enrollment is pretty well completed by now, and once again Big Sandy is operating in the College.

We are off to a wonderful start here, and I'm sure we're going to have a wonderful year. This is **God's** College. It's different from any other college, except in Pasadena. Of course, that's Ambassador too. It's all the same College in two different campuses. But it is a wonderful time. I'm glad so many are here, and I understand they are completely packed in the dining hall and even in several other rooms.

Well, brethren, we are now very close to the end of this world. I wonder if that means anything to you. We are living in a world that has been going on for about 6,000 years now. It is a troubled world. It's a very unhappy world. It's a world that has been making AWESOME progress, especially during this century. This world went along on a pretty even keel for, oh, the first 5,700 years at least – until a while after the invention of the printing press. Then the dissemination of knowledge began to increase, and since then we have had the rise of what we call “modern science.”

Modern Science And Evolution

And the new idea of science has come called evolution, the theory of man's origins. It is the theory that there is no God. There is no supreme mind who designed and planned the creation. It is an attempt to explain the presence of a creation without the design and planning and creation of a Creator. There was no mind. No one thought it out. You plant an oak seed. It will produce an oak tree, and it's different; and the leaf of an oak tree is different from that of a maple tree or some other kind of tree. So no one thought that out. No one planned it.

Here we are on an earth with just the amount of gravity, just the right amount of weight to keep us close to the earth; just the right amount of air to breathe; just the right temperature for people to live in; the right amount of water; the right amount of soil. Everything is just what we need for human existence. But there was no planning. It just happened!

Like a wristwatch: Most of you have one. I have one. But, you know, no one designed that wristwatch. No one thought out how to make one! But now some of us have gold on it, and some have other metals. Anyway, the metals just came out of the earth; and they just simply formed themselves without any thought, without any planning: And the glass for the crystal, whatever.

All these things just came out; and all the little tiny cogs and wheels; and they just put themselves together; and they started themselves keeping perfect time, according to the earth's revolution on its axis every day. And no one thought or designed. It just happened that way. Isn't that wonderful? Can you believe it? Does it make sense?

I'm going to tell you something this afternoon. I wish you would think as I go along, does what I say make sense? Is it rational? Is it reasonable? Modern science came along and said (Oh, I think it was over 100 years ago.): "We can now safely throw away the crutch of religion. We don't need it any more. Modern science is the new messiah. Modern science has come to rescue mankind. Modern science will solve ALL of our problems; cure ALL of our troubles and evils. We don't need the superstitious crutch of religion to hobble along on any longer."

Now under modern science – and under modern education, and with science and the theory of evolution – is the very foundation and the hypothesis through which they see everything and discern all knowledge: The eyeglasses through which they view everything and try to explain everything, the premise on which every bit of knowledge seems to be based. And man has become less and less happy, more and more discontented.

You know, there's one woman I've known a good many years. I first met her right here in Big Sandy many years ago. I haven't seen much of her now for the last 14 years. But I noticed every time I see her she seems to be happy. She is just filled with happiness, smiles, and joy; and she seems to be really enjoying life. She must. She couldn't be so happy if she didn't. I don't see many people like that any more. I wonder why?

I remember when I was a boy back in Iowa. ("Up in Iowa" I would say over here.) I would go down in the country to visit my country cousin on the farm. I lived in the city, great big city of only about 100,000 though – Des

Moines, Iowa. But driving along the little country roads, mud roads you know, with a horse and buggy, there would be farmers behind a team of horses (or one horse), plowing or working on the farm, singing at the top of their lungs, whistling a tune, just happy. Try to find that today. You can't find it. That kind of happiness has left us!

The world is full of discontent. It's full of frustration. Now, we are in a world of AWESOME progress. You can go to the moon and back. Men have done it. They cavort around, leap on the moon. The gravity is less there. You take a leap, and you go up in the air; and you don't come down quite so quick. Look, I've seen it on television. Now we have the invention of modern television so we can watch it live, while it's going on, right here on the earth. It must be a lot of fun to cavort around up there. I don't care for the experience of going through the earth's atmosphere to get there; and trying to hope I'll get through the earth's atmosphere to come back, without burning up.

But we are in a world of AWESOME PROGRESS – many modern inventions, modern conveniences, everything! Think what a woman has in her kitchen today women didn't have when I was a boy, but they do have today. And yet here we are in more trouble than humanity has ever been! We have more problems, and they seem to be utterly unsolvable. Humanity can't solve its problems. We're frustrated. We're in trouble, and we don't know the way out. And modern science, combined with technology and with government, has finally produced its crowning achievement: the weapons of mass destruction that can erase all humanity from off the face of the earth until there won't be a human being left alive.

And I want to tell you something: Not one of you will be alive some 20 years or so from now (I'm trying to make enough years to be safe. I don't think it will be that long.) **unless there is a God**, that they try to explain away, **who will intervene**. Otherwise there will be no one left on earth,

because science is going to prove to be the Frankenstein that will destroy its own producing.

Religious Confusion

Now, in the world today, religion is in utmost confusion. There are many, many religions. In the one religion of the western world – Christianity – there are many, many different denominations and sects, each one believing differently (each one teaching different things); and most of them altogether **wrong**. There are other religions. You can take, for example, the religion of Islam: many different sects (just like in Christianity), each one of them believing different; and yet they call it Islam.

Of ALL the religions in the world, of all of the sects of Islam and all of the sects of Christianity, **NOT ONE KNOWS WHO AND WHAT IS GOD! NOT ONE**. That ought to astound you. I just made a very important statement. Tell me one who knows who and what is God. Is God one person? Is God a Trinity? Christianity believes God is a Trinity. **NOT ONE KNOWS WHAT AND WHY IS HUMANITY** (a human man or woman, a boy or a girl). **WHO AND WHAT ARE WE, AND WHY ARE WE?** How did we come to be on the earth? Did we just happen by evolution? Or did some supreme Mind think out and plan and put us here, and for a purpose? And if so, what is that purpose? Where are we going?

Why the paradox of such accomplishment, of such achievement, as we have in a world that is filled with so much despair, so much frustration, so much suffering and unhappiness and discontent everywhere. No joy, no real happiness. They just want excitement. We get excitement on television. It takes excitement: A football game, some kind of violence. Of course, a prizefight will bring a lot of listeners, a lot of viewers. Or we want to see illicit sex, something evil. We want our emotions stirred. We want something exciting. We just want to be thrilled and excited by the passing moment.

Is God A Trinity?

Well now, Christianity teaches that God is a Trinity. It teaches that God is in three persons – Father, Son and that the Holy Spirit as a ghost (a person). Jesus talked about the Spirit being something that can be poured. He said at one time if any person “come unto Me, and drink and out of his innermost being will flow RIVERS OF LIVING WATERS, but this said He of the **Spirit**” (the Holy Spirit). The Holy Spirit can flow like rivers of water. Can a ghost flow? Can a person flow?

I’m going to read you a scripture where the day would come when God would **pour** out His Spirit. Can you pour a person? They say, “Well, but why does the Bible then speak of the Holy Spirit as ‘he’ and never as ‘it’?” Well, the Bible doesn’t. Did you ever read on the day the Church was founded, when the Holy Spirit came audibly, visibly, came with the sound of a rushing mighty wind? Have you ever been in a whirlwind, or a tornado, or where the wind was blowing so terribly hard? I have. That was the sound they could hear. And they could SEE the Spirit coming in the form of tongues, but like flames of fire sitting on the heads of each one of them.

And the account in the Bible says ‘it’ for the Holy Spirit, not ‘he.’ When they say the Bible always uses the pronoun ‘he,’ they are wrong. It doesn’t. It says ‘it.’ It also says ‘he.’ But other languages will use the pronoun ‘he’ (or ‘she’) in speaking of things where we use ‘it’ in the English language; and a lot of people don’t seem to know that.

Now the Christian religion teaches that God is a Trinity. Coming to man, the Christian religion teaches that we are an immortal soul; that when we die we will go to either heaven or hell (depending on how good we were); that we ourselves determine what is right and what is wrong; that, if we do what we think is right, we will go to heaven. If we don’t, we’ll go to hell; and we’ll burn, and burn, and burn, and burn forever but never burn up.

Christianity also teaches, and most of the sects and denominations (although they differ themselves in minor points, but some of these major points most of them teach), that you have to get the password to be saved.

Now they teach that salvation is open to everybody, and everybody could have salvation; but most of them don't seem to want it. They teach that there is a great controversy going on between God and Satan. God is trying desperately to get everybody saved. He wants EVERYBODY now to be saved. But Satan is trying to keep everybody lost, and Satan is outsmarting God. Satan's a lot smarter than God; and he's getting the best of God, and he is winning the battle. Satan has most of them on his side.

But all you have to do to be saved ... It is so easy. It's funny that Satan can win, because all you have to do to be saved is to get the password; and that'll get you into heaven. In other words, you're on a railroad journey. (We don't use railroads so much anymore, but we did for a long time.) You are on a railroad journey. It's a fairly long journey, that's your whole life. And at the end of the journey, the track is set so that automatically the switch will turn you down. Now if, sometimes (because of Adam's sin, you are born lost you see) you're going to be lost if you don't get the password and get saved. If somewhere along, on the journey, you get this password and you say, "I accept, I receive, I get; I appropriate Christ." (You don't give anything, you just get.) Then that throws the switch at the end of the line; and, when you get there at the end of your ride, you'll find the switch was already thrown and it shoots you right up to heaven.

And all you have to do is get that password, and the rest of the time go on and do just whatever you think is all right. Just live your life any old way, you'll go to heaven now. Does that make sense? Or does what I am going to tell you later make more sense? They think that salvation is open to all; that it's a matter of getting Christ. The great evangelists will say, "Come forward and receive Christ." Receive, get.

You know there are two ways of life and only two, broadly speaking, two philosophies of life; and one is the way of **getting**; taking away from others; receiving; accumulating; getting. A man's success in this world is gauged by what he has been able to get, what he has accumulated and what he has. How much money does he have? How much property? What did he get? The wealthy are the successful. The one who served the most and gave the most is a nothing and a nobody. That's the world's standard.

Now there is the other standard of **giving** instead of getting. That is the way of out flowing LOVE. That happens to be the law of God, and the law of God is love to God and love toward neighbor. That's the way of GIVING, not getting. That's love going away from self, not lust coming into self. It's an altogether different way of life, an exactly opposite way.

Why The Paradox?

Now why all of this confusion? Why don't the churches and Christianity agree? Why do all of the religions disagree? Why the paradox in the world of government, of science, of technology, of whatever. We have such awesome progress and yet such failure and so much unhappiness, so much frustration. One half of the world is absolutely illiterate (can't read or write, no education). One half of the world is living in abject poverty, many starving to death, living in filth and squalor.

I was just thinking as I woke up in the guesthouse on this campus this morning: the beautiful trees, the lake just down below, what a beautiful scenery, a patio just outside overlooking the lake; other houses nestling under the trees. And here are **God's people**. I thought of ancient Israel camping in tents in the desert. And here are we in this beautiful spot, God's people in beautiful homes, peace, happiness; everything. But the world is not like that now, as a whole. The world is filled with unhappiness, with wretchedness,

with poverty – at a time when we can fly to the moon and back, at a time when we can invent the marvelous computers, when we have television, we have radio, we have airplanes, we have communication; we have things they didn't even have when I was a boy.

Now here we are in the Church. What is the difference between us and the other churches? Are we just another one of these churches that believe all this sort of thing? How do you explain a world with this Christianity as a religion in the western world, and even the religions in other parts of the world, it doesn't make much difference. Part of the Christian world is very prosperous, just a part. Part of it is very wretched. But almost all of it is unhappy.

I have known many, many millionaires. I've never known a real joyous, happy one. Money doesn't make them happy some way. I've known men that had lots of money, but somehow or other their money didn't make them happy. That's not the source of happiness.

Babylon The Great

What about the Church? The word **church** (and the Church merely means "called out ones") – it comes from the Greek "ecclesia." It really means people called out. What are we **called out** from? We're called out from this world of confusion; and we are called out of, what I call, a Babylonian religion. In other words, Babylon means a mixture – all mixed up, everybody in confusion. It means confusion. I would like to read to you from the 18th chapter of the book of Revelation where John is seeing things in vision, looking down into our day and what is going to happen in our day. This is a message for us today; and in his vision he saw this, and he recorded this in writing.

Revelation 18:1-4 ... after these things I saw another angel come down

from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. (2) And he cried mightily with a strong {1} voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils [or demons] and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. (3) For ALL NATIONS have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication [It has invaded and inoculated all religions and all nations.] and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. (4) And I heard another voice from heaven saying, COME OUT OF HER my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

Because the time of plagues that God is going to visit are soon to come, and that is for us right now. That was NOT for the time when I was a little boy, going back about 80 years ago (80 some years ago). That is for today, just before the end of this world. What did he mean, “Babylon the great is fallen?” What is this Babylon? You find it in the 17th chapter {2}. That’s across the page here in my Bible.

Revelation 17:5 *And upon her forehead [Babylon] was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT ...*

It was the Babylonian Mystery RELIGION, now become great, ruling over the kings of the earth who committed fornication with her. She is called a great whore, and her daughters are called harlots. Notice:

Revelation 17:5-6 *MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. (6) ... drunken with the blood of the saints [having persecuted the true people of God] ...*

And that is a great church. That is a church that believes that when you get to the end of the line that a switch has been thrown one way or the other that shoots you to heaven or to hell. That is a church that believes you are an immortal soul. That is a church that believes God is a Trinity. That is a church

that believes that the law of God is done away and you don't need to observe it or keep it. You can go the way of "get," not of "give" (because God's law of love, out flowing love is the way of GIVE, the way of cooperation. of helping and loving others; not the way of getting and taking from others and fighting others and harming others). This world is geared to the way of "get."

False Christianity And Education

Well the daughters that are called "harlots" are the Protestants who came out of her in **protest**, calling themselves "Protestants." It comes from the word "protest." How much of **that teaching** (Protestant teaching, so-called "Christianity") have we inherited? How much of it do we still hold that is false? I want to go into some of that this afternoon, and I wonder if you will give any of it up that you do have that is false.

WHY ARE WE CALLED OUT FROM IT? We're called to COME OUT of this religious world, the Christian world. That's what it is. That's speaking of so-called Christianity – that is simply the old Babylonian Mystery Religion that took the name of Christ, and pasted it on their false religion, and called themselves Christianity. They are just as "Christian" as their god, Satan (and no more). That's what they are.

Why then are we called out? Well now, take a look at the world today – because even the nations have been deceived in **a way of life**, and they are living the way of "get" and not "give." That goes even into the nations, and the kings of the earth, and the governments of the world. All right. The world today is the product of its leaders, is it not? The world is what its leaders have made it. The leaders are the product of education. They are what the world's system of education has made it.

Now in speaking from this same platform yesterday to the students, in a message to the new students, I went into this matter of **education**. I want to

treat it today from a different category. I'm going to use a lot of the same scriptures; but treat it from a Church point-of-view today, and not from a university or a college point-of-view (from a religious, not an educational point of view).

The leaders of the world are what education has made them, and I want to show you how much religion has had to do with that. ALL result from an ancient incidence that happened 6,000 years ago, the incidence of the forbidden fruit. Now before I go to that incidence, let's go clear back to the very beginning. That's the beginning of humanity, but where did humanity come from? Was humanity the product of millions and millions of years of the survival of the fittest and the process of evolution?

The Real Beginning

The Bible says (Now, maybe the Bible is untrue? Just think about that as we go along.) the real beginning of all things, from a time sequence point-of-view, is not Genesis 1:1; but is, in the New Testament, John chapter 1 and verse 1. I won't read it. I'll just explain it for a minute. You should be familiar with it already.

*John 1:1 In the beginning [now that's the very beginning] was the Word [but the Word was not alone] ... the Word was **with** God ...*

Now the Word is the person. That was originally written in the Greek language. The Word is only an English word translated from the word "Logos." But it means just what we have in the English language – the Spokesman, the Word, the One who spoke. And the one who spoke was a person, and that person (the one who spoke) was with another person whose name was God. But the Word also was God.

Now you could say that here was John, and John is a man; but John was with Smith (another man), and they are two different men. But John

also is Smith because, you see, John is the son of Smith. Now the Word was not at the time this was speaking the Son of God; but the Word later did become the Son of God, because verse 14 says “The Word ...”(later, and that was 1,950 some years ago):

John 1:14 ... the Word was made {3} flesh and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth [which was Jesus Christ].

Now it goes on to say ”*all things were made by Him,*” but you read in Ephesians chapter 3 and verse 9 that:

Ephesians 3:9 ... GOD [who] created all things BY Jesus Christ: [The one who later became His Son, Jesus Christ; by the Word.]

And we read in the Psalms that the Word spoke: ”*He spake and it was DONE.*” And we also read that ”*the Spirit moved upon the waters.*” He spoke; and the SPIRIT acted, and brought about what He said. God created all things **through** Jesus Christ but **by** the POWER of the Spirit of God, which emanates from God and from Christ – which can flow, which is like air, which is like water. Often it is compared to air. As a matter of fact, the Hebrew word “ruach”, the Greek word {4}... (Ah, wait a minute, I should know that in a minute.) They all mean air as well as spirit. The same word means both.

Now we go back to Genesis 1:1, and what do we find?

Well first, before I leave that, this Word: ”*In Him was life.*” [John 1:4] L-I-F-E. He had **self-containing Life**. Another thing about this Word, we find later in the book of Hebrews that He was ”*without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life*” but having **ALWAYS** existed, and always will. In Him is **Life!** It will never stop. It is not temporary existence. It is Life – L-I-F-E, self-containing Life.

Now we go back to Genesis 1:1, and we find:

Genesis 1:1 In the beginning [Elohim] created the heavens and the earth.

Now Moses wrote this in the Hebrew language, and he used the word Elohim. Elohim is uniplural; it means more than one person. More than one person, but Elohim is one God. So that is God and the Word, the same one that you read of in John 1:1 exactly. The Word later became the Son of God. So it was Christ and God, having always existed. And God created the heavens and the earth.

Man Made After The God Kind

Now we come down to verse 26. We find that God did a lot of ... actually it was a re-creating (or a renewing) of the face of the earth. We won't go into that this afternoon. But, in the 24th and 25th verses, God made the animals of the earth (the beasts), cattle after the cattle kind and so on. He made dogs after the dog kind, elephants after the elephant kind. Then in the next verse, 26:

Genesis 1:26 ... God said let US ...

He didn't say "Me." You see, Elohim is more than one person. This was the Word **and** God, Elohim (more than one person, but only one God). It is like the word "family" – one family, but you can have two people (a husband and a wife) in a family. Or you can have 12 people (with 10 children, a father and a mother). A number of people! Or it is like the word "church." We're one Church, only one. We are only one group here this afternoon; but many people, more than one person. That is the way with God.

Genesis 1:26 ... God said let us make man in our image after our likeness ...

Now He made cattle after the cattle kind, elephants after the elephant kind; but now He says, “Let Us make MAN after OUR kind” – **after the God kind!** Man was made after the God kind, not like an animal. There is quite a difference between man and animal, and right there is where you find that difference. Now you have to put that together with many other things in many other parts of the Bible. But let me show you. There is one difference between men and God. In John 4:24 *”God is a spirit,”* composed of spirit; without father, without mother, without beginning of days, without descent; **always** having existed. But here we read that God (in verse 7 of the 2nd chapter):

Genesis 2:7 [And] *the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground* [not out of spirit. God was made of spirit. Man was made differently. Man was made of the dust of the ground.] *and [God] breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man [the dust of the ground] became a living soul.*

A living soul, then, came from the ground! What came from the ground became **a soul**. Not an immortal soul – a living. Now that doesn’t mean having immortal Life. That kind of living is a different kind of living; it’s only a temporary living. In other words, it’s **a temporary existence**, a physio-chemical existence. That’s all. And that existence is kept going by the breath of air (*”breathed into his nostrils the breath of life”* temporary life, temporary existence. It is not real Life.) and by the circulation of blood (and the Bible says *”the blood thereof is the life thereof”*).

You don’t say that the blood of God is the Life of God. God’s Life is spirit, not blood. God’s Life is spirit – not just air, breathing. But He did not form man out of spirit. He did not give man ETERNAL LIFE. That’s the point I want you to get. We do not have eternal Life.

Now God took the man that He had created; and He found he wasn’t complete however, and he needed more, because God wanted him to

reproduce. Actually what God was doing: He was starting to reproduce Himself; but He had to reproduce man in order that, through man, He could reproduce Himself. And in order to reproduce man, man had to have a mate. Man wasn't complete; and so God took one of his ribs and out of that rib He made a woman, a wife for him. Man alone is not complete. Man needs woman before he is complete.

Difference Between Man And Animal

Now, He made man of the dust of the ground. So was woman. But there is a difference between man and animals. They were made from the dust of the ground, and they had the breath of life; but they were not made after the God kind. They were made after the animal kind. There is a great difference now. Let's get the difference, and let's also get the similarity while we are at it. For example: God has hands and feet. Animals don't. God wrote the Ten Commandments with His own finger. He's got fingers. Animals don't have fingers. They don't have hands. They have paws. They have hoofs. Birds have claws.

You have a wristwatch. I mentioned that a while ago. You have to keep that wristwatch wound up some way or another. I have one that just the motion of the hand keeps it wound. But it has to be kept wound, or it will run down and stop. Animal life runs down and stops. So does human life. It's only a **temporary existence**. God has **eternal Life** that will never end. He doesn't have to draw the breath of life. Man has to keep refueling by food and water out of the ground (out of the earth). God doesn't. God doesn't need sleep. God doesn't need food. It doesn't take anything to keep God living. He just automatically keeps living.

But man was made in His image, and man was made to have a relationship with God. Animals were not. So we were made in the form and

shape of God, and we have hands like God. We have feet. We don't have claws, hoofs. We are different, and yet we breathe air like animals. We die the same death as animals. We have the same temporary existence, but there is a **difference in the mind**. Man has a mind, and animals have a brain. But the funny thing is that the human brain is PRECISELY like the animal brain, and the scientists can find no difference.

They take an animal brain out and look at it. The brain of an elephant is larger than the brain of a man and just as good qualitatively. They take the brain of a man out after he dies and look at it. It's no better. But a man has an intelligence. A man has a mind. A man has an intellect. A man can think. A man can reason. A man can come to conclusions, make decisions; and a man's mind has to guide everything he does. An animal does not (an animal brain). There is a very great difference, a very great difference!

The First Man, Adam

Now, I mentioned quite a little about education yesterday; and I mentioned to the students: Here was a man (made as an adult man), just made instantly out of matter. He didn't grow up. He didn't start as a baby. We start from a little ovum, about the size of the end of a pin point that has to be fertilized by a male sperm that is only one 50th as large as that ovum; so small that the eye can't see it without a very high powered microscope. That's how we start.

But the first man, Adam, was started whole (as a man) in the latter half of the day we would now have called Friday, the 6th day of that week. AND THERE WAS A MAN – FULL GROWN, MATURE. I don't know, the Bible doesn't say what age it would compare to; but compared to what I'd say now is a 30-year-old man, I presume (20 or 30), but with a brain (a mind) **unfilled** with knowledge. He hadn't studied. He hadn't gone to school. He hadn't

learned anything. Did you ever think of that before?

But God was starting to educate him and give him knowledge. Now he NEEDED knowledge, and he needed three kinds of knowledge. God said, *"Let us make man after our image."* He was created to have contact with God, and a relationship with God that animals can know nothing about. He had to have a mind, and so God had put **a spirit in man** to form that mind: A spirit that is just like air, or wind, or water – that could be poured. An essence, not a person. It is not a soul. It is not a person inside him. It's just merely spirit, just like so much air. But it's spirit, and air is matter. It's altogether different than air, but it is something similar to air. The Bible does compare it. But that gave man an **intellect**, and animal doesn't have it.

God has a mind, and God made man to have a mind. But man's mind (like man himself) was not complete. I said a while ago man was not complete. He needed a wife. Man was male, but he needs female to go with him. The mind had one spirit that gave him an intellect, but he needed another Spirit in order to have a contact with God. He needed the HOLY SPIRIT of God, and he was made incomplete. HE WAS MADE TO NEED THE SPIRIT OF GOD. He was made with temporary life.

Now in God is Life. In Christ was Life before He became Christ, and in Him is Life again now. Man needed Life. He didn't have it. He had a temporary existence, but he did have a mind. He had spirit with his brain that made his brain function differently than an animal brain, even though an animal brain is precisely (materially) like and composed just like a man's brain. They can't tell a bit of difference. The difference is so slight that it wouldn't account one-millionth part of the difference in intellect and in mental output of a human mind as compared to an animal brain. What a wonderful thing that God has done and wrought in man!

Man Made Incomplete

But now man NEEDED knowledge, and he was not complete. He NEEDED **another Spirit**, the Holy Spirit of God. All right, man needed three kinds of knowledge. Now before I go on and explain the need for the Holy Spirit, let me explain this: Man needed knowledge that would enable him (and the kind of mind that would enable him) to have a contact, and companionship, and an intimate relationship with God because God's purpose was to reproduce Himself through man; and man was to be impregnated with the God Life (the very Life of God); and he had to have a mind that was in communion with God. Now "*two can't walk together except they be agreed.*" His mind had to come to agree with God and walk with God – think like God thinks; act like God acts; perform as God performs.

Now man was not made that way originally. He was made like an animal, but he had a spirit that empowered his brain with something an animal brain is not empowered with. I've said this over and over; and a lot of you haven't got it yet, though you have heard me say it before. I want you to get this. A lot of people say, "Well, so what? I don't care, I just want to enjoy the minute." What's going to happen when you die? "Well, don't bother me with that. I don't care." Is that the way you think? Well, if you do, you had better get up and walk out of here because I am not going to entertain you with a lot of violence or a lot of illicit sex or anything. I want to try to give you some sound knowledge, and I want to stick to the spiritual side of things today.

But man needed another SPIRIT, just like man needed another person – a wife. He was only half there as a being. He had to have a wife before he was complete. And now he was only half there mentally: he needed another Spirit to go with his spirit. You see? All right, that other Spirit was offered Adam. Adam was taken and put into the Garden of Eden after he was created,

and there was a beautiful garden. (We're on a beautiful campus here, very beautiful, one of the most beautiful places in all the United States or in all the earth. It isn't as beautiful as the Garden of Eden was. At least, I believe that.)

There were two trees. Among all the beautiful trees in the Garden of Eden, there were two special trees. Two symbolic trees that had special symbolic, special significance, special meaning. One was called **the Tree of Life**, the other was called **the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil**. Now Adam had to make a choice between those two trees.

One had to do with knowledge. I said a while ago Adam had a mind, but he didn't have knowledge; and he needed knowledge. He needed knowledge to get along with God. Now he needed a second kind of knowledge. He needed knowledge to get along with other people, because God told him to reproduce, replenish the earth and be fruitful. There were to be a lot of people that would come from Adam and Eve, and man had to get along with other men. He had to get along with his neighbor, and he had to deal with his neighbor; and God wanted him to do that in peace. And to do that He wanted his neighbor to contribute to this man's happiness and peace; and He wanted this man to contribute to the other man's happiness, and peace, and joy, and everything good.

So God had a law, a government. Now, of course, there had been a government on the earth among angels; and there had been a super archangel, Lucifer, at the head of that government. And he sat on a throne on the earth, and he had rebelled against God. He didn't like God's law, the way of give (the way of out flowing love) one of those angels loving another. They wanted to hate one another. But above all they didn't want to love God. They wanted to go up and make an army of themselves and knock God off the throne and take over all the power of the whole universe. And they have been cast back down; and that super archangel, whose name had been Lucifer, had now become Satan the Devil; and his angels had now become demons, and

they were there.

Three Kinds Of Knowledge Needed

Adam had a chance to take over and rule the earth; but he had to rule the earth with the government of God, and the way of God, and the kind of knowledge of God, and the law of God – which is **a way of life**. It is the way of giving, of out flowing love. Now he needed knowledge to get along with God and have communion with God. He needed the knowledge to deal with other people, and he needed knowledge to deal with the matter of the earth.

I am speaking here from this desk. [sound of knocking] It's made out of wood. Wood grows out of the ground. Here's some metal [sound of knocking], some kind of iron. That came out of the ground too. Man needed to know how to get iron out of the ground and put it together. Here's brass, it came out of the ground too. Man had to know how to deal with things. That's one kind of knowledge. He had to have knowledge to deal with other people. That's another kind of knowledge, without which he couldn't be happy. And he had to have the kind of mind and the kind of knowledge that he could agree with God, and walk in harmony with God because "*two cannot walk together except they be agreed.*" Simple. You get it? You understand?

Now I want you to see the difference between man and animal. Animal is equipped with instinct. He doesn't have to have a brain to direct everything it does. An animal does what he does by instinct. A man has to learn, and he had to have three kinds of knowledge. Man had a spirit. Job 32, verse 8; I won't read it.

Job 32: 8 There is a spirit in man.

That gave man a certain amount of **intellect**. That gave man enough intellect that he could ACQUIRE the knowledge to deal with matter, with

things. Man could form things out of matter. Man could build a house to live in. Man could deal with matter and raise a garden, vegetables. God gave him certain animals for food; told him which to eat and which not to. Of course, man doesn't believe God. Man wants to eat the things God condemns and told him not to eat, because man had a controversy with God just like the angels before him had. But man was only one half complete in his mind.

He had a mind that could acquire materialistic knowledge to deal with the material, to deal with things. But he needed a SPIRIT – the SPIRIT OF GOD – to have a relationship with God and to deal with his neighbor. And he needed to comprehend and understand the law of God, which is love. But to perform it is love toward God and love toward neighbor. But love is the fulfilling of that law, and to fulfill that law (to obey it) it takes that love of God *”shed abroad in our hearts by the HOLY SPIRIT.”* That's in Romans 5, verse 5.

***Romans 5:5** ...the love of God (is) shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit ...*

Man needed that in order to deal with his neighbor and get along with other people and in order to have a relationship with God. Now do I make it plain? I want you to understand. I could say this a hundred times and some of you are never going to get it. You won't know any more than you did before, if you don't listen.

Earnest Payment Of The Holy Spirit

Man needed another Spirit. His mind is only half complete. Man's whole body was only half complete until he had a wife. Now his mind is only half complete till he got another Spirit. He needed the Spirit of God. Well, God offered him that in the Tree of Life.

Now then, what does the Tree of Life mean? We hear about the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. People take that whole incidence in the Garden of Eden (It's in the incidence of the forbidden fruit, we call it.), and they laugh it off with the joke about Adam's apple. Now Adam didn't take an apple. That second tree was not an apple tree at all. The Bible doesn't tell us what kind of fruit it bore. It just says the fruit was symbolic. Whatever it was, it was symbolic of knowledge of good and evil.

Now, what if Adam had taken the Tree of Life? You've never heard that before. That's never been preached in this Church. It's never been preached in the Roman Catholic church. It's never been preached in the Methodist, the Baptist, the Presbyterian, the Congregational, or the Lutheran church. You never heard that preached. What if Adam had taken of the Tree of Life?

All right, we have the opportunity in the Church today. God has opened the Tree of Life to us. How do we get immortal Life? IMMORTAL LIFE is the object of Christianity and of salvation. So how do we get that eternal Life? We get it through receiving the Holy Spirit of God; and God does not give you immortal Life just that quick (instantaneously). God first gives you the Holy Spirit. Now you only have the presence: well, it's like the first part of the down payment on a piece of property if you buy it. It's called the ... (Oh, what do they call it? Well now, the thing escapes me for a second. It's a part of the down payment.) – earnest payment; and that's what the Holy Spirit is. It's an **earnest payment on eternal Life**, but it's not the full thing.

Now we offered this whole campus up for sale; and we got an earnest payment, but not a whole down payment. We got an earnest payment of half a million dollars; but they weren't able to come through with the rest of it, and so they never got the campus. Here we are, we're occupying the campus. They didn't complete it. Now, if you don't get the rest of it, you don't get what is offered. The Holy Spirit is only the earnest payment, **a temporary beginning toward the possession of eternal Life**. That's all. They just had

the beginning towards the ultimate possession of the campus, and they didn't go on and complete it; so they're not here, and we're here now. Their deal fell through: Too bad for them; too good for us. I'm glad they didn't get it. God didn't want it to go, I guess, so He saved it for us; and here's Ambassador College starting all over again.

Now God has not changed. God is the same today, yesterday, and forever. You heard that in the Bible Study last night. Jesus Christ is the same. He changes not. Would Adam have received eternal Life instantaneously if he had taken of the Tree of Life? Not any more than we would today! God hasn't changed in the way He performs. He would have given Adam Life the same way. He would have given him the Holy Spirit.

Opening Our Mind To Spiritual Knowledge

Now what is the first thing the Holy Spirit gives us? It is the immediate presence, temporarily... If we go on, we'll be growing in Spirit until we really have eternal Life; but it is the beginning of eternal Life. But the first thing the Spirit really gives us is to open our minds to spiritual knowledge, so that we can understand spiritual knowledge. The very last words that Peter wrote in his letter, II Peter; yes I think it is 3:18 (16 or 18). It is the last verse.

II Peter 3:18 ... grow in grace, and [the] knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ ...

Knowledge is something we must increase and grow in. We keep getting more knowledge, and the Holy Spirit gives you spiritual knowledge. Now in I Corinthians the 2nd chapter you will find that eye cannot see and ear cannot hear spiritual knowledge. That's verse 9, I Corinthians 2:9 [{5}](#). You cannot come to the consciousness (or knowledge) of SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE by what you see or what you hear. It can't enter your mind through the eyes. It can't enter your mind through the sense of smell, taste, or

feel. Spirit is not matter.

You can only acquire materialistic knowledge. You can only see what is material. You can only hear what materially vibrates. You can only smell what is material, and you can only taste and feel what is material. So the natural mind of man cannot comprehend and cannot KNOW spiritual knowledge. But man needed **spiritual knowledge** to understand the law of God. He needed the Spirit of God to be the love of God spread abroad in his heart to fulfill that law.

Now the first thing God would have given Adam through the Holy Spirit would have been more knowledge (spiritual knowledge) so he could walk with God and understand the law of God; and the spiritual knowledge to walk with God; and the spiritual knowledge to get along with other people. The next thing God would have given him is the love of God shed abroad in his heart to fulfill that law. The next thing God would have given him is faith; the faith of Christ (the faith of God) so he could rely on God, because man was going to get in a lot of trouble regardless (even if he is righteous), because Psalm (let's see) 34, I believe it is, and verse 19 says:

***Psalm 34:19** Many are the afflictions of the **righteous** [even the righteous have many troubles] but the LORD delivereth him out of them all.*

And you need faith to trust God to deliver you in trouble, because you are going to get into trouble and you need something to trust God to do it.

Now, man needed the knowledge to contact God and be in a relationship with God and to deal with man. He already had the capability, as he was created, to acquire the knowledge to deal with things. But the first two – the contact with God and contact with neighbors (and getting along with them) – required spiritual knowledge; and that is the law of God, and the law of God is a spiritual law.

The Ten Commandments is the law of God. Did you ever stop to think that the Ten Commandments don't tell you how to build an airplane? The Ten Commandments don't tell you how to fly to the moon and back. The Ten Commandments don't tell you how to make a television set or how to run it. The Ten Commandments only give you SPIRITUAL knowledge. It is a **spiritual law**. Man did not have spiritual knowledge. He had ability to acquire physical knowledge. But God's purpose in us is to build in us (and to have us build within ourselves, with His help) the character – the spiritual perfect character – of God; and you have to have the Holy Spirit to do that.

Knowledge Of Good And Evil

Now, let's go to the other tree. The other tree had something to do with knowledge too. You see, if he'd taken of the Tree of Life, he would have received knowledge. He would have received SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE, but that would have given him immortal Life. He would learn to live the right way, and God will not give us immortal Life in suffering and pain and anguish. He will only give us immortal Life if we can be happy and live it happily and joyfully. What a wonderful God!

God Himself **IS** love; and, He loves us so much, He wants us to be happy. He will not give us immortal Life in pain and suffering, and He isn't going to torture us in a hell fire forever if we don't either. He is going to let us burn up, and we'll be so unconscious we'll never know. It'll be just like we have never been born. That is the kindest, most loving, thing God can do to anyone that **refuses** to receive such a wonderful gift as eternal Life.

Let's go to the other tree now: the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. I have something in my notes that I want to get here. When Adam took of that tree, and he rejected Life, that tree was to take to HIMSELF the knowledge of what is right and wrong; that he would go on the mind he

already had (only half complete) and create his own knowledge. It was a tree of knowledge. Now it also was a tree of death because God said that, if he took of that tree, he would DIE because it resulted in death.

Now the first tree, if he took it, would result in Life; but the first tree was also of KNOWLEDGE, of SPIRITUAL knowledge. The second tree was of knowledge, but of MATERIALISTIC knowledge that would result in death; and, if he took it, would surely die. Now he made an experiment, and Adam did die. He's not living today. He's dead. What then did God do? Genesis 3 – I've turned to it, so I'll just read that while I'm here.

Genesis 3:22-24 And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: [and] now lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: [That way, with only his knowledge, he would have lived forever in unhappiness.] (23) Therefore the [Eternal] God sent him forth from the garden of Eden ... (24) ... and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

He SHUT UP the Tree of LIFE. He SHUT UP the HOLY SPIRIT FROM MANKIND. Adam's children did not have access to the Holy Spirit. Adam **HAD ACCESS** to the Holy Spirit. Now God shut it up. Adam no longer had access to the Holy Spirit. Adam's sons, Cain and Abel, did not have access to the Holy Spirit; and they only had a mind that was a mind of 'get' toward other people, a mind that was hostile against God. In Romans 8 and verse 7, they had a carnal mind. That was all he wanted. He didn't want the spiritual mind that he would have gotten from the Tree of Life; and the natural (or the carnal) mind that Adam already had, and what you and I are born with, is " *enmity [or hostile] against God: (for it) is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.*"

The Carnal Mind Is Hostile

Adam then became **hostile** against God. Cain was hostile against God. He was hostile against his brother. Cain got jealous of his brother, and he rose up and slew his brother. Then God came along and said, “Cain, where is your brother?” Then he began to lie, and he said: “Oh, how do I know? Am I my brother’s keeper? What are you asking me for?” And he then became a liar. And Adam’s children have been doing it and have been out to GET, only to ‘get’ from other people, ever since.

They believe in competition that leads to strife and fighting; destroying one another; tearing down (not building up); competition (not cooperation); vanity. “I’m bigger than you are.” “I’m better than you.” “I love me and I don’t love you.” There was a song in 1924 (a popular song); “Oh, I love me. I love myself. I’m wild about myself. I put my arms around myself and I give myself a squeeze. Oh, I love me. I love myself TO DEATH. I love me until I’m all out of breath! I’ll MARRY ME SOME DAY, I love me so much, but I don’t love anybody else.” Isn’t that the way we are? We thought that song was funny. It was tragically funny (tragically funny).

Well, and so it went on; and the world was **cut off** from the Holy Spirit. SALVATION WAS **NOT** OPEN TO THE WORLD. I WANT YOU TO GET THAT. Christianity believes salvation has always been open to the world. IT WAS NOT! In the time of Moses, God called a people out from Egypt and made them His nation. He gave them His law. He did not give them His Holy Spirit. He did not give them eternal Life. He did not offer them eternal Life. They had **NO OPPORTUNITY** to gain salvation or eternal Life.

The people over in China have not had opportunity to gain eternal Life. The children of Israel did not had opportunity to gain eternal Life. Only the prophets of God; and they were like ‘born out of season’ – a part from the

Church, believe it or not! Because the Church is built on a foundation, and the prophets are part of that foundation. The Church was built on the foundation of the apostles and the PROPHETS. But that is the prophets of the Old Testament. There were no prophets in the New Testament that were part of the foundation of the Church. NO prophet in the New Testament contributed to the beliefs, the doctrine, the knowledge, the teaching of the Church or the administration of it. Not one.

But the Old Testament prophets did, and they are quoted throughout the New Testament. Paul quoted them. Peter quoted them. Jesus quoted them ... part of the Church. Otherwise NOBODY HAD ACCESS TO THE HOLY SPIRIT until the second Adam, Jesus Christ, came. Now what about all the others? Did God let them live and die and go to hell? No, they died. So what about them? I'll just quote a few scriptures in a hurry right here.

Resurrection And Judgment

I Corinthians 15:22 For as in Adam all die, (even) so in Christ [the second Adam] shall all be made alive.

But that's in I Corinthians 15 and verse 22 (I Corinthians 15 verse 22) and, speaking about a resurrection; they'll be made alive after they die. Then again in Hebrews 9:27:

Hebrews 9:27 ... it is appointed unto men once to die [All men die. You only have a temporary existence. You don't have eternal Life. It's appointed men to die and ...] AFTER this [by a resurrection] the judgment.

"Once to die, and after this the JUDGMENT." Now people don't understand **the judgment**. Everybody who ever lived and never had a chance at salvation, they're all going to be resurrected. And they're going to find that Christ has come and died to pay the penalty of their sins, in their stead; and

they are going to be called before the Judge (who will be Christ) sitting on the judgment seat. He'll be on the bench in a trial, and they'll come before the judgment. And they're going to give account of what they did in this life, and it's going to be pretty bad. And He's going to say, "I sentence you to DEATH. I sentence you to death, eternal death."

But you know, some of us might be there as attorney for the defense. And we'll say, "But Your Honor, Your Honor, can my client throw himself on the mercy of the court?" Well, Christ will say, "Yes, yes he may." "All right. My client, Your Honor, pleads guilty; and You have sentenced him to death, but he throws himself on Your mercy." Well, the Judge will then say, "In that case, you know, I have already paid this penalty in your stead; and you won't have to pay it – if you admit it, and if you want to live the right way from now on." And they will THEN GAIN ETERNAL LIFE. Isn't that wonderful!

Now we are going to celebrate the Last Day (after the Feast of Tabernacles) of that Great White Throne Judgment. That's when all who ever lived, who never had the Holy Spirit offered them; and it will then be offered to them. Oh, what a wonderful God we have. They are condemned, yes. They did wrong, yes. And yet Christ came and loved them so much that He died for them while they were yet sinners. And God the Father loved them so much "He *GAVE His only begotten Son that whosoever believeth on Him*" at least in the final great judgment "may have eternal life" and not eternal death.

THE ONLY ONES who will get **eternal death** will be those that finally, after ALL OF THAT, are going to say, "I don't love you, God. I don't want any eternal Life. I just hate you and I" Well, God will say, "Well, if you are not going to receive Life, and you're don't want to live it the way to be happy and have others be happy, I'll just let you burn up." But you won't keep burning very long. You burn up very quickly. That fire is going to be awful hot. It's not going to torture them very long, I can tell you. It'll be over

very, very quickly.

Now finally, the second Adam came. Physical existence came with Adam (the first Adam). But spiritual eternal Life comes with the second Adam, Jesus Christ. Redemption and life had to come with Christ. Jesus came, and He said in Matthew 16:18:

Matthew 16:18 ... I will build my church ...

Now, no one had the Holy Spirit yet; and Christ came and said, "*I will build my church.*" But in Joel 2:28 a prophet said this:

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass afterward that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh

Oh, God **shut up** the Holy Spirit (as I read to you) in the time of Adam, and drove Adam out of the Garden of Eden. But now He's going to POUR OUT His Spirit upon all flesh who will...all who will accept it. But Jesus decided that the time had not come, and God Almighty decided the time had not come, for **all** flesh – just part of "all flesh" now. So Jesus said, "*I am come that they might have life and have it more abundantly.*" (And I mean **Life**, not temporary existence.) But He also said, John 6:44 (John 6...) I want to read that (I want to read that). John 6:44. I want you to know I am reading this out of the Bible. Jesus said, "*No man can come to me* [Aught-oh. "No man." Is this the day of salvation? No. No man CAN come to me] *except the Father who sent me draw him.*"

Many Called But Few Chosen

Now God draws a lot that are "called," but only a few are "chosen." You know to one of the Churches (the Church up in Ephesus) you read in the 1st chapter of Ephesians [{6}](#) how the apostle Paul said, "God has chosen you." They were called, they had accepted, and they were chosen. But He

said (Jesus had said), “No one can come to Me” even now except a few God has predestinated and called.

Brethren, if you have been **called**, you are one of the FEW who have been called and **chosen**. Around you are hundreds of others (around every one of you) who have not been called. Now, are you better than they? Is God playing favorites? Not a bit. **YOU HAVE TO FIGHT SATAN THE DEVIL. YOU HAVE TO LIVE IN A WORLD THAT IS GOING SATAN’S WAY. IT’S SATAN’S WORLD. YOU HAVE TO ...** well, you know, any old dead fish can float down stream; it takes a pretty live fish (like salmon, for example) to swim up against a swift current. We’ve got to swim up against a swift current; we’ve got to go against the world. We’ve got to be persecuted by the world. We’ve got to come out of the world and be separate.

You know, when God opens up the Holy Spirit to all flesh (and He will, beginning at Christ’s coming – to all flesh then living), there won’t be any devil around any longer; and the whole world will be as full of the knowledge of the Lord as the ocean beds are covered with water. You don’t live in that kind of world. You and I have it a lot harder. But **WE, IF WE OVERCOME** (it says in Revelation 2 verses 26 and 27, and Revelation 3 verse 21 [{7}](#)) – if you overcome, you will be able to sit with Christ in His throne. If we overcome, we’ll be given power to rule the nations and help convert and save the nations in the Millennium.

Now, others coming later don’t have that promise. I don’t know whether God will decide to give it to them later, but He hasn’t yet. That promise only applies to those in the Church now. It does not apply to others that will be called later. Now finally, in the Millennium and in the Great White Throne Judgment, God will pour out His Spirit upon all flesh! But now He is just calling a few, in the Church. **WE ARE THE FIRSTFRUITS**. That’s what the day of Pentecost means.

Now, God gave us the Feast days. The first is the Passover, portraying Christ. That's the beginning towards spiritual salvation through the second Adam toward eternal Life, which Adam turned down. He didn't take the Tree of Life. The second festival of the Days of Unleavened Bread, we have to quit sinning and come out of sin.

The third festival is in the summer, the Feast of Pentecost – meaning the feast of firstfruits, that we are just the first of salvation. Just a few are offered the Holy Spirit and the Tree of Life now. Look at the world around you. Your next-door neighbors probably are not offered the Tree of Life. You have been. What a wonderful thing! Don't let it slip. Don't let it slip.

But Joel said the time will come when He will pour out His spirit **upon all flesh**. Now on the day of Pentecost, that spirit was poured on the beginning (the firstfruits) of those God was calling. They were predestinated. And in Acts the 2nd chapter and verses 15 to 17, you will find that Peter said that on that day of Pentecost that **this** was what Joel had prophesied **the beginning** of the pouring out of the Spirit of God upon all flesh. And no longer was the Spirit of God completely shut up from everybody.

But listen, brethren. The churches, who are called “Christian,” think that salvation has ALWAYS been offered to EVERYBODY. IT HAS NOT! Salvation was NOT offered to people! Well, then what? They will be resurrected in the Great White Throne Judgment, and then it will be offered to them. But it was not offered to them in this life. It is offered to **you and me NOW**. Does that mean something to you? What a wonderful opportunity! But we have to fight off Satan and Satan's people (this world) – a very great thing.

How The Truth Became Lost

All right, that's the Church. Now, the Church had the commandments of

God. The Church got its teachings from the original apostles, and the original apostles got their teaching direct from Christ (the second Adam). And the Church started off with glory and all of that, but all that glory didn't last too long. You notice in the book of Galatians the 1st chapter, verse 6 Paul wrote ... Now this was about 53AD, about 22 years later (21 or 22 years later). The Church was just of age, and Paul says:

***Galatians 1:6-7** I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ **unto another gospel:** (7) Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you and would **pervert** the gospel of Christ.*

They began right then to **suppress** the gospel of Christ. **The gospel is the message Christ brought. It's the good news of the Kingdom of God – that you can be born into the Kingdom of God.** The Kingdom of God is the government of God, and the family of God ruling the government of God. And every government is based on a constitution or a basic law. And the basic law (or constitution) of God's government is the law of love, the Ten Commandments.

Now that was not preached any longer (the Kingdom of God); and instead the great false church came, Babylon the great. And later came the reformation called the Protestant Reformation. And the Bible says they are the harlots of the false religion – the old Babylonian Mystery Religion of superstition. However, the true Church did survive.

But what happened to the true Church? The original Church got its teachings from the apostles in the same generation, immediately after they got it from Jesus Christ. So where did the third generation of the Church get it? They had to get it from the people of the second generation. By that time the apostles were all dead.

Now let me tell you something: If you start a game that I used to play

when I was young called the whispering game; and here's a gentleman over here; and if he whispers to the lady next to him a sentence (about 10 words in a sentence) and she listens; and he may repeat it again. Yes, all right, she understands it; so now she whispers it to the lady next to her; and that lady hears it, and what she thinks she hears she whispers it to the lady next to her, and she whispers it to the person next to her; and so on till they get down to the end of the line.

Then the one at the end of the line says, "What was the sentence did you hear?" And he gets up and says it, and it doesn't make any sense at all. And he says to the first gentleman here, "What did you whisper to the first woman?" And it's altogether different; and you see one getting it from the other, it got all mixed up. You ought to try that sometime, and you'll see that when people get from other people they get it all mixed up.

It's just like rumors going around. You hear a rumor. You tell it, but you have to add a little something. You take away something. You have to change it a little bit. And the other person, "Oh well, we got to go tell someone else about that rumor" about somebody, or against somebody. But they change it a little bit. And finally about the 4th or 5th time, that rumor, you can't recognize it the way it started out.

Well, that's what happened to the true Church. When I came among the true Church back in 1926 and 1927, the Church had lost about all of the original truth, except that there is some kind of salvation through Christ. And they knew we must have the law of God, especially the Sabbath; and they were keeping the Sabbath. And they had the name "The Church of God."

But they'd lost ALL sense of what was the gospel. They didn't know about the Kingdom of God. They knew there would be a Millennium, and that Christ would rule, and it would be on earth. But they didn't know what would happen in the Millennium. They didn't know what it would be like.

They didn't know there was any government of God. They didn't know you could be born into the family of God. They didn't know what salvation really was (really is).

They had lost most of these things. They had lost all about the Holy Days and annual Sabbaths. They'd lost all of that. God revealed it to me, and when I preached it to them they laughed me to scorn. They wouldn't have anything to do with it. They'd received so much information, so much knowledge, they wouldn't receive any more. Would you receive additional knowledge? I am giving you additional knowledge to most of you today. Are you going to receive it, or won't you receive it?

Down To Our Time Now

Well now, you know, let's get back to our own time. Matthew 24. That's the greatest prophecy in the New Testament. It's a prophecy of Jesus. They lost the true gospel, and Jesus said ... He was up on the Mount of Olives, and the disciples came to Him privately, and they asked Him:

Matthew 24:3 ... Tell us when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of thy coming and of the end of the world?

What things did they mean? They'd been talking about the temple being destroyed, and that was going to happen in their lifetime. So Jesus started to tell them what would happen in their lifetime. He said:

Matthew 24:5 ... many shall come in my name saying, I am [the] Christ; and shall deceive many.

Now be careful you don't get deceived. You're going to find many will come preaching a false gospel. The gospel was going to be suppressed. The gospel was the Kingdom of God. They began to preach the gospel about Christ and not about the message of Christ. They preached about the

Messenger, but they left out the Messenger's message. So finally it would come down to the time of the end, and finally in verse 14:

Matthew 24:14 ... this gospel of the KINGDOM [That's the gospel Jesus preached.] shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations and THEN shall the end [of this church age, the end of this time – this present world] come.

Brethren, did you ever hear the gospel of the Kingdom till you heard it through this Church? And the early members of this Church never heard it except through my voice. And you either heard it through me or indirectly through me (from others who did hear it from me) – every one of you! The gospel of the Kingdom of God had not been preached before. Now it has been preached ever since 1933. I went on the air first in the fall in October 1933, but that was only one week. But the program started the first Sunday in January 1934; and it has been going on ever since. And, by the way, we are going on a lot more radio stations now once again. Anyway, we are getting down to the very time of the end now. I want you to notice something. In Ephesians 2 and verse 20, it's talking about the Church. It says the Church is:

*Ephesians 2:20-21 ... built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets [Now that means the prophets of the Old Testament and the apostles of the New.] Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; (21) **In whom all the building ...***

Now the Church is compared to a building. Not a lot of different buildings, ONE BUILDING. It's the body of Christ. Christ is the head of it. How many bodies does Christ have? You know that the prophet Daniel ... I'm going to write an article on this, and you'll read it a little later. Daniel had a vision in which he saw a funny kind of a beast (a wild animal), but it had 4 heads. Now, it was just symbolic of the Greco-Macedonian Empire. That's in the 7th chapter in the book of Daniel. A beast that had four different heads. I

never saw one. But did you ever see four different beasts that all had just one head and had four different beasts under that one head? I never did.

One Body Speaking The Same Thing

There are not a lot of churches. Christ has only **the one body**, and the body is compared to the human body in the 12th chapter of I Corinthians. I tell you, you cut off even a part of a little finger or part of a little toe [*Tape skips at 1:25:59*] That person is no longer part of the body. There is only ONE BODY OF CHRIST. There is only ONE CHURCH, and it's compared to a BUILDING. Not a lot of churches, and a lot of bodies here and there, each one in confusion speaking something different.

I know someone very well who says the Church is like a lot of electric light bulbs here and there, but they all just get the current from the same place. But one lights up one light; and another, another kind of light. So they have a lot of churches; and one speaks one thing (and another, another), and they all speak different things. Is Christ the head of them all? Oh, no. Christ is not the head of that kind of a thing.

He's the head of one body. The Church is one body. Many members, but the ONE BODY. I think Ephesians 2nd chapter {8} – **one** body; and we're compared to **a** building:

*Ephesians 2:21 In whom all the **building** fitly framed together [Not all scattered apart, part of it here and part of it over in some other town, part of it in another part of the world. All together.] growth unto an holy temple in the Lord.*

It is now **a temple**. That's a kind of a building. WE, MY BRETHREN, ARE **THE TEMPLE TO WHICH CHRIST IS COMING** at the Second Coming. Everybody wonders: "What kind of a temple is He coming too?"

Christ is coming to **the temple of His own body – THE CHURCH**. He's coming to MARRY the Church, and the Church will have made herself ready – without spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing. Not different churches, speaking different things! The Church in I Corinthians the 1st chapter must **all speak the same thing!** Not one speaking this, and someone else speaking a different thing and saying, "Well, we're all hanging on to Christ some way or other." You can't do that.

Christ is the vine, and we are the branches. But did you ever see grapes being produced on a branch that is cut off from the vine? He said we must bear much fruit, but you have to be on to the vine; and the vine is organized together. It's one vine. It is not several vines scattered around. There is only the **one Church**, and it is the temple to which Christ is coming. Oh, what a different spirit is here now in this Church. (What a different spirit in Pasadena. What a different spirit here in Big Sandy.) It's like it once was, years ago! And that spirit of contention, that spirit of wanting to compromise with Satan, is all gone.

Now then, we are the temple to which Christ is coming. All right, now I would like to have you turn back, if you will, to Malachi – Malachi the 3rd chapter. Here is a prophecy. You have heard it before.

Malachi 3:1-4 Behold I will send my messenger and he shall prepare the way before me and the Lord whom ye seek shall suddenly come to his temple [What temple is He coming to? The Church! He is coming to the Church, at the Second Coming.], even the messenger of the covenant whom ye delight in; behold he shall come saith the Lord of hosts. [Now what coming is it talking about? Let's go on and read.] (2) But who shall abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap [at this coming]: (3) And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver; and he shall purify the sons of Levi [Did He do that when Jesus came before – when He began preaching in 27 AD? Oh no,

He didn't do that then. He's going to do that at His Second Coming.] *and he will purge them as gold and silver that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness. (4) And then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem shall be pleasant unto the Lord ...*

Did that happen when He came before? Not at all! Jerusalem was in the charge of the Romans; and the Romans were using the Jewish Pharisees and the Sadducees in their government, and they were fighting Christ. They weren't purified, not at all.

*Malachi 3:4-5 Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem shall be pleasant unto the Lord, as in the days of old and as in former years. (5) And I will come near unto you to **judgment** [Judgment is not coming until the beginning of the Millennium, when He comes the second time. "I will come near to you to judgment ..."] and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers ... and against false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in his wages, [and] the widow and the fatherless, and that turn aside the stranger from his right and fear not me, saith the Lord of hosts.*

One To Prepare The Way

That is talking about the Second Coming, and **someone coming to prepare the way before the Second Coming**. And yet you will read, in Mark the 1st chapter, that John the Baptist came and prepared the way before the coming of Christ. That was His first coming. You know, some of them asked Christ "Was John the Baptist Elijah?" Or they asked John the Baptist if he was Elijah. John the Baptist said, "No, I am not." And he was not Elijah. But they said to Christ, "We thought Elijah was to come." Well, He said, "Elijah has come." "Elijah has come," and He spoke about John the Baptist. But in another place He said John the Baptist was only another man, but in the POWER AND SPIRIT of Elijah. Elijah had come in the person of John

the Baptist.

Now that's possibly talking about someone coming to prepare the way for the Second Coming and prepare the Church to be ready for Christ's coming – to be the bride, to be caught up to meet Him in the air; and **you people are that bride**. WHAT IS YOUR BIBLE TALKING ABOUT, BRETHREN? It's about time we opened our understanding, and that we get to understand who and what we are. He's talking about someone coming to prepare the way for the Second Coming of Christ. John the Baptist was the voice crying out in the physical wilderness of the Jordan River. This is talking about someone coming – a voice crying out in the midst of a SPIRITUAL wilderness of Babylon confusion, calling people out of Babylon.

John the Baptist came to prepare the way for a **physical** Jesus. Someone else was going to come preparing the way for a **spiritual** Christ in power and great glory to come to rule. John the Baptist prepared the way for a physical Jesus to come to a physical people, His own people Judah “who received Him not.” This time someone is preparing the way for Christ to come as a great spiritual King of Kings and Lord of Lords in power and glory to meet His SPIRITUAL TEMPLE, THE CHURCH. It'll be caught up in the air, translated from mortal to immortal, becoming very God as His bride in a marriage.

He's coming to His SPIRITUAL temple. The first time He came to a physical temple built of stone and wood and material. The second time He is coming to a spiritual temple composed of spirit, because this Church is going to be changed from matter. You won't be in a physical body. You won't have a heart pumping blood. You will become spirit. You are that temple, brethren. Do you know who you are?

Now I'd like to turn to another prophecy right here in Haggai. Chapter 2 of Haggai (a prophet) he says:

Haggai 2:2 Speak now to Zerubbabel ...

Now Zerubbabel, this was a governor of a colony sent down to Jerusalem 70 years after Judah had been captured. The temple of Solomon had been destroyed in Jerusalem; and 70 years later, to fulfill a prophecy by Jeremiah, a colony of Jews was sent back down there. And they were all Jews, not any of the lost tribes of the house of Israel were in that colony. Zerubbabel was the governor; and he was sent there to build the temple (the second temple) to which Christ was going to come the first time.

John the Baptist was the one who prepared the way for Christ's first coming. Here was Zerubbabel, the one to prepare the temple to which Christ was coming the first time. I want you to get the similarity (the duality) of this whole thing. And Christ was saying, verse 3:

Haggai 2:3-4 *Who is left among you that saw this house [That is, Solomon's temple.] in her first glory? [Probably the most wonderful building ever built in the history of the world.] and how do you see it now? Is it not in your eyes in comparison of it as nothing? (4) Yet now be strong O Zerubbabel says the Lord and ... Joshua the high priest ... and work, for I am with you saith the Lord of hosts [and built this temple].*

The Physical A Type Of Spiritual Temple

Now that temple was a type of the temple to which Christ is coming the second time.

Haggai 2:5-7 *According to the word as I have covenanted with you when ye came out of Egypt, so my spirit remaineth among you: fear ye not. (6) For thus saith the [Eternal] of hosts: Yet once it is a little while and I will [Now he's going into a prophecy right into the future. Now notice this, the prophecy hasn't even happened yet in our time. "And I will ..."] shake*

*the heavens and the earth and the sea and the dry land; (7) And I will shake **all nations** ...*

He's just starting to do that now. Do you know that I have been visiting the heads of nations all over this world; and many of those heads of nations that I have visited in the last 10 years are now dead, and overthrown, and gone? And nations and the thrones of nations have been overthrown at the rate of about one a month part of the time, nearly every year all over this world?

***Haggai 2:7-9** I will shake all nations, and the desire of all nations shall come; and I will fill this house with glory, saith the Lord of hosts. [They were building the second temple.] (8) The silver is mine and the gold is mine saith the [Eternal] of hosts. (9) The glory of this latter house shall be greater than of the former [greater glory than of Solomon's temple].*

Oh, oh, the temple that Zerubbabel built was not anywhere near as glorious as Solomon's temple. It is speaking by type of the temple that is to be built at Christ's coming. It will be more glorious than Solomon's temple. Brethren, you are that temple! You are not yet glorified. You are just sitting here in flesh and blood, some of you quite sickly with certain diseases. Oh, you'll be all healed. You'll be raised up in the sky in the clouds to meet Christ at His coming. You'll be changed from matter into spirit. You will be **glorified**. That's more glorious than Solomon's temple to which he is referring to here.

***Haggai 2:9** ... and in this place will I give peace, saith the Lord of hosts.*

That means Jerusalem, where they were. Now there has never been peace in Jerusalem from that time on. But there will be. Who was preparing the way for the second temple? Through WHOM? God works through human beings. Through whom is He building the second temple? WHERE IS THE

VOICE CRYING OUT ‘PREPARE THE WAY’? The gospel was ANNULLED. The gospel was SABOTAGED. It was not preached for 100 time cycles of 1,900 years.

Through whom did God begin preaching that gospel – **the gospel of the Kingdom of God** – in Europe and all over the United States (to the kings of this world all over this earth)? WHO? It came out of this Church, brethren. This Church is mightier than you realize. Very much so! We are in the last days, preparing for the Second Coming of Christ; and we’d better get our house in order, because Christ wants this Church presented to Him a glorious Church not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing.

Revelation 19 says His bride will have made herself ready. We’ve been getting ready now for 2 1/2-3 years. Are we yet ready? I think not quite, but we are a lot more ready than we were 3 years ago. We’ve got to pray harder. We’ve got to read our Bibles more. We’ve got to have our mind on the things of God, and get our minds off of the things of this world and its entertainment. We’ve got to get back to God. We’ve got to get **prepared** and be **ready** for the Second Coming of Christ, because we’re not quite ready yet.

“HE THAT HATH AN EAR, LET HIM HEAR” WHAT JESUS CHRIST SPOKE TO YOU TODAY through His servant and His apostle. Thank you brethren. I hope that you get the message.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong used the word “great” here but the original says “strong.”

[{2}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said “17th verse” but read from chapter 17 verse 5.

[{3}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong uses the word “became” here but the original says “was made.”

[{4}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong could not think of the Greek word "pneuma."

[{5}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong said II Corinthians but meant to say I Corinthians 2:9.

[{6}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong said "the 1st chapter of Ephesus" but he undoubtedly meant "the 1st chapter of Ephesians," which was written to the Church at Ephesus.

[{7}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong mixed up the books and verses here but eventually corrected himself.

[{8}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong mentions I Corinthians 12 here but reads from Ephesians 2:21.

The Need For Spiritual Knowledge

Sermon (August 29, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Need For Spiritual Knowledge.....	681	The Spirit In Man	699
Paradox In This World	682	Knowledge To Deal With Others	700
Religious Babylon	684	Receiving God's Spirit	701
Cause For Every Effect	686	Reproduction Process	702
In The Beginning	688	Receiving Another Spirit	704
Created By Jesus Christ	689	Choosing From The Two Trees	706
God, More Than One Person	691	Closing Up The Tree Of Life	707
God's Government On Earth	692	Two Sources Of Knowledge	710
Man Made After The God Kind	693	God's Spirit Poured Out	712
Physical Creation	695	Christ's Gospel	714
Animal Brain Vs Human Mind	697	Gospel From The Word Of God	716

Greetings, everybody. Well, it was only a few weeks ago I was speaking to brethren back in Vancouver. Next Sabbath I hope to be in Montreal. I've been speaking to brethren all over the United States, and expect to continue doing it for some time – at least every other Sabbath, and sometimes a little more often. Well that was a wonderful reception we had, and that chorus. I'm sure you all enjoyed it. I did. Very, very wonderful!

Brethren, we are in very serious times now (whether you realize it or not). We are very close to the end of this world. The world itself doesn't realize that at all! We're in a world of awesome progress today. The progress in this world: the things that the world has accomplished and done are absolutely awesome. On the other hand, we are seeing in the world APPALLING troubles and evils – troubles and evils that man is unable to solve. In spite of our ability to fly men to the moon and back, and cavort around up there on the moon and send back live pictures that we can see in our own living rooms on television (of them cavorting around on the moon,

leaping) ... And they take a higher leap up there because there is very little gravity. (I was just thinking: you could high jump or broad jump quite a distance up there. Long jump, we call it today.)

The modern computer, the mechanisms, the machines: Think of things that every woman (every wife) has in her home today to help her in her kitchen, in her laundry. Yet one half of this world is in utter ignorance, without education, cannot read or write. One half of this world is living in abject poverty, filth and squalor; and actually thousands are starving to death. There are a few starving to death actually every day in some part of this world (especially over in southeastern Asia, parts of Africa, and even some parts of South America).

Paradox In This World

Why this paradox? Why is it we are able to do such AWESOME things, and still the world is in such trouble? Why is everybody against everybody? Why is it husband and wife can't get along? Parents can't get along with children or children with parents. Families can't get along with next-door neighbor. Capital and labor can't get along. Capital and management can't get along with labor. So we have strikes, strikes, strikes – even against governments. You've had a postal strike up here recently. We have one in the United States now with the air controllers. If man's government was what it ought to be, there would be no such thing as strikes. There would be no need of it, and it would never be allowed.

Nation is against nation. Now we have a fearful problem in the United States: protecting from Russia. And we don't know that God says our real enemy is not Russia, but it's coming from another direction all together. Now, man **can** go to the moon and back; but man **can't** seem to solve his problems and his troubles! Why? What's the matter with the human mind?

We are in a world, also, of religious confusion. In the religions of the world – and the world is full of different religions, many different religions, many different sects in religions (especially in Christianity); but in no religion do they know who and what God is. Not one religion on earth, except the true Church of God, knows what and why man is and how we came to be on the earth. What is our purpose? Why are we here? Where are we going? What happens now? What’s going to happen?

Christianity teaches that God is a trinity. Many people seem to think that God is one single person. Most people believe in the immortality of the soul. You’re already an immortal being, and you will go to heaven or hell depending upon what you do according to your own convictions and beliefs and what **you** think is right and wrong. If you just get the password (Jesus Christ), they believe in the Christian religion that throws the switch at the end of the line that you are traveling of your life. The switch is automatically set to send you down to hell when you get there. But, if you get the password (You say “I accept Jesus Christ.”) – you get, you receive, you take to yourself – that automatically throws the switch at the end of line; and you’ll be shot up to heaven.

What are you going to do there? One woman was asked, “What do you expect to do for all eternity in the next life up there? For millions and millions of years, what will you keep doing?” “Well, I’ll just sit at the feet of Jesus; and I’ll look up at His wonderful face.” Wonderful as that is, I’ll tell you: just that, with nothing else to do, would become very monotonous. Christ Himself knows that better than we do!

The world doesn’t know what salvation is. They don’t know what man is. They don’t know why he is having all of the troubles he does. So, why all this confusion? Why this paradox of such terrible troubles, more troubles than the world has ever known before? And prophecy says we are headed into a time of troubles **still worse**, such as never existed and never will again!

You, brethren, are in the Church of God. Now, what is the Church? The word “church” really means “called out ones.” It comes from the Greek word *ecclesia*. It’s a group, a collection of people. It could be a howling mob, and it was called that in the Bible once. It came to take Jesus to crucify Him. The church of Luther is merely the group that follows Luther. The Church of God is the congregation, or the group, that have God’s name and follow God. There is quite a difference, and there is a great deal in a name.

Religious Babylon

This world is full, I said, of religions. We live in the world of Christianity with its many, many different denominations: all believing different things, all thinking if they just have the password (Christ) they’ll go to heaven.

I want to read you what God says to us. It’s in the 18th chapter of the book of Revelation. John is recording here things he saw **in vision** – looking into our time now. In vision, he was taken ahead about 1900 and some years into our time. He was seeing then things that are happening to you and me now, and this is what he is recording.

***Revelation 18:1-3** After these things I saw [What he saw in vision. “I saw ...”] another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. (2) And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. (3) For ALL NATIONS have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.*

Fornication: having a relationship with the governments, the kingdoms, of this world. Christ is the coming King. God is the Ruler who rules the universe. They were going to the governments of men.

Revelation 18:3-4 *All nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. (4) And [Now listen.] I heard another voice from heaven, saying, **COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE.***

“God’s people, **come out** of this religious Babylon!” That religious Babylon, I’ll be open and frank, is the Roman Catholic and the Protestant churches of Christianity – professed, traditional “Christianity.” Now it’s both modernist and it’s also so-called fundamentalist. It’s “born again” people who don’t know what born again means; and it’s people that really don’t believe in God, but just profess a religion.

Revelation 18:4 *I heard another voice from heaven, [crying], **COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE** [Are we God’s people? Then this to us, and He says “Come out of this Babylon. Come out of this world’s Christianity.”], *that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues* [because the time of those plagues is coming very soon].*

Now, who is that Babylon? You find it described in the preceding chapter. In my Bible, it is right across the page – verse 5 of the 17th chapter of Revelation.

Revelation 17:5 *Upon her [1](#) [This woman, which is a church – a great church. “Upon her ...”] forehead was a name written, **MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.***

She is a great whore, committing fornication (not adultery). You see, ancient Israel was married to Christ. They would have committed adultery. So it isn’t ancient Israel. It is Gentile. She committed fornication, which is an act committed prior to marriage and by unmarried people (who are not married to Christ); and the name is **not** the name of God.

We are THE CHURCH OF GOD! We bear the name of God. This church bears the name of Babylon: MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT. In other words, the Babylon **Mystery** Religion having now become great – ruling over kings of the earth, participating in the ways of this world. This world has ways that have brought nothing but trouble upon the world; and the religions are part and parcel of it, and with it.

We are told to come out of that! Babylon The Great is the mother of harlots. They came out of their mother **in protest**, calling themselves “Protestant.” Now, brethren, that’s very, very plain language. That’s right in your Bible. I only read that out of the Word of God. I wonder how much of the false teachings of this Babylon and her daughters have rubbed off on us. How much of it do we still hold? How much have we come out?

God has been revealing A GREAT DEAL of additional knowledge; and He’s revealed new knowledge to me, and through me to the Church, just this year (since the first of the year). I’m going about to groups like this all over, almost every week now, to get this knowledge out to you people. We are **called out** of Babylon! Babylon is the religion of this world.

Cause For Every Effect

Now what’s wrong with the world? Let’s take a look at it. The world is what its leaders have made it. The leaders are what education has made them, because the ignorant (the uneducated) have not made the world. They’re not the leaders. All is the result of an incident that happened long, long ago – the incident of the forbidden fruit.

FOR EVERY RESULT there has to be **a cause**, a cause for every effect. The effect today is nothing but trouble, sorrow, discontent. People are not happy today. Many are in abject poverty. The world is filled with sickness and trouble. Actually, in just a few years (ten or fifteen years), the amount of

money spent on doctors, hospitals, medicines, nurses will equal the amount of the gross national product of the whole United States, in this country. I've been researching that recently, and that's how great it will be. As we have more and more inventions, more and more development, we also have increasing troubles.

When I was a young boy, back at the turn of the century (That's back before most of you, even before most of you were born.), I lived in Des Moines, Iowa. I would go down in the country to see my country cousins. Driving on Iowa dirt or mud roads behind the horse and a buggy (which was the only transportation we had in that day), we would go past farms; and there would be a farmer tied behind a horse or a team of horses, and a plow or a farm implement, singing at the top of his lungs! Happy! You don't see that anymore.

People are not happy today. The world is filled with discontent, with bitterness, with resentment – person against person; and unhappiness is filling the air today. Absolutely filling it! Well, I say, it had to have a beginning. People don't realize: if you can't get to the cause, you can't understand it, and you can't possibly have an effect. It all had **a beginning**, at the time of the creation of the first man.

Now, we've been going right over that incident. It's been ridiculed, and laughed at, in the world – called "Adam's apple." Adam didn't eat an apple. But, you see, it was not only the one Tree (that they seem to think was an apple, which it wasn't). There were Two Trees in that garden. No one ever thought to ask: What if Adam had taken the other Tree – the Tree of Life? No one ever thought to ask that question, it seems. We're going to ask it this afternoon.

That's where all of your troubles began. That's where began all of the escalating accomplishments of science, and industry, and technology, and

government. That's also the place where began all of man's troubles, and the unhappiness and the wretchedness, the discontent that we are all having to live in. It's not a pleasant world. It's not a good world. It's not a world that is right.

In The Beginning

Now, it really all began long before that. Where everything began, you find in the Bible ... And the Bible is like ... You know, it's a different Book than any other book that I know. The Bible is like a jigsaw puzzle.

I'm sure you've seen jigsaw puzzles, maybe worked them. It's a beautiful picture; but it's cut with jigsaws, and curly-cues, and different little pieces (maybe up to a thousand or more pieces). When they are scattered, a piece of that picture doesn't make any sense at all. By itself, it doesn't give you any picture. It doesn't have any meaning. And it's pretty hard to put one piece properly next to and adjoining another piece. You work at it for hours and hours. It takes a long time. It's a good way to pass time away. It's a good pastime. But finally, if you ever get it all together, a beautiful picture comes out and makes sense. A picture of harmony and beauty!

You know, the Bible is like that. You begin with Genesis 1:1 –

Genesis 1:1 *In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*

Oh, but you know there are a lot of things in other places in the Bible that have to do about that. What He created, who and what is God, what did He create, when – all about it. But the real beginning **in order of time sequence** is not the first place in the Bible. The real beginning is the fourth book of the New Testament – John 1, verse 1; and there it speaks of a WORD.

John 1:1 *The Word was with God.*

That was written in the Greek language; and the word “Word” is translated from the Greek word “*logos*,” and it means “word.” It means “spokesman” – the revelatory thought, the one who speaks. A personage! The Word was a definite person, and the Word was with another person called God. So there were two persons. Now [{2}](#):

John 1:1 *The Word was God* [also].

Now both are God; but there are two persons there, not just one (and not three, not a trinity). Then:

John 1:3 *All things were made by him* [the Word].

And then in the 14th verse you read:

John 1:14 *The Word [later] was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father).* [Jesus Christ]

The Word had always existed. In the book of Hebrews you read that the Word, or Christ, was without father, without mother, without beginning of days or end of life, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life – having ALWAYS existed! Your mind cannot conceive of that. You can’t see. You think there had to be a beginning somewhere. Well, who made God? Nobody. God has always been; and the one who became Christ has always been, but He was not the Son of God at that time. He became the Son of God when He was born just a little over 1950 years ago (about nineteen hundred and thirty some) of the virgin Mary in Bethlehem of Judea. Then He became the Son of God. He gave up all of the glory that He had had for all eternity!

Created By Jesus Christ

Now then, by Him – the Word – all things were made. But in Ephesians the 3rd chapter and verse 9, you will read how GOD created all things **by** Jesus Christ. God created them by Christ. God told Christ what to do. Christ is the Word. He spoke; and you read in one of the Psalms (the 104th Psalm and verse 30) you will read how the Spirit of God went forth; then He spoke, and the Spirit moved and did what He said.

Psalm 33:9 He spake, and it was done.

You know, once I saw the maker of the Ford car in Detroit. That was in the first week {3} of 1914. Henry Ford had just made the headlines in the newspapers. He had done a great thing. He had a \$5.00 wage. The average union wage at that time was \$3.85 per hour for a 10-hour day. (A 10-hour work day, think of that! \$3.85) Henry Ford now paid a \$5.00 day wage for a 9-hour day. He cut the number of hours down to nine, from ten. And I was sent by a national magazine to Henry Ford to get the story for the national magazine because it was big news at the time.

Now I saw Henry Ford. I saw him in a breezeway between the office and the big factory. At that time it was down on Highland Avenue in Detroit. They've moved it since. That was long before the Bullrun factory. Henry Ford had on a business suit (such as I have and a great many of you men have, and most of you here), yet he was the maker of the Ford car. I didn't see him making any cars. But in the factory I saw hundreds of men in overalls working. Henry Ford employed them, and by them he made the Ford car. But they had machines and the power of electricity, and they were making it by that power.

That's the way God created everything through Jesus Christ, and Jesus Christ had the power (the machinery, the power) that did the work – the Holy Spirit – when He spoke. He is the Spokesman.

Now then, going back to John 1 again. I am just quoting this. I'm going

to read plenty scriptures before I get through, so I won't take the time to read that in John 1:1 (to I think now we're at about verse 3 or 4).

John 1:4 In him was life.

L-i-f-e. "In Him was Life."

God, More Than One Person

Alright, now then let's go back to Genesis 1:1.

*Genesis 1:1 In the beginning God **created** the heavens and the earth.*

Now the word for "God" there ... This is written by Moses in the Hebrew language, and we have the English translation because we speak English here. Moses wrote this in the Hebrew language; and, instead of "God," he wrote the Hebrew word "Elohim." Elohim created the heavens and the earth. Now Elohim is a uniplural noun^{4}. It is a word that means more than one person; but yet it is one entity, one God. But God is more than one person. God is a Family.

It is like the word "family." You can have two people in a family. You can have twelve or fourteen people in a family. It depends upon how you describe the family – the family with grandchildren, great-grandchildren, can finally become pretty great with a large number of people.

It's like the word "church" – one church, but many members. Like the human body, like in the 12th chapter of I Corinthians – one body, many members. Ten fingers, ten toes, two hands, two feet, legs, arms; and yet one body. Not ten bodies, not twenty bodies – one body!

God is only one God, but more than one person – consisting of those two. But the **Spirit** of God is not a person! The Spirit is the Spirit that emanates from God everywhere in the universe, and the **POWER** that does

what the Word of God commands. But Jesus, when He became the Son of God, said “I have not spoken anything of Myself. The Father that sent Me told Me what I should say and what I should speak.” So it ALL came from God the Father, who created all things by Jesus Christ.

Jesus said, when He came as a human being, He said: “I have kept My Father’s commandments. My Father is greater than I.” And yet in another time, He said: “I and My Father are equal, and We are **one**.” And He said that we in the Church could become **one**, just as They are one; and we will be in the Kingdom, or the Family, of God someday – IF we grow in grace and knowledge, IF we endure unto the end.

Brethren, a lot have not endured. I look back in past ENVOYS of Ambassador College; and I see students that I loved, and some who actually made the ministry and became ministers, no longer with us. They didn’t endure. They are gone. It just gives me heartache every time I look at one of those old ENVOYS. Of course, I look at others; and look how wonderfully they have progressed, and how wonderfully they are doing today. Some of those are here today, this afternoon. But I guess some day God will just take out of our minds the others, who didn’t make it; because we won’t have to be discouraged, worried, and saddened by thinking about it. But it’s just too bad those who don’t endure. Don’t forget that! If you ever make it into the Kingdom of God, you’ll have to endure unto the end.

God’s Government On Earth

Well, now, God created the heavens and the earth. Actually, this was a recreation. I won’t have time to go into all of that today. You read it in the 104th Psalm and verse 30. God is the author of government. God put angels on the earth before man. When God first created the earth, angels were here; and they SHOUTED FOR JOY because it was to be their abode, their home.

But He set a government over them. He set a throne on this earth, and He put one on that throne who had been trained at headquarters (just as some of our ministers have been trained at headquarters in Pasadena, California; and then sent out into what we call the field, as ministers).

Well, here was a super archangel called Lucifer – a cherub. He had been trained. He is one whose wings spread right over the very throne of God in heaven over the whole universe. He was trained in the government of God. He was set on that throne of the earth, to rule the whole earth; and there were only angels here. He ruled over the angels. But he was a traitor. He rebelled against **the government of God**.

Now, the government of God has a foundation. You can't have government without a constitution or a basic law. I see right by our hotel is the local ... I don't know whether you call it Parliament, or whatever it is, for this providence. For Ontario, isn't it? But there is law, even for this providence. There is law for Canada. There's a basic Constitution for the United States. You have to have a basic law or constitution for any government.

The basic constitution or law of the government of God is THE LAW OF GOD, which is a **spiritual law**; and it can be summed up in one word: L-O-V-E. That leads to something that was in the one who became Christ: L-I-F-E, Life. But love is the fulfilling of the law; and the only love that will fulfill the law of God is **the love of God** shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit. (But more about that later. That's one thing I am coming to.)

Man Made After The God Kind

Now then, there was a revolt. The angels followed this Lucifer. Lucifer became Satan the devil. The angels became demons. Desolation had come to the earth. In Psalm 104 verse 30, God **renewed** the face of the earth; and

that's what happened in the six days of Genesis 1. It was a renewing of the earth. It had been existing, we don't know, maybe billions of years. We don't know. The Bible doesn't say.

Now God was renewing the earth. The Holy Spirit was moving on the waters, then God spake. It was Christ, the Word, who spoke: "Let there be light, and there was light." He just spoke, and the Holy Spirit did the work – the POWER. (I'll show you later the Holy Spirit was not a person; but is an essence, a power.)

On the sixth day of that week of renewing the face of the earth, God made animal life. You read in the 25th verse:

Genesis 1:25 And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind.

So there was dog after the dog kind, cat after the cat kind, elephants after the elephant kind – **each after its own kind.**

Genesis 1:26 And [then] God said, Let US ...

Not "Let Me." "Let US" – more than one person. That is, the Word and God.

Genesis 1:26 Let us make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness.

"Let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness." Man was made different from the animals. Man was made to have a contact with God, and man was made after the God kind. But man was not God. He was only man. But he was made to have a relationship with God, and to **become** God! (You have to find that in other places in the Bible later.)

All right, now what is the very next thing that God created? He created man. Next He created something for man, something very good. You come to

the second chapter of Genesis.

Genesis 2:1-2 *Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. (2) And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made ...*

He didn't end creating. He only ended working. Now He was going to create something by rest, and not by work. God ended the work which he had made:

Genesis 2:2-4 *... and he **rested** on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. (3) And God **blessed** the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work, which God created and made. [Now then, you go on and ...] (4) These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth [in the day] when they were created ...*

Physical Creation

The heavens (plural) and the earth – all created in the same time. So the whole universe was created at that time. All right, now what about man that He made. I said that man was made after the God kind. But here's something else in the seventh verse.

Genesis 2:7 *And the [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground.*

Oh, oh, God is not formed of the dust of the ground! You'll read in John 4:24, "God is a Spirit." God is composed of Spirit. Christ was composed of Spirit originally. "In Him was Life." L-I-F-E. **Spirit Life**, Life inherent, immortal Life. But now man did not have Life. I want you to noticed:

Genesis 2:7 *The [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground [Just a lot of dirt, that's all.], and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life*

[Just a breath of **temporary** life. That is, of temporary physio-chemical existence. That's all.]; *and man [the dust of the ground.] became a ... soul.*

Not an immortal soul! It says: "*a living*"—just temporarily living. Well, so were the cattle living. So were the dogs and cows living. But not forever; just temporarily, for a little while. Out of the dust of the ground, breathing air. God doesn't have to breath air to live. God doesn't have to have blood pumping in His veins to live. God has SPIRIT LIFE, INHERENT LIFE, IMMORTAL LIFE; but man did not have.

So man, like the animals, was made from the dust of the ground. Man breathed the same air as animals. Man dies the same death as animals, as the Bible says. They both die the same death. We have the same kind of life. The breath is called "the breath of life." Well, the only life we have comes through the breath. You stop ... some way stop your nose, and you can't breathe. Shut up your mouth so you can't get any air in through the mouth. You won't be alive in five minutes. Try it sometime! But you won't come back and tell me the answer, because you won't be living to do it. You just won't be living to do it.

YOU DO NOT HAVE LIFE! But God offered Adam Life. He didn't have it, but he was offered Life. Now, I want you to get this. Man was composed of matter. He did not have Life. He had a temporary existence, for a little while. Now, in that sense, he was just like the animals; and so science thinks man is an animal, and science is all wrong. But man has the same life as an animal, and man dies the same death as an animal; but man is different than an animal. Man is made after the God kind.

Now, God has hands and feet. God has fingers. God wrote the Ten Commandments on tables of stone with the very finger of God. You can read about His feet, you can read about His hands, in the Bible. God has hands and feet. Animals don't. Animals have hooves, paws. Birds have claws.

Animal Brain Vs Human Mind

Now, something else: Man has a mind, animals have a brain; and there is a great difference. But what is the difference? In the modern science of brain research, they take a brain apart; and they look at it. I was seeing some brain research things on television just the other night on a documentary, and on an educational channel. They were even showing the brain of a rat and what a rat could do.

You can train an animal. He has an instinct. You can train him to do something that is not instinct by repeating over, and over, and over, and over – doing it with a system of rewards and punishments until it becomes a habit; and an animal will do it. But an animal cannot think. An animal cannot know what a man can know. An animal cannot think and reason. An animal cannot come to conclusions.

In our home in Tucson, Arizona, we have three dogs. You've heard of one of those dogs in *The Plain Truth*. He is a German dachshund – a little bitty fellow, just little short legs only about so high. A long body, short legs. He owns the place. Of course, we have a great big dog that's a very large dog, but Sir Hans really owns the place and runs it; and he patrols it. He's a deputy sheriff, and he wears a badge on his collar. It says he's the deputy sheriff.

But, now, if someone is coming ... You see, he patrols the place. We have two other dogs, and he assigns the other dogs to patrol the place. But all the dogs start to bark if someone is coming (whether in a car, or by foot). They even know they are coming before we do. I don't know whether they smell it or hear it, but they know it. But do you think Sir Hans Armstrong stops to think: "Well, let me meditate. Let me think a while. Shall I bark, or shall I not bark, this time? I think I'd better bark." Oh, no, he doesn't do that. He doesn't know why he barks. That's instinct. He doesn't know why he does it.

But A HUMAN BEING IS DIFFERENT! A human being has to think, and has to direct everything he does by his mind. He doesn't know how to do anything. An animal knows certain things – just what it is to do – by instinct. That's all. For example, did you ever see a calf born? A little calf is born; and, in less than two minutes, it is learning to walk. It is on all four legs, and it knows how to walk; and it knows where to go. It goes for its dinner, and it knows how to suck milk. No one has to teach him anything.

Ever see a baby born? I have. I've seen three of my four children born. They didn't walk right away, not for about a year. They had to be taught everything. They had to be taught to suck milk. They didn't know how to do anything.

You know, people need to be taught how to walk. They don't even know how to walk. Did you ever watch people walk? Go out on the street sometime where people are walking by; and just stand, and just watch their legs. Just watch them walk. Some of them go along galloping up and down like this, and some of them so along backwards and sideways you know. Others just go right along straight. All kind of different walks: some are clumsy, and some are not. They just learned to walk, and no one taught them. They should have been taught, because they didn't learn properly.

I've even read that people need to be taught how to sit and how to rise from the seat, because most people don't know how to do it gracefully. HUMANS HAVE TO BE TAUGHT. We have to LEARN. We have to get it though our MINDS. Humans have a mind; animals have a brain. Yet, look, they take the brains of animals apart and the brains of people after they die; and you know that the animal brain is precisely like the human brain. No difference!

The scientists would like to say there's a tiny bit of difference. It's so little. I think the truth is it's exactly the same. Physically, qualitatively,

exactly the same! An elephant brain is larger than a human brain. A chimpanzee brain just a little smaller, but all the same composition – made the same way, the same kind of matter, the same form and shape. But there is a difference in the output. The human can think; the animal can't. The human can know things and have knowledge an animal can't have.

The Spirit In Man

The difference is there is **a spirit in man**. God is a Spirit, and He gave man a spirit so man can have a contact with God, so man ultimately can be born of God and BECOME GOD! Animals are not in the image of God. They can never become God. They don't have to have God knowledge. But man needed knowledge! Animals did not. They just were born with instinct. Now there is quite a difference.

In Job 32, verse 8, you will read that there is a spirit in man. Now in I Corinthians the 2nd chapter (I won't take time to read this, but I will tell you how it says.), verse 9, that:

***I Corinthians 2:9** Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart [or the mind] of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.*

In other words, SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE cannot be seen, cannot be heard, cannot enter the mind of man normally or naturally. You can't know the spiritual knowledge naturally. You can't see spirit. You can't hear it. You can't feel it. You can't smell it or taste it. How are you going to know anything about it? Well, 99.99999% of the people don't.

Adam was made with a spirit that he could know and have certain knowledge. But he NEEDED ANOTHER SPIRIT – the Holy Spirit of God, which he did not have. It was made available to him. He did not get it. He did

not take it. He could have. It was offered to him. God wanted him to take it. But he had to make a **choice** of whether he would rather have that or have another spirit (just the spirit he did have). He was born with a spirit.

All right. The spirit he was born with gave him the possibility of receiving knowledge to deal with material things. Now get this. Adam had the capacity by his creation; and his children, like us, by our birth since that time – we have had the ability to deal with things and to reason out and to properly do a thing. We can make a table like this {5}. We can make an electric light like that. We can make airplanes, and fly to the moon, make motion pictures and make it work. The THINGS THAT MAN HAS ACCOMPLISHED are all **physical and material**, and Adam was created with ability to do that.

Knowledge To Deal With Others

But Adam needed three kinds of knowledge. He not only needed knowledge to deal with matter and the earth out of which he came. He was made to need to deal with people, because God said, “Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth.” He was given a wife so he could have children; and they were able to have children; and their children had children; and finally there was going to be a big population. Adam lived 930 years. There must a few million people of all his children before he died.

Now he needed knowledge to get along with his children and to get along with his neighbor. If he got organized, he could get along with other organizations. He needed knowledge to deal with people. Now he needed another kind of knowledge to deal with God and to have a companionship with God.

The Bible also says two cannot walk together except they be agreed. He had to come into harmony and agreement with God to walk with Him, and

that takes knowledge. He did not have spiritual knowledge. Now back to I Corinthians the 2nd chapter. You cannot see, hear, or taste, or smell, neither can it enter into the mind of man **spiritual knowledge**; but GOD HAS REVEALED THOSE THINGS TO US. How? BY HIS SPIRIT!

And the Word of God – **these words** are spirit and they are truth. You know, the words of the Bible, they are material words; and they do speak about physical and material things. Many carnal minds can understand the physical, materialistic things that the Bible says. They can't understand the spiritual knowledge to save their lives. They just simply cannot. They don't know why. I do, but they don't. They don't.

Adam needed knowledge to have a contact with God. He needed knowledge to deal with people. The reason we're having trouble in the world today: we don't know how to deal with one another. Adam desperately needed the Spirit of God.

Receiving God's Spirit

All right. Before Adam were the Two Trees. One was the Tree of Life. What IF Adam had taken the Tree of Life? What would that have done? Would he have had eternal Life [6](#) just that quick? God does not change. God is the same yesterday, today, and forever. So is Christ. Today the Tree of Life is open to you and me. We are promised eternal Life through Christ, are we not? Do you get it just when you repent, and receive Christ, and when you are baptized? No. What you get – IF you have really repented, IF you have really believed in your heart really and sincerely and deeply – you receive the Spirit of God.

Now then, if you do not have the Spirit of God, you are none of His. But IF the Spirit of Christ dwells in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead will also make immortal your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwells in

you – through a resurrection. IF the Spirit dwells in you, you will come to have inherent Life, eternal Life, Life inherent within yourself. But you don't have it now.

Now remember: in Christ was Life. In Adam was not Life. In Adam was a temporary existence. That's the first Adam. You and I were born of Adam. We were born like Adam. But Adam had to make **a choice**. If he had taken of the Tree of Life, that meant just what it means today. He would have received the Holy Spirit. When we receive the Holy Spirit, you don't get immortal Life right away. What you get the knowledge of God right away. You learn about the law of God. You receive spiritual knowledge, and God says the law is SPIRITUAL.

You know, the law of God – it doesn't tell you how to make a desk like this. It doesn't how to go to the moon and back. It doesn't tell you how to make a bicycle, how to make an automobile. The law of God doesn't tell you how to do those things. Man has done that without the law of God. Man doesn't believe in the law of God, but man can do those things. But THE LAW OF GOD does tell you how to get along with your neighbor. The law of God does tell you how to have a right relationship with God, and one of those things I just read to you – the keeping of His Sabbath.

Most people don't think that means anything or makes any difference. Now that was there and made known to Adam, because God was made the Sabbath before He even made Adam ... or before He began to put Adam to the test, at least. No, He had created Adam first. But it was after He made the Sabbath that He put Adam into the garden of Eden, in which were the two symbolic Trees in the center that were very special Trees because they had a very deep spiritual meaning.

Reproduction Process

God's purpose is to make us God – to make man {7} into God. GOD IS REPRODUCING HIMSELF. Have you ever reproduced yourself? Did your parents reproduce themselves when you were born? They sure did. Now just stop and think a minute, and think of the exact comparison.

You originally were an ovum in your mother's ovary. That was shot out of the ovary into a fallopian tube (that has just like a hand at the end of it); and then it goes in through the tube down into the uterus, or the womb. That ovum had a temporary life not exceeding 28 days – just a **temporary existence**, no life really at all. It had the possibility of life, but it needed to have a male sperm cell to impregnate it and impart life to it.

So a male sperm cell from your father's body entered (Either in the fallopian tube or in the womb, whatever. Doctors may not quite understand where.), and life was added. That life was the beginning of you. That's the way you began, and you didn't know anything then. You were just an impregnated ovum. I never can think of that word that I want {8}; but, anyway, after four months you became a fetus – instead of an embryo. You were first an embryo. That's all.

You began to take on human form after about four months inside of your mother. Your mother was protecting you and feeding you from physical food. The physical food that she ate brought nourishment from which you developed and grew; but she had to protect you from harm. You had to be fed through her to grow on physical food; but you weren't ready yet to be born, and birth didn't come until five more months (or a total of nine months). Then you were born; and, when you were born, at first you gave a squawk with the first breath: "Blah."

With that breath, a SPIRIT entered into you! Now that spirit is no part of you. It's just something in you {9}. But that spirit imparted intellect to a physical brain that an animal doesn't have. Let's go back to I Corinthians 2.

I Corinthians 2:9 God hath revealed [these things] to us by his Spirit ... [which eye can't see, ear can't hear – the things of God].

Now then, “*What man ...*” In verse 11:

I Corinthians 2:11 What man [can know] the things of a man, except by the spirit of man, which is in him?

Man is not a spirit. That spirit doesn't impart life to the man. The breath imparts life, and the blood imparts life. The blood thereof is the life thereof{10}. Your temporary life, your temporary existence, comes from breath and from blood – not from that spirit.

The spirit only gives you the power of thinking and of knowing. It gives you the power to know **materialistic knowledge**. It does not give you the power to know spiritual knowledge. It doesn't give you the power to know how to get along with people. It doesn't give you LOVE towards people. So you develop the spirit of competition, because Satan gets that injected into you: competition, and strife, and getting and taking (instead of giving and helping and sharing).

Receiving Another Spirit

Now then, are you with me? Are you following? This is a little bit deep, but this is the very beginning. This is where everything is. Just the same, you could not have the knowledge you have except by that spirit that is in you. But, in the same manner, no man can know the things of God and have **spiritual knowledge** save by THE SPIRIT OF GOD. The Spirit of God!

Now look, Adam was made a male. He was not complete. He needed another human being by his side, a wife. He couldn't reproduce until he had a wife, another person. So God made him a wife. Alright. His mind was only half there too. He needed ANOTHER SPIRIT, just like he needed another

female person beside him. That is, another person, who would be a female, beside him.

God freely offered him that Spirit. If we receive the Holy Spirit, we have the love of God shed abroad in our hearts to fulfill God's law. The Holy Spirit opens our mind to understand God's law. The Holy Spirit opens our mind to spiritual knowledge, which we were not born with and which we did not have before, and which most people do not have. In other words, most people (who do not have the Holy Spirit) are mentally deficient. They are mentally only half there. Now maybe you call that being crazy? I don't know. That's what they are.

I don't care how many letters they have after their names. Some people have a couple of PhDs after their name. Some have a PhD and an MD, and other kinds of "D's" or doctorates. They are only half there, unless they have the Holy Spirit of God. They **cannot** know spiritual knowledge. They **cannot** get along with God.

But the Holy Spirit of God imparts the presence of Life, just like the sperm cell from your father imparted life to an ovum. You are an ovum; and you have a limited life of, some would say, an average of 70 years. Some live to over 100. I've lived up into my 90th year already. It's up to God whether I live past 100 or not. I don't know.

My mother asked me one time, when she was getting well into her eighties, "Do you think I'll live to be 100?" I said, "Of course you will, Mother." Of course, I wanted to be nice to her. Well, she didn't quite make that; but she was ninety-five and a half. I've had other grandparents and granduncles (great uncles) that were up into their nineties. So God can keep me around as long as He wants to. It's up to Him. I belong to Him. I don't belong to myself. It's up to Him. As long as He wants to use me, He can keep me going full steam ahead. I'm not thinking of retiring. I reached retirement

age about thirty years ago, but I'm not thinking about that at all. I still have plenty of energy, plenty of life.

[** Part of the sermon is missing at 1:00:12]

Choosing From The Two Trees

... the Spirit of God. That would have given him spiritual knowledge. It would then given him the love of God, so he could have had love for his neighbor and love toward God. It would have given him the faith of God; and his God, that talked to him, was Christ. Actually the one who became Christ was the Word (Yahweh). And he would have had the Spirit of power to overcome Satan, just like we receive those things. If he had endured for the rest of his life, **then** he would have received immortal Life. He wouldn't have received it right away.

But, IF HE HAD DONE THAT, Satan would have been taken away; and the whole world would have been different! You wouldn't be living in a world like you do today. When Christ comes, Satan will be put away; and people won't be living in a world like you're living in today either.

Now, then, the other Tree in the garden was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Notice: one Tree was the Tree of Life; the other was the Tree of Knowledge. But if they took of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, they would DIE. God said, "If you take of that, you will SURELY DIE." He only had a temporary existence. He didn't have Life. But in Christ was Life! He was the God speaking to Adam. He had Life to give.

But Adam followed Eve; and he said, "No, thank you. I will **take to myself** the knowledge that I need." And the only knowledge he could take to himself was knowledge to make things, to deal with things, but not how to deal properly with people. So he has never gotten along with people, but he

has done very well with things. He has made marvelous progress.

Did you ever understand why we have a world making such marvelous progress in some material and physical directions, and yet having such great troubles? Because the world doesn't have the Spirit of God, that's why. That is the reason. But that's not the end of the story at all, not yet.

When Adam did that, then God did something. Adam had to make a decision. He made that decision for himself and his children. Then we turn to the 3rd chapter of Genesis and the last few verses here. Beginning in verse 22{11}:

Genesis 3:22-24 The [Eternal] God said, ... lest he [now] put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever; (23) Therefore the [Eternal] God ... (24) drove out the man; and he placed at the east in the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, **to keep** the way of the tree of life.

Lest he go back and live forever in sin, and disobedience, and going the wrong way, and without spiritual knowledge – without the knowledge to deal with God or people; and he would be unhappy. That's what's made humans unhappy ever since; and God{12} was not going to allow that.

Closing Up The Tree Of Life

So GOD CLOSED UP THE TREE OF LIFE. Now get that! Christianity doesn't know that! Protestants don't know that! The Roman Catholic church doesn't know that! They DON'T KNOW the Tree of Life has been closed. They think all you have to do is get the password (Christ), and you automatically will be saved. Oh, no.

THE HOLY SPIRIT – ETERNAL LIFE – WAS CLOSED **until** the Second Adam. Alright, go back. Take it from the time of the Flood. Nobody

had the Holy Spirit. All of them, their minds were only on evil continually; and so came the Flood, and Noah alone and his family were saved. Later God called people out of Egyptian slavery, and made them His nation. They didn't have the Holy Spirit. God didn't offer them the Holy Spirit. Ancient Israel had the law of God, but they couldn't obey it because it's a spiritual law; and it takes the love of God in their hearts by the Holy Spirit, and God did not give them the Holy Spirit. Ancient Israel did not obey God and God's law. So what? Well, it's just like you read in Hebrews 9:27.

Hebrews 9:27 It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.

ALL ISRAEL is going to come back to judgment. You read that in the 37th chapter of Ezekiel [{13}](#). You should hear that preached on the Last Day of the Feast of Tabernacles – that Great Day, the day of judgment. In that day of judgment, they're going to give account for what they did; and the penalty is **death**. Christ will be the Judge; and He's going to say to those in that judgment, "You are sentenced to DEATH. You are found GUILTY."

But, you know, a lot of them (I think nearly all of them.) are going to throw themselves on the mercy of the court. "Well, I accept it, your Honor. I know I am guilty. I know I did do these things. Oh, if I could just live all over again, I wouldn't do it." He'll say, "You mean, if you had a chance, you would do differently." "Oh, yes, your Honor. That's what I mean." Well, He'll say, "You know, I'm going to give you a chance. You know, **I** took all your sins. **I** paid that penalty for you; and, if you will live the right way, you still can have eternal Life."

That's going to be the judgment of all those people. But they didn't get it in this life! The Holy Spirit was CLOSED UP from them. "It's appointed to men once to die, after this the judgment."

I Corinthians 15:22-24 As in Adam ALL DIE [They've all been dead,

and they didn't have the Holy Spirit.], *[but] so in Christ shall all* [The same "all" who died.] *be made alive. (23) But every man in his own order:* [first] *Christ [resurrected] ... afterwards they that are Christ's* [That's us.] *at [Christ's] coming* [That's pretty soon now.]. (24) *Then cometh the end* [and the final Great White Throne Judgment, after the Millennium].

Oh, why can't people understand the teaching of God – the wonderful revelation of God, and how merciful God is. EVERYONE who ever lived is going to have their chance, but they are not getting it now! Their minds are closed; and the natural mind of man, even to this day, is **hostile against God**. Romans 8 and verse 7, the natural ...

Romans 8:7 *The carnal mind is enmity [which means hostile] against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.*

Then in Jeremiah 17 (Isn't it? Yes, I believe.), verse 9, I believe:

Jeremiah 17:9 *The heart [or the mind of man] is deceitful [and wicked] above all things, and ... who can know it?*

That's the way ... We're not born exactly that way, but you're born without the Spirit of God. Satan is alive, and Satan is broadcasting; and he broadcasts competition, and strife, and selfishness, and ego, and vanity into you – beginning the first day of your life.

Now, parents are neglecting their children the first months of their life, the first year. They say, "Well, wait until he's six-years-old; and we'll send him to school, and let the teacher teach him." Yeah, you neglect your children. **SATAN IS NOT NEGLECTING YOUR LITTLE CHILDREN.** Satan begins working on your children the first two or three months of their lives. By six or seven months, eight months, children are naturally selfish. They weren't born that way, but they get that way within a few months because Satan is not neglecting your children. You parents who have little

children, how dare you neglect your little children! Satan is very mindful of them. He's getting after them.

Go back and teach your children. Teach them the way of God: cooperation, love, kindness, sharing, and obedience, and the things they need to know; because they haven't been taught those things.

Two Sources Of Knowledge

Now then, Adam chose **self-produced** knowledge. He took to himself the knowledge of what is right and wrong, of good and evil. He could have had the knowledge of what is good and what is evil from the other Tree. But he took it to himself. God would have **revealed** it to him, if he had taken of the Tree of Life; but he didn't. His Tree led to death. The other Tree would have led to Life. His Tree was a tree of knowledge. So was the other Tree a tree of knowledge. One was the knowledge that would lead to Life. The other was knowledge that would lead to death.

And man has been pursuing knowledge ever since, but man has been unable to deal with man. Man does not get along with man. Man has not had a relationship with God, and the natural mind of man is hostile against God. He doesn't want anything to do with God. He gets hot and bothered if you speak about religion or God to him. He doesn't want to hear about it, and he doesn't know why.

He gets in trouble and he doesn't know the way out. You know, if he had the Spirit of God, he would be able to go to God; and God would HELP HIM OUT. You read in the 34th Psalm, verse 19:

***Psalm 34:19** Many are the afflictions of the **righteous**: but the LORD delivers him out of them all.*

Man **needs** that companionship with God to deliver him out of trouble!

I'm going to tell you: this Church has been in real trouble since the first of this year. Most of you don't know about it, but I've had to rely on God; and God is delivering us out of the trouble. We're not clear out of it yet, but God is delivering us. Oh yes, there was a conspiracy to get me out of the driver's seat (among other things). I'm still in the driver's seat, brethren. God is on His throne.

Now there's only one reason why God is on our side, and that's if we are on His side. I'm trying my best to be on God's side, and I hope you will too. None of us has always been on God's side, but we can be there now.

Well, after six thousand years, we came to the place in the last couple of centuries (the last century or so) modern science has said, "Well, we've grown in knowledge so much now that we can safely throw away the crutch of religion. Religion is only a superstition anyway. We don't need it any more. Science is the new messiah, the new god, that is going to deliver us from all of our troubles."

Modern science! Do you know what science has done? Modern science has had the weapons of war, and stirred up war after war. Modern science has produced, finally, its crowning achievement – the weapons of mass destruction that will erase all of us off the face of the earth. Destruction! They haven't saved us from anything.

In the decade of the '60s, Dr. Clark Kerr, president of the University of California and one of the world's great educators, said the modern university is **a factory**. What are we manufacturing? We are manufacturing knowledge. Oh, yes. Adam took the knowledge – only the ability to manufacture physical, materialistic, knowledge. That's ALL they have in the universities. That's ALL they have at the schools. They only teach MATERIAL KNOWLEDGE. They don't know spiritual knowledge. They are only half there. The knowledge is only half complete. That's why I've been saying for

years there's a **missing dimension** in knowledge, and it's been missing since Adam. A missing dimension!

God's Spirit Poured Out

Now God shut up the Spirit from man, and man has not had access to the Spirit of God. Alright, so finally came the Second Adam – the one who is the Word, the one through whom God created all things. He divested Himself of all that great glory. He came down and was born as a lowly babe, in a manger, of the virgin Mary. He grew up, and Satan tried to kill him right then. Then, when He began His ministry – not as the Son of God (which He was), but as the Son of man – and He functioned only as a Son of man, setting an example for us and for the ministers of the Church today. Ever think of that?

Jesus Christ said, “I will build My Church.” “I will build My Church.” So He called apostles. Now He called them. God called them through Christ, because God does everything through Christ. He created all things through Christ. Peter and Andrew were fishing, and they wanted to be fishermen. They didn't want to be ministers. But Jesus called “Come on, and follow Me. I'm going to make you fishers of men.” (Well, I always wanted to do other jobs.) But Christ called them to follow Him; and He trained apostles to start the Church.

Now Joel had prophesied – Joel 2:28. Joel, a prophet, prophesied:

***Joel 2:28** It shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh.*

Now the Spirit of God had been shut up, and was **shut up from mankind**. THAT HAS NOT BEEN TAUGHT IN THIS CHURCH BEFORE. That's news to you people. Will you get it? Will you believe it? But Joel

prophesied a time would come when God would begin pouring out His Spirit upon ALL FLESH. He hasn't begun yet. But, on the day of Pentecost, the apostle Peter said, "This is that prophesied by the prophet Joel: 'In the latter days, saith God, I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh.'"

It began coming at that time, and the Spirit of God was being **poured**. The Spirit of God was not a "he." It was an "it." An "it." The Spirit of God sat upon the heads of each one of them like flames of fire they could see, and **it** came with the sound of a rushing mighty wind. And some people say the Holy Spirit is a "he," and never spoken of as an "it" in the Bible. Turn to the 2nd chapter of the book of Acts, and you will find it.

But Jesus said, "NO MAN CAN COME TO ME except the Father that sent Me draw him." Now, God is the real author of the law. Jesus said, "I have kept My Father's law, My Father's commandments." When you sin, you are cutting yourself off from God. It is Christ's blood that will reconcile you to God Christ's blood does not save you! The 5th chapter of Romans, the blood of Christ doesn't save anybody. Did you think it did? You were wrong. The blood of Christ, though, reconciles you to God. And no one can come to Christ except God the Father draws them, and there's no way to get back to God except through Christ. But God has to choose you.

Read again the first chapter of Paul's epistle to the Ephesians. To those brethren at Ephesus he said, "God chose you." Just think, He looked down; and He's only choosing one here, and one way over there, and one somewhere else in another city. But you were the ones He chose. Brethren, there are (What is it?) 2 1/2 million or so people right here in this city, but we are a small group; and we come from all over. **God has chosen you!** What a wonderful privilege: that God looked down and chose you.

Well now, He's going to choose all the others; but later. Their time hasn't come yet. He's chosen you at a time when you've got Satan to fight.

You've got Satan's world to fight. They won't have to buck that. They'll have it easier. If they live into the Millennium, the Spirit of God will be poured out on them. The Spirit of God is like **essence**. It's not a being. It's not a person. It can be poured out.

Jesus said on the last day of the great feast – after the Feast of Tabernacles, when He was on earth over 1900 years ago:

***John 7:37-39** If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. (38) ... out of his innermost being will **flow RIVERS OF LIVING WATER**. (39) (But this spake he of the **Spirit** [of God, which had not yet been given because Jesus was not at that time yet glorified]).*

The Holy Spirit of God can be **poured**. You don't pour a human being, or a person, or a divine being. The Holy Spirit is not a personage. God is not a trinity. You don't limit God to three persons. God started as two, but you and I can be born into the God Family. If there are only three, you and I could never be born of God. Then God is complete. God is **not** complete, and is not going to be for a long time!

People don't know why God put humans on earth, or where we are going, or what, or why, or anything about it. Oh, the ignorance in this world. It's terrible.

Christ's Gospel

Now then, Jesus brought the gospel.

Let's see how we are doing with time here. I've got a little bit of time yet. I'm speaking more than an hour to them; already more than an hour, but I'm not going to speak as long as Gerald Waterhouse. [Audience laughs.] But you don't get this message ... You've never heard this message before, and I want you to get it. You didn't come here to see me. I'm no celebrity. I'm just

a burned out old hunk of junk, who thought he was no good to himself no longer and gave himself to Christ; and Christ has been using me. That's all. That's all you are looking on. But your ears are hearing something you'd better listen to. If you have an ear to hear, you'd better hear.

All right. Christ came and preached THE TRUTH – the Kingdom of God, the Family of God that will rule the world, and the government of God. He put His government in the Church! But only a few were called now. Others ... “It's appointed unto men once to die, after this the judgment.” “As in Adam all die (Others have died, billions.), all shall be made alive.” Oh, their time is coming. It just hasn't come yet; and, when their time comes, there won't be any Satan they'll have to overcome.

You and I are having a harder time of it now. But, IF WE OVERCOME, the promise is we shall sit with Christ on His throne. We shall be given power to rule the nations and help save the nations. Oh, we get a greater reward. Now, we get eternal Life not as a reward. That's the gift of God, by grace; but the reward comes by works. God is calling us now, if we make the grade.

So He had the gospel, and the Church was started. It started off with a fine, wonderful burst of joy and happiness, and the Holy Spirit. That was 31 A.D. But in about 53 A.D. (only about 21-22 years later) – the Church was just barely of age – the apostle Paul wrote this to the Churches up in Galatia (Galatians 1, verses 6 and 7):

***Galatians 1:6-7** I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel [The gospel now was no longer going to be preached to the world. It was going to be **suppressed.**]: (7) Which is not another, but there be some that trouble you, and would **pervert** the gospel of Christ.*

So the gospel was perverted. The gospel was perverted, and has been for 1900 years. Now we come to our day, and there is a false church (I read

that to you at the beginning.) – BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS; and we are called out of that. We're called to **the true Church of God**. The true Church of God is pictured in the 12th chapter of the book of Revelation: a small Church, persecuted, having to flee the governments that are really ruled by the false church.

Now, for our time now, you would read in the 24th chapter of Matthew, where they asked Christ about the time of His coming. But they also asked Him about the time when the temple would be destroyed, and that was to be in 70 A.D.; and He said, "Many will come in My name, saying that I am Christ (preaching Christ to the nations) but yet deceiving the people." That has happened.

But He said, "WHEN THIS GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM IS PREACHED," and it was not preached until I went on the air over the United States, and finally in 1953 (**100 time cycles from the time it was suppressed**) I was able to go on the most powerful radio station on earth – Radio Luxembourg, over all Europe and England – with **the true gospel**. One hundred time cycles! That should mean something. When ...

Matthew 24:14 This gospel of the Kingdom [is] preached in the world for a witness unto all nations ...

God has sent me to kings, to presidents, to prime ministers all over the world. I didn't go to convert them; but I did go to open the way to get the gospel into their countries, and the way was opened. The way was opened. But I tell you, the true Church even – even the true Church – began to lose the gospel.

Gospel From The Word Of God

Now how did the true Church get its gospel? How did it get its

teaching? How did the true Church get its message, its beliefs? It got it from the apostles. But how did the apostles get it? They got it from Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ is the Word of God. I said that in the beginning this afternoon. Jesus Christ was the Word of God. They got it direct from the Word of God. **Jesus** is the Word of God in person. **The Bible** is the Word of God in writing. **Same Word exactly!**

After these 1900 years, God raised me up and somehow beat me down where I was willing to submit and willing to believe Him. I was really whipped and beaten, after I had been quite a success financially and economically. I began to see that the Bible said just the opposite of what I had been taught in one of these churches “in Babylon” I had never really been part of; but I was brought up in one from childhood.

I went further. I saw that the soul that sins will die. It was not immortal, as I thought. I saw that no man would go to heaven. I began to learn the church was teaching just the opposite of what the Bible says. I began to prove that the Bible was true. I began to prove that God exists and that God is true. I began to believe what God says. Adam didn't. People didn't believe what Christ said. (Not very many. Only 120 out of the thousands upon thousands who heard Him.)

I don't know any reason why God should have chosen me. I'm no better than anybody else. I've known all kinds of people with more ability than I have, better personality, better appearance, better everything than I have. But God didn't choose any of them. He hasn't used any of them. So He had to take someone who wasn't quite so good and use to bring **YOU THE TRUTH THAT YOU HAVE HAD**. And all of you directly or indirectly are my children in the Lord, because you got the knowledge directly or indirectly through me. Christ got it to [14](#) me; but Christ is the living Word, and I got it through the living Word in print, in writing, just as the early apostles did.

I found that the Church had lost most of that truth. They had the name “Church of God.” They had the Sabbath. That’s about all they had. They didn’t have the gospel. They didn’t know what the gospel was. They knew there’d be a Millennium. They had no conception of what was going to happen in the Millennium. They knew we are not an immortal soul. They did know a few of those things. They knew we don’t go to heaven. But there were so many things they just did not understand at all.

God began to reveal truth that had been lost – been lost because the third generation of the Church got their doctrine from the second generation. The fifth generation got it from the fourth generation. The seventeenth generation got it from the sixteenth. If you saw the whispering game going along from person to person, you start a sentence down here; and by the time it gets to the other end you won’t recognize it. It will have changed.

Just like rumors. It goes from one person to another, and every time it gets changed a little bit. That’s what happened to the truth in the Church. But God has kept the words straight in the Bible, and I come to you; and you don’t have to believe ... You don’t have to just trust me because I say, “Don’t believe me. Look in the Bible and see if I am telling the truth.” And you’ve looked there; but you didn’t see it there until I brought it to your attention, did you? But you can check up on me.

Now the early Church couldn’t check up on Peter, and Paul, and the apostles. But they knew it was the truth, and they had the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit energized them and gave them Life. Well, so it is. God has called us, and chosen us; and God has raised up one to bring this to you. Now, that is the truth.

I have some more I was going to use, but I’m not going to go through it now. I was going to show you that we are the Bride of Christ, the Church that shall have made herself ready. We are trying to get back on the track. I read a

letter on the way coming up here from a member of the Church – that was a member of the Church locally – that said next time she heard anything about this **getting back on the track** she’s going to throw up. That woman is no longer in the Church. She’s not hearing it. She’s not here today. At least, she’d better not be.

You betcha! We’re still trying to get back on the track. We’re almost there, brethren; and we’re going to get there because God says the Bride shall have made her ... the Wife who’s going to marry Christ will have made herself READY. Now, those that **are ready** are going to go in; and those that are not you read of in the 25th chapter of Matthew. Some are not going to endure until the end. You’d better be sure that you do!

I’ve given you truth today you haven’t heard before. I hope it will mean something to you. We’re on trial now. God is with us. God will bless us according as we obey Him, and as we are close to Him. Brethren, we need to pray as we’ve never prayed before. We need to read and study our Bibles as never before. We need to COME OUT of Babylon, OUT OF THE WORLD and be separate. We are a separate and a chosen people. We are called to be a holy people. You bet we’re going to get back on the track, and we’re just almost there right now; and God is beginning to prosper the Work. It’s beginning to prosper.

Do you know that for several years we had practically no prospective members coming for the local ministers to go and visit, and now they are just coming in almost every day. All of a sudden God is blessing us. We have been getting back on the track. Now we’d better still get there. But don’t become weary with well doing. That’s another scripture. But pray as you never did before because it’s not going to be easy; and he that endures unto the end, the same will go in. I hope that the door won’t be shut in any of your faces.

Well, thank you brethren for coming. I hope I haven't tired you out. I'm a little older than most of you, and I haven't tired myself out. So I hope I haven't tired you out.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: When beginning to read this verse, Mr. Armstrong actually said "Upon her name" and commented "This woman, which is a church – a great church" before he continued reading the verse correctly: "Upon her forehead was a name written." etc.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "The next verse says ..." but he read the last part of the same verse, verse 1.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong stumbled with his words for a few moments. He said, "That was in the first year of, or the first month or the first week, I should say."

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong eventually stopped applying the term 'uniplural' to Elohim. In his April 1983 sermon "Spiritual Health Checkup," he explained (at 28:50 on the audio file) that Elohim is indeed a plural word and not uniplural. This is further clarified in his book MYSTERY OF THE AGES (page 50) where he said: The Hebrew word translated "God" is Elohim – a noun or name, plural in form, but normally singular in grammatical usage.

[{5}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong was tapping on the desk, or table, where he was sitting.

[{6}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong snapped his fingers at this point.

[{7}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "to make man out of God," whereas he undoubtedly meant it the other way around (as the context shows).

[{8}](#) - Editor's note: At this point, Mr. Armstrong couldn't think of the term

“embryo.”

[{9}](#) - Editor’s note: In his sermon on the first Day of Unleavened Bread, 6 April 1985, “Rely On God” (from 33:30 to 37:25 on the audio file) Mr. Armstrong gave further understanding about the spirit in man actually being a part of the man.

[{10}](#) - Editor’s note: Mr. Armstrong was paraphrasing Leviticus 17:11.

[{11}](#) - Editor’s note: Mr. Armstrong said verse 23, but he began reading from verse 22.

[{12}](#) - Editor’s note: Mr. Armstrong said “Adam,” but he undoubtedly meant “God” was not going to allow that.

[{13}](#) - Editor’s note: Mr. Armstrong actually said: “You read that in the 37th Psalm” Clearly he meant the 37th chapter of Ezekiel as Psalm 37 is not about Israel coming back to judgment.

[{14}](#) - Editor’s note: Mr. Armstrong actually said: “Christ got it through me”. Clearly, “got it TO me” better expresses his intent – that he was taught by the Living Christ via His written Word, just as the early apostles were taught by Christ in person.

Endure To The End

Sermon (September 26, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Endure To The End.....	722	Adam's Choice	732
Christ As Creator	723	Satan Still On The Throne	734
Government Based On Law	724	Christ The First Begotten	736
Angels Created First	725	Christ Qualified To Sit On The Throne	738
God Is A Family	726	Holy Spirit Given To The Church	740
Human Reproduction As A Type	727	Repentance And Overcoming Essential	742
Man Incomplete	728	We Will Rule With Christ	745
Materialistic Knowledge	730	Sitting On Thrones, Ruling	748
Spiritual Knowledge	731		

Well, greetings again everybody. Today is the day when in the world they are having football games, major league baseball games all over the country. In this country and around the world, we're facing a real economic repression or depression. The Stock Market was in a sort of semi-crash yesterday. Things are not good in the world; and while the world is going on like that, where is Jesus Christ and what position is He in right now today?

Jesus Christ is **alive**. He rose from the dead. He's been living these 1950 and more years, and yet the world: They hear a lot about Him. They don't see Him. They hear about a smart aleck Jesus who came, who knew more than His Father, did away with His Father's Commandments. His Father was supposed to be a cruel, stern, harsh God. Jesus came though with a great deal of mercy and all you have to do is just believe on Him and you get to go to heaven. And so the false preachers have preached that Jesus was the Messiah (and He surely was), and yet they have deceived the many; and the many have been deceived. Well, what about this Jesus Christ?

Christ As Creator

We read in Ephesians 3 verse 9 how God “*created ALL things BY Jesus Christ.*” In John 1 and verse 1 we read that “*In the beginning was the Word*” and in the 14th verse we read that that Word BECAME Jesus Christ – “*was made FLESH.*” That was about 1950 some years ago. This would be, well, about 1980 some years ago now. And He dwelt among us here on the earth, and yet by Him were **all things** made. God made all things BY Jesus Christ “*and without Him was not anything made that was made.*” So, in a sense, He was the Creator (although God is called the Creator).

You know, it’s a good deal like Henry Ford being the maker of the Ford motorcar. Early in January of 1914, before most of you were born, I was sent by a national magazine to Detroit to interview Henry Ford. In Detroit I saw Henry Ford between their skyscraper Administration Building and the gigantic factory, which at that time was out on Highland Avenue in Detroit. They later moved it to another location altogether. I saw Henry Ford standing in a business suit, but I looked through the doors in a breezeway between the office building and the gigantic factory. In the factory were hundreds, or actually thousands, of men in overalls; and they were the workmen. They were actually making the Ford cars. Henry Ford was making the Ford automobile BY those workmen. He paid them. He employed them. He told them what to do. They were working for him. They were doing it for him. They were making the cars, but they were using machinery and the power of electricity.

Now, that is a pretty good illustration of how God created all things by Jesus Christ. Christ is the workman, but He works by speaking. He was The **Word** who spoke, “*who spake and it was done.*” And the Holy Spirit was there to do whatever He said. But He spoke only as the Father had told Him to speak. So it was God Almighty, the one who later became His Father, who

was the real Creator after all. But by Jesus “*were all things made*” in heaven, in earth, all over the entire universe.

Government Based On Law

Now, the universe is governed by a government. You see, the universe has been populated by living entities that God has created. First were angels, and afterwards He created human beings. Of course He also created plants, fish, birds, animals, and then human beings. But God lives. God is busy. Jesus Christ said, “*My Father works and I work.*” God has been working, Jesus Christ is working; and God Almighty governs the entire universe. Actually Jesus Christ, as you read now in the first chapter of the book of Hebrews, “*sustains the entire universe by the word of His power.*”

But yet what is He doing just now? Well, as I said, God lives. The angels live. People live, and we must all live together with others. Angels had to live together with other angels. People have to live together with other people. We have to get along with other people. We have to accomplish things together. And so God established a government, and a government is based on a law.

There has to be a law, or a basic constitution of some sort, at the foundation of any government. You can’t have a government otherwise. And that law regulates the way people live with one another, the way they get along so that they will live together in peace and in cooperation and with mutual happiness and well being. And so they can produce or accomplish together and help one another in accomplishment, instead of preventing one another from accomplishing. So God is the author of government.

But the only government that Jesus Christ heads right now is in this Church. Did you know that? Yet He is the Creator of everything! ALL THINGS, the whole universe, was made by Him. God created everything by

Him. But Jesus Christ now is at the right hand of His Father on His Father's throne in heaven, and God Almighty the Father is really the ruler of the entire universe. But the only thing on this earth that Jesus Christ is ruling today is this Church – you and me and our brethren in other parts of the world assembling today on His holy Sabbath day. He is not ruling the rest of the world. The rest of the world has said, as His own said when Jesus came to them, *“We will not have this man to reign over us.”* That's what the first man ever created said.

Angels Created First

Now God placed, when He first created the earth, God placed a super archangel named Lucifer on the throne of the earth. God set a throne on the earth to rule this entire earth and He set an archangel called Lucifer. There were angels under him, and they populated the earth. That was long before man was ever created. But this Lucifer fell into a rebellion. He resented the fact that he only had this one little earth, which is really a speck in the entire great universe. The earth is a very small part of our solar system, and our solar system is only a part of our galaxy, and our galaxy is only one of many galaxies in the entire universe. And so this earth is really a very small spot in the whole universe.

He was jealous. He was envious. He thought he ought to rule a whole lot more. So he turned his angels under him into demons, and into rebellion, and into an army to invade heaven and try to knock God off the throne in heaven. Instead, Satan got knocked off there and sent right back down to the earth. As a result of that rebellion, this earth came into a state of decay because the angels here were given a government to rule them in what they were called to do. Of course, God's purpose was to create character in them so that they would really be productive – because God produces. God is Creator; and He wanted us to, in a sense, create or help in finishing His

Creation. He wanted the angels to. The earth was not really completed. It was all perfect as far as it went, but God hadn't completed it. He put the angels here to do the completing. He wanted to complete it through them. But instead of that they ruined what was already here, and it came into a state of desolation; and Lucifer became Satan, the Devil.

And so we read in Psalms 104 and verse 30, speaking of God, the psalmist was told to write this, or inspired to write:

*Psalm 104:30 Thou [God] sendest forth thy **spirit**, they are created; and thou RENEWEST the face of the earth.*

The earth had become desolate. It had become decayed, waste and empty, as a result of the sins of the angels (which you'll find recorded in II Peter 2 and verse 4). And now God had RENEWED the face of the earth for man. It was not the first creating of the earth at all. But the government of God in the meantime had become inactive, inoperative; it was not even operating at all. The government of God was gone from the earth, and here was an earth and no government on it.

God Is A Family

So you read in Genesis: "*In the beginning God*," Elohim, meaning more than one person, the same as you read in John 1 and verse 1 where the Word was one personage, and "*the Word was with God, and the Word [also] was God.*" Two persons, each one is God; more than one person forming God; like a family, more than one person forming one family. Like the word church – there are a lot of us here; but we're just one local body and Church here, and all of us all over the United States, there are many, many of us all over the world I should say. Many of us, but we are only one Church – only one body, not many churches.

And so God (Elohim) said, Genesis 1:26: “*Let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness.*” Now God was starting out to **reproduce Himself**. I don’t know if there had ever been any such thing as reproduction before that great recreation week of renewing the face of the earth (that is generally called the creation week) in the first chapter of Genesis. There is no record of any reproduction of any kind prior to that time. So now God was going to REPRODUCE HIMSELF. Angels had failed, and God was going to reproduce Himself through MAN. And God said in verse 26: “*Let us make man after our image, after our likeness.*”

Now He had made plants, then He had made birds and fishes and each reproducing after its own kind. And then He made land animals, cattle reproducing after the cattle kind (as you read in verses 24 and 25). And the other animals reproducing after their kind – elephants after the elephant kind; and dogs after the dog kind; and horses after the horse kind. But “*Let us make man after OUR kind.*” In other words, God said “Let Us make man after the GOD kind.” Man was made to be reproduced, or the instrument through which God would reproduce HIMSELF! But man had to reproduce himself. And the reproduction of man reproducing himself was only **a type** of God reproducing HIMSELF through MAN.

Human Reproduction As A Type

Now the way you are reproduced: every one of you started out as an ovum in your mother’s ovary, and that ovum had a life of only 28 days. It might have been a lot less, but it could not have been more than 28 days. And unless within that 28 days that ovum was fertilized by a male sperm from your father it would die. It only had a TEMPORARY existence. It didn’t have life. It was just going to exist temporarily; it wasn’t a really continuous life, but a temporary existence.

But every one of you once fertilized by a male father and a sperm cell from your human father, and you became then an embryo in your mother's womb. And after four months being nourished from food taken in by your mother, you had grown physically on physical food through the mother until you were beginning to assume a human form and shape. And then you were called a fetus after four months, and you had five more months of development. Arms and legs had to come out and then hands and fingers and toes and feet and a head and a brain; and then inside the body a heart and lungs and other organs functioning. A nervous system was developing. A bone structure had developed, and you were being fed on physical food. And after a total of nine months, five more months as a fetus, you were ready to be born.

Now that is a precise type of the way God is reproducing Himself. God had intended that man was like an ovum, or an egg cell; and man has only a temporary existence. God said, "Let Us make man after Our likeness," after Our kind! But He did NOT make man like God in the sense of having IMMORTAL LIFE inherent within himself. Man only had a TEMPORARY existence, not an eternal inherent life. So we read in the 2nd chapter of Genesis in verse 7 that:

Genesis 2:7 The Eternal {1} God formed man of the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and MAN [made of the dust of the ground] became a living soul.

Not an immortal soul; but what was made from the GROUND, just **matter**, became a soul. A soul is material, not spiritual; and a soul has only a TEMPORARY existence, a physiochemical existence. That's all.

Man Incomplete

Now then, we were born with a spirit. There is a **spirit in man**, and that

spirit imparts the power of intellect to the physical brain. But man was not made complete. God did not finish the earth when he formed the earth and put angels on it, and angels did not complete it. They destroyed what was here. They polluted it. Now He has made it all over for man, and man has done the same thing. Everything that man has been able to get his hands on in God's Creation man has polluted; he has perverted; he has ruined; he has practically torn down, demolished, destroyed. He has not built up. God intended man to improve this earth and beautify it. Man has not done that. Angels did not do it before us.

So the creation of man was not completed because God was REPRODUCING HIMSELF. Now the first man had only temporary life, but God offered him eternal life and made it available. We see in the 2nd chapter of Genesis in verses 16 and 17 that "*the Eternal {1} God ...*" I've gone over this so many, many times; and here I am once again because this is where it all starts. You can't understand what is going on today; you can't understand what God is going to do tomorrow and why, if you don't know what started back here because it is only a continuation of the process that started at that time. So here we go again.

Genesis 2:16 *The Eternal {1} God commanded the man saying, Of every tree of the garden [God placed him in the Garden of Eden after he was created.] thou mayest freely eat: (17) But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it; for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*

You see, he only had a temporary existence subject to death, subject to being dead, to dying. Like a clock wound up that is running down and will stop unless it is rewound. Like your automobile motor when it runs out of fuel, out of gas, it is going to run down and die; and it won't go any further without more fuel; and then without a spark to ignite the life again, and a spark plug, and so on.

Well, man had to make a choice. Now God had talked to the man on the first Sabbath. He created him on the end of the 6th day after creating animals on the first part of that 6th day, which we would have called a Friday today. On the Sabbath God talked to him. Now they had, let us call it a Bible Study that they had on that Friday night (just like we do today, we're following the same example). Only there wasn't any Bible printed, but God talked to the man and the woman that He had created that evening because it was the beginning of the Sabbath and sunset. And then He let them have a night of sleep. And then all day on the Sabbath God talked to them.

Now He couldn't give them a total education in just that one day, but He gave them all they needed at that time. And they had minds, and they had been created with minds that could receive knowledge. They could accumulate and acquire knowledge.

Materialistic Knowledge

Now in this Garden of Eden, where God put them, were two very symbolic and special trees in the midst of the garden. One was the tree of life, the other the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. And God said they could FREELY have all of the trees including the tree of life. God didn't beg them to take of the tree of life. He just said "you MAY freely have it, freely. BUT He said, "of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall **not**."

Now analyze those two trees. One was the tree of knowledge, but they were going to die if they took it. In other words, it was the tree of death then – wasn't it? The other was the tree of life. One was the tree of life; the other was the tree of death. One was the tree of knowledge; well so was the other tree of knowledge, but it was a tree of a different kind of knowledge.

Man was born with ability to acquire materialistic knowledge. Man could acquire knowledge that could come through his eye. The brain would

see through the eye. The brain would hear through the ear. The brain would feel through the sense of feel and touch, or the brain would smell or taste through the nose and through the mouth. Now man had no other way of acquiring any knowledge whatsoever. ALL knowledge had to come through one of those 5 channels, and ALL that could come through those 5 channels was materialistic knowledge.

Man could learn how to deal with things. He could cut trees that God had planted to grow out of the forest and make a desk like this. He could get metals out of the ground and make things like metal (like I am touching here). Man has learned to make a lot of things out of matter. But man did not know how to get along with other people. Man did not know how to have a contact with God; and God made man to have a contact with Him, because now God was going to reproduce Himself. I told you how he reproduced or how we have reproduced OURSELF.

Spiritual Knowledge

Now look at how God reproduces Himself. If Adam had taken of the tree of life ... The tree of life is open to you and me today; and the way we take of it, we first repent of course today, which Adam didn't need to do because he had never sinned yet. Adam didn't have to do anything but just take of that tree of life. But, if he had taken it, it is like our taking of the Holy Spirit today. God doesn't give us immortal life just with the snap of a finger or the clap of the hand. He first gives you the Holy Spirit, and you have to then grow in grace and the knowledge of Jesus Christ. And you have to endure until the end. And you have to overcome the wrong ways that you've been in person, for you've grown up living the wrong way. Now Adam had not done that yet, but we have.

But Adam would have received spiritual knowledge, and we receive

spiritual knowledge ONLY through the Spirit of God. In I Corinthians 2 you read, *“eye has not seen, ear has not heard, and it has not entered into the mind of man the things God has prepared for him.”* You can’t understand spiritual knowledge. You can’t have a contact with God. You don’t know how to get along with neighbors without the spiritual knowledge that will impart to you the knowledge of the law of God. Now the law of God has to do with spiritual principals of dealing with your human neighbors and your relationship with God.

The law of God doesn’t tell you how to build a desk out of wood. The law of God doesn’t tell you how to build an airplane or make an automobile. Man has been able to learn that just the way God made him. But God said, “If you take of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you will begin to acquire knowledge to do all these physical material things; but you will run out – your life will run out, your temporary existence. You will die.” But if he had taken of the tree of life, he would have received Life. He would have received it as we do today. First by the Holy Spirit, which would have opened his mind to spiritual knowledge. He would have had knowledge to have a contact with God and to have a right relationship of cooperation with his neighbor. He would have come to know the law of God.

And the law of God is given to us, as I said a while ago, like the law was given to angels – the government of God to regulate our lives one with another, that we work TOGETHER instead of apart. That we cooperate together and achieve more, and that we grow more like God and develop Godly character.

Adam’s Choice

Now Adam had to make a choice; and so God was supposed to be the leader over his life, and the wife was supposed to be a help to her husband.

But she was like modern women today. She said, “Oh, I want to wear the pants. I am going to look out for myself. I am going to use my own head.” So, as we begin to read now in the 3rd chapter of Genesis {1}, (I am sorry I have to use a magnifying glass even with large print Bibles. My eyes are getting worse, but I am still going on doing the best I can.)

Genesis 3:1 Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field ...

The serpent – you’ll read, and I’m going to turn to it I think a little later anyway, in Revelation 12 and verse 9: that old serpent called Satan, the Devil. In other words, the former archangel Lucifer was turned into a devil, and his name is Satan, and he now appeared in the form of a serpent. Not that he is a serpent, but he was speaking in and through the serpent.

Genesis 3:1 Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the Eternal {1} God had made. And he said unto the woman, [He got to the woman. He knew the woman would like to be the leader, so he went to her; and he is tempting women today with the ERA. I hope you women are not part of it – unless you want to follow the way of Satan instead of the way of God. “And he said to the woman:”] Yea, hath God said, ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?

In other words, didn’t God hold something back? “God wasn’t quite fair, was He? He didn’t give you everything. He should have given you every tree in that garden.” Well, the woman answered unto the serpent:

*Genesis 3:2-6 ... we may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: (3) But of the fruit of the tree (which) is in the midst of the garden [meaning the tree of the knowledge of good and evil], God hath said Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it lest ye die. (4) And the serpent said unto the woman, **Ye shall not surely die:** (5) For God [“God knows better than that. God has lied to you.” He began to cause her to distrust God, so she wouldn’t believe*

what God said. **God said YOU WILL DIE.** Satan says, “God’s a liar. God knew better than that.” For God;] *doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. (6) And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food ...* [Now she used the sense of sight. She didn’t have the sense of the Spirit of God. She was using physical senses to see physical things; and that the tree was good for food, material and physical, that] *it was pleasant to the eye* [the sense of sight], *and a tree to be desired to make one wise* [that appealed to her intellectual vanity; and she had a mind, she was just beginning to realize that fact], *she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.*

And so Adam took of it with her. When a wife leads into the wrong way; and, I tell you, a wife ... I remember when I was first married, when I was 25 years old. My wife said some days after our marriage (and I don’t remember if it was 3 or 4 days or a couple of weeks now) but she said; “They say a husband is just whatever his wife makes him.” She said, “Well, just you watch me make mine.” So she went to work on me, and she had something to do with my conversion and the very fact that I am sitting up here before all of you and speaking to you and giving you the truth of God that has been revealed to me ever since. But I am glad she was a helper in bringing me **toward** God instead of like Eve, the first woman, in leading her husband **away from** God. Quite a difference!

Satan Still On The Throne

So now the woman took of the fruit of the tree, and Adam did. That left Satan still on the throne of the earth. Now IF Adam had taken the tree of life he would have received God’s law and the **government** of God, the **knowledge** of the government of God; and he could have ruled the government of God and RE-ESTABLISHED the government of God on earth

and ...

[** *Tape skips at 30:45.*]**ruling the whole earth**, and he has been doing that now for 6,000 years. He's STILL THERE today. It left Satan on the throne of the whole earth, ruling the whole world.

Adam had children. You don't read how many, but he had "*sons and daughters.*" We do read of Cain and Abel, and we read of Seth, and we read of the fact that he had other sons and daughters. And then Seth had children. He had very many. We don't know how many. But we know that after about 1,500 years there must have been many millions of people on the face of the earth, and they were having a population explosion that was to the time of Noah and the Flood.

So now Satan is still on that throne. You read in Revelation 12 and verse in 9:

Revelation 12:9 *And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent [the same serpent that tempted Eve, that old serpent] called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth ad his angels were cast out with him.*

The angels that had sinned, as you read in II Pet. 3 verse 4; and they became demons. But now, as you read in Genesis 3 verses 20 to 24 (I won't go back to read that.), but God ... After Adam had made his decision and had rejected the tree of life and had taken the tree of death, you might say – of taking to **himself** the knowledge, instead of letting God reveal revealed knowledge, spiritual knowledge. And he could only take to himself physical knowledge. God then shut up the tree of life, and He SHUT IT UP COMPLETELY. And mankind from that time on, mankind in general, had NO ACCESS to immortal life or to the tree of life. And the tree of life comes through the Holy Spirit.

Christ The First Begotten

Now we want to jump on a little further down, coming into our time now. Now you read in Isaiah the 7th chapter and in verse 14 a prophecy. This goes back long before the time of Christ, in the days of Israel. God did call His nation, Israel; but He never gave them the Holy Spirit. It was still shut up. The tree of life was shut up, and ancient Israel did not have the Holy Spirit. They did have the law of God, but it is a **spiritual** law; and their natural, carnal, physical minds could not understand the spiritual law without the Spirit of God. And so one of their prophets, Isaiah, was inspired to write this – Isaiah 7 verse 14:

Isaiah 7:14 Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son and shall call his name Immanuel.

Now we find that quoted again in the New Testament where it says that Immanuel being interpreted means GOD WITH US – God in human form, God born as a human being, God as begotten. I mean a Son begotten by God of a human virgin. And [He] was the ONLY begotten Son of God, the only one EVER begotten to be born as a human begotten of God.

Now, we can be begotten of God; but not to be born as a human. We've already been born as a human. We can be begotten of God to have a SPIRITUAL birth and born **immortal** as God beings, but not to be born as a human being. In that sense Jesus was the only one, the ONLY begotten of God in that sense. So, now also, let's turn a page or two here to the 9th chapter of Isaiah and beginning with verse 6. *Isaiah 9:6-7 For unto us [That's ancient Israel.] a child is born, unto us a son is given; and the GOVERNMENT shall be upon his shoulder [Now I'm talking about **government**. The government was on the earth. It was given to this archangel Lucifer. He rebelled. The government ceased. Now a Son could be born to become a King. The government could be on His shoulder]; and his*

name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The almighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. (7) Of the increase of his GOVERNMENT [a ruler to govern with laws and with government; shall be of His government] and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David [You see, it is talking about a throne now. The throne of David], and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this.

So now I'd like you to turn over to I Peter, the first chapter and the 19th and 20th verses.

***I Peter 1:19-20** But with the precious blood of Christ, as (of) a lamb without blemish and without spot: (20) Who verily was **foreordained** before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you.*

In other words, God was or Jesus was the Lamb of God slain from the foundation of the world. He was foreordained. Now man had sinned. God was going to reproduce Himself **through** man, and the sentence on man was **death**; and, once man had sinned, how was God going to reproduce Himself through man under the penalty of DEATH? Well, He had foreordained that the Word would be begotten in the womb of a human mother and be born as a human being, subject to death. But He would also be the Son of God. God was His Father. Mary was His Mother; so He was human, so He could die. But He was also God, so that He had the mind of God. He had the **SPIRIT** of God **FROM BIRTH!** He didn't have to receive the Spirit of God. He already had the Spirit of God from birth.

Now some ask the question: then did He know everything when he was six months old? No, because He was born as a baby; and the knowledge ... His brain had to develop. But as His brain developed, it received the spiritual knowledge and gradually began to remember everything that He had had

from all eternity with God the Father. But He had to grow to maturity.

That's why, when He was only 12 years old, He was able to confound the wisest men at that time in Judea in the Temple in Jerusalem, when He was only a little boy 12 years old. He didn't know it all yet. He was growing up. His brain was developing. He was a **physical** being, remember. But He also had the Holy Spirit of God; and, by the time He was adult, He had the full knowledge. He talked in prayer to God about the glory He had had with God before the world was, and He remembered all of those things by that time. It all came back to Him.

Brethren, we will remember in the next life all of things that have happened in this life. But we then will be born of God – mature, and not as a child having to grow up. Jesus was born as a child and had to grow up. So we will have one thing a little better than that at our time.

Christ Qualified To Sit On The Throne

So now I want you to notice another scripture I've gone through time and time again: I Corinthians 15 and verse 22.

***I Corinthians 15:22** For as in Adam ALL die ...*

Because of Adam's sin, he brought death on himself; and now Adam's sons began to sin before they were even full-grown. WHY DID NOT GOD TAKE A SON OF ADAM (Let's say Seth. Or let's say Abel.), and why did He not then say, "You take of the tree of life"? Because he had already sinned before he became full grown, before he was old enough to receive God's Spirit. Before his mind was mature, he had already sinned and brought the death penalty on himself; and their sons had. Noah had, Abraham had, everybody had.

Abraham did obey God; but he had disobeyed first, and that's why

Abraham, Isaac and Jacob all died not having received the promises. They couldn't receive the promises until after Christ had come and until the rest of us could share it with them, as you read in the book of Hebrews and in the 11th chapter, the Faith chapter of Hebrews. So now:

***1 Corinthians 15:22** For as in Adam **all** die, even so in Christ shall **all** be made alive.*

Now God had fixed this. God was going to reproduce Himself THROUGH MAN. And though men sinned and brought upon himself the penalty of death, God was **YET** going to save Himself through MAN; and He was going to do it by sending JESUS CHRIST to be BORN of a human woman. And Jesus Christ had to meet Satan and overcome him and QUALIFY TO SIT ON THAT THRONE OF THE **EARTH**. That's what He had to do.

[** *Gap in tape at 41:38.*]

“I sentence you to DEATH.” And I can see about that time Cain beginning to whimper and beginning to say, “Well, your Honor, I just throw myself on the mercy of the court. I see there is no other hope for me.” And then the Judge, Jesus, will say; “Well now, you throw yourself on the mercy of the court. It happens that this court does have mercy as great toward you and toward all people as the heavens are high above the earth. And, I tell you, long after you had sinned and long after you died, I came in human form, and I lived without sin, and I didn't incur the penalty of death like you did. **BUT I TOOK YOUR PENALTY ON MYSELF AND I PAID IT FOR YOU.** And your penalty has already been paid, **if** you want to repent and **if** you want to turn around and go the other way and from now on live a different way in this life.

That'll be a life of resurrection in the judgment. Now we are going to celebrate that on the final day of the coming Feast of Tabernacles. That is,

it'll be really after the Feast of Tabernacles. It's the Last Day, which is really not part of the Feast but is a day and a separate feast in itself.

So God appointed that there would come a time of Christ to bear the sins of the many and that there would come a time of JUDGMENT of ALL people. But judgment not only means being brought to account for what you did and being sentenced, as they will, to death – eternal death. That will be the 2nd death for them. But also they are going to find out that Christ did die and that His shed blood paid the penalty that they incurred. And for the first time they will know that, and they will have a chance to then receive the tree of life that Adam rejected.

Holy Spirit Given To The Church

All right. Now when Jesus came, you will notice that He said, in Matthew 16 and verse 18, He said "*I will build my church.*" Jesus came to start a Church. Now this Church was the first one to receive God's Holy Spirit to begin the fulfillment of a prophecy in Joel – that the prophet Joel had said back in Joel 2 and verse 28.

***Joel 2:28* And it shall come to pass afterward [God says] that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh.**

Now He **SHUT UP** His Spirit after Adam sinned. He **SHUT UP** the Holy Spirit, and NO MAN had been able to RECEIVE the Holy Spirit. Christ was **BORN** with the Holy Spirit! But until this time, except the prophets who received it out of due time, beginning with Abraham, no man had ever received the Holy Spirit. God called ancient Israel, but they did not receive the Holy Spirit. They were not impregnated with immortal life. They were not begotten of God. Except for their prophets, none of them will come up in the resurrection to eternal life at the 2nd coming of Christ, not any of them.

But now the time will come when God will begin to pour out His Spirit on **ALL HUMANITY**, but He had shut it up at Adam's time from all humanity. Now Christ said, "*I will build my church.*" And to those in the Church **after** Christ had gone to the cross, and had died and paid the penalty in our stead – those that God had called specially at that time – were able to come and receive the Holy Spirit of God. And on the day of Pentecost, 120 received the Holy Spirit of God; and that's the first time the Holy Spirit had been poured out on a group of people: The first time in the history of mankind that the Holy Spirit had been poured out on a **group** of people.

And Christ had already ascended up to heaven as the High Priest for us. He had to do that so that some of us could be saved. Well, Christ could have taken over the reins of government right then and there. But He wanted help in ruling when all of the world would be saved, and He wanted to call a number of us so we can be kings and priests with Him, ruling with Him on His throne at that time.

But now I want you to notice something that Jesus said in John 6:44. (Well, if I don't turn to it, I'll quote it anyway; because I know it.)

John 6:44 *No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him.*

You see, Jesus was not at that time opening up the Holy Spirit to all flesh, not at all, **ONLY TO THE FIRSTFRUITS**. That is why we celebrated the day of Pentecost some few months ago now, in the summer. Pentecost shows that we are only the **FIRSTFRUITS** of God's salvation. God has **NOT Poured Out** His Spirit on all flesh **YET**. But He **began** with a type of people that are a type of all the rest of humanity; and the Holy Spirit was poured out on those 120 on that Day of Pentecost.

Now then, that same day Peter preached a sermon. He said, "What you see here today is what Joel prophesied." I just read it to you, that the time will

come when God will pour out His Spirit on all flesh. Now this wasn't "all flesh" yet, but this was the beginning of the group. And many said to Peter, "What shall WE do?" And Peter said, "REPENT." Repent of everything you have done. Repentance is toward God, and you have sinned. God is the Lawgiver, and you have cut yourself off from God. "*Repent and be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the REMISSION of SINS.*" That will remit your sins, and you will be reconciled to God. You cut yourself off from God by sin. But you'll be reconciled to God through Christ, and through your faith and belief in Christ; and then YOU will receive the Holy Spirit.

And, you know, that very Day of Pentecost, over 1,950 years ago, there were about 3,000 who received the Holy Spirit and were baptized that same day. And so now there are over 3,000 in the Church, the very day the Church was born and started. But 3,000 was a small number compared to all the people on earth at that time.

Now, it was probably the very next day or just a few days later (probably the very next day), Peter and John were at the Beautiful Gate of the Temple; and there was a cripple, and Peter healed him. And a lot of people came around, because this man had been a cripple from birth and everybody knew him. And everybody came around because he leaped up and was able to jump, and leap, and walk immediately. He didn't have to learn to walk even. It was a real miracle! And Peter preached a sermon; and there were about 2,000 more converted by that, that very next day.

Repentance And Overcoming Essential

But then the persecution began to set in; and inside of 20 years false prophets had come, and really the true Church had to go into hiding by 70 AD. And Satan still was on the throne and ruling, and persecuting the Church. But of those that God was calling (He is not calling but a few now.)

that few had to overcome Satan and Satan's world. Now, let me tell you, that is a very difficult thing; and I wonder how many of you are really overcoming this world. I think YOU are NOT overcoming the world AS MUCH AS YOU **THINK YOU ARE**. Listen to me, brethren: I MEAN YOU!

The Protestant churches teach that you just believe in Christ, and that's all you have to do. **That is not all you have to do!** You have to REPENT, you have to OVERCOME, you have to GROW IN GRACE AND KNOWLEDGE, and you have to ENDURE unto the end; and so many don't do that.

I received statistics on this Church the other day, and about one-third of all baptized and grown members of this Church turn away and are lost. They may endure for a few days. They may endure for even a few years, but about one-third leaves. And, I tell you, I pick up an Ambassador College Envoy (the year book), and I see the pictures of students of 10 years ago, of 7 years ago, of 15, 20 years ago; and I almost have heart failure. My heart almost dropped when I see the faces of so many and think they were here. They came to Ambassador College. They had the truth. Some of them received the truth. In fact, most of them did; but they didn't endure. They fell away. They're not with us any longer. Some are really lost. Some are really lost.

Here is a man who came through Ambassador College, became one of the ministers in the Church, and then he was just overcome by alcohol. Now Jesus drank wine, but Jesus only drank a little; and God and Jesus teach temperance in all things. If you can't drink just a little, don't drink at all! But this man did drink all. He drank too much. Pretty soon he became an alcoholic. Then he took up cigarette smoking again. He thought maybe that would help him quit the alcohol; and it didn't, so he was doing both.

A minister went to see him after he had left the Work; and he just blew smoke right in the minister's face, used profanity, dirty language. And not too

long ago he wrote me a letter appealing for money because he was up against it and wouldn't I help him? And all these people like that, they say, "Well, I served you for so many years; and I served you faithfully." And so they think now I ought to pay them. Well, you know, they forget: they WERE paid. They got a salary; and they had a GOOD salary, and they lived very well. This particular man, we built a fine new home for him. He didn't appreciate it.

Now his wife is very sick. Well, we had to find out even if he was lying or telling the truth. I said, "We will pay the wife's hospital bills, doctor bills, and everything. But we will not contribute money to go out and buy more booze and just keep drinking from morning till night, and even getting up and drinking more in the middle of the night if you wake up so you can go back to sleep.

Ah, my heart just drops when I think of some people that I have loved so dearly and been so CLOSE to; and they've just let Satan pull them out and the lust of the flesh, the desire of material things. Their lives are a wreck. Can they ever be saved?

What about you people? How long are you going to endure? Of all of you here, according to the statistics so far, one-third of you won't be here 10 years from now. **I MEAN YOU!** I'm not here to entertain you. I am here to try to help **SAVE YOU, AND BRING YOU INTO GLORY AND INTO HAPPINESS, AND IMMORTAL ETERNAL LIFE, AND GREAT ACCOMPLISHMENT,** and wonderful happiness and joy. That's what I want for all of you. That's what I pray for every day. I pray for all of you, and I pray for people like that. But, you know, just my prayers can't save everybody.

The man I just talked about, he has his part to do. I have my part to do. I know God will give me all the help in the world, and He does. I have to ask

God for help every time I come out here to speak to you, and He does help me. This is not just a hunk of human junk speaking to you. It is Christ speaking in me and through me. Me – I am nothing. But I can give myself to Christ, and He can use me. And you can give yourself to Him, and He can use you in whatever way He wants to use you. I don't know what way He will use you. I didn't know what way He was going to use me when I first gave myself to Him 55 years ago. But that's the way it is.

We Will Rule With Christ

Now, He has called some; and **we** have to overcome Satan, and **we** have to overcome the world going Satan's way. **We** have to come out from among those people and the world and **BE SEPARATE. THAT'S BABYLON! "COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM"** God says; and "**BE SEPARATE**, saith the Lord." Now I want you to notice what God has said to the CHURCH, and this is for **us** in the CHURCH.

Revelation 3:21 To him [that's in the Church] that overcometh will I grant to SIT WITH ME ON MY THRONE, (even) as I also overcame, and am [NOW] set down with my Father ... [God on the throne of the whole universe.]

Jesus is up there with His Father now – the Head of the Church and the High Priest over us; and He is using me as a human instrument. But He is the main Head of this Church (or the real Head), the only real Head of the Church. But He says **we** can reign and rule. And that's why He went to heaven and gave this other almost 2,000 more years now is to call some of us out so we can have more that will be CHANGED and where God will have reproduced Himself. And **WE** will be **BORN OF GOD until we BE God. WE OURSELVES** will be **GOD** – as much "God" as Jesus is, as much "God" as the Father is. **JESUS IS A SON OF GOD BY A RESURRECTION**

FROM THE DEAD, you read in Romans 1 verses 1, 2 and so on; and we can be in the same way.

He is the first born of many brethren. Oh, I want you to be one of those brethren, born with Him; and some of us are not going to be. Some of you are not going to be. **DO YOU COME HERE JUST TO BE ENTERTAINED AND AMUSED BY ME?** I am not an entertainer, and I am not here to entertain; but I am here to explain. I am here to plead. But you have already made the decision and given yourself over to Christ.

Well now, very soon now, it's very soon now we're going to find that Christ will come again. Now Tuesday is the day – the annual holy day – the Feast of Trumpets; and that pictures to us the 2nd coming of Christ. Why is Christ coming? Christ was born to be a King. Christ was born to sit on a **THRONE! NOT JUST BORN AS A SAVIOUR SO THAT IF YOU SAY “I RECEIVE CHRIST. I’LL GO TO HEAVEN.” HE WAS BORN TO GROW UP AND TO CONQUER SATAN, AND TO DIE FOR YOU AND FOR ME, AND TO WORK AS OUR HIGH PRIEST THESE 1950 YEARS.** And to help us get into that Kingdom, and to rule with him; and so **WE** shall be kings and priests, and we shall **RULE and REIGN ON THE EARTH.**

And now we read in Revelation 11 and verse 15, the time will soon come that is pictured by the day, the Feast of Trumpets {2} will be next Tuesday beginning tomorrow night, Monday night I should say:

Revelation 11:15 The kingdoms of this world ... [That's all the governments of this world. Now I know many of the kings and the prime ministers and the presidents that are sitting on those thrones, and the one emperor. There were two emperors. One of those was taken captive, his government overthrown, and he died; but I knew him very well. Our birthdays are only 8 days apart. One of the last things he did was to send me congratulations on my 82nd birthday. He was also 82 at the time, but he

didn't live to be 83. He was taken captive, and he died. I personally think they probably put him to death. But the kingdoms of this world will] (*are*) *become the kingdoms of our Lord and (of) his Christ; and he [Christ] shall reign forever and ever.*

Christ's Wife Will Be Ready

Then we can be kings and priests and reign with Him ON THE EARTH. Not in heaven, on the earth. Now then we come on to, a little later, let me see, yes it is later in this same chapter. No, it's the 19th chapter; the 19th chapter and verses 6 and 7.

Revelation 19:6,7 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, ALLELUIA: FOR THE LORD GOD OMNIPOTENT REIGNETH. [That's what we are going to celebrate next Tuesday.] (7) Let us be glad and rejoice and give honour to him; for the marriage of the Lamb is come and his WIFE hath made herself ready.

Brethren, you are that wife. Are you going to be ready? **THE WIFE WILL BE READY. THE CHURCH AS A WHOLE WILL BE READY!** But how many are going to be IN the Church at that time? HOW MANY MORE OF YOU ARE GOING TO SLIP AWAY? HOW MANY OF YOU ARE GOING TO LET THIS AND THAT AND THE OTHER THING IN THE WORLD TEMPT YOU AWAY, OR YOU LOSE INTEREST, OR YOU NEGLECT PRAYER? Why is it that this Church wasn't even more than one-third filled, I mean this auditorium wasn't one-third filled, until I came back here two years ago, or three years ago? And now we are all filled.

Do you just come for a show? Do you just come to be **entertained and amused?** **BRETHREN, YOUR ETERNAL LIFE IS AT STAKE!** All I can do is try to THUNDER IT AT YOU. BUT I CAN'T TAKE HOLD OF YOU AND MAKE YOU DO IT. ONLY YOU can do that, yourselves. But I can

tell you. And I'm telling you. And I mean it! I pray for you. I tell you, I do all I can do. I can't do any more. Now the 19th chapter of Revelation:

Revelation 19:6 *And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude*

...

Let's see, "and His wife ..." Oh, I already read that. "His wife hath made herself ready." And then in verse 16 we read that Christ, when He comes, " ... hath on his vesture and on his thigh a **name** written, *KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.*" He is going to rule, and then what is going to happen? The 20th chapter, on the same page in my Bible:

Revelation 20:1-3 *And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain {3} in his hand. (2) And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. (3) And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, until the thousand years [are finished]*

Now, he'll be released just a short time after that; and then he'll be put away forever, before the Great White Throne Judgment. Satan then will be put away. He is on the throne of the whole earth. HE IS RULING.

Sitting On Thrones, Ruling

I talk to the heads of governments all over the nation. Now just yesterday I had a talk with President Sadat's right-hand man, the 2nd man in the government of Egypt; and he said that he would very gladly arrange a meeting with President Sadat again. I fully expect to be over there in the middle of November, right after the Feast of Tabernacles. That is, probably a couple of weeks after.

And also arrangements are being made for another meeting with King

Hussein, and also with Menachem Begin if he is still Prime Minister in Israel at that time. I think there is to be an election between now and then, and he may not even be running this time. I don't know. But I will see whoever is the Prime Minister because, if he is not the Prime Minister, I already know the man who will be in any event; and they are very good friends of mine.

But I want to renew acquaintances with King Hussein at this time, because this Church is going to have to flee to a place of safety. Now I don't know if it is Petra. I don't know that at all. I just know that some things in the Bible indicate it might be that, and I don't know of any other place that is indicated; but I don't know that that's the place at all. But, just in case, King Hussein is in charge of it; and I'd like to be in his acquaintance for your sakes, brethren. And it's all being arranged. Now I expect to meet the King of Saudi Arabia on this trip, beside our brethren over in England again; and I will be going over there right after the Feast of Tabernacles.

Now, as I said, I am expecting to go down (Monday morning, we'll leave here) to Nashville to be with our brethren in Nashville for the Feast of Trumpets. And then on the following Sabbath, God willing, I hope to be in Minneapolis for a combined service with a number of our brethren up there. (Let me see: I think I have everything here in my pocket if I can find it, a little note I have here.) The Day of Atonement will be Thursday, October the 8th; and I expect to be here.

The following Sabbath nearly everybody will be traveling to a Feast, so I will just be here. There are no other places I can talk to very many people anyway. And then in the Feast I expect to be here the first and the last day especially; and the Sabbath in the middle of the Feast over at Big Sandy at the Tabernacle over there, where there will also be a great many people. And after that, well after the Feast (It'll be a week or two, a couple of weeks or more.) then we will go back over to Europe again. But that is the schedule.

But now we are going to celebrate the 2nd coming of Christ next Tuesday. I have tried to explain to you why He is coming. He's coming to sit on the throne of the earth, over all nations. I talk with the heads of governments; and I think that no other man has talked with as many of them as I have in their own offices, where they rule and reign. Now the throne on which they rule today is merely the office in a building where they sit and do their work, and that's where I meet them. I think the President of the United States has met a lot more than I have because they meet as a certain group where they all meet together. But I don't think any man has met more than I have, going to them on their own throne in their own private office and had a private meeting with them in their own office.

But, brethren, I find that they are just filled with troubles; and they are troubles they cannot solve. And they are not going to RULE very much longer. Christ is going to come and rule over ALL THE NATIONS of the earth and solve these problems and these troubles. But He has called **you** and **me** to be **KINGS** and **PRIESTS** with Him and **UNDER** Him, and **HELP** Him and the rulers. And **WE'LL BE THE RULERS, AND WE'RE GOING TO TEACH** these rulers.

I can't teach the kings on the earth now. I'm not trying to convert them. I go to them to get what little message I can. But the main thing is to open the door so I can speak to the people under them and so we can get the message into those countries. And we are getting the message into more and more countries all the time. We are planning now to get the message into Spain. We are planning now to get the message into Italy, in the Italian language. We've been working on that this week. God is working in this Work, as He has never worked in any work in 1900 years, right now.

But, brethren, finally I want you to leave here this afternoon thinking: **Are you going to endure?** How much time do you spend in **prayer**? Do you spend anywhere near as much time in prayer as you do on television? Do you

spend as much time in prayer as you do in entertainment and just the things to amuse you and fill in your time that you like to do? You better ask yourself some of these questions or some day you'll wish you had.

Did I say all I can do? I can shout at you. I can tell you. I can plead with you. I can pray for you, and I do. I'm just like you: I have to endure to the end too. I have to meet temptation. My life has been threatened. I have been threatened with this, that, and the other thing. There are people who would like to destroy me right now. It's not easy, but I had to count the cost before I gave myself to Jesus Christ. I am having to pay the price! I knew I would. And you have to pay the price. Are you willing?

Jesus said of Himself He could do **nothing!** If He hadn't PRAYED so continually to the Father, He could never have endured. Even Christ – and He had the Holy Spirit, He was GOD (as well as man). But also He was man, and He was tempted in all points like we are. I tell you, not one of you prays anywhere near as much as Jesus did, and you need it more than He did. You better think it over, and I hope this has helped more than an entertainment afternoon. Thank you very much, brethren – all of you.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong stumbled over which chapter he was reading from.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said Atonement, but he meant Trumpets.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong used the word seal, but the original says chain.

Day of Atonement

Sermon (October 8, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Day of Atonement.....	752	767
<u>War In Heaven</u>	753	<u>“I Will Build My Church”</u>	768
<u>Kingdom of God – Is the Family of God</u>	761	<u>We are Held Accountable</u>	770
<u>The Development of Character</u>	763	<u>Christ Born to Be King</u>	772
<u>Lamb Slain From Foundation of World</u>	765	<u>What Are We Doing With the Knowledge We</u>	
<u>Old Testament Prophets Wrote For Us Today</u>		<u>Have?</u>	775

Brethren, the day before yesterday, in the matter of a moment, world history suddenly changed. The assassination of President Anwar Sadat of Egypt followed somewhat closely on the heels of the attempted assassination of President Ronald Reagan of the United States and Pope John Paul II. How many more assassinations are going to follow? For the first time in world history, the weapons of mass destruction now exists that can annihilate every one of us. Can erase all humanity, all human life from off the face of this planet earth. I don't think we realize that, I don't think we take that seriously. We hear it, 'yeah, just something to talk about.' It isn't real. Well, I will tell you, the assassination of President Sadat was real.

Less than a year ago, I sat next to him and talked to him for quite a little while. I told him about the Kingdom of God. I told him about the Law of God and the way of life. He sat there smoking his pipe and nodding, agreeing with what I said. President Sadat had a different name for the same God. He used the name Allah and when I said that the God that you recognize, Allah is the same that we recognize as God he nodded, 'Yes'. Now this thing was real so far as he is concerned and it happened within about a month of the time I expected to sit there in the Giza Palace in Cairo speaking to him again.

Already had the trip planned, already had talked to his chief minister, that is the chief advisor, who is the chairman of the national council. And is the closest man to the President, but not in the political sense, he will not succeed him in office, Dr Hatem.

But these things ought to wake us up and ought to cause us to realize what kind of a situation we are in now. Now watching world events as we have been doing, I have been right on top of it all of the time watching it very, very closely. It would seem for the last fifteen years that God has been holding up the progress of events in the world, that they had not continued to gain momentum quite as fast as they had prior to that time although they had continued.

War In Heaven

But now all of a sudden it seems that we have hit the time that you read of here in the twelfth chapter of the book of Revelation and beginning with verse seven. John was writing here the things that were revealed to him on the Isle of Patmos. He was seeing things that are now in our time shortly to come to pass. His vision was focused in the time. Most of the events speaking in the present tense are events that were occurring along about the time of 1934 and 1935 and six along in those years. Shortly after the start of this era of the Church of God which started in 1933. Here is one of the things shortly to come to pass. It speaks of it as if it already had happened in the past tense.

And there was war in heaven, Michael the arch angel and his angels fought against the Dragon; and the Dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great Dragon was cast out, that old serpent called the Devil and Satan which deceiveth the whole world...

Brethren I wonder if you realize, that means you and it means me. We

have been deceived. Can you realize that? He deceived you. He deceived me. God has opened our eyes to that deception. I hope he's opened all of our eyes. I hope we're not still blinded. But the god of this world has blinded the eyes of the world lest they see the true gospel of Christ. Anyway.

Which deceiveth the whole world he was cast out into the earth and his angels, who are now demons, were cast out with him. And the demons are in the earth and have been now for some time. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation. People think that salvation comes when they say, 'I receive Christ. I get Christ. I appropriate Christ.' They are not getting salvation at that time. Jesus Christ said He that shall endure to the end, the same shall be saved.

You're not saved now. You're only begotten. Salvation comes with the second coming of Christ to those who have been begotten. No one is born again until the time of the resurrection. And oh how deceived this world is about things of that sort. How deceived they are.

I heard a loud voice from heaven, saying, Now is come salvation and strength and the Kingdom of our God. (Government) The Kingdom of our God and the power of his Christ. They don't talk about the power of Christ in the religions of this world. They picture him as a weakling, a sissy, just a weak kind of a man who was perhaps a sort of a hippy of some kind. But this speaks of the power of his Christ.

For the accuser of our brethren has been cast down which accused them before God day and night.

And they overcame him with the blood of the Lamb and with the word of their testimony; That's the word of our own testimony, that we testify. And they loved not their lives unto death. That doesn't mean they were all killed.

Anwar Sadat loved not his life to death that is he was willing to risk it

for what he saw to be peace. He didn't have the understanding and the truth that you and I have. He had only what he had gained through the Koran and the Muslim religion. But as far as he saw, he wanted peace and he did risk his life and he made that trip in 1977 to declare peace instead of declaring war in visiting the Knesset in Jerusalem and speaking with and giving forth the hand of peace before the Israelis in Jerusalem. He not only risked his life, he gave it the day before yesterday. I sent a telegram to that effect also to his widow, the first lady, Mrs Sadat.

And when the Dragon saw that he was cast into the earth, he persecuted the woman which had brought forth the man child. And to the woman... now, he has already started that and that has happened to us, the Church, the true Church of God. And he usually persecutes through government, the governments of this world. I'm going to say more about that in just a moment. To the woman... now we are getting into what is just ahead of us now, were given the two wings of a great eagle that she might fly into the wilderness unto her place where she shall be nourished for a time, times and half a time. That is a period of three and a half years. from the face of the serpent. This church will be protected. Now there is a remnant church to follow. We are the Philadelphia era and the last remnant church is to follow us, the Church of Laodicea.

Why Are We Here Today?

Now brethren why are we here today? This time of crisis in the world. We're here because God has commanded us here. It's like He has a refresher course going every year. Now we have a refresher course going here on campus for the ministers of this Church. And I think it is one of the finest things that have ever happened to the ministry of the Church of God. Before that we had had Ministerial Conferences calling all of the men here and was more of a social gathering or something, and it did not bear fruit. But now we

are calling a smaller number at a time, 35, 45 or 50 ministers and their wives. And they are here for a refresher course and they are absolutely enthusiastic about it. Now, we are going to have that refresher course about every year and a half or so. It will start all over again the first of the year and that's almost a year and a half before it started the first time. So the ones that will be coming here, probably in January, will be those who did come about a year and a half or so ago. Not the ones who most recently came. But God gives us a refresher course every year beginning with the Passover in the spring and on through all of these Holy Days to remind us once again of the same thing over and over and over, lest we ever forget it.

Now we are here today to realise something that I want to bring to you. Ten days ago we observed the Feast of Trumpets. I observed them to a large gathering, actually a larger gathering than I see before me here, but I'm not sure that it's larger than we have here today because we're gathering in about three of four auditoriums here today. And others are hearing and I hope they're also seeing a televised screen or a larger motion picture screen, precisely what you're seeing here. But we observed the Feast of Trumpets celebrating the second coming of Christ and today we are here to celebrate an event following that. Christ is coming as the King of kings and the Lord of lords. But there has been something wrong with this world. Now I want to go back to the beginning and show you what it is. Why it is and what today really means in the lives of all of us

Well, once again we have to begin at the beginning in Genesis one and verse one. In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. And it should be plural. It is in all translations but the King James and was in the original writing. Ehim is a uni-plural, meaning more than one person, but only one God. God is a Family. God is the Family that is the Creator of the universe. And as Creator, God is the Ruler over the universe He has created. Now God created angels, after he had created man.

And so we turn to Job the thirty-eighth chapter and you'll notice at the beginning of the first verse. God was speaking to Job. Job was perhaps the most righteous man on earth at the time. Also he was the wealthiest man, at least in that part of the world. A very successful man. Apparently he had just completed the building of the Great Pyramid, the greatest building on earth, and in some respects, still the greatest building on the face of the earth. Probably contains more actual material that will weigh more than any other building on the face of the earth today. It was the tallest building in the world until the Woolworth Tower in New York was built. And that was somewhat new when I first visited New York in 1920 and went up to the top of the Woolworth Tower. That was before the taller building, the Empire State building. It had not been yet built yet at that time. But God was speaking to Job who was self-righteous. He was pretty good and he knew it and he was proud of himself. He was very righteous.

Then the Eternal answered Job out of a whirlwind, and He said...Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? He'd laid the foundations of the Great Pyramid. God showed him that He had laid the foundations of the whole earth! So much greater than just the Great Pyramid. Whereupon were the foundations thereof.that is of the whole earth.fastened? Or who laid the cornerstone thereof, when the morning stars (that is angels) shouted together and all the sons of God shouted for joy.

Now the morning stars may include only the three cherub who are light bringers. One of them is named Lucifer, which means, 'Shining star of the dawn' or a morning star and all of the holy angels. The reason they were shouting for joy is that the earth was to become the abode and the home of angels. That was long before man. That might have been millions or billions of years before man. The Bible gives us no hint and no idea at all of when it was, how long ago it really was.

But God lives. God is the source of life. Now life can come only from

life and God is the source of life. But in living, you have to live a certain way. And there are certain rules and laws that govern your life. Some ways, some laws you can observe will make you happy and prosperous and full of joy and contentment. Other ways you can live will make you unhappy and those around you unhappy and will do harm and cause suffering and heartache. Physical suffering and spiritual suffering.

So God is the author of government and over the angels that he put on the earth at that time, he set a government based on his law. Now I'd said again and again and again, you cannot have a government without a foundational law or constitution. And the constitution or the law of the Government of God is simply love. But it is a certain kind of love. It is a love out flowing. It is love to God first of all. Because God first loved us, it is a return of his love towards us that we return to him. Then it is love toward your fellow man, loving your neighbour as yourself. Now that general law applied to the angels the same as it does to us. The Ten Commandments literally apply to man. For example: the law about adultery and things of that sort would not have applied to angels because they had no sex. They had no reproduction. They would not have committed adultery in the sense that humans may, physically. But they could have committed spiritual adultery which humans have done too. But the general principle of that law obtained to them. Now over that government and God put a government on this earth. I want you to remember that and our Festival today has something to do with the government of God on this earth.

Lucifer – behind Babylon

Now turning over to the once again to the Fourteenth chapter of Isaiah beginning with verse twelve. We read here of the, one of which the king of Babylon was only an earthly type. He was the first emperor over a world empire. The first world empire on earth. He was the head of that government

sitting on the throne in Babylon. But now it lifted to the greater type of which he was only a type.

Isaiah 14:12 *How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer.* [This is the same statement that I read a moment ago, that he was cast down from heaven. But his name was Lucifer. Lucifer is a Hebrew word which means ‘Shining star of the dawn’ or ‘bringer of light’. So it gives it in the next little part of the phrase here, Son of the morning! (or morning star)] *how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!* [Or thou who didst weaken the nations, cut down to the ground. Of course this was written by Isaiah the prophet only about, let me see, twenty-five hundred years or so ago.] *For thou hast said in thine heart; I will ascend unto heaven; I will exalt my throne.* [Now he was under heaven, he had a throne. He sat on a throne. There was a throne on the earth. God had set that throne here and had set this archangel, Lucifer, on that throne to rule the Government of God with the Law of God which is out-flowing love to God and to fellow beings.] *...above the stars of God, I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation in the sides of the north. I will ascent above the heights of the clouds.*

So he was on the earth. He was going above the clouds of the earth. His throne was on the earth. I will be like the most high or he was going to make himself the most high. Yet (it says) thou shall be brought down to hell or to the grave is what it’s talking about to the sides of the pit. The word ‘hell’ in that case in the Hebrew language meant ‘grave’ and not what people think of a burning hell at all.

Now he was perfect in all of his ways from the day that God created him. God did not create him a Devil. He created him a perfect angel. Higher than other angels in the status of a cherub. So far as we know, only three of them are mentioned in the Bible of which he was one. Now coming to Ezekiel twenty-eight and beginning with verse fifteen. Speaking of the same Lucifer, it says thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast

created. He was not a born person like we are. We've been born. This archangel had been created specially by God. He was perfect in his ways from the day he was created. ...*till iniquity was found in thee*. So he had been perfect. He was sat on a throne but he rebelled and he let vanity come into his mind. He wanted to exalt himself and not God. He began to covet everything. He coveted more than just the earth. God had set him over the earth, but he coveted more. He wanted to ascend up to heaven. He organised his angels into an army to ascend to heaven and to fight God, to knock God off the throne and to take over the government of the universe. But he was put back down, he was put back down to the throne of this earth and he still sits there today.

And he has deceived you and me in our life time. He is still there as Satan the Devil. He came to have hate in his heart for other fellow beings. Jealousy and envy, competition and strife were in his heart and he has put that in the hearts of all human beings and he begins working on little children. I might say babies, in the first weeks and months of their lives. And by the time babies are, say about nine months old, they already are selfish. Put one toy down and a couple of nine-month old babies and watch them fight for that toy. O yes, Satan doesn't neglect them! Now parents neglect little babies. They just feed them and take care of them. Yeah they'll work to wash their diapers and things like that, but they do not wash their minds or instruct their minds. They do not teach. They think, 'O we don't need to teach them. They can't know anything yet.' But, so then parents neglect their children. Satan does not neglect your little infants. He does not! He didn't neglect you when you were an infant and he began to get selfishness in your mind. He began to get vanity in your mind, to thinking of your own self and how good you are and wanting to be above other people and wanting to take from other people and wanting to get for yourself as much as you could. That is what he has put in the minds of all people and that is just the opposite of the law or the way of life of God. It is a way of life. I simplify it by calling it

the way of get. That's what I was expressing less than a year ago to President Anwar Sadat in his palace in Cairo, Egypt. And I don't think he had ever heard it put just that way before. And I was explaining of the fact, that he was working for peace but was not able to achieve it and I explained that the God, which he calls Allah and that we call God, is going to intervene in world affairs and going to bring us the peace that I told him he was not able to give us. Now a week from this Sunday you will see some of that conversation on the telecast if you will watch our programme on television.

Kingdom of God – Is the Family of God

The Government of God was no longer being executed here on the earth. Because the Government of God had been placed here, but this Lucifer was the chief executive and was put here as the ruler and he is still there as the ruler, but he turned against the Government of God and the Government of God was no longer operating. And yet, when Jesus came his gospel was the gospel of the Kingdom which means Government of God. Now the Kingdom of God is actually the Family of God which will be ruling with the Government of God. And that's what we are going to celebrate just ten days from now. No five days from now, this is ten days from the last feast and the next festival, the Feast of Tabernacles begins now in five days. We've already celebrated the second coming of Christ, we begin to celebrate the administration of Christ as the new King sitting on that throne in which Satan the Devil is sitting even yet today. Jesus' gospel was the Gospel of the Kingdom of God, which is the restoration of the Government of God in the hands of the Family of God or the Kingdom of God! The Kingdom of God is the Family of God and God is a Family. Originally consisting of only the Word and God. The Word became flesh and dwelt among us and became Jesus Christ. And he came as a human being and took on himself the nature of man so that he could pay for our sins and so that our past could be

forgiven and oh how the world does misunderstand that. I want to say a little more about that a little later. However, Jesus came with the Gospel of the Kingdom of God.

Now as a result of what this Lucifer led his angels into or Satan led the demons into actually. We turn back to Genesis 1 once again and verse 2 And the earth was (or had become, it became) without form and void. Those words in the Hebrew that Moses wrote were 'tohu' and 'bohu' and they mean, 'waste' and 'empty' and 'desolate' and 'decayed' a state of decay, a complete state of decay.

Now, I've spent quite a little time recently in talking about how God now is going to reproduce himself in man. God, which is more than one person, said in verse 26 here and God (or Elohim) said, Let us make man in our image after our likeness. God was now going to create man in the same form and shape, the same image, the same likeness as God but of different material. God is spirit and composed of spirit. And he is life and the source of life. He has life inherent. But man, as he said in the seventh verse of the second chapter, he made out. Of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and man became a living (nephesh or) soul. Not an immortal soul. He made man with a temporary existence.

And in that Garden of Eden were the two trees that I have mentioned so many times recently. The Tree of Life, now man didn't have life. He only had a temporary existence. But God offered him life freely. Also the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil which if he took would result in death! So one was the Tree of Life, and the other was the Tree of Death. The Tree of Death was the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. Well the Tree of Life was the Tree of the Knowledge of Spiritual Knowledge, revealed knowledge from God and the revealed knowledge of God's Law and of the basic Government of God and the way of life of God.

Now God set a government over the angels that he placed on the earth to regulate their living, one with another. And to regulate their relationship with him so that he could bless them. So that they could do something on the earth. He put them here for a purpose, to build up the earth, to complete it, to finish it. God had not quite completed it. It was perfect as far as he went, but he hadn't quite finished it. He wanted them, he created them and intended them to finish it, but it took the development of character.

The Development of Character

Now God was developing character. And character is something that God cannot create by fiat, instantaneously. Character is the ability of a separate entity, having a separate mind, a mind like God, but separate from God, that can think, can reason, and can make decisions. Can come to conclusions, can receive facts and information and God had given him all of the facts and all of the knowledge. But this Lucifer and his angels, instead of believing God, believed the opposite way. And instead of believing in the Law of God and the Way of God, the way of giving, they believed in the way of getting and taking. Instead of humility, they believed in vanity and exalting the self. Instead of exalting God, they exalted themselves. Now God, great as he is, does not exalt himself. God is a great giver and he gives everything to us. Jesus Christ did not exalt himself. He came here to give his life for you and for me, that what Satan has deceived us into doing could be paid for by him instead of by us.

But Adam had to choose in that Garden of Eden and he made the wrong choice. When Satan got to Eve. Satan told Eve, 'You will not surely die.' God had said you will die. You do not have eternal life, you only have a temporary existence that will run out, and you will die! Satan said, No, you are an immortal soul. And, do you know, that the people that preach about Christ today, the Catholic Church, the Protestant Churches they believe Satan. They

believe we're immortal souls. They think we have eternal life. They don't understand that we have to yet receive life. They don't, they also are taking of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. I've gone over so many things before and how man was created incomplete, just as the earth had been. Now God had renewed the face of the earth for man and he wanted man now to finish the physical earth but man polluted it and destroyed it instead of finishing it and completing it.

But man was not even complete. He first created a man, but he was not complete. He needed a wife, because God was using man to reproduce himself. And so he had to have man reproduce so that God could reproduce himself in man. And man could not reproduce by himself, so he made a wife for man. And said that they two would be one. And told them to be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth. Now God gave man a mind that still was not completed. It had one spirit and it needed another spirit, the Spirit of God, to give it revealed knowledge and spiritual knowledge to understand the way of life of God. The way we could get along with one another. Man never did receive that and when man made the wrong choice God shut up the Garden of Eden, as you read in the third chapter of Genesis and verses 22 to 24. God shut it up from mankind.

God did not open up the Tree of Life to Cain or Abel or to Seth or to the others who followed because Satan got to them when they were a month or two old. Satan had them before they grew up, able to be converted, able to make the right choice. They already had committed sin and had the penalty of death on themselves. And so God was not going to let man get eternal life when he was living the way of death. And God shut up the Holy Spirit when he shut up the Tree of Life. He closed up the Holy Spirit from man and from mankind.

Lamb Slain From Foundation of World

Now we come over to Revelation thirteen and verse eight, Revelation thirteen and verse eight. Where it speaks of, I won't read it all just this part of the verse, the latter part of the verse it speaks of a: Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. Christ is the Lamb of God, slain from the foundation of the world. Now, God and the Word who became Christ already had agreed when Adam sinned, and before the world became this world, and the world is merely the society that man has developed on the world, that Christ would come in due time. That he would be born of a woman and yet born of God and he would be God and he would be born with the Spirit of God whereas God was rejecting the Holy Spirit from mankind. But Jesus would come born with the Spirit of God. And as his mind developed and he grew up, the Spirit of God would give him the knowledge that he had had as his brain matured with God. And he would have the Spirit of God, the knowledge of the way of God and the power of God, the faith of God to resist Satan and to live above and without sin to set us an example so that we should live that way but we have none of us done it. And yet he was made human so that he could die and pay the penalty of our sins and so the Holy Spirit was closed up until the penalty of sin for man had been paid.

That's why we read then in Hebrews nine and verse twenty-seven: And as it is appointed unto man once to die. Because man has sinned and all have come short of the glory of God, ...and after this the judgment. God arranged for a resurrection and before the world was founded, it was arranged that Christ would come and pay the penalty of our sins so we could be resurrected and we would stand in the judgment seat of Christ and he will pronounce us guilty! And he will say, 'Now I am going to sentence you, and the sentence is death!' And then they are going to, well what are they going to do when they found they're sentenced to eternal death? And that'll be the second death in the judgment. They're going to throw themselves on the mercy of the court

and they are going to find that the court, who is Jesus Christ, will then be. His mercy, I mean, as great towards us as the heavens are high above the earth. And he will say, 'Well, now if you had a chance to do it again would you live a different way? I realise you were influenced by Satan the Devil. It wasn't wholly your fault, but you did sin. And you did have a mind to decide, and you decided the wrong way and you went the wrong way.' And if they do repent, he's going to say, 'Alright, I have paid the penalty of death in your stead. I've sentenced you to death but I paid it for you. I paid that penalty for you. Now, I'll tell you what, I will give you the Spirit of Life, temporarily. I will give you revealed knowledge. I will open up to your mind the knowledge of my way of life and my law so you can live as you should have lived in the first place. Will you live that way if you come to know it?' And if they say, Yes, they will receive the Holy Spirit of God in the judgment. That judgment is more than a thousand years off yet.

That's when both Cain and Abel and Seth and all of them are going to be resurrected and all who have lived and died up to now and all of those who shall die between now and the coming of Christ, except those whose names are written in the book of life. The world doesn't understand these things. Now again we read in first Corinthians, the fifteenth chapter, and verse twenty-two as in Adam all die (because of Adam's sin, we have not had the Holy Spirit and all die!) so in Christ shall all be made alive, but every man in his own order and so there are orders. Christ was the first-fruits. Christ was the first born of many brethren in a resurrection nineteen hundred and fifty and more years ago that's just over nineteen hundred and fifty years ago. Christ the first fruits, afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. And that includes the living who will have an instantaneous death and resurrection, just in the snap of a finger. You will die and then be made immortal just so fast you won't know what hit or what happened. All of a sudden you'll find you are immortal but it will be a death and a change in the resurrection. You will be a changed from mortal to immortal, instantaneously.

Old Testament Prophets Wrote For Us Today

Now, meanwhile, something happened before Jesus came and before he was born as we read back here in Isaiah, Isaiah the ninth chapter, beginning with verse six was a prophecy: For unto us that is ancient Israel the ancient nation of Israel. Now remember, they were given God's Law. They were told God's Way. They learned this law but they did not have the Spirit of God, the only love of God in their hearts that could fulfill it and they never did fulfill it. They did not have the Spirit of God. The Spirit of God was locked up and shut off from mankind. Only their prophets did but their prophets were like part of the Church born ahead of time. That was only just a very few men. But God could reveal things for them to write that would be part of the Church and the writings of the prophets are for the Church and not for the Old Testament and very few know that today. They're for us today. Now here's a prophecy that came to ancient Israel unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given and the government shall be on his shoulder. The government was given to this Lucifer. Lucifer failed, now from the foundation of the world. And his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever, The zeal of the Lord of hosts shall perform it.

Now again in Joel, the second chapter. I guess I didn't get some of these markers in my bible and I have to turn to it now. Joel the second chapter, well let me just quote that from memory. Anyway it is in verse twenty eight that the days will come when God said, I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh Joel two, twenty eight. Joel two and verse twenty eight when God said the time would come when He would pour out His spirit upon all flesh. Now the Holy Spirit had been locked up from the time of Adam.

“I Will Build My Church”

Christ came and said, ‘I will build my Church.’ He trained his apostles. He came and died for us and paid the penalty of sin. So that now the Holy Spirit could come, but only on a few because Jesus had also said, as you read in John six and verse forty four Jesus said No man can come to me, except the Father which sent me draw him. Now there is no way to come back to God and receive eternal life, since you have the penalty death and God the Father has eternal life to give, but you are shut off from him and the Holy Spirit except through Christ. Christ is the only door back to God the Father to gain eternal life. And he said no man can come to me! No one could come through His Son unless the Father drew him. And the Father was only drawing a few for the Church. Because the Church was the first-fruits and not completed. God was calling a few, one here, and then way over here in another city, another, and in some other town way over there, one, and the rest of the people in that town or city were not called. How many others around you, how many neighbours of all of you have never been called, Brethren? But God reached down and called you. I just preach this truth on the air. I didn’t practice any salesmanship on you. If I may say so, I was a pretty good salesman in my younger years. But I’ve never tried to sell the gospel. I just simply preach the truth. God must do the calling. Jesus said to his apostles, ‘You didn’t come to me. You didn’t choose me. I chose you. You see, Peter and his brother Andrew wanted to be fishermen, they didn’t want to follow Christ. But Jesus said, ‘You drop those nets. You come ashore here from that ship and you follow me. I’ll make you fishers of men.’ There was something about his voice. God the Father was calling them and the Holy Spirit was calling them, and they came. But God called them. God has called you. He probably has not called your next-door neighbours. He probably has not called hundreds of others that live near you and they can’t understand the things you understand.

Without the Spirit of God their minds can't conceive and can't understand.

God is calling a few! We are the first-fruits! And God says to us, well I'm going to read that a little later, how we will rule with him on his throne, if we overcome, if we endure unto the end. Now, the Church is only the first-fruits and the day of Pentecost that comes in the summer is to teach us every year that we are only the first-fruits, that God is not calling the overwhelming majority of people even yet. The Holy Spirit is shut off from them! You can't go to your next-door neighbours and witness for them and think you can get them converted.

I noticed what they call the electronic evangelism preaching on radio. There is on channel, I forget the channel number, it's UHF. I see two names on it, one is, let me see it's a CB Christian Broadcast network and another is Trinity network. And it's just one religious programme after another all day long. Just one religious programme after another. Now they just preach 'Christ' They don't realise it, they are preaching a false, human, man, a human man named 'Jesus' and they've got the wrong Jesus. They've got a 'Jesus' who was a smart-alec young man and did away with his Father's Law and said, 'You don't have to keep the Law of God.' Once in a while I listened to one of those for a while this morning. Just for a while. They were talking about 'repentance'. If you repent, and they didn't have any idea what 'repent' means. You repent of what think was wrong. Now if you do it again, well, then you have to repent again. They never say if you do what God says is wrong. They don't believe in the Law of God. They think you can decide for yourself, the way of life. God is the one who has decided how we should live. The Law of God tells us how to live! That's what it's all about! They don't even know what life is all about. They don't know what man is. They don't know why he is or how he came to be here. They don't know what salvation is. They don't know about the Holy Spirit! They talk about it and they don't

know anything about it! They have experienced something emotional. They have not experienced the spirit of a sound mind. They are Biblical illiterates!

They don't understand the Word of God! They are not like the men of God, like Abraham, for example. You couldn't imagine Abraham doing like they do, cutting up the antics that they do. All a lot of physical emotion. And they just have no understanding at all. Now does that mean they're lost? No, no, they've just been deceived and they think they're right. They're to be pitied. Maybe they're more sincere than you and I, Brethren. Let's not misjudge them. But they are deceived and God has undeceived you and me and we are being judged now! They are not being judged now! Can you understand that? They are not yet being judged. They are deceived! You and I have been undeceived. Satan is not deceiving you and me, though you can let him, but he doesn't need to. And we can be undeceived. But we are being judged now! And judgment is yet to come on them.

Now I want you to notice in second Corinthians 4:3-4 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid from them that are lost. Are they lost yet? Yes they are lost. Does that mean they are going to go into hell? No. Does that mean they are going to die the second death? Not necessarily at all. Jesus came to save those that were already lost! Did you know that? They're lost, but that doesn't mean, they think if you're lost that means you're sentenced and there's no way of ever getting out of it. And that isn't what 'lost' means in the Bible. Jesus came, what about the lost sheep of the House of Israel? He said, 'Go to the lost sheep of the House of Israel, go to the lost.' Jesus came to save those that were lost. The Protestants don't know those things. They're just Biblical illiterates.

We are Held Accountable

But, Brethren, God has opened our minds. And we're being held

accountable. We're being judged right here and now and those people are not. Oh we can laugh. How they jump up and down and say, 'Praise the Lord', and a lot. Some of them, I think they have an IQ of maybe 90 or 91. I know it's way below 100. And some others have a good IQ, they're intelligent people, have good minds. But they still are deceived, and totally misled. It's too bad that God has given us knowledge and understanding they simply don't have and we're being held accountable and they are not yet.

Oh they'll give account for what they're doing now, but the time will come when God will open their eyes when they can repent, and when they can really know what repentance means. It means change your whole way of life. Change your whole mind in regard to yourself and who you think you are. It means turn around and go the other way, it means begin to live according to the way of God's Law from this time on. Now you aren't going to do it perfectly. You are going to slip down and fall once in a while but if your attitude is right and if you do repent, God says if we, we in the Church, confess our sins, He's faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. That's speaking to the Church that's in first John the first chapter, but they just don't understand these things.

So, to the Church, God says, Revelation 3:21 To him that overcometh. We that are called that's to the Church. That's a message to one of the Churches. They are those that have been called. They are those who have received the Spirit of God. That is to us, not the world. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I overcame and am sat down with my Father in his throne and it's all a matter of government.

I say Anwar Sadat was sitting on a throne in Egypt. I've known people sitting on so many other thrones. There was Emperor Haile Selassie on the throne over Ethiopia. He was knocked off and they finally killed him, I think, at least he died. And I think he was killed by his captors when the nation suffered a coup. I've met every Prime Minister in the last ten of twelve years

of Japan and His Imperial Highness Emperor. The emperor of Japan won't come to me. I don't know why names won't come to me. Bible scriptures will come to me and things like that will come to me, but the name of a person. It'll come to me in a second, Hirohito. Many kings, presidents, prime ministers over nations. Brethren, they all have been deceived by Satan the Devil. They all are trying to rule without having the knowledge and the revealed knowledge of God and some of them are honest men. I think Anwar Sadat was a real honest man. I've talked to him. I know what he did.

As far as he saw he risked his life and he finally had to give his life for peace, but he didn't know the way to peace. I think that that man will be saved in the judgment I hope I may have the chance to see him again and help him when that time comes. And many others that I have known are now dead. Many of those that were at the helm of governments over nations that I have talked to and sat with them on their throne, and their throne today is merely the office were they work. Just like any office, and I sit with them, either besides them or across the desk from them or however and we talk. They're just human like you and I, that's all. Most of them are no better than you and I are. Some of them have better minds than some of us, and some of them don't. But all have been misled; all have been deceived by Satan.

Christ Born to Be King

And it is a matter of government and Jesus Christ was born to be a king. Before Pilate, Pilate said, 'Are you then a king?' He said, 'Thou sayest that I am a king, to this end was I born, for this cause came I into the world.' But he said, 'My kingdom is not of this world.' This is Satan's world. Jesus' Kingdom is not of Satan's world. Now I've begun to preach a lot on the air now about the Day of the Lord. That's the day when Christ and when God will begin to intervene in the governmental affairs of this world and the government. Christ was born to be a ruler, a saviour, and a ruler. Now they

only know him as a saviour and they don't understand the sin question. They don't know that sin's the transgression of God's Law. They don't know God's Government. They don't know the basis of it is a way of life and it's the law of God and that's what you. The violation of that is what we have to repent of and we have to begin to live that way.

Now that includes a very great deal of prayer and Bible study, constant Bible study where God speaks to you and shows you how to live and shows you His way of life. Read of the lives of others who did live God's way. Read the instruction in the Bible. Read the prophecies in the Bible. And pray as the men in the Bible prayed and not like some of these Pentecostal people do today. Pray with the whole heart when you do. Most of us aren't doing enough of that.

Now Christ will be coming soon and we read of that in Revelation 19:6-7. Where in this vision that John had and is writing about here, he tells us what he saw in the vision. I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters. Were you ever at Niagara Falls? Way out over the falls did you hear the water rushing down and the roar of those waters? I've not only been at the site of it. I've been down below it and even under part of it and you hear the roar of many waters or the voice of many people saying something in unison, all at once. And, you know, there's a similarity and that's the kind of a voice that he heard. And as the voice of a mighty thundering, saying, Alleluia; for the Lord God Omnipotent reigneth. Let us be glad and rejoice and give honour unto him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come and his wife that's you and me has made herself ready.

Now, as I've said time and again, the wife is going to be ready, it says so! I'd like to say, my executive assistant says he's looked at the end of the book to see how the story finally comes out. He says, 'We win!' We will, but will we all? The wife will have made herself ready, now that's the end of it. The Church is going to be ready but that doesn't mean every individual now

in the Church. It's every individual that will still then be in the Church that overcomes, that continues to overcome! Every individual that endures!

O Brethren, I tell you, when I look back and I see how many were with us and are gone and are not with us any longer. They have not endured and I try to analyse why and what happened. And even some of our ministers and some who reached, well you might say the top of the ministry and that's one of the things that was wrong. There was one man, when he was ordained an evangelist here at the head of the ministry, next to the office of apostle. He said, 'Well, I made it right on target. When I was first ordained, I said, By a certain date, I am going to rise up and I'm going to gain the office of apostle and I got it and I made it right on time.' And he's not with us anymore. That was a wrong attitude. He was thinking what he could get for himself. Yes he rose to the top. He fell aside. Many others have fallen aside. I look back at old Envoys and see the pictures of students. And I look and here's one and oh he's still with us and look. He's made good and here's a woman and she's a wife, and been a very good wife of one of our men and these have succeeded and then here's another that didn't and here's one that fell aside and here's one and then my heart aches because some of them are no longer with us. They've turned sour. They've been embittered. They have not endured. And several have gone out because they didn't like the government of the Church. They resented it. The only place on the face of the earth where Christ is governing now is in this Church. He's not governing over any nation. But some people just despise the office of government. They despise it. They don't want to be ruled over. They resent it. You'll never get into the Kingdom of God with that kind of attitude, my Brethren. Now I'm getting more and more concerned as time goes on.

I don't know how much longer I will be with you. Don't let anyone tell you that I've said 'I'm going to live until Christ comes.' I have never said that! But I have been quoted as saying that and people have misunderstood. I

did not say that, I never have. I may have thought fifteen years ago that that was possible. But I expected the end would come a lot sooner than this, then. I no longer say that. Even though I think it is possible, and I've never said that I really believe it. My life is in the hands of Jesus Christ and of God the Father. I'll do what I can to keep me alive. That's all I can do. I'm just a poor, weak, human mortal. That's all I am. I just do the best I can. As far as God will empower me, and in his power, and by his Spirit. Not by any power of my own whatsoever. But if those of us that endure unto the end are the only ones, then we will reign with Christ.

Now we come to the very meaning of this day. When Christ comes, and we celebrated that, as I say, just ten days ago. We come now to the twentieth chapter of the book of Revelation. After the coming of Christ, now here is one of the first things that happens after Christ comes, and we are here today really to celebrate this event. I'm not going into all the details about the ancient services that were held and the two goats and all of that sort of thing, but really what it means. And this is a prophesy of how it comes out. Revelation twenty, twentieth chapter beginning with verse one. And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the Dragon, that old Serpent, which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, and cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years be fulfilled. Because, as it says back here in the eleventh chapter of Revelation, I didn't read this one. The kingdoms of this world will then have become the kingdom's of our Lord and his Christ. And Jesus Christ will sit on the throne of the earth and Satan will be put away.

What Are We Doing With the Knowledge We Have?

Satan has this whole world deceived, and God has allowed it. And God

is the responsible party, but being responsible he gave his only begotten son, who came and paid the price. Now, most of them are still blinded and God has not removed that blindness as yet. He has not removed it as yet. During the Millennium all who still are alive are then going to be called, all will be called! But let me tell you, I think that at least two thirds or maybe nine tenths of all the people alive on the face of the earth today will be dead before the beginning of the Millennium, the Kingdom of God reigning on this earth. All that are still living then, will be called. Everybody will be called. What about others that die in the meantime? Well they'll be called in the Great White Throne Judgment. They're a part of those that was appointed should die, but after that the judgment and then they will hear about and all of these deceived people that understand about the blood of Christ, but not what it means and they don't understand about the Law of God. They don't know about sin and what it is. They don't know that Jesus came as a ruler. They don't know about the Kingdom of God. They don't know the Gospel of the Kingdom of God. That's the only true gospel. The world is deceived, but Brethren you and I are not deceived. And once again, I plead with you as I have been doing a great deal lately, what are you doing with the knowledge you have? How much are you praying? Now, I tell you, as I see more and more of these people that have been ruling in this world, and have been high in this world, dying and are no longer with us, it just makes me realise and I as see more and more of our people falling apart. I haven't seen too many falling apart, just recently, but in past years I have. I don't mean that a great many are falling apart now and have in the last two or three months, or six months, I don't mean that at all. I'm looking back over the past twenty years when we talk of these things.

But I know how it will be when the parable of the ten virgins in Matthew twenty-five shows that half of the final Church are going to have let the oil run out of their lamp. In other words, the spirit ran out. And they will be those who have been converted and had the Holy Spirit, but they're going

to fall away. That's the main thing. You have to grow in grace and the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ! Have you gained more Bible knowledge than you had a year ago? I've been giving you more knowledge than you had a year ago. Have you really understood it? Have you grasped it? Does it mean anything to you? Or is it, 'Ah I wish that Armstrong'd just quit hammering back, going back to Genesis again. There he is back to those two trees again.' You betcha! I'll go back to it again and again and again! I want to get you into the Kingdom of God with me! I didn't call you in the first place, but I'm somewhat responsible for feeding you now that you're here. You know that? God is going to hold me responsible. I want you all to go along with me and it isn't going to be easy. Now you've been fasting today and I hope you've been praying through this day. Many of us are going to be leaving for the Feast. We're going to celebrate a joyous occasion, the Millennium. Well I hope we'll be there. But how many of us are going to be there in the Feast of Tabernacles? In other words, which pictures the coming Millennium.

Now something has just been handed to me. Total attendance today, 2665; and the total offering today, \$64837 or per person \$24.33 for every man, woman and child here. Well, Brethren, on behalf of Jesus Christ, and his apostle, I thank you for him. I know he thanks you and wants me to thank you for Him. But, if we do just what we're supposed to do, we're unfaithful servants though. Let's not brag. Let's go on and continue to do all we can. And remember there are going to be other offerings and many of the things that we said to you today, just before the offertory may apply to just five days from now on the opening day of the Feast of Tabernacles. So we have two more offerings coming, one on the first day, and one on the Great and Last Great day of the fall Festival. So let's remember our liberality at that time. And remember how liberal God has been. He gave his only begotten Son and he has given us everything. Let's let it not be in vain.

Well, I'm going to see some of you at Big Sandy. I'm going to see some of you, I don't know if any of you will be going down to St. Petersburg, Florida. I hope to go down there, for they'll have the biggest attendance of any one site there. I hope to go down there for one sermon during the Festival and then back here, and on the opening day and the closing day here. And to those of you that have come in from other places to spend the Feast here. I think there are some of you already here today. I welcome you on behalf of the Headquarters Church here and of the work and hope that you will enjoy it. And those of you that are leaving after the Feast keep your eye on the ball when you are driving the car. And remember, the ball is the road in front of you and all the side roads turning in on you at each side. Don't turn round to the back seat and talk to someone on the back seat while your hands are on the steering wheel. Pray and ask God to send an angel with you and protect you while you go. I was driving a car in a storm up in Oregon one night and all of a sudden I came around a curve, I was probably, I wasn't going too fast because I was going around a curve. I was probably going around 25 to 30 miles per hour. There was a car right in front of me and over here there had been a wreck and a car over here and something took my steering wheel and turned it right in my hands and turned me out of --- away from the first car and then turned me back again and I didn't have that much space between those cars. I know that God sent an angel and actually turned the steering wheel. God is able to do that, Brethren. He will protect you if you ask him. But do you own part and, as I say, keep your eye on the ball and be careful and drive carefully. Don't try to see if you can beat the speed limits and things of that sort. Because you may not get away with it and it isn't good to do it.

So God be with you now, through the Festival and let's all have a wonderful Festival and enjoy ourselves. And it will be, we're going to celebrate a time that'll come when there is no Satan to deceive anyone. Satan is still going to try to persecute this Church, but he knows that he has but a

short time and it isn't going to last very long and we're going to now enjoy the time when, looking forward to the time, that is, when there won't be any Satan around to destroy or to hurt or to tempt anybody.

And remember, that in God is safety. Rely on him and have faith.

Goodbye until next time.

The Meaning of The Feast of Tabernacles

Sermon (October 13, 1981) – Given during The Feast of Tabernacles
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Meaning of The Feast of Tabernacles.....	780	<u>God Reproducing Himself</u>	796
<u>World Events Held Up</u>	782	<u>Man Created In Gods' Image</u>	798
<u>Short Time Left</u>	784	<u>The Two Trees</u>	800
<u>Peace On Earth</u>	786	<u>Man Must Choose</u>	806
<u>Job's Self-Righteousness</u>	788	<u>Every Man In His Own Order</u>	808
<u>Lucifer On Earth's Throne</u>	790	<u>Church Made Ready</u>	811
<u>The Government Of God</u>	794		

Greetings, brethren, all over the United States and Canada and Britain (and beside the mainland of the United States) in Alaska and in Hawaii. What a marvelous thing it is that we can **all** be together and that we have this wonderful setting here at the headquarters of God's Work. That is, the temporary headquarters now; because these headquarters are going to be moved very soon when the real Feast of Tabernacles begins at the Second Coming of Christ over to Jerusalem. And you know this Church has been busy building or rather digging over there in the largest excavation, so far as I know, in archaeological history. Digging down, clearing off the debris of the throne of David where Jesus Christ will soon come and will reign over **all** the nations of this earth and will bring us finally peace.

But we don't have peace now. Just one week ago today, in a matter of moments, the entire course of modern history was changed with the assassination of President Anwar Sadat of Egypt. I had planned to have another private conversation and talk with President Sadat just next month. I last had a private talk with him in the Giza Palace in Cairo just eleven months ago, in November of last year. You will see some pictures of that during the

Feast, if you see the programs that are extra programs scheduled besides the regular services; and I hope that you will all see them. And in that meeting ...

President Sadat, incidentally, had risked his life when he made the extraordinary visit to speak to the Knesset in Jerusalem. And, instead of declaring war as he had previously done on the Holy Day War, he now went over to declare peace. He had changed his mind, and now he started to dedicate his life to peace; and indeed he gave his life for peace – as I sent in a condolence telegram to his widow, the First Lady of Egypt, on the day of the assassination. However, he was not able to bring us peace. No man, no leader, in the world **can**. They've striven for peace, they've fought for peace, they've worked for peace; but we have no peace and we cannot have peace until we **change our way of life**.

I've been struck with the average “gospel message” so-called (falsely so-called) preaching about Christ, just about Christ. That's all right in itself, but we need so much more than that. Jesus Christ was the Messenger who brought the **message** of the Gospel. The Gospel is the message He brought – the message from God the Father; and they ignore God the Father today in the religion known as Christianity. They just say, “If you have heard Christ, if you know that Christ died for you. The Gospel is that Christ died for you. You just accept the fact He died for you, ‘hocus pocus’, you'll go to heaven when you die.”

Oh, how terrible it is, brethren, that the world doesn't know **WHY WE ARE HERE! THEY DON'T KNOW THE PURPOSE OF LIFE!! THEY DON'T KNOW THE PURPOSE OF GOD ALMIGHTY**. But this Church is beginning to **tell them**; and we've been telling them now for about forty-eight, forty-nine years. And the only voice in the world that is telling them the real truth of **WHO AND WHAT GOD IS, OF THE REAL MESSAGE OF GOD AND THE GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST** which is the Gospel **OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD, OF WHAT AND WHY MAN IS, HOW DID WE**

COME TO BE HERE? WHAT'S THE PURPOSE OF LIFE? WHY WERE WE PUT HERE? The world does not know those things.

Oh, it is so much more than just knowing that Christ died for us. Why did He die for us? What was the purpose? What does that have to do with us and our lives? There's something we need to do besides what He did for us. We need to let Him come into our lives and live our lives for us, and that's something else again.

World Events Held Up

Well, it had seemed in the last several years (the last fifteen years) that God had been holding up the sequence of world events in this world leading to a climax that is prophesied. Some of us who understand the prophecies of the Bible know what is coming, and we expected it to come sooner than it has. It hasn't come yet. But the event that happened a week ago today, I believe, has triggered and is a signal that the time has come. You know, a thousand years is as a day with God and a day is as a thousand years. He doesn't consider time as we do. He has held up events for a little while. But when the **time** comes, then SUDDENLY things will go to pieces. They'll fall into place in a hurry, and very quickly everything will fall into place; and the end will come. Jesus Christ will come and set up world peace.

Now this assassination of President Anwar Sadat (whom I knew well), on the very heels of the attempted assassinations of President Ronald Reagan of the United States and Pope John Paul II, should be a warning to the world (and I believe it is) that perhaps the holding up of events in the world is about over; and God is going to let things speed up very quickly from here on. If not now, when it does happen it will happen **suddenly** – so quickly it will take your breath, and the whole world will gasp in **awe** and **wonder** when they see the things that are prophesied.

For example, ten nations in Europe – probably five of them in Western Europe and five in Eastern Europe – reviving, resurrecting the so-called Holy Roman Empire of the Middle Ages; and that is going to happen very soon now. Satan now is sitting on the throne of this world. Now people don't understand that. We have governments all over the world. The different nations have their governments.

President Anwar Sadat governed the nation of Egypt. I talked to him about it. In my talk with him, I told him why we do not have peace. The two ways of life: the one is the way of **get** and that's the way the world is living; and the other is the way of **give**. He sat there smoking his pipe (You will see it in television, during this festival.), and nodding, and agreeing with what I said. And I said that we won't bring peace, but the God that we believe in will. The God. We call him God. And I said, "I believe you call him, Allah." And he nodded, "Yes." "He will intervene and bring us peace, and we will yet have the peace that you have been striving for." I gave him that assurance less than a year before he died.

But Satan is sitting on the throne of the earth, and for six thousand years he has been ruling in the governments of this world. He sits on a throne. The world is being governed, and people's lives are being governed. Now in the twelfth chapter of Revelation we read beginning with verse 7, and this is a prophecy that probably has just recently been fulfilled in our time. It's a prophecy for this approximate time right now.

***Revelation 12:7-9** And there was war in heaven: Michael [a great archangel] and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels [another great archangel, the dragon] (8) And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. (9) And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the **whole** world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.*

Short Time Left

And now in verses 12 and 13: **Revelation 12:12** *Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.*

He knows that he has but a short time. But what is **all** of that triggering? Satan cast out of heaven, down to earth and beginning to persecute the Church as the next verse said, which I didn't read. And we have been persecuted; and it does show that, after that, we're going to be taken to a Place of Safety. Then there will be another persecution of the **remnant** Church – known in the Bible, and in the 3rd chapter of the book of Revelation, as the Laodicean Church – a still greater Church but a lukewarm one that will come out of the Great Tribulation, which is now just ahead of us. But notice verses 10 and 11, which I skipped just a moment ago.

Revelation 12:10 *And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation ...*

When Satan is cast down, he knows he has but a short time. And how does he know it? Because Jesus Christ (in giving His disciples the sign of the end of this age and of the coming of the World Tomorrow, the coming of Christ and setting up a **different** world) said, *“This GOSPEL of the KINGDOM shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.”* Brethren, THIS CHURCH HAS BEEN PREACHING THAT GOSPEL TO THE WHOLE WORLD, AND NOBODY ELSE HAS DONE IT. NO OTHER CHURCH HAS DONE IT! NO OTHER VOICE HAS DONE IT! I WONDER IF YOU CAN YOU REALIZE IT? It is the FULFILLMENT of the very prophecy of Jesus in Mathew 24. The Gospel of the KINGDOM, THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD!

Of course, the Kingdom of God is the divine Family of God. But that Family is a **ruling** Family. That Family is the Family that will be **governing** the world with the government of God, instead of the governments of man as they have been influenced and completely led by Satan the Devil. Satan is sitting on the throne of the whole earth. He has many, you might say, puppet leaders sitting on thrones of different nations; and that is the kind of world we're living in. **People** are governed, and there is government to regulate our lives. Now let's understand this thing. Notice now verses 10 and 11.

***Revelation 12:10** And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation...*

People think that when you say, "I receive Christ," you have received salvation. The Bible does not teach that, my brethren. The Bible teaches that he that **endureth unto the end** the same shall **be** saved. Salvation comes with the Second Coming of Jesus Christ and not until then. Oh, how **deceived** this whole world is. Satan the Devil has **deceived** them. He is the god of this world. He has his religions, he has his governments, he has his social structure, he has his business and economic structure. He has everything in this world! It's his world. But finally we're becoming...

***Revelation 12:10-11** ...the kingdom of our God and the power of his Christ [the rulership of Christ]: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. (11) And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved their lives unto death.*

That doesn't mean that everybody dies that loves God and has His Word. In fact, this Church is to be protected from that sort of thing. But you have to love God and love peace and love things like that more than your life.

Now President Anwar Sadat didn't know the whole truth of God. I gave him a little bit of it. I'm sure he didn't completely comprehend it; because

Jesus Christ said, "No man can come to me except the Father, which sent me, draws him." And God is only drawing a very few – one here, and one over there, and one somewhere else – out of the millions and the billions of the people here on the earth today. Only a very, very few are being drawn by God. But Satan is now wroth, and he is going to stir up the time that we know of as the Great Tribulation. This Church is to be protected from that Great Tribulation – those of us who are faithful especially, and that does not unfortunately include every one of us. I hope it includes you, and you, and you.

But finally I want you to notice in verse 15. I mean Revelation 11 [11](#) and verse 15. Finally, "the kingdoms of this world" which Satan is ruling in the various presidents and prime ministers and kings and emperors ... And I have known all of the emperors – which only were two, and one of those is now dead. Many of the kings and prime ministers and presidents I have known and visited with them on their own thrones, so to speak, which are the offices where they do their work in the modern world like we live in today. And I've probably visited and talked with more heads of state in their own offices than any other man in the world today. But I can't convert them. I can't. And they can't bring us peace, and I can't bring peace. I can merely tell them that the problems they face are greater than they can handle, and that God Almighty is going to intervene and handle these things and settle them for us and send Jesus Christ to rule and to bring us peace at last.

Peace On Earth

Revelation 11:15 The kingdoms of this world have been the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ and He shall REIGN FOREVER and ever.

That's what you just heard in "The Hallelujah Chorus" sung right here in this building – in the Grand Loggia of this building, in this auditorium.

Brethren, we're here to celebrate the time that will begin with the Second Coming of Christ. That will be a **thousand years of peace**. Now, just five days ago, we celebrated a time that really signifies and reminds us every year of the fact that this Satan the Devil is going to be cast into a symbolic bottomless pit. In other words, set a seal upon him that he cannot deceive the nations anymore for one thousand years. And there will be a thousand years of peace on this earth. We had a sermon here in Pasadena this morning on peace. I wish that could have been telecast all over the whole world because it did help to set the pattern for this entire festival that we're observing now.

Peace is a state of positive mental tranquility, but it is more than just tranquility. It's a state of confidence, it's a state of love; it's a state of mind, an attitude of mind. And it was explained to those in the local audience here this morning, how (even though we live in a world of great disturbance and of **war** and of every evil) that we can have peace in our own hearts and our own lives even in such a world. I hope those same scriptures will be given to many of you all over the United States and Canada and Britain in other local sermons.

Today we're living in a SICK, SICK world. A VERY SICK world! A world filled with crime, filled with violence and war, filled with immorality, and filled with starvation and ignorance and suffering and every evil and everything that we don't want – because men are living the way **they want to live**. Now it all started at the very beginning, and you find that beginning in the beginning of your Bible in Genesis 1 and verse 1.

Genesis 1:1 In the beginning God created the heaven(s) and the earth.

And it should be plural "heavens," and is in all translations except the King James; and as Moses wrote those words originally it was plural. God created the heavens at the same time He created this earth, and that may have been thousands or millions of years ago. We don't know. The Bible doesn't

state that, and there is nothing in the Bible that contradicts the fact that it might have been that long ago.

But first God had created angels and angel life, before He created the earth and before He created man. He had created angels; and God is, well, God is in the business of creation. Jesus, when He was on earth, said that He worked; and He says, “My Father works.” “My Father works and I work;” and we’re to work and labor, but we’re to work progressively and profitably.

Job’s Self-Righteousness

Now we read, in the thirty-eighth chapter of the book of Job, where Job was a very self-righteous man but a very successful and a very wealthy man. Job had built the greatest building on the face of the earth, the Great Pyramid of Giza – the Great Pyramid of Giza in Egypt. Not very many know that. He was not the emperor of Egypt. The emperor had had Job do it for him. Job was merely the one who designed and supervised the construction and the building, and doing it for the Pharaoh.

But Job was self-righteous; and God had allowed Satan to take everything from Job, and everything finally except his own life. Job still didn’t quite see the truth. He could not see that he was self-righteous. You know, that is the most difficult thing in the world – for anyone who is self-righteous to see it. He can’t see it in himself.

You know, a sinner cannot ever have salvation until he realizes he is a sinner and will be willing to repent and change to a different way of life; and he needs to know what sin is. It is a way of life. It is the transgression of God’s Law, and God’s Law is a way of life. It’s the way we **ought to live**; and it’s the way of love, the way of out-flowing love: Love to God. Love to neighbor. It’s the way that will **bring** peace. That will bring happiness and joy and every satisfying thing. It’s a way of living. It’s a practical thing, and

people don't seem to be able to see that. I never could understand why they can't, but they can't. They're blinded.

Job 38:1,4 *Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said, [verse 4] (4) Where was thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare, if thou hast understanding.*

“Now **you** built this great pyramid – the biggest, the greatest, building on earth. **I BUILT THE WHOLE EARTH! WHERE WERE YOU WHEN I DID THAT? I DID SOMETHING MUCH GREATER THAN YOU DID, JOB!**” HE’S NOW WHITTLING JOB DOWN TO SIZE. JOB WAS TOO BIG. They used to have an expression, “to big for his own britches.” I guess that would apply to Job. I guess that’s the way he was. Then God continued about the creation of the earth.

Job 38:6-7 *Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof?(7)When [Now get this: at the creation of the earth, laying the cornerstone. When ...] **the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy.***

The “morning stars” are the archangels, the cherubs; and only three are mentioned in the Bible. Lucifer was one, Gabriel is one, and Michael is the other. “All the sons of God” meaning, in this case, the angels; and it was “the sons of God” that came together up in heaven when Satan came, and God said, “Have you observed my servant, Job?” Satan said, “Well, just let me strike him; and he’ll turn to you and curse you to your face” (if you go back and read the beginning of the book of Job). So there were the angels, and why were they shouting for joy? Because the earth was to be their abode, and God made it first for the angels.

Creating Character

Now I said a while ago that God is Creator, but what is God creating?

Just what is God creating? God is creating CHARACTER **inseparately created entities**, which God has created. Separate entities having minds of their own. But now the **character** – supreme, righteous, perfect character – is something even God cannot, by Himself alone, create automatically by fiat. He cannot do that. It takes also the decision making process and the will of the individual created entity, along with the work of God, to create that character.

Now God has that character dwelling within Him. That means the perfect way of life. It means following as a motive of life and an attitude of mind and heart the way of the Law of God, the way of out-flowing love. A way of living! This world is living just the opposite way, and no wonder we're having troubles. No wonder we have violence and war. No wonder there's trouble between husband and wife, and between parents and children, between neighbors, between groups, capital and labor, black and white. Any little thing that we can find, we get prejudice against someone else; and we get into discrimination, and hatred, and everything wrong. Because the Law of God in your mind and heart is **the way of love**, the way of tolerance, the way of concern for the good and welfare of others instead of just yourself. But people have self-concern.

So God established government over the angels in order to have a way to enforce His Law, in order to create character in them. Now the angel that He put over all them was one of the archangels – the morning stars, you know “light bringers” – was one called Lucifer.

Lucifer On Earth's Throne

I'd like to turn to that in Isaiah the fourteenth chapter, and I'll read now just the twelfth to the fifteenth verse. It is speaking primarily here of the king of Babylon, but he was merely a human ruler under the government of Satan.

Satan was sitting on the throne of the whole earth, but this king of Babylon was merely a type representing Satan. So beginning with verse twelve, the lower type lifts to the greater anti-type of Satan the Devil; and speaks now of Satan, instead of just King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, beginning with verse twelve, where it says:

Isaiah. 14:12 How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer...

Lucifer was his name. Now Lucifer means shining star of the dawn, one of the morning stars that sang when God created the earth. In other words, light bringer. He was a glorious archangel as God had created him. (A little more of that in just a moment later.)

Isaiah. 14:12-14 ...son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations. [Or, a better translation, “thou who didst weaken the nations, cut down to the ground.”] (13) For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt MY THRONE [You see, he was on a throne. Now where was that throne? Was it in heaven? Was it on earth? Where was it? He said, “I will exalt my throne.” Let’s read on.] above the stars [or the angels] of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north. [That is the only place in the Bible that gives you any hint where the throne of God is – in the far, far north.] (14) I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the most High. [And some translate that “I will be the most high.”]

He was going to knock God off His throne. He was going to take over the rulership of the whole world. In other words, jealousy had entered into him and rebellion. He was put on this earth to administer the **Government of God**. The Government of God was based on a constitution or a basic law, the Law of God, the Law of out-flowing love.

The only difference between that and the Law of God and the Ten Commandments is that we are mortal humans. We are male and female.

Angels were not. We have to have in that Law the same principle expressed like adultery and honoring father and mother. They didn't reproduce. They didn't have sex. But the principle of first love to God and love to one another did apply to them just the same. But this archangel rebelled, and he talked all of his angels into a rebellion and into an army to SWOOP on up to heaven and to knock God off the throne and to take over. Now we're talking about the **rulership** or the **government over the lives of people**. That's what we're talking about.

Isaiah. 14:14-15 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds [So he was on the earth. He was under the clouds.] I will be like the most High. (15) Yet thou shall be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit [which really means to the grave. Now it begins after that to talk of the human Nebuchadnezzar.]

Now he was perfect as God had created him in the beginning. We find that in Ezekiel 28, and I'd like to read now just verses 15 through 17, where it says of this same super archangel Lucifer:

Ezekiel 28:15 Thou was perfect in thy ways from the day that thou was created...

Not the day he was born. He was not a human being. He was not born, as you and I were. He was a **created super being**, and he was **perfect** in his ways. Now none of us have been perfect from the day we were born. But here's a super archangel that was **perfect** from the day God created him. What God created was something very perfect, but character had not been instilled in him yet. He had to make his own decision about that, and he made the wrong decision. He decided on rebellion instead of accepting the Law and living the way of the Law of God and accepting it as a way of life and teaching all of the angels under him that way and ruling their lives by that kind of government.

Ezekiel 28:16-17 By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God [or the Government of God, The Nation of God, or the Rulership] and I will destroy thee [meaning “remove thee” is the correct translation there] remove thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. (17) Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty [and so on].

Now, he was one of the covering cherubs whose wings covered the very throne of God. He had been on the very throne of God. It makes me think of some of the ministers in this Church. They have been here at headquarters. They’ve gone through Ambassador College, and they have been taught and trained in the Law of God and in the Way of God and in the Truth of God; and then they’re sent out into ... We call it “out into the field.” In other words, to be a minister in charge of a local Church. Now we have had a very few of those, a small minority, who have rebelled and turned the wrong way; and they’ve turned others wrong with them, just as this Lucifer did. But I’m very happy to say that the majority have gone the right way; and today let me say that I’m happy to report to you that the Church today is in the most perfection condition of love that we have ever been.

In fact, I’m a little frightened about that, brethren, because Satan understands that too; and he’s not going to let that stay that way if he can change it. Satan is going to strike this Church some way. I don’t know how, but I just know he’s not going to rest. He doesn’t like to see this Church bound together in love as we are right now. Now he’ll strike at any one of you if you will let him. You need to be constantly on your guard because Satan, as a roaring lion, is going about seeking whom he may devour; and he would try to devour any one of you.

Well, when Lucifer rebelled, the Government of God on this earth became inoperative; and the Government of God was no longer being

administered. There was no Government of God being administered **on the earth.**

The Government Of God

Now then, I'm giving you an overview. We heard a sermon on one of the points this morning – a marvelous sermon by the way, a sermon on peace; and the best sermon I've ever heard on that subject. You know, in this Church I leave it to our ministers usually to take the individual subjects (in other words, the branches of the tree); and I keep to the trunk of the tree. I give you the overview, the overview purpose of it all; and they bring you the many, many individual points that we need to zero in on and focus down on and magnify, and individual subjects. So, you'll excuse me if I stick pretty much to the trunk of the tree, because I believe that is what God has called me to do.

Now this Lucifer became Satan the Devil, and his angels now became demons. And yet the Gospel when Jesus finally came, and the Gospel we preach to the world today, is the Kingdom of God; and that's the Government of God to **replace** that Government of Satan on this world. Now Satan is not ruling in the Government of God on this earth.

The Government of God is **not** operative any longer. It's not being administered on this earth except one place; **and that is in this Church.** And that's a voluntary rule. You have come in voluntarily. I didn't solicit any of you to come into the Church. I didn't ask any of you, I didn't plead with you, "PLEASE GIVE YOUR HEART TO THE LORD, PLEASE COME INTO THE CHURCH, PLEASE BELIEVE THESE DOCTRINES." I never did that. I proclaimed the truth; and I think perhaps the majority of you came into the Church because you heard a broadcast, or you read something I wrote in a magazine or that some other under me had written (one of the students that I

had taught).

God had called you. **NO MAN CAN COME TO CHRIST**, and there is no way to come back to God except through Christ. But no one can come to Him, except the Father draws him. And that is only those that are predestinated, as I said in the message last night that you saw on the screen. And God has picked one here, and one there, and one over here, and one somewhere else all over the world out of the **billions** of people on the earth. You happen to be one of those people that He has picked.

And think of the responsibility that rests on you, that you were chosen. But you were chosen for a purpose. You were chosen for a service. You were chosen for a big job. You were chosen to change your life. You were chosen to let God come into your life through the **power** of His Holy Spirit and fill you with the love of God – of love towards others: and love, first of all, towards God; and then towards man – and then to help in getting this message to the world.

God has not called this Church to convert the world. He isn't trying to convert the world at this time. He is calling some for the Church that are the **FIRSTFRUITS** of God's salvation. The **CHURCH IS TO BE MARRIED TO CHRIST** when He comes. And we will be turned from human into God, from mortal into immortals, from flesh and blood into divine spirit. And we will then reign and rule **UNDER** Christ. But we have to be submissive to Him and take orders from Him. We **have to be ruled now by** Him and through His Church or we'll never be able to do the ruling with Him then.

And, you know, some have gone out of this Church because they've said, "Oh, I hate that Government of God in the Church." Do you hate the Government of God, the Law of God, which is just love towards other? And the Government of God is administered in love, not in ... It's not a stern **tyrant** ruling over slaves. It is the way Christ rules and the way God rules –

in love and in mercy and in wanting to help and in wanting to serve. Jesus came as a servant, and yet He is the head of the Church. And that's the way of the Government in this Church.

God Reproducing Himself

Now God's purpose, as I said, is to create character. But now in humans God has another purpose. God's purpose is to **REPRODUCE HIMSELF**. God is NOT reproducing Himself in angels. They have no reproductive process within themselves. He made human man to have the reproductive process within himself because God is reproducing Himself in and through man. So, way back to Genesis one now once again, and we find that in the very next verse:

***Genesis 1:2** And the earth was [or it had become, became] without form, and void;*

The Hebrew words are "tohu" and "bohu," meaning a state of decay, a state of waste and emptiness as a result of the sins of the angels. God put the angels here to complete the earth. It had not been finished. It was perfect as far as God created it. He wanted them to go on and beautify it, and instead they ruined it physically. They ruined it physically. Now next, as you read in Psalms 104 and verse 30, what did God do then to a ruined earth? It says here:

***Psalms 104:30** Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou **RENEWEST** the face of the earth.*

The angels had polluted and ruined the surface, the physical surface, of the earth; and God **RENEWED** the face of the earth for man. He sent forth His SPIRIT. Now in John 1:1 you read there was in the beginning, "the Word, and the Word was with God; but "the Word was made flesh and dwelled

among us.” you find in verse 14 of John 1. The Word became Jesus Christ. He is the Word of God. But when He came as a human being He said, “I have spoken (He was the Word) but I have spoken only as my Father told me to speak”. It ALL came from God the Father. They were of the same, like mind in perfect agreement. Two cannot walk together except they be agreed, and God and Christ were in perfect agreement. God the Father was the boss, and Jesus knew that all along. He was the Word. He **spake** and it was done, as you read in one of the Psalms.

Now here you read, back in Genesis once again, the earth was in that terrible condition. Darkness was upon the face of the deep. It was all ocean, and it was all dark. Light had gone out. Light represents truth; and now it was error, and evil and, darkness.

Genesis 1:2 ...and the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters...

Now notice: I just read in Psalms 104 “*Thou sendest forth thy spirit... thou renewest the face of the earth*”. Christ is the Word who speaks and it is done. Now notice Him speaking.

Genesis 1:3 And God said [The word for God here is “Elohim,” meaning more than one person; and that includes the Word and God. That includes Christ as He later became and God the Father. So, Christ is the one who did the speaking or “Yhwh” as He is called in the Old Testament.], *Let there be light: and there was light.*

Now He began renewing the face of the earth, and finally God [or Elohim] said in verse 26:

Genesis 1:26 *Let us make man in OUR image.*

God said, “***LET US MAKE MEN IN OUR IMAGE, AFTER OUR LIKENESS***”. Now He had made cattle after the cattle kind, as you read in the

verse just before. He had made dogs after the dog kind, elephants after the elephant kind. But He said, “Let Us make man after the **God** kind.” God was going to reproduce Himself! Man was to be made like God. Man was to be made to have a contact then (a fellowship) with God, and to be begotten by God, and finally BORN of God to become SONS and CHILDREN OF GOD until they become God. But we have to have **the CHARACTER of God** infused within us, and we have to make up our own decision on that; and Adam had to make his own decision.

Now He made a man, but the man wasn't complete. I said He created the earth and it wasn't complete, the angels were to finish it. Now He renewed it, and still it isn't complete. He wanted man to go on and finish it, and all man has done ever since is do the same thing the angels did. We have polluted every physical thing our hands have ever touched on this earth. We have profaned, we have besmirched, we have polluted everything. We have ruined the earth. We've ruined our rivers, our lakes, even our seas. We've ruined the ground out of which our food comes. We have done nothing right!

Man Created In Gods' Image

But God did not make man immortal like the angels. In Genesis 2 and verse 7:

Genesis 2:7 And the [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground, and in breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

Not an immortal soul. Man was made of the dust of the ground; and what was made of the dust of the ground **is** a soul, became a soul. The **dust of the ground** became a soul. The soul then is dust of the ground. The soul is not spirit. **BUT GOD DID PUT A SPIRIT IN MAN.** Now let me tell you something. The man God created... God here is Elohim in the Hebrew,

which is uniplural and includes both God who later became the Father of Christ and also the Word who became Christ. They said, "*Let us* (Not let 'Me' make man after 'My' image. Let 'Us.') *make man after our image.*"

But God did not make man complete. Man was only half there. He made man to reproduce because God was going to reproduce man, and so man must reproduce as **a type** of what God is doing through us; and man couldn't reproduce himself. You never yet have seen a man reproduce and have a baby all by himself, have you? Neither can a woman have a baby all by herself. It takes a man and woman. And so the man was not complete, and God took a rib out of Adam and made a wife for him to be a help to him.

Today, the woman doesn't want to be a help to a man. She wants to rule over a man. And so Isaiah tells us in the third chapter, "*As for my people... women will rule over you;*" and they're beginning to do it. There were two women prime ministers in the world up to the time that England came to have a woman prime minister. I knew both of the other two. I have not met Mrs. Thatcher, but I hope to some of these days. Perhaps this fall when I'm over there, next month. I don't know. Nevertheless, women are beginning to rule and now they want the ERA Movement. Do you know who started the ERA Movement? Mother Eve, the one that God had made for Adam. She started the ERA Movement. Women don't want to do what God intended them to do today.

Now women are co-heirs with men to the Kingdom of God. They are not satisfied with that. They can be as much God as man can in the next life. But God made them for one purpose. A man can't bear children, a woman can. But they consider that as beneath them. That is a GREAT GLORY! IT'S A GLORY A MAN CAN'T DO. It's a wonderful thing that a woman can become a mother and bear children. In the eyes of God that is a **wonderful thing**, but women downgrade that today. They don't want to have children. They want to rule over men. They want equal rights with men. Well, there

shouldn't be discrimination. God didn't intend discrimination, but He didn't intend the kind of governments and laws and fighting and bickering, the kind of thing we have in this world today either.

But now here was Adam, and Adam was still incomplete. He had a spirit, but it only gave him half of a mind. He was only half mentally there. He was only half physically there. He needed a wife. Well, God took care of that. God made the wife for him. But in his mind, he had to have a part in that. He had a spirit, a human spirit; but he needed another spirit with it. It was incomplete. And just as the male needed a female, a wife with him – so the one spirit needed another spirit, the Spirit of God, before the MIND even became complete. That's what he needed.

But Adam had to choose this for himself, because character is the ability of a separately created entity having complete mind and ability to comprehend knowledge to evaluate, and to make choice and to make decisions – to choose the right, to see the right, to choose the right even against self-will and desire to go the wrong way; and to use the **self-discipline** to go the right way instead of the wrong. That is character. That is the character of God. God will not do the wrong thing. God cannot sin, because **He will not**. As long as He wills that He will not, no one is strong enough to make Him do it. No one is stronger than God. No one can compel God to sin, and God will not. So therefore, He can't.

The Two Trees

But Satan's was still on the throne, and Adam had now to decide. Would he take life? Adam, he didn't have life. He had a temporary existence. He was made of the dust of the ground. He was going to live only so long. God put him in the Garden of Eden after He had created him. And there were two trees in the center of that Garden: One the Tree of Life, the other The Tree of

the Knowledge of Good and Evil.

Now notice, one would give him life, the other was the knowledge of good and evil. But God said that would give him death, because He said, "*If you eat of that tree, you shall surely die.*" So that was the Tree of Death, but also the tree of knowledge. Now the first tree, The Tree of Life but it also was a Tree of Knowledge. It was tree of revealed knowledge from God through the Holy Spirit of God. Man didn't have full knowledge. His mind was only half there.

How would have God given Adam eternal life if he had chosen the Tree of Life? Did you ever think of that? Most people read right over that. They never talk about the Tree of Life. They go right on and they talk about the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil; and they ridicule that by calling it "Adam's apple." Adam didn't eat an apple. I don't know what the fruit was. The Bible doesn't tell us. I know what the symbolism was, I know what it meant. It meant taking to themselves the knowledge of what is right and wrong. When Adam took of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, he **took** to himself the knowledge of good and evil, of right and wrong, of what is right and wrong. **THE WAY OF LIFE, THE WAY TO LEAD TO LIFE or** the way to lead to death. He took that to himself.

Now God has opened the Tree of Life to you and me. Do you get eternal life immediately? Oh, no! First, you repent. Then you have to come to really **believe** in Christ. Not only believe that He did die for you and that His shed blood paid the penalty of your sins, but you have to first repent of those sins and be willing to turn around and go the other way. Then you have to believe Christ. That is, believe what He said; and believe the Gospel. He said, "the Kingdom is at hand, repent ye and **believe** the gospel." People don't believe the Gospel because they don't even know what the Gospel is. It isn't being preached except through this Church. Seventh Day Adventists don't preach it. The Sardis Church of God, a true Church of God, they don't preach

it because they don't know what the Kingdom of God is; and the Kingdom of God is the Gospel.

NOBODY IS PREACHING THE TRUE GOSPEL but this Church, in the world. I wonder if you knew that and if you understand that. Listen, brethren, this Church is very few in numbers and it is very great in **power**. This is the only Church that is preaching that Gospel to the world. This Church is worldwide. It's not just local. You're going to see a film during this festival of this Work, and you will see how worldwide it is; and it will compare it with the Work of the Church in the First Century. They had many apostles then. God has only given us one apostle today; and yet one apostle today, because of modern facilities ... and you're seeing some of these technological facilities right now.

You people over in England, it's tonight over there. You're hearing me. You're seeing me. As I speak into this microphone, you hear me. You people all over Canada and all over the other parts of the United States. You people down in St. Petersburg, I expect to speak to you in a couple of days down there. I'm going to come down there about, let me see, I'm going to fly down there tomorrow. You people in Big Sandy, I'm going to talk to you a couple of days after that – or next Sabbath, I believe it will be when I'll talk in Big Sandy.

Oh, what marvelous things we have; and yet all of us (virtually a hundred thousand of us) can be in this one service at this same time. We were all singing the same hymns together. Did you know that while you people right here in Pasadena were singing those hymns, so were the people in England where it is long after dark tonight? We're singing that same hymn right along with you at the same moment! What marvelous facilities we have, and I want you to see that film during the Feast.

You'll see it on your screen of what this Work is today. You will see

how your dollars – not your dollars, God’s tithe money – is being spent. It isn’t your money. It’s God’s anyway, and it is how God is having it spent. If you want to know where does that money go, you’ll want to see that film. It will show you how we take advantage of these facilities and get this message around the whole world; and this is now a worldwide Church, small in numbers but MIGHTY IN POWER.

Do you know that, in magazines and printed literature and the **power** of the press, this Church has more printing and does more printing than any other church (even though other churches have millions of members) than any other church on the face of the earth. And the printed word has done more to bring you brethren into the Church than any other kind of preaching. The printed word! It’s a marvelous thing. There wasn’t any printing press invented yet in the days of the first of apostles when the Church first started it.

In The Garden Of Eden

Anyway, we turn to Genesis 3 and verse 1. I want you to notice what happened now in the Garden of Eden.

Genesis 3:1 Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field...

I read to you, in the book of Revelation in the twelfth chapter, how the serpent is Satan the Devil. And so Satan was appearing in the form of a serpent here, although he is an invisible immortal spirit being.

Genesis 3:1 ...of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman...

Now he got to Adam’s wife. He wanted to see if she would try to rule her husband – when God made Christ the head of the Church, and He made man the head of the woman, and God the head of Christ. That is **God’s**

order. People don't like that today. They want to reverse it. They know better, more than God. I hope you women of this Church understand what a wonderful position God has given you. I think in some ways maybe a woman's position is higher than that of a man, but she doesn't want that. She wants to throw that away, what God has given her, and take something that God forbade. She just wants to rule over a man. Oh, women, give that up. We all have to submit ourselves to God and to follow His way. Now the serpent said:

Genesis 3:1-3 Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? (2) And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: (3) But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

But the serpent said: "Ah," he said, "Now, God is a liar. God is deceiving you. Look, I'm the real god of the world. You want to believe me, don't believe her. You will not surely die. God said, you're only mortal. I say you're an immortal soul. You'll never, never die."

And, you know, even the religion of Christianity still believes the serpent. They still believe that today. Brethren, human beings are not immortal. **YOU ONLY HAVE TEMPORARY LIFE. THAT'S ALL YOU HAVE. YOU'RE ONLY HERE FOR A LITTLE WHILE; AND YOU'RE HERE TO LEARN A LESSON, AND YOU'RE HERE TO LEARN HOW TO GET INTO AN IMMORTAL LIFE.**

WOMEN THAT WANT TO RULE OVER MAN, how much satisfaction is it going to get them and how long is it going to last? What are they going to do in the next life? And that's coming very soon! This whole world is about done. We're **all** going to come short before God if we don't wake up and follow the way of and the knowledge of God.

So she took of the Tree of Life – I mean the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, which is really the Tree of Death. She gave to her husband, and he also followed her as a weakling; and that’s the way men are today. Many of our students in Ambassador College, the girl students, say, ” Well, you know, we can’t find men that are really men to marry. These boys today and these young men students are all sissies. They’re weaklings, like girls.” So, some of the girls wanted to marry older men that are more like men.

My father had a very deep bass voice. He could go clear down to Low C. I can’t do that. My voice is a little lower than some of the younger men today. Men are becoming feminine. Women are becoming masculine. We don’t want to **be like God made us**. Why should the clay say to the potter, ”*Why did you fashion me this way?*” God is the Potter and we’re the clay, and we better let Him mold and fashion the way He wants to fashion us.

Anyway, God finally cast them out of the Garden of Eden (as you read in Genesis 3 and the last three verses of the third chapter of Genesis) after they had sinned. And God **CLOSED UP THE HOLY SPIRIT AND SHUT IT OFF FROM HUMAN BEINGS SO THAT NO HUMAN BEING COULD GET IN TO GET THE TREE OF LIFE.**

If Adam had taken the Tree of Life, he would have only have taken the Holy Spirit. That’s all we get. We don’t get immortal life right away. We get the Holy Spirit; and, if we’re led by the Holy Spirit, it gives us knowledge, **the revealed knowledge of God**. Men don’t have that kind of knowledge. Adam only had the ability to acquire physical and materialistic knowledge. He did not have ability to acquire **spiritual knowledge**. His mind was only half there, and Adam never took of the Tree of Life. He would have received the Holy Spirit of God if he had. His mind would then have been full and complete. It never was. And so, let’s notice now what happened. The Tree of Life was shut up.

Now God is reproducing Himself, and it is a matter of character development – of developing our character until we become of the same character as God. Then He will give us immortal life, and we will be composed of spirit. We'll have life inherent then. We'll have immortal life, life within ourselves. We won't have to breathe air to live. We won't have to have a heart pumping blood to live.

My heart completely stopped. I was dead. By mouth-to-mouth resuscitation, they brought me back before the spirit in me had left; and my mind remained complete and good, because God had something more for me to do. That was over four years ago. I don't know how much longer God will keep me here, brethren. But whatever His will is, that will be done. I will keep on trying as long as God makes it possible. That's all I can say.

Man Must Choose

Adam had to make a choice. We today have a chance to make that same choice, because God has called us. But Adam took to himself the knowledge of what is good and what is evil, and then God shut off the Tree of Life. In other words, people cannot get the Spirit of God. They cannot come to have revealed knowledge of God. They can only have the knowledge of physical and material things. That's why ALL EDUCATION in this world is MATERIALISTIC. **WHY IS IT, MY BRETHREN, THAT TODAY YOU SEE MARVELOUS PROGRESS IN TECHNOLOGY** and in science and in materialistic development of science and technology and government and the things that are being done? But you see nothing but **war** and **violence** and decay in society, and government fighting against government. Spiritually, everything is WRONG.

Physically and materially there is advancement, but it's only part of the world that is advancing. One half of the world is illiterate. One half of the

world is so poor that many of them are starving to death. Why that paradox? **Because man only has the ability to acquire physical, materialistic knowledge!** He has not acquired [{2}](#) the spiritual knowledge that can only come by revelation from God. So God shut up the Tree of Life.

Now I want to turn to the thirteenth chapter of the book of Revelation. Revelation thirteen and verse eight, where it speaks of Christ as the Lamb of God slain from the **foundation of world**. In the mind of God and the Word, or who became Christ ... Christ had offered Himself to come and be born as a human being, live a perfect life above sin, not bringing the penalty of death on Himself, and then take the penalty that **you** brought on **yourself** and that **I** brought on **myself** and pay that penalty for us by dying in our place. And that was all arranged from the time that Adam took the wrong tree and before the foundation of this world.

Now in Hebrews 9:27 [{3}](#) you read: *Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.*

It's appointed to men once to **DIE! All DIE IN ADAM**. But you read in I Corinthians 15, verse 22, "As in Adam **ALL DIE**". They've all been dying ever since Adam.

Here was a man who was trying to bring peace. He couldn't bring peace. His effort was noteworthy. He was doing all he knew to do. I hope that I will see President Sadat again in the Great White Throne Judgment, and then I will be able to teach him what he didn't know; and he will sit there and nod just like he did, smoking his pipe – only this time he won't be smoking a pipe. (And you'll see it in the televised picture that you will see during the Feast.) My heart went out to that man. I had to love him. He risked his life for peace.

He was doing the best he knew. He didn't know any better. He didn't have the knowledge. That wasn't his fault. He didn't ask to be born. He was

born of the Muslim Religion. He didn't know anything else. You wouldn't know anything else if God hadn't called you, brethren. You have to give all thanks and praise to God, not to yourself. It's not because of your worthiness that you're here, that you're sitting here in this auditorium or you people are listening all around the United States and Canada and England. Oh no, it's not because of any worthiness of our own at all.

Hebrews 9:27 *It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.*

Now the judgment we're going to learn about a week from today – The Great White Throne Judgment – the Last Great Day of the Feast. And I hope to speak to you again then and make that very plain then. I'm going to leave that until then.

Every Man In His Own Order

I Corinthians 15:22-23 *For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. (23) But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits...*

Jesus was the first to be born again, He had never sinned, but He DIED. And He was **born** again by a RESURRECTION, making possible our being born by a resurrection, being born again. Now the people of the so-called Christian religion believe they're already born again if they just say, "All right, I profess Christ, I believe Jesus died for my sins." That's all they need to have. They don't know what repentance is. They don't believe in keeping the Law of God. They say that Christ was a smart aleck young man that knew more than His Father and did away with His Father's Law. "We don't have to keep that Law." Oh, they think that Law is a terrible thing.

That Law is love. That Law is the way to peace. That Law is the way to

happiness and to mutual well-being and cooperation all together. And yet the world hates that Law of God. Well, God loves that Law and He didn't compromise with it.

Now in Isaiah 9 and verses 6 and 7, I'm going to just quote some of these now and hurry right along because time is slipping up on us. It says in Ancient Israel:

*Isaiah 9:6-7 For unto us a child is born...and the government shall be upon his shoulders, [Speaking of the prophecy of the coming of Christ] and His name shall be called, Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. (7) Of the increase of his government and peace **there shall be no end...***

He was coming as a RULER to establish the Government of God in the Kingdom of God. Now the Kingdom of God is **the born Family of God**. Christ was the first born of many brethren into that Kingdom. You and I can be born by a resurrection the same way. We can be begotten in this life, but we're not yet born. You know, an embryo in a mother's womb in the first four months of the pregnancy is not yet born. It's only begotten, and that's all we are spiritually. Physical birth is the precise exact example and type of our being spiritually born of God, exactly. But Jesus came and He said, "I will build My Church". Now then, He was going to call out certain ones. And so we read in Joel, the second chapter of Joel and verse twenty-eight:

*Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass **afterward**, that I will pour out my spirit upon ALL flesh;*

God prophesied through Joel that the time would come when the Holy Spirit would not be locked up. Now He closed the Tree of Life in the time of Adam, but He said the time will come when He would open the Tree of Life (and it comes through the Holy Spirit) to all flesh. Well, on the Day of

Pentecost, when the Church was founded, Peter said this is what Joel prophesied. But this is only the beginning. We're only the firstfruits. God has not poured out His Spirit ALL flesh yet, only the firstfruits because JESUS said in John (let me turn to that), John 6:44. Jesus said:

John 6:44 *No man CAN come to me, except the Father which hath sent me DRAW him.*

The whole world cannot COME to Christ now. THEY COULDN'T COME TO CHRIST IF THEY WANTED TOO. Well, maybe if they wanted to badly enough, God would call them. But they can't come unless God calls them. I think if anyone thirsted for it and hungered for it enough and sought it enough, I believe God would call them. But if God doesn't call them, they can't come.

That's why some of you, when you were converted in that first flush of romance, spiritual romance with Christ, you wanted to get all of your family and your relatives converted. You wanted them to get this wonderful good news; and they just laughed at you, and they thought you were crazy. I think most of you had that experience. I have. I did when I was first converted fifty-five years ago. My relatives just laughed at me. They thought I was a crackpot. They didn't want any of this kind of religion. If God the Father doesn't call, they cannot come now.

"It's appointed to men now to die, after this the judgment". We're going to learn about that a week from today, the Last Great Day of this festival. Now then, in the present time, Satan has blinded the world. You read of it in II Corinthians chapter 4 beginning with verse 3, where it says:

II Corinthians 4:3 *But if our gospel be hid [And that's about the Kingdom of God and getting into the Family of God. "IF our gospel be hid"], it is hid to them that our lost;*

Now lost doesn't mean condemned. Jesus came to save those that were lost, didn't He? We're to go after those that were lost.

***II Corinthians 4:4** In whom [those that are lost] the god of this world [Satan the Devil] hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ who is the image of God, should shine unto them.*

It isn't given to them to know now. You know, Jesus spoke about the Kingdom of God in parables; and His disciples came and said, "Why do You speak in parables"? "Well", He said, "I speak in parables so that the people in hearing would hear but would not understand. I didn't speak in parables to make the meaning more clear. I spoke in parables so they **couldn't** understand." It isn't given to them to understand. It is given them to die and after this the judgment. But every one who ever lived is going to come back in that judgment and have his chance of salvation. Oh, God is not going to pass up anybody. You'll find out in the end that God is so much more fair than the way Satan has the world believing. There's no comparison between the two.

Church Made Ready

Now to us that are called and are in the Church, here's a message just to us that is in Revelation, the third chapter and verse 21. Revelation 3:21:

***Revelation 3:21** To him the overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne [Jesus said].*

He's coming to sit on the throne of the earth and take the place of Satan who is on that throne now. Now I started this message by telling you Satan is sitting on that throne of the whole earth. Christ has **qualified to replace** Satan on that throne. But He didn't sit on that throne yet. He went to heaven

as our High Priest to TRAIN YOU AND ME to be kings and priests to sit on that throne with Him. And WE will sit on that throne IF WE OVERCOME and if we GROW in grace and knowledge **AND** something else, if we ENDURE until the very end. You can't give up and quit. Now we have to understand those things.

Then finally Christ will come, and you read of that in the nineteenth chapter of the book of Revelation. Beginning with verse 6, it says:

***Revelation 19:6-7** And I heard [And John is speaking here of what he heard and saw in this vision looking into the far future. "I heard"] it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters [like Niagara Falls rolling down, if you've ever been right at Niagara Falls or down below it and hear the roar of the waters] and as the voice of mighty thunders, saying, ALLELUIA: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. (7) Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to him: for the MARRIAGE of the Lamb is come, and his **WIFE** hath made herself ready.*

Who is His wife? Brethren, **you** are that wife! And you people all over the United States and Canada and England and the others who are not able to hear this but will hear it later (won't be able to hear it today simultaneously with us, but will hear it later). We in this Church are that wife; and it says, "That the Church will have made Herself **READY**". **BUT, BRETHREN, THAT DOES NOT MEAN THAT YOU WILL BE READY! IT DOESN'T MEAN EVERY INDIVIDUAL IN THE CHURCH IS GOING TO BE READY.** The question is **ARE YOU READY NOW** if Christ should come tomorrow?

Now, I think I can tell you He's not going to come tomorrow. Some people that don't understand say He might come any minute. That is not true. Certain other events have to happen first. But events can speed up very rapidly from this minute on, and it can come a lot quicker than you think, and

it can come very, very quickly.

But after He comes, Satan is going to be put into the bottomless pit (as you read in the twentieth chapter and the first three verses). But now beginning with verse four in the [4](#) twentieth chapter of Revelation:

Revelation 19:4-5, 6-7 The four and twenty elders [That's up in heaven, and speaking of angelic beings.] and the four ["living creatures" it should be] fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia. (5) And a voice came ... (6) for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. (7) Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

No, I wanted to read in the twentieth chapter (I did read that. Excuse me.) and beginning with verse 4.

Revelation 20:4 And I saw thrones ...

That's after the Devil was put away. That was pictured ten days ago, no five days ago, at the Day of Atonement. And now we come to the beginning of the Millennium that we're celebrating here, and this is the first Holy Day of that celebration.

Revelation 20:4 And I saw thrones and they sat upon them...

We're to reign with Christ on His Throne, ruling this earth and the **Government of this earth**. I have talked with many of the kings, the emperors, the prime ministers, the presidents over nations. They're just human beings like you and I. That's all. But you and I are going to be sitting on those thrones ruling, brethren (Do you realize that?) if we are preparing, if we are spending our time in **prayer** and in **Bible reading**, if we're growing closer to God.

Have you gained knowledge of the things of God since last Feast of

Tabernacles a year ago? I have. Have you? I'm in my ninetieth year now, but I've learned a lot in this last year. I try to pass on to you what I've learned, and I'm passing on some of that to you today that I did not know a year ago. Are you closer to God than you were a year ago? Just where do you stand? The Church is going to be **ready**, but are **you** going to be ready? That doesn't mean everybody in Church, brethren. You need to realize that.

***Revelation 20:4** ...And I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus [They'd given up their lives in martyrdom.], and the word of God, and which had not worshiped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads.*

And those are things we're going to have to cover very soon all over again. I was covering things like that some fifty years ago, about the Mark of the Beast and the Image of the Beast and the Beast and so on. Well, the time is coming now when we're going to have to get back to those things again.

***Revelation 20:5-6** But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. [You see, it's appointed men once to die and after this the judgment; and that judgment is coming a thousand years later.] This is the first resurrection. (6) Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall **reign** with him a **thousand years**.*

Now let's see. It's Revelation chapter 10 and verse 5, I believe [{5}](#).

***Revelation 10:5** And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign **ON THE EARTH**.*

Seventh Day Adventists, please listen. We're not going to reign up in heaven. We're going to reign **ON THE EARTH!** **THIS IS THE ONLY CHURCH** that understands about the Kingdom of God, brethren. The Methodists don't understand it, the Catholics don't understand it, the

Presbyterians... Oh, they're all fine people. I'm not saying anything against them as human beings. But they don't understand this **truth**; and they are dying one by one, but after this the judgment. YOU AND I ARE BEING CALLED TO A VERY IMPORTANT CALLING THAT WE CAN LEARN THESE TRUTHS, THAT WE CAN GROW IN GRACE AND THE KNOWLEDGE OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOR, THAT WE CAN ENDURE, THAT WE CAN OVERCOME and that we can then be teaching them and ruling and reigning them until God's final Work is finally accomplished. There going to be **BILLIONS** in the Church ultimately, but not in this life or this time. Not in this life or this time, it's going to be.

Now those that are alive and remain at the Second Coming of Christ will not precede those that are dead. I just read you those that are dead will be resurrected. Those of us that are still alive will be caught up together with Him in the air.

Now some have been preaching around over the world that I have said that I expect to live until the Second Coming of Christ. I HAVE NEVER SAID THAT! Did you hear me, brethren? I HAVE NEVER said that, and I don't BELIEVE that. I now believe that in ALL probability that I will NOT be living until the Second Coming of Christ. I don't know why some people, and why ...

It's because God has used me. I haven't done anything, brethren. It is Christ in me that has done something. **Christ** has done it. Give Him the praise and glory, not me. But some people want to deify ME. I find that most Protestants want to worship a human Jesus; and they have a false Jesus, a Jesus that was a smart aleck young man that did away with His Father's Law and knew more than His Father.

Well, I knew more than my father when I was nineteen and twenty years of age. When I was thirty-four I learned something different. I learned

that my father by that time had learned a whole lot. He knew more than I did by that time. But when I was nineteen and twenty, I knew more than my father. I wonder if a lot of you didn't know more than your fathers the same way. So many of you who are teens, don't think you know it all yet. You got a lot to learn yet. I still have a lot to learn. As I said, I'm in my ninetieth year, and that's a little older than most of you are.

Well, brethren, that's about it. We're here to celebrate that time of that thousand years. But in that thousand years we're going to save those...and the salvation will be open to **everybody** then that is still **living**. Of those who have **died**, they will come up in the Great White Throne Judgment after that thousand years is completed. But that time is not very far off now, and we're celebrating that time.

Now, we've had a good beginning of this festival. Let's go on and enjoy it and rejoice; but let's also remember that we need to get closer to God, everyone of us. And, during this festival, don't just think of fun in the physical sense. Think of it in the spiritual sense and of a festival that will bring us **CLOSER TO GOD**. NOT CLOSER TO PHYSICAL and material things.

I know the Bible says, "bring your money that you saved up all year and spend it on whatever your soul lusted for." I think that "lusting" is a wrong translation in the English language. "Whatever you desire." But you should only desire those things that are right in God's sight. Let this festival be something that brings us all closer to God. That's the way to rejoice, and it is A TIME OF REJOICING.! So let's go on rejoicing and rejoicing in that way. Thank you all, brethren! And all of you over in England, all of you, good night in England. And good night and good bye to all of you in Canada and on the East Coast of the United States and all over, and out in Hawaii, up in Alaska. Goodbye for now, everybody.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editorial Note: Mr. Armstrong is referring to Revelation 11:15 rather than 10:15, which he says.

[{2}](#) - Editorial Note: Mr. Armstrong says the word “required” and probably means to say “acquired.”

[{3}](#) - Editorial Note: Mr. Armstrong read verse 27 rather than verse 28.

[{4}](#) - Editorial Note: At this point, Mr. Armstrong began reading from Revelation 19, instead of Revelation 20:4 as he said. (A few minutes later, he corrected himself.)

[{5}](#) - Editorial Note: Mr. Armstrong was referring to Revelation 10:5 when he said Revelation 5:5.

Are You Ready?

Sermon – St. Petersburg, Florida USA (October 15, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Are You Ready?.....	818	The Two Trees	836
Children Set Apart	818	Endure To The End	840
Peace Will Come	820	As The Serpent Beguiled Eve	842
Foretaste Of The Future	822	The Gift Of God	843
The Wrong Way	823	Our High Priest	845
Down Payment Of God's Spirit	824	Key Positions In The Kingdom	847
Our Spiritual Calling	826	Parable Of The Pounds	849
Showing Respect For God	828	Parable Of The Talents	851
"I Can Do Nothing"	831	Held Accountable	852
God Reproducing Himself	833		

I want to read to you something I hadn't intended to use. This is my mother's favorite text in the Bible. (She died at age 95 and a half. I'll be up to matching her pretty soon. I'm in my ninetieth year now.) The 133rd Psalm – Behold, how good and how pleasant it is when brethren dwell together in unity! The last time I was here was three years ago. At that time, this Church was not dwelling together in unity; but God has been putting us back on the track. In many ways, He has been using me to help do that. That is, He has been doing it through me to a great extent.

Children Set Apart

But, let me tell you, you saw some of the coming generation up here on the stage. I wasn't able to count them. I'm sure none of you could count them, there were so many; but there must have been over two hundred. We've had choruses of two hundred both in Pasadena and in Bricket Wood in England, the college campuses; I know there weren't that many as we had here today. The children are not only a heritage from the Lord; but the

children of baptized members of God's Church, in whom the Holy Spirit of God dwells, are sanctified or set apart in a way that the children of other parents in the world are not. I wonder if you knew that?

If you will study again in the seventh chapter of I Corinthians, you will find that there – where it speaks about parents who have a mate that does not believe – that the children are sanctified in either one parent, if one parent believes. That is, they are set apart in a way that other children are not.

Now, God shut off the Holy Spirit in the days of Adam. He closed up the Holy Spirit from the world, and it was closed up until the time of the Second Adam. I'll have a little something to say about that this morning. But the Holy Spirit was opened up to the people of God through Christ in the Church when He said, *"I will build My church."* But everybody in the world has not been called into the Church, only those that were predestinated to be called. And, brethren, I wonder if you realize (that of all of the millions and four billions of people in this world) that the few of us – and we are just a tiny small **few** compared to all of the people in the world ... God looked down on all these people and picked out you, you, you, and you, and you, and me, and all of us. He chose us.

Jesus said, *"No man can come to me, except the Father that sent me, draw him."* God has drawn every one of you. He chose you, or you wouldn't be here (if, indeed, the Holy Spirit is dwelling in you, as we would assume is true). But we're children. And remember this: many parents today are neglecting their children, especially during the first six years of their lives until they're old enough to go to school. Send them off and let the teachers begin to teach them. But, let me tell you, **SATAN IS NOT NEGLECTING YOUR CHILDREN!** He goes to work on them when they're, well, a few days old. By the time they are seven, eight, nine months old, they already have been infused with the spirit of selfishness. Put two little babies, about nine months old, down on a carpet together and one toy; and watch them

fight for it.

Satan isn't neglecting your children, are you? Too many of you neglect your little children. You think you don't need to teach them anything. But Satan is getting into their little minds as fast as their minds develop; and he got, indeed, into all of your minds and mine as we were developing. We've had a hard time, and it has taken a long time for us to repent of that, and to come back and to begin to get a lot of what Satan has injected into us **out** of us – and let God's Spirit inject a lot of the love of God and the peace of God **into** us.

Peace Will Come

Now we were hearing about peace and about President Anwar Sadat of Egypt, who did die a man of peace. I had quite a conversation with President Sadat less than a year ago, just last November. I told him that I respected and admired him for what he was doing for world peace. I also told him he would not be able to bring us peace, but I told him peace would come. I said to him, "The One that we call 'God' and you call 'Allah' is going to intervene in world affairs, and – in spite of this world, and all of its troubles, and all of its war makers – is going to intervene and bring this whole world peace."

I sent a telegram to his widow (whom I knew, and who would entertain me and talk with me for several minutes while I was waiting for the President to come in to a certain room in the Giza Palace in Cairo last November) that her husband had risked his life for peace and, indeed, had finally been required to give his life for peace. But, as I had assured him, I can't say that his life was not in vain because his efforts were not going to bring peace. He didn't have that kind of ability.

But there was a man who did not know God really (He knew God as Allah, but he didn't know Him really.) that was doing what he did know and

was risking his life to have peace. And, you know, I hope that someday I will meet Anwar Sadat again, and be able to carry that conversation on, and bring him into the Kingdom of God in the Great White Throne Judgment. We'll be hearing about that next Tuesday, and I hope you will hear the message that I hope to bring at that time.

I'm sorry that in the marvelous facilities that God has made possible for us, that I guess now – the day before yesterday (I get mixed up. Time goes by so rapidly with these days.) – that you didn't get the video or the picture portion that was coming from Pasadena until after all of the preliminary events were over. I'm so sorry that you didn't get to see that part of "The Hallelujah Chorus" just before the sermon. But those of you who were here last night, I believe you did see it last night. It should have been at the climax of the Young Ambassadors' film last night. You would have seen that. You did hear the music apparently. But it's remarkable – the technological facilities that have been made possible and that God can use in getting His message, His gospel, OF HIS KINGDOM, OF HIS GOVERNMENT, to all the world today.

Now there is going to be another film during this Festival that I want you all to see if possible; and that is ... It's a sort of ... Well, it's a film pictorially showing you just what this whole Work is, and comparing it to the Work of the early apostles in the first century; and how the facilities that are made possible for us today (technological and scientific facilities) are enabling us to do so much more today than Peter and the original twelve, and Paul and the other apostles that went with him after the original twelve had apparently been sent over the Western Europe and to Britain – because you don't read anymore about them after you get just a portion of the way, about a third of the way, through the book of Acts. From there on, you read only about the travels and the Work of the apostle Paul to the Gentiles. But they had gone to the lost sheep of the house of Israel, and the world doesn't seem

to know that.

Foretaste Of The Future

Well, brethren, we are here enjoying a foretaste of the World Tomorrow – the Kingdom of God – when God **does** intervene in this world's affairs, and when He **does** bring us peace; and there will be no more war. They'll be beating their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruning hooks; and they won't learn war anymore. Today they learn war. We have our academies (or our colleges, you might say) of the Army, of the Navy, of the Air Force, and so on, where they are taught war and how to fight. Thank God, those days are going to be over soon!

But this morning I want to ask you: What are you going to be doing then? What are you going to be doing, say, a hundred years from now? Fifty years from now? Because, if you have God's Holy Spirit in you (whether you're still living at the time of the Second Coming of Christ, or whether you have died between now and then), you ... If you die, you'll be resurrected immortal. If you are living, you'll be changed in a moment in the twinkling of an eye; you won't have a heart pumping blood in you any longer. You won't have to breathe air to live. You won't be composed of matter from the ground any longer. You will have SELF-CONTAINING LIFE. None of us has that now. We only have a temporary existence.

We are only here for a little while, and most people on the face of this earth don't know **why** they're here. They don't know what life is. They don't know **what** man is, and they don't **why** man is, and **how** he came to be here on the face of this earth. They just don't know those things. But God has revealed them to us – if we see them, if we understand His Word. God has made that Word clear and plain to those of us that He has called to lead and to teach in His Work.

But this world does not know those things. This world has gone the way of Adam, and this world is a world of Satan. It is led by Satan.

Satan works on the minds of every little child from the day it's born, and Satan gets in a lot of work in the mind of every child during its first year of life. We have come up among that kind of a world. In fact, Satan got to our lives too, and to our minds – every one of us, when we were little. I hope we have gotten a lot of that out by now. That's quite a process to get that **out** and to get the truth of God, and the Spirit of God, and the Way of God **into** our minds.

The Wrong Way

But this is Satan's world; and Satan has his religions, and he has his churches. Of all of the religions on the face of this earth, do you know that **NOT ONE KNOWS WHO AND WHAT GOD IS? Not one!** Do you think the Christian religion knows who and what God is? Most of them think God is a trinity, and limited to a trinity. They don't know that God is a Family, and that you and I will be part of that Family someday – all of us who do overcome, who are led by His Holy Spirit, and who do endure to the end.

In Revelation 18:4, where the apostle John is telling what he saw in a vision, it was like a dream; but it was a vision that he saw on the isle of Patmos, looking into the time just ahead of us now, in the Day of the Lord. In verse four, the eighteenth chapter of Revelation, he says he:

***Revelation 18:4**...heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.*

What is he talking about? He's talking about Babylon, if you begin at the first verse. Talking about Babylon, and it's described in the chapter just

ahead, and verse five:

Revelation 17:5 Upon her [and the female indicates a church and a religion – “upon her”] *forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.*

In other words, the Babylonian Mystery Religion having become great; and she is a great momma church. Her daughters came out of her protesting and calling themselves Protestant. God calls them harlots and calls her a great whore. She says that she is the Kingdom of God, and she is only a church of Satan. She says the Millennium has already come and Christ has returned. But it wasn't Christ who returned. It was the Pope, who is the 'vicar of Christ.' Do you know what 'vicar of Christ' means? It means 'in place of Christ.' It means one what has kicked Christ out of the way and replaced Him. That's what it means. God calls that an abomination and filthiness in the sight of the living God! (And I do dare to say that in public.)

But how did this world become the way it is? How did such religions come to be? Why did we grow up like we did? Why did Satan come to be here, and how did he come to influence all of us? And why is it, if Christ came as the Savior, that He hasn't saved the world? And, that most of the world is still going the wrong way? And that even Jesus said no man could even come to Him unless the Spirit of the Father drew him? Or the Father who sent Him would draw them; and He would draw them through His Spirit, of course. I'll explain those things. The world can't explain it. The world does not understand those things at all.

Down Payment Of God's Spirit

Brethren, you noticed in Ephesians the second chapter and beginning with verse one. This is speaking to the Church at Ephesus, and it's also

speaking to us. We are that same Church, about nineteen hundred and fifty years later.

Ephesians 2:1 And you hath he quickened ...

Or, that is, “made alive” because, if we have the Holy Spirit of God, we already have the Life of God within us. It is sort of a partial down payment on a down payment of immortal Life. That’s what it is. It’s called ‘an earnest’ of the Spirit, like an earnest payment when you buy a piece of property. It’s not the full down payment yet, only a part of it. That’s what we receive when we receive the Holy Spirit.

Ephesians 2:1 You hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins.

We were dead! In other words, we were not born with Life in us at all. God did not create Adam with Life. Adam was created out of the dust of the ground, and God breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man, made of the dust of the ground, became a soul. Not an immortal; but a mortal, living soul – what was made from the dust of the ground. A soul is material, out of the ground (not spirit at all). And yet God did put a spirit in the man He created, but the man needed another Spirit. He needed the Spirit of God. But he had to undergo a test to see whether he could qualify for that Spirit or not, and the first Adam failed.

So notice this: “*You hath He quickened,*” or made alive. That is, by giving us the Holy Spirit – which is the presence of immortal Life within us now. And you read in first John, the third chapter, beginning with verse two [{1}](#), that “Brethren, behold, that already we are the children of God; but it doesn’t yet appear what we shall be.” In other words, we don’t ... You can’t see yet what we will be because “when Christ comes, we will be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is” (as it says in the same verse, or the first two or three verses there) – His face is shining like the sun in full brightness, His

eyes like shooting flames of fire; and that's the way we will be in the resurrection, and in the Kingdom of God. But already we are the sons of God even now in this mortal flesh. We have the presence of God's Spirit in our minds, and His Life within us through His Holy Spirit.

Our Spiritual Calling

***Ephesians 2:2* Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world.**

And you and I did, all of us. I did, you did – until God reached down, saw us, and in some way called us. Brethren, it wasn't my preaching over the air; it wasn't my writing in print; and it wasn't that of any of the students that came to Ambassador College, and learned under me and have gone out and taught you. It was the Spirit of God that called you. God Almighty, the Father, looked down on the earth and picked out you and said, "I'm calling this person." He called you; but there were hundreds all around you, and thousands around you, He did not call.

He's called us to be THE FIRST to put our hope in Christ, THE FIRST to receive His Spirit and to be trained; and this life is for a purpose. It's a temporary life. You don't have immortal Life. You only have a very temporary life now. This life won't last long. I know that my life is mostly over. I was late getting here this morning, and the reason was it took me so long. Because my eyesight is now so bad, I had to have my wife helping me to get markers so I could turn to the scriptures I want to have to talk to you today, so it would save me time after I got here. So I held you about ten or fifteen minutes before the service began, but I've probably saved you more time than that through the sermon!

But my eyesight is getting bad. My hearing is bad. Well, I find that the men of God of old were like that too. Isaac's eyes were so dark he couldn't

realize it when his wife was deceiving him, with putting Jacob in the place of Esau. And then Jacob's eyes were so dim that he couldn't see when he put the blessing on Ephraim and Manasseh; but he knew where they were, and he crossed his hands when he put his arm on them to put the blessing on the sons of Joseph. So I guess it's normal that people God is using find their eyesight gets very dim as this physical existence wears on towards its end, but we have to keep going just the same.

Ephesians 2:2 *Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience ...*

It says children, and it does begin with little children. He's been working in you and me, and He's been working in the people all around us. And yet, He's called us out from among them to be separate. Now, brethren, let me make one thing very plain right at this point. He didn't call you and me because we're any better than the others He did not call. Anything we have is from the goodness of God, not from any goodness within us. You look at me as if there's something good in me. Oh, brethren, please don't do that. There's nothing good in me at all, except what God has put in me. Absolutely nothing! Of me, there's nothing that's good. Of you, there's nothing that is good.

Don't deify a human being! Do you know that's what the Protestants are doing today? They deify a human Jesus that was **a false Jesus**, and not the true Jesus Christ at all. A Jesus that was a smart-aleck young man and that knew more than His Father, and did away with His Father's commandments, and says, "There's no law. You live any way you want." Or "live the way that the Protestant church has said you must live today." They don't know the truth of God at all. They just lack the knowledge. But we have to grow in knowledge and the grace of God. We have to grow in the knowledge of Christ if we're ever going to get into His Kingdom.

Now it all started with the first Adam, as you read back here in Genesis 1, and verse one. *“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.”* Now the word for God was Elohim. Moses wrote those words a long, long time ago.

Showing Respect For God

Brethren, I noticed it during the sermonette: there were all kinds of people just walking around here and there. Are we in a service of Almighty God, or are we not? Let's not get up and walk unless it is absolutely necessary, because we should honor the God who caused us to be here and commanded us to be here for this day. Do you know that our fellowship, when we meet here, is not just with ourselves alone? But in I John (near the end of the New Testament) you read that our fellowship is with Jesus Christ and with God the Father. They, in spirit, are here with us. You know, there are a lot of things that we should realize when we come to a service like this. It's a very solemn and serious thing. We're coming into the presence of God.

I'm going to just deviate here and sidetrack for just a moment. I want to tell you something, an instruction that I think you people need. It was back on December 1, 1968. I was in Jerusalem, and I was in the palace (as they called it at that time, although they built another one later) of the president of Israel. But first, I was over in one of the office buildings of the university, of the Hebrew University in Jerusalem, and with one of the top professors there, Dr Aviram. You know, over in Israel they don't dress up very much or very often. He had an open shirt collar sticking out, and we started to go. We got down the hallway; and he said, “Oh wait, wait, wait! I've got to go back and put a jacket on. We're going into the presence of the president. I mustn't go in dressed like this!” He went back to put a jacket on, but he still didn't put on a necktie or anything.

But you notice, when you see a picture of Prime Minister Begin in Washington, he's always dressed up; but he's not always dressed up in Jerusalem. I've seen him in Jerusalem, when he was not dressed up. I've sat and talked with him for a long time, the same as I have with President Sadat of Egypt; and our last conference (last November) ended in a great big bear hug.

I found Prime Minister Begin had left an important government conference in Tel Aviv, one-hour drive away, to come to Jerusalem to meet me. He left those people, in the middle of it, to be on time for his appointment with me; and then he had to drive another hour back after our conference, and finish the conference. And he left those people waiting for three hours on him back there. I apologized. I said, "Well, if I'd known that, I wouldn't have asked you to do a thing like that." He said, "Mr. Armstrong, I would get up at two-thirty or three o'clock in the morning to come see you."

So some of the leaders of this world have given great respect to Christ's apostle, even though they don't know Jesus Christ. But they do know that somehow God's presence is there, and that God is using His servant; and they do give respect.

We should realize that, when we're here, we are in the presence of God; and, brethren, sometimes we're very careless of how we come dressed at the Sabbath meetings, or at any meeting where God is present. Now, if you had seen me getting off the plane last night, you'd have seen me unshaved and with wrinkly clothes. I wasn't dressed up very well. But I was coming now into an assembly where our fellowship is with God the Father, and with Christ; and I had to shave and dress up to be here this morning; and, brethren, you should all be dressed up whenever you come to Christ's service and to the Church service. You're meeting with Christ and with God the Father. You owe Them that respect, and sometimes we treat God and Christ very cheaply. We think we can just come with overalls or any old kind of sloppy clothes.

BRETHREN, YOU MUST NOT DO THAT!

While I'm on it, let me tell you something else. There are many more people here than are registered. There are hundreds of you who have failed to register. In other words, you're still **children of disobedience!** You don't want to obey! Now that's the way we were last time I was here, and the whole Church was like that. It was divided. Some ministers were getting together and teaching different doctrines, and trying to say, "Well, I think maybe the doctrines of the Church are wrong. Let's get some different doctrines."

Now, we've been getting back on the track this last three years. We've been trying to please Christ, and Christ is now beginning to bless us. When we please Him, He will bless us. You know that for the last three years, for the first time in history, we haven't had to go to the bank and borrow money in January or in July. Before that, we always had to borrow a minimum of at least a million dollars in January and another million or more (and sometimes two or three) in June or July – and pay it back out of the first Passover and Unleavened Days' offerings, and pay back the other loan that we made in July with the Feast of Tabernacles special offerings. Do you know that for the last three years – since we've been trying to please God and get back on the track – we haven't had to borrow any money whatsoever?

Our financial budget is balanced. We have reserves in the bank drawing interest of an average of 15-18%, and several million dollars at that. We still don't have enough. This Work can still expand and grow, and could grow a lot faster if we just had more money. I've been asking for more money lately, not because we're in debt. I find others pouring out their hearts on the air, saying "Oh, we're going to have to go off the air if you don't send us money!" We never beg the public for money. You never saw me beg the public for money, and you won't. When I have to beg for money, I get down on my knees and go to God and beg Him. Let me tell you, when our ways

please Him, He takes care of us. If He's not taking care of us, we'd better look right down in our own hearts and our own minds, and see where the trouble is. That's where the trouble is! If we please Him, He will bless us.

You know, I really received a great inspiration seeing all of those young people up here on the stage singing this morning. They are a heritage of God. They are coming "children of God." And I know that God wants us to look after our children – to love them and take care of them, and bring them up in the nurture and the admonition of the Lord, and to begin to teach them. Not just correct them, not just spank them or scold them; but **teach**. I find they have to be spanked once in a while; but, if they were taught more, they'd be spanked a lot less. Let me tell you that. We don't teach enough. We wait for the teachers to teach them. Parents need to teach their children. (Maybe it's more important to say some of those things than the things I intended to say to you in the sermon.)

"I Can Do Nothing"

Well, "*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*" Moses was writing that; and the word he wrote was Elohim, which is a uni-plural. God is more than one person.

Now you read in I John, in the New Testament, "*In the beginning was the Word.*" The Word was a personage – a great immortal, divine personage, called the Word and the Spokesman, the One who spoke." ... *and the Word was with God.*" God is another person, so now we have two persons; but "*the Word*" also "*was God.*" They were both God, and yet They're different persons!

Now Elohim, that we find here, is the same two persons. And the Word was made flesh later on, and dwelt among us. (That was 1950...1900 and, oh, about 80 some years ago now.) It was Jesus Christ, but He was not the Son of

God originally. He was only the Son of God when He was born of the virgin Mary as a human being. But He is the One. God told Him what to do. When He came in the human flesh, He said, “I’ve spoken nothing of Myself.” He said, “Of Myself I can do nothing.”

How much do you think you can do? How much can I do? Nothing! You give me credit for having done things in this Church. Brethren, I didn’t raise up this Church. I didn’t build Ambassador College. I didn’t do this Work. Jesus Christ did it! He only used me as an instrument. Did you ever see a violin play a tune? I never did. I’ve seen Yehudi Menuhin play a tune on a violin, I’ve seen Isaac Stern do it, and I know both of them. But I never saw the violin play itself. Well, I’m only an instrument. Don’t deify me! Don’t look to me as if I’m some great person. I’m not! I’m just a hunk of human clay, like you are. That’s all.

I’ve tried to let God come into my life, to take it and use it. I intended to give my life to Him 55 and some years, almost 56 years, ago. I haven’t always left it there 100%, I’m sorry to say; but I intended to. When I didn’t, I repented of it, and I asked Him to forgive me; but my attitude was right. Two can’t walk together except they be agreed, and I was at least agreed with Him. He reached down and picked me up every time I slipped and fell. Oh yes, I’ve sinned even since I’ve been converted; and SO HAVE YOU – every one of you! You’ve sinned since you’ve been converted, every one of you!

But in I John 1 it says that if we (we Christians, who have His Spirit), if we sin ... If we, if we say we do not sin, we’re just liars and are not telling the truth. But if we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins – reach down and pick us back up, and walk along with us again, if we walk with Him in harmony and unity.

But we must all believe the same thing. We must all believe the same thing that Christ does, and that God does. I’ve been trying to get this Church

back on the track of what God believes, and what Christ believes, and what They say – not what I believe. I’ve had to change what I believe and give it up. I’ve had to accept what Christ believes and what He teaches. Don’t get off with someone else a little privately and whisper and say, “I don’t agree with Mr. Armstrong. Do you? Well, let’s us get some different ideas!”

Oh no, brethren. Come to me with it. You can get to me. There was a time when some of them around me wouldn’t let you get to me. That’s all over with now. You can get to me through the very man you heard preach the sermonette this morning, Mr. Bob Fahey. As I say, I can be had. You can get to me. If I’m wrong, you come and tell me so I can be right with you. I don’t want to be wrong. Don’t try to keep it from me, and go get others along in your way. And if you have some truth, don’t be selfish about it. Share it with me. I try to share all the truth I have with you. If you think I’m wrong ...

Look, we must all speak the same thing. That’s what God tells us, and what He commands, I Corinthians first chapter. But it must be the same thing that Christ speaks, and He’s the Word. Everything He speaks, He got from God the Father; and there’s perfect agreement. I’m not the head of this Church. Christ is. I don’t rule this Church. Jesus Christ is the ruler. If you don’t like the government in this Church, you go tell God about it – because He made Christ the head of the Church, not me. I just want to serve Him, and I hope that’s the way you do too.

God Reproducing Himself

Well now, God was more than one person. And then God said, in verse 26:

Genesis 1:25 *Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.*

He had made the animals. God had made birds and fishes, land animals,

each after its own kind – cattle after the cattle kind, dogs after the dog kind, elephants after the elephant kind. But He said, “Let Us make man after Our kind.” In other words, “Let Us make humans after the God kind.” We are made **after the God kind**, now in form and shape and possibly having the same mind. We have a mind because He put a spirit in the brain, that He didn’t put in animal brain, to give us minds.

When He made the first man, that man wasn’t complete. He wanted men to reproduce themselves. And the reason: because God is **reproducing HIMSELF through man**. YOU CAN BECOME GOD! Just think of that! The world doesn’t know that – that they can actually become God. No other religion, no other church, on the face of this earth that I know of believes that. If there is one, I’d like to hear of it. I just don’t know of it, and we do need to know these things.

But God made man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a mortal (not an immortal) soul – a living, mortal soul just like animals. But man couldn’t reproduce himself. So God took a bone out of [{2}](#) one of his ribs and made a woman for him, because he wasn’t complete, so that a man and his wife become one. They’re not complete, either one of them, alone. But your mind isn’t complete either. He put only one spirit in it, and he needed another Spirit.

And man did not have Life. He only had a temporary existence. But the Tree of Life was there and offered to Adam in the Garden of Eden. And God said, “You can freely eat of that Tree; but of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil you cannot take, or you will die.”

Man had the ability for certain knowledge. He had a spirit in him that gave him a mind that could comprehend physical knowledge, materialistic knowledge – just the things he could see, the things he could hear, the things he could taste, and the things he could smell and feel. And you can’t know

anything else, except what you know by one of those five senses. You can't know anything else. But he needed the Spirit of God, and that was in the Tree of LIFE.

Now, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil [***At 43:39, this audio file skips a section of the sermon. The text from here to the next ** notation is compiled from other tapes.*] was the **tree of death** because God said, "If you take it, you will surely die." Well then, the Tree of Life was not a tree of death. It was a **tree of life**, but it also was a tree of knowledge. If Adam had taken of the Tree of Life, what would he have had? People don't stop to think about that.

Well, God has opened the Tree of Life to you and me through the second Adam, Jesus Christ. But it doesn't give you and me eternal Life and immortal Life just immediately. No, we receive the Spirit of God first; and the Holy Spirit of God impregnates us with immortal Life, but we're not born yet. When you...*(gap in recording)*...your mother, until you develop a physical human form and shape and body before you can be born.

Now we are a spiritual ovum; and we have to be impregnated from God the Father, which is the sperm cell that imparts its immortal Life to us; and that's only the start! Then we have to grow spiritually to be born again. Nobody is 'born again' but Jesus Christ! These Protestants that prate around about being 'born again' don't know what they're talking about! Brethren, God has opened our eyes to understand what they don't understand. They are deceived. The whole world is deceived, by Satan the devil. [*** 43:40—This particular audio file begins again at this point.*] All nations are deceived. You and I were deceived once, but we don't need to be any longer. We were "*dead in trespasses and sins,*" but now He has imparted immortal Life to us through the Holy Spirit.

The Two Trees

Well, Adam took the wrong Tree. He took to himself the knowledge of evil. With his mind, which was capable of understanding only material knowledge, he said, “That’s enough. I don’t need spiritual knowledge.” So, God then shut up the Tree of Life. In other words, God shut up the Holy Spirit from human beings. He shut it off from human beings; and human beings have NO ACCESS to the Holy Spirit of God, or immortal Life. But God reached down and picked out you and me. The Church is only the **firstfruits** of His salvation. When Christ comes and begins the Kingdom of God, then we’ll begin to convert everybody else that is now alive.

But what about the rest of the people that died? What about Adam’s children: Cain, and Abel, and Seth? Well, we read in Hebrews 9:27 [{3}](#), it’s appointed to men once to die and after this the judgment; and they all die in Adam. So we read in I Corinthians 15:22, “*As in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.*” They’ll come into the judgment at the end of the Millennium. (We’ll hear about that on next Tuesday, the final Great Day of this festival.)

Now Jesus came and said He would build His Church, and He did. The prophet Joel, in Joel 2:28, had said that the time would come when God **would** open up the Holy Spirit and pour it out upon all flesh. He closed the Holy Spirit TO ALL HUMANITY at the time of Adam. You read in Genesis 3:22-24, God closed up the Holy Spirit; and the world could never receive the Holy Spirit. The world had only the spirit of man, not God’s Spirit (not immortal Life at all); and he could only understand physical and materialistic knowledge. That is all.

But Jesus came to qualify.

Now, God put Satan on a throne on this earth. Originally, he was the

archangel Lucifer; and angels originally inhabited this earth. But Lucifer rebelled against the government of God. He was put on A THRONE on this earth OVER THE WHOLE EARTH, to rule the whole earth with the government of God. He had been trained in the government of God at God's throne in heaven. But he rebelled. He said, "I don't believe in God's way." Now God's way is God's Law, and His Law is the way of love – out flowing love toward others: first love to God, then love to neighbor.

Satan said, "Why should I love others? I just love me. I want everything for myself." So he armed all of the angels under him. He was a super-angel, a cherub, an archangel – greater than the other angels (in greater power, greater mind). They swooped up to heaven and tried to knock God off the throne; but they were knocked right back down to the earth, and Satan's been here ever since. He was there for Adam, and he tempted Eve. Eve tempted Adam, and they took to themselves the knowledge with the kind of minds they already had; and they didn't get the Spirit of God.

But Christ opened up the Spirit for the Church, and Joel said the time would come when He would pour out His Spirit on all flesh. Now, that time has not yet come. But on the day of Pentecost, there were the few of them there on the day of Pentecost that started the Church. And a great multitude of thousands came rushing in, because they saw the great display of the Holy Spirit coming like tongues of fire sitting on their heads and with the sound of a rushing mighty wind. Peter said, "This is what Joel prophesied, that God would begin to pour out His Spirit on all flesh." But that was only **the beginning** because Jesus Christ said, of His Church, no one can come to Him except the Father draws; and the Church is only the **firstfruits**. God is only calling a few, just the Church, He's picking out of the world. That's why we're so small, brethren.

Overcoming And Growing

But we are to overcome Satan. We are to come out of the way of Satan, and to come into God's way of love – out flowing love; and that's the way to peace. Then we will be made very God, like God is, at the Second Coming of Christ; and then He's coming to reign and to put Satan away. We celebrated that just a little, let's see, about seven days ago, on the Day of Atonement, which really is to teach us of the time when Satan will be put away, after Christ comes; and we had a festival teaching us the Second Coming of Christ about 17 days ago, on the Feast of Trumpets.

Now we're seeing what is going to happen after Christ has come, and after He has put Satan away, and when Christ is sitting on the throne ruling. But, brethren, He's not going to rule alone by Himself. He is raising up YOU AND ME, and we have to... Well, we're going to school. This is a temporary life. We're going to school to learn about Christ, to learn the Word of God, and here's the Textbook! {4} We're to learn how to rule under Christ, and how to convert and save the world when God opens up the Holy Spirit to the whole world; and He will, very soon now. He's calling you and me to be able to teach them then.

We have to GROW in grace and in the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ. How much are you growing in knowledge? Do you know more now than you did when I spoke here three years ago? Well, I do! I've learned a lot. I've learned a lot since the first of this year. In my 90th year, I've learned a lot. How much are you learning every year? Are you **growing** in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ? Are you **overcoming** the ways that Satan got into you and the way of the world around you? You'll never get into the Kingdom of God unless you are, brethren. You're not already there! You're on trial, and we're coming to the time of final exams right now. We're getting very close to the time of the Second Coming of Christ – very, very close.

Now it was prophesied of Jesus in Isaiah – his prophecy in 9:6-7 – that

Christ would come (You heard that read this morning in the sermonette.) coming as *“The Prince of Peace,”* and called *“Wonderful ... The mighty God, The everlasting Father.”* And He did come, and He overcame Satan, and He qualified to sit on that throne and rule over the world.

Now we’re in a world ruled by Satan, but Satan has governments over each nation. I know many of the kings of these nations, and they don’t know themselves that they’re in part of a world ruled by Satan. They don’t know that. Satan is invisible. They don’t see him. A lot of them don’t even believe he exists.

I know that they have problems they can’t solve. I talk to them about their problems, all around the world. I’ve probably talked to more kings, and presidents, and prime ministers, and emperors in their own offices (which is the thrones where they sit) than any other man on earth today – because God is sending His apostle to those places – and I go there representing you. You can’t all go there.

Well, I’d expected to have another meeting with President Sadat next month. I don’t know whether I can meet his successor. But I already had a telephone communication with President Sadat’s right-hand man (the man right next to him, whom I know very well), and that was before the assassination. I’ll wait till things quiet down a little bit, and then I’ll telephone him again and see if it’s safe to come over and meet the man who will be elected. Let’s see, that election is to take place now almost any day, isn’t it? But it’s almost certain that the man who was the vice-president will now be made president, and I hope to meet him.

But, brethren, they’re only on thrones that are ruled with the super throne over the whole earth by Satan the devil. Christ is coming to rule over the whole earth; and you and I are going to be sitting on thrones, ruling other people and other nations. Now then, what are we going to be doing? As Jesus

qualified, so you and I have to **qualify** to get into the Kingdom of God. He had to qualify to replace Satan and sit on that throne, and Jesus did. He met Satan, and refused to go Satan's way, and insisted on going the way of God – the way of love toward God and love toward others. It all revolves around the law of God.

But we have to first repent of the way we did live, and come out of living that way. Then we have to BELIEVE GOD. Not only believe on Christ, but believe what He says. He's the Word of God, and we have to believe what He says. Then God will give us the Holy Spirit, and then we must GROW in grace and in the Spirit of God. How much are we growing? How much are you overcoming the way that is wrong and the ways of this world? How much have you come out of this world? How much are you still interested in the ways and interests of this world? How much are you interested in the ways of the Kingdom of God and what is going to happen then?

Endure To The End

Let's turn to Romans 8, beginning with verse 16 [{5}](#):

Romans 8:16 *The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit ...*

There is a spirit in man. We need another Spirit with it, the Holy Spirit. Just as Adam was a male and he wasn't complete. He needed another person – a wife, a female; and God made a female for him. Well, we have the one spirit, the human spirit; but we need the Spirit of God with it. Now if you have really repented, if you have really given yourself over to God and to live His way from here on (and not Satan's way and this world's way), and you have really believed and have been baptized in Him, you have received His Spirit. So:

Romans 8:16-17 *The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are [already] the children of God [not yet born, just begotten]: (17) And if children, then heirs [not yet inheritors, only heirs] of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him [as we do now in this life], that we may be also glorified together.*

Glorified! Made immortal! Given Life inherent, self-existent Life! Not this temporary existence that we have now. Brethren, that's our heritage.

Romans 8:18 *For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.*

So, you see, we're only begotten now – not yet born. Not yet born at all. But, as I said, we must grow in knowledge and in the grace of Christ. Now also Jesus said, in Matthew 24:13:

Matthew 24:13 *But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.*

How many have we had in the Church three years ago that are not here today? How many, when the Church was sort of... There were little groups splitting off here and there, and dividing, and wanting to get different ideas and different doctrines. They have not endured. It's only "he that endureth unto the end, the same shall be saved." And that is the verse just before it says that we'll have the sign, that we are drawing near the very end of this age, when this gospel of the Kingdom of God shall be preached for a witness to all nations, and then shall the end of this age (and this world, Satan's world) come. At that time, it will come.

Now remember: Satan is still on the throne on this earth. He is still there, and he is ruling over the nations. He is ruling over the people of this world. When a head of a nation tries to go against Satan and bring peace, Satan has someone to assassinate that man (as he did President Sadat). That's

the world you live in, brethren. He's manipulated these people, that their minds are only half there. Their minds aren't complete until they have God's Holy Spirit. Do you know the most ignorant people in this world are the most highly educated with the most PhDs and other doctorate degrees and letters after their names (because they don't have a complete mind). They only have this physical mind. They don't have the Spirit of God in their minds, which they need.

So, let me see how time is going. We have a little time yet, apparently.

As The Serpent Beguiled Eve

Let's notice now in II Corinthians 11:3, where Paul said to the Church at Corinth:

II Corinthians 11:3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

Satan can get to us, and he can get to our children. He is the prince of the power of the air. He BROADCASTS over the air.

Now yesterday you saw me on the screen up above. Or the day before yesterday, I guess it is now. I get mixed up on time sometimes. Day before yesterday, I was in Pasadena; but what I was saying was transmitted over here. You heard it just the same as if you'd been in Pasadena. They heard it in England, and it was late at night over there. It was really the next day. The first holy day had already ended over there; but we couldn't help that, because we live on a round earth.

But you notice how Satan is deceiving the world. Now we come to verses 13 on to 15; and I want you to notice how the world is deceived by ministers, just like Jesus said. Many would come in His name – professing

that they are the ministers of Christ, and saying that Jesus is the Christ; and yet DECEIVING THE WORLD – and they have been doing that! Well, beginning with verse 13 in II Corinthians 11:

II Corinthians 11:13-15 For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ [or ministers of Christ]. (14) And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. [He says, “I am an angel of light.” But he’s not. He’s an angel of darkness.] (15) Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers [SATAN’S MINISTERS, professing to be the ministers of Christ!] ...

Everyone who says he’s a minister of Christ does not represent Christ! But now listen to me just a minute right there: Most of these men are, themselves, **deceived**. Don’t blame them. They’re not absolutely dishonest. I can’t judge them. I don’t know their hearts. They probably are deceived. I don’t know that they willfully know they’re wrong. Satan has deceived them; and a person who is deceived doesn’t know he’s deceived, otherwise he wouldn’t be deceived. He’d know he is wrong. But Satan is the deceiver.

*II Corinthians 11:14-15 No marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. (15) Therefore it is no great thing if **his** ministers [Satan’s ministers] also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness [saying they’re the ministers of Christ].*

And so the world is full of that, my brethren. That is even the religion of “Christianity” – the greatest religion in the world, has more followers than any other religion.

The Gift Of God

Now, eternal Life is a gift. It’s a gift from God. First, it is God who looks down and picks the one to be called now. Now the time is ... You see,

it's appointed for the world to die and after this the judgment. Judgment will begin on the world after Christ comes (in the Millennium). Then it'll be on all the rest who have died (at the end of the Millennium, after a thousand years, when there'll be a great resurrection). And others who lived in Christ ... As in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive in that resurrection; and then they'll come up to be judged.

Now, Christ is going to be sitting on that judgment seat; and Jesus Christ is going to say to them, "Alright, I FIND YOU **GUILTY**; AND I SENTENCE YOU TO **DEATH!** THE PENALTY IS DEATH." About that time, they're really going to shudder and break out in tears; and they're going to beg for mercy. They're going to throw themselves on the mercy of the court; and Christ, on the bench, will say "Well now, you throw yourself on the mercy of the court. Well now, I'll tell you, I Myself paid that penalty for you. I didn't deserve it. I never did sin, like you did; but I took your penalty on Myself, and I died in your place and I paid it for you. **If** you really mean it, and **if** you really want to go the other way and live the other way, I'll give you a chance. I'll give you a foretaste of the Holy Spirit; and **if** you will walk in it, and **if** you will grow in grace and the knowledge of the Lord, and in knowledge of the right way to live and of the law of God – the law of love, of out flowing love toward others – and **if** you will endure until the end and you will overcome, you **then** may have immortal Life and become God, just as I am."

Oh, what a wonderful God we have! But He's a God of knowledge and a God of wisdom, not a God of nonsense and emotion (like most religions in this world). Eternal Life is a gift. But, brethren, you can't earn immortal Life. But you can earn the reward you'll have IF you gain eternal Life as God's gift. I'd like to have you notice now in Ephesians, Ephesians the third chapter. Here's a scripture you hear read so much by the preachers in this world, beginning with verse 8. [{6}](#)

***Ephesians 2:8** For by grace are ye saved **through faith**: and that not of yourselves: it is **the gift of God**.*

That is, **the faith** that you have. Some of you try to work up faith and wonder why you don't have more faith. Brethren, you can't work up faith. Faith is the gift of God. It says so right here. But you receive eternal Life as the gift of God, and you can't earn it yourself. And so it says:

***Ephesians 2:9** Not of works, lest any man should boast.*

And right there most preachers stop. I remember (Oh, I think this is at least 40 years ago.) a man who then was quite a famous evangelist on the air. He's been dead a good many years now. He read that and stopped! I said "Go on. Read that next verse." I shouted into the radio! Of course, he didn't hear me! That was before the days of television; but I shouted, and I said "Go on. I dare you! Read that next verse." But, of course, he wouldn't. Well, let me read it.

***Ephesians 2:9-10** Not of works, lest any man should boast. (10) For we are **HIS WORKMANSHIP**, created in Christ Jesus **UNTO GOOD WORKS**, which God hath before ordained that we should **WALK** in them [in good works].*

Oh, he wouldn't read that! They don't want any good works. Well, **good works** merely is following the way of the law of God; but they want to do away with the law of God. Salvation is a gift. Please understand that. But we still have to obey God, or you won't keep the law – you won't get into God's Kingdom at all.

Our High Priest

In order to help you and me grow in grace, Jesus ascended up to heaven. Where has Jesus been for nineteen hundred and fifty-some years

now? Nineteen hundred and fifty years, He's been in heaven as our High Priest. He's been in heaven as our High Priest. Now let me turn to the priesthood chapter of the Bible, Hebrews 6; and I want you to notice the first couple of verses.

Hebrews 6:1 Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us [in the Church] go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God.

Now the Protestant churches do that. I don't know whether you have any such television channel over here or not, but we have a UHF channel in the Los Angeles area that is called... Sometimes they call it the Trinity Network, and other times they call it the CBN or the Christian Broadcast Network. It's religion from morning until night; and through all of the night, through most of the night, you can find someone on there; and always the same thing: "Just know Christ. Do you know Christ? We want to get people to hear about Christ, and to hear that Christ died for them." And they think that's all. "If you just know that Christ died for you, and you say you accept what He did, you get, you get, you get..." Well, they say you go to heaven.

They don't know anything about the Kingdom of God. They say the Kingdom of God is something you just have inside of you right now. Or, as the Catholic Church says, "The church is the kingdom." They're so ignorant. They don't know. They are still harping on just 'knowing Christ'. But Christ here, who is our High Priest, says we should go on from there and learn more. We have to grow in knowledge!

Hebrews 6:2 Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.

We must go on to more knowledge. That's what we try to do in the Church of God, is to go on into more and more knowledge and to know more of these things. [{7}](#) We must be a growing Church, and we must grow in

grace and in knowledge.

Key Positions In The Kingdom

Now what are we going to be doing then, in the Kingdom of God? Let me see how time is getting along. I still have Pasadena time; and, according to Pasadena time, I've got more than 2 hours yet! So I can talk that long, if you can stand it. [Laughter with clapping.] Well, brethren, we need to learn. We need to grow in these things.

Well, the Bible gives us only two examples of what we may be doing in the Kingdom – only two; and I'd like to read you those two. I think we can take time for that. One is in Ezekiel 37, and it's about David. Beginning with verse 21:

Ezekiel 37:21-22 And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they [will at that time] be gone [haven't been sent there yet as slaves, as they will], ... and bring them into their own land: (22) And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all.

My eyes are watering. I'm suffering a lot of things. I guess you'd call it old age! I don't know. I don't think I'm in old age, brethren. I never reached middle age! If I ever did, I never knew it; and now they say that I'm in old age. My eyes water, my eyelids have drooped, and so the water comes down and fills my eyes; and, the first thing I know, I'm trying to read through water – and I can't see very well through water. I'll try and read this for you. You'll just have to bear with me in some of these handicaps. But God has given the Truth; and, if you'll just bear with these handicaps, I'll give you the Truth. It is the Truth, and praise the Lord for that!

***Ezekiel 37:22** And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: and they shall be no more two nations.*

Now, they were divided into the two nations – Israel and Judah. The world doesn't know that, but this Church does know it. They were two nations.

***Ezekiel 37:23-24** Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their dwelling-places, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so shall they be My people, and I will be their God. (24) And David my servant shall be king over them.*

David will be king over all of the nations that come from the Twelve Tribes of Israel in the Kingdom of God. He will be immortal, resurrected. He will come out of his grave. His grave is over there in Jerusalem; and we're digging down to his palace now, where Christ is going to come. This Church is financing most of that greatest archaeological project on the face of the earth today, preparing for the Second Coming of Christ.

***Ezekiel 37:24** And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them.*

So now we know what David will be doing. In the 36th chapter, there's something about that also (about David). So, you and I can't have that job. No, David is going to be resurrected and have that job. Now, what about the twelve apostles? Jesus told them what they will do in the Kingdom of God; and that's in Luke 22, beginning with verse 28, where Jesus says:

***Luke 22:28-30** Ye are they [speaking to His apostles, "Ye are they ..."] which have continued with me in my temptations. (29) And I appoint*

*unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; (30) That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on **thrones** judging the twelve tribes of Israel.*

Over all those nations from the Twelve Tribes of Israel will be David, but on each nation ... There will be twelve different nations, and one of the original apostles will be the king under David on each one of those thrones. If you've read our booklet, "The Wonderful World Tomorrow," you've already read of that and also a possibility of where other principals will be in the Kingdom of God. But as for you and me, God doesn't tell you and me specifically what we will be doing; but He does give us some very important guidelines.

Parable Of The Pounds

Now first, I would like to have you turn to Luke the 19th chapter. Just a few pages back here, Luke 19 and beginning with verse 11.

***Luke 19:11** And as they [the disciples] heard these things, [Jesus] added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.*

They thought that the Kingdom of God would come too soon. Well, fifteen years ago I thought it would come before this time. But it will come, very suddenly, and not too long from now.

***Luke 19:12** He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.*

Now, that's the picture of Christ going to heaven to have GOD give Him the Kingdom over the whole earth, and to return. Christ will be King over all the earth. David will be king over the twelve nations of the tribes of Israel. Each one of the twelve original apostles will be a king over one of

those nations. I tried to figure out where I thought the apostle Paul will be, and so on, in that book. {8} You may have read it. But, of course, that's all speculation; and we can't be sure. But now notice:

Luke 19:13 *And he called [to them, before he left. "He called ..."] his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.*

Those ten pounds represented the Holy Spirit, one particle of the Holy Spirit to each one. That's the symbolism that it represents.

Luke 19:15 *And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.*

In other words, how much have you grown? He gives you a little of the Holy Spirit when you start, but you don't have as much of the Holy Spirit as you need. You need to grow in grace and knowledge, and you need to increase in knowledge. You increase in the Spirit of God, and in the righteousness of God, and the character of God.

Luke 19:16 *Then came the first [This is at the Second Coming of Christ. "Then came the first ...], saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.*

He multiplied what God had given him ten times over. (Oh, we have a bird up here on the stage. I wonder if that bird is enjoying this sermon? I don't think he understands it, but I hope you do! Well, God created birds too, and I hope you love birds. I do. I just love to see them.)

Anyway, the next one came; and he said he had only gained five pounds. The one who had gained ten times over is going to rule over ten kingdoms. He did twice as much with the same amount to start. The other

one has the same amount to start, but he only did half as much. He gained 5 pounds. So, he will rule over five cities.

Now another came, and he had not done a thing. He hadn't gained anything. He just said, "Well, I didn't have to grow in grace and knowledge. I just stayed where I was." And he had the gift of God taken away from him. They took away from him that part of the Holy Spirit that had been given to him, and he did not get into the Kingdom. **THOSE WHO THINK THEY ARE ALREADY SAVED AND DO NOTHING ABOUT IT** are **not** going to ever enter into the Kingdom of God, brethren. We have to **GROW** in grace and knowledge.

Parable Of The Talents

Now it doesn't tell us there what each one will be doing. But now, you have to ... There's one other scripture that I want you to get – in Matthew 25, the parable of the talents. Matthew 25, and beginning with verse 14:

Matthew 25:14-15 For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country [Same kind of a parable as the other. Christ going up to heaven to get the Kingdom.], who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. (15) And unto one he gave five talents [five talents of silver].

It's using an amount of money here. Of course, the pounds were English pounds (where they have pounds, where we have dollars). But it represents so much of the Holy Spirit. But anyway, to the one he gave five.

Matthew 25:15 ... to one he gave five talents, to another two [That's two portions of the Holy Spirit, we'll say.], and to another one; to every man according to his several ability.

God gives to you according to your natural ability. But I want you to

notice something here now that maybe you never noticed before.

Matthew 25:16-18 Then he that received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. (17) And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. (18) But he that had received one [He had one portion of the Holy Spirit.] went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

In other words, he didn't gain anything. He didn't improve. He didn't grow in knowledge. He didn't grow in grace. He didn't overcome. He didn't grow in spiritual character. Now when Christ came, the one who had been given the ... Well, let's notice that. I wanted to save reading all of it if I could.

Matthew 25:19-23 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them [And He's going to reckon with us, brethren.] (20) And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. (21) His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. (22) He also that had received two talents came and said ... behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. (23) His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant [Just the same thing. He did as much in proportion.]: ... I will make thee ruler over many things.

Notice, we're going to **rule** in the Kingdom of God! We're going to **govern** the world! It's the government of God we're talking about. Now the one who had not gained any had that one taken away from him.

Held Accountable

Now, you notice this: The one that only was given two – he didn't have as much to do with; but he gets as much reward. He did as much with it, with what he had to do with, as the other. But the one who did more with the same amount in the pounds, and who gained 10, will get twice the reward of the man who only gained 5 after starting out with the same one. So, it's like playing golf; and you have a handicap of so many points if you're not as good a golfer. **We are judged according to how well we do with what we have to do with.** You have to put those two parables together to understand that, and I've understood that for a good many years now.

Well, when Christ comes, then we're going to begin to save the whole world. You begin in verse 31; and it shows that, brethren. But it's all according to what we do with what we have to do with.

Now, I've miss-figured my time. Look at my watch. I'm on Pasadena time! I'm thirty minutes overdue, but we started fifteen minutes late. But, brethren, I want to leave this with you. God has given us the Truth that He has not given to other churches in this world. [{9}](#) We're going to be held accountable for what He has given us.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong mentioned I John 3:1, but he paraphrased verse 2.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: At first Mr. Armstrong said "out of his ribs," but then he corrected himself.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said verse 28; but he was referring to verse 27, which he paraphrased.

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong taps on his Bible at this point in the

sermon.

[{5}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said verse 14, but he read verse 16.

[{6}](#) - Editor's note: For a moment or two, Mr. Armstrong was confused about the scripture he wanted. At first, he said Ephesians 2. Then he changed it to Hebrews 2, and back to Ephesians 2 again. These words were left out of the transcript: "I put the wrong verse here somehow. I meant it's Hebrews 2. I got the wrong one in my notes. I'm sorry. It is Ephesians rather, Ephesians the second chapter and beginning with verse eight."

[{7}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong remembers the previous mix-up about scripture references, and these words are left out of the transcript – of his comments about that: "Oh, I know why I was wrong a while ago. I was looking at Hebrews 8, or I mean Ephesians 8. Ephesians 3 I mean, beginning with verse 8. Let me go back and get that. Well, I don't know why I have that here! Oh, I know, I meant to have Ephesians 2; and I marked it 3. So I've already covered that. But ..."

[{8}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong was referring back to his booklet, "The Wonderful World Tomorrow, What Will It Be Like?"

[{9}](#) - Editor's note: This audio file ends at this point. The next sentence is taken from another file of the sermon.

Why The Church?

Sermon (October 17, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Why The Church?.....	855	Civilization Guided By Satan	871
Jesus Builds His Church	858	Man-Made Religions	872
Repent And Believe The Gospel	859	Man-Developed Governments	873
How Did The Church Start?	861	Holy Spirit Poured Out	875
Disciples Called And Trained	862	Holy Days Picture God's Plan	878
What Christ Taught	863	World Started By Satan	879
Born Again	865	God's Kingdom Started	880
The Word	866	Led By God's Spirit	881
The Two Trees	868	Carnal Mind Vs. Mind Of Christ	883
God Closed The Holy Spirit	870	Not Conformed To This World	884

I would like to ask this afternoon, and also to answer, "WHY the Church?" Why should there be the Church? There are churches all over the western world. They're attended every Sunday by a good section of the population. Do most people realize why there should be a church, or do they just take it for granted? It's sort of a club, like a social-club; and it's the thing to do. For some reason, they don't know why, we're supposed to go and attend church, attend services. But I would dare say that most people never stop to think: "What is the purpose of the Church? Why should there be a church?" Most people have never stopped to think about it.

And WHAT is the Church? Well, most people think of the church as a building with a steeple atop and a cross on its facade in front. It's a building, and people go to the church. Now here we have an auditorium, a building; and here the Church comes to the building. It's altogether different. But why? Why should they have the building? If the Church is a congregation of people (which we believe it is), why should there be such a congregation?

God does things for a reason and as a purpose. I've repeated so many, many times (and it always seems to be apropos) how Winston Churchill said before the United States Congress during World War II "There is a purpose being worked out here below." GOD is doing the working out! If it's being worked out "here below," that certainly signifies that God Almighty above is doing the working-out. But what is that purpose? And how is it working out? What is the purpose? Very few ever stop to realize.

Now Jesus Christ said, in Matthew 16 verse 18, "I will build my Church": But why? What is the purpose? What is the function of the Church? WHY DO WE NEED IT? Why should we have a Church? Why do we go? Why do you attend? Why are you here this afternoon? Why was this place filled with people this morning? There ought to be some reason, and I wonder if we realize that God has a purpose in every thing He does.

You know, most people observe certain religious holidays every year; and they don't know why – except that they stimulate the sale of merchandise (like Christmas, Easter, Halloween). They all have something to do with the sale of merchandise, but no real purpose when you get down to it. Christmas does not celebrate the birth of Christ; and, even if it did, why should we be celebrating it? In the Bible only pagans ever celebrated birthdays, not God's people. What's the purpose? Why should you celebrate a birthday? They have no reason.

Do Catholics know why they have a church? Do they know why they attend Mass? Do the Baptists know why they go to church on Sunday? – The Methodists, the Presbyterians, the Lutherans? The average person has no idea why they go. He has no idea why the church exists: whether it's the people or whether it's the building!

Why is it, and why should we have it? Why did Jesus start to build a Church? He said, "I will build My Church;" but why? Why did He do that?

I'd like to read you first a prophecy in Malachi the third chapter beginning with verse one:

Malachi 3:1 Behold, I will send my messenger [and this is Christ speaking] and he shall prepare the way before me. And the Lord whom you seek [which is Christ] shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant...

Christ was a Messenger, sent with a message; and He was the Messenger of the covenant. Now that covenant is the New Covenant. Moses was the mediator of the Old Covenant. The Old Covenant established Israel as God's congregation, or Church. The word "congregation" is synonymous with the word "church." They both mean the same thing. It's a group of people. But that was the Congregation of Israel. The Church is the Church of GOD. The Old Testament Church was named after a man. His name was Israel. It was his children. The New Testament Church is named after those begotten of God; and they're named after their Father, God. And they are begotten of Him, and He becomes their Father, and they are His children. But Jesus came as the Messenger of a NEW covenant, and that is the Kingdom of God (and not the Kingdom of Israel); and the Church is the Church of God.

Malachi 3:1 ... even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, says the Lord of hosts.

Now, if you read on the next four verses, you will see that actually this prophecy is referring to a messenger coming to prepare the way before Christ's coming, not to build His Church, but to set up the Kingdom – because (if you read verses two, three, four and five) it is talking about what He will do when He comes, and He did not do any of those things when He came the first time. And yet the messenger preparing the way before His first coming was indeed John the Baptist, and that's referred to a number of places in the New Testament.

Jesus Builds His Church

Now how did Jesus start to build His Church? I think it's good if we stop again to just notice **how** and **why** He began to build the Church, and why there needed to be a Church. And I think most of us have thought very little about that, and perhaps a lot of us have never really thought about it at all – and have never realized the real purpose of the Church, and why there should be one. Jesus came preaching a Gospel, and we're supposed to be preaching the Gospel of Christ in the Church and the ministry; and the Church is supposed to preach it to the world. Now you find the Gospel of Christ, and at its very beginning in Mark 1 (verse 1 and verses 14 and 15):

Mark 1:1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.

Now, coming on to verse 2, it begins to talk about the messenger – John the Baptist – who prepared the way before His **first** coming to build the Church. His **second** coming is not to build the Church. I'm coming to that later. But in verses 14 and 15 ... Well, from beginning with verse 2 and up to the end of verse 13, it is talking about John the Baptist and about Christ coming and being baptized by John; and then in verse 14:

Mark 1:14 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God.

Now, if you were here last night, I read a passage in the Book of Acts where the Gospel was FIRST preached – the first time it was ever preached to the Gentiles; and God sent Peter to preach it (not Paul), and he said... I gave a description there. [{1}](#) “That word you know which God sent [It came, then, from God; it was a word or a message from God,] by Jesus Christ [He was the messenger, the messenger of the covenant.] began at Galilee [that is the place] preaching peace to the Children of Israel.” That's to whom it went.

John 1:11 He came to his own [Judah], and his own received him not.

It began after John was put in prison; and it began from Galilee, and not from Jerusalem. So the very first sermon preached to Gentiles explained just how the Church began, and about Christ.

Mark 1:14-15 After John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee [There's the right messenger, there's the place where He began] preaching the gospel [What Gospel? What message? The gospel ...] of the kingdom of God, and saying, The time is fulfilled [There was a definite time. God does things on time. God has a purpose. He doesn't do anything without a meaning, without a purpose, without a reason. There is a reason for the Church. So He said, "The time is fulfilled." [There was a time for it] and the kingdom of God is at hand [Now it hadn't come yet; He was only bringing the message of it.]: Repent ye, and believe the gospel.

Repent And Believe The Gospel

He told people to do two things, and they're the two hardest things in the world for any person to do. Repent means acknowledge you're wrong – not only that you have **done** wrong, but admit that you have **been** wrong: you have **believed** wrong; you have **done** wrong; you **ARE** wrong all through and through. Not only in something you did yesterday or last year: but you're just wrong, period. You are wrong all the way through! That's pretty hard for people to admit.

I've checked up on some people, and people that have known them for many, many years, and I've said, "Have you ever known that person to ever admit he was wrong about anything?" And people say "Why, no. I never thought of that, but I never did!" That's the hardest thing for anyone to do.

Now it gets back to the same saying that Alcoholics Anonymous will

say: that you can't cure any alcoholic until he admits he **is** one. He's got to admit he's been wrong, that he is an alcoholic. And God can't cure any sinner, or give us eternal life, till we admit we **are** a sinner through and through – that we have been wrong; we have done wrong; we have BELIEVED wrong: and we've got to let God sweep our minds clean. In other words (You've heard about brainwashing), we've got to let God wash our brains clean – not in the sense of inoculating some false teaching into your mind, but sweeping your mind clean of false teaching that's already there.

As I've often said, that's the way God started with me. I first had to admit how wrong I was: not how wrong I had done, but how I wrong I was; how wrong I had been; how wrong I had believed and almost everything I believed was wrong; and I had to admit it, and get rid of it, and get it out of my mind. And I've had to look to God and say, "You teach me. I have been wrong." First, He had to sweep my mind clean.

It was like going to a black board, if you ever thought of it (or a green board as they sometimes use them now in classrooms of schools). It's all full of a lot of junk that someone has been writing there. And the first thing you have to do, before you can put something good on it, is erase everything that's there. You use an eraser, and probably you need to take a cloth with a little ... a dampened cloth, and clean it up real good; and then you can begin to put on something that means something and something that ought to be there. Well, that's the way our minds need to be swept clean.

Repent! Admit how wrong you are, how wrong you've been. And the next thing is BELIEVE. Here He says, "*Believe the gospel.*" The gospel was the message that the Messenger brought, and He was the Messenger of the covenant. That message was the Kingdom of God. He didn't come to set up the Kingdom; He only came to announce it, the first time. The second time He's coming to set it up. He only came the first time to announce it.

How Did The Church Start?

Now, a lot of the things I'm going to mention today you already know: scriptures you're already familiar with, but you've never thought of them in this connection and what they mean as to the real purpose of the Church. So now, **how** did the Church then start? Let's go right on (verses 14 and 15 I just read), continue on right here:

Mark 1:16-18 Now as he [Christ] walked by the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers. [I think I know the exact spot on the shore where that was. I've walked along there myself, more than once. But they were fishermen.] (17) And Jesus said unto them, *Come ye after me, and I will make you fishers of men* [instead of fish]. (18) *And straightway they forsook their nets, and they followed him.*"

Another place it says that Peter forsook ALL and followed Christ; and that's what you have to do. You have to forsake everything – forsake everything you BELIEVED, and let your mind be washed clean of your former beliefs. You know, people will fight for their beliefs. They argue, and they get offended. We heard a sermonette on offense. Well, they become offended if anyone contradicts anything they believe; and yet what they believe probably is false! But they'll stand up for it, right or wrong, and they'll argue for it; and they take offense if anyone questions it. But you have to forsake what you've believed, and what you have been, and what you have done – all of that.

Jesus came unto them and said:

Mark 1:17-22 [Follow] me, and I will make you fishers of men. (18) *And straightway they forsook their nets* [Or Peter, in another place says, forsook all.], *and followed him.* (19) *And when he had gone a little further*

thence, he saw [two more] James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship {2} mending their nets. (20) And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him. (21) And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the Sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught. (22) And they were ASTONISHED at his doctrine.

They had never heard a message like that before. It was new to them, and it's new to people today. They haven't heard it in this world. They haven't heard it in what is supposed to be "the Gospel" because a false gospel has been preached, merely a gospel. It may have a little truth (because the gospel being preached is about the PERSON of Christ, and that far it is all right), but it is so much more than just the person of Christ. It's the message that Christ, as a person, taught.

Mark 1:22 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

Disciples Called And Trained

Now I was asking how did the Church start? It started by Jesus calling disciples. Now a disciple is a student, or a learner, one who is being taught and who is learning. He's not a graduate. He's only still learning. And He, first, before He called the Church and before the Church was started (He didn't start the Church for three and a half years after this) but first He called and trained disciples. He didn't call just twelve, as you've probably thought. He called fourteen, at least. There might have even been fifteen, but we know of fourteen because there were two that were alternates.

It's just like in a jury: only twelve are official but very often they will seat two others on a jury. They hear all of the testimony – they hear everything all of the way through – in case one of them becomes sick or is

incapacitated in some way. When it comes to actually rendering a verdict, if one has to take out, there is another one who's heard all of the information and can take his place.

Well, Jesus had two more that went with Him. They were not official disciples. They did not become apostles. Only one of them did, when Judas Iscariot did flunk out. So they were called **disciples**, and Jesus trained them for three and one half years. Now they had to undergo training because Jesus was going to start the Church through THEM, and He had to have a group of men that were trained to teach the **others** that were being brought into the Church. They also would then become students, or learners; but they had to have someone teach them.

Jesus was not going to teach the Church. Jesus called disciples and spent three and a half years teaching them. But the Church didn't start until ten days after Jesus had ascended up to heaven. That followed His crucifixion, His resurrection. He had been with them for forty days after the resurrection, and then He ascended to heaven. It was ten days after that – or fifty days after the Passover time (or after the Sabbath during the Passover) that the Church actually began. But, when the Church began, He had **twelve official people** who had now graduated from the school of three and a half years: Now that's the same as a four-year college course because they took no summer vacation. That was three and a half years – 365 days a year – right straight through, summer and all.

What Christ Taught

Now the Gospel, remember, was the **Kingdom of God**; and that is what He taught. That's what He preached, and that's what He taught the disciples; and that's what they began to teach **the Church**! And the whole gospel – the message to teach the Church and to teach the world – was the Kingdom of

God. Now what is the Kingdom of God? The Kingdom of God is the Family of God.

Now we should know some of these scriptures already. I don't have to begin and preach everything as if we never heard of it before. It is the Family of God – the **born** Family of God, **ruling** the government of God; and that government will rule all the nations of this earth. There'll be one government over all the earth. That will be over the United States. It'll be over England. It'll be over Japan. (I just came from there a couple days ago.) It will be over China. It'll be over Russia. It will be over ALL the nations of the world.

Now to learn a little more about that, go back to Isaiah the ninth chapter and verses six and seven – where, to ancient Israel through the prophet Isaiah, God said:

Isaiah 9:6 For unto us [that is, ancient Israel] a child is born ... [a child] is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder.

The churches of this world do not mention as a rule (I've never heard much of them mention) that Jesus was born to be a king and to rule the world. They only teach Jesus as a Saviour. They say that He died; and if you just accept His death, you'll go to heaven. They don't say very much about what real repentance **is**: that you have to let Him wash your mind of what you believe and what you've done; you have to start a new kind of life; you have to start new knowledge; you have to start a new education all over. They don't REALIZE that even, let alone teach it.

Isaiah 9:6-7 The government shall be on his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace [all of those things]. (7) Of the increase of his GOVERNMENT [ruling nations of the world] and PEACE [not war and trouble] there shall be no end, and upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom [because David was given a promise his dynasty would last forever.

And it's still lasting today; and it's running today over in London, England; and Christ is going to continue that dynasty, and that throne is going to be overturned once more. From London it's going to go back to Jerusalem where Christ will take it and sit on His own throne in Jerusalem as He now is sitting on His Father's throne up in heaven.] ... *to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth and forever.*

So that gives you a little idea.

Born Again

Now, I could go into the third chapter of John and show you where Jesus was talking to Nicodemus; and there He was talking about being BORN AGAIN. We've been born as HUMAN beings, and we'll be born again as very GOD. Now we know the doctrine of that. Why were you born? Compare what Jesus said to Nicodemus, and He said:

John 3:6 That which is born of the flesh IS flesh. [That's what we are. We're all born of the flesh, and that's all we are. We only have a mortal temporary existence. But ...] *that which is BORN of the Spirit IS spirit* [will be composed of spirit, will not be flesh and blood at all].

None of us has been born again. Only Jesus Christ has been born again. And that doesn't mean, as some people interpret it, that Jesus was a sinner and had to be (quote) "saved" (unquote) – because He had never sinned! But He was the **firstborn** of many brethren, He was born again by a resurrection; and you'll find in the first chapter of Romans that He became a Son of God by a resurrection from the dead. And WE will become sons of God by a resurrection. He was the first born of many brethren. So He came not only to be a future king, but to save us and to give us immortal life.

The Word

Well, now let's carry it on a little further. Just who now, was this Jesus who was coming to have the government on His shoulders and to be the Messenger of the covenant and proclaim the New Covenant – the Kingdom of God? We turn to John 1 and verse 1, and it says:

John 1:1 *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

The Word is a Personage, and God is a Personage. So the Word was a Personage; and the Word was with another Personage, God. So you have two Persons there together, two different Persons – one called the Word and the other called God. But then it says, "*And the Word was God. And the Word was WITH God.*" Just like John could be with Smith: Well, John could be the father of Smith or the son of Smith, either one. But his name would also be Smith, wouldn't it? So the Word was also God. God is the Family name, and the Word merely means the One who was the Spokesman.

Now to read on, it says:

John 1:3-4 *All things were made by him [the Word]; and without him was not anything made that was made. (4) In him was life. [L-I-F-E, He had immortal life, self-containing life; life inherent within Himself.]*

In verse 14:

John 1:14 *And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us.*

In other words, the Word became Jesus Christ: was born of the Virgin Mary, as a human being. But also He was begotten by God, and the ONLY begotten Son of God – the only human EVER born human after being begotten of God. We can be begotten of God; but we will be born divine, not human. Jesus is the only human that was ever begotten of God, in case you

didn't understand that scripture before.

So now we turn back to Genesis the first chapter, and you find the same thing again. I've been going through that a great deal through the almost, oh, the last nine months or so.

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*

Now the word for "God" is the uni-plural Hebrew word Elohim: Moses wrote this in the Hebrew language; and he used the word Elohim, which means more than one person. It's like the family: one family but composed of two people, or perhaps twelve people, or more. Like the word "church" can be composed of a hundred people or thousands of people, but ONE church, but composed of many units or many people. God is ONE GOD, but composed of more than one person. So this is the same as John 1 verse 1: **the Word and God**. That's why you read in verse 26, that God said – Elohim said (the plural):

***Genesis 1:26** Let US make man in our image.*

Not "let me," but "Let US." And it was the Word that was speaking, which was Christ. But He said only what God the Father told Him to speak.

***Genesis 1:26** Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.*

He formed man after the God-kind! Now, He had formed cattle after the cattle kind, other animals after their kind of animal. But He formed man after the God-kind. But man was made, as you read in the second chapter and verse 7, man was made of the dust of the ground – where God is composed of Spirit; but man is not yet composed of spirit, unless or until he's BORN AGAIN. "That which is born of the flesh", as Jesus said to Nicodemus, "is flesh." That's the way Adam was born. We can be born again, "that which is born of the Spirit;" When we're born of the Spirit (which is God), we will become spirit. Or we will become God, if you want to put it another way. So

man, then, was made mortal.

The Two Trees

Now I've been preaching sermon after sermon about the two trees that were in front of Adam. He had to make a choice. One of those trees was a tree of knowledge of good and evil. That was going to lead to death, and God said he would die if he partook of it. The other tree offered him Life, which he did not have. Now in Christ was LIFE. But in man was not life, only a temporary existence. He did not have Life! He had only a temporary existence. But if he took of the Tree of Life, he would have received Life.

Now how? The same way we can today. The Tree of Life is open to us, again, now; and we receive Life by first receiving the Holy Spirit – and there are two conditions for us. Adam didn't have those same two conditions. Now think of that! We have to first REPENT. Jesus said, "Repent and BELIEVE." Not only believe the Gospel (that's what Jesus said), but believe on Him and believe what He said.

But to Adam: he didn't have to repent. Adam had never sinned yet. He had just been created. He had to decide which way he would go: whether he would sin, or whether he would take the Tree of Life and receive God's Holy Spirit. Now if he had taken the Tree of Life, he would have received what we do: the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit opens your mind to receive knowledge, SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE.

Now, God created man with a mind that could receive knowledge; but it was capable of receiving only MATERIAL knowledge. He would receive knowledge, and could acquire knowledge. He had much to learn yet, that's true; but he could learn. He could acquire this knowledge of how to deal with matter, with things. But he was made to need a relationship with God and a relationship with his neighbor – to deal with people, and to have a

relationship with God – because God made him; because God was going to reproduce Himself. He was made to be **born of God**, but he was not born of God. He was only a created being. And everybody else has been born from Adam (like Cain and Abel and Seth were born of Adam’s wife, Eve, but through Adam; Adam was the father).

Now, if you take the message of those two trees. Adam chose SELF-ACQUIRED KNOWLEDGE. HE REJECTED GOD. HE REJECTED KNOWLEDGE FROM GOD. AND THE HOLY SPIRIT NOT ONLY GIVES YOU THE **KNOWLEDGE** OF GOD, BUT GIVES YOU THE **POWER** to be guided by that knowledge. Man was given a mind, and the mind has to guide your actions; and everything you do you have to decide in your mind, and your mind must tell you to do it. It tells your hands or your feet what to do.

That is not true of an animal. Animals do what they do by instinct. When a dog barks when someone is coming down the sidewalk, or coming to your front door, the dog doesn’t stop to think: “Now shall I bark, or shall I not bark?” It doesn’t know why it barks. It just does it. That’s instinct. It doesn’t have to have a mind to decide what to do.

You and I do. God made man with a mind to **DECIDE** what to do, because man is capable of building **character**. Animals are not. They are the dumb brutes; and yet they have brain just like we do – just as capable as ours, but there’s something lacking. In the human brain God put a spirit, and that spirit gives the human brain the power of intellect and gives us human mind. Animals do not have mind. They have brain and instinct. We have brain and mind, and there’s quite a difference.

Now, Adam chose self-acquired knowledge. He was really led by Satan, who got to him through his wife Eve. Eve was deceived. She took of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil; and the result of that was a sin, and the

penalty was death; and they both died. She gave to her husband, Adam; and he did eat also. He was not deceived, but Eve was; and Adam deliberately sinned.

He had never had to repent. He had never sinned yet. But then he DID sin; and, when he sinned, God SHUT UP the Tree of Life. In other words, God shut up the Holy Spirit from all of Adam's children.

God Closed The Holy Spirit

Now get this, brethren! If you want to know why the Church, if you want to know why you're sitting here this afternoon: GOD CLOSED THE HOLY SPIRIT FROM PEOPLE. And so you read in Hebrews 9:27, as a result of Adam's sin it was appointed to men once to die, but after that a **judgment**. And God has made it so that EVERYONE who ever lived (Adam, Cain, Abel, Seth, all of the others) they're all going to come back to life, mortal life just like they did live: and then they're coming to the great judgment.

Now that judgment is one where they're going to be required to give account for what they did in this life. And the penalty for what they did is death, and the death sentence is going to be passed on them. But in that judgment they are going to have an opportunity to appeal to the court who will be judging them; and sitting on the bench of that court will be the Judge, who is Jesus Christ. That will be the great judgment. We celebrate that on the Last Great Day, after the Feast of Tabernacles. That will come after the Millennium, after the thousand years, and more than a thousand years from now.

If they throw themselves on the mercy of the court, the court (who's Jesus Christ) will say, "Well now, if you repent ... Now that your eyes are open, and now that you **see** what you did, and now that you've come to

finally **confess** what you did: you've come to **repent** – if you DO repent, and you will henceforth live the way you should have lived – you can still have life, because I paid the penalty of your sins in your stead.”

You know what I think? I think that the overwhelming majority are going to repent and receive life in that great judgment. I can't imagine, after they have seen the penalty of sin and seen everything that has happened for seven thousand years (as it will be then), that a lot of them are going to say, “No, I'm going to take the lake of fire.” But some apparently will.

Civilization Guided By Satan

Well, now Adam took self-acquired knowledge; but he was guided by Satan. Satan was there. I don't know whether Adam realized it or not, but Satan was influencing everything he did. It was Satan who influenced him through Eve to make the wrong decision. It was Satan who influenced Cain to kill Abel. It was Satan who has been influencing everything man did. Now man was left with knowledge only to deal with material things, but not to deal with other people, and cut off from a relation with God (at least from receiving the Spirit of God). Now they did retain some knowledge of God, but it became perverted through Satan's perversions and Satan misleading the rest of them and deceiving them. He has deceived the **whole world**, beginning with Adam.

Adam's world has been deceived into materialistic knowledge. He had been deceived into building a certain world: **a civilization** that we call “the world.” Now the world is not the earth. Jesus talked about the end of the world. He meant the end of this world, this society, this civilization that has been built from Adam, through the influence of Satan: **the way of the world**. Now the world has an educational system. Adam started that, but he had NO spiritual knowledge. He had only MATERIALISTIC knowledge. He tried to

add spiritual knowledge.

Today, in the colleges and universities (as we get down to the twentieth century) we have law schools; and they teach them how to enforce man's law to regulate relation of one person with another person, or people with people. They go to court, and they decide it by laws made by man – all in man's education.

We have even courses in the universities in sociology, courses in psychology. But they don't even know what the human mind is, of what it is composed. So how can they understand its workings? They know nothing of spirit, or spiritual things, or spiritual knowledge. They deny that it even so much as exists! So they've developed an educational system as part of this world.

Man-Made Religions

Now, they also rejected God. Adam did, and so his children all have; and so they have formed their own RELIGIONS.

God called a group of slave people, descendants of Jacob (whose name was changed to Israel); and He called them to become His nation, and He made the Old Covenant with them through Moses. He made them one of Earth's nations. He REVEALED KNOWLEDGE to them, SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE; but they did not understand it! THEY DID NOT HAVE THE HOLY SPIRIT and they NEVER UNDERSTOOD it. They didn't have the POWER that the Holy Spirit would give them: The power TO OBEY IT!

God could explain it, but they couldn't understand it any more than a cow (a dumb cow) can understand academic knowledge. You try to teach a cow that $1 + 1 = 2$, and the cow just looks stupid. He doesn't know what you're talking about. He can't understand it. And a scientist with a PhD after

his name today, when you talk to him of spiritual knowledge, he says, “Oh, paw, I don’t care about that. It doesn’t exist. There isn’t any such thing as spirit.” because he doesn’t know; and what he doesn’t know, he doesn’t know that he doesn’t know it! He’s unconscious of the fact that he doesn’t even know it! He is, in fact, ignorant! I don’t care how many letters he has after his name, and how many colleges or universities he’s graduated from. He’s had no SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE.

That’s why we have such great progress in material advancement. That’s why we have such regrettable, APPALLING evils and troubles in the world. We can’t solve troubles, people dealing with people. That’s why the world is filled with crime. It’s filled with discontent, unhappiness; filled with murder; filled with everything wrong. It has been influenced by Satan, and it has had no spiritual knowledge. It has not had the power of God’s Spirit to guide it the right way. So the world has built (Adam’s people have built) a world of their own with false education; and now a system of education, with schools beginning at the first grade on up through the universities.

It has had false religions, and so men have made up their own ideas of what God is; and not ONE RELIGION ON THIS EARTH, including “Christianity,” knows **WHO AND WHAT GOD IS. THEY JUST DON’T KNOW!** So what do they know about true religion? Absolutely nothing, you might say. All religions are man-devised, or Satan influenced.

Man-Developed Governments

Then man developed his own governments and his own system of governments. So we have for the many nations and governments over every nation. In the United States, or a government like the United States, we have different states and we have state governments; and we have local city governments. In Canada, they’re divided into provinces; and they have local

provincial governments as well as the national government. And that's the way governments are formed all over the earth.

Then we have developed a human system of economy. Now the economy is in trouble all over the world right now; and man has nothing but problems and troubles with the economic system he's developed, because it is false. It's man-devised and SATAN-INFLUENCED. God, for one thing, God's way denies interest or usury on loaning money; but the whole world's system is based on usury and interest. That's one of the problems in the Unites States right now.

Then we have a social system, social customs, and regulation of man's relation with man through laws and government. And we build a society – a society influenced by Satan – that is this world. THE SOCIETY IS IN TROUBLE, AND PEOPLE IN THIS SOCIETY ARE NOT HAPPY. They are miserable. They are discontented. We used to hear about milk from contented cows. You may have contented cows. You don't have contented people! It's quite a difference, if you stop to think about it.

Now it was into such a world ... (It hadn't grown technologically like we have in the twentieth century, that's true. But, otherwise, it was a world just like we are today. We've just advanced more in materialism today.) But Jesus came into such a world. Jesus, however, was born of God; and He was the Word, and by Him were all things created. He was the Creator of all, and He came into such a world. He was called the Second Adam.

Now the Holy Spirit was closed from the time of the first Adam until the Second Adam – until Christ could come and pay the penalty of sin and die for us; otherwise no one could be ... Everyone had sinned. All have sinned. Adam sinned. Cain and Abel sinned. Abel was called "righteous Abel;" but he did sin, because all have sinned.

And **all** have died. Now it's also true that "*As in Adam all die, [even] so*

in Christ shall all be made alive.” That’s in First Corinthians 15, verse 22; and that’ll be in the Great White Throne Judgment. But, in the meantime, here is a terrible world in trouble. Man is in trouble with his neighbour. Man is cut off from God and the relationship with God. And Jesus came into such a world.

Holy Spirit Poured Out

Now there had been a prophecy in Joel the second chapter and verse 28 where it said: *”It shall come to pass afterward, [where God said] I will pour out my Spirit upon ALL FLESH.”* Now that time hasn’t even come yet. But it came where it BEGAN with the Church: where God began to pour out His Spirit on a small portion of all humanity – the Church; and the Holy Spirit is open to those that God calls into the Church. I want to put together all the things I’ve been teaching you the last nine months about the Two Trees and about the Way of the Holy Spirit, and how it was shut off from man; and it was.

I’d like you to notice next in John the tenth chapter and verse ten, where Jesus said: *”I am come that they might have life and ... have it more ABUNDANTLY.”* Jesus came to give us Life. Now, the first Adam did not get Life. God offered him Life, but he had to make a choice. He had to take the Tree of Life. He took the Tree of Death instead. He took the tree of self-acquired human-knowledge influenced by Satan. To take the Tree of Life he would have had God-inspired, God-REVEALED knowledge through the Holy Spirit and with the power of the Holy Spirit and making him [{3}](#) begotten of God for eternal Life.

So Jesus came that we might have Life; and He said *”I WILL BUILD MY CHURCH,”* and that is the beginning. But, on the other hand, while Joel said the Holy Spirit would be opened ultimately to all flesh, it was not yet

because Jesus said in John 6:44 *“NO MAN CAN COME TO ME, except the Father which ... sent me **draw** him.”* So the Holy Spirit was limited to those that God would call – those that were PREDESTINATED by God to BE CALLED into the Kingdom of God.

GOD IS CHOOSING SOME. Now why? Is God discriminating? Is God discriminating against others, and just calling you and me; and He’s discriminating all of these other people all over the world? Oh, no, because the call is only a matter of when, anyway; and predestination refers only to **the time** of your calling. We’re to be called NOW.

Called To Teach

Let me give you another explanation: Why did Jesus first call only His fourteen, (or the twelve original disciples, with two alternates?) There really were fourteen. Why didn’t He call thousands right off the bat? Because He had to teach those in order so they could teach the thousands. When the Church began, it began ten days after Jesus had ascended to heaven. After He had taught His disciples for three and half years, they had graduated from His college (or school) and the knowledge that He imparted to them; and now they were sent out as apostles – as those sent with that message; and they preached the Gospel of the Kingdom.

So He called only twelve so that they could teach more in the Church. Likewise, He’s called the Church now (only a few) in order that **WE**, (in the Kingdom of God, when the Millennium begins and Christ comes) under Christ can teach all the other millions in the world. He’s teaching us, and we’re going to school. **WE ARE NOW HIS DISCIPLES, AND WE ARE TO LEARN THE MESSAGE; WE ARE TO LEARN HOW GOD’S GOVERNMENT IS TO RUN.** We’re to learn His gospel, His government, His society, His education, His religion different than that of this world.

This world has its religions. It has its economic system. It has its social

system, and it has its educational system. We're to learn something DIFFERENT. And WE are to be the head of the Kingdom of God when Christ sets it up. We're to rule with and under Christ.

For example, I want you to notice ... Now you know a lot of these things already; but notice in Revelation 3:21, where Jesus said, speaking to the Church – and this is a message to the Church, not to the world. This is not to the world! I can preach this to the world, but they wouldn't understand it.

Revelation 3:21 *To him that overcometh [meaning in the Church] will I grant to sit with me in my throne [in the Kingdom of God], even as I also overcame, and am set down on my Father now in his throne [up in heaven].*

Then in Revelation 2, verses 26 and 27, Jesus also said to the Church – a message to the Church:

Revelation 2:26 *He that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end ...*

That's in the Church. We are going to school now in the Church. We are learning the economic system of God. We're to learn the educational system of God. We're to learn God's religion. We're to learn God's civilization, His social system, in order that we can teach the world. And it says:

Revelation 2:26-27 *He that overcometh [those in the Church], and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give POWER over the nations: (27) and he shall RULE them with a rod of iron.*

He's speaking to you and me, brethren. But are we learning? Are we growing in grace and the knowledge of the Truth? Or do we just think like the Protestants have it and the Catholics: you just accept? Or what is it, in the Catholic Church? You ... Well, in the Protestants you accept Christ. In the Catholic Church they have something else they use. You embrace Catholicism; I guess is the word, whatever it is.

Anyway, now I'd like you also to notice the fifth chapter of Genesis and verse ten. I mean Revelation, not Genesis. Revelation 5 and verse 10, where He:

Revelation 5:10 ... has made us [in the Church] unto our God KINGS AND PRIESTS: and we shall REIGN on the earth.

Those in the church are being TAUGHT to become, NOT ONLY PRIESTS TO RULE ... I mean KINGS to rule; but also PRIESTS to SAVE the world, to TEACH the world a religion; and Church and State will be united. We're to teach the people in the Millennium, and then in the Great White Throne Judgment (and that'll last a hundred years); and we are to teach them.

Holy Days Picture God's Plan

So now understand the purpose and God's master plan for working out that purpose. God gave His Church seven annual holy days and seven annual festivals. Now there's a difference between just a holy day and a festival. Actually the Feast of Pentecost (or Feast of First Fruits) is a holy day; and it's also a festival in one day. But the Feast of Tabernacles is seven days, and it has also one holy day in it; and then there's another holy day added on the end of it.

Now, this world ... Let's understand God's purpose and plan. God's purpose in spiritual of taking us from this world and taking us into the Kingdom of God – His spiritual plan, for His spiritual purpose – is worked out by the seven holy days. First we repent. That is, first is the Passover, where Christ paid the penalty that applies only if we repent. Second is the seven days of Unleavened Bread when we put sin out of our lives, if we have repented and when we have repented. Next comes the day of Pentecost, or the coming of the Holy Spirit; and that, then, brings us into the Church age.

After that is the second coming of Christ, the Feast of Trumpets; the Day of Atonement and the putting away of Satan; and then the Feast of Tabernacles (the Millennium), teaching the whole world; and then the Last Great Day, which is the final judgment after the thousand years.

World Started By Satan

Now, get this: this whole world started by Satan through Adam. But Satan started this world really, because Adam rejected Christ and went the way of Satan; and it is Satan's world, and Satan has been using mankind; and men have been called the children of Satan. I want to show you that a little later. Well, we might turn to that right now, John 8 and verse 44, beginning with verse 43: To those that believed on Jesus, even, among the Jews when He was on earth, He was talking to some that really believed on Him, but he said "*Why do you not understand my speech?*" They didn't agree with Him at all. They didn't accept what He said. So he said:

***John 8:43-44** Why do you not understand my speech? even because you cannot hear my words. (44) Ye are of your father the devil.*

Now these are people who believed on Him. These are not the scribes, and Pharisees, and Sadducees. These are people (Jews) that believed on Him. They believed on Him, but they didn't **believe HIM**. They didn't believe what He said! And He said:

***John 8:44** Ye are of your father the devil, and [the works] the lusts of your father will ye do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not it the truth, because there [was] no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.*

So those that are not converted and do not become the children of God are, in a sense, the children of Satan. They have been and absorbed the ways

of Satan: the attitude of Satan – the purpose of mind, the state of mind, the intention of mind (of that of getting, that of vanity, that of taking from others, of exalting the self over others) from Satan, and they are the children of Satan. Now I'm giving you some things that you haven't heard before this afternoon: I hope you're getting it. I hope you're getting it.

God's Kingdom Started

Now, let me go back again: this world was started by Satan through Adam. God's Kingdom or Family, and the World Tomorrow, was started by Christ through the CHURCH. And the Church is the first part of it, of the Kingdom of God (just like the disciples were the first part of the Church, before it began). And the Church is founded on the apostles, and the prophets of the Old Testament, Jesus Christ being the chief corner stone; and they all were before the Church.

Now as Adam and his physical children were the material that Satan used to build this world, this civilization; so the Church is the spiritual material that Christ is using to build, or to create, the Kingdom of God; and He's creating something new in us – a new character, a new being, a new ... – creating God within us. He is reproducing Himself through us: the Kingdom of God, which will be the World Tomorrow and will rule the World Tomorrow.

Now, as I say, the unconverted are really the children of Satan; but, in the Church, we become the children of God. The Church are those that are **called out** of Satan's world. I'd like you to notice that in Second Corinthians, chapter 6 beginning with verse 16 where it says:

***II Corinthians 6:16** What agreement hath the temple of God with idols? For ye are the temple of the living God [We are the temple to which Christ is coming. The Church and the dead in Christ are going to rise and*

meet Him in the air as He comes to rule.]; *as God has said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.*

Well, the world are really Satan's people, but we are to come out of that and to be God's people.

II Corinthians 6:17 *Wherefore come out from among them* [of the world, those that are Satan's people].

WE ARE TO COME OUT OF THIS WORLD AND NO LONGER BE PART OF IT, BRETHERN. **I DON'T THINK WE GET THAT! NOW GET THIS: I DON'T THINK YOU FULLY UNDERSTAND THAT! WE'RE TO COME OUT OF THIS WORLD AND BE NO PART OF IT.**

II Corinthians 6:17-18 *WHEREFORE COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM, and be ye separate saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, (18) And will be a Father unto you, and you shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*

He says that we are a SEPARATE and a PECULIAR PEOPLE, DIFFERENT from the rest of the world. We are A HOLY NATION of people in the Church, different from the rest of the world. We are coming out; and we are being taught in school, you might say, and in Church with the True Gospel and God's Way of Life to teach the whole world in the Millennium (just like the apostles were called out first for three and a half years to teach the Church). I want you to understand that.

Led By God's Spirit

Now one other: We are not in the Church unless the Spirit of God is dwelling in us. Just being a member of the Church and saying you're a member; and I often wonder how many that are supposed to be Church members, and we look on as members of the Church, HOW MANY

REALLY **ARE** members of the Church? You are not a member of the Church unless the Holy Spirit of God is **dwelling in you** AND ALSO YOU ARE BEING **LED BY** the Spirit of God. THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD HAS GOT TO BE OPENING YOUR MIND TO GOD'S WAY OF LIFE, AND YOU'VE GOT TO BE LIVING THAT WAY OF LIFE. YOU'VE GOT TO BE FOLLOWING WHERE THE HOLY SPIRIT LEADS YOU [4](#).

Now turn to Romans. Romans the eighth chapter and beginning with verse seven: "*Because the carnal mind...*" And we all were carnal to begin with! And some of us, I'm afraid, still are – unless we really HAVE received the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of a CHANGED MIND, A SOUND MIND, A DIFFERENT KIND OF A MIND that can begin to comprehend spiritual knowledge. I've found so many in the Church that have been members a long time, and they DON'T COMPREHEND SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE. They get doctrine. They are straight on doctrine. But they don't understand it.

Brethren, I worry sometimes about the Church. Then I have to remember we don't get a full measure of the Holy Spirit all at once. We get a little of the Holy Spirit; and perhaps you get 5%, where Christ had 100%. Well then, you're still 95% carnal. But if you grow in grace and the knowledge, and in spiritual knowledge, after a little while (if you grow) you have 10% of the Holy Spirit and 10% God's knowledge, and only 90% carnal.

Where are you now? Have you gotten up to 45% of the Spirit of God and still 55% carnal? You'd better get where you're not over 49% in this world any longer and 51% spiritual. Now I hope I've gotten that far. Have you? You better examine yourselves, brethren! Where do you stand? How far have you grown? How much knowledge have you acquired? How much are you practicing in your life?

How much PRAYER are you ... How much of your time are you spending in prayer? How devout are your prayers? How much are you pouring your heart into your prayers? Or how much of it is just... Well, I was in one place where someone gave a prayer. I was speaking to a group of a thousand people in the Philippines; and there was a man who gave a prayer, and he read every word of it. He just read it. It didn't mean a thing. It didn't come from his heart. He just read something. I didn't even bow my head. I noticed a lot of others bowing their heads. I couldn't.

Carnal Mind Vs. Mind Of Christ

But you read here in Romans 8, verse 7, "*The carnal mind is enmity [that is, **hostile**] against God;*" and ALL of us were that way! To what extent have you quit and come out of that?

***Romans 8:7-9** The carnal mind is [hostile] against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. (8) So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. [Are you in the flesh or in the Spirit?] (9) But ye are not in the flesh, but **in the Spirit**, IF so be that the Spirit of God dwell **IN** you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ HE IS NONE OF HIS [I don't care how long you've been a member of the Church.]*

Now look, you have the Holy Spirit. You don't have the Holy Spirit unless you're being **led by** the Holy Spirit. We read beginning with verse 14 "*As many as are led by the [Holy Spirit], they are the sons of God.*" If you're not following where the Holy Spirit leads, you just don't have ... The Holy Spirit won't STAY in you. It won't stay dormant in you at all. It just won't!

***Romans 7:15-17** For you have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but you have received the Spirit of adoption [or, that son ship] whereby we cry, Abba, Father [and you call God your Father]. (16) The Spirit also beareth witness with our spirit, that we ARE the children of God. (17)*

And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him.

And we do! As I said to you last night, Peter was put in prison. I've wondered if I shall be some day. The people prayed when Peter was put in prison; and God performed a miracle, and just caused chains to drop loose, and gates to open up and let him out – by a miracle. I wonder how many of you people would put your hearts in your prayers if God puts me prison. Well, I think you would. Brethren, I believe you would.

I think that most of us really have God's Spirit. But I know that there have been those among us that even rose up to be evangelist rank in the ministry did not have the Holy Spirit. And I sometimes ... It would be easy for me to lose faith when I think of those things. And I tell you, every one of us needs to examine himself. For he says;

Romans 7:18 *I reckon that the sufferings of this present time [and we do have sufferings] are not worthy to be compared with the glory [that] shall be revealed in us.*

So it's not easy. It's not easy to come out of this world and the temptations of the flesh, and you're hearing sermons on that. I don't know how many of you heard the sermon this morning. I, at least, got to hear the sermonette this morning; and a very good one it was. But I had to spend the time of the sermon this morning preparing what you've been hearing this afternoon (and I hope that it was worthwhile), and I had to lose that sermon. They could have recorded it. I have equipment at my home now that I could record a sermon if I can't be there myself.

Not Conformed To This World

Finally, now I'd like to read to you the twelfth chapter of Romans,

beginning with verse one:

***Romans 12:1-2** I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God that you present your bodies a **LIVING** sacrifice [That's what it means. Do you realize it? Not only your bodies, but everything that you count yours – you have to be willing to present a living sacrifice.], *holy, acceptable unto God, which is your **REASONABLE** service. (2) And be not conformed to this world ...**

We're to come out of it and be separate. We're a separate, a holy and **peculiar** people that are **different**. Now we're not freak people wearing some kind of ... men wear a crazy hat and women some old kind of a bonnet, and things like I've seen some religious people do. We're different in the way we live, having the Spirit of God and love toward other people – not freakish in manner or anything of that sort, or wearing peculiar garb.

***Romans 12:2-3** And be not conformed to this world: but be ye **TRANSFORMED** by the renewing of your **MIND** [And the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of a **SOUND** mind. The mind must be **RENEWED**, different than it was before conversion – the renewing of the mind.], *that ye may **prove** what is [the] good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (3) For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought ... [and some people do, more highly than they ought to think] but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man [that] measure of faith.**

Now, you see, we do have degrees of the measure of faith and degrees of the measure of the Holy Spirit. That is true, and we must realize it; but we must **GROW** in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. That means more prayer, and more Bible study, and having our mind on the things above and on the things of God and **NOT ON THE THINGS OF THIS WORLD. WE STILL HAVE NOT BEEN FULLY WEANED**

FROM THE INTERESTS OF THE WORLD, BRETHREN, HAVE WE?
Now think of that, and answer that question for yourself.

***Romans 12:5** So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.*

That's what we are, brethren. Now perhaps you realize **why** the Church. We're being prepared to rule and teach the Kingdom of God, just as the disciples were trained and prepared to teach the Church. I hope that we all can really realize that. Take this message, and don't forget it, and realize why you are a member of the Church – and what a terrible responsibility, and a wonderful responsibility, it is.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong begins paraphrasing Acts 10:36-37.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "camp" instead of "ship."

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong first said, "giving him;" but then he corrected himself and said, "making him, that is."

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "leading where the Holy Spirit leads you" and then corrected himself.

The Sabbath Question

Sermon (October 23, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Sabbath Question.....	887	The Sabbath Is Not A Yoke Of Bondage	912
Law Of Love	891	After-Sabbath Activities	913
The Test Commandment	892	Sabbath Activities	914
How Do You Keep The Sabbath Holy?	893	The Sabbath Is To Honor God	915
God's Presence Makes Sabbath Holy	900	Healing On The Sabbath	916
Appropriate Sabbath Dress	901	Prepare For The Sabbath	917
The Sabbath Is For Rest	904	Acts Of Mercy	918
The Sabbath Belongs To God	905	Principle Of The Law	920
Going To A Restaurant On The Sabbath?	908		

Talk about the morning after the night before! But this is the Friday night after the Feast of Tabernacles and we're a little sort-of sparsely settled here tonight. I guess we're not all back yet; and, in a sense, I'm sorry to speak on the subject I've chosen for tonight. I wanted to have this auditorium full and also the college gymnasium, that as many as possible could hear it. However, some of the other ministers have urged me to go ahead with it anyway. I thought I would turn to a different subject tonight. But I may repeat this again when a larger number of people are here because it is very, very important. This Church **has been** off the track; and I'm not sure we're a hundred percent back on the track yet, but we're getting there. And we're beginning to please God; and, when we please Him, He blesses the Work and He blesses us.

The nation is in the doldrums. The world is in the doldrums, and in violence, and trouble. This nation is now in a recession. There's no question about it. I see even the government in the White House has finally admitted it this week, and there may be worse times coming. Now **God has been holding things back in world events that are prophesied**, things that are

prophesied. The MAIN thing next prophesied is the resurrection of the medieval so-called Holy Roman Empire in Europe. Undoubtedly half of it will be in Western Europe and half of it in Eastern Europe – ten nations going together. But it is the way of God, in a time like this, to let things go slow. You know, even a thousand years sometimes are like a day with God; and they whip by very rapidly. At other times, a day is like a thousand years; and it seems like it'll never end. And God has held things, and is going to hold things, back.

We read in the seventh chapter of the book of Revelation of how He sends an angel to hold back the plagues that were prophesied to come at that time – (Now we're not quite to that time yet. That is yet future.) – till He seals the servants of God in their foreheads, a hundred and forty-four thousand and another innumerable multitude. And that will be the Laodicean Church. That will be the tag-end last Church of the seven different eras of the Church, the remnant Church; and that hasn't come yet. A lot of people have been wondering: "Where is the Laodicean Church?" Well, it hasn't appeared yet. Don't waste your time looking for it. It isn't here. You can't find it. But it will be here. And, when God's time does come, He will let things happen very, very rapidly. It's going to take your breath. Now, believe me, it really will.

And I'm looking very closely at world events right now – especially over in Poland and things that are going on there; and the action of Russia in regard to Poland; and what is going on in the Vatican and a few places like that – and so are our news people. We have our own news staff here on campus. I don't know whether all of you realize that or not. It's part of our publications: The Plain Truth and others. And our writers that we have, they have teletypes ticking off there 24 hours a day, and all night long and all day long, just the same as newspapers have, and also the news departments of television stations or then television networks, so that we keep abreast all the

time. And we have a group of researchers constantly researching news, filing and cataloguing special events and keeping a file of things up to the minute, all the time; so that we're right on top of these things that are going on in the world. And they are men who also **know** the prophecies of the Bible.

God And The Word

Well, I wanted to talk about something else altogether tonight. HOW DID LIFE BEGIN? You have to start in the New Testament, in John 1, to find how life really began. I want to see if we can get a little different meaning out of this tonight.

***John 1:1** In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was WITH God, and the Word was God.*

Now, "*In the beginning was the Word.*" The Word was a Personage that was a great spiritual, supernatural Personage. "*And the Word was with God.*" That is, that Personage was with another Personage; and the other Personage was God. And then, in the last [{1}](#) part of the verse, we read that "*the Word was God.*"

***John 1:2-3** The same was in the beginning with God. (3) [And] all things were made by him; and without him was not anything made ...*

Now that Word, we find in the fourteenth verse, later was born of the human virgin Mary and became Jesus Christ. But He was not Jesus Christ originally. He's just called "the Word" here. But He **was** God; and They were God there in two Persons. One is called "God" and the other "the Word." But nevertheless the Word also is said to be God here.

***John 1:4** In him was life. L-I-F-E. Now in God was also life. So They lived. The two Personages lived, and They had lived forever.*

Now of the Word we find, over in the book of Hebrews, that He was

without father, without mother, without beginning of days or end of life, without descent. There was no beginning. There will be no ending. HE HAS AS ALWAYS EXISTED. Now your mind can't quite conceive that. You think He had to start living and start existing at one time or another. But He didn't just exist. He lived, or They lived; and They had been living, alive, and actually LIVING – those Two, and apparently only those Two in the whole universe. In fact, there wasn't any universe yet! They hadn't created that yet, at the beginning.

But They had been together from eternity, if you know when that began. It didn't begin. It always was. But, in living, They were living together; and perhaps billions times billions of years, or trillions times trillions of years. You can go on and on, and your mind can't quite conceive that it's so great and it's so long. But now They had lived together, and They knew HOW TO LIVE TOGETHER. Two cannot live together except they be agreed. You will read that in the scriptures that They've given us and inspired. So They were in perfect agreement. They lived in PEACE. They lived in harmony.

And while They lived, They also had power of mind – supreme mind, mind that was able to plan and to design everything that has come into existence; to produce it; to bring it into being. They say to bring something into being out of nothing. I don't think that's exactly the way it was done. But, being Spirit, They were able from spirit to create all matter and the entire physical universe. But They were not physical. They are and always were Spirit and Spirit Beings, not physical at all.

But the way They lived was the way of life that we call **love**. That is an out-flowing concern each one for the good and the welfare of the other. However, we find that the One here called God was even greater; and that the Word did only as God said. And so in the third chapter, I believe it is, of Ephesians you read how God created the whole universe and all things **by** Jesus Christ, the Word. The Word spake, and it was done; and the power that

did the creating was the Spirit of God, the Holy Spirit emanating from Them.

Law Of Love

Now they lived a certain way of living. They had minds to think with and to plan. But they had great accomplishment, and they lived to work and to design and to create. And designing and creating was Their work, Their business. And They were creating in a manner of great accomplishment, and in peace, and in happiness and joy, and the joy of great accomplishment. But They created other beings having minds – first angels, and later They created man. They lived by a LAW; and that law was LOVE, out-flowing love one to the other.

Now where there are two ... You know, a lot of young people getting married say, “Well, we don’t want to have ... The husband is not to be boss anymore. We want to live 50-50.” You know you can’t do that! I don’t know whether you notice or not, but the recent royal wedding in England (I was over there at the time.); and in that wedding ceremony there was nothing that the wife had to obey the husband. That was all left out. Oh, it was going to be 50-50. Well, let’s watch and see whether it lasts or not. When you have 50-50 that will always mean the wife is wearing the pants and is the boss. **SOMEONE HAS TO BE! TWO CAN’T** live together just 50-50: one has to be the leader over the other.

Now, God was the leader. Why didn’t Christ resent that? And why didn’t He speak out for Himself and stand up for His own rights? Why didn’t He? Why didn’t He say, “I’m just as great as He is. I’m going to run things?” No, He didn’t do that. He was the Prince of Peace; He was a maker of peace; He lived the way of peace. He had humility, but He also had power and strength. He had great strength and great power; and He had meekness – if you can understand that, because meekness doesn’t mean weakness.

He lived in a certain way; and that way was out-flowing love, each love for the other. And so that is **a way of living**, and They made it **a law**. That is, God – the One who became God the Father later, the One who is called God – made that as a law; and that is a law that we find given (in Exodus the twentieth chapter) in the Bible. Now They had created man, but here They had a law; and that law was given to man. We read of it here in the twentieth chapter of Exodus:

Exodus 20:1-2 God spake all these words, saying, (2) I am the [Eternal] thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt [This was said to the ancient Israelites; and they had just been brought out of the land of Egypt, where they were slaves.], out of the house of bondage.

Then He gave the Ten Commandments. I won't go over them now. I'm going to go over one of them a little later.

The Test Commandment

But there was a **test commandment**, and that begins with verse eight:

Exodus 20:8 Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy.”

Now that happened to be the TEST commandment. That is the one commandment that the world holds in question. They will accept the other nine, at least in principle, even though they don't obey them. But they will accept that maybe we ought to have the other nine: but that one, that's the fourth one, they don't agree with that at all. ”Remember the Sabbath day, to KEEP it holy.” Now some people don't know what that means. But God had made it **holy** and told us to keep it that way (and not to profane it; not to trample all over it and make it unholy) – to keep it the way He made it.

Exodus 20:9-11 Six days shalt thou labour and do all of thy work: (10) But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not

do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, nor thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates. [That is, don't work them if you use them in labour. They did use oxen, and at least don't cause them to labour and do that kind of work.] (11) For in six days the [Eternal] made the heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the [Eternal] blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it.

Now that is the **test** commandment. That is the one that people will haggle over and don't want to obey. They want to change it. They want to make it Sunday.

How Do You Keep The Sabbath Holy?

Our question tonight is "How do you keep it?" I've had two other Bible Studies on "The Sabbath Question" prior to this. But it is very important that we understand not only about the Sabbath, and that God commands it, and what it is, and why it is; but **how** do we keep it. He said, "Keep it holy." How do you do that? Just what is meant by that?

I want to tell you first about an incident that'll begin to set the groundwork for it, I think. It was, let me see, it was probably nearly forty years ago. I was holding a series of Sunday night services in the Chamber of Commerce auditorium up in Seattle, Washington. And I had an audience probably not quite as large as this audience, because that was a small auditorium, wasn't as large as this. It probably seated about, oh, maybe three or four hundred people. But I would always go out a side aisle and shake hands with people going out the door at the end of the service. And there was one lady going out one time, said, "Oh, Mr. Armstrong. I want to ask you a question, if I may?"

I said, "Well, certainly."

“Well,” she said, “Someone told me that you don’t keep the Lord’s day, and that Saturday is your day. I do hope that’s not true! But I want to ask you personally if that is true.”

I said, “Well, no, that’s not true!” I said, “I do keep the Lord’s day, and Saturday is not my day.”

“Oh,” she says, “I’m so glad to know that!”

“But,” I said, “Well, I’m not sure you quite understand. Now you see, Saturday is not my day. Sunday is my day.”

“Well,” she says, “I’m just glad to know that.”

I says, “Fine. But,” I said, “Monday is my day too. And Tuesday is my day, and Wednesday, and Thursday, and Friday. But,” I said, “when I come to Saturday, that is NOT my day. That is the Lord’s day, and I do keep the Lord’s day. I told you I do keep the Lord’s day, but Saturday is not my day. Saturday is not my day. It’s the Lord’s day.” I said, “You’ve been mixed up, and you’ve been misreading your Bible. You need to read your Bible again.”

She threw her neck, her head, back and “Huh!” And she walked out in a huff; and she never came back again, you can be sure. Well, her mind was already made up. She didn’t understand, but she might have been very sincere in what she believed; nevertheless, that’s what she’d been told.

Now we turn to Mark, Mark the second chapter and verses twenty-seven and twenty-eight:

Mark 2:27-28 *And [Jesus] said to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath. [Now He did not say, “the Sabbath was made for the Jew.” He said, “The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.”] (28) Therefore the Son of man [which is He Himself, or Jesus Christ] is Lord also of the Sabbath.*

Therefore, the Sabbath must be the Lord's day. That seemed very plain to me, but other people have been told that Sunday is the Lord's day. Now I would take a check out of my pocket (except there isn't one in it) and write it out for a thousand dollars for anyone that could show me any place where the Bible calls Sunday "the Lord's day" because it just doesn't.

It speaks of "the Lord's day" in only one place in all the Bible; and there it really means "the day of the Lord," and it isn't speaking of the day of the week. If it did, it would be speaking of Saturday; but it is speaking of a period time. We've been in the day of **man**, or the day of **Satan**; and we're going to come to 'the Day of the Lord', when the Lord begins to take over and run things. And that what the book of Revelation is all about, because that's in Revelation chapter one verse ten; and that is the setting, or you might say the summary, of what the book of Revelation is all about.

The Sabbath Was Made

Now, the Sabbath was MADE. It was one of those things that was MADE. Well, then, who made it? I just read to you in John 1:

***John 1:1, 3** In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the word was God ... [and] (3) ALL things were made by him; and without him was not ANYTHING MADE that was made.*

So, therefore, the Sabbath is one of those things that was MADE. So, it was made by the Lord. That's why it's the Lord's Day: He made it. It was made by Him. Now He said it was made FOR a purpose: made for MAN. Of course, it's made for man, but maybe that doesn't fully express its purpose. It was made for a greater purpose. But it was made for man – for the benefit of man, nevertheless.

Well, we go back and read about WHEN it was made; and we see about when it was made in Genesis 1 and verse 1:

Genesis 1:1 In the beginning God created the heaven [Heavens, plural, it is.] and the earth.

Now we don't know when that was. That might have been millions or billions of years ago too. Anyway, He created the heavens and the earth; and, as I told you before (in Ephesians 3 and verse 9), God created all things **by** Jesus Christ. And Christ is the Word. He spake, and it was done. And the Holy Spirit is the power that responded, when He spoke, and brought it into being. But God the Father ordered it, designed and planned it. Christ might have had His part in that designing and all of that too. But now we turn to Genesis the second chapter. Well, first I want you to notice the twenty-sixth verse of Genesis 1, verse 26:

Genesis 1:26 And God said, Let us make man in our image.

So, you see, Elohim is a uni-plural which includes both the Word and God. And They're both God, and God is more than one Person: **a Family of Persons**. And Elohim is a word like "family," or like "club," or like "church." More than one person belonging to a club; more than one person in a church; more than one person in a family – but only one family, one church and so on. And people can't seem to understand that. They think there must be a lot of churches. There's only the one that is God's Church, only one that is the real Body of Christ. And so Elohim said: "*Let US [Not 'Me.' Let US ...] make man in our image, after our likeness.*" He was making man after the God kind. He made animals after the animal kind. But He was making man after His own kind, the God kind.

Now in Genesis the second chapter and beginning with verse 1:

Genesis 2:1-2 Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. (2) And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made ...

Now, He did not end creating. He only ended the work. It didn't say He ended creation, and you notice what He ended was work. Now He was not going to work: He was going to create something by REST. But He's still creating, and from that time on He's going to be creating character in human beings. But first He was going to create a Sabbath day. *"On the seventh day God ended his WORK which he had made ..."*

Genesis 2:2-3 ... and he rested on the seventh day from all of his work which he had made. (3) And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it [Sanctified means set apart for a holy use and purpose. Not for just any old use, but for holy use and purpose. *"Blessed the seventh day and sanctified it ..."*] because that in it he had rested from all his work which [he] had created and made.

Now again, it was made for man; and it was made when man was made. It was not made for the Jew. It's not the Jewish Sabbath.

Fellowship With God

Now God (hereof spoken of as Yahweh, which means the One who later became Christ and who had been the Word) rested and was refreshed. He is the One who rested on that day. Christ then (or Yahweh, the LORD) put His presence in that day, and also His fellowship with the man and the woman that He had created on the sixth day. On the sixth day He finished creation by creating the man and the woman; and it says, *"male and female created he them."* And so He spoke to them and taught and had a fellowship meeting with them. You notice here in the sixteenth verse, Genesis 2 and beginning with verse sixteen:

Genesis 2:16-17 And the [Eternal] God commanded the man [that He had just created], saying, *Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: (17) But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die."*

Now that was pronouncing a death sentence on him, if he took of the fruit of that tree. That tree was a symbolic tree. Perhaps there was a real tree there. I'm not questioning that. But it, whatever kind of tree it was (and I can tell you, I think I can say definitely it was not an apple tree because the world seems to think it was; and the world has to be wrong! But I don't know what it was. Whether it was crab-apple, or peach, or pear, I don't know. Anyway, it represented **taking to himself** the knowledge of what is good and what is evil; and it represented, also, rejecting the Tree of Life. And so He pronounced a death sentence.

In other words, death is simply the punishment of breaking the law. You can't have a law without a penalty for transgression. Otherwise it isn't a law. Now He pronounced **the penalty of death**. So we know that (while the Bible doesn't give us very many of the words) He probably began speaking to the man and the woman He created on Friday afternoon at sunset; and then through the evening until time for them to go to sleep and get a night's sleep; and then on the day part of the Sabbath, of that first Sabbath; **AND HE PUT HIS PRESENCE IN IT AND HAD FELLOWSHIP WITH THEM** at that time.

Well, now, how about us today? I want you to see that He has not quit having fellowship with us. We turn now over to I John in the New Testament, near the end of the New Testament. I John 1, and just verse 3:

I John 1:3** That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is **with the Father, and with [the] Son Jesus Christ.

WE ARE TO HAVE FELLOWSHIP WITH THE FATHER AND THE SON, AS WELL AS WITH ONE ANOTHER. Is there **AN APPOINTED TIME** when we meet together and have fellowship together? Is there? I'll turn to that a little later, but the Sabbath day is a holy convocation where our

presence is commanded. You know, right there is something different in this Church than any other church I know: All members – unless we are simply away and unable to be here, or sick or for some reason unable to come – are present at the Sabbath service.

It is a holy **convocation**. Now a “convocation” is “an assembly that is convoked” if you look in the dictionary, and to convoke it is to **COMMAND** it. It’s not come if you want to, or come once in a while, or come on Easter and Christmas as the world does. Of course, we don’t observe those days anyway. We observe the days that **God** tells us to observe, that **God** says are **HOLY CONVOCATIONS**. I will show you later the Sabbath is a holy convocation. Well, let’s turn to Leviticus 23 and verse 3:

Leviticus 23:3 Six days shall work be done: but in the seventh day is the Sabbath of rest, a HOLY CONVOCATION; ye shall do no work therein: it is the Sabbath of the LORD [Not of the Jew, but of the Lord.] in all your dwellings.

Now you will notice again, it is the Sabbath of the Lord; and it is a holy **CONVOCATION**. It is set apart for a holy use and purpose, and we’re told to **ASSEMBLE TOGETHER**. And, when we assemble together, we not only have fellowship with one another but we’re having fellowship with the Father and with the Son. And when we are here in fellowship as we are tonight, this is a night part of the Sabbath; and, brethren, do you realize that, in spirit, **JESUS CHRIST IS HERE** tonight in this auditorium? This auditorium is dedicated to Him and the Great God, their Name in gold letters out in front in the grand logier. And They’re here and assembling with us, and we’re in Their presence.

It was Jesus Christ who **PUT HIS PRESENCE IN THE SABBATH DAY**, by meeting with the only man and woman that He had created and who were alive at that time, on that first Sabbath. **AND HE MEETS WITH US**

WHEN WE'RE HERE. It's a holy convocation, and we are commanded to be here.

God's Presence Makes Sabbath Holy

Now, how do we keep the Sabbath? Well, one thing is, we attend God's Church services; and we come into the presence of a **holy** God. It is a **holy** convocation. It's His presence here in the day, in the Sabbath, that makes it holy; and He is here with us. Now, let me give you Exodus 3:1-5. I don't remember why I put it here, but let me go back to that. Oh, yes:

Exodus 3:1-2 Now Moses kept the flock of Jethro his father in law, the priest of Midian: and he led the flock to the backside of the desert, and he came to the mountain of God, even to Horeb [or Mount Sinai]. (2) And the angel of the [Eternal] appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he [Moses] looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush was not consumed.

It just kept on burning and burning. It probably was a very small bush, a bush that would burn up. Moses must have seen it when he was some little distance away from it; and he kept walking toward it, and it was still burning; he walked on past it, and he looked back. It was still burning! And it was a small enough bush it should have burned all up before that time. Now he was curious, so he looked back:

Exodus 3:3-5 Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt. [That is, why it wasn't burnt out.] (4) And when the LORD saw that he turned aside to see, GOD called to him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And [Moses] said, Here I am. (5) And [God] said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place wherein thou standest is HOLY GROUND.

Now, what made that ground holy? The ground a couple of hundred yards back was not holy; the ground a hundred and two or three hundred yards ahead was not holy; but that ground right there was **holy** where Moses was standing. It was the presence of God there that made it holy.

AND GOD’S PRESENCE IS IN THE SABBATH DAY, AND HIS PRESENCE IN THIS DAY MAKES IT HOLY TIME. Besides He blessed it, set it apart, sanctified it, and **MADE** it holy time; and told us to keep it that way. It is holy to Him, and it’s supposed to be holy to us; and I showed you that in the previous Bible Study. It is a holy convocation. We’re told to assemble. And His presence is here, and that makes it holy time.

Appropriate Sabbath Dress

Now then, when we come here that brings another thing about how to keep the Sabbath and how to come dressed when you come into the presence of God. You know one time (as a matter of fact, it was on December 1, 1968.) I was in Jerusalem. And I had been in one of the university buildings and visiting with Dr. Aviram, one of the leaders of the Hebrew University, on the faculty; and we had talked for a while and we were leaving, then, for a meeting with the President of Israel. And the time had come for us to leave and walk over to the President’s Mansion, as it was at that time. They later built a, what they call, it’s a small palace, but a very small one that they built for the President in Israel. Because they are a poor nation, they didn’t build a great magnificent one. But, anyway, it was the house where he lived; it was a very nice house.

Well, we walked down the hallway to the elevator; and Doctor Aviram says, “Hey, wait a minute. I’ve got to go back.” He said “I, we’re going into the presence of the President of Israel. I have to go back and put a jacket on.” Now he was just in shirtsleeves, and open collar and no necktie; and it was

warm weather, and he didn't even have a coat on, or a jacket. So he went back to put a jacket on. Well, they don't dress so well over in Israel. He still didn't bother to pull on a necktie, because they just don't do that there. But at least he knew he had to dress properly to come into the presence of the President of the nation, and we were going over to meet the President. Well, of course, I was already dressed up for the occasion. But I just want to show you that did make a great difference.

Now, it makes a difference to God how we come attired when we come into His presence. And I want to mention that now because I find that God's people, some of them, are very sloppy in the way they come dressed, or attired, to God's Sabbath meetings. They come any old way. They seem to think they can just dress up any way in the presence of God.

If you want to know how to keep the Sabbath: one thing is you are **COMMANDED TO COME TO CHURCH** unless you are unable to come. You'd better have a real reason, not just an excuse. There was one man who thought he didn't need to attend Church and had not been attending Church at all. I wrote and told him about it; and I said, "You are now catalogued as a non-member. You are not a member of the Church (although he thought he was)."

But you are to come properly attired. And God's people, many of them, have been **OFF THE TRACK; AND WE'RE GETTING BACK ON THE TRACK NOW. WE'RE GOING TO COME PROPERLY DRESSED WHEN WE COME INTO GOD'S PRESENCE HEREAFTER**, brethren. That's one of the ways that we're going to get back on the track.

I'd like to have you turn now, if you will, to Matthew 22. Matthew 22 beginning with verse 11, and Jesus is telling of a parable here. He says that there had been a wedding planned.

***Matthew 22:11** And when the king came in to see the guests[coming to*

the wedding], *he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment.*

He didn't come properly attired. He didn't have a wedding garment on. Now, did that make any difference? And Jesus is showing, Jesus is the King; and when we come into His presence we have to have proper attire on.

Matthew 22:12-14 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having on a wedding garment? And he [the man] was speechless. (13) Then said the king [Now that is God who is saying this. That's what it means, and says it to any of you who think you can come attired any way at all. "Then said the king ..."] to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (14) For many shall be called, but few chosen.

Some have been called, but they don't care. And they don't care how they ACT and how they treat God with contempt any old way, come attired any old way when they come into God's presence. Brethren, you cannot do that. You ever see me come here in overalls? You ever see me come with a dark blue shirt on, or something? I try to set you an example. Now, we have never told our ushers "Just turn away people and don't admit them. Tell them to go home and get suitable clothes on." And I hope we won't have to do that.

Now, by that I don't mean you have to go out and buy special clothes. I mean you should come dressed with **the best you have**. Maybe you don't have as good clothes as someone else. That's all right. Such as you have, use it; but come dressed up. You know, whatever is being dressed up for you and the best that you have. That's the way you should come into the presence ... not because of me, not because of the person who'll be sitting next to you, but because of the PRESENCE OF GOD AND THE PRESENCE OF CHRIST HERE IN THIS SERVICE WITH US. THEIR PRESENCE IS HERE, AND THEY'RE HAVING FELLOWSHIP WITH US. Can you come

into the presence of the Mighty God like just any old way? Brethren, we're going to GET BACK ON THE TRACK. That's all. I say we're not all the way back yet, but we're getting back there.

The Sabbath Is For Rest

Now, I say the Sabbath was made for man. It was. It's made for our rest. And when we work ... Now, we don't all work with our hands and our bodies and our legs. Some people get very tired. I have worked in an Iowa hay farm pitching hay, when the right season comes; and I know what it is. And I know you get up about sunrise, or before; and by noon you're hungry, and you have a great big dinner. And in the afternoon, you go out and you work; and you sweat, and you work. And by night you're really tired and rest seems very good. But also I have worked a great many years with my mind; and my body needs more exercise, and doesn't get enough. And sometimes I'm tired using my mind, and I need to rest it. But it is a time for rest and relaxation.

Now, there's a reason why we need rest. And sometimes we, well, God made man so we need to sleep nights. Now God does NOT need to sleep nights. He does not sleep, and He never will get tired. But we are. And I wonder if you ever realize why you get tired? When you're tired, there's a sort of a pain feeling that you feel, well, in the joints or the muscles of the body. You have a tired feeling. You feel tired. Well, it's something you feel.

Well, you know, some scientific experiments have been made on that – to find out why you are tired, and why you need sleep, and why you are rested when you have had a good night's sleep and wake up in the morning. And this is what they find by these scientific experiments: that as you exercise and you use your body, or even using the mind, that the body does absorb certain (What am I trying to think of? The more chemical word ...) acids that do set up a certain acidity in the joints and in the muscles of the

body; and that produces that tired feeling. And even if you sit and use your mind all day, you'll have a tired feeling; and you need total relaxation of mind and rest.

When you are then resting, and your body is resting, and you're sleeping – you're still breathing in and out, and your body is breathing, and your blood is circulating. And the blood, just the circulation of blood, without further exercise that does not create a further acidic condition in the muscles and the joints begins to bring off that that is there that was causing the pain. You breathe it out in your breathing. And, by the time you've rested all night, it's all been breathed out. And you wake up in the morning, and that pain is not there. That tired feeling isn't there any longer.

Now that's the way some scientists have explained it. And you'll have to decide whether what they've come up with is true or whether it's false. But, that is, they've tested it on horses; and they've tested it on people. And they actually have found certain acidity conditions in the muscles at night after a hard day's work that are not there after a good night's sleep.

The Sabbath Belongs To God

But remember this: the Sabbath was made for man and for man's benefit; and yet IT BELONGS TO GOD, and it is God's **holy** day. Now we come to a scripture that I did read when I was going through these things before, in Isaiah 56; but I want to go over that again because it's very important in how to observe the Sabbath. Isaiah 56, beginning with verse 1:

Isaiah 56:1 Thus saith the [Eternal], Keep ye judgment, and do justice: for my salvation is near to come, and my righteousness to be revealed.

That means now, today. While that's in the Old Testament, it's a

prophecy for our time – when His righteousness is near to be revealed, at the time of the Second Coming of Christ. So this is for us today. Verse 2:

Isaiah 56:2 Blessed is the man that doeth this, and the son of man that layeth hold on it; and keepeth the Sabbath from polluting it, and keepeth his hand from doing any evil.

Now it was made for, not for the Jew, but it's made **for all men**. It's made for man. So now notice about those that are of another race or another nation:

Isaiah 56:3-4 Neither let the son of the stranger [or a Gentile, or some stranger in another country], that hath joined himself to the LORD, speak, saying, The LORD hath utterly separated me from his people: neither let the eunuch say, Behold I am a dry tree. (4) For thus saith the LORD unto the eunuchs that keep my Sabbaths, and that choose those things that PLEASE ME ...

You'll notice the Sabbath is one of those things that is HOLY to God. Whether it is to you or not, it's holy to God. But it is one of the things that pleases God. If we please Him, He will bless us. ”*That keep my Sabbaths, and... [those] things that please Me ...*”

Isaiah 56:4-8 ... and take hold of my covenant; (5) Even unto them will I give in my house and within my walls a place and a name better than of sons and daughters: I will give them an everlasting name, that shall not be cut off. (6) Also the sons of the stranger, that join themselves to the [Eternal], to serve him, and to love the name of the [Eternal], to be his servants, everyone that keepeth THE SABBATH from polluting it, and taketh hold of my covenant; (7) Even them will I bring to my holy mountain [which means the holy nation, or the Kingdom of God], and make them joyful in my house of prayer: their burnt offerings and their sacrifices shall be accepted upon mine altar; for mine house shall be called a house of prayer for ALL people.

(8) The LORD [Eternal] which gathereth the outcasts of Israel saith, Yet will I gather others to him, beside those that are gathered ...

He's going to gather. And that is something too that is yet future and going to happen; because our people are going to go into captivity, and so are the Jewish people. They're going to go into a captivity, and He's going to gather them at the time of the coming of Christ. Now we come to the fifty-eighth chapter of Isaiah and beginning with verse 13. Just verses 13 and 14:

Isaiah 58:13 If thou turn away thy FOOT from the Sabbath, from doing THY pleasure on MY HOLY DAY ...

TAKE YOUR FOOT OFF OF IT. QUIT TRAMPLING ON IT. QUIT MUDDYING IT UP. It makes me think of coming in on a floor that has been scrubbed and cleaned and is immaculate. And you've been out in the mud, and in a terrible kind of a muddy place on a rainy day. And you come in, and you trample all over it and dirty the floor. Well, if it's the Lord's House, it's not going to please Him to see His floor dirtied all up. Or if it's a woman, and you do that in her room, how would she feel about it? How does God feel when we trample on His Sabbath day? Let me go back and read that:

Isaiah 58:13-14 If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing THY PLEASURE on my holy day [Now the Sabbath, then, is not a day for our entertainment and pleasure – just plain pleasure; and it's speaking of worldly pleasure and that kind of pleasure. “On My holy day ...”]; and call the Sabbath a delight [That's what we should do, call it a delight.], the holy of the LORD, honourable; and shall honour him [How? How do we honor Him?], not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: (14) Then shalt thou delight thyself in the [Eternal]; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father [which is, of course, eternal life in the Kingdom of God]: for the mouth of the

[Eternal] hath spoken it.

So, you see, it is not a day for our pleasure. We're not to walk all over it, or trample that which is holy to God. And I didn't put this down to use tonight, but God also says how people are very sloppy in the way they serve God; and one of the ways you can sin is putting no difference between the holy and the profane. Now God's tithe is holy. It's absolutely holy and sacred to Him, and is not ours. It belongs to Him. And the Sabbath day is NOT OURS. As I say, I told this woman up in Seattle, "It's not my day. It's God's." It's not my day. It's God's day. It's not the Jews' day either. It's God's day.

So it is not for our pleasure. It is not for our work, or our labor, if we are busy in manual labor. It is not for our business, if we're in business. It's not for shopping. It's not for going to football games or baseball games. There are a lot of people down at the baseball park tonight in a World Series game. Well, we're not there. We're here having fellowship with God; and it's much better, because people down there are going to be worrying if the Yankees beat the Dodgers tonight, which they probably will! And they're going to have to suffer. They won't enjoy it a bit! Now, we can wholly enjoy this service here tonight.

Going To A Restaurant On The Sabbath?

That brings up some other things that have come, that I might discuss right here while we're on it. This is a question that was brought to me just this evening: "Is it all right to go out to a restaurant for lunch on the Sabbath? Is it all right to save the wife the trouble of cooking food, and you just go to a restaurant? They're working anyway, whether we go or not. We don't cause it. And it saves all of that work, and especially if we don't have to walk very far and we don't go to the labor of walking too far?" Well, now, that might be.

Others say, “Well, but ... You see, we should do all the preparing of food on Friday, so we don’t have to do it on the Sabbath.” And “We don’t have to go to work on the Sabbath, and that the wife doesn’t have to do that anyway on the Sabbath.” Well preparation of food, so far as possible, ought to be made on Friday. That is **the preparation day**. And a little bit of cooking, a little preparation of food, is allowable on the Sabbath, but remember it is the day that is holy to God. It is not for our work. It shouldn’t be work like regular daily work for the housewife or any one who does the cooking. It should be cut down to an absolute minimum.

But I would like to turn, at this point, back to Exodus the sixteenth chapter; and here we have an Old Testament example. God is the same yesterday, today, and forever. He hasn’t changed in His way. And I’ve quoted you Old Testament texts showing how He told them to keep the Sabbath in those days.

Exodus 16:25 And Moses said ...

Now this is when the children of Israel had not ... They were getting hungry, and they didn’t have enough food. And God said that He would take care of that, and He would rain down manna from heaven for them. And God was sending them manna, just raining it down from heaven. Now there’re one or two things I’m going to mention here that I’m not sure about. They had to go out and gather that manna. I don’t know how much work there was in gathering it. I don’t know whether they had to make, prepare it, or wash it, or cook it, or do something to it once they had gathered it, and how much work was involved in that. Those things I don’t know; and I’m sure you don’t know either, because it doesn’t tell us. But:

*Exodus 16:25-26 Moses said, Eat that today [This was on a Friday.]; for today is a Sabbath unto the [Eternal]: today you shall not find it in the field. (26) Six days you shall gather it [That’s the manna.]; but on **the***

seventh day, which is the Sabbath, in it there shall be none.

Now some of them thought, “It doesn’t make any difference whether we observe the Sabbath or not. It’s all right.” And, you know, we’ve had people saying that – that “Well, we can compromise; and we can get pretty liberal.” Now we had some people getting so liberal they allowed people to do their regular work on the Sabbath, and everything else, over in England. They’re not ... They’re ministers, and they’re not in the Church any longer. One of them is preaching for a Sunday church every Sunday. Another one just got a job in the secular field, regular manual work; but he’s not a minister any longer, and he’s not a member of the Church. Neither one of them are members of the Church any longer.

Now they said for the seventh day ... They had the amount for two days that God sent them by a divine miracle on Friday. But on the day that we now call Saturday, God didn’t send any at all; they didn’t go out and gather it at all.

***Exodus 16:27-30** And it came to pass [And He said that “there will be none.” ”It came to pass ... ”], that there went out some of the people on the seventh day for to gather [They were going to TEST God. They thought maybe God was bluffing.], and they FOUND NONE. [God wasn’t kidding.] (28) And the LORD said unto Moses, HOW LONG REFUSE YE TO KEEP MY COMMANDMENTS AND MY LAWS? [Did it make any difference to God? You bet your life it did! And you are betting your life on it too, incidentally.] (29) See, for that the LORD hath given you the Sabbath, therefore he giveth you on the sixth day the bread of two day; abide ye every man in his place, let no man go out of his place on the seventh day. (30) So the people rested on the seventh day [after that].*

Well, you get an idea there. Now, as I say, I don’t know how much work they had to go to, to prepare that manna. How much work it was to go out

and gather it. Maybe it was quite a chore to gather it. Maybe it took time to pick it all up. I don't know. It takes you time to gather certain berries or fruits off of vines or off of trees. Or like peas in a pod, or other certain vegetables or things that might be quite a chore to do that. Or maybe they had to prepare it after they brought it into the house, or the tent, or wherever they were living in at the time. That I don't know. But God did not give them any on the Sabbath day.

God plainly shows us that we can eat on the Sabbath. And I think I'll turn to a text after a bit when Jesus and His disciples were going through a cornfield on the Sabbath day, and they plucked out ears of corn to eat. They went to that much work. And they weren't walking a great distance; because I know that they didn't walk over a Sabbath day's journey, and that's about three-quarters of a mile. But, nevertheless, they were allowed to go to the amount of work was necessary to eat.

Now I knew a man when I was a boy, and I was brought up in a Sunday church; and, of course, he thought Sunday was the Sabbath. And this man would not ride on a streetcar because then he would cause other men who were working on that day to work to carry him. Of course, they were going to work anyway, whether he got on the car or not. He didn't stop to think about that. But he walked from way over on the west side of Des Moines to the east side of Des Moines, Iowa, to attend church every Sabbath. He walked about two or three miles over, and three miles back, to prevent riding where other men were working (that were going to work anyway, whether he did it or not). Well, that seemed like the height of foolishness. You see what I mean?

If you go out to a restaurant on the Sabbath, that restaurant's going to be there; and that food's going to be prepared whether you go or not. And the other people are going to be working anyway. They don't keep the Sabbath. They pay no attention to that. And I, ah, I don't see ... God gives us a kind of **a principle** here, and I think that we can see how to apply it to a given

circumstance. On the other hand, if you go out for lunch on the Sabbath ... Now, in a way, you can go to a restaurant after sunset. And many, many times on the Day of Atonement I have had a restaurant reservation for six-thirty in the evening. I appear at the restaurant at six-thirty, and I don't have to go to more than a Sabbath day's journey of work to get there. And the sun is setting at six-thirty at that time, and they don't begin to bring any food anyway for the first fifteen minutes or so; and so we don't eat anything until after dark. So I know that that's all right.

Now I had never thought until this evening, when the question was asked to me about whether it was wrong to go to a restaurant to eat ... And I know, when I travel, I have to do it or go without; and so I do. On the other hand, those who eat at home should do all the preparing they can – like baking and things that take time. For example: you could prepare a salad, a cold salad, on Friday. Put it in your refrigerator. And today they have these wax papers and everything, you know, the what-you-call-it wrap that'll keep it fresh. Reynolds's Wrap, is it? Whatever it's called. "Best wrap around" I think I heard one of the commercials say on television. Whichever one that is! And it'll keep it perfectly! And the refrigerator isn't "working." You don't have to worry about it working anyway. You don't have to turn it off on the Sabbath, because it's only a machine. It's not your manservant, or your maidservant, or your horse, or your donkey, or your son, or your daughter.

The Sabbath Is Not A Yoke Of Bondage

Now the thing I want to say is this: On the one hand, we don't want to be so straight-laced that we make the Sabbath a yoke of bondage: God did not intend that. On the other hand, we don't want to go to the other extreme and get liberal and say, "Oh well, it's all right. We can do anything on the Sabbath!" You can't do that! You've got to be careful to keep that day HOLY. Now maybe if you only go a short distance on a Sabbath, and you eat in a

restaurant, and it saves you the work at home ... Well, I understand some of you were condemning one couple for doing that. And I say that you can't sit in judgment, and I don't condemn them.

You have to be honest in yourself. The Holy Spirit in you is **an attitude** in your mind, and it's an attitude of where **you want to please God** more than yourself. I'll tell you, there's a rotten attitude that most people have. They want to please themselves more than God. They want to please God as LITTLE as they can get away with. And we've had that in this Church – wanting to see “How far can we go in the Devil's way? How little can we obey God and get away with it?” You'll never get into the Kingdom with that kind of an attitude. Never! IF THERE IS ANY DOUBT, GIVE GOD THE BENEFIT OF THE DOUBT EVERY TIME. But what do you do in cases like that?

After-Sabbath Activities

Now another thing brought to my attention: Here is a family that were driving eight hours on the Sabbath to go to a different Church area than the one where they usually meet, because there was a basketball game on Saturday night at this other Church; and their kids wanted to play basketball. And so the whole family drove eight hours on the Sabbath day in a car, starting early morning, to get to another place in the afternoon so they could be there at night for a basketball game. Now the basketball game probably occurred after dark. That's usually played indoors, with lights, anyway. But driving a car eight hours, when you don't need to, is certainly “working” on the Sabbath. And that is foolishness; and that is being liberal; and that is wrong on the liberal side.

Sabbath Activities

Now God said the Sabbath is made for man. It's made to be a delight, the holy of the Lord. It's a day of rest, and it's for our good. It's not a straight-laced yoke of bondage. Let's get that straight! We don't want to go to either extreme. Now this came to me: some want to invite others for an afternoon over to their home for socializing. Not for fellowship, but just for a social afternoon. Well, it depends how are you spending your time? How far do you travel? How much work is involved? A lot of those things enter in. I'm not going to strain at a gnat or swallow a camel. On the other hand, I'm not going to be so liberal that I say that you can just get away with anything you want. Why can't we get a balance, brethren? Why can't we get a **right balance**? It depends on what you do and how you do it.

Now I mentioned on one of the Friday nights, when I was talking on the Sabbath, where I had been preaching at another place, and we were flying back; and it was still before sundown on the Sabbath, and I was tired. I had been preaching the night before; I had preached at the afternoon, as I remember; and I had worked on the plane; and we'd had a meeting of ministers and their wives after the afternoon service in this other city; and now we were flying for some three hours or more back home; and I was tired. I had been working my mind and my mind was fatigued. I needed some physical exercise; but I couldn't get that on the airplane. Maybe I could run up and down the aisle a little bit? But, if I did, I think Captain Black would be calling in, telling me to sit down and behave myself; because, if you would run, that would jar the plane.

Incidentally, by the way, I noticed in my office today I felt myself rocking back and forth a couple of times. Did you ever notice? There was an earthquake here today, a very slight one; but I noticed at exactly ten thirty this morning, and then a little later again, a couple of times each time.

Anyway, coming home (And I've mentioned this once before.) I took out a deck of cards, and I was playing a little Solitaire at my desk in my office in the plane. I didn't know what to do. I was weary. I was mentally weary. I had tried to sleep, and I couldn't sleep. And I had to unwind, and I had to relax. And the most restful thing I could do was to play a little Solitaire. I wasn't trying to win! I was just trying to do something to rest my mind a little bit and relax. But, you know, a minister aboard sort of very subtly balled me out a little bit for that: 'I was breaking the Sabbath.' Well, I'm not quite that straight-laced. Now if I thought, if I were doing it for pleasure and for the excitement of enjoying it, I would say it was wrong. A lot of it depends on what is your motive? What is your intent? What is your purpose? What's on your mind? WHY do you do it?

I couldn't get physical exercise. I was too tired to go back and talk with the others on the plane. I was just tired. I wanted to rest my mind; and that, for me, was rest. All right, I tell you I did it. And I tell you that I would tell you, under the same circumstances, you could do it. It would be right, and I don't think that was wrong. If I did, I certainly would never do it again. But I – unless someone can show me that was wrong – I probably will do it again.

The Sabbath Is To Honor God

Now the Sabbath is not for our pleasure. On the other hand, it is not the opposite. It is made for man; but it is God's day, to honor Him. It is made for man. It is made to be a delight to us, a relaxation from the normal weekday occupations; and where your normal weekday occupation is mental, perhaps you need mental rest on the Sabbath. Did you ever think of that? Depends on what your work is.

I want to read that one now about Jesus' disciples going through the cornfield on the Sabbath day. Let's see, that's in Mark the second chapter

beginning with verse 23:

Mark 2:23-28 And it came to pass, that [Jesus] went through the corn fields on the Sabbath day [Or maybe it was the grain field, but whichever. Some translations have it grain field.]; and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck ears of corn. (24) And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the Sabbath day that which is not lawful? [Now verse 27.] (27) And he said unto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath [And that's where He said:] (28) Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

And it is His day, but it was made for man.

Healing On The Sabbath

Now there were examples about healing on the Sabbath, and Jesus was criticized for that. We come to Luke 13 now: Luke 13 beginning with verse 10:

Luke 13:10-12 And [Jesus] was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath. (11) And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years and was bowed together [She just couldn't straighten herself up.], and could in no wise lift up herself. (12) And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

He didn't even ask her if she wanted healing, or anything of the kind. He just had mercy on her and told her that she was healed.

Luke 13:13-17 And he laid his hands on her: and IMMEDIATELY she was made straight, and glorified God. (14) And the ruler of the synagogue answered [It was in the church service on the Sabbath.] with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and said to the people,

There are six days on which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day. (15) [And Jesus] answered him ... Thou hypocrite [He called the ruler of the synagogue a hypocrite! ”Thou hypocrite!”], doth not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to water? (16) And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from her bond on the Sabbath day? (17) And when he had said these words, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all of the people rejoiced for all of the glorious things that were done by him.

So He did heal quite often on the Sabbath day. And the Pharisees, in other cases beside this, rebuked Him for it; but He said that “You feed your livestock and you water them on the Sabbath day.”

Prepare For The Sabbath

Now I knew a turkey raiser in the Church (up in the original parent-church of this Philadelphia era) in Eugene, Oregon. He was a turkey raiser and, as soon as he was converted and baptized and began to keep the Sabbath, on Sunday he would ... He had to grind feed for his turkeys. He would grind one-seventh, no, one-sixth of the amount of feed that it took for a whole day’s feeding on Sunday; and on Monday he would grind another sixth; and on Tuesday another sixth; and on Friday finally a sixth. And by that time, by Friday, he had six sixths or a whole day’s extra feeding ahead. Now, he’d have to out and feed it to them; but the labour of grinding it he did, he spread it over the six days before he came to that so that he didn’t work on the Sabbath day.

And it was for baptizing this man before he came to see the truth about the Sabbath that I was chastised by other Sardis ministers up there. But I told them that the Scripture says baptize them and **then** teach the things that God

had said. Matthew 28, in the Great Commission: go into all the world and preaching the gospel and baptizing them in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit; and teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have told you.

Well, they cannot understand these things **until** they receive the Holy Spirit; and they receive the Holy Spirit **after** they're baptized, and you lay hands on them for the receiving of the Holy Spirit. And, beside, that's when we're brought into the Church. We're not brought into the Church by water baptism. That's another thing I'm going to have to speak out on some of these days. Water baptism is not entrance into the Church! BY ONE SPIRIT we're all baptized into the one body of the Church. We need to realize that. By one Spirit! Not by water. But water baptism is, nevertheless, commanded.

Acts Of Mercy

Now, let's see, Luke 14 beginning with verse 1 *And it came to pass, as [Jesus] went into the house of one of the ... Pharisees to eat bread on the Sabbath day, that they watched him.*

Now here He actually went in to eat with an unconverted man, a Pharisee, on the Sabbath day! Now, if I would do that today, I know that there'd be some that would criticize me and say, "Ah, Mr. Armstrong went in to eat with an unconverted person on the Sabbath day." Well, I want you to know that Jesus did it here; but He never sinned, did He?

***Luke 14:2-6** And, behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy. (3) And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and the Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath day? (4) And they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go; (5) And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit [or into the ditch, or whatever], and will not straightway pull him out on*

the Sabbath day? (6) And they could not answer him again to these things [or, they didn't bother Him anymore on it].

Well, as I've heard someone say: "Don't go and throw your ox, or your horse, or someone, into the ditch on Friday so you can pull him out on the Sabbath." And I think you get the point there. It was one that I heard up in Eugene, Oregon years before I even came down here. Well, acts of mercy and things like that are perfectly okay on the Sabbath. Now, do not get overly straight laced; but do NOT get liberal or compromise with what is right. The Sabbath is made, not to pollute it, to **remember** – that it belongs to God and not to us, it's His day, and how He tells us to keep it.

A Sabbath day's journey was permitted, you read in Acts 1 verse 12. And that was from Jerusalem there – well, by the place where the wall is at Jerusalem now – up to the Mount of Olives. That's about seven-eighths of a mile, but also it's uphill. And it talks about going up a Sabbath day's journey (and not coming down). Walking uphill. On an automobile or a plane you can do about the amount that would be the same as walking approximately a mile on the level, or even a trifle over a mile on level ground, that would be work. How much **work** is there in driving an automobile and riding in one? Even riding in a car all day long gets to be very, very tiresome. So you can't go eight or ten hours a day on the Sabbath. That would be going too far. But the main thing is just don't tempt God, one way or the other. Let's try to do what is pleasing in His sight and try to be sure that we are pleasing God.

Now, let me see, finally here in Romans 11 beginning with verse 33 [2](#):

***Romans 11:33-36** O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and the knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! (34) For who hath known the mind of the Lord? Or who hath been his counselor? (35) Or who hath first given to him, and it shall not be recompensed to him again? (36) For of him, and through him, and to him are*

all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

Principle Of The Law

And, with that, I've just tried to cover tonight to give you the principles involved. And God's law is like that. It is **a principle to be applied to various circumstances**. Now, you'll have to use wisdom. The thing is: Are you trying to see how much you can get away with? If there is any doubt, give God the benefit and not yourself – every time. But it's not to make you miserable. It's to be a happiness and a joy, and a joyful occasion for us. We must honor God. Remember that He is in our presence in Sabbath services; and we should conduct ourselves accordingly, not being either too liberal or straining at a gnat and swallowing a camel. I think you can apply it your own way and be sure that you're pleasing to God.

And remember, you're being judged NOW. And, if you do wrong, God is judging you now. I'm not. God is. Your judgment day is not coming later. It's here now. You're being judged hour-by-hour, minute-by-minute, and day-by-day. Every one of us is. And let's remember that we're the first to be judged, and judgment is on us.

So, hope to see you all tomorrow. And I hope there'll be more people back for tomorrow, as I had a very important message for tomorrow afternoon that I wanted too. But I suppose there won't be any more people back tomorrow because most of them have ... I don't know why we always take so long to get back from the Feast. That's another thing. We want to take every advantage. When there's any doubt we always take the advantage to ourselves. Well, some of us are going to find that it's going to cost us our chance of getting into the Kingdom if we do that. Just remember that, brethren.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said "in the next verse."
However, he was quoting the last part of the same verse.

{2} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said, "beginning with verse fifty-three."
However, he quoted verse thirty-three.

On The Holy Spirit

Sermon (November 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

On The Holy Spirit.....	921	From Physical To Immortal Life	928
God's Spirit Dwelling In You	922	Acquired Knowledge	929
Serious Warning	924	Spiritual Way Of Living	930
God's Spirit Changes You	926	Your Real Education	931
The Carnal VS The Spiritual	926		

I want to get back to a subject I was talking to you about the last time I was here, about three weeks ago. And I'd like to turn to a couple of scriptures, first in the 8th chapter of Romans. Let's get to something a little more spiritual. In Romans the 8th chapter verse 7 speaks of the carnal mind, the natural mind. That is not, doesn't say, an especially evil mind. It's just the mind everybody's born with.

Romans 8:7 *The [natural, or] carnal mind is enmity against God.*

That is, hostile against God. Do you realize that? That the natural minds of men are hostile against God? I find that people who don't know God (or even if they think they are in some church, and they really don't know God though they think they do), if I begin to mention any of the truth of God, they want to change the subject in a hurry. It's very unpleasant to them, **because they don't realize it but their minds are HOSTILE** against God. They are **uncomfortable** when you talk about God to them. It's just like they say, "Well, God, what are you trying to stick your nose into my business for? What are you trying to get from me, God? I want you out of my life." They think God is trying to harm them. They're afraid of religion. They don't understand.

Romans 8:7 ... hostile against God: for it is not subject to the [law] of God, neither indeed can be.

Take the Protestant religion. There is one basic truth ... It isn't truth. One basic belief, that they have; and that is the law is done away. They believe you repent. Mostly they don't even put repent into it. But if they do, you are just sorry for what you have done. You accept Christ. Now, it's all {1} and you go right on. Of course, you go on still doing it again.

To them, to repent doesn't mean turn around and go the other way. It doesn't mean give up the way you've been living. They don't understand it at all. But if you accept Christ, you're going to go to heaven when you die. Otherwise, because of Adam's sin, you're consigned to go to hell. And most of them think that. HOW MANY OF US have believed that kind of rot, brethren? Too many of us have let that rub off on us, and we don't understand the real truth.

God's Spirit Dwelling In You

Romans 8:8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. [That's the natural, fleshly mind – the way we're born.] (9) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, IF [IF ...] so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you.

Brethren, **DOES THE SPIRIT OF GOD DWELL IN YOU, AND HOW DO YOU KNOW?** I want to tell you that many of you don't know whether the Spirit of God is dwelling in you or not. **LISTEN TO ME, BRETHREN. I WANT TO WAKE YOU UP!** A LOT OF YOU DON'T KNOW THAT, AND YOUR WHOLE ETERNITY IS DEPENDENT UPON IT.

Romans 8:9 Ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit [that's Spirit with a

capital “S,” meaning the Holy Spirit.], *if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you.*

IS the Spirit of God **DWELLING IN YOU?** **How do you know? What does the Spirit of God dwelling in you do?** What change does that make, if any, in your life? any change been made in your life?

Romans 8:9 *Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ he is none of his.*

Maybe you have said, “I accept Christ.” You have been baptized in water. You have been received into the Church; and you say you are a Church member; you are a member even of God’s Church. But IF the **Spirit of Christ** – the Holy Spirit of God – is not **dwelling in you**, and unless you are being **led** by it and you are **following** it, you are not a Christian. You’re just a member of an organization.

Do you know **what is** the Spirit of God? Did any change ever take place when the Spirit of God came into you? Now turn on to another verse, verse 14:

Romans 8:14 *As many as are LED by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

Are you being LED by the Spirit of God? Now is that just something you talk about? Or is something real that has really happened and changed your life? Is your life different? Is it led in a way by the Spirit of God now that it was not before your conversion? How do you know what **is** the Holy Spirit? How do you know whether you have received the Holy Spirit?

Do you know that there are perhaps a few million people in the United States (I know it’s many hundreds of thousands.) who believe there’s only one way you know whether you have received the Holy Spirit, and that’s if you ‘speak in tongues.’ Well, that’s what **they** think is the evidence of

receiving the Holy Spirit.

Serious Warning

Now we are going to have to go into a lot of these things a lot more than we have in the past, brethren, because I THINK WE DON'T **FULLY UNDERSTAND**. AND I WANT TO GET THIS CHURCH ON THE TRACK! I want you to be able to rise and meet Christ in the air, and to be **changed** from mortal to immortal, from human to divine so that you are an **immortal divine** being when you meet Christ up in the air. And I am afraid that many of you ARE NOT GOING TO MAKE IT. **Listen to me!** I'm talking to YOU, brethren.

What good does it do me to pour out my heart to you if you don't listen, if you don't believe? Jesus came and preached to thousands, and only 120 out of those many thousands believed what He said. He fed the 5,000, they listened to Him; but He said, "They didn't come to listen to what I said. They just came to get their bellies filled."

I go and I speak to a group of our people in some city in the United States. And maybe most of the members of 8 or 10 churches in that area will come, and there'll be a much larger group than their normal church services. Then they go back and say, "Oh, I got to see Mr. Armstrong. I got to see Mr. Armstrong, God's apostle. Isn't that great?" "Yeah well what did he talk about?" "Oh, what did he talk about? Well I don't know what he talked about. But I got to see him! Isn't that wonderful?" Now, how much did that profit them?

Take a look at me. I'm nothing. I'm a **nobody**. Except as the Word of God is in me and unless Christ is using me I'm nothing. You're nothing. But we can all become something through Christ Jesus, but only if we have the Spirit of God. Otherwise, we are not Christ's. And, brethren, I have been

awakened lately. **I am afraid** that **MANY OF OUR PEOPLE IN THE CHURCH COME AND SIT HERE, AND LISTEN**. They don't really comprehend the message, and they are NOT CHRIST'S at all. They are not really Christian. They are not going to meet Christ in the air, and He's coming in this generation.

I WANT YOU TO TAKE THIS SERIOUSLY, BRETHREN. I don't know how I can ... All I can do is shout at you, or something, and hope that some of you will get the message. You need a shaking up! You just need to have someone **shake** you, and **shake something into you**. I think that a lot of you are like you read back here in Ezekiel. Oh now I forget that chapter. Well, anyway, where it says the people come, and they come **as God's people**. Yeah, they're members of the Church. And it's a prophecy for our day. And they listen to God's minister, and they sit there as God's people. And they'll hear your words. And lo you are unto them as one that is playing on a wonderful beautiful instrument, or singing a beautiful song (although they don't hear the words or get anything out of it). They hear your words; but they don't understand them, they don't do anything about it. It makes no difference in their lives. They come as God's people. They hear your words, but they do them not! It doesn't mean anything to them.

If I can't shake you up, if I can't send you home with a different realization than you had when you came here, I've wasted my time and my love for you. You know I don't get paid any extra for it. I don't do it to please me, or for profit; but I do want you'd realize it.

God's Spirit Changes You

***Romans 8:14** As many as are **LED** by the [Holy Spirit], they are the sons of God.*

Now what does it mean being LED by the Holy Spirit? Let me tell you,

first of all the Holy Spirit isn't going to grab hold of you and pull you along. It won't do that at all. The Holy Spirit won't get behind you, and shove and push you against your own will. It isn't going to do anything like that.

I tried to preach a sermon on it, about three weeks ago I believe it was, whenever I spoke here last. Let me see if I can [{2}](#). Do you see the light bulb in there? That's like you if the Spirit of God is not in you. The Spirit of God comes [{3}](#). Does it make any difference? It changed the light bulb, didn't it? Do you know the Spirit of God in you will CHANGE YOU as much as that electric current coming in there changed that light bulb? Has anything taken hold of you and **changed YOU** that much? Or are you still just the same as you were, but you've just joined an organization? You just sit here as God's people? Brethren, your just sitting here in a seat is not going to get you into the Kingdom of God. It just is not!

The Carnal VS The Spiritual

Now I'd like us to understand this just a little more. I don't have ... I've taken so much time already; I don't have much time left. I want to go back a little bit in the 7th chapter. Paul spoke about the law of God, and he said in verse 14 of the 7th chapter:

***Romans 7:14** For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold unto [death].*

Brethren, you and I were all born **carnal**. Paul said, "I am carnal." That didn't mean he was just naturally trying to be as evil as he can. It didn't mean that at all.

***Romans 7:15-18** For that which I do, I allow not; for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that I do. (16) If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it [the law] is good. [But he said, "I'm not*

good. The law is.”] (17) *Now then it is no more I that do it, but the sin that dwells in me. (18) For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing.*

Do you know that in you dwells no good thing? The way you were born, you are just so much dirt out of the ground. That’s all. And that’s where you are going to go back. And it’s appointed to men once to die. And for most all people, after that the judgment. But the Church is an exception, and judgment is already on the Church. We’re the firstfruits. That’s what the Feast of Pentecost means every year.

Romans 7:18-22 *For to will is present with me (That is, make a decision and a determination and to will.); but how to perform that which is good I find not. (19) For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. [Now we’re all going to have to wrestle with that problem.] (20) Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me. (21) I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. (22) For I delight in the law of God after the inward man.*

Paul **believed in** the law of God. He **KNEW** it was the way to live – the **right** way to live, the way he **wanted** to live; but he found he wasn’t living that way. Do you have that same trouble? Well, I’ve had it all my life; and I’ve had to struggle with it.

Romans 7:23 *But I [find] another law in my members [And brethren that same law’s been working in your members – unless you are doing something about it. It was in Paul. It’s been in me] warring against the law of my mind.*

The law of his mind is the same as the law of God, which he’s accepted into his mind. That’s the law of out-flowing love – first to God and then to neighbor.

Romans 7:23-25 ... warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. [It's there because Satan has put it there; beginning from the time we were a day old.] (24) O wretched man that I am! Who shall deliver me from the body of this death? (25) I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

God only can deliver us, and it's through the power of His Holy Spirit. Now first we have to come to realize we have been wrong, and realize that of ourselves we are helpless to do right; and we've got to have the help of God. And if we do that, and we REPENT of what is wrong and the way we've lived in the past that means we turn from it and we don't want to do it any more. That doesn't mean we go on living that way and say, "Well, I'm sorry. Now it's alright." You know most people in the Protestant churches think if they just say, "Well, I'm sorry. I repent." Then they go right on doing it. They haven't repented. But if they accept Christ, they think that's going to get them into heaven.

From Physical To Immortal Life

Now we know you don't go to heaven. We know you get into the Kingdom of God, and that'll be right here on the Earth. But it is not a change of place. It's a change of your state and condition. You won't be flesh and blood any longer. The only **life** you have now is the blood circulating in your veins and the breath of air that goes in and out of your lungs. That's what keeps you alive.

There is a spirit in you, but that spirit in you is NOT WHAT KEEPS YOU ALIVE. THAT DOES NOT GIVE YOU LIFE! It **has nothing to do with your being alive or dead.** It just functions in your mind as long as you are alive. And your **life** comes from the food you eat and the water you drink, feeding the body and keeping the heart pumping blood and your lungs

breathing air in and out. That's all that keeps you alive. That's where your life is. That's the only life we have, brethren.

We don't have immortal souls! *"The soul that sinneth, it shall die."* So now you come to the 8th chapter of Romans:

Romans 8:1 *There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.*

Acquired Knowledge

And the Spirit of God, the law of God, is the way of God; and the Spirit of God opens your mind to understand that way. If Adam had taken of the Tree of Life that would have opened his mind to **revealed spiritual knowledge**; and Adam never had spiritual knowledge. Adam said, "No. I'll just acquire my own knowledge." God made Adam so he could acquire knowledge of the physical, the material.

And do you know that in all of the colleges and universities of this world, **ALL THEY KNOW** and **ALL THEY TEACH ... You listen! Now, get this. Understand this. All they teach is about physical material things.** Spiritual principles they know nothing about. The things of God they know nothing about.

They don't know **what** they are. They don't know what a human being is made of. They don't know **why** a human being is on Earth. They don't know what God's purpose is and where we're going. They don't know the way. They don't know the cause of all of the world's troubles. They go ahead and solve their troubles; they don't know what causes troubles. They don't know the way to peace. They don't know the way to an immortal, eternal life. And God won't **give** you eternal life – and it is the gift of God – and He won't give it to you until you are willing to start to LIVE by the law of God

and to LIVE GOD'S WAY.

Now God will put His Holy Spirit **in you** if and when you REALLY repent and accept Christ. But listen. God only gives you a little tiny bit of His Holy Spirit to start. The Bible talks about “pouring out” the Spirit, like water. You pour out water. (I've got some water here. I could pour it out.) It's like air that you can blow, and it moves; and the Spirit of God moves. But the Spirit of God will come in to you, and you only have a little of it to start with; and if you don't **grow in the Spirit** and in the knowledge of God, what little you had is going to leave you.

Spiritual Way Of Living

Brethren, take the parable of the pounds and the parable of the talents. The one who was given one and did nothing with it, when Christ comes, He will take away the one you had if you haven't increased it. If you have not grown spiritually – in spiritual knowledge and in the spiritual way of LIVING so that you have actually LIVED a different way – you will lose out entirely; and you will burn up in the final Lake of Fire. You will never be in the Kingdom of God.

God will only give immortal life to those who will live it in a way to be happy, and in a way to make other people happy, and in a way to walk with God. And two can't walk together except they be agreed. And God doesn't agree with the way you lived your life before you were converted, if and when you were converted and supposing that you were.

The Spirit of God coming into you IMPREGNATES you with **divine Life**. The spirit that is already in you does not give you any life. The spirit that is in you only supplies the power of intellect to a physical brain. And that physical brain is kept alive and active only by the air you breathe and the pumping of your heart and that has to be kept going by food and water out of

the ground.

You are "of the ground" and "out of the ground." **THAT'S ALL YOU ARE, BRETHREN.** Understand it. Nobody else is teaching you that. No other church on Earth will teach you that. That's why this is **God's Church!** And it's quite different from any other church on this Earth, quite different.

When the Holy Spirit comes, that impregnates you with immortal Life. But listen. You are like an embryo in your mother's womb, as you were at one time; and you haven't even grown large enough to be called a fetus yet. That takes four months, when your body began to take on human form and shape. But listen. IF you were not fed on the **physical** food, you wouldn't have grown **physically**; and your mother would have had a miscarriage. You would never have been born. You would have died inside of her body; and she'd had to get rid of you, already dead. That is an exact type. IF you don't grow **spiritually**, you will be **aborted**. You will not go on. You have to **GROW** in the Spirit and in the knowledge of Jesus Christ.

Your Real Education

Brethren, listen to me. You talk about education. You go to school. You start in the first grade. They teach you to read and write and to figure. Reading, 'riting, 'rithmetic – the so-called "3 Rs." All they are going to teach you there, and all they're going to teach you when you get to high school, and all they will teach you in the university is physical, material knowledge. They are not giving you spiritual knowledge.

When you are converted, then you begin **YOUR REAL EDUCATION!** You **can't** get it in the college, or the universities, or the schools of this world. **YOU CAN'T GET IT THERE!** You **didn't** get a **real education**. You only got a lot of physical knowledge. And about 50-75% of that is **rot**, and is **wrong**, and is **error**, and not truth. **YOUR REAL**

EDUCATION begins when you are converted.

And you feed on spiritual knowledge, and the Word of God is that spiritual knowledge. You feed on the Word of God, instead of material food. And if you are not **studying** the Word of God, if you are not being **educated EVERY DAY OF YOUR LIFE** like you are just starting to school all over again, you are only starting in the first grade. As a matter of fact, you are hardly in the first grade yet. You are only in the kindergarten spiritually, when you are converted. And if you don't go on **studying SPIRITUALLY** and **SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE** ... the Holy Spirit opens your mind to comprehend it. Before that, you couldn't have understood it anyway. But when the Spirit of God comes, you can begin to understand it; and it will reveal that knowledge.

Now, it is the impregnation of divine Life; but it is only a start, if you go on. But you must grow, and grow, and grow **EVERY DAY OF YOUR LIFE**. Do you know more spiritually, do you have more spiritual knowledge than you did a month ago? Most of you don't brethren. Look in the looking glass and see; and say, "Here's someone that doesn't know any more than he did a month ago **spiritually!**"

SHAME ON YOU! You won't make it into the Kingdom of God if you don't change that! Am I wearing myself out, telling you that? Are you going to go away heedless, paying no attention? Nobody else gets up in front of you and tells you this. I'm the only minister that God has that can talk to you this way; and you had better open your ears and your minds and your hearts, and **LISTEN** or you won't make it into the Kingdom of God. I'm telling you.

The Holy Spirit then is the **power** that opens your mind to comprehend spiritual truth. Here are the great people who graduated from Harvard. They can't understand spiritual truth. They've just been educated in physical

knowledge. Now they have to get spiritual knowledge. You can know more spiritually than they do. But do you?

We are going to school every day we live. And you gain in spiritual knowledge through the Word of God and, believe it or not (and listen), through prayer. How much do you **pray**? And by listening to the Word of God as God's ministers give it to you. There was a wonderful sermon preached on this platform this morning. I think most of you were not here and didn't hear it. Mr. Jackson preached a very fine sermon this morning. But that was **spiritual food**, and that's what we need. But we need to grow in spiritual knowledge.

Most churches don't believe in acquiring spiritual knowledge. I have a sister that's still in the same church I was brought up in, the Quaker church. She said to me one time ... She said, "Herbert, you don't ... You don't read the Bible to try to understand it, do you?" I said, "Well, of course." "Oh," she said, "but you can't understand it." "Oh yes, I can; but you can't Mary," I told her. I said, "Don't you read the Bible?" She said, "Oh yes, of course I read it." "Well why do you read it, if you don't read it to understand it?" She said, "Just for inspiration, we're not supposed to understand it." I said, "Whoever told you that? Whoever told you that was lying to you, and you'd better quit believing him; and believe what God says in the Bible. But you don't believe what God says. You say, 'I can't understand. Why should I believe what He says?'"

I make it plain. You can understand what God says to you through me. I'm trying to make it very simple, and plain, and very clear – so you can understand it. And, if you don't accept it, that's your fault; not mine.

The Holy Spirit in you will begin to open your mind, but you must **GROW** in grace and in the **knowledge** of Jesus Christ. That is the last two verses of Peter (II Peter), of Peter's letters. Peter, the first apostle and the

chief apostle at that time; and he was speaking the truth of God.

Now next to that, once you see and understand the truth of God, you have to use your own will to say, “That’s the way I will live. And I will try to DO that way. I’ll quit doing the other way.”

Tale Bearing And Make-Up

Do you know what the Bible says about tale bearing and rumors? Well, this Church has not practiced that. We’re the biggest tale bearing and rumoring Church that I EVER HEARD OF! **SHAME ON WHO ARE YOU PEOPLE THAT DO IT!** Now some of you right here are guilty of that. **You’re going to answer to God for that, if you don’t stop it.** Good news – do it. Good news – tell people. Bad news – shut your mouth up about it; and try to believe the best in people, not the worst.

It seems we want to believe the worst; and want to whisper that to everybody, we want to tale bear it. I say something. Someone takes an exception to it. They get on the telephone; and it goes from one end of this country to the other, to the whole membership. Read what James wrote about the tongue. That’s another thing that we do that is wrong. And, if we’re going to grow in God’s grace and knowledge, we quit doing those things.

I’ve tried to clean up our women’s faces recently. I think some women didn’t like it. They resented it. I’m very glad that most of the women in this Church here I find ... I’ve had reports that most of you, when you knew I’d made that decision, took your make-up off right off the bat, even before you heard a sermon on it. Well, congratulations and thank you for doing it. But you didn’t please me by doing it. You only pleased God.

Sometimes I wonder what the women would do if the men started painting up their faces in all kinds of ways. Some of these things are so ridiculous, but we don’t think about that. The only thing women think of,

“Other women do it. The world does it. And we must go along with the world, mustn’t we?”

God says, “*Come out from among them, and be separate.*” Do you want to still be with the world? Go to the world. Don’t come into this place. This place is not of the world. We are to be different from the world. We are a separate and a holy people! And we’ve got to live that way.

The Holy Spirit’s Part

Now, the Holy Spirit will open your mind – if you study the Word of God, if you listen to the Word of God. And you grow in Spirit as you pray to God more and more. And pray for the brethren. Pray for people, even for your enemies. I pray for my enemies even before I do for some of my best friends and some of the brethren. Of course, God may bless them by punishment to wake them up. Maybe that’s the best thing for them. God knows. I don’t. But I only pray for them, not against them. I don’t want any harm to come to them. I just want blessings from God to come to them. You can pray for your enemies. God isn’t going to hurt them, not unless it’s for their good. He won’t do anything that’s not for their good.

Now, next to understanding, the Holy Spirit will give you **the love of God** that keeps His law. You were not born with the kind of love that will perform and keep God’s law. **You have to have a special love that comes from God.** It’s impossible for you to really love God like you should. We only love Him because He first loved us. And it’s His love coming through the Holy Spirit into us, and some of that goes back.

You see there are two wires going into this light. One brings the electric current in, and the other goes back. The Holy Spirit comes in; but it FLOWS, like water or like air moving. And part of it must go back to God in love toward Him, and part of it out to neighbor and love toward them. And God will give you that kind of love. It’s a different kind of love than you were

born with.

Next the Holy Spirit will give you the faith OF Christ. That's not some faith you work up. That's a gift that God puts **in you**– that kind of faith, to believe Him – **if** you study His Word, **if** you get to know Him. Faith is only knowing that whatever God has promised He will do. You can rely on it. That's faith.

Then the Spirit of God will give you the power to do it. And all those things will make a change in your life! The electric light coming into that bulb here changed it and made it light up, made a big change. You and I are to be the light of the world, and we are to let our light shine. Not that the world can hear what we say, but that it may see our good works and how we live.

Part of our good works they won't agree with in the world, but some of it they will. It reminds me of the first time we held the Feast of Tabernacles, or really the second time, in Mount Pocono. There was a merchant there running his store; and he said, "You people, we found when you were here last year you were just the best people we've ever knew in our lives. All the merchants and businessmen here say, 'They've never seen people like you.' Well we think you're just the best people we ever knew. There's only one thing we can't understand. Why in the world would people so good as you have to believe that crazy religion of yours?"

Well, this man answered and said, "Well that's why we're so good. It's the religion that does that, and it will do the same thing to you." And he was speechless. The world can see our good works. They know we are pretty good people. We act like good people if we act God's way.

Then, finally, if we endure to the end, if we grow in grace and knowledge – finally, if we die, we will be resurrected in the Kingdom of God. If we are still living, we'll be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of the

eye. God will give us immortal Life. This mortal will put on immortality. That's the process, brethren.

I wish I had time. I could talk on that all day and all night. I've only said a little; but I hope you got that little, because time is up. But let's go on to the Kingdom of God. Let's get this Church ready. Let's get each one of us ... You get you ready. You can't make the one next to you ready. You can make you ready. Be sure you do. And God bless every one of you.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said something incoherent here.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong must have moved the lamp on his desk, or podium, so the audience could see the light bulb.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: At this point, Mr. Armstrong evidently turned the light bulb on.

What God Expects of Us

Sermon (November 7, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

What God Expects of Us.....	939	God Doesn't Compromise	955
Corrective Speaking	940	Part Of The World	956
Getting Off The Track	942	Humans Subtly Derailed	958
Proper Attire	943	History Of The Makeup Question	960
Clothed By God	946	When And How Sin Began	962
Teaching Young Children	948	Conspiracy In The Church	964
Incorrect Behavior	949	God's Human Instrument	968
Women's Makeup	951	Glorifying The Self	970
Starting With Mother Eve	953		

Greetings everybody, it's nice to be with you again. As it was announced, it's going to be the last chance for about three weeks I'll have now to be with you here. But we'll be with our brethren in England next Sabbath. After that, I'll probably be in the Middle East, where we won't have a congregation.

I'd like to read a passage to you, but first let me tell you: I remember talking to my own sister many, many years ago. She is still staying with the church in which I was reared, and I lost all interest in going to church when I was eighteen. I never had been interested. I went because my parents sent me. But it was the Quaker church; and there are two kinds of Quakers, I understand.

At least the Quaker church where we attended in Des Moines (the only one, of course, there) was more like a Baptist or a Methodist fundamentalist church today. It wasn't one of those where they twiddle their fingers. I remember, when I was a boy, we took another boy to a Sunday night service

one time. We wanted to have some fun with him, so we told him he had to twiddle his thumbs all the time while he was there. So he did it, and everybody began to laugh at him. Well, I did a lot of things when I was around 10-11 years old – some of which I did get spanked for, and others in which I should have been.

But my sister is still clinging to it, even to this day I guess. I was explaining some things in the Bible one time, and she says, “You don’t read the Bible to try to understand it, do you, and to get meaning out of it?” I said, “Why certainly.” I said, “Don’t you read the Bible?” She said, “Oh, yes. I read it.” “Well,” I said, “What do you read it for?” She said, “Just for inspiration. I always look to our preacher to give us any meaning of any kind. We can’t understand the Bible.”

Well, that is not what the Bible is for. I want to read you this scripture. It’s in II Timothy 3, verse 16:

***II Timothy 3:16** All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.*

Now you notice that scripture is **profitable** for those things. She didn’t read it to be corrected. She read it only for inspiration, just sort of a feeling; but for instruction in righteousness? No: For reproof? No: For correction? No.

Corrective Speaking

Well, that reminds me of one of our graduates of years ago. He became a young minister. He didn’t last too long; he’s not with the Church any longer. This was, oh this was, I think, at least 20 years ago. We had a small Church up in Portland, Oregon at the time; and the service was held in the

afternoon, Sabbath afternoons up there. I was up there to speak one time, and he was giving a sermonette. There was a little intermission of some kind in between, and he had given them a scorching correction sermon. He was correcting them.

Now, he was probably at that time about 22 years old; but he looked more like 18 or 19. I heard a couple of other men, in a sort of a cloakroom where they hung coats (and it was in the winter, where they hang up overcoats), and one of them said, “Well, did you get properly corrected? Did you hear the sermonette?” And another one said, “Yes, I heard the boy.” And I learned then ... I talked to him, and I said, “Listen, there are different kinds of sermons; and the Bible is profitable for different things.” I said, “You look younger than you are, and you should not yet (until you are a little older) preach corrective sermons.”

Do you know why Jesus didn't begin His ministry until He was about 30 years of age? I think the mind reaches a certain maturity by age 25. I have thought that for a good many years. However, a man (at least the male of the species) does not appear to be fully mature, where he can have influence over other people in speaking to them, until about 30. Jesus didn't begin speaking with the authority He did until He was about 30. If Jesus couldn't speak authoritatively until He was 30 years of age, how can a young boy of 22 (who only looks about 18 or 19)? So I was thinking of that.

But that's one advantage that I now have over some of the really younger ministers. I can speak corrective sermons, and sometimes we need to do that – as well as informative and inspirational sermons. But the Bible is profitable for those things. Many of our ministers preach expository, or (I was going to say) instructive sermons, and sometimes with reproof. But few of them seem to speak very loudly on giving you actual criticism, reproof, and correction. That's one of the things that I think comes with age, and with maturity, and with experience.

I just wanted to tell you I'm going to have to preach a corrective sermon this afternoon, and I pray that God will help me to do it in love and not in any other manner at all. I have no other idea in mind. But for some 3 years now, Jesus Christ has been working to get this Church back on the track. We had gotten off the track, and I want to go into it this afternoon a little bit.

Getting Off The Track

How did we get off the track? We were getting off the track in many ways. We were getting off the track in the matter of prayer. We were getting off the track in relying on God even for healing, and going to doctors and taking drugs and medicines. We were getting off the track in Church attendance. We were getting off the track in many, many different things. But how did it all start? I want to come to that this afternoon.

The liberal movement in the Church, more recently it started. There had been some of it trying to rear up its head earlier, but it really started along in 1974 – with and after the big rebellion we had of about 30-35 ministers in the spring of 1974 [1](#), when about between 30-35 ministers went out of the Church and tried to take their congregations and all the members they could with them. Well, they took a certain number. In less than 6 months, though, we had more than brought in new members to replace them. The Church 6 months later had more members than it did when they took some out. God was still with us, and always has been. But a liberal movement did start in the wake of that, and most of it did not start ... Well, some of it started before that. But it really started in the autumn of that year, and I'm going to go into that a little later.

But one of the things that we were getting off the track on was the matter of personal appearance when we come to Church. Now, on some jobs you can't dress up. You don't wear evening clothes. A man doesn't wear a

tuxedo and a white tie. If he's painting a house, or if he's a mechanic, or if he's working underneath an automobile, or he's a carpenter, or something of that kind – he'll wear overalls, or he'll wear the kind of clothes you need to wear on that kind of a job.

Women are the same way. They don't always dress up at home in their kitchen. Women will dress a certain way if they are working in an office, and so many of them are employed today. That is a thing that has taken place since I was young. Very few women worked **at all** when I was, well say, 18-25 years of age – very few. It was almost unheard of.

I remember, it was during World War I, and it must have been about 1917 (about the time we got into World War I), I was so shocked when I found women actually operating the elevators in the Marshal Field store in Chicago. We had never seen a woman operating an elevator before. That was always a man's job! So women had begun to take over the jobs of men. Recently I was reading an article of how many ... or I believe it was a television program, of how many women are now (what percentage of women are) making more money than their husbands. Many of the husbands are turning into women; and they do the cooking, wash the dishes, make the beds at home, and become househusbands. Women don't want to be housewives any more.

The whole world is going in a certain direction; and, brethren, many of our people have wanted to go along with the world, in the way the world is going. It's a thing that we have to watch **constantly**, if we ever want to get in the Kingdom of God.

Proper Attire

Well, as this liberalism and this letting down of the bars progressed, members became careless in their attire – in the way they would come

dressed to Church. I know I had to speak on that several years ago, over in Big Sandy; and then I believe I had a sermon here, before this auditorium was built. We were either in the Shakespeare Club at that time, or in the college gymnasium; but I believe I did speak on it here.

I'd like you to notice something that in Luke ... Well, first I want to tell you about an experience that just comes to my mind. I was in Israel; and, as a matter of fact, it was on the December 1, 1968. I remember the very event and the very date, because we were having a meeting with the President of Israel – President Shazar. Before the time for the meeting at the President's mansion, I was in one of the university office buildings of the Hebrew University with Dr. Aviram. Dr. Aviram is one of the prominent faculty members there.

In Israel, they are a little bit careless of their attire and their dress. The men, except for real dress-up occasions, do not wear a necktie. They just have their shirt collars out open. They usually put them over the jacket collar and no necktie. Sometimes they go without a coat or jacket of any kind.

So we were leaving Dr. Aviram's office to go over to the President's mansion, and we got down the hallway towards the elevator; and he said, "Wait a minute. I've got to go back." He said, "We're going into the presence of the President. I must put a coat on." So we went back to his office, and he put on a coat. Of course, he didn't bother to put on a necktie; but at least he had to put on a coat. He couldn't go into the presence of the President just dressed in a shirt.

When we come here, we are coming in the presence of **a real King** – a far greater king than President Shazar was. And I've seen many men coming in here just in their shirtsleeves. It doesn't make any difference to them how they come dressed before a king. I want to read you a scripture on that. It's in Luke, the 12th chapter and verse 40. It's in one of the parables of Jesus, and

it's speaking here about ... No, what I have is the 22nd chapter of Matthew. (That other scripture we'll be coming to later.) Matthew 22^{2}, beginning with verse 11, in this parable: There was a wedding supper that Jesus was talking about; and there was a king there, who had a wedding supper. They were coming in the presence of a king.

Matthew 22:11-14 And when the king [rose up] to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment. [He hadn't come properly attired, or properly dressed.] (12) And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And [the man] was speechless. [He just didn't have anything to say.] (13) Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (14) For many are called, but few are chosen.

Brethren, some of our people have been called; but they are not going to be chosen and get into the Kingdom of God. Now, another scripture that I had not intended to read; but I do want to read at this point. In I John the 1st chapter and verse 3:

I John 1:3 That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us [Now, we come for fellowship and for worship to Church.]: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

Brethren, when we come to Church, its God's holy Sabbath day. In the first place, it's **His day** – it's **His time** – not ours. In the second place, He is here with us. When 2 or 3 are there together, He is there in their midst He says. Our fellowship is with the Father and with Christ – both God the Father and Christ. When we come here, we are coming into the PRESENCE of Almighty God and of Jesus Christ.

I said this over at Big Sandy on the Sabbath during the Feast, and I

repeat it here now. I don't mean go out and try to buy more expensive clothes or something you can't afford. That's not what I am talking about at all! But I'm saying, when you come to Church, come dressed up with **the best you have!** And remember you are coming into the presence of Jesus Christ. Did you ever see me come into the Church service with overalls, or in my shirtsleeves? Have you ever seen me do that – ever? No, brethren, you just never have. But some of us seem to treat Jesus Christ and God Almighty with **contempt**. We don't care how we come dressed in their presence. After this, come dressed!

Now, some women don't feel dressed unless they have a lot of paint on their faces. That's another thing altogether. That's not the kind of dress God is looking for. When it comes to attire and garments, you don't put them over your face to hide your face, or change your face, or color it. That's something else.

Clothed By God

Now you go back into the book of Genesis and you will find that God clothed Adam and Eve. They were ashamed. They had been with Christ, and they were naked, and they were not ashamed. Then after Satan got to Eve – that changed their whole attitude, and their mind, and the way they looked at things. Probably the next day, when God talked to them (or that same night, or whenever it was), they were hiding; and God called to them. Adam said, “Well, we heard Your voice; and we hid because we were naked.” He said, “Who told you you were naked?” Well, Satan had told them. Nobody else had talked to them. Christ certainly never had, or God in the form of Christ (that is, He was not Christ yet; but He became Christ later) He'd not told them anything about that. But then after that, God did clothe them. They took fig leaves to try to cover up themselves, but God clothed them.

If you've read my book on THE MISSING DIMENSION IN SEX, you will have read about that; and that the Hebrew word is 'labash,' He 'labashed' them. That does not mean the kind of covering up to cover something shameful. Rather, it is a kind of covering – it might even be adornment; but it is covering. God did want the bodies covered, or He wouldn't have covered them. It was not to cover something shameful, but something that could be made shameful if people want to look at it that way. But He was not covering their faces, only their bodies; and that's what we do cover today.

Now, along the line of how we come dressed and attired, I want to read you a few things. When we come here, we are appearing before the greatest majestic King of all – God Almighty! We don't seem to pay any attention how we come attired, and how we dress. Brethren, we are trying to get back on the track; and I say this not to condemn, not to scold. I don't mean it that way. I think it's like the apostle Paul who said, or even Christ who said, "Maybe you didn't know?" And Jesus said to the Pharisees at one time, if you had not known (or not had knowledge) you would have had no sin.

You see, it's "*to him that KNOWETH to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.*" [James 4:17] To him that knows to do good and does it not. Now perhaps you didn't know these things before? But, I'm telling you! Or let's put it this way: Jesus Christ is telling you through me. I'm only an instrument that He's using in telling you; and this, believe me, is coming from Jesus Christ; and you'd better pay attention! I want this to get out to the whole Church. We need to be careful how we come into the presence of Jesus Christ and of God.

Moses came to the burning bush. A voice came to him out of that burning bush and said, "Moses, Moses, take your shoes from off your feet." Why? "For," He said, "the ground where you stand is **holy** ground." [Exodus 3:5] What made it holy? Christ (that is, the YHWH who was to become Christ) – the ever Living – was in that bush. Moses was there IN HIS

PRESENCE; and Moses had to show respect, to take his shoes off! I hope I have emphasized that enough to make that plain so that we won't have to go into that again.

Teaching Young Children

Now a few things that have come to my attention are that, in the family rooms here in the auditorium parents {3} (and you people who are in the family rooms are listening downstairs now. Please pay attention.), parents allow children to make too much noise with toys and things of that sort. That prevents others from listening.

You know, too often parents think when they have a new child (a baby is born) they don't try to teach the child. They just take care of it. They act as a servant of the child, but they certainly aren't a teacher. If the child does what they think is wrong, they may spat them a little bit (or spank as it grows older); but they don't **teach**.

It took me some time, as a father, to learn that I should teach first and only punish when they had done what they knew was wrong. Jesus said to the Pharisees, "If you had not known, you would have no sin. But you say you know. Therefore your sin remains. To him that knows to do good it is sin."

A little child has to know. A little child has to be taught. But PARENTS NEGLECT their little babies and their little children! But listen: SATAN DOES NOT NEGLECT THEM! Satan begins pumping into their little minds selfishness, and vanity, in the first 2, 3, or 4 months of their lives. As their minds develop and the brain grows, Satan (the prince of the power of the air) is broadcasting right through the air. You can't see him. You can't see the sounds that are in here right now. But if you had a radio set and put it right on this desk, turned it into the right wavelength, and you'd hear a lot of sounds coming into the radio – or television, you'd get pictures. They are here in the

room right now; but you are not hearing them, because you are not tuned in. But EVERY MIND – every normal spirit of man – is tuned in on the wavelength of Satan!

Now he doesn't broadcast in sounds or words, but he does broadcast **in attitudes** – attitudes of pride and selfishness, of resentment of authority, of competition, the desire to get, and selfishness (self expressed in many, many different ways). So children must be taught. Teach your children; train them, so that they will not make too much noise in the family rooms below.

Now, another point: mother and mothers' rooms. Mothers are often conversing with each other and playing with their children instead of taking care of the child's needs and then returning to the family room to listen to the program.

Next point: Unsupervised children coming to Church, children having the run of the building, stairways, going up and down elevators. Children should never be allowed ... In fact we're trying, I think now we're posting someone at the elevators to see that no child gets into the elevator without a parent with him. I mean children, and that does not include 16 or 18-year-old children; but little children going up and down the stairways, into elevators, into closed rooms (Of course, they just open the door and go right in whether they belong there or not. They don't know any better if you don't teach them.), through doors, etc. instead of children sitting with their parents.

Incorrect Behavior

And adults, again, milling around during the services, conversing, coming and going. I've noticed so much of that. And I noticed during the Feast of Tabernacles, where we had ... well, at one Feast where I was, there must have been 11,000 people there; and constantly people were going and coming, here and there, up in the balconies and all around. People were

getting up and going, and walking.

Now, there are certain needs you should take care of before you come so you don't have to get up in the middle of the service and go to the restroom. That's part of **your responsibility**, to take care of those things. We're coming into the presence of God and of Jesus Christ. Let's conduct ourselves worthy of being His begotten children.

Another thing: some come late for services. Now I've been trying ... that's another thing we've been trying to get back on the track. I've been trying to get the services to start on time and to end on time. Now I myself have certainly been guilty of preaching way over time and keeping people long after the time. It's been very difficult to learn. If I see that the time is up in about two minutes and I still have about 5 or 6 other scriptures, oh, what a temptation it is. I must get those scriptures in! I must get those over to you.

Well, you see the thing is: you don't know I have those scriptures; and, if you don't hear them, you didn't hear them and you don't know about them; and what you don't know you don't know you didn't know it, did you? So if I just bring it to a close right at that point, you don't know I had anything else in mind.

I have had to learn to stop about 2/3rd or 3/4th of the way through a sermon and bring it to a close and make a fitting ending and get through on time. I won't say I've always done it, and it's taken me years to learn that; but I hope our ministers will learn that, because many of our younger ministers, they have an outline and they still have some texts in the Bible that they've got to read; and, boy, they've just got to go on and read it no matter how long they keep you. Well, that's for ... I should tell our ministers that, not you.

But, nevertheless, let's all get these things together. We're trying to get ready to meet the Lord Jesus Christ in the air as He's coming soon.

Another thing is improper care of the songbooks. Those songbooks cost money. We want to keep them nice. We've tried to provide you with nice songbooks. So take care of them, and don't let the children mark them up.

Again: improper care of the building. Here is the most, really the finest auditorium on the face of the earth today, right here; and we are privileged to be here. This is the House of God. It's dedicated to God. His name is in gold in the front, in the front grand loggia. When we come here, God is meeting here with us in the Sabbath services. So let's come with due respect for God, and let's remember these things.

Women's Makeup

Now, I've had to write an article on a subject that had been troubling me now for the last four years, and I just hadn't gotten around to it sooner. I've been getting other things – trying to get the Church back on the track. Finally, I just had to get this off my own conscience because it was bothering me; and I think that I would have to answer in the judgment to God if I didn't get this over to you. That is on the matter of women's makeup.

You know, it's a funny thing. I mentioned that just in part of a sermon over at Big Sandy on the Sabbath. It wasn't the regular holy day message. It was just a special message on the Sabbath day. I tell you, news of that traveled from woman to woman and to women ALL OVER the United States. I began receiving letters. Women write, "Mr. Armstrong, I want to give you a woman's viewpoint on that." Yeah? Well, you know, I'm far more interested in getting **God's viewpoint**, women. Did you know that?

You should have heard the sermon this morning – how king Saul was interested in getting the people's viewpoint. He wanted to please the people. That's just the trouble. We had **MINISTERS HERE IN CHARGE OF HEADQUARTERS** that wanted to please the people and do whatever was

popular with them. One man over the ministers, he had been the student body president when he was a senior in college many, many years ago. I think that's over, yes, twenty some years ago.

Do you know why he was made student body president? I did it. I've done a lot of things I had to ask God to forgive me for later. I used bad judgment. I made him student body president because he was the most popular student on the campus. I didn't realize something in that man's makeup and character at that time. He always wanted to do whatever would please people.

He would make any compromise. He would give in anything. He wouldn't hold to the truth. He would compromise with God's truth if that would please some other person. He wanted to know what pleased people and he wanted to please people, not God; and He did that as a minister. He had something to do with this very subject. As a matter of fact, he had something to do with starting this whole movement of liberalism in the Church.

Liberalism is a whole lot more than just makeup. That's only one thing. The reason that I'm getting to it is that this is what STARTED everything off the track! Now I've written a good-sized article. It will appear in the Worldwide News [16 November 1981 issue], and has appeared this week in the Pastor General's Report. I'm going to read what I wrote and make some comments as I go along about it, and use that in lieu of the sermon here this afternoon. It's titled "How subtly Satan used MAKEUP to start the Church off (on) the (wrong) track," and "How Satan began injecting liberalism into God's Church."

For over three years now the living Christ has been working to put this Church back on the track! But how did the people of the living God get off the track? How did it all start? How did we get off the track in the first place?

How did the whole world first get off of the track? How did the world get off the track, and then how did ... Now God got us back on the track part way, and we came out of the world; and then we began to get off the track.

Starting With Mother Eve

First, how did the world get off the track; and, then, how did the Church start to get off the track? Well, it got off the track with mother Eve. Did you ever notice that? Satan got the whole world off the track through a woman; and he got this Church off the track through its women, believe it or not. Oh, Satan is a wily deceiver!

Was mother Eve, the very first woman (who was a direct creation of God), was she insincerely evil? Did she deliberately want to disobey God? No. No, she was deceived. Undoubtedly, she thought she was doing right. She didn't see any wrong in it.

You'd be surprised how many women have been writing me this last week that they can't see anything wrong in makeup. They think it's all right; and if so-and-so (we can reason around) ... well then is it wrong? And, if it isn't wrong, can't we do it? As one woman says, "Well, I want to appear well before the world. I want the world to think well of me." She needs to read where Jesus says, "Woe unto you when the world thinks well of you." We always think about **what the world thinks** of us.

The forbidden tree, after all, (or the fruit of the forbidden tree) was "*good for food*" and it was "*pleasant to the eyes.*" [Genesis 3:6] and Satan had assured Eve that she would really "*not surely die.*" God knew better than that: that she would die. Satan assured her she was an immortal soul. And then, besides, Satan had said it would make her a god intellectually. So it appealed to her intellectual VANITY. Satan got to her through vanity and what looked beautiful. It looked good. It was "*pleasant to the eyes.*" So she

couldn't see anything wrong with it; and she said, "If it isn't wrong, why can't I do it?" So quote:

***Genesis 3:6** She took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.*

He was not deceived. Now that was SIN, and we need to get this sin question a little better in mind; and just **what is sin?** A lot of them say, "Well, what can I get away with?" and "Do I just have to do it?"

You know, when God called Abraham out of his country to go to a land God would show him, he didn't say, "Well, can't I go just part way? I don't want to go all the way." Or "Do I have to?" and "Can't I put it off?" Or "Can't I avoid it?" Or "Maybe some other time" Or "Why can't you let somebody else do it?" No, you just read **Abraham went**; and so he became the heir of the promises that you and I also are heir to – the promises made to Abraham, the promises Jesus came to confirm, the promises made unto the fathers. That's the only hope you and I have, because Abraham obeyed God and kept God's commandments.

So the whole world was started off on the wrong track, when they took of that forbidden fruit. And Satan is still at it! He's still on the throne of the earth. Now you read in Revelation 12:9 *"The Devil, and Satan ... deceiveth the whole world."* He is now deceiving THE WHOLE WORLD, and has **deceived** a lot of the women in this Church. They couldn't see anything wrong with it. Well, *"to him that knoweth to do good and doeth it not, to him it is sin."* [James 4:17]

So some of our women have just not known, and I want to make it plain. It isn't something that I am going to study and research more. That's already been done, and this is THE DECISION; and this is FINAL! It isn't going to be watered down any further in this Church, unless it's over my dead body – let me tell you that!

God Doesn't Compromise

You know God could have compromised. He didn't have to sacrifice His Son. He had THE POWER to forgive our sins without Christ's sacrifice. Do you know that? But we would have never had character, and we could never become God, because God is a perfect character; and we could never have become that, if He had done that. We never would have.

He could have given us eternal Life and let us go our own way; and we would have been unhappy and miserable forever, and ever, and ever! But [John 3:16] "*God so loved the world, He GAVE His only begotten Son,*" rather than compromise one ten-trillionth, millionth, of an inch with His law and with sin. He just didn't do it. Well now, brethren, neither can we, because we are **heirs of God** to become His children and to become God, and we have to be like God. We have to be like Him.

Now this: The apostle Paul **feared** "*lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve by his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted*" (II Corinthians 11 verse 3); now that applies to us today just as much as it did in the days of the apostle Paul, 1950 years ago.

Do you think that the same wily Satan could not deceive people in God's Church today? Are we above being deceived by Satan? Are you smarter than Satan? No. He's been deceiving some of us in the Church, brethren. Of all the people on earth, WE are the very ones that Satan wants most to deceive. He has the rest of the world deceived all ready. He's not worried about them. He's got them deceived. WE are the ones God got back on the track, and WE are the ones that have some of the truth, and WE are the ones that Satan wants to get off the track! Did you ever think about that?

Satan did get to our women, our wives, today. They certainly had no evil motives. I don't think they were doing something to deliberately see how

wrong they could be, not at all. I'm not accusing them of anything of that kind. They just didn't see any harm in it. But they did want to look right to the world, they did want to follow the world, and they did have **vanity**; and don't tell me they didn't. If they think they didn't, they don't know their own minds!

There are only **two reasons**: VANITY and wanting to follow the world (or look well before the world, or look like the world). There is no other motive of heart, and sin is AN INTENDED wrong motive of heart. They hadn't wanted to do wrong any more than mother Eve did. They've been deceived.

Now we can ask the question: Haven't they already repented, received Christ, and come into the Church? There were no evil motives or evil intentions in their minds; they too saw no harm in it; just as Eve didn't see any harm in taking that forbidden fruit. They themselves would look good, just like this fruit looked good to Eve. They would look good to the world. Makeup on the face would be "*pleasant to the eyes,*" just as that fruit was to Eve. Do you see how Satan was deceiving our women? Exactly THE SAME WAY he deceived mother Eve!

You know, I wonder why Satan didn't deceive the men and get us men wearing makeup. Wouldn't that be nice if we come up with ...? You see, the new fad in makeup now, they're going back to real deep red lips once again. (I'll read you something on that a little later.) Just as soon as God has called on me to bring up this question, Satan is getting before the world with it. I'm going to show you in the newspaper. There's a big section of the newspaper on women's makeup here.

Part Of The World

Satan did get to our wives today. They didn't have any evil in mind.

They didn't have any evil intentions. They, too, didn't see any harm in it. They themselves would "look good" (just like that fruit did) to the world. Makeup on the face would be "*pleasant to the eyes*" (and that's quoted from the way the fruit looked to Eve). And it was intellectual to follow the **intellectual liberals** in the ministry (They are no longer in the ministry however!) who reasoned that this little detail and that little point could be interpreted to see "no harm in it" – and, after all, if we don't see any harm in it, isn't it all right to do what the world has done and what the world is doing? Why can't we follow the world? Why can't we be part of the world?

"I want to be part of the world. I want to go along with it." You know that's what troubled me in 1927, in the spring of 1927, when I had to face the question. I saw I'd been wrong, and I saw what the Bible said. I saw I was a sinner. I hadn't been doing things that I thought were much of a sin. I thought I was pretty good. But I began to think: What about my business associates that I know? And I'd been quite successful in business, and I had known the great and the near great; and I began to wonder: What are they going to think of me? Well, they won't have any use for me at all if I go in for religion." They'd turn thumbs down on me right away. And I knew that – if I accepted the truth of God and gave myself to Jesus Christ – that that meant my former business associates would spurn me and have nothing to do with me.

It meant giving up EVERYTHING I'd been ambitious for and had worked so hard for, for a good many years – from age 16 on to, at that time, age 34. But I had to give up. I had to give up what I thought I wanted, because I found greater goods. I'm looking for something ... You know, at that time I was living in Chicago as young man; and I wanted to have a nice home. I didn't crave money (I never did.) for itself. But I did want some of the things money would buy. Mostly I wanted to be important in the eyes of important people, and I wanted to live well. I wanted to have a nice home out on the north lake shore in Winnetka where the millionaires lived, someday. I

thought, well, someday – when I’m getting up past middle-aged, maybe I could be out there. But I was willing to work hard for it and to pay the price; and I had been working.

And it meant giving ALL OF THAT up! But I found something more to live for – the Kingdom of God and eternal Life. And, you know, sometimes it’s like ... you know you are in water, in a swimming pool or the ocean, especially if it’s cold water, you just hate to go in; and you just can’t stand it, but if you really get in and you get wet all over, well I’ve heard people say, “Well, come on in. The water’s fine (once you get in).” But, oh, it’s just terrible to start getting in. And that’s the way it is when it comes out of Satan and comes to getting into the way of God and of Christ.

But Satan did get to our wives today; to many of them. I didn’t say he got to all of them. I don’t know what percentage, but I know it was a very large percentage. They certainly had no evil motives, even as mother Eve had none. They had repented and they didn’t see any harm in it, they themselves would look good. (Well, I’ve read all of that. I’m just reading what I have here.)

Humans Subtly Derailed

It was all done SO SUBTLY. That is how Satan works. Now let’s understand **WHAT DID HAPPEN** and **HOW IT HAPPENED**. (Going right back to the time, so that you can see.) How far does God compromise with sin? Well, I mentioned that a while ago; and I have that here – how He gave His only begotten Son rather than compromise.

God’s Church, the now imminent Bride of Christ, is not going to rise to meet the descending King of kings in the air (as He’s coming to rule the world) with painted faces and plucked out and repainted eyebrows! How cleverly, without our suspecting it, did Satan influence leading ministers to

derail the Church in so many ways – not only makeup, but other ways! We began to relax on prayer. We didn't trust God for healing. We began to compromise on this, that, and the other thing.

Now some of those ministers are now no longer keeping the Sabbath, the holy days. They are going back to Christmas and Easter. Some of those same ministers! That's what they are doing. I want now to take you – you brethren – though a history of this seemingly minor question of female makeup as it progressed during the '50s, the '60s, and the '70s in the Church.

Brethren, CAN WE remove prejudice, vanity and self-will from our minds and OPEN OUR EYES TO GOD'S TRUTH and to what has happened? We are not going to face God in "the judgment" like the world. I mean we are not going to face God in "the judgment." The world is. What I mean is WE ARE BEING JUDGED NOW. We are facing our judgment now. Judgment has already begun at the house of God. [I Peter 4:17] You are I are now **being judged – right now!** Our judgment is here now.

Some of us have weakened. Some of us have been caught off guard. I am human like all of you, and I was caught off guard; and, not at the time realizing it, I allowed this **liberalism** to creep stealthily into God's flock. I now repent of that. I have gone into my conscience. I had my part in it. I confess that. I am human just like you are.

I think some people think that I couldn't be God's apostle unless I'm inhuman – or divine, and not human any longer; and that is not true. God is working through human beings; and every man of God (that God has worked through) had his weaknesses, and made mistakes, and even sinned, and then had to repent of it afterwards. Every one! David did. Moses did. Abraham did. Elijah did. Every one of them! So did the apostle Paul. Paul once said, he said "I'm the chief of sinners;" and sometimes I've felt that I am.

But I now repent of that, and the living Christ leads me to do what He

inspires me to do to correct it and to get this holy Body of Christ back completely on the track – for we have not been fully back on the track even yet!

This may be somewhat of a minor question – this matter of makeup. Other questions are a lot more important really. But even a little thing is important when it comes to stand between you and God. That’s all. Yet it was used by Satan to help **derail** the Church and to start the derailing. It is only one of a number of points that led the Church off the track.

History Of The Makeup Question

This question was raised in the Church in the mid ‘50s. In the July, 1955 Good News, the following (under my by-line) began on page 1 under the headline, “What the Church Ruled on Makeup;” now that goes back to July, 1955. Quote:

The question of lipstick and other forms of makeup had to be settled. Some of the Church held very definitely that “makeup is wrong; it’s worldly.” There was in some cases an attitude of prejudice and accusation against those who wore it.

I mean on the part of women against other women. Actually, it was all started by a protest from women themselves against it. So actually the question was first raised by women, who felt that face-changing was wrong; and it was not started by the ministers.

The next paragraph continued, quote:

But others insisted, ‘I can’t see any harm{4} in wearing makeup.’

And that’s what some of them are still saying to this day!

Many articles followed on the question. These articles covered many

specific points and specific scriptures. There was an effort to get to **every** detailed point or question, even in “the gray areas.” But we need to learn that God’s law is A PRINCIPLE TO BE APPLIED. (I want to explain something about sin and about the law of God now that the Church needs to know.) It has to do, first of all, with an ATTITUDE OF MIND. Above everything else, the law of God is a matter of **attitude of mind!** And what Satan gets into your little babies in the first months of their lives is an ATTITUDE of selfishness, self-will, resentment of authority, and that sort of thing. It’s an attitude above anything else!

The Church ruled AGAINST THE USE OF MAKEUP based primarily on specific “do” and “don’t” scriptures. (We wanted to look at a detailed scripture. And if we could find detailed scriptures that **definitely** said this is wrong, well then it was wrong; and otherwise we thought it would be all right? Oh, that’s **not** the way to look at it, brethren, not at all!) We looked at those detailed scriptures, rather than **the application of the PRINCIPLE** of God’s law of love. Now love is never towards self. It’s always out flowing towards others – love towards God, love towards neighbor.

We did make the mistake of applying God’s spiritual law as the world applies man’s laws. Do you ever think of the difference in how the world applies man’s laws? It’s so different from the way we should apply God’s law! The average policeman today has to enforce at least six times as many specific different little laws as he is capable of remembering. He can’t remember all of the specific little laws and infractions that he’s supposed to enforce. There are so many of them.

God’s law is not like that.

I am reminded of the comic strip. Maybe some of you may remember that comic strip. It was entitled “There Ought to Be a Law.” Every day, in the comic strip, someone seemed to be thinking up a reason for making a new

specific law to cover some new infraction. It illustrated how ridiculous is man's way of making laws. We've got to get down to a specific "do" or "don't" to every little thing, even in the gray areas. (And you **can't** apply it that way – the law of God.) No wonder we have crime. No wonder the world is going the way it is.

Actually, God's spiritual law is expressed in just one, simple, four-letter word: LOVE. (L-o-v-e.) We apply that law to given circumstances. Jesus, for example, "magnified the law and made it honorable {5}." That is from scripture.

At Mt. Sinai He, as YHWH, expanded the law from the word "love" and love towards God and love towards neighbor; He expanded it into **the ten points** – the first four of the Ten Commandments defining the PRINCIPLE of love toward God, the last six of the PRINCIPLE of love toward neighbor. From there it expands IN PRINCIPLE to cover **ANY AND EVERY** question that may possibly arise! It's just a matter of knowing the principle and applying the principle to a given circumstance.

Now, they bring so many questions to me to settle. They get into gray areas: about marriage and divorce, about this and that and the other thing. There is a definite principle to be applied, and I have to get to the principle; and I have to have all the facts.

When And How Sin Began

What, when and how did this thing of sin begin? It all began with the super archangel, the cherub Lucifer. Now let's see how sin began. Let's look at it. Lucifer was "*perfect in his ways*" from the day that God created him (in Ezekiel 28). Then iniquity – or lawlessness, rebellion, and so on – was found in him. His heart was lifted up in vanity because of his beauty, Ezekiel 28:15-17. His beauty lifted him up into VANITY and started sin. That's what got

Satan, a great archangel, into sinning.

What about some of our women? It has done the same thing to them and they can't see it. They just can't see it. Well, I'll have to see it for them then, I'm afraid.

The wisdom of Lucifer's mind was lifted up in VANITY. This violated love in the form of obedience and submission to God. Vanity was glorifying himself and not glorifying God. He wanted to glorify himself. A spirit of competition entered his mind. He said:

Isaiah 14:13 I will ascend into heaven [which is God's throne]. I will exalt my throne above the stars [or the angels] of God.

Self-exaltation, vanity, jealousy, envy, rebellion against authority, competition, desire to "get" and to "take" seized the perverted mind of Lucifer, who had a far greater mind than any human (except Christ) has ever had.

Sin, spiritually, is self-centeredness, self-exaltation, desire to be beautiful, vanity, coveting, desire to "get" and to "take," to exalt the self, jealousy and envy, competition resulting in violence and war, resentment, and rebellion against authority. Those are the things that Satan went in for, and those are the things that are sin today and that he's misleading the world on. These are the PRINCIPLES of spiritual sin.

Now, there is also the matter of physical sin (a lot of people don't know that.) – transgression of the physical laws that work in the human body. Often physical sickness and disease result from this transgression. You may not be guilty of it. Maybe you didn't cause it. I had typhoid fever when I was nineteen years old. I don't know how I got it. I think I must have swallowed some germ in the water I was drinking down in southern Mississippi at the time. But, nevertheless, it did VIOLATE the working of the laws of my body.

Those laws were violated. Whether I did it or not, they got violated!

Often physical sickness and disease result from this transgression. While Jesus paid the death penalty for our **spiritual** sins by His shed blood, He also paid the penalty for **physical** transgression of the laws of our body – the laws that operate in our bodies and our minds – “*by His stripes,*” by being beaten with stripes before He was crucified. Many do not seem to understand that **healing** is the forgiveness of sin – that is, physical sin (not spiritual sin) – because Jesus paid that penalty in our stead “*by His stripes.*”

But the Church in the 1950s was still growing in knowledge, as well as in numbers; and we ruled on makeup based on specific scriptural “dos and don’ts” (We didn’t apply the principle, as we should have done.) as we then interpreted those “dos and don’ts.” Actually, we came to the right ruling, but by a wrong method perhaps. A very few women argued a bit at that time, but I remember specifically of none who rebelled and left the Church. As near I could observe, our women were happy to leave their faces as the Master Designer had made them in the first place.

The Church was being blessed and was growing up to about 1968. For 35 years God had caused this Church to grow, and all of its work, at the phenomenal and the unmatched rate of 30% average increase per year (over the year before). I don’t know of any institution that ever grew that fast that long, that steadily. Then, beginning in 1968, Christ – the living Head of the Church – began to send me to the capitals of nations all over the world. I was unable to give day-to-day management at headquarters.

Conspiracy In The Church

Sin entered the Pasadena leadership. This thing of watering down the truth began. The Church stopped its phenomenal growth. Christ was not blessing it any longer. We weren’t growing like we had up to 1968. I had to

deal with sins near the top of the ministry in 1971 and 1972. In the spring of 1974 the ministerial rebellion, led to a considerable extent by two top-ranking ministers at Pasadena headquarters {6} (and both of them are out of the Church, of course, now), resulted in some 30 or more ministers leaving the Church.

In early fall of 1974, my son caught me on the run as I was leaving for Tokyo and for Manila, where I was to hold a big campaign. Well, I did hold it there at that time. It was a time when certain so-called ‘scholars’ among our leaders – in the ministry and in the college faculty {7} – were engaged in “doctrinal research.” (I put those two words in quotes.) I had not realized until later that most of them – not all, but most of them – were actually researching to try to prove Church teachings were in error (because they didn’t agree with me, and it was prejudiced against me personally to a great extent), rather than to discover truth. I admit now and repent of the fact that, not realizing the real motive, I did approve of this **doctrinal research team** at that time.

My son said this team had found ... He came to me; he caught me on the run one time when I was on the way to the airport. He wanted to get that to me before I left. That this team had found [we had {8}] the wrong meaning on four such detailed specific scriptures, and the use of makeup was okay after all. Well, one of them is all I remember. I don’t remember him saying anything at all about the other; and I think that was put in **without my knowledge**, into the bulletin that was sent out to ministers at the time.

Now I want to show you a little bit of the **conspiracy** and how this thing got into the Church: Those who know me best know that I have a single-track mind. That is, I can concentrate deeply on one subject at a time; but, when my mind is on one subject, I often do not really “get” something said to me. You can say something to me and my mind is on something else; and later you can tell me you said that, and I’ll say “Well, I don’t remember

you ever saying that to me.” I didn’t even ... I said “Yeah, yeah” because my mind was on something else, and I paid no attention. Well, it was pretty much that way at that time, when my son caught me on this point.

I was handed a short statement regarding ... Well, as I remember it, I got it in here {9}; and you’ll find it printed (those four), but I only remember the one really. I think I should correct this before it goes into the WORLDWIDE NEWS. But I do not remember any but the one in Isaiah – that specific scripture. I had especially based most of the decision on this one scripture – Isaiah 3:16 – and contextual verses, and on the Adam Clarke commentary of that scripture.

I took the note with me {10}; and on the plane I typed a brief statement that appeared on page 522 of the October 23, 1974 *Bulletin* {11}. I did not return to Pasadena for several weeks. In my absence, my brief statement appeared with my signature under it – just like I write it. Now, what I believe now is that the mention of those other three scriptures had been appended and that I did not write it. I don’t remember that at all! I think that was put in there and my signature under it, without my knowledge.

What I never knew until now (and just a day or two before I wrote this, the first time that I knew it – just last week) was that, after my signature, Mr. Wayne Cole (then director of Pastoral Administration) added a few pages giving the new liberal watered-down reasoning – changing the truth of God! And even since I wrote that, I’ve found that all ministers were COMMANDED to read every word of what they wrote there and that came under my signature (not over it, but under it) – but giving the impression that it came with my approval, which it did not! It didn’t come with my knowledge. I would never have approved it, if I had read it at the time.

Ministers were commanded to read that in their various congregations, and it was **a deliberate conspiracy** to get this LIBERALISM into the Church

WITHOUT MY KNOWLEDGE. They never let me see that. It was never printed. It was printed, I mean; but never sent to me! I didn't return for several weeks; and they saw that no copy of that ever came to my attention, but it did go to the ministers of the Church. That's the kind of conspiracy that went on with top men that I gave the responsibility of supervising the Work in my absence. But I'm back here in charge now, and that kind of thing isn't going to happen any more – believe you me.

Satan masterminded this in such a manner that it all appeared under my signature, **as if I fully approved all that followed after my signature** – when, in fact, I never saw it until the day before yesterday (at the time I wrote this, which was last week). It was subtly handled and kept from me. (Or did I? I think I wrote that early this past week. I don't want to get mixed up, these days are going by so rapidly.) I DID NOT AND NEVER WOULD HAVE approved of what Mr. Cole, without my knowledge, published beneath my signature (giving the impression that it had my approval)!

Even now, at this late date, I learned that this “about-face” altering of a decision the Living Christ had put into His Church caused great consternation among loyal ministers and members in England. But by this maneuver of Satan, the people of God's Church started OFF THE TRACK! That started them off the track, and then they went off the track on a number of other points. I say “started off” – for watering down of God's truth on healing, the Sabbath, many more vital doctrines followed in its wake.

But, as Satan maneuvered to start ALL HUMANITY off the track in the Garden of Eden, so in these latter days, he maneuvered to use the women of God's Church to start the end-time Church off of the track; and the whole Church was deceived!

At the time my son came to me with the report that the Adam Clarke commentary was in error on Isaiah 3:16, my mind was primarily on other

things; and I made a hasty decision without fully weighing the matter. I have come to realize this. I have deeply repented of it! I now correct it before the entire Church.

God's Human Instrument

Brethren, let's get one thing straight at this point: Jesus Christ chose and has been using a human instrument **to lead you**. Maybe you think He should have gotten, or sent, at least a divine angel down here to lead you. But He didn't. He chose a human. And He had humans leading the first Church. Will we then blame Jesus Christ for that? He is infallible. He makes no mistakes. But who among you could He choose as His instrument – as **His apostle** to lead you – who is already supernaturally divine and unable to make a mistake? (To lead you, is what I meant to say.)

He took me with my single-track mind and **used me** in starting this Philadelphia era of God's Church. He has used me, in spite of a few mistakes, in bringing all of you into His Body, the Church. He revealed His truth to me and through me to you! And now He is using me as His instrument in correcting a mistake, and leading you back on the track. Thousands of you have written me that you are behind me 100%. Are you? That's the question. Jesus Christ, through me, has been getting us all back on the track – ready for His return to earth as the King of kings and the Lord of lords.

The Church, as His Bride to be spiritually [{12}](#) married to Him, is to rise to meet Him in the air as He descends. Women of the Church, do you think that Jesus Christ will say to me, "Send out a proclamation to all the women in the Church to prepare for My coming. Tell them to go immediately to their dressing tables, pluck out their eyebrows, paint in new ones higher up on their foreheads, and use cosmetics to make up their faces to meet Me in the air"?

Wouldn't that be a great proclamation, if I would make one? No, dear people, I don't think He will have me make any such proclamation; but rather He will say "Wash the dirt off your faces and get ready to meet Me in the air." And paint is a kind of dirt that you put on. Now Jesus Christ, through His chosen apostle, is going to RULE on this question once and for all. It needs to be settled, right here and now.

It was through me that He ruled on smoking. At the time only men smoked. That goes back to 1927. That's before any of you came into the Church, 1927. No specific detailed scripture says: "Thou shalt not smoke." But I know (I did know) in the spring of 1927 when I was converted, that God's law is to be applied to given circumstances **according to its basic principle**. I asked myself "Why do I smoke?" (Can you believe that I used to smoke? Some of you would be shocked! Yes, I did – until I was converted.) Then I had to ask myself "Should I continue smoking?"

I will say I was never a heavy smoker. I averaged about three cigarettes a day. Not three packs, only three little cigarettes. But anyway, I was smoking a little. But I asked myself "Why do I smoke?" I wanted to know the attitude and the purpose. Did I do it to please God? Answer: No. Did I do it because other men in Satan's world do it? Answer: Yes. To please the five senses? Answer: Yes. (The sense of smell, not the sense of taste incidentally. You can't taste smoke. Did you know that? You can only smell it.) Does it express love to God? No. Does it express love to neighbor? No. To some, it was offensive. Did I do it for my health? No. I knew that it was harmful to whatever extent. I didn't know it would have anything to do with lung cancer. I don't think anybody did at that time. But I knew the purpose of the lungs, and breathing air in and out; and I knew that it would be harmful to the purpose of eliminating toxins and poisons through the lungs. I knew it was harmful to whatever extent. It was a worldly habit.

I quit. Through me, Christ caused His Church to turn from smoking. So

smoking is kaput, as we say, in the Church. Our men and our women do not smoke. One minister did. He's not a minister any longer. He didn't while he was a minister, but he got to smoking; and he's out.

Glorifying The Self

Now, apply God's law to makeup. Why do women use makeup, to please and glorify God? No. God is the Master Designer as well as Creator. The world seems to think that God did not design women's faces properly, and they try to do a better job of making up their faces. (They call it "makeup." It's make up the face.) A better job than God did. Does makeup please God? His Spirit certainly says to me that it is displeasing to Him! And I, like the apostle Paul – or, like the apostle Paul – I think that I have "*the mind of Christ.*" Do they do it to exalt God? No. Rather to exalt the SELF (to look pretty to themselves in the mirror, to look nice to the world and to look more like the world), which debases God.

It is pure and simple VANITY, no matter how you want to use human reason out of it. If you want to use it, walk out of the Church. Go out into the world and use it. Enjoy it now. You won't enjoy it in the life to come, I promise you; because you won't be there. So take your choice. God knows it is [{13}](#), even now if some women are self-deceived and protest that it isn't. It is done to glorify the SELF, not to glorify God! Now, just think of that. What is **the motive**? It isn't to glorify God. It's to glorify the self.

One woman says it is an ornament of dress, and she doesn't feel dressed up without it. God says, "*whose adorning ... let it be ... the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit*" (I Peter 3:3-4). Let it be HUMILITY, **exalting GOD**. Let's look at it that way for a change.

Do women do it because other women in the world do? Emphatically YES! Tell me any other reason. Do they do it so they'll be different from the

world? Oh, no. Not at all! Even as I once smoked because other men did it. It is done to be like the world! But if the world – even its religion, specifically the Christian religion – God says, “*COME OUT OF HER, My people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.*” And those plagues are coming on the women that do use makeup, believe me; and they are coming very soon, in our generation. The plagues are now soon to come (Revelation 18:4).

One woman says, “But since it is considered an essential part of good grooming by people in the world, it does help me feel better dressed.” The way it’s considered in the world! Let’s see, I believe that is a woman who is really quite prominent in the Church. Some ministers’ wives have written me. I believe this is from a woman who is not a minister’s wife, but her husband is prominent in the Church as well as she.

A woman says, “I don’t wear makeup to change my appearance.” Just to enhance her appearance; but not to change it, she says. But another woman, who writes the same thing, wears so much that when I mentioned having received a letter from a woman saying such a thing (without me naming the woman at all), he [{14}](#) replied, “If I were a betting man, I’d bet I could tell you who wrote that letter.” He said it would be one of two women. So I said, “Who do you think?” But the first one he mentioned was the very one that had written the letter. How did he know? Because she wears so much makeup that it stands out, and several noticed and mentioned it! That was during a Refresher Course on campus, and it was a minister’s wife. I’m afraid she’s going to have to quit wearing it, or her husband is going to be out of a job. It’s just about that important.

Some women will say it is adornment, and they mention how God adorned Israel. Well, let’s look at that scripture a minute. It’s the 16th chapter of Ezekiel, and it begins “*Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations.*” The abominations of Judah are the subject. Then God says

symbolically of Israel and Judah, as a newborn female child who grew up, she grew up polluted by the world; and at the time of love, God adorned her. How? God used apparel as a symbol of righteousness.

Here He used the symbol of covering her with the finest apparel and adornment – His law, which is the finest in SPIRITUAL CHARACTER. The apparel and the jewelry mentioned are not mentioned to approve worldly adornment, but indicate the finest quality in apparel and indicating **the finest quality** in character by it. God mentioned only the finest in material adornment to typify the finest in **spiritual adornment**. But He avoided including any face-painting whatsoever!

He only mentioned clothing; and God did clothe man and woman, but the Hebrew word is ‘labash,’ He ‘labashed’ them. It is a word that means covering in an adorning way; but it is covering the body, not the face. The face is the countenance; and, well there’s something I’m going to read a little later about that in Isaiah. I’d better see how the time is going because the time is about up now. I don’t have time to finish it unless I go over, and violate my own rule; and I don’t like to do that.

The beauty that God lavished on Israel was SPIRITUAL beauty – of His way of life, the way of His law. This spiritual beauty went forth over the world (verse 14). *“But thou didst trust in thine own beauty and played the harlot,”* (verse 15 and on). And so it is not encouraging the way of the world in any way.

Now, why did I smoke? I had to be honest about it; and I quit, and I taught the Church to quit. Why do women use makeup? Shall they be honest about it, or self-deceived into arguing their way to be like the world? Well, they say, “Mr. Armstrong, what’s the world going to think of me?” Yeah, that’s the first thing I thought about being converted – what will my former business acquaintances think of me if I go God’s way? I was more interested

not in what are they going to think of me, but **WHAT DOES GOD THINK ABOUT ME?** Not what is the world going to think about you.

There are two reasons, and variations of these two reasons; and God, who knows humans hearts better than we know our own, knows this. They are **VANITY**, the desire to be like the world that God calls us out of, or so to appear to the world. What other reason is there? You don't need to do it to please God. You don't need to do it to please the Church, because the Church isn't going to be pleased by it.

One woman candidly said that she would rather have a good looking face than a knowledgeable and understanding mind. She would rather have facial makeup than God's righteousness. That was many, many years ago. She made her choice. She no longer believes that there even is a Creator God. Now she is turning into old age, and all the facial makeup won't help her look beautiful any longer. She has **NO HOPE** for the future of any kind!

One of the hardest tests that I had to win to be converted, in the spring of 1927 ... Well I am mentioning what I've just already said and so I won't read that.

Now finally, let's again look at these specific scriptures that some use to **JUSTIFY vanity and worldliness**. Well, then I go through the scriptures. Now time is up, and I'm not going to go on with the rest of it. There are several more pages here, but you'll get it in the next number of **THE WORLDWIDE NEWS**. It'll be within a week or ten days, something like that.

I just want to say in closing: Here is from a section in the newspaper, just I think yesterday or the day before (I don't see the date on it) on women's makeup; and here is the second page of it – it's quite an article of it – continued over on to the second page. I just want to read a couple of real short paragraphs.

Through the early years of the Twentieth Century, the use of makeup was restricted to prostitutes and actresses. The popularization of the movies changed all that: The enormous influence of the movies, and the drastic changes in female fashions that followed World War I, made lipstick socially acceptable.

It was all a process, those that did do it at first. When I was young man, no women ever smoked but prostitutes. Finally the cigarette manufacturers ... They began by running ads with a man smoking and a woman sitting by and beginning to admire the smell of the smoke second-hand. Then men had the woman sort of handing the man his cigarette; and then finally they began to show pictures of women smoking, and they finally got the women to doing it. Now that's how subtle Satan works – to try to lead us into ways of that kind.

Let's see, I think there was one scripture I wanted to read in closing. That's Luke 12:40.

***Luke 12:40** Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at [such a time as] ye think not.*

You don't know when He is coming. BE READY! I don't think women are going to be ready at their lipstick and facial makeup table, and I don't think we're going to see much more of it in the Church from now on. But I wanted you to know how that was used, how subtilty Satan used it to start the Church on the wrong track and to get us off on the wrong track on so many other things – many of which were more important even than that, by far! Anyway, I wanted ... I tried to get the Church back on the track on the more important things first. Now there are still a few things that I'm going to have to keep chipping away at it until we do get READY FOR CHRIST'S COMING. I want to see all of us rise up to meet Christ in the air when He comes, and I think you all want to be in that number too; and I hope that we

all will.

Well, I may have gone about 4 minutes over and I apologize for that so I won't burden you any further.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: At first Mr. Armstrong said 1934, but then he corrected himself and gave the right date again – 1974.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said Matthew 27 at this point, but he was referring to Matthew 22.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said the word “parents” twice in a redundant way in this sentence, so one time was left out of the transcript.

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said the word “wrong,” but in the exact quote the word used was “harm.”

[{5}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong is quoting the rough draft he had for the upcoming 16 November 1981 WORLDWIDE NEWS article, while at the same time he is paraphrasing Isaiah 42:21.

[{6}](#) - Editor's note: In this sentence, Mr. Armstrong used the words “resulted in” twice; but the first time was left out of the transcript, as leaving it in created a redundancy.

[{7}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said “Church faculty” but he was undoubtedly referring to the college faculty of Ambassador College there at the Pasadena headquarters.

[{8}](#) - Editor's note: Although Mr. Armstrong left out the words “we had” from the sentence, those two words are in the WORLDWIDE NEWS article “How subtly Satan used MAKEUP to start the Church off the track;” and so they are included [in brackets] in the transcript here.

{9} - Editor's note: Remember that, throughout this sermon, Mr. Armstrong is reading from the rough draft he had for the upcoming 16 November 1981 WORLDWIDE NEWS article, which he had before him.

{10} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong is referring back to the note his son, Garner Ted, handed him at the airport.

{11} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong says the Oct. 24th Bulletin, but the WORLDWIDE NEWS article refers to the date as October 23.

{12} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "supernaturally," but the article reads "spiritually."

{13} - Editor's note: When Mr. Armstrong says "God knows it is," he is picking up the reading from the draft of the WORLDWIDE NEWS article right after the words "It is pure and simple VANITY".

{14} - Editor's note: In the article, Mr. Armstrong identifies the "he" as a leading headquarters' minister.

Getting Back on Track

Sermon (December 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Getting Back on Track.....	977	The Creation Of Angels	992
Calling The Apostle For Today	980	Creation Of Man	992
Irrefutable Proof	981	Revealed Knowledge	993
God's Point Of View Or The Worlds	982	This World	995
Speaking To The Churches	983	A Choice	997
Origins Of Christmas	984	The Letter Of The Law	999
Two Kinds Of Knowledge	986	The Spirit Of The Law	1001
What Is Sin?	988	Come Out Of Her, My People	1003
The Way Of Life God Lives	989	Work To Go On	1006
Except They Be Agreed	991		

It has been almost a year since I have been here, around 11 months; and since then this Church has really been getting back on the track. At that time I said something about Satan being ready to strike at this Church, and he is always ready to strike at this Church. He wants to destroy this Church. He's not interested in destroying the churches of this world, the churches of traditional Christianity. He wants to destroy the Church of God.

I know that what I said evoked a little bit of comment, and some rumors spread around as a result. People wondered what I was talking about. I didn't divulge that. I will just say that the specific thing that was threatening at that time, which I couldn't reveal to you, Christ has since solved, at least up to now. We hope it is permanently solved. You know, whenever we are in trouble, the solution lies in the Head of this Church—Jesus Christ. He said, “I will never leave you nor forsake you.” He never has, He never will. And He has pulled us through this year; and this has been the most eventful year, and the year of the best progress spiritually, in the history of this Church. This

Church has begun to please Jesus Christ! And when we please Him, then He blesses us.

I wish you could have heard the sermonette last night down at Pasadena. It was showing what is going on in the first arm of the Work: on radio, television, and the *Plain Truth*, and getting the gospel out to the world. It was most **inspiring**, believe me, on how God has been working this year, the doors that He has opened up—television stations all over Australia, all over Canada, and now opening up very strong stations throughout the United States in a manner they have not opened up in years. The *Plain Truth* was running a little under two million copies in subscribers a year ago. Now it's over four million.

The Work is going forward as it never did before. As we begin to please God, He will push His Work through. This is the Work of God! It has to be based on the Word of God. You have heard what it means to get back on the track. It's the Word that came from God through Christ. He spoke only the words God gave Him. The apostles spoke only the words that Christ gave them. Jesus Christ is the Word of God in person. I have here the Word of God, the same Word of God exactly, in writing. It's no different; it's the same Word of God that taught the original apostles. No difference whatsoever, same Word of God. So God taught His apostle of this day and age through the same Word that He taught the original apostles, precisely.

Now, in the meantime, it's a lot like a whispering game and to quite an extent. The people had gotten off the track. I wonder if you ever played that whispering game. I remember I did many, many, many years ago when I was a very young man. Well, if we'd start with Mr. Luker down here at the beginning; and he would whisper to the lady next to him a certain sentence of a few words (five or six words, seven or eight); she would listen, "Yes, I understood." Now then, she whispers what she heard to the lady next to her; and she listens till she gets it; then she whispers the same sentence to the

gentleman next to her; and he whispers it to the gentleman next to him; and he to the lady next to him; and so on until we get to the end of the first row here. And then the man at the end stands up and tells the group of us what he heard—what had come from the beginning; from one person to another, till it got to the end. And then Mr. Luker would stand up and say, “Here’s the word that started.” And we’d have a big laugh. It is so different! It got so mixed up on the way that you can’t recognize it. It isn’t the same word any more.

Brethren, that is what happened to the Church. The original Church of the first century received their doctrines—their beliefs, the truth they had—**from the apostles**. They didn’t receive it from Christ. Christ had been crucified, resurrected and gone to heaven ten days before the Church had started. Christ wasn’t there any longer. He had taught the apostles, the people had got it from the apostles.

Now the Word of God, they only had the Old Testament at that time (The New Testament had not yet been written.), and few people had a copy of the books of the Old Testament; and they were in single books. Some people might have had a copy, a very few copies extant, of the book of Isaiah. Someone else might have had the book of Hosea, and someone else the book of Jeremiah. Someone else had Genesis, and someone else had Deuteronomy. Not very many knew very much, and they only had the Old Testament at that. The people had to take the apostles’ word for it! The original apostles, however, did not deviate from the truth. But by the second or third generation, inside of twenty to thirty years, the gospel was suppressed. The truth was beginning to be altered. It had been watered down, it had been changed; and the people didn’t have the truth that came from God, through Christ, through the apostles. It became changed. Do you understand that brethren? It became changed.

Calling The Apostle For Today

TODAY it is a little bit different. The printing press was invented along about three or four hundred years ago. TODAY we have the Word of God in print. We have the New Testament. We have the Old Testament. Jesus Christ called the representative He wanted **for this day and age**. He called a very poor piece of human junk. He didn't call one of the most brilliant. He called a man who has known scores of other men of better mind, of better personality, of better posture, of better appearance. God didn't choose any of them. And He doesn't always choose the great of this world, does He? He chooses the meek of the world. He had to choose one that He had been able to BEAT DOWN INTO SURRENDER. He beat ME into surrender. He knocked Saul down and turned him into the apostle Paul.

Well He knocked ME down too, but in a different manner. I had been very successful in business. By age 28 I was making what in today's dollar value would be about a quarter of a million dollars a year. How many young men of 28 today are making a quarter of a million? I was quite successful. I was dealing with the great and the near great. I was dealing with the presidents and board chairmen of the greatest corporations in the Middle West and the East Coast, New York and Chicago. I had built quite a business in Chicago. God took it all away. I built another business in Portland, Oregon. I was in the advertising business. I started an advertising service for laundries. Every laundry from Eugene, Oregon up to Seattle here and up to Vancouver and across the State of Washington had become my client; and I was doubling the business of every one of my clients. And, all of a sudden, it just taken away by the national association; and my laundry older clients couldn't change it. And I couldn't, and I WAS DOWN AND OUT.

And then God challenged me on something that, to me, I didn't want to believe. He caused my wife to see His truth about the Sabbath. To me that

was religious fanaticism. I said to my wife, “You can’t live with me and keep that ‘Jewish’ Sabbath.” If my wife had gone along with me, you wouldn’t be here today, brethren! This Church wouldn’t be here today! But my wife stood FIRM. She loved her husband, but she said she had to love God more. I said, “But the Bible says ‘Thou shalt keep Sunday.’” She said, “Well, where does it?” Well I said, “I don’t know. I don’t know anything about the Bible.” And I didn’t then, 55 years ago. Most of you have been born since that. “Well, see if you find it. If you show me where God says that, I’ll believe it; but I’m going to believe what God says.”

You know I had to eat crow, so to speak. You know many husbands are turned by their wives, and many wives are turned by their husbands. I had a wife that stood **firm for God**. He came first. I had to begin to search the Bible when she said, “Prove it to me, and I’ll go back to Sunday.” I tried. I had to study evolution. I was challenged on that too. I had to prove whether or not God exists. God PROVED to me His existence, an irrefutable proof. I didn’t have to prove it to anybody else, but He proved it to me.

Irrefutable Proof

Next I said, “Has God communicated with man? I will look into the religious writings of the world.” All of the religions have their religious writings. For example, Islam has the Koran. Christians have the Bible. I said, “Well, this is a Christian country. I will look into the Bible first. Then I will go to the Koran, and then I’ll go to the writings of all these other pagan religions. I’ll see if any of them is really the Word of God, if God is speaking. I found God is speaking through the Bible. I found the Bible says, “*PROVE ME NOW HEREWITH.*” PROVE ALL THINGS. I HAVE PROVED IT! I have found irrefutable evidence that this is the Word of God speaking. The same Word that was speaking to the apostles in person 1950 some years ago (about nineteen hundred fifty or fifty-one years ago). I proved it. God had

BEATEN ME DOWN.

I saw in the Bible things that were just the opposite of what I believed. I saw that *“the wages of sin is death.”* I said, “That’s not true. Why the wages of sin is eternal life, not death. It may be down in hell instead of up in heaven, but it is eternal life just the same.” So I didn’t agree with God. If this was God speaking, I didn’t agree with that. Then the next part of that same sentence in Romans 6:23 said, *“but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.”* GIFT of God? Why, I said, “I already have eternal life. I don’t need it as a gift. I am an immortal soul. Or else I’ve got one, or something.” (I didn’t know.) Then I began to realize, “Well now, how do I know? Where did I get the idea that I am an immortal soul? Well I don’t know, I just always supposed so.” I began to realize that people don’t know why they believe what they do believe. They don’t know how they came to believe it. You don’t know why you came to believe most of the things you believe.

God’s Point Of View Or The Worlds

I had to come out recently on something, women, trying to get the church back on the track of cosmetics. Oh boy, did that strike fire with some women. But you ought to see the scores and hundreds of letters that have poured in from women that have had their eyes opened since. God’s women are beginning to be willing to see God’s truth and come God’s way. Oh, I tell you, most of us have wanted our own way; and we don’t know why we believe what we believe. Some women wrote me, “Well, Mr. Armstrong, I want to show you the women’s point of view on this.” Yup, well I am interested in the women’s point of view; but let me tell you something. I am far more interested IN GOD’S POINT OF VIEW. WHAT DOES GOD SAY ABOUT IT? They didn’t care about that. They just wanted me to know what women think about it. It’s about time we wake up, brethren.

It's about time we get this Church back on the TRACK, because it has gotten WAY OFF. Now this Church was getting on the track, and back here some years ago liberals began to get it off again. Satan will always come and try to get you off the track if you will let him. Yes, this has been a year of getting the Church back on the track again. I started that about three, three and a half years ago. And we had to start getting the *Plain Truth* back on the track; we had to start getting Ambassador College back on the track. I had to start with some of those things. Then we had to begin to get the Church itself cleaned up and back on the track. We had to come to this doctrine on healing that it had gotten clear off on. We had to come to other things.

My conscience was hurting me about this thing of makeup. But I couldn't get to everything at once, so I came to it as soon as God made it possible. But it wasn't I getting to it. It was CHRIST IN ME. CHRIST IN ME is the hope of glory—not me. I don't speak to you; it is Christ speaking IN and FROM me. This is the voice of CHRIST speaking to one who has yielded to let Christ take over his speech. I haven't built the Work. Jesus Christ has built it, and don't you ever forget it! I am just a hunk of nothing, but CHRIST IS EVERYTHING, GOD IS EVERYTHING. And God the Father is all in all. I think we lose sight of that. We want to be like the world. We look at "Well, this is the way it looks to me." But God says, "*There is a way that seems right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death.*" Now I didn't intend to say any of those things when I came up here.

Speaking To The Churches

Since I was here last year, I have spoken to groups like this of people coming in from all surrounding Churches, down at Salem, Oregon; at... I can never think of the name of it, west of San Francisco in California (I may mean east of) in Stockton, California, we had quite a group coming; but we had over 5,500 (nearly 6,000) at Pasadena; at Big Sandy; at New York; at

Chicago; at Denver; at Lake of the Ozarks; at Cincinnati; at North Carolina, one of the main cities in North Carolina—many other places all over the United States. When I spoke here, I gave it late January, early February; I had just come back from speaking in the Philippines. Now we are planning to go back there again, in the middle of next month; and we are almost to next month now.

And I've spoken to the churches all over Australia, New Zealand, England, Scotland, Germany; and other countries coming. And there were three languages; and some of them had earphones, and they were hearing in their language and watching me. Some were hearing me in English, who could understand English. Others in German, and others in... Let me see, the third language I believe might have been French. Anyway, there were three languages. The very next day I spoke in Paris to a big group; and there again some of them heard it in French (It was translated, some with earphones), and others heard me in English. And I have spoken all over the world; and I am now in my 90th year, and I am not ready to quit yet. The Work of God must go on!

Origins Of Christmas

Now this year I have come to you in a little different season than I did earlier this year, almost a year ago. We are in a season that is sort of a phenomenon—this Christmas season. Now where did the world get its Christmas? Look what a thing that is in the world, and look how important that is to the world. Why is it so big a portion of the lives of people let themselves be taken up with this thing of Christmas? And for some of them they look forward to it all year; and it occupies most of the thoughts, and the time, of the lives of people for at least a whole month before Christmas. Does it celebrate the birth of Christ? No! He wasn't born anywhere near that time of the year. Nothing in the Bible tells you when He was born, you can't find

out. Nobody ever did celebrate His birth at that time. It was observed for 2000 years before the birth of Christ, but it wasn't called Christ's birthday at that time.

Now why and how did that start? A custom of today that just has THE WHOLE WORLD involved in it. The whole world goes along with it, why? However did it ever get started? You've been going along with the world, brethren. How did YOU get into this world? How did YOU come to believe what you believe? Most of you believe what the person next to you said (just like I said a while ago), and it got twisted up a lot along the way. The Word of God has not changed. We still have that just like it was—accurately, like it was from the beginning. “Heaven and earth shall pass away; but,” God says, “my word shall never pass away.” It has not. And it has not changed.

Well now, where did they get this Christmas thing? An ancient Egyptian sculpture of the Madonna and child, with the sun over her head and holding a little child in her arms, long before Christ, was picturing Semiramis and Horus. And Horus was just another name for Nimrod. And you read about Nimrod in the Bible in Genesis; and so that is where it really started. Let's go back and read a little of that, Genesis chapter 10 and verse 6.

Genesis 10:6-8 *Now the sons of Ham; [He is talking about the sons of Noah: Shem, Ham and Japheth.]* [1](#) Cush, and Miz'raim, and Phut, and Canaan. (7) *And the sons of Cush* [2](#); Seba, and Havilah, and Sabtah, and Raa-mah, and Sabtechah: and the sons of Raa-mah; Sheba, and Dedan. (8) *And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth.*

Now notice: “a mighty one.” He was over other people; he became a mighty one.

Genesis 10:9 *He was a mighty hunter before the LORD.*

You know the animals were more populous, more than the people at

that time. He huddled the people together into cities to escape the animals; and he was the one who started the idea of walled cities, putting a wall around cities. Originally it was to keep the wild animals out. Later on it was to keep armies from other cities out. So we had walled cities way back in those days. Nimrod, the mighty hunter before the Lord.

Genesis 10:10 *And the beginning of his kingdom...*

So he ruled with governments of men, he had established governments.

Genesis 10:10-12 *And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. (11) Out of that land went forth Asshur [or building Assyria, Assyria comes from Asshur] and builded Nineveh, and the city Rehoboth and Calah. (12) And Resen between Nineveh and Calah {3} ...*

And so on. At least he became a mighty man in the world. Now Nimrod was a ruler, he was forming a type of civilization. He was ruling the lives of people; but he was lead by his wife/mother Semiramis, and she married her own son. Semiramis usurped the rule; she is the one who called herself the Queen of Heaven. She knew that a Madonna would come, a virgin would conceive and bear a child. They had a little bit of that tradition, but they got it all mixed up. So she became the mother of Sol, the Sun god; and she called Nimrod that Sun god. And that was the origin of Christmas—celebrating the birth of the Sun god, or Nimrod. That’s where Christmas really originated, as far as Christmas is concerned. But the real origin was even earlier than that.

Two Kinds Of Knowledge

This world began with Adam; and all of the world’s customs began there, with Adam. Now when God created the first man on the earth, he put him into the Garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And in the Garden of

Eden, in the center, were **two special symbolic trees** among many other trees, vines, shrubs, everything in the world. Now one was the tree of life. The other was really the tree of death because the other was called the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, but God said if they took of that they would surely DIE, so it was the tree of death, while the opposite one was the tree of life. So one was life and one was death, the tree of death was the tree of the knowledge. The tree of life was also then a tree of knowledge. It was also a tree of knowledge.

There are **two kinds of knowledge**. Now most people don't know that. Last night on television in Los Angeles I saw a documentary, I'd like to get a copy of it. I'd like to make a Bible Study of it. I'd like to have it sent out to all of the Churches. I'd like to put it on in Pasadena, and they would simply take it with our cameras; and then you could see it on the screen up here, and they could see it in all of the Churches. The documentary lasted half an hour. It dealt with the problems of psychiatrists, of the police, of the court system; and it said that they absolutely do not know the difference between right and wrong. And they showed how, down through history, psychologists have had different ideas of what is right and what is wrong. It was all from a scientific point of view. There was nothing mentioned about God or the Bible, that wasn't included. So far as they were concerned, God doesn't exist. I would like to do that: take half an hour of that commentary and then one more hour in a Bible Study, for my commentary. And I hope I can get that. I am going to try and get it; and, if so, you will see it later.

Now there are two kinds of knowledge. One kind is the kind that God created man to be able to acquire by himself. That is the knowledge of how to have a relationship with things, the matter of the earth. Now some of the matter is organic, and some is inorganic. In matter there is also electricity, there is energy, there is power. Some of it is dead matter, some of it is living matter. Man has been able to acquire the knowledge to deal with things

coming out of matter. However, the other kind of knowledge is knowledge of how to live with or to have a contact with **God** and how to have a contact or association with **fellow man**.

Now this particular thing was dealing with man's contact with man, and they are ALL MIXED UP ABOUT IT. THEY DON'T KNOW what it is right from wrong when it comes to man dealing with man. Science does not know, education does not know, religion does not tell them and doesn't know. But it's in this Book, but they don't know it because they don't believe this Book; and they teach the exact opposite. Just like I was taught that the wages of sin is eternal life in hell, unless you get the password "Jesus Christ;" and then you can go to heaven. And they didn't understand anything about it.

One kind of knowledge was self-acquirable knowledge to deal with things, with matter. The other is revealed knowledge of contact with man and contact with God.

What Is Sin?

Now even we in the Church seem not to know WHAT IS SIN? And sin has to do with your relationship with God, and even WE have not known what is sin. Many women painting their faces have not known "What is sin?" and how to define it. They want to see "Thou shalt not wear makeup." or "Thou shalt not paint thy face." In the Bible in plain words, otherwise they say: "Well, isn't it okay?" Well, I had to face that question 55 years ago (well almost 56 years ago now) when I was first converted.

You know, I used to smoke. Do you believe that? I didn't smoke heavily, but I did smoke a little. But I said, "Now I have got to decide whether to smoke." The Bible doesn't say, "Thou shalt not smoke." But I had learned in my six-month study before I was converted what sin is. Sin is the transgression of God's law. Sin is transgression against GOD and the law of

God! And the law of God is the way of God—living God’s way of life.

Now I said, “The law (I knew this much.) is love.” Love is out-flowing, not incoming. When it is incoming, it is not love; it’s lust. I said, “Why do I smoke?” I applied THE PRINCIPLE. Do I do it to please God? No! You know I don’t believe God likes the stink of it. I don’t believe it pleases God. Do I do it to please my fellow man, to cooperate with him, to help him, because I am concerned for his welfare? No, it didn’t have anything to do with his welfare; and some of them may object to getting it second-handed. Now we are to love our neighbor as our self; and God has given us the self to take care of. The self is mind and body; and this mind and body is **the temple of the Holy Spirit**, and we have a responsibility to take care of it. That’s part of love toward God and toward man of the law of God. Now, am I doing it to take care of this temple of the Holy Spirit? Does it help my health? Does it make me a better man? Does it help my mind? No.

I knew the purpose of the lungs; but I didn’t know anything about lung cancer, and nobody else did either at that time almost 56 years ago. I knew the purpose of the lungs though, and I knew that that prevented the lungs from doing their job of filtering the impurities out of the bloodstream as it goes through and is oxidized going through the lungs back into the heart. I knew it was harmful; and I said, “Therefore, it is SIN!” I quit smoking. As a result ALL of you in the Church have quit smoking. You never knew why, you just know it is a law of the Church. Well, that’s how it got to be. I **applied the** principal. That’s how you know what sin is. SIN is an ATTITUDE of rebelling against the law of love—love to God and love to neighbor. That didn’t express love to God, or love to neighbor, or even loving myself as my neighbor. It didn’t at all.

The Way Of Life God Lives

The documentary I saw on educational television last night (not on one of the regular channels) it was educational television, an educational scientific program; but they showed how helpless they are. They don't know right from wrong. Well, you could tell in a second in the Bible! They don't know when a man is insane. They showed the first time that anyone was acquitted of a murder by reason of insanity, way over a hundred years ago. They cited the case.

MAN IS HELPLESS trying to deal with himself. Deal with God? Well, man just leaves God out of the picture and doesn't even try to deal with God. Man was made to have a relationship with God and a relationship with his neighbor, and he doesn't know how to have a relationship with either. Adam had to make a decision. To take **revealed knowledge** from God meant to live God's way; it meant God's kind of life.

Now WHAT IS THAT KIND OF LIFE? Well, let me tell you right at this point. You read in John 1 verses 1 to 4, "*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God. The Word is a personage, and God is another personage; and there you have two personages. "And the Word was [also] God."* They are both God. Yes. Well he can be John, and John is with Smith; but John is also Smith because Smith could be the father of John, or the son of John, or whatever. In other words, God is the Family name, and They are both God; but they are two different persons. And " in Him was LIFE." "And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us," and became Jesus Christ.

Now " all things were made by Him." But we find that God made all things by Jesus Christ (in Ephesians 3 and verse 9). As you heard in the sermonette, Christ spoke and only did what His Father told Him. He's the Word of God. God told Him what to speak. The Holy Spirit is the power that did it. And He spoke only what the Father told Him to speak.

Now then, **GOD** and **THE WORD** have lived together from eternity. Do

you know how long that is? You find in the book of Hebrews that the one who became Christ had been "without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life," but having ALWAYS existed. Trillion times centillions times of years. Now for TRILLIONS UPON TRILLIONS OF YEARS those Two had been together.

Except They Be Agreed

Now listen to me brethren, listen: TWO CANNOT WALK TOGETHER EXCEPT THEY BE AGREED. But They got along, They agreed. You heard in the sermonette that the Word spoke nothing except what the Father told Him. He was in **PERFECT harmony and agreement**. They got along! Did God love the Word? When the Word was born flesh, the Father said, "*This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.*" The Word said, "*My Father is greater than I.*" And He loved the Father, and the Father loved the Son, and there was love outgoing, one for the other.

But listen, not only two can't walk together except they be agreed, one is going to wear the pants. Two can't walk together on equal terms. One is the boss. Christ said, "My Father is greater than I." There wasn't any question about it. He didn't say, "I don't like it, I'm angry because my Father is greater than I." He didn't say, "I want it to be fifty-fifty." God says the husband is the head of the wife. Today young girls getting married say, "I don't want any of that in my marriage ceremony. We are going to live fifty-fifty." Oh yeah? Fifty-fifty? You show me a fifty-fifty marriage, and I'll show you a marriage where the wife wears the pants every time.

TWO CAN'T WALK TOGETHER EXCEPT FOR TWO THINGS: (1) one is the leader over the other, and (2) they both agree; or they don't walk together in harmony very long. Now that might be a foundation for a marriage. You might think that one over a little bit. GOD AND THE WORD

AGREED; BUT GOD WAS THE BOSS, AND THERE WAS AUTHORITY THERE. AND THE WORD HAD LOVE FIRST TOWARD GOD.

The Creation Of Angels

Then, when They began to create, They first created angels. And He had love then toward the angels, but it was first love to God and then to the angels which were the object of His creation. That is the life of God. If we live God's kind of life, that's the kind of life They have lived for eternity. AND THAT BECAME A LAW. THE LAW OF GOD IS ONLY THE WAY GOD AND THE WORD LIVED FOR THOUSANDS AND TRILLIONS TIMES BILLIONS OF YEARS, the way that worked. Now They had a job to do. They had minds to think, so They began to think. They had power to create and to bring into existence, the power to make, to fashion, to form, power to design, minds to think with and design. So They began to think; and They designed, and They created angels first of all.

Now we know of at least three kinds of angels: ordinary angels, and seraphim, and cherubim. We don't know too much about them; but they are spirit beings, and they are immortal. But one of them had been brought up to the very throne of God and was put over the Earth; and he was "*perfect in all of [his] ways*" in the way God created him through Christ "*till iniquity*" or rebellion "*was found in [him]*."

The whole thing today is a matter of obedience OR rebellion. That's the whole principle, brethren. We've gotten ourselves all mixed up; and it is time we wake up and get back on the track. Now, how did they ever get off the track? I am coming to that.

Creation Of Man

So God created man in His own image.” God (Elohim) *created the heavens and the earth.*” Elohim is uni-plural. That means the Word and God—more than one person, but only one God. It is a Family—more than one person, but one Family. Like the word “church;” there are a lot of us here, but one Church, one congregation here this afternoon, one audience but a lot of people—uni-plural. God said, “*Let us* make man in our image,” same form and shape; but God did not make man of the same composition. God is composed of Spirit.

Now He had composed angels of spirit, and they are immortal. But now He decided, in the meantime, created matter. The angels were created first, because they were here **shouting for joy** when the Earth was created. [Job 38:7] And the Earth was created in the same day that the rest of all matter and the whole universe was created. You read that in the very beginning of the second chapter of Genesis. So angels were created before matter, there wasn't even any matter. I don't think they were on a planet of any kind with gravity drawing them down like we have here. I lift that and let loose of it; and something draws it down—gravity. And inertia hits it when it hits the desk. Those are laws of physics, of matter; and there are laws working even there. And God is the Operator of all law.

Revealed Knowledge

Now before Adam there was the decision: **revealed knowledge from God**, (how to have a relationship with God, how to have a right relationship and cooperate and work in harmony with his wife, with his neighbor, with the whole nation, nation with nation, whatever) **or** to have the kind of **acquirable knowledge** that God had already made man able to acquire (to deal with things). Now if man was going to be able to have a relationship with other men, he had to have knowledge that could only come by revelation from God. It had to be revealed knowledge! He didn't already have it.

YOU DON'T ALREADY HAVE KNOWLEDGE ABOUT HOW THE WOMEN WANT TO WEAR MAKEUP. YOU WANT TO USE YOUR OWN. YOU WANT TO SAY, "WELL, I WANT THE WORLD'S VIEWPOINT." AND THE WOMEN WANT TO KNOW IF YOU GO ALONG WITH US. That's why they wanted to do Christmas. YOU DON'T WANT GOD'S VIEWPOINT, DO YOU? I HAVE GIVEN YOU GOD'S VIEWPOINT. YOU WANT TO LIVE THE GOD-KIND OF LIFE, GOD'S WAY OF LIFE?

LET'S GET BACK ON THE TRACK, BRETHERN, AND DECIDE WHAT GOD'S KIND OF LIFE IS; BECAUSE ALL OF US HAVE BEEN ASLEEP, AND WE HAVE BEEN OFF THE TRACK. IT'S ABOUT TIME WE GOT BACK ON, OR YOU WON'T EVER GET INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD. I AM TRYING TO GET THIS CHURCH CLEANED UP TO MEET CHRIST IN THE AIR and you are not going to meet Him with paint all over your faces. If you women want that paint, you go have it; BUT GET OUT OF GOD'S CHURCH!

I don't know how to say it any stronger than that. I am a minister of Jesus Christ. I am shouting aloud and sparing not, crying aloud. "Lift up your voice like a trumpet, and tell my people their sins." That's what God says to me, **and I am** telling you your sins. You don't like me, do you? I **love** you enough to tell you! But you want to go the way of the world, and you will inherit the way of the world—ashes under the feet of those that are the righteous in the Kingdom of God, burnt up in the Lake of Fire.

God has called us to a **wonderful calling**, brethren; but it's not an easy way. He says **come out from among them of the world** "*and be ye separate.*" We're "*A HOLY NATION.*" We're A DIFFERENT, "*A PECULIAR PEOPLE.*" You don't want to be a peculiar people. You want to be like the world! **YOU CAN'T BE BOTH!** I'D RATHER HAVE ONE OR TWO PEOPLE IN THE CHURCH THAT ARE GOING THE WAY OF GOD

AND LIVING GOD'S WAY OF LIFE, THAN ALL GOING AFTER THE DEVIL AND TO HAVE THE WHOLE CHURCH FULL.

We've had ministers that say, "Well, you know, we want to keep peace in the Church. And a lot of people don't want to go God's way. They want to go the way of the world. We've got to compromise, Mr. Armstrong. We've got to listen to the people. We've got to get the women's viewpoint. We've got to get the men's viewpoint. We've got to say the way that seems right to a man. We want to have peace, you see." That sounds real good, doesn't it? Jesus said, "*I did not come to bring peace, but a sword.*"

Jesus said, "*T* here is a way that seemeth right unto a man." Jesus said there's an easy way that leads to destruction. He said also that there is a way that is hard and right that leads to eternal life, and few there be that find it. What do you want? Eternal life, God's way? Or do you want this world for a little while? **This is God's apostle speaking to you, brethren. Are you listening?** Make up your mind what you want! You can't have both. You can't have your cake and eat it too.

Now Adam chose one kind of knowledge, self-acquirable knowledge. He rejected God and revealed knowledge. And the world has been doing it ever since! Sin is the transgression of the law. Now what about the Tree of Life? That is revealed knowledge from God, and that is revealed knowledge of the way the Word and God lived together—love. L-O-V-E, love; and it's always **out-flowing**: toward God above all, and then toward fellow man, and taking care of your own mind and body as the temple of the Holy Spirit.

This World

Now the world started with Adam. He chose the way of get, of vanity: "I love me. I don't care about you. Love to God, but I want to exalt myself." Oh no, love to God is exalting God above all. Christ did. Look how great

Christ is. All things were made by Him, the greatest name given among men. All power in heaven and earth has been given to Him, and yet He exalted God above Himself.

Now what is this world that God tells us to come out of? God says (in Revelation 18:4) about Babylon—which is this world’s Christianity – “*COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE, THAT YE BE NOT PARTAKERS OF HER SINS,*” and shall receive not of her plagues that are soon going to be poured out. Now what developed from that forbidden fruit that Adam took? Well, knowledge that was acquirable by man; and he didn’t know how to get along with his fellows. But he exalted himself. **Vanity** above all, and vanity makes him want to get from the other fellow. Vanity means, “I love me.” Vanity means, “I want for me.” Vanity goes hand in hand with greed and coveting. And then toward others it’s resentment, and envy, and jealousy, competition, strife, rebellion against authority. And the authority of God is in the Church, brethren. The authority of God is in the Church!

So He says, “Come out of the world.” Now what world had developed from Adam and his way? Remember this: Adam was limited to self-acquirable knowledge, and that is only knowledge of the material—only knowledge that can come into the mind through the eyes, through the ear, through the senses of smell and taste, touch and feel. That’s all. You can’t know anything about spirit.

You know there is quite a controversy right now about whether we can have any teaching about God in certain schools, and they say that this thing of any teaching about Creation is unscientific because that would mean the supernatural; and we know there is no supernatural—there is NO GOD. GOD DOESN’T EXIST. That’s what the great universities are saying today.

I was down at the University of Southern California this week for a meeting with its President. They are establishing a Herbert W. Armstrong

Chair in one of their Law School Departments. I went down to see him about it. I saw the Law School; I saw the School of Medicine, the School of Architecture. They have a school of... Oh, what is this word? Aging, you know about people getting older. I could tell them more in a minute than they know with all their science in there. They don't know, because they don't know anything about God or the revelation of God. They despise revealed knowledge.

Adam rejected it. Our scientists today reject it—revealed knowledge. They don't want it. They say, "God get out of my life." So a certain world developed that started with Adam. Now what is it? In 1st John the second chapter, beginning with verse 15, "*Love not the world.*" I John 2:15 "*Love not the world.*" This world started with Adam. It's the world that was built from Adam's **acquirable knowledge**, and they are still giving that knowledge in our educational systems and our universities today. And there is **no revealed knowledge** there. They have spurned it. They won't accept it.

I John 2:15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

But a lot of our women have been loving something about the world. You bet your life! They don't like to admit it. Oh no, you don't like to agree with me. You don't want to agree with God then, because I speak from God; and I speak His Word faithfully.

A Choice

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, [Aw, oh, the lust of the eyes.] the pride of life... (I John 2:16)

What's a woman thinking of when she was putting on her makeup, trying to change her face in front of her mirror, at her dressing table or

whatever? How beautiful she is. She wants to be more beautiful to the world. I'll show you a letter. It will be in the Pastor General's Report. I don't know if it's been mailed out. If not, it will be mailed out tomorrow. A letter from a woman, she'd been wearing makeup for 30 some years. She never realized anything wrong about it. She took it right off. Her husband is unconverted. He didn't even notice the difference. [Laughter in audience.]

But some husbands insist their women wear makeup. I can't understand that. I lived with my wife for 50 years. I never wanted her to wear makeup. She was very lovely to me without it; and she was lovely to God. Yes...

***1 John 2:16-17** ... the lust of the eyes, the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. (17) And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.*

If you want to abide forever... Let's go back for just a second and look at Eve in the Garden of Eden, and look what her daughters are doing today. The third chapter of Genesis beginning with, let me see, verse six.

***Genesis 3:6** When the woman saw that the tree was good for food [It was very attractive to her eyes now.] and it was pleasant to the eyes...*

She looked at what was pleasing to the eyes. You see God does not look on people as man, on the outward appearance; but He looks on the inner heart. I am going to tell you a good definition of sin in just a minute.

***Genesis 3:6** ...and that it was pleasant to the eyes, a tree desired to make one wise [pride and vanity, intellectual vanity. She took of the tree and disobeyed God. She didn't agree with God.] ...and gave also unto her husband with her, and he did eat.*

She led him; and too many wives are leading their husbands today. I always want to consider a minister's wife when I consider a minister for a position or a post. What kind of a wife has he got? Is she a help, or a

hindrance, to him? Some wives are very serious hindrances to their husbands. Shame on them.

Sin is the way that Adam chose. It is an attitude of mind. Now the attitude of mind that is God's way of life was the attitude of love, and cooperation, and the attitude that God Himself is the Head. That is the attitude of Christ. Self is an attitude of get—an attitude of vanity. If we live God's way of life, we live like God and Christ did live.

The Letter Of The Law

We read in I John 3:4, "*Sin is the transgression of the law.*" Now there is both physical and spiritual sin. A lot of people don't seem to understand that. The penalty of physical sin so far as man is concerned with his body, a man can get a disease germ of some kind, or a contagious disease, and that does something to his body that prevents the body from working normally according to the law that God set in motion in that body. It has **BROKEN THE LAW** that would operate naturally in a healthy manner in the body. Therefore it is sin. That is the sin that Jesus forgave when he healed the sick. But that is physical. Spiritual sin is violation of the law of "*Thou shalt love the Lord thy God*" above all, and then "*your neighbor as yourself.*" It's just that simple.

Now I have spoken about the Ten Commandments: the first four tell you how to love God; the last six, how to love man. But listen, the whole thing is letting God come into you (through the Holy Spirit) and live **His life** in you. I say, I did not build the work; it was Christ in me who built it. Is Christ in you? Is Christ in you going to paint His face? Can you imagine Christ doing that? **Spiritual sin is the violation of the spiritual law.**

Now you will also read in Romans 7:14... Paul is speaking there spiritually, and he says that "*the law is spiritual.*" He is speaking there of the

law of the Ten Commandments, the law of love. And now I want to give you something else in second Corinthians, II Corinthians 3, beginning with verse 6. I should even begin at the 1st to make sense, but you get the meaning beginning right here really in the middle of what Paul was saying:

II Corinthians 3:6 *Who [speaking of God] hath made us able ministers of the NEW testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth but the spirit giveth life.*

He is speaking of the ministration of death written and engraven on stones [II Corinthians 3:7—not tablets of stones, but whole stones. That was the Law of Moses. That was the law of physical rituals, a physical law that was given to ancient Israel. It was only a substitute for the Holy Spirit. Today it's the spiritual. We live according to the spirit. It's altogether different.

Now there is a little illustration that I have used many years—many, many times. Some of you may have heard it some years before. My elder daughter, when she was just a girl, in probably junior high... I don't remember now. It's a long time ago. But I had a note from her teacher. She said, "Mr. Armstrong, your daughter Beverly is an inveterate reader; and she is ruining her eyes. She is reading too much, and it is harming her work in school. She is reading fiction, and she is taking books home from the library and reading fiction too much."

So I noticed her one evening; and there she was, half way through a book. I said, "Beverly, is that a book of fiction?" "Yes, Daddy." "Well," I said, "I had a note from the teacher; and the teacher says you are injuring your eyes, and it's harming your mind and your school work. Now, Beverly, I don't want you to bring any more of these books home from the school library; and I want you to stop reading. It is harming you. Do you understand?" "Yes, Daddy."

You know, the next night I saw her half way through a book. She is a

very rapid reader. She can read half way through a book inside two hours. It would have taken me ten hours. Anyway, I said, “Beverly is that another book?” “Well, yes, Daddy.” I said, “I thought I told you not to read any more of this fiction?” “Well, but Daddy, you said don’t bring any more of these books home from the school library; and I didn’t get this from the school library, Daddy. I borrowed this book from Helen.”

SHE WAS LIVING ACCORDING TO THE LETTER OF THE LAW, not according to the spirit. The obvious intent of what I said was quit reading. We can understand plain enough if we want to, the law of God. But we want to quibble; we want to get down to every little case. If God doesn’t say specifically... Well God doesn’t say specifically “Thou shalt not smoke.” and a lot of other things. You cannot apply the law of God that way; and you won’t get into the KINGDOM OF GOD planning to apply it that way, let me tell you, brethren. God has shown me that; and He has called me to preach that to you and to show it to you. We are ministers of the spirit, not of the letter of the law. The law is a spiritual law, and we apply it spiritually as a principle. Now what then is sin? It is a violation of this law of love as it is applied and magnified a way out, as it is put into action in the mind or actual action physically. That is sin.

The Spirit Of The Law

Now you read that a prophecy said Jesus would come and magnify the law and make it honorable; and He did. We go back to the so-called Sermon on the Mount, and you read here in Matthew the 5th chapter, verse 17.

Matthew 5:17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy but to fulfill.

And then in verse 21, He began to magnify one of the laws of the Ten Commandments.

Matthew 5:21-22 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: (22) But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment.

Just in your mind! You are breaking the spirit of the law without actually killing anyone. He killed that, out in principle. Now in verse 27:

Matthew 5:27-28 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time [That's when they went by the letter But, you see, we are the ministers of the spirit in the New Testament.] Thou shalt not commit adultery: (28) But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

Sin then is when you think of a thing and let it conceive into action, and you can let it conceive into action even in your mind. A man who lusts after a woman has already committed adultery. In other words, he's gone through the act in his mind. He didn't have to do it in the actual act physically. He did it mentally. And you can sin MENTALLY in vanity, and it has been going on in our Church. They say, "Well, but can't we compromise a little bit?" We've had a lot of LIBERALISM, and we've got to weed that out of the Church! Some of the ministers have gone out of the Church because they were liberal, and they were leading their congregations in that direction; and we cannot have that. Jesus Christ will not have it. I am going to have to answer for these things, believe me.

Now back here in I Kings chapter 11. I Kings, and verse 6, about Solomon.

I Kings 11:6 And Solomon did evil in the sight of the Lord, and went not FULLY after the Lord, as did David his father.

You say, "Well I don't want to go fully after the Lord. Can't I fudge a

little? And wouldn't it be okay if it wasn't some specific thing about it that said I specifically can't do it?" Poppycock! That isn't the way. God looks on the heart. You've got to have the love of God in your heart, brethren. You've got to have the love of God in your heart.

Come Out Of Her, My People

Now, let me see, over here in Revelation 18:4, speaking of Babylon—and that is [this world's] Christianity really. You find Babylon described in the 17th chapter and verse 5, where she has a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. That is the Roman Catholic Church; and her harlots are the daughters that came out of her in protest, calling themselves Protestant. Now that's pretty strong, but God labels that. God labels the Roman Catholic Church, the Methodists, the Baptists, the Presbyterians, the Congregationalists, the Quakers that I was brought up in, and all of them, HARLOTS.

Christ spoke out. He called the religious men of His time serpents, and whitened sepulchers, and liars, and hypocrites; but He said it in love. He said: *"How often would I have gathered you like a mother hen would gather her chicks, but you just would not."* God corrects and chastens everyone He loves. He says "son" in the Bible. He means daughters, too. It means the same thing. It means daughters too.

To you He says, "Come out of her, my people." We can't be like even the religions of this world. We have got to be different. We say, "Well, but in the world they are doing so and so. I have to go along with the world." But God says, "Come out of the world and be separate." I don't know. I just have to tell you what God says, brethren. I am not going to start watering down. We've had ministers that did. They are out of the Church now; and tomorrow

one or two more are going out; and that's all that I know of.

Let me tell you, I'm glad to tell you that the Headquarters Church in Pasadena when the rumor went out that I'd said something about... It's been on my conscience now for a while, but I couldn't get to every one of these things at once. I've had to take them one at a time. And I thought that getting the College straight and getting the *Plain Truth* going right to millions of people had to come first. As soon as it was heard that I had said something about this thing of cosmetics, and some ministers' wives have been making big salary selling cosmetics to God's own people. And, because they were ministers' wives, the women felt they had to buy them off her. And sometimes it was not only cosmetics, but vitamins and a lot of other junk. They are not in the Church any longer. One of them is suing the Church. A former Evangelist-rank, who was over all of our ministers, suing the Church because he lost money, because his wife can't sell to the Church people any longer. Of all things, he never should have been even baptized in the first place.

Now look, I am going to tell the truth; I don't care who it hits. I care, yes. I don't mean that, but I mean regardless. Let's put it that way. That's what I really mean. Regardless of who it hits, **I'm going to tell you God's truth.** I'm going to have to give account to God. I want to do God's will. I want to see you do God's will, brethren. To me God says, as quoted back here in Isaiah 58 in verse 1:

Isaiah 58:1 CRY ALOUD, SPARE NOT, LIFT UP THY VOICE [I LIFT IT UP! I got a microphone here]. *Lift up thy voice, like a trumpet, and SHOW MY PEOPLE THEIR TRANSGRESSIONS, and the house of Jacob their sins.*

Well, brethren, that's what (I'm sorry.) I have to do. I wish I could say something that maybe you'd like better, but that's what God has

commissioned me to do. I want to see this Church cleaned up! Now I am going to continue these meetings. I am going to continue speaking. I don't know anyone heading a big organization worldwide in his 90th year. I had someone try to look up in the directories of world-famous people to see if there are any of them that lived into the 90th year. No, he didn't find any. You can look up in the directories; you'll find it in the back of a big dictionary, the notable persons. Where do I get the strength? You read the 40th chapter of Isaiah, the last three or four verses. I get it from God. **He is my strength.** He is my strength.

Well, brethren, we're going on in to glory. I don't love the pleasures of sin for a little season more than eternal life in the Kingdom of God. I'd rather be with the people of God for all eternity. And you know, I'll tell you; do you know what your faces are going to be like? You are not going to have paint on them. They are going to shine like the very sun in brightness—in glory.

What a wonderful thing it is, and what a wonderful God we have. I begin all my prayers with thanksgiving, first of all for God Himself—that the One who has more power, more authority, above EVERY power is God who is love, and who loves me, and who will never leave nor forsake me. Then I thank Him for a lot of other things, and for the truth He has given me. I thank Him next, usually, day after day after day, for beating me down; for conquering me; for bringing me to a point of **unconditional surrender** to Him where I said, "I give my life to you."

Now, brethren, I have to confess to you I haven't always left that life in His hands. I am sorry for that. But you read in I John the 1st chapter that if WE in the Church—that is WE, not the outside world—CONFESS OUR SINS, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins; but two can't walk together except they be agreed. I agree with God, but sometimes I do what I don't agree with. I have, and I am doing it less and less all the time. Maybe I haven't overcome 100% yet. I am still working on one or two things. David

was a man after God's own heart. David sinned a great deal of terrible sins, but he never committed those sins again. He repented.

Everybody has sinned, WE ALL HAVE. You know, you don't have to worry about that. Christ paid the penalty in your place. The penalty is all paid. You are FREE from it. Isn't that wonderful? But I thank God then for revealing His truth, for conquering me, for revealing His truth, AND THEN, WHAT IS MORE IMPORTANT, LETTING ME SHARE THAT TRUTH WITH THOUSANDS AND MILLIONS OF PEOPLE AROUND THE WORLD.

Work To Go On

Now, brethren, tomorrow on television I am going to give you another broadcast; but then I am afraid a lot of the people aren't going to like it. They are going to be very angry at me. I am going to have to talk about Christmas tomorrow on television. [Laughter in the audience.] I don't think you people are going to be disappointed, but some people will; and some ministers won't like that at all. Then I don't know if I will get to it the very next Sunday, but the second Sunday from tomorrow will be a program of my visit with the successor to Anwar Sadat, President Mubarak of Egypt. It was all on television camera, all recorded on film; and about 12 minutes of it will be put on that program. On the Sunday after that I addressed, in Cairo, the leading people of Egypt. There were present there eight cabinet ministers in the government, clear at the top, the third man in the government, and eight cabinet ministers aside and their wives; and that will occupy the television program on the following Sunday. I will bring those things to you.

Now we are leaving... (I forget, about the middle of January. I forget just exactly. Is it the 22nd?) The 22nd of January we leave on another trip to the Far East. God willing, God will keep my health and keep my heart

ticking; keep me going, I hope. And I hope I'll be back to see you within another year. I hope you'll pray that God will spare my life. Remember, I had a total heart failure. I still have a little problem with my heart; and I have to be careful with it, probably will as long as I live. But God gives me strength, and I carry on. You carry on here. I love you all. I want you to love me. Let's pray for one another. Let's go on into glory with God our Father. God bless you all.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong missed this part of verse six, and went on to verse 7 of Genesis 10.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently used Ham instead of Cush in this verse.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said Cush instead of Calah.

What Is Sin?

Sermon (December 5, 1981)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

What Is Sin?.....	1008	Responsibility To Teach Our Children	1022
The Ancient Origins Of Christmas	1008	Education In This World Is Physical	1022
Self Love	1012	God Is Not Calling The World Now	1023
The Two Ways	1013	The Forbidden Fruit	1024
One God – Two Persons	1013	Make Up	1026
Youth 81	1014	What Is Sin?	1028
Man Limited To Physical Knowledge	1017	Physical Sin – Spiritual Sin	1031
Knowledge Stored In Spirit Of Man	1018	Letter Of Law Vs Spirit Of Law	1033
The Two Trees	1018	Smoking	1036
Principle Of What Sin Is	1020	Majoring In The Minors	1039

Well, greetings everybody, once again. I might announce, now, I do not plan to be with you next Sabbath. I'm planning to be in Oklahoma City to speak to the brethren of the combined Churches in that area of the country. But I'm here when I can be.

The Ancient Origins Of Christmas

At this season of the year a phenomenon is playing a very great part in the lives of almost everybody all over the world. Of course, you know, that phenomenon is Christmas. But why? You know the average person looks forward to Christmas. It's a big thing in their lives. Many people are looking forward to it throughout the year. Many people have savings plans to save up money to do some shopping, to buy presents, to trade and exchange back and forth with other people. They don't know themselves why they do it. Some people think they do it because it celebrates Christ's birthday. But even they don't look into it, and they don't really understand, or they don't know. Actually it doesn't celebrate Christ's birthday at all.

There are newspaper headlines at this time of the year that say that there's a great increase in crime. There's a great increase in shoplifting in stores, just stealing, running into hundreds of millions of dollars, all over the nation. There's an increase in murders, in the home, other places. Christmas is a time of merry-making but they usually use alcohol and other stimulants to make themselves merry, and it leaves them rather dead after it's over. Why do they do it? They don't know. Why does it influence such a great portion of the people?

A lot of people think that Christmas started with the early Church, or that it's in the Bible. There's not a word in the Bible about it. In fact, the Bible is very careful to conceal the date of the birthday of Christ. No one knows when He was born. We do know this much about it. It was before the winter season. It was while the sheep were still out in the pasture; and they were always corralled, oh, from six to eight weeks before Christmas and brought in, and were not out with the shepherds watching over them. It was not observed by the first century Church. It was not observed by the apostles. People don't understand where the Church got it! The Church didn't get it for 300 years, in the fourth century before it came into the Church. And it came from an ancient pagan custom. They got it from the ancient pagan customs back as far as ancient Egypt.

There's an ancient Egyptian sculpture. We have a picture of it in our booklet, *What do you mean Christmas? (and Why do People Observe Christmas?)*. Now if you haven't read that recently, and most of us have not... We've been taking this thing for granted. We've understood the truth about Christmas in this Church; and we suppose, well, we understand it. Perhaps we ought to read it all over again. You ought to get that booklet and read it once again. And in it, there is a picture of an ancient Egyptian sculpture of a Madonna and Child. In other words, it is the Sun god of Horus and his mother-god Semiramis. And Horus actually was the Nimrod of the

Bible. So the ancient Egyptians got it clear back from the time of Nimrod and his mother-wife, Semiramis.

The first time I ever visited in Cairo, Egypt, I think it was in 1956; and my wife and I stayed in the Semiramis Hotel. I think it's been torn down now, and they're building a new Semiramis Hotel there. (And even the Hilton Hotel where we stayed this year, and I've stayed a number of times before, is beginning to look a little bit old now. It isn't new any longer. But it's been built since our first visit there.) There are hotels named after Semiramis in a number of Middle Eastern cities. There's one as I remember in Damascus, The Semiramis Hotel. Semiramis was the famous mother-wife, the goddess who was the sun-goddess. And it goes clear back in your Bible to the tenth chapter of Genesis.

Now the tenth chapter of Genesis gives us the genealogy of the sons of Noah, and I'd like to read you just a little bit of it.

Genesis 10:6 *And the sons of Ham...*

Ham was one of the sons of Noah. He had Shem, Ham and Japheth.

Genesis 10:6..the sons of Ham were Cush, Mizraim, and Phut and Canaan.

Genesis 10:8-9 *And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth. (9) He was a mighty hunter before the [ETERNAL]: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the [ETERNAL]:*

That is, he put himself before God, the Creator. He put himself as Number One on the Earth, as the greatest man. But he was more or less ruled by his mother-wife, Semiramis.

Genesis 10:10-11 *And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, [the tower of Babel and later the city of Babylon, which was the first capital of the*

first real empire in the world] *and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. (11) Out of that land went forth Asshur, and [he] builded Nineveh...*

Now, of course, Assyria is named after Asshur or Assyria. “*He builded Nineveh,*” which is probably the oldest city still remaining in the world today. I’ve been there.

Genesis 10:11-12 ...[He] *builded Nineveh, and the city Rehoboth, and Calah, (12) And Resen between Nineveh and Calah: the same is a great city.* [It was at the time this was written, when Moses wrote it.] and Mizraim begat Ludim and...

Well, it gives a few more that were children.

Genesis 10:15-16 *And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, (16) And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite,*

the Jebusites were the first settlers in what is now called Jerusalem; and David went up among the Jebusites and started building Jerusalem. The Jebusites were there in the days of Abraham. So it goes clear back to that time, just after the Flood.

Now you would think that people would have learned their lesson in the Flood, but there’s a reason why they didn’t. They didn’t learn any lesson at all about God. But some knowledge of God had been passed on. We read in the New Testament that Jesus Christ, the Lamb of God, was slain from the foundation of the world. Now they knew something about that. It was sort of known that the Messiah would ultimately come from a virgin mother. That he would be both man and God. That he would be born of a human virgin, a human mother.

Semiramis claimed that she was that mother; and she married her own son, Nimrod. He became great. He built cities, but he was a ruler. He wanted to be the big “I Am.” He wanted to be the “Big Boss.” But he had more skill

and more ability than most others. He was the first one, when they were driven to fear of animals, to start building a city with a wall surrounding it. And originally, walls around cities were built to protect the people from the wild animals when there weren't very many people on the Earth back in the early days of mankind. But Semiramis is a type of evil. And she called her son "the sun god," and she developed a religion. She claimed to be the virgin; and Nimrod became a sun god and was worshipped. And then it got in to the ancient Egyptian worship of Isis and Osiris and the ancient gods of ancient Egypt.

Self Love

So Nimrod was the ruler. He was on the principle of get: "I love me; I want to get; I want to rule over others; I want to take away from others." Now he was willing to protect others as long as he could take from them. He wanted to protect.

Well, if you've ever studied a type of psychology that I remember studying when I was into my early twenties: there was a book of psychology that came out at that time, and it really had a lot of psychology that the modern psychologists are not teaching in the universities today. It taught about self and what self is. It taught about an **empire-ical self**. Now, there's no such word in the dictionary. There's a word "empirical." That's a different word with a different meaning. But he meant "empire-ical" from the sense of an empire.

Your self is a sort of an empire. Now it includes, first, whatever is yours, whatever is closest to you—your clothes; the house you live in (if it's yours), then your children, maybe even your mother and father (you call them yours—your mother, your father), whatever you call yours. Then it extends on to even your relatives. Then, as you grow up in your teens, you get interested

in sports. Your team is part of self, and your team is against the other team. It's always competitive. Self is against whatever is not self. Your team is self; and therefore you love that to that extent, instead of loving the one that it's in competition against. Now, you can carry that on; and you see, in the case of war, your country is part of self. That's why people are willing to go to war and even die; for their country. It's dying for self-love; and self-love is the very essence of sin, and it started from the very, very beginning.

The Two Ways

So Christmas sort of sprouted out of this Nimrod-Semiramis situation, but the origin of it all was even a great deal earlier than that. Now this world began with the first Adam. I've had a lot to say, recently, about the Two Trees and Adam. And someone will say "Well, now here goes Mr. Armstrong once again." I'm going to go back to it again and again and again, as Franklin Roosevelt used to say, because everything started at that time. This world! We need to know what this world is, because God is calling us out of this world to be separate, and we should not be part of this world. Well, what's wrong with this world? Why isn't it alright? Most people seem to think it is alright. So we get back to those Two Trees, once again, that were symbolic trees. Now I don't question that there were two actual, literal trees that really grew out of the ground in that garden, but the fact of being literal trees is not the point: it is what they symbolized, what they meant, what they represented. And they did represent something. They represented the Two Ways of Existence.

One God – Two Persons

Now we find in...

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning God [Elohim] created the heaven and the*

earth.

And Elohim means more than one Person, but only one God. God was like a family. You read of it in the New Testament, the Word and God—“*And the Word was with God;*” and the Word was a Person, and God was another Person. They were two Persons, but They formed God. They formed Elohim; and, in

Genesis 1:26 And [Elohim] said, Let us make man in **our** image, after **our** likeness:

God was going to reproduce Himself. Now God, we find, is a Spirit. He is composed of spirit. He has immortal, everlasting life. He doesn't have physical life that comes from the Earth. He has Spirit-life that is life inherent. He could not be killed; He cannot die; He is everlastingly alive. And even of Christ—who was the Word, made flesh and born of the virgin Mary—we read in Hebrews that He was “*without father, without mother, without descent having neither beginning of days, nor end of life,*” [Hebrews 7:3]; but has ALWAYS existed. And your mind won't conceive of that. Neither does mine, for that matter. We just have to accept it. Life had to always exist. Where did life come from?

Youth 81

There's a good story in the new issue (Just came out... At least I think it just came out yesterday. That's the first I saw of it) of our new magazine for youth. Well, as a matter of fact, *The Plain Truth* and *The Good News* all came out yesterday. At least, they were all delivered to my office yesterday. The new *Good News*, I mean the new Youth 81, (and that will be the last Youth 81, by the way. That doesn't mean we're going to discontinue the magazine either. But the next issue will be called *Youth 82*, and a year later it will be *Youth 83*, and I hope that by *Youth* eighty...during *Youth 82* it will be

ultimately twice as many pages as it is now); but this last issue is much, much better than it was six or seven months ago. It is becoming very, very good; and I'm very well pleased with it. I'm just more than pleased with it, to have a magazine like that for young people!

I remember when I was just a teenager there was a magazine called *Youth Home Companion*; I don't think any of you remember of that—only be some of the real oldest ones of you, if any of you do. It was a little larger magazine. It had been going for some time, and it probably had even a bigger circulation than ours which is just distributed among the youth of our own Church. But it's going to go bigger.

I know the thing just came up recently: in a letter that I was writing to the entire subscription list of *The Plain Truth* (and the entire subscription list runs into about 4 million, it's only—However it's over 2 million just in the United States alone and Canada). And in offering them a booklet, I just mentioned *Youth 81*; and, if they have a youth or a teenager that would like to see a good magazine for young people, “Why don't you write in for a sample copy?” You know the question came up: “Should we offer it to the youth of the world?” And I said “Why not?” Why not? It'll teach them some of the good things that they ought to know. It'll teach even young people and kids something about the Sabbath. It's a most interesting magazine. But it's going to get better and better and bigger and bigger; and I hope that it will become a really big magazine, like *The Plain Truth* is among adults.

Material Soul & The Spirit In Man

But of these Two Trees that were before the first man, now:

Genesis 1:26 God said, *Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: ...*

But He didn't make man of the same immortal spirit that God was

composed of, because God formed man of the dust of the ground as you read in

Genesis 2:7 And breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man [from the dust of the ground] became a living soul.

And so the soul came out of the ground: the soul is material; the soul is not spirit. And yet God did put a spirit in man! The spirit in man works with the brain in man.

Animals have brains, and just as good as human brains. And some of them even larger: elephants and dolphins and whales have larger brains; others slightly smaller, some of the monkey family, the anthropoid ape and so on. But they can't use their brains like a human can because there's no spirit in them—to give them instant recall of knowledge, and to record and file it, and to be like a computer; to keep it recorded and give instant recall, so you can put this and that and the other fact of acquired knowledge together with other facts and in a process we call reasoning and thinking.

Man thinks. At least he thinks he thinks. But do animals really think? They can't think and reason like we do, come to conclusions and make decisions, think creatively, plan. God has given us a mind like God. Now God has a mind, but **man's mind is limited in a way that God's mind is not**. Now I'm going back to this original teaching again, but every time God may give me another little part of this story that I didn't get over to you before. For example, a part of what God has given man is to comprehend things that animals cannot. Now man has a mind that can acquire knowledge of the physical and the material, things that he can see. Now he can only see matter.

Matter can be present in three forms: (1) the solid form—like wood, like stone, iron or ice; (2) the liquid form—like water; (3) the gaseous form—like air. Water below 32 degrees Fahrenheit becomes solid, ice. Above 212

degrees Fahrenheit it evaporates and becomes vapor or air, a gaseous form. And so the Earth even includes all the Earth's atmosphere, up including the clouds. That's part of the Earth. The Bible speaks about "on the Earth" and "in the Earth" and uses such terms. We sometimes don't realize that the Bible really does distinguish on those things.

Man Limited To Physical Knowledge

But of those Two Trees before Adam, now he was only given a **temporary existence**. He did not have immortal life. But he was made like God; and he had a mind like God, but not as good as God's. His mind was limited to what he could see, or hear through his ear, or taste, or smell through his nose, or through the sense of feel and touch. Now, you can't see spirit. You can't feel it. You can't hear it. You can't taste it or smell it. So man was not able to learn anything about spirit. Man was limited to physical knowledge. That's why man has been able to accomplish AWESOME things in progress dealing with matter. And even then, it has taken him 6,000 years to do it.

And most of the great progress in even physical, material areas has been in this twentieth century, since many of us were born. And I was born before this century, eight years before this century even started. I very well remember the midnight when the old century passed out and the new one came in and I was sitting in a Methodist Church and they kept me awake. It was the church that my Grandpa and Grandfather belonged to. They were having a watch-night service to see the old century out and the new century in. I couldn't see any sense to that century in and out. I was seven and a half years old; and I wanted to doze off and go to sleep, and my father would shake me and wake me up, or he would thump me right beside the ear to keep me awake, and I didn't see any sense in that at all. But finally midnight came, and I was able to let them take me home and put me to bed. But I do

remember it very well. I don't think very many of you here remember that because you've all been born in this century; I mean, most of you have, certainly.

Knowledge Stored In Spirit Of Man

But now, here was Adam with a temporary existence; with a mind limited to the physical and the material. A mind that could ACQUIRE, BY ITSELF, physical and material knowledge, with a SPIRIT IN MAN that could STORE-UP that knowledge in the form of memory, could, like a computer, (which we didn't understand until the last fifteen or twenty years, before we even knew anything about such things, when the computer was invented) which would give instant recall of knowledge out of millions and millions of pieces of knowledge that were stored up there – we think in the brain, but they're actually stored up in the spirit. But very few people know that.

The Two Trees

But man was not given immortal life. He was only given a **temporary existence**. But God OFFERED him **life**. So one of the two trees was the Tree of Life. Those two trees—the other tree was really the way of death. It was called the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil; but that kind of knowledge alone, without the other kind of spiritual knowledge which could be revealed, would result in death. So it also was the Tree of Death.

Now the Tree of Life was also a tree of knowledge. So each was a tree of knowledge. One of revealed spiritual knowledge. The other of self-acquired human knowledge—physical, limited to the physical and material. The one revealed by God, spiritual. One was a Tree of Life, the other a Tree of Death. Very few people have ever understood that. Adam had to make a

decision. The one tree represented the Way of Life, which was the way of righteousness, God's **revealed spiritual law**, the way of **righteousness**. The other represented the way of **sin**. And, brethren, I say to you that today **EVEN SOME OF THE MINISTERS IN THIS CHURCH DON'T KNOW WHAT SIN IS!! IT'S TIME FOR US TO WAKE UP!** I am absolutely astounded that some of us still don't know what sin is!

Now, it all started back there. Christmas has something to do with it. I'll try to explain that as I go along. But one of those trees represented righteousness, a way of life, and the other a way of life that was sin and would result in death. The way of righteousness would result in eternal life; the way of sin would result in death. Is that plain? They were both trees of knowledge. One was life; the other was death. But **even we** in this Church seem not fully to know what sin is.

The Tree of Life was a Way of Life, but it's a way. Humans do not come equipped with instinct like animals. For example, you see a little calf born. In less than two or three minutes, it's on its four legs walking. A human baby born cannot learn to walk until about one year of age. Close to twelve months before, and some even longer than that perhaps. But a little baby calf knows how to walk immediately in the first two or three minutes of its birth, of its life. And it knows where to go. It goes for its dinner; and it knows how to suck milk; and it knows where to find it. A human baby doesn't. A human baby can't take care of itself at all. Someone has to feed it and has to teach it how to suck milk even. You have to take care of everything with a baby until its old enough to be taught how to take care of itself. Eliminative processes. Everything else. That's why we have to have diapers for babies until they're old enough to learn to take care of themselves.

The Tree of Life represented a way, or an attitude of mind. Now humans are not led by instinct. They are led by the mind. And the Tree of Life is a state of mind, or an attitude of mind, that leads to an action that is

the Way of Life—the way of righteousness. Now it all originates in the attitude of mind. It finally conceives into an action, which is sin. James will tell you what sin is. When you're tempted, and if you retain the thought and the temptation, finally it turns into the action that finally is sin. But it starts first in the mental attitude, or the mind, which decides what to do. Now, the **way of righteousness** is one way, and the other way is **sin**; and we need to learn the difference between those two ways in a way we don't seem to understand even yet.

It's an attitude of mind and heart, and it is the attitude of out-flowing love. Now let me say this. The law of God can be expressed in one word only—love. But love is never incoming. That is not love. That is lust. Love is always flowing out, toward God first of all. That's more important than toward neighbor, but also toward your fellow man. That is the very essence of righteousness and sin. It is an attitude of mind that leads to an action. Now let's get that straight because it seems that we haven't gotten it straight yet. And it's out-flowing love, first of all to God, that is more important—but the world doesn't think that's of any importance.

Now the world started off with Adam; and he chose the way of get, the way of vanity and of self. Now I explained self a while ago. It includes everything you call **self**. But it's self in self-love.: “I love me, I don't care about you. I'm, well, I'm bigger than you are.” “My old man can lick your old man.” You ever hear a young kid say that? “My old man's bigger than yours.” Well it's **mine**! It's part of self—his old man—isn't it? (I hope we teach our kids to not call their fathers “old man.” You ever think about that? You ever teach your children?)

Principle Of What Sin Is

So the way of love toward God is exalting God. The way of self exalts

self; and that is vanity, and **vanity is SIN!** I'm getting down to the root **PRINCIPLE** of sin. **WHAT IS SIN? IT'S ALL IN ONE WORD!**

Now, we've had too many men and **MINISTERS** in this Church; they've gone through Ambassador College. I guess it's all my fault, brethren. I should have taught all of the students better in the first year of College. I couldn't think of all of these things. I haven't done a perfect job. I'm just an ordinary human being. I felt, when I was converted, I was a burned out hunk of human junk not worthy to be thrown on a junk pile. But I learned that giving is better than getting, and that that's God's way. And I gave myself to Jesus Christ who bought and paid for me. I told Him I couldn't see what He could ever do with me and how He could ever use me; but, if He could, I would give myself to Him.

I've tried to do that, and I have not done it perfectly. I haven't given myself to Him perfectly. I've retained a little bit of self along the way, I'm ashamed to say. But I will say this: So have you, every one of you. Not one of you can say you haven't. So we've all done that. *"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God"*—every one of us! Oh, yes, I'm a sinner saved by grace the same as everybody else. So actually it gets down to the **attitude**. And the attitude **is** that you really want to give yourself to God. You want to serve Him. You want to give rather than get, **GIVE** yourself to Him. And that was my attitude, and I haven't changed that as a basic attitude.

There were already many habits that had developed that I didn't overcome right away. Some of them I overcame right away. Others took a little longer. Perhaps some of them haven't been totally overcome yet! I hope that before I die, that I shall have overcome every habit. I can only do that through the help, the grace and the power of the Living God. Of myself, alone, I cannot do it. Of yourself, alone, you cannot do it. But we can **WILL** to do the right thing; we can **PRAY** to God and, in enough prayer and enough submission and enough keeping in constant contact with God, He will put

His Spirit in us and, through His Spirit, He will make us righteous. And we can't do it by ourselves. We need to get into this sin question. Actually, in Hebrews, we learn that we shouldn't have to begin back at these elementary things.

Responsibility To Teach Our Children

I said, I think last Sabbath, when a child is born we neglect our child usually. Have you neglected yours, you parents? You that are going to be parents and that are now in College, you'd better be thinking about this thing. When you're married and you begin to have children, you're taking on quite a responsibility. Most people think, well, with children, are just... In other words, well, I want to get. We just want to enjoy. We want to have. We want to enjoy children. Why do people want children? Not because they want the responsibility of taking care of them, but because they want whatever they get from that child—the love, the affection. A lot of things you get from a little child.

But you have to give, and there's a great responsibility that accompanies it. So the average family neglects the teaching of their child until he's seven years old; and then they send him to school, and let the schools teach him. And what do the schools teach? Just whatever is come from the way of Adam, only materialistic and physical knowledge, the way of get as against the way of give; and they don't know of any other way. "*The way of righteousness they know not.*" And they don't teach the way of righteousness in first grade, second grade, third grade in school; or in high school, or in college, or in universities. They don't know anything about it.

Education In This World Is Physical

Now, Adam chose one way—self acquired knowledge, which is

materialistic knowledge. Finally, in this twentieth century, we've come to the place where many great awesome accomplishments have been made. But, on the other hand, look at the other side of the story. Look at the **APPALLING EVILS** in the world today. One half of the world is hungry, ill fed, living in filth and squalor, poverty-stricken. One half of the world is ignorant, illiterate; and they can't even read and write without education. And what is education? **EDUCATION IN THIS WORLD IS PHYSICAL**, materialistic education; and it doesn't tell you **HOW TO LIVE**. And it doesn't teach you what is sin. Most people think sin is doing what you think is wrong. And of your own mind you will never realize what is wrong and what is right, because you don't think like God does.

God Is Not Calling The World Now

God's Law is the Way of Love. I'm coming to that a little more as I go along. But this world started with Adam. Adam chose the way of get. He chose the way of self. He chose the way of vanity, exalting the self. He debased God. He says, "God, get out of my life. I don't want a relationship with you!" So God shut up the Tree of Life; and it was shut up until the second Adam, Christ, came. And Christ has opened it to the few that are called, just in the Church. And to all of the others Jesus said, "*No man can come to Me except the Father which sent me draws him.*" (John 6:44) God isn't calling the world to salvation even yet!

It isn't true that all, whosoever will, may come. That is NOT true. You know, that occurs in the Bible in one place; and that's over in the last book of your Bible—after the Millennium, after Judgment, after the Day of Judgment, after judgment has come to the world. It hasn't come to the world yet! It is not true now that "whosoever will" may come to Christ. They cannot.

Now, the world doesn't know that. The churches in the world don't

know that. The Methodist Church doesn't know it; the Roman Catholic Church doesn't know it; the Baptists don't know it; the Church of Christ doesn't know it; the Pentecostal people don't know it. They just know how to yell, "Glory, hallelujah! I'm better than you are; and when you get the spirit, like I got it, then you'll be as good as I am. **I exalt me!** I debase you!" And that is not the Holy Spirit, brethren. It just isn't.

The Forbidden Fruit

But Adam chose the way of get, the way of vanity. I love me. And that's the way the world started out. And the world started acquiring knowledge on that way, and from that attitude of life, and knowledge about material things and how to deal with matter, with the things of the ground and the things that come out of the ground.

Love to God is to exalt **God** (not yourself). And love, first of all, is to God, and secondly to neighbor. That is the law of God, and sin is the transgression of that law. Now what is the world that we must come out of? God tells us to come out of the world and be separate; and we're a separate people altogether. What developed from the forbidden fruit that Adam took? This world is what developed. This world developed.

Now, what is the world and what developed? And along in the world they developed this thing of merrymaking at Christmas time, but it has no meaning whatsoever when you get down to it; no meaning that is going to mean anything immortal or eternal to you, or that is everlasting. It's just merrymaking for this night. Wake up with a headache tomorrow morning—maybe in jail, if you're caught with drunk driving. And that's all the world knows. But just what do we mean? If you'll notice now

1 John 2:15-16 Love not the world [That's the teaching of the New Testament that God tells us, and we have to come out of this world and be

separate. Love not the world], *neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. (16) For all that is in the world...*

What is worldliness? What is in the world? What is it? What is the way the world has gone?

1 John 2:16 ...the lust of the flesh...

That is, desires of the flesh, to have things to please the different senses—the sense of sight; the sense of feel, sex; the sense of the exhilaration that you get from alcohol or you get high on drugs. Lust of the flesh, what is it? Even the taste of food. Many foods that taste good are bad for your health, and people wonder why their health is not good. They don't think about eating food that's good for their health and will keep their minds clear and their bodies in good shape. They only think of what tastes good to the palate, lust of the flesh. Brethren, I tell you, we're just simply LOADED with that; and we don't realize it.

1 John 2:16 All that is in the world, lust of the flesh...

That is, desires. Just selfish, self-centered desires of your own flesh, of the five senses. The sense of hearing. Now there's good music and bad music. And Satan has got bad music going and got all of the younger generation today on bad music. Rock and pure rock, like it's finally come, is having a very bad effect on the mind and the spirit.

[**Tape turned over, and part missing at 44:11]

It pleases them, so they want to do it. They just want to go the way that seems to please the woman.

1 John 2:16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes [what looks pretty to the eyes], and the pride of life [vanity]...

Make Up

We've have been saying something recently about make-up for women. And women just cannot see it seems... Many of them have not been able to. Well I tell you, I've learned one thing—the women of this Church (I'm just amazed and so thankful to God) it seems that we've not had a problem in this Church here. Women responded immediately as soon they found that we're trying to get back on the track in that regard.

But you tell me any reason that anyone wants to use makeup. Men don't seem to need to want to use it except in certain rare occasions, like certain men on television or on the stage. But, in general, men don't use it or even think about it. Why do women do it? They think it makes them more pretty. Lust of the eyes, because they like to see themselves in the mirror, and they think other people are going to think they look more beautiful than God made them. VANITY, pure and simple! Wanting to be like the world; because the world does it; and they want to go along. TELL ME ANY OTHER REASON and I'll begin to consider it.

Of course if someone's going to say "Well, Mr. Armstrong, I, you know, I don't do it to look more pretty-pretty. I just, I'm doing it for righteous reasons!" Don't kid yourself, please, because you'll never get into the Kingdom of God doing that. You just won't get into the Kingdom of God. Now this thing, it all has to do with an **ATTITUDE!** SIN IS THE TRANSGRESSION OF, THE WRONG ATTITUDE of, love toward God (exalting God instead of the person; it means humbling the self and exalting God). A woman paints up to exalt herself. Don't tell me she doesn't. She does it because she struggles; she wants to be like the world; she wants to go along. Sheep instinct!

I don't need to say that to you people here. I think you already know it. I have heard of not one example of criticism of our women in this Church, let

me say that. I'm not criticizing you people here at all. But I'm telling the way it is in general. And it has been that way in a case of the few women in a few other Churches, not in general. As a matter of fact, in the Churches of God all over the world as a whole, we've had no problem on this issue whatsoever. But there is a problem in one or two cases—one or two women, even one or two ministers—that are going to have to be dealt with; and God Almighty is going to deal with them, believe you me! But now, now get this:

1 John 2:16-17 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life [vanity], is not of the Father, but is of the world. (17) And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: ...

And the paint on a woman's face is going to pass away. It isn't going to last. You'll never get into God's Kingdom with it. No one in God's Kingdom's going to have to paint a face. I'll tell you why. Your face is going to shine like the very sun. Why dull it with a lot of paint? No, they won't do it. No one's going to want to!

1 John 2:17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth...

It gets down to doing, but it starts with **an attitude of mind** that inspires the doing; and then you act on it. We have to think, and we have to act according to the thinking. And the mind must direct what we do, our actions. And sin is when that action, that thought, conceives into a wrong action. I'm trying to get down to the biblical definition of sin and just what is sin. It is a spiritual thing.

1 John 2:17-19 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever. [I might read a little more right here.] (18) Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come [Now it says "the last time." We're in the last days now. We're in the very last days.], even now are there many antichrists [Why the

world's full of them! All of false religions.] *whereby we know that it is the last time. (19) They went out from us...*

Now, many **went out** on this very question of “What is sin?” Not necessarily just on make-up alone (that's only one), but on the whole thing in general. It just threatened to split up the Church back in 1974, and a liberalism that was coming in to God's Church.

1 John 2:19 They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been OF us, they would no doubt have continued WITH US.

I can't understand why some that I love so much have gone out from us. And I have to read this and say, “Well, they just probably were not really with us, or they wouldn't have gone out.” That's what God said. Can I say. “Well, God. You're wrong! That's not true”? Well, God says (He says here in plain language):

1 John 2:19 [Therefore] if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us [“altogether of us”—They just were not!].

What Is Sin?

Now what is sin? Isn't it funny that the world doesn't know? I've said this before and I want to say it once again and just even if I do repeat, we need to. Well, repetition is the strongest form of emphasis and sometimes some of these things need to be emphasized a little so we remember them, or we will seem to forget so easily.

I was in Springfield, Oregon. Now, that's a little town that just adjoins Eugene, Oregon. And I believe it's across the river. Anyway, it just adjoins Eugene. I'd gone over to see someone that had asked a question for a Bible Study or something. At that time there was an evangelist from Los Angeles

that drove with certain cars. They bought second-hand Cadillacs, I believe they were. They had painted in Old-English type that looked religious, you know. Made it look ‘churchified’ and religious, certain things that either were scriptures, or looked like it was scriptures, looked very religious. He had a tent pitched there in Springfield, and he was trying to get men to come to his meeting.

He had about five or six young men of college age. I’d say 21 or 22 years of age. Each one of them had a Bible. They were going by on the street and accosting everyone on the street. One of them accosted me and stopped me and wanted me to come to the meeting that night.

I said “Well,” I said, “does your minister preach repentance from sin?”

“Oh, yes, sir. Yes, sir!” he said.

“Uh huh. Well, what does it mean? What do you repent of? What is it you quit doing? What is sin?”

“Well, Christ died for our sins.”

I said, “Well, yes. I know that. I’ve heard that before. But” I said, “I want a definition. Is there somewhere in the Bible that says ‘Sin is...’ and then, just like a dictionary, gives you the definition of what it is?”

“Well,” he says, “Christ died for our sins.”

“Well,” I said, “that’s not giving me the definition.”

Well, a crowd began to gather around us. And pretty soon another one of the young fellows, a half a block away, he came running over. He couldn’t give me an answer. And then another one came, and he couldn’t give an answer; and he ran and brought the evangelist himself there. And I said to the evangelist “I won’t come to your meeting unless you know what it is—what sin is, and what I have to quit doing. WHAT IS SIN? What have I got to

repent of? What have I got to turn away from? I want a Bible definition. Now,” I said, “Mister, I know that you know; and I don’t think you want to tell me!” He just got angry and turned and told all of his men to “Come on away from this man!”

By this time there was quite a crowd around there, and they all laughed. I said, “Well.” I said, “He wouldn’t give me the Bible definition.” I knew that he knew, but he wouldn’t tell me because he doesn’t believe it! He preaches just the opposite from what the Bible says. I said, “Would you like to know what the Bible says?” “Oh, yes.” they said they would. “Well,” I said, “you know I just happen to have a Bible here with me in my briefcase!” [Audience laughs.] So I got out the Bible, and I turned to I John 3:4.

1 John 3:4 Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

He said, “Christ nailed the law to the cross, so you don’t have to obey the law.” “So Christ did away with sin?” I said. That’s why that man wouldn’t answer me. And they all looked. Well, that man didn’t have a very big crowd that night because it spread all over the town. And people just didn’t go to see him. But I just showed them right there in the Bible. And they said “Well, when someone knows what’s in the Bible” I said, “Those fellows, they start to run don’t they?” Well, he certainly did. He certainly did.

What is sin? Sin is the way Adam chose, and he rejected the law of God and the whole Law of God It is an attitude of mind that goes into the action, following that attitude, and doing the wrong way. It is a way of life; it is self; it is vanity; it is the way of get. “I love me, but I want to have and I want to acquire and I want to exalt myself. I want to glorify myself.” Or a woman says “I want to make myself more beautiful than God did.” Or “I want to look good in right, in the sense of others.” Or maybe “I don’t want to appear better than others.”

You know, it's a funny thing. I know a man that I knew very, very well many, many years ago. And, you know, I'd never heard him swear or say anything like that in my life; and I had known him for many, many years. One Sunday I was over his place, and he was doing his own work on his car. He had a lot of things apart on the car and was doing his own mechanical work. A couple of other neighbors came by, and they started using slang and profanity. And this man, for the first time in my life, I heard him use profanity. He was ashamed not to use it. He knew that I stood for God's way and that that was, well, very unpleasant to me; but he did not want to have those fellows think he was better than they were.

It's just the same thing as some people say, "Well, I'm no angel!" They **brag** about it! See, they want the world to think, "Well, I'm just as bad as you are!" What gets into people—that is human nature—that "I want the world to think I'm like they are"? And this man began swearing a blue streak, and I never heard him swear before in my life! He was ashamed not to in front of the other guys, who did use profanity. Why is it that some people will brag about how evil they are? But you don't hear any of these teenagers, growing up, brag about how they are righteous and that they don't do those things in front of other kids. They just don't do it.

Physical Sin – Spiritual Sin

Now, talking about this thing of sin: There is both physical sin and spiritual sin. Many, even of our MINISTERS, don't seem to understand that! And many people in the CHURCH don't seem to understand that. The penalty of physical sin is physical sickness or debility of some kind, and pain and suffering that is physical. Now, physical sin is transgressing the **law** that normally would operate in a body that God started functioning and working. He started you breathing from your first breath, when you were born. You keep on breathing, and your heart's been pumping ever since. Your heart has

not missed. It might miss a half a beat or a beat once in a while, but it goes right on. You've never missed very many, or you wouldn't still be here today.

There is a law that works in your body. There are a number of systems in the body—the digestive system; the eliminative system; the nervous system (many different systems in the human body); and God devised them all and designed them. It's a marvelous mechanism. No machine that man ever designed and made is as marvelous. But something could go wrong with them.

It isn't always that **you** have committed a sin. You haven't always done it intentionally, and maybe you didn't know it. Or maybe you caught a germ that brought a transgression of the physical laws of your body. Maybe it was a contagious something from someone else. It might have been in the water you drink. I think that's what happened to me when I was nineteen years old, and I had typhoid fever. The only time in my life I ever went to a hospital. But it is a physical sin, and the penalty is physical suffering. And, of course, it could result finally in this physical death too—or the cessation of this physical existence.

Now there is spiritual sin. And the penalty of spiritual sin is not the first death even, but **the second death**. The first death—

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die...

I Corinthians 15:22 For as in Adam ALL DIE [Not because of your own sin, but “as in Adam” all die.], so in Christ shall all be made alive [by a resurrection].”

But that's speaking of the Great White Throne Judgment resurrection. The penalty of physical sin is physical suffering. It's a physical penalty. The penalty of spiritual sin is death—or the loss of spiritual life. Now you don't have spiritual life; and the penalty is that you will die, even the second time,

because you finally will just expire. But most people think of sin in the spiritual sense. So, it is the **transgression of the spiritual law** of God that we think of sin. I'm thinking of it from a spiritual point of view. Now **spiritual sin** is the violation of the PRINCIPLE. I want you to get this, brethren. We have never seemed to get it!

I tried to bring it out in the article. I believe it's come out now in *The Worldwide News*. **The principle** of love, of out-flowing love, first to God and then to neighbor! A woman, for example, who exalts herself—the lust of the eyes and what she sees in the mirror, and what she thinks others are going to see, and the desire to be like the world and to go along with the world. That is spiritual SIN! S-I-N. AND THE PENALTY IS ETERNAL DEATH—THE SECOND DEATH. Did I say that loud enough so you got it? I hope I did.

The spiritual law is applied by the principle of the law. Not by so many laws that said this specific thing is wrong, that specific thing is wrong. Now there again, they want to say, “Well...” They want to look at a specific law. I explained, in the article that I wrote, that every policeman is required to enforce six times as many laws—specific laws of do's and don'ts—as he's able to even memorize and keep in his mind. Man's law gets down to every little detail.

I mentioned that I was reminded of the cartoon of many years ago, “There Ought To Be A Law.” And every day someone would come out with “There ought to be a law about this.” Or they'd make another law for every little specific thing. No. God gets His one general word, **love**; and from there on He goes on, and you apply the principle. You apply that principle of sin.

Letter Of Law Vs Spirit Of Law

Now I want you to notice in Romans 7:14. Well now, I think I have that marked in my Bible. Maybe I didn't? Romans 7:14. Anyway, it says (I won't

turn to it), ”*The law is spiritual.*” I’m talking about the spiritual law when we talk about spiritual **sin**. The law is spiritual.

Now it is II Corinthians. I’d like to go to that for just a moment. Now here I finally find I have it here. “*The law is spiritual.*” But II Corinthians... (I thought I had a marker for that, and I guess I didn’t. So it takes a little longer to turn to it, if I don’t have it already marked.) II Corinthians, chapter 3 and beginning with verse 1, where Paul says:

II Corinthians 3:1-3 Do we begin again to commend ourselves? Or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you [That is, recommendations or some certificate or something of the kind.], or letters of commendation from you?(2) Ye are our epistle, written in our hearts, known and read of all men: (3) Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink [Now, notice it’s not by the letter written in ink, by a certain word.], but with the Spirit of the living God [This is the Spirit—getting down to the really, the principle of the thing involved.]; not in tables of stone [where every little detail was written out]...

And the “tables of stone” there referred to the tables that were written on stones. Not the Ten Commandments written on the two carved tables of stone, but written on whole stones—the physical laws, the ritual laws of ancient Israel, if you’d turn back to it and read it.

II Corinthians 3:3-8 ... but in fleshy tables of the heart (4) And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: (5) Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God; (6) Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, [not of the letter] but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit [maketh alive]. (7) But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones [on whole stones] was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance;

*which glory was to be done away: (8) How shall not the ministration of the spirit be **rather** glorious?*

And so we come to the ministration of the spirit. In other words, we go by the spirit of the law instead of the letter of the law. I want to explain that.

Now I had an example of that, and I've used it time and again. Many of you have heard this two or three times maybe, and some of you have not heard it all before. But when my daughters were in junior high, (or it might have been about eighth grade, I don't know), my elder daughter, Beverly, was inclined to read a great deal; and she was reading a lot of fiction books. And I received a letter from her teacher that she was reading so much fiction. She'd read late at night, read a whole book through. It was hurting her eyes, and her mind also; and was interfering with her schoolwork. So she was getting all those books from the school library. And I said, "Beverly, you'll just have to quit taking any more of those books home from the library. I don't want you to read them; and all this reading is hurting your eyes, and it's hurting you. You've got to stop reading so much."

"Yes Daddy."

Well, she was the daughter that my wife used to always say didn't need punishment. That you could just reason with her. So she didn't get any punishment for it. But the very next day, in the evening, I noticed her reading a book! I looked, and she was halfway through that book already!

I said, "Is this another book of fiction?"

"Well, yes Daddy."

"Well, I thought I told you not to read anymore of these books, Beverly."

"Well, but Daddy, you said 'Don't bring any more books home from the

library.’ I didn’t get this book at the library. I borrowed this book from Helen. That makes it alright.”

She was going by the letter of the law—not the spirit. The spirit is the obvious meaning and intent, the principle involved. You get the idea?

Smoking

When I was first converted, in the spring of 1927 (I don’t think any of you were converted prior to that time. Maybe some were. Some may have been, but I doubt it. That are here), I began to think “Is smoking wrong?”

Now, at that time, women didn’t smoke yet. Today women have a harder time getting rid of smoking than men, but at that time women hadn’t started it yet. They hadn’t started the advertising campaign. First they started the advertising with women right with a man who was smoking, and the woman would begin to say she enjoyed that second-hand smoke. She seemed to approve of him smoking it. And they get a little later, you know, and they show a woman just taking one puff of his cigarette; and she enjoyed it. And then the first thing you know they were having pictures of women smoking, and all the women began to do it. That’s how subtly the advertising men changed the habits of women and led them into something that is, again, harmful to their bodies, harmful to their minds. That’s the way of the world, leading you into it.

Well, I began to say, “What is the principle? Does the Bible say, ‘Thou shalt not smoke’?” Now we’ve had ministers in the Church, they’ve gone out from among us now. They’ve said, “Well, if the Bible doesn’t say ‘Thou shalt not smoke’, then it’s alright. But they apply the same principle to makeup, for example. “The Bible must say specifically ‘Thou shalt not use makeup’—that makeup is a sin!” The Bible isn’t going to say anything of the sort.

It doesn't say anything about smoking. I said, "Why do I do it? What is the principle?" WHAT IS THE PRINCIPLE OF GOD'S LAW? IT'S LOVE TOWARD GOD AND LOVE TOWARD NEIGHBOR. IT'S AWAY FROM SELF. It is loving God; and you have love toward neighbor, or concern for the neighbor's welfare.

Now, do I smoke to please God? No, I don't. Do I smoke to please other people? No, I don't. I do it because of habit; and other people do, and I want to be like them! Maybe some people enjoy smoke second-hand, but a lot of others don't. What about **self**? You love your neighbor as yourself. You want to love yourself enough to take care of this self. It's the temple of the Holy Spirit. God says, "Do ye not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit?" And the Spirit of God dwells in you. And we must take care of it. That's why we love ourselves even, in the righteous manner.

And, well, I didn't know that it would bring on lung-cancer. I don't think anybody knew it back in 1927. But I did know something of the function of the lungs, and I knew that smoke going into the lungs is harmful. Now some might say, "But I don't inhale." But you still get some of it in the lungs, and I did inhale. I didn't smoke very much. I averaged three cigarettes, not three packs, a day—just only three little cigarettes. So I didn't have any problem in quitting, but I had to decide what to do. So I quit smoking.

And that's why there's no smoking in the Church. God put it in the Church through me in that manner. I applied the PRINCIPLE OF THE LAW OF GOD. That's the way we decide WHAT IS SIN? But some people want to say, "Well, isn't it alright, isn't it OK, under this circumstance? Can't we get away with it? How close can we go to Satan's way? Isn't Satan's way better after all than God's way?"

Now painting your face is Satan's way, brethren. No getting around it. Don't tell me it's God's Way. God never told anyone to do it. You think

Satan's way is better? (Well, I'm wasting my breath on this Church because you don't need that here; but most Churches do. And I, I want you to get the principle just the same.)

Jesus magnified the Law. The Law is a principle. You don't have to get down to every specific thing. You know the principle of law and apply it to the circumstance. Now let's take one example that Jesus had, back in The Beatitudes.

***Matthew 5:17** Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.*

“The law and the prophets” meant the Old Testament writings. To verse 21, now He takes the literal law. Under the old covenant they were under THE LETTER OF THE LAW; but they had these specific things to do morning, noon and night that were only a temporary substitute for the Holy Spirit. Today we have the Holy Spirit, and we don't need the substitute. So that law of physical things is done away, but the spiritual law is not. Now He said:

***Matthew 5:21-22** Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill [Now that's one of the spiritual laws.]; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: [Now notice how Christ magnified that law—how He applied the PRINCIPLE, not just the letter] (22) But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment...*

He magnified the law. It went a lot farther than just the letter of actually killing a man until his life had stopped. It went a lot farther. Now in verse 27:

***Matthew 5:27-28** Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time [Going back when they had the letter of the law.], Thou shalt not commit adultery [Unless you're caught in the very act, then it wasn't adultery; but*

look how He applied the principle]; (28) *But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.*

He magnified that law and expanded the principle. You don't have to get down to the literal letter. And people want to get to the letter; and if they can't get a single simple letter, they say, "Well, then it's okay." Well, would you rather go Satan's way? Do you think that's the better way to live for all eternity? Satan's going to live with it for all eternity; and he's the most unhappy, uncomfortable, mixed-up mind in all the universe.

Majoring In The Minors

Let's see how time is going. I don't have enough time for a lot of the things that I wanted to say. But I'd like to read something that Mr. Dean Blackwell gave me just a day or so ago, on "Majoring in the Minors." He said,

This term began to be used about the time of the 1973-74 blow-up in the Church. Apparently it was a reaction to yardstick-religion which had prevailed in the skirt length, hair length, bell-bottom jeans, music controversies, and Talmudic approach to drawing a line, or spelling it out in these issues. [That is, getting down to every little detail of the "you can" and "you can't" and getting every shade of meaning.] *But, true to human habit some went into the ditch on the other side from the previous ditch on the ultra-legalism. "Majoring in the minors" began to be used to refer to those in the so-called 'Old School'[which meant my teaching, on which the Church was founded, that God used to build this Church] who were strict about birthday...*

Now, I found in the Bible that God's people did not observe birthdays, but the world did. And the Bible gives us an example to follow. So I set in the

Church that we do not observe birthdays. Now we don't have to get down to every little picky thing. It's just a general principle. There is a general rule why the world observes your birthdays and why we don't. We don't observe the birthday of Christ. The Bible nowhere tells us to, or gives us the date of His birth. But it does give us the date of His death, and we celebrate His death! Why? Because His death cleared up our record and wiped our sins clean and reconciled us to God so we can have eternal life. And God wants us to remember that, and remember the price that was paid—that was His death.

...the second and third tithe being an absolute law for all [It is God's way; and, if we want to do God's Will, we will do it. And so it is a doctrine of the Church]; *healing being an absolute promise and law of God ...*

James 5:14-15 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: (15) And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

Is that a definite promise? YES! And yet someone said, "There's no definite promise, so we can go to the **world's** way of doctors and medicines." Brethren, I want to get as far away from Satan as I can get! But we've had ministers in this Church who wanted to get as close to Satan as they could get and as far away from God as they can get, and still think they're going to kid themselves of getting into the Kingdom of God. You'll never do it in that way.

Healing being an absolute promise [I read that] *of God... without trust in doctors, except in limited areas; children staying totally out of Christmas artwork and activities; makeup, etcetera; the knowledge about identity of Israel was not the key to understanding Bible prophecy*

They wanted... In other words, there was there for a while ministers who wanted to do away with every booklet that I wrote, that established this

Church, that BUILT this Church on a solid foundation! They wanted to knock out that solid foundation, and put a foundation of sand under the Church, and destroy the Church. Now most of them went out in 1974, and they haven't been in the Church since. There's been a liberal movement in the Church even since that, and we've been getting away from that and back onto the track since.

You were “majoring in the minors” if you spoke on health foods; prohibited anything to do with birthday parties; insisted on modest apparel among the women [You mean, instead of extra-ordinary Hollywood stuff that is unseemly?] *and no long hair among the boys or men...*

The Bible says:

1 Corinthians 11:14 Doth not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair...?

So it is A DOCTRINE OF THIS CHURCH THAT OUR MEN MUST NOT HAVE LONG HAIR. Do I have to SPELL IT OUT? Or do we want, in our hearts, to have the spirit of wanting to obey God? Do we want to “Oh No, God, I, I, I don't want to go any further than have to!” Well, I want to read one or two scriptures in closing. (I'm going to have to close. I won't have a chance to go on as far as I wanted to.) They want to partially obey God. You turn back here to I Kings 11:6 about King Solomon, the son of David.

1 Kings 11:6 And Solomon did evil in the sight of the LORD, and went not fully after the LORD, as did David his father.

David went FULLY after the Eternal! Today they say, “Well, I don't want to go fully after God's Way. I just want to go as far as I have to!” Brethren, God's way is to go wholly after God's way spiritually. It's an **attitude**. Where is your attitude? What do you really want in your heart?

Now then, God says in Revelation 18:4 **to us**, “Come out of Babylon.”

That's this world and this world's religion.

Revelation 18:4 ...*Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.*

I don't want to see you people be partakers of the plagues that God is going to visit on Babylon because of her sins, if you get into them. Now then, here's what God tells me. God says to you, "Come out of Babylon!" What does He say to me and to our preachers?

Isaiah 58:1 **Cry aloud**, *spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet*, [Why should I lift up my voice now and then, brethren? I do.] **and shew my people** [God says, **their sins** or] *their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins.*

And we are the house of Jacob, and we have found that out.

I wanted to read a letter that I have received from a lady in South Africa; but there isn't time, so I will close it with that. I received a very nice letter from a lady in South Africa, and how her mind was opened; and she sees that it is the right way, the spirit of wanting to please God and do the things that are pleasing to Him.

Some say "Well, but, what is a husband going to think? If an unconverted husband, we have to consider what he thinks. Maybe the wife should wear makeup if he wants her to." I can't understand why any man would want his wife to wear make up, but some do. I don't understand it, I never did. I never did. I don't see how paint on a face makes that face any more beautiful. And when I kiss, I don't want to kiss a lot of paint or lipstick, either one. I just don't.

Brethren, I want to keep getting back on the track, and getting to God's way, and realize that sin is the attitude of wanting to please God. And what about... I have a letter here. I'd like to have read it. What about teenage girls

coming to Church? Should we put them out because they have a little lipstick on? “We must think of them! What about them?” But we mustn’t think about God, and what does He think! Oh no. We mustn’t think about that, must we? Let’s think about what concerns God and Christ, and what does He think about it.

I put my daughter out of Church when she came with lipstick on one day, years ago. I tried to set you an example, brethren. I’ve tried to set an example. I say again, “*Be ye followers of me, even as I follow Christ.*” They always want to consider the unconverted husband, the unconverted child. Let’s rear a child up in the way he ought to go, and when he’s old he won’t depart from it. Let’s look at God’s Way. Too many ministers are only concerned about “What will people say?” and “I don’t want to offend people.” They don’t think about “What does God say?” and “We don’t want to offend God.” Let’s look at what God says about it and go His way. Are you with me? I think you are, brethren.

Thank you very much.

Passover Examination

Sermon (March 4, 1982)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Passover Examination.....	1044	Part And Lot.....	1060
We Must Examine Ourselves.....	1045	Real Repentance, A Death.....	1061
Sickness And Physical Sin.....	1046	The Great False Church.....	1062
Does Christ's Blood Save You.....	1047	Peter, Or The Title "Pater".....	1063
We Must Repent.....	1049	This Way.....	1063
Repent, To Receive The Holy Spirit.....	1050	The God Family.....	1064
God's Spirit Needed To Understand.....	1052	Paul's Conversion.....	1065
The Spirit In Man.....	1053	Suffering For Christ's Sake.....	1067
Animal Brain.....	1053	The Conversion Experience.....	1067
How Knowledge Comes.....	1053	Mr. Armstrong's Conversion.....	1068
Taught By Christ Via An Apostle.....	1054	Breaking Our Will.....	1072
Repent, Believe, And Be Baptized.....	1055	King David's Experience.....	1072
Some Have Not Changed Direction.....	1056	All Have Sinned.....	1074
What 'to Repent' Means.....	1057	In Agreement With God.....	1075
Even Some Evangelists Don't Get It!.....	1058	Even Christians Sin.....	1076
The Holy Spirit Enables.....	1058	How We Go Astray.....	1077
Even Simon Magus Was Baptized.....	1059	Passover Examination.....	1078

In just two weeks and three days will come the Passover once again. What, after all, is the real meaning of the Passover? We take it every year. I forgot to count the number of years that this will be for me. I think it's about fifty-six at least, maybe fifty-seven. I'll have to count it again. (Probably longer than any of you.) And it seems that we just take it year after year; and, if we're not careful, we'll just take it for granted like so many other things, as routine, without thinking of the meaning of it. But it's one of the most important occasions in our lives. And it comes every year to remind us of the meaning of it every year. And I wonder: Are we all really **ready** for it? Well, we have two weeks and three days to get ready, if we're not.

We Must Examine Ourselves

I'd like to read to you from I Corinthians 11, beginning with verse 27:

***I Corinthians 11:27** Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread [at the time of the Passover], and drink of the cup of the Lord, UNWORTHILY, shall be guilty of the body and the blood of the Lord.*

Now, “unworthily” doesn’t mean that you are worthy to take it. It’s referring to the manner in which you do it, and the condition in which you are when you do it, as to whether you do it worthily or not. But then it continues:

***I Corinthians 11:28** But let a man EXAMINE himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.*

Now verses 29 on to 30, the next two verses, refer to the meaning of the bread—the broken body of Jesus Christ. You and I have **sinned**. Every one of you has sinned. The trouble is a lot of people don’t stop to really confess and admit that. We seem to take it for granted, we’re just pretty ‘good’. We don’t realize how **unworthy** we really are ourselves. But it’s talking here about both the blood and the body of the Lord. Now, Jesus’ body was broken for us—for our healing. So we read in the next two verses here, the 29th and 30th:

***I Corinthians 11:29-30** For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily [that is, the manner in which you do it], eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, **not discerning the Lord’s body** [which was broken for us, and for our healing when we’re physically sick]. (30)For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.*

Many have had some kind of a sickness or disease that they have died, and they “sleep”. That is the Bible language for the fact that they are dead. It really represents death as being in a type of sleep. When you’re asleep, unless you have a dream, you’re unconscious until you wake up; and even in a

dream you seem to be in some crazy circumstance. You wonder why and how it ever happened, and we dream some very funny and foolish things sometimes.

Sickness And Physical Sin

But Jesus' blood was shed because of our spiritual sins—the transgressions of His spiritual law. ALL sickness and disease is the result of sin, and a lot of you don't realize that. It doesn't always mean that you have deliberately had a wrong attitude or wrong intention, and have deliberately sinned and caused it by your own wrong thoughts, motivations, and actions. It could be an accident. It could be a germ in some water you drank. It could be a contagious disease I suppose, or something of that sort. But nevertheless, it is something that disrupted the natural rhythm of the **laws** of your body.

The body was made to function in a certain way. Sometimes I wonder how the heart keeps on beating so long. I know sometimes, if I turn in my bed in sleeping over on the left side, on the pillow I will hear my heart thumping; and I sometimes have to turn over on the other side to get away from hearing it. And it's strange that that heart just keeps going, going, going.

Now, of course, we have to fuel ourselves with food and water from the ground; and we came from the ground ourselves. But nevertheless, as long as we have the fuel and we breathe the air... We breathe the air automatically, and you don't even think about it when you're sleeping. It just, I guess, the condition of the heart just keeps you automatically breathing. Something does. But it's a remarkable thing.

I often think, when we're flying in the G2 across the ocean, what if something happened that the engine stopped? There's no place to land out there, absolutely no place! Sometimes I think of that funny record that came out several years ago about the, let's see, it was Mrs. Ferguson's Airplane &

Storm Door Company I believe it was. It's just a comic thing. It was a little small plane, a little small prop plane, economy class going to Hawaii. And the captain gave an announcement after they had taken off. "Ladies and gentlemen, this is your captain speaking." (This is not a case where he says, "We have both good news and bad news." It sounded to me like it was mostly bad news, but it was funny.) And he said, "Of course, we believe that what the people want is economy. So, he said, "Now we do have just one little bit of luxury. You people traveling first class have straps to hang on to. The rest of you don't have any straps." Everybody had to stand. There were no seats. And someone then asked the captain... He asked for questions. Someone asked him, "Well, what if we should have to ditch. How long would we remain afloat?" "Oh, well." he said, "Lady, that's hard to tell; but some of them just go down like a rock!" [Audience laughs.]

I have to think: I hope that that engine keeps going just like the human heart does. And yet you don't know what second your heart's going to stop. You just don't know. Did you ever think to be thankful to God that He keeps your heart just going, going, going, and going? And it just goes automatically. You don't have to wind it up or anything, except by eating food and drinking water.

Does Christ's Blood Save You

But the thing is that "**All have sinned** and come short of the glory of God." So there's one thing I'd like to get straight. I often think of this, and I think this is the time of year when we need to be thinking about it. Does the **blood** of Christ alone **save** you? Does that get you into the Kingdom of God?

Now, Catholics and Protestants believe that, if you are "saved", that you go to heaven when you die. Otherwise, I think that Catholics believe you go to purgatory; and after that you'll go to hell, if they don't pray you out of it.

But Protestants believe you go straight to hell (a fire that is burning, burning, burning); and you keep burning forever and ever, but you never burn up. You'll have to go through that torture continuously forever. That'll keep going just like your heart does for a lifetime.

But this heart only pumps for a lifetime. The average age is about seventy. Some of us live about twenty years longer, as I have now; but not many. And no one that we have any record of ever lived the first thousand years. Methuselah lived nine hundred and (What was it?) sixty something. Adam lived nine hundred and thirty years. But they don't live that long any more; and they haven't, not since the time of Abraham, shortly after the Flood.

But they believe that all you have to do is accept Jesus Christ, and the blood of Christ saves you. Now, the blood of Christ **does not save anybody!** You read of that in the fifth chapter of the book of Romans, I don't want to take time to go into that this afternoon. But you will find there that we'll be saved by Christ, but not by His shed blood. And we're **not saved** by the death of Christ. We are **reconciled** to God the Father by the death of Christ. But we are to be **SAVED** by His resurrection—and through our own resurrection, made possible by His resurrection.

Now again, a lot of people think if they're baptized they're saved. And I'm afraid too many of us in this Church have believed that; and that's one thing I hope to correct now, today. "O yes, I'm a baptized member." Well, if you're baptized, that means you're a Christian—you're in the Church? **OH, NO, IT DOES NOT, BRETHERN.** I don't care how many times you've been soused in water (and I don't mean to ridicule the very sacred ordinance of baptism); but for many that's all it is—just a sousing in water. I'd like to read just a few scriptures along that line right now, before we pass on. Mark, the seventh chapter, verses 6 on to 9. Jesus said:

Mark 7:6-9 *This people honoureth me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. (7) Howbeit **in vain** do they worship me [They not only accept Christ, they not only BELIEVE in Christ; but they WORSHIP Him, and they do it **in vain**. “In vain do they worship Me...”], teaching for doctrines the commandments of men {1}. [Let’s see.] (8) For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold to the tradition of men... (9) And he said unto them, Full well do you reject the commandment of God, that you may keep your own tradition.*

I was thinking of another scripture right along that line.

We Must Repent

Notice in Luke 13 now. Luke 13 and verses 3 and 5, Jesus said:

Luke 13:3 *I tell you, Nay: but, except you **REPENT**, you shall all likewise perish.*

Now, He repeated that for emphasis in verse 5.

Luke 13:5 *I tell you NAY: but, except you **REPENT**, you shall all likewise perish.*

Regardless of how many times you’ve been baptized, if **you** have not REPENTED, **you** shall also likewise perish. I was thinking of, and I’d like to turn to that just a moment, it’s in John. Let’s see. In the eight chapter of John, I just happened to turn to it.

John 8:30-31 *As [Jesus] spake these words, many believed on him. [Now here are people that believed on Christ.] (31) Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If you continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed.*

And they began to dispute Him right away. They didn’t believe what He

said. And so later Jesus said:

***John 8:43-45** Why do you not understand my speech? [That is, what I'm saying: "My speech."] Even because ye cannot hear my word. (44)Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there was no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. (45) And because I tell you the truth, you believe me not.*

They believed ON Christ, but they did not BELIEVE Christ. They did not believe what He said. So just accepting Christ, just believing on Christ, doesn't save you. You have to believe what He says, and YOU HAVE TO REPENT. There are the two conditions: One is **repentance**, and the other is **faith**.

Now, Jesus came into Galilee preaching the gospel of the Kingdom of God. You read in Mark, verse one, chapter one, "*The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ.*" Then in verses 14 and 15:

***Mark 1:14-15** Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the GOSPEL [What gospel? "The gospel...] of the kingdom of God, (15) and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: REPENT ye, and believe the gospel.*

Repent and believe. "*And except you **REPENT.***" And I think a lot of people don't fully know what that means. They say, "Oh, I've repented. Yes, I know I've sinned." They haven't really repented, because I think we do not understand what we mean by the word REPENT. Very few seem to understand it.

Repent, To Receive The Holy Spirit

You are not Christ's until you have the Holy Spirit of God, and you cannot have the Holy Spirit of God until you have repented. If you turn now to Romans 8 and verse 9, which you ought to have memorized anyway:

***Romans 8:9** But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man [or woman, either] have not the SPIRIT of Christ, he is none of his.*

Without the Holy Spirit in you; and more than being in you, it must be leading you, and you must be following—must be **led by** the Spirit of God. Because then you will read beginning in verse 11:

***Romans 8:11** But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken [or make immortal] your mortal bodies BY his Spirit that dwelleth in you.*

The Holy Spirit of God is **the impregnation of ETERNAL life**, which you don't have. You were not born with LIFE. You were only born with a chemical temporary existence, just to exist a little while and then die. A lot of people die long before they're seventy years of age. Many people are facing death all of the time; and people come and go. A generation comes, and passes on; and another generation comes along. But notice verse 14^{[2](#)}:

***Romans 8:14** For as many as are LED by the Spirit of God.*

Now, the Holy Spirit of God won't get hold of you and pull you. It won't get behind you and push you. It doesn't force you. It **leads** by opening your mind to understand the Word of God. The Holy Spirit itself does not teach you. It opens your mind to comprehend what IS taught. Jesus came and taught people who didn't understand. They didn't have the Holy Spirit. They didn't understand. Actually, the disciples were with Him three and a half years; and they didn't comprehend and understand what He told them—not all of it, not the spiritual part.

And He said that, when the Holy Spirit came upon them (which it did on the day of Pentecost), then He said that the Spirit of God would remind. And, of course, even the spirit of man too would bring to their remembrance what things He had taught them. Then they would come to understand it, after the Holy Spirit came.

You see it is God who must teach you. And He teaches through Christ, who is the Word of God. And Christ teaches through His apostles and others under them. But it all comes **from God**.

God's Spirit Needed To Understand

When Jesus was here, He said he'd spoken nothing of Himself. He only spoke what the Father told Him to speak. And so all the teaching emanates originally from God Almighty, God the Father—NOT from the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit in you will open your mind to comprehend the spiritual truth, the spiritual knowledge. So you read in I Corinthians 2, and beginning verse 9: "*Eye has not seen nor ear heard,*" that is, "*neither has it entered into the [mind] of man*" [the spiritual truths] "*the things that God has prepared for [us].*" Then the next verse says, the 10th verse, "*But GOD has revealed them unto us.*" See, it comes from God. But He reveals it **by** and **through** His SPIRIT, if you have the Holy Spirit. Otherwise you WILL NOT comprehend the real spiritual Truth.

Now, many people will understand a certain amount of the Bible because there's so much of the Bible that is, well, relating to ordinary materialistic or physical knowledge (as well as the spiritual portion of it). And much of it is history, and they can understand a great deal of the history. But when it comes to the real deeper spiritual teaching, the natural mind of man CANNOT comprehend. It takes the words of the Bible that came from Christ, though, to teach—and not the Spirit. Without the Bible and just having

the Holy Spirit, you will never know any more. It is the Holy Spirit that OPENS THE MIND to comprehend.

The Spirit In Man

Now, it's just like **the spirit in man**. I've talked to you so much about the spirit in man. We're all born with a spirit—a human spirit. But that's quite a different spirit than the Spirit of God. That is, the spirit that is in humans; and I know of no way to designate it than just to call it “a human spirit” because it is not flesh, as we are. But it is IN US who are flesh. It is in our flesh, and it does empower the physical brain with comprehension of materialistic knowledge.

Animal Brain

For example, a cow has a brain just like you do. You can take it apart and look at it. It's composed of the same thing your brain is, formed and shaped just like your brain. Now your brain might be a little bigger. But an elephant's brain is bigger than yours is. And it's just as good as yours, and bigger, and shaped and formed exactly (precisely) like it. And yet even an elephant can't think; can't reason; can't come to comprehend physical knowledge. You stand by an elephant and try to teach the elephant some scientific facts about physics, chemistry, some of the laws of physics, some scientific knowledge; he doesn't know what you're talking about. He can't! His brain won't comprehend it, even though you teach him.

How Knowledge Comes

You see it is **a spirit in us** that causes our brain to comprehend materialistic knowledge. Still that knowledge has to come either through the

eye into the brain; or the brain hears through the ear; or it tastes through the mouth; smells through the nose; and then the nervous [system] through the sense of feel or touch, or through the nerves, knowledge is transmitted. But the spirit itself doesn't transmit any knowledge to you. The knowledge has to come through sight or hearing, smelling, tasting or feeling. No other way knowledge comes into your mind.

Spiritual knowledge comes by teaching from God, but it can't be **COMPREHENDED**, and it can't be **UNDERSTOOD**, except by **THE SPIRIT OF GOD IN YOU**. With the spirit of man—the human spirit—**YOU CAN** understand physical materialistic knowledge (that a dog, a cow, a horse, an elephant cannot understand, cannot comprehend) **IF** you are taught. Still, someone must teach you. And the knowledge must come through the senses of sight, or hearing, or smelling, or tasting, or feeling.

Taught By Christ Via An Apostle

Likewise, the Holy Spirit does not teach you. You must be taught by (from) God—by the Word of God. And Christ is the Word of God. And [that's] the only way we have any knowledge, even the apostles. If I'm an apostle, I can teach you. But where did I get the knowledge? Where did Paul get the knowledge? Where did Peter? James? Andrew? Where did the early apostles get the knowledge? **FROM CHRIST!** Well, I get it from the same Source because Christ is the Word of God **in person**. The Bible is the **SAME** Word of God **in writing**. So, I got it from the Word of God; but I got it in writing. And they got it through the ear, from what they heard, by His teaching. But it all came through Christ. He was the one who taught, not the Holy Spirit. But the Holy Spirit **OPENED THEIR MINDS TO COMPREHEND**.

Brethren, we have not understood that until within the last year. It's a marvelous teaching that God has opened to us within the past year or so, and

I hope that we can all come to understand it. I certainly thank and praise God for giving us that wonderful knowledge.

Repent, Believe, And Be Baptized

Now, the conditions to receiving the Spirit: As Jesus said, **REPENT** ye, and **BELIEVE** the gospel (the message, the truth). And the message comes from God. Believe what He says, in other words. Believe what He says.

Turn now to Acts, the second chapter. On the day of Pentecost, after Christ had ascended to heaven, He had been crucified. He had lived without sin. He **never** sinned. He did not have to repent because He had never sinned. But He paid the price of sin, even though He didn't pay it for Himself. He paid it for you and me. And He took your sins and mine on Himself, and paid the penalty for us.

It's just like God is a great banker, and you owe the bank a lot of money. And Christ is the banker's son. And you can't pay what you owe the bank. But His Son, the son of the banker, pays it for you and says, "Well, I paid that off for you. So you don't have to worry anymore about it. It's all paid." That is, you don't have to worry about the past sin. But you'd better worry about whether you sin anymore in the future, from now on; because then, then you bring the penalty right back on yourself again, IF you do go on sinning any more.

Well, on the day of Pentecost, the Holy Spirit came on those that been taught by Christ, and on a total of 120 people (more than just the original Twelve). There were about ten times that many, a total of 120. And Peter preached the first really Spirit-inspired sermon by a human man on that day. And there were thousands there who heard him. And after Peter had finished his speech, it says in verse 37 of Acts the second chapter:

Acts 2:37 Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart.

It touched their hearts, emotions. They were really hit. It wasn't just any old common ordinary thing. It was something that really hit them emotionally. They were touched in their hearts.

Acts 2:37-38 And said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? [What are we going to do now, now that we've heard what we did and heard how Christ had been crucified.] (38) Then Peter said unto them, **REPENT** [But so many people don't know what he meant when he said repent. "Repent..."] and be baptized [Now, that follows repentance.] every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy [Spirit].

Some Have Not Changed Direction

Now, there is no promise in the Bible that anyone will receive the Holy Spirit until after he has repented and been baptized. And being baptized is only an outward physical form (or ceremony) typifying, picturing, representing your real repentance and belief. You go **down** into the water. It's a picture of death—the death of the old self and, as a type, of the death of Christ. Coming back **up** out of the water is a picture of the resurrection of Christ and your coming up to live a new and a different, a much-changed type of life, a different life-style. You're going a different direction from this time on. You're not going to be like the same person any longer.

But some people haven't ever undergone any change. They're still just the same. They've just accepted a few additional instructions, or teachings, or doctrines that they've heard. And they're so, they're really so 'good' that they said, "Well, you know, I want to be good. I want to do what's right; and that, I see that's true and that's right. So I'm so good I'm just going to accept it."

HOW MANY OF YOU ARE LIKE THAT, BRETHREN? You've just heard the truth. And you're so 'good' that you say, "Yes I—I, in my goodness—I'm certainly going to accept that, because I'm so 'good' I want to believe what's right. I don't want to do what's wrong." **THAT WON'T SAVE YOU AND WON'T GET YOU THE HOLY SPIRIT!**

What 'to Repent' Means

I don't think that many of us have ever quite understood that yet, and we need to before we take the Passover. I sometimes have to wonder, and I've had to all through these years, if many of us understand just what it really means to repent.

I read (about fifty, fifty-five years ago back—about that time, about the time of my conversion. It might have been shortly after.) of a story of a Methodist preacher. In fact, he was the bishop that visited a church. He was a bishop, you see; and he was quite a celebrity, coming to this small church. He'd come from a bigger city and was over a good many churches. And he was preaching on repentance; but, somehow, the people couldn't understand. He wasn't able to make them understand what he meant. (And I think many of us perhaps do not understand just what we mean by **repentance**.)

So there was a black gentleman in the back of the church building, and he finally raised up his hand. "If you please, sir," he said, "I believe I can explain what you all mean, if I might." Well the bishop said, "Certainly, certainly. Go ahead, if you can make it more plain or clear to the people." "Well sir," he said, "I, this is what I think you all mean." And he started walking right down the aisle, down towards the platform. And he says, "I'm going to hell. I'm going to hell. I'm going to hell. I'm going to hell, I'm going to hell." And he got down to just in front of the platform, and then he turned around. And he started and he walked rapidly back, even a little faster

now. And he said, “I’m going to heaven. I’m going to heaven. I’m going to heaven. I’m going to heaven.” And when he got back up there; he said, “I think what you all meant, sir, is we must **TURN AROUND AND GO THE OTHER WAY.**” And some of them began to understand it.

It meant you have to **ADMIT** you’ve been going in the **WRONG DIRECTION**. You have to **ADMIT YOU’VE BEEN WRONG. YOU’VE BELIEVED WRONG! YOU’VE LIVED WRONG! YOU’VE DONE WRONG! YOU ARE WRONG, THROUGH AND THROUGH.** And many of you have **NEVER** admitted that!

Even Some Evangelists Don’t Get It!

I’ve come to **KNOW** even **MEN THAT HAVE RISEN UP IN THIS CHURCH** to the rank of apostle—well, not apostle but of **EVANGELIST**. And [they] apparently have **NEVER ADMITTED THEY HAD BEEN WRONG. THEY ARE JUST SO ‘GOOD.’ THEY ACCEPTED THE TRUTH**, and they’ve **BEEN ACCEPTING** it. They **BELIEVE** and **ACCEPT** the **DOCTRINE**, in **THEIR OWN ‘goodness’** and **THEIR OWN ‘righteousness’—SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS!** And they haven’t got any more **real salvation** than a cat, a dog, or a cow.

A lot of people have come into this Church, and a lot have become ministers and have gone through Ambassador College. They’ve been taught. But they never had **the Spirit of God**, and they **NEVER REALLY COMPREHENDED THE SPIRITUAL TRUTH.**

The Holy Spirit Enables

Now, the Holy Spirit doesn’t teach you spiritual truth. (It must be taught you.) But the Holy Spirit enables your mind to understand it **WHEN YOU**

ARE TAUGHT. And I'm afraid some have not received the Holy Spirit even. Well, **you'd better be sure**, brethren, before you take the Passover.

I want to speak on it this afternoon, because I won't be here (I'm sorry.) this year for the Passover. I'm going to have to be in Jerusalem. I've been there before on the Passover. I don't know why it's happened. At least three or four years already, I've been in Israel at the Passover time. And I've been there for...I know, once at least, I took the Passover in Bricket Wood. And then, on the preparation day after the Passover, I flew back over to Tel Aviv and was in Israel for the holy day. And I've been there for either the Passover or the holy day after about three or four times. And it seems like that's the way the schedule runs for this year once again.

Now, we are commanded to **repent** and **believe before** we are **baptized** because baptism is only the outward ceremony picturing your belief and picturing the fact that you have repented—that the old life is gone, you've admitted how wrong you are, and now you're starting a totally new type of life.

Even Simon Magus Was Baptized

I would like to show you how the founder of the false church was **baptized**. And he wasn't converted! I hope that you're more converted than he was, because he was just **not converted**. That's in the eighth chapter of the book of Acts. Acts 8, beginning with verse 13. This was Simon the sorcerer. And this was the time when Phillip had gone up to Samaria, you know; and preached the Kingdom of God up there—preached Christ to them and the Kingdom of God. And so, well in verse 12:

Acts 8:12-13 *When they believed Phillip [Now, they believed.] preaching the things of the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.* [Well, I think it's given to us to

assume that they had repented. It does say they believed.] *Then Simon...*

Now, he was the head of the Babylonian Mystery religion there. And they ALL looked up to him as a man of God, from the least of them to the greatest, in Samaria there.

Acts 8:13 Then Simon himself believed [Now HE BELIEVED. He BELIEVED Christ. He BELIEVED the truth. I want you to notice that. He believed.] *also: and when he was BAPTISED...*

And he was baptized! How many of YOU have BELIEVED, you've accepted the doctrine, YOU'VE BEEN BAPTISED? Well, that happened to the founder of what the Bible calls "Babylon" and tells us to **come out** of it! (I'm going to read you that in just a minute.)

Acts 8:13 And when he was baptized, he continued with Phillip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and the signs which were done.

Now then, beginning with verse 20 on to verse 22. Peter and John came down. And they didn't understand that they should lay hands on them for receiving the Holy Spirit. They did not receive the Holy Spirit when they were baptized—UNTIL the apostles came down, and laid their hands on them, and prayed that they would receive the Holy Spirit.

Acts 8:20 But Peter said unto him...

Now, this Simon came and offered Peter money for the Holy Spirit. He had BELIEVED and he had been BAPTISED, and I want you to notice that. And now he came to Peter and said "I will pay money so you will give me the Holy Spirit" because he didn't get the Holy Spirit.

Part And Lot

Acts 8:20-21 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee,

*because thou hast thought that the GIFT of God [the Holy Spirit, the gift of God] may be purchased with money. (21) Thou hast **neither part nor lot** in this matter.*

You know after Judas had dropped out and there were only eleven of the apostles left, they let THE LOT (which meant it was God's choice) fall on Matthias; and he became one of them, so he could have part in that apostleship. The **part and lot** referred to being an apostle. And Peter said to him, "*You have neither part nor lot.*" You see he wanted to be AN APOSTLE. And he made himself an apostle—pretended he was anyway—afterward.

Acts 8:21-22 You have neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. (22) REPENT therefore [Peter said to him].

Real Repentance, A Death

HE HAD NOT REPENTED! BUT HE HAD BELIEVED. HE HAD BEEN BAPTISED. **Brethren, how about YOU? HOW ABOUT YOU? DO YOU KNOW WHAT REPENTANCE REALLY MEANS?** Too many say, "Yeah, yeah I guess I was a sinner. So I'm just gonna believe now." And, in your own goodness, you do. I don't believe that you...I don't believe that is repentance brethren. I know it wasn't for me. I didn't get it that way. I didn't receive God's Spirit that way.

I had to go through something that meant the DEATH of this old self. It was already dead, and I didn't know it. But I had to let it DIE, and let Christ put LIFE in me through His Holy Spirit. I'll come to that a little later. But Peter said to [Simon Magus]:

Acts 8:22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

He had a **wrong motive of heart**. He had NOT repented [{3}](#)! But he had believed, and he had been baptized.

The Great False Church

Well, who are the followers of that Simon today? He went out anyway, and he organized what became finally the biggest religion in this world, what is known today as “Christianity.” He was the real founder of what the world looks on as “Christianity” today. And you find it described in Revelation 17 and verse 5 (and its in capital letters in my Bible, and probably is in yours). Rev.17 verse 5, “*And upon HER*”– she’s pictured as a great whore, a great mamma whore.

Revelation 17:5 And upon her forehead...

And a church is always regarded in the female sense, because the true Church of God is the affianced Bride of Christ, to marry Christ at His Second Coming. But here was a **false church**. And she is a harlot, a WHORE; and she’s a mother of harlots.

Revelation 17:5 And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT [or, the Babylonian Mystery religion having become great, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

Her daughters came out of her IN PROTEST, as a daughter comes out of her mother at birth. And the Protestants came out of the Roman Catholic Church in protest. And that is called “Christianity” and that was started by that same Simon. And he had the title of “Peter.” And he is the Simon “Peter” of the Roman Catholic Church.

Peter, Or The Title “Pater”

PETER is often called—because “e” is often pronounced as “a” and it would be pronounced—“PATER”. (Now “mater” means mother. And alumni graduates of the university look on their university as their alma mater, or mother.) Jesus surnamed... Now wait, not Peter but **Simon** [Simon Peter, John 21:15]. His name originally was Simon too—“Simon bar Jonas”, or “the son of Jonas 4.” Jesus **surnamed** him. And “surnamed” means gave him a TITLE. And the title is... (Look in the dictionary for surname.) You’ll find twice in the Bible it says that he was surnamed “Peter.” And surname is a **title** to designate your occupation. And that was the title that designated religious head, religious leader. And that’s what they call the papacy, the Pope, today.

This Way

Well, now let’s take a case history or two. Let’s take the apostle Paul. And if I could turn to Acts the ninth chapter, we’ll go back to Acts again now, the ninth chapter and beginning with verse one. I’d like to read the first sixteen verses. I want you to get this experience that Paul went through, and I want to give you some case histories and see if you had an experience anything like this. His name originally was Saul, from the city or town of Tarsus.

Acts 9:1 And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest.

He had hatred. He was energized by it, and he was emotionally wrought up with hatred and vengeance against the Christians. He wanted to destroy them. He wanted to have them killed. So he:

Acts 9:1-2 ...went up to the high priest, (2) and desired of him letters to

Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this way...

Now you see, “this way” is a **Way of Life**. You repent of your old way of life and turn to GOD’S WAY OF LIFE. And what is **God’s Way of Life**? It’s the way God has always lived.

The God Family

You read of the first beginning of God in John 1 (verses one, two, three, and four for example, and in verse five and so on) where God and the Word: “*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was WITH God.*” The Word was a personage.” *The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us*” and became Jesus Christ (verse fourteen). But the Word was with another personage, called GOD; and the WORD also was GOD.

Well, John can be with Smith; but John is also Smith. Maybe John is Smith’s son or Smith’s father, one or the other. But Smith is the family name. And, in this case, “God” is **the Family name**. That’s why **we** coming into His Family [are] **begotten children**, if we have really been begotten and received the Holy Spirit. We’re begotten into the Family of God, and that’s why we’re called the CHURCH of God.

Now, in the Old Testament they were **not** the children of God. They were the children of Israel. They weren’t called the congregation or church **of God**. They were called the congregation **of Israel**, and Israel was Jacob. Jacob’s name was changed to Israel. And that was the name of Jacob–Israel, a human man. They were his physical descendants.

But we are ALREADY; if we have the Spirit of God, His Spirit witnesses with our spirit. We are now already begotten as the CHILDREN OF GOD. So we bear the Family name—**Church of God**. We’re not Methodists. We’re not Presbyterians. We’re not Congregationalists. We’re not

Roman Catholics. We're the PEOPLE OF GOD. Brethren, do you realize this?

Paul's Conversion

Now notice: He [Saul, or Paul] wanted letters going up to the city of Damascus, which is today the oldest city in the world still existing.

Acts 9:2-6 To the synagogues, that if he found any in this way [That is, God's Way of Life, the Christian Way that Christ had taught.], whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem. [to be punished. They were going to imprison them.] (3) And as he journeyed [Now he's breathing slaughter, wanting to kill them. "As he journeyed...], he came near Damascus: [Now he must have gotten close to the outskirts of Damascus.] And suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: (4) And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, Why persecutest thou me? (5) And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. (6) And he trembling and astonished said, Lord what wilt thou have me do?

Something happened to him. He knew GOD had struck him down, and he was hit emotionally. He, all of a sudden, realized that he was actually persecuting GOD. And he was struck down blind. This was an emotional thing with him. But just emotion alone isn't enough. It wasn't really an emotion thing. It was a spiritual, mental thing. But I mean it had an emotional context, content, because he really... It was a very serious thing with him.

Acts 9:6-9 He trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do. [Now he was given an order, to see if he was going to obey.] (7) And the men which journeyed with him stood

speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man. (8) And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened [You see he had been blind.], he saw no man: [He was blind.] but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus. (9) And he was three days without sight [blinded], and neither did he eat nor drink.

Now, he went through quite an experience that shook him up. Believe me, this shook him up! This was no just easy thing. He just heard something. “Yeah, I’m so ‘good.’ I guess I’ll accept that.”

I wonder how many of **YOU** got into the Church that way? How many of **you** were struck down until it really shook you to the root—realizing how **WRONG** you had been, admitting how **WRONG** you were through and through?

Acts 9:10-13 And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias; and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold I am here, Lord. (11) And the Lord said unto him, “Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and inquire at the house of Judas for one called Saul, of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth, (12) and hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias [who Christ was now talking to] coming in, and putting his hands on him, that he might receive his sight. (13) Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he has done to the saints at Jerusalem.

You know we’ve ALL been doing evil, but have we recognized it? Have we realized how **EVIL** we have been? Some of us have been so ‘good’ we’ve never had to **REPENT**. Some of **YOU** have been so ‘good’ you never had to repent. Well, brethren, **I DID!** Or I wouldn’t be up here teaching you today.

*Acts 9:14-15 And here he hath authority from the chief priests to bind all that call on thy name. (15) But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a **chosen vessel** unto me.”*

Oh, [Paul] didn't volunteer at all! He wanted to go the other way. **GOD CALLED HIM.** God knocked him down. God **CHOSE** him. If **YOU** have been called, it's because **God called** you. But some of **YOU** weren't knocked down quite that bad. And some of **YOU** haven't undergone any such experience that really shook **YOU** up like this.

Suffering For Christ's Sake

Acts 9:15-16 ...chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and before kings, and the children of Israel: [He had to go before kings.] (16) For I will show him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake.

Paul had to **suffer** many things for Christ. Brethren, I have had to suffer many things for Christ. And when I gave myself to Him (fifty-five, fifty-six years ago, back in the very spring of 1927), I knew that Jesus said if they persecuted Him, they would persecute us. And I knew I would be persecuted! I counted the cost. And when I gave myself over to Him, I did it knowing what I was going to have to suffer. And I have suffered it. And I'm suffering it right now, this minute, in ways that most of you don't understand at all. And I'm not going to reveal a lot of it to you.

Acts 9:17 And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house.

The Conversion Experience

Let's see. I wanted to read... No, that's as far as I needed to read. I just wanted to read that far to you, to show you that experience that Paul went through. It was **AN EXPERIENCE**—this conversion that he went through. Now, Paul wasn't tortured physically. But the very knowledge it was God striking him down shook him up, and shook him in his mind spiritually. And,

suddenly, he realized that he was WRONG. He was going the wrong way. He was doing the wrong things. He was EVIL, and he was doing an evil thing; and he suddenly realized that. And his whole attitude and his intent in life changed.

He had been persecuting in dynamic ZEAL! He was. You know some people are just (oh, I don't know) so insipid that there's no life in them, it seems. They're not dynamic. They're not forceful. They just go along so easily. Paul was NOT like that! He was a real, vigorous, man. And now, when God turned him around the other way, he became a vigorous crusader for Christ. Maybe "crusader" is the wrong way because he wasn't going out trying to get people saved, anymore than Christ was. But his life was wrong. He was going the wrong way. And he made A SURRENDER. Notice again in verse six: "*He trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do?*" And he began to obey from that minute on, and his whole life changed. He turned around and started to go the other way, started to live a different kind of life altogether.

So, Paul didn't become a Christian just in his own goodness. He was so 'good' that he said, "Well, I'm going to accept Christ." **No!** In his goodness, he was breathing out slaughter to the Christians. He wanted to see them slaughtered, if he could. He had to realize how wrong he was.

Mr. Armstrong's Conversion

Now, how was I struck down? I've often said, "I was struck down in an entirely different way than Paul was." Well, I was. I was struck down! The course I was living in was altogether different. When I was just a kid, sixteen years of age, I was suddenly inspired with ambition. A man that employed me on a summer vacation job told me that I was going to just do great things in life. I was going to go places. He, he flattered me; but he encouraged me, and

he gave me pats on the back and told me I was really going to do things. And I began to almost believe it. I never believed anything like that before. And then I became ambitious, at age sixteen. But I knew that ambition meant a desire, plus the hard effort and the work to accomplish that desire; and I knew it meant putting forth a great effort.

Now, what I became desirous of was all carnal and physical, in this world. I wanted to be... I began to want to be considered when I was mature, and I was only sixteen then, but I wanted to be considered successful **by** successful men. It wasn't that I wanted a lot of money. I wanted some of the things money would buy. That's true. But I wasn't thinking about just hoarding money, anything like that. But I wanted to be looked on as successful **by** successful men. And I became filled with self-confidence.

And I began, while I was still in high school, spending a lot of time in the public library—studying other books besides the high school assignment (in philosophy, and in business administration, and other things of that sort that I'd find in the library), not fiction. I had been reading a lot fiction. I read about Dick Merriwell and Frank Merriwell and all of those things, and even Mick Carter. I don't think any of you remember that far back. That was before I was sixteen. But now I began to read serious things. I was filled with ambition, and I became quite successful.

I made a self-analysis, an examination, to avoid fitting the proverbial “square peg in a round hole,” to find where I belonged, where I could be a success in life. I chose the profession I was succeeding in. And, by the time I was twenty-eight, I was making what in today's dollar value would be at least a quarter of a million dollars a year. Not very many young men of twenty-eight have gone that far. And I had been quite successful.

And then in 1920, I was struck down. In 1920, there was a temporary flash Depression. It was a very serious Depression—following the end of

World War I, which ended in 1918. In 1920, it struck this country. And all of my clients (that were responsible for my income) were firms like the J. I. Case people, and farm implement people, and like John Deer & Company, the Moline Plow Works, the Avery Company, a great adding machine company, and other companies like that. And EVERY ONE of them went into the receivership and lost everything they had! But companies... Oh, Goodyear Tire and Rubber was another one of my clients at that time. They also failed.

Now, the company name was continued, but new management was put in. New, well, new stocks were offered; and new capital came in. New management was installed. And the companies came back up again, but the same people that were in it lost everything they had. And my business was totally swept away from under my feet. And it wasn't my fault. I didn't bring on that Depression.

In 1924, I took a trip that took eighteen days—from Des Moines, Iowa out to Salem, Oregon. There were no cross-country highways in those days. It was just either mud roads in Iowa, dirt roads, or some gravel roads when we got farther west. And we had blow out of tires, and everything else, in a Ford. But we finally arrived out in Oregon in, well, we were eighteen days through that summer of 1924.

Well, I had begun to build another business in the advertising field, and I was doubling the business of all my clients. My work was eminently successful. And it had been hard to come back. I'd been struck down. Now I was regaining confidence again. And then all of a sudden something happened that all of my clients were stricken and could not expend money for local advertising any further. My business was suddenly swept away from me! (And I had every client, all through Oregon and Washington, in my field.) It took the life out of me.

I'd been ambitious. I wanted to succeed. Everything, and it just seemed... I said I was King Midas IN REVERSE. You know everything King Midas touched turned into gold. Everything I touched turned into nothing. I just thought "I'm King Midas in reverse." And all the confidence had gone out of me. I was a whipped, beaten man. I was reduced to poverty. (That's the time when you've heard me say that I had been making a quarter of a million dollars a year before that.)

I had those "righteous" shoes you've heard me talk about—they had "holey" soles. One pair, that's all I had, with holes in the soles. Yeah, and I had a suit for every day in the week—the one I wore was it—the only one I had; and it was threadbare, hardly presentable any longer. It was winter up in Oregon. I had a hole that big in the hip of the only overcoat I had, and it was only a topcoat; and it was a cold winter.

But I had finally been **converted**. And then, when I was in that condition, I was CHALLENGED; and I had to begin studying the Bible. And I began to realize that everything I had been taught was wrong! And I let God erase everything I'd ever believed out of my mind.

I turned around, and started to go the other way. I had been whipped, I had been beaten, and finally I was CONQUERED BY GOD. I didn't just 'get' and 'receive' and 'accept' Christ. **I gave myself to Him!** Of course, I accepted Him; but you know what I mean. It was more than just getting something. It was giving my whole life to Him! And I did it in poverty. I was beaten down. I had gone through an emotional BEATING, a terrible beating.

And now I began to have a new kind of confidence, totally different. It was not self-confidence. I began to have the faith of Christ. I began to have a confidence that Christ... Well, like they had in the morning service this morning, the song "I'll Never Walk Alone." I knew I wouldn't have to walk alone—that Christ would be with me—if I would be with Him. But I had to go

His Way. I had to be CONQUERED by Him. I don't believe anyone receives the Holy Spirit until the human spirit has been conquered by God and His Spirit.

Breaking Our Will

I often think of a spirited young colt. You try to get on him, and he'll try to throw you. You can't do a thing with him. You've got to break him. He's got to be CONQUERED; and then you do have a still spirited horse, but he becomes of great value. But he has to be broken.

Do you know God has to break our wills and break us? And we have to be brought to the place of surrender to Him. How many of you have gone through such an experience? Or have you just, in your own goodness, seen the truth; and said, "Oh yeah, that's true, I'm gonna accept it. I'm so 'good' that I just want to accept it. And I'm gonna be a Christian from here on." I wonder if you have really received the Spirit of God? I wonder if you get it that easily? I didn't. The apostle Paul didn't. I didn't, and Paul didn't. I had to be whipped. I had to be conquered.

I wrote something here I wanted. Well, I had to confess and admit how wrong I had been. Not only that I had done wrong, but that I WAS WRONG; and I was wrong through and through. I had to come to **a new attitude** in life, **a new purpose** in life, altogether something new and something altogether different.

King David's Experience

Now, I'd like to show you something about David. You know a lot of people would never understand how David could ever be called "a man after God's own heart." Well, how could he be called "a man after God's own

heart”? Look at the things he did. God wouldn't let him build the Temple in Jerusalem when he asked God. God thought it was a good idea all right, and wanted it built; but He said he wouldn't let David build it because David was a man of war. He'd shed so much blood, in killing people in battle. And not only that; but, when God told him not to take a census of His nation, he went ahead and did it anyway, and disobeyed God deliberately. And God really whip-laid him and punished him for that.

And another time he saw a woman taking a bath out of his window. I guess her window was open. She must have been next door somewhere from his palace. Well, he was the king; so he told some of his servants, “Bring that woman over here.” And she became pregnant. And her husband was away from home in the war, in the battle. And now David was in trouble. He'd got this other man's wife pregnant. And David didn't know what to do.

So he got word to the General of the Army and said, “Send this man back home.” And when he got there, he said, “You can stay home for a couple of nights with your wife before you go back.” But he said, “No.” He said, “I'm not going to enjoy going to bed with my wife when all the rest of my buddies down there are out there fighting. And they don't get to be in a nice shelter, or a beautiful home, or anything like that.” So he, he just slept outside. He didn't even go in the house.

Now, David was really up against it. He didn't know what to do. He was like a rat in a corner, trapped. And he tried anyway to get out of it. He did a worse thing yet. After he had committed adultery with another man's wife, now he sent a note BY THIS SAME MAN to the General of the Army and said, “Put him up in the forefront of the battle where he'll get killed himself.” And he was killed. David now became a murderer. And God sent Nathan, the prophet, to tell him what he had done.

I want to show you what David went through. In the 51st Psalm, here

was a prayer of David when he woke up and finally realized what had happened. Most people would say, “Any man that’s done those things, he’s no good. God couldn’t use a man like that.” And yet I think they must sit in judgment of God’s calling a man like David a man after His own heart. Well, here’s why David’s “a man after God’s own heart.” Look at this prayer. He was crying out to God. He said:

Psalm 51:1-3 Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy loving kindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions. [Now he’s beginning to admit his transgressions. He’s admitting how wrong he was.] (2) Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity [MY iniquity], and cleanse me from MY sin. [Now he’s confessing it.] (3) For I acknowledge my transgression: and my sin is ever before me.

And then, notice verse 10. I won’t read all of it, but just notice in this prayer. In verse 10 it says:

Psalm 51:10 Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit in me.

He confessed his sins, and David never did it again.

All Have Sinned

Brethren, every one of you has sinned. You may think you haven’t sinned as bad as someone else. And most people think, if other people haven’t found it out, they’re all right just as long as nobody knows it. Well, let me tell you, GOD KNOWS every sin you’ve made. Every one of you has sinned, and God knows all about it. Every one! And you’d better be sure they’re forgiven before you take the Passover!

Now, maybe they already are forgiven. I don’t mean asking a million times over to forgive it. Once they’re forgiven, they’re forgiven. But you’d

better be sure they have been. And if they have, that's wonderful. And I hope they have been already.

Notice now from Ephesians the second chapter. The very beginning of the second chapter, "*And you hath he quickened,*" or made alive, "*who were dead in trespasses and sins.*" Every one of us has been spiritually dead in trespasses and sins. (Trespasses against God and God's Law.) We were **SPIRITUALLY DEAD!** But now—IF we have the Holy Spirit, IF we have repented, IF we have been conquered and received the Holy Spirit of God—that changes every thing.

Ephesians 2:2 *Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air [who is Satan, and he's a prince of the power of the air], the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience.*

And every one of us is a child of disobedience, and has been; and the Spirit of God has worked in us.

In Agreement With God

I want to read something I hadn't thought of, but I think of just now, in I John the first chapter:

I John 1:3 *That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.*

Here we are, having fellowship. Here we are, in a Church service. Do you know that in spirit both God the Father and Jesus Christ are right here in this auditorium this afternoon with us? And we're having FELLOWSHIP and COMMUNION WITH THEM this afternoon, right now!

I love that beautiful song that the choir sang in the morning service—You'll Never Walk Alone. But two cannot WALK TOGETHER except they be agreed. And once we have really repented, once we have been conquered, you can't walk with Christ if you don't agree with Him. You can't walk with God the Father until you've repented because, in your sins, you aren't agreeing with Him. You've got to make **a surrender!** I mean **A real** surrender—and that's a changed life, a changed attitude, a changed goal in life, a changed purpose altogether.

Even Christians Sin

But then you're going to sin again, even after that; and you all have. Since you've been converted I mean, every one of you has sinned more or less. So we read here in the ninth verse:

***I John 1:9** If we [We Christians. This is talking about Christians. "If we..."] confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us of all unrighteousness.*

We've sinned, but we have not disagreed with Him. We didn't mean to sin, but we slipped up. We forgot, or maybe we got careless. Maybe we hadn't continued in prayer as often as we should. Maybe we slipped up a little while. Maybe you've sinned since you were converted. But if we confess those sins, He's faithful and just to forgive us our sins. Now it goes right on in the next chapter:

***I John 2:1-2** My little children, these things write I unto you [those in the Church], that you sin not. And if any man [That is, a believer.] sin, we have an advocate {5} with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: (2) And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not ours only, but also for the whole world.*

It shows that he meant, if we in the Church sin, He will forgive us. But you don't change your main attitude and your main purpose, and you may still have the Holy Spirit. But if you do NOT repent, if you do NOT acknowledge it, and then you continue on, pretty soon you'll just be lost entirely.

How We Go Astray

I like to picture it this way: You're in a thick wooded forest. Trees are so thick you can't see even ten feet ahead of you. Not as far as from me to the front row down there. I've been in a... Over in the Big Sandy campus, it used to be just that thick in woods and brush. You couldn't even see ten or fifteen feet. But, if you're in a big forest on a dark moonless night (no light, no moon), and there's only one way out; and there is a light there and that light is going out, and you follow that light—it'll lead you right out. But if you don't follow that light, and you go any other way; you're not going to see very far. And, I tell you, inside of a little time that light is lost. You won't find it again. You don't know which way to go now, to find it. And you can't tell which is east, west, north, or south. Not at least until the next day. You'll be lost in the woods.

Now, the Bible is **a lamp** under our feet, but that lamp must have oil in it. You read of that in the twenty-fifth chapter of Matthew, where just before Christ's coming, it's really speaking of the Laodicean Church then. And half of the virgins, who had been Christians, had let the oil go out of their lamps. Their "lamps" are the Bible. But THE OIL is the Holy Spirit within them (speaking, of course, in figurative or in symbolic language).

And I've noticed those who go out from among us, they go off on some one point, or maybe two points. And ALWAYS, if they don't repent, it is not long till they've gone off on another doctrine, and then another. And then,

pretty soon, they've just gone all together; and it's too late.

Now, if you make a mistake—if you sin—and you CONFESS your SINS, YOU'D BETTER DO IT QUICK AND DO IT IMMEDIATELY; and it isn't too late. And He will be faithful and just to forgive you your sins, and to cleanse you of all unrighteous.

But, brethren, some have gone out from this Body and this Church; and they didn't confess their sins right away. And then they began to make another sin, and then another; and they've just given up altogether. They don't believe any thing any more. They've gone farther, and farther, and farther away.

Passover Examination

Now, it's good to have this Passover season come once a year. And it's good to have us CHECK UP once and a while, and to remember that whenever we do make a mistake (maybe it was thoughtlessness, maybe it was deliberate even, but you've come to yourself and you come to realize it), REPENT and repent quick! Don't say, "I'm not worthy to repent." You're never too unworthy to go to God and ask for forgiveness, and ask Him to get you back on the track.

This whole Church has been going wrong, and we've had to get back on the track. Brethren, you have to **keep yourself** on the track privately and individually. I have to keep myself on the track. I know where I was beginning to get off a little bit. And maybe you didn't realize I was getting myself back on the track while I've been getting you all back on it. You thought I was just so 'good'—I was getting you all back Well, don't kid yourselves. I'm human too, brethren. Well, I've been trying to get **ME** back on the track too, along with you.

Let's all get back because it isn't going to be much longer until Christ is going to come! And I hope we'll all be together—so we can rise and be changed from mortal to immortal in the moment, in the twinkling of an eye; and rise to meet Christ in the air as He comes. What a GLORIOUS time that CAN be; [but] only IF we really repent, IF we acknowledge when we're wrong, IF we confess it, IF we're willing to CHANGE.

I've had to even confess that I'd mislead the Church on some things. We've had to change. When I found I was wrong, I CHANGED IT. I don't have to prove that I can admit I'm wrong. I've proved that. I've proved it before the whole Church more than once. But the time has come to examine... Oh, there's one more scripture. Well, I still have time. I want to read one more scripture.

II Corinthians 13:5 Examine yourselves, whether you be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is IN you, except you be reprobates?

It's not too late. You wouldn't be here this afternoon if you were already a reprobate. It's not too late! I don't know, maybe some of you have sinned. Maybe you've gotten off the track a little bit. You can get back on. And get back quick, and don't delay! Don't wait for tomorrow. Don't let the sun go down until you're back on. **Examine yourselves** before the Passover.

Now, it says, I read to you, "*let a man examine himself,*" and then let him take of that Passover. Of course, there it's speaking of how you take it unworthily, rather than taking it worthily. But we have to examine ourselves, and we should **before** the Passover; and to know that we are **back on the track** ourselves—walking with Christ, as we should be.

So, I wish I could be here with you for this Passover; but it seems like duty calls me away. I have to go to Amman, Jordan. And maybe someday you'll realize how necessary it was that I go. And so I'll pray that God be

with all of you; and I would like to have your prayers continue for me, and I'm sure that they will.

Thank you all.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong lost his place and inadvertently jumped ahead several verses before he corrected himself. The original said: "and making the commandments of God of none affect by your tradition."

{2} - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong fumbled with the verse. The original reads: "But now you notice verse 11, I just read that, verse 16. No verse 14."

{3} - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong corrected himself here. The original said: "but he had repented, I mean he had NOT repented"

{4} - Editorial note: Fumbling corrected. The original said: "the son of bar Jonas or of Jonas"

{5} - Placement changed to better keep Mr. Armstrong's intent. The original reads: "And if any man sin, we have an advocate [That is, a believer.]"

Interracial Marriage

Sermon (May 1982)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Interracial Marriage.....	1081	Adam Had To Choose	1095
Trends Of The World	1084	The Cause Of Our Troubles	1096
Wives They Chose	1086	A Son In His Likeness	1097
Well Who's Mr. Armstrong?	1087	The Generations Of Noah	1099
Why Did God Erase That Earth?	1089	A Wife For Isaac	1100
The Two Trees	1091	Because Of The Wrong Religion?	1101
Physical Knowledge vs Spiritual	1093	Geographical Segregation	1105

Well brethren, we are in the very last days. That is a sobering thing. I don't think we really realize it. To us, I think, we seem to take life as if—that is, it isn't life; it is only a chemical existence, a temporary existence that we have—but I think we seem to take it as if it's going to go on forever, and as if we're therefore going to live forever in this same world same kind of conditions, same life. So we want to live it up while we can. We want to get all the fun and the enjoyment and the pleasure out of it while we can. We should be sobered when we realize that we are in the last days. And all we have is a chemical existence and life isn't very long anyway. I think I realize that more than when I used to speak to you 30 or 40 years ago. Somehow, I don't know how, I sneaked past middle age. I never hit middle age. But now I look back and see I'm past it. I don't know how I got past it. But in less than three months now, I will be in my ninetieth year. So that's a little older than most of you and I've come to realize that life, this life, this temporary existence, is just a will-o-the-wisp, it's just here today and gone tomorrow. Almost no time at all.

And why are we here? We're here for a purpose and we lose all sight of that. We just want to think of the pleasure of the moment and going along

with this world we are in. We want to be part of it. Now we are in God's church and judgment is on us. It isn't on the world. But judgment has begun with us. And we're having our only chance right now. We're being judged one way or the other and if we flunk out now, that means the lake of fire. The world, whatever they do that's wrong, they're going to have to give account but judgment hasn't come to them yet. When it does, they'll have to give account. But they might have a chance. But if you and I don't make it brethren, we have no other chance! And we're getting down to the last days. And we're in a world of trouble. If you've been watching the news this week, it's very much on the troubles over in Lebanon. Trouble escalating up in North Ireland. Trouble down in South Africa. And a lot of this trouble is racial.

Satan's Next Attack

Today I want to speak on what may possibly be the very next attack that Satan will use against this church. I was studying at lunch before the meeting last Sabbath, with our minister there and he said "I think that very likely, the next attack of Satan" -now there was the attack of the State of California against us. There's been another attack that most of you don't even know anything about. It only hit a few of us at the top. But there has been trouble and don't you think there hasn't. Satan is on the job. But Christ is on the job and Christ is winning. And always will win! It's like my executive assistant, Bob Fahey said, he's looked at the book to see how it comes out in the end, and he says we win. [Audience laughs] Yes we do. That's the way it's going to turn out. At least Christ is going to win and we'll only win if we're on Christ's side. We don't need to worry about getting Christ over on our side. But he said, the thing that's going to hit this church next, that Satan's going to use, is interracial marriage.

Oh the pity. People can sometimes get their feelings all stirred up to a

red hot pitch on something of that kind. Their prejudices, their emotions, their feelings. God almighty created us all. He put us here for a purpose. And we don't have much longer. And we need to look into this. Now that was in New York City last Sabbath. On the plane, coming back, Mr. Fahey showed me a letter that had been handed to him from a member. I believe this member is in, yes, just across in New Jersey, just across from New York but had attended the service. And she had been talking to another member who lives in Philadelphia. And there'd been quite a heated conversation on the telephone. And I want to read you just one slight little bit of what was in that message and what is coming up in the church now. And you're going to have to—**IF GOD BE GOD GET ON HIS SIDE. AND IF YOU WANT TO GO WITH THIS WORLD AND THE WAY IT'S GOING, GET OVER ON THAT SIDE**, and go into the lake of fire with it. That's all I have to say.

I just want to read a few, this is about a 3 or 4 page letter, so, I'll just read a part of it. She says,

“During the conversation, [that's the telephone conversation, that's the telephone conversation she had with this woman in Philadelphia] it was stated that the blacks in God's church are dissatisfied with such doctrines that are not keeping with the current social trend in the world, which they feel are in keeping with the premises of international relationships that are a part of this nation's background”

So we should go along with our nation and the social trends of the world. And this letter also says that they are trying to line up a group of blacks, **TO GIVE ME AN ULTIMATUM! THAT I GET ON THE SIDE OF THE TRENDS, THE SOCIAL TREND OF THIS WORLD. OR ELSE!!!** I'll tell you what I'll give them. I'll give them **OR ELSE**. [Audience laughs] I won't compromise one millionth of an inch. **And if you will, you can go into the lake of fire** if you want to. Now, I've never started a fight in my life but let me tell you, I've won every fight I've ever been in. But someone else

always started it. I don't want to start a fight. I'm the servant of the Most High God. And I'm as much a servant of blacks or of yellows or of any other color, pinks, polka dots, anything you want to mention – and the like. But I know what God has said. And that's what I'm teaching you and that's the way this church is going to go. We're getting this church back on God's track. That's where it's going to be and that's where it's going to stay.

Trends Of The World

Also, I understand that some are saying, we've got to have racial balance at Ambassador College. Well, what does God say about that? WE'RE NOT GOING TO GO WITH THESE TRENDS OF THE WORLD!! THE POLITICAL FOOTBALLS, THE SOCIAL TRENDS, THE THINGS OF SATAN. Those are all the ways of Satan and now God is going to use us because there are laws in the supreme courts of the United States. They passed a law here a few years ago and they're taking advantage of it. Now, they may try to get laws, use the laws for the sake of the nation, against us if we don't approve interracial marriage. But I say, as for me and my house, we shall serve the Eternal God. What are you going to say? [Audience applauds].

Now let me tell you something. This isn't anything to get all emotional about at all. I happened to be born white. I don't know why? I'm not white. They just call it that. I'm anything but white. So are any the rest of you that think you are. You're not. But what difference does it make? If we make it into the Kingdom of God, what color skin are we going to have? You ever think of that? We're not going to have any skin at all. But our eyes are going to be like flames of fire and our faces are going to be like the sun full strength. What color is that? It's so bright it'll blind you if you look without a smoked glass. And that's the way it's going to be.

Jesus Christ said, about the last days, he looked into that time in our day

and he said of this in our day,

Matthew 24:37-38 But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.(38) For as in the days of Noah,

And that's the way it is today, exactly. And that was the end of that world. You know there are three worlds mentioned in the Bible? There are three heavens mentioned in the Bible. Did you ever realize that? There are three worlds, three heavens. Now there are a lot of twos, two this and two that, there are some twelves, there are some sevens. But there are three worlds. There are three heavens. The one heaven is Earth's atmosphere where you fly an airplane and where birds fly. Another heaven is in outer space where we see not only our sun but other suns that we call stars and other planets. Then the third heaven is the heaven of God's throne. We don't know where that is. One scripture in Isaiah 14 (:13) in that case it will be in the far, far North of this Earth. That is as seen from this Earth, if we could see it. But we can't. But the three worlds, there's a world that then was, which was over flown by flood. Then there's this present evil world. And then there's a world to come, which I've been calling for many, many years, The World Tomorrow. The three worlds are mentioned in the Bible. Now Jesus said as the world in Noah's day ended, as it was at that time, so it will be at the end of this world. And we're at the end of this world right now. If you want to ignore that fact and get caught like a rat in a trap, you ignore it. But I wouldn't advise it. Now notice what Jesus said, Matthew 24:37

Matthew 24:37-38 But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.(38) For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark,

What's wrong with eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage? How did these things bring an end to that world? Those are the

things he mentioned that brought an end to that world. And those same things are bringing an end to this world now. Alright, let's go back to that world and see what the history of it is.

Wives They Chose

***Genesis 6:1-2** And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, (2) That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.*

Which THEY chose. That's what they want to do today. A black man wants to take a white woman for a wife. That's what HE chooses. A white woman wants to become the wife of a black man. Now I don't know of any cases where a white man wants to marry a black woman. Why is that? Answer that for me! I'd like to have someone give me an answer to that. Why is it our white women want to marry black men? Why is it our black men want to marry white women? Black women don't seem to want to marry white men and white men don't seem to want to marry black women. Why? It's time we begin to think about these things and quit boiling up with our emotions. Now notice again in verse 5.

***Genesis 6:5** And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.*

Some of what they chose was evil wasn't it? And notice again, one more verse, a couple here.

***Genesis 6:11-12** The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. (12) And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.*

So God just ended that world. Did you ever think about, why did God absolutely kill or murder if you want to call it that every human being that except Noah and his family, eight people? They were bringing us even unhappiness and misery on themselves. Sure they were getting a kick out of life. They were doing things they thought would be pleasurable. That they thought would be exciting. They had violence and oh how exciting that was. The earth was filled with violence. Something caused it. Jesus told the cause. He said they were eating and drinking; they were marrying and giving in marriage. That's the only thing that you can find in the Bible that will give you a cause for the end of that world then.

Now what's wrong about eating and drinking? Nothing at all if you eat and drink the right kind of—water or the right kind of, well orange juice is fine, and even wine in the small amounts, with temperance. But drunkenness is not right. No drunkard is ever going to enter into the Kingdom of God. And eating the wrong kind of food and eating too much is a sin. Now a little bit of it can be a very mild sin and I guess every one of us is guilty of that. We don't seem to realize that, that's important. What we eat is important. More than we realize. We just go along with what pleases us. What appeals to our appetite, our desire of wanting to get, wanting to have, wanting to enjoy. And we're in a very small wisp of a lifetime and judgment is on us as to whether we're going to have joy and happiness and peace and everything wonderful FOREVER. And we're just letting this time go by, most of us, without taking it very seriously.

Well Who's Mr. Armstrong?

Oh I know it's nice to come to church here every Sabbath, when we've got the most beautiful auditorium to come into on the face of this earth. There was an artist here just this past week, a well known artist performing here who said, this is the finest auditorium on the face of the Earth. Well, I've said

that before and I'm glad to have an artist who's been all over the face the Earth say the same thing. God has blessed you with these things. But do you just come here as God's people, as Ezekiel says I believe it's 33:31-32, And you sit here as the people of God, you hear my words and those of the other ministers. And to you they are like a musician playing on a beautiful instrument and it entertains you, it amuses you and you enjoy it. "Oh yeah, I sure enjoyed that church service. You Bet!"

Well, 4,000 enjoyed the church service over 4,000 in New York last Sabbath. I have had to wonder, they are our own brethren who I love and think they love me but brethren, I tell you I don't think we take these things seriously enough. I wonder, out of that 4,000, if every one of them had been asked to write down oh say 25 or 50 words, just a very small amount, what did Mr. Armstrong teach about? How many would be able to tell? You think 10% could or do you really believe 90% would remember what I said? They'd say "Oh, we got to see Mr. Armstrong." Well who's Mr. Armstrong? He's a nothing and a nobody. Except for what Christ has put in him and what Christ uses him for. Otherwise, I'm nothing. But they want to make me something because God has made me the leader of this church. The human leader, not the head of the Church, Christ is the head.

Yes, I appreciate the fact that they all want to come when I come to speak. But if someone else was the head of this Church, and had had the same kind of publicity and talked even from the little childhood with the little children growing up, they would all want to come and see him. Yeah I remember. I saw the President of the United States when I was 5 years old. I've always remembered it. Wasn't that great? I saw President McKinley. How many of you here ever saw President William McKinley when he was President? I don't think any of you did. But I was a little boy 5 years old and my father had to lift me up and hold me so I could see him over the crowd. They just want to get to see a noted personage. Well I'm no noted personage

and I don't like to be called such. I just have a job to do. I want to be your servant and I want to help you. I want to give you what is good for you and what will help you. That's all I want to do. I'm not in it for what I can get out of it either.

Why Did God Erase That Earth?

Why did marrying whom they chose have something to do with leading to violence that was so bad—I didn't finish what I started a minute ago—Why did God erase that Earth all but eight people? Because they were doing what they thought was pleasing to them. Sure they wanted excitement, just like people today. What do you want on television? You want excitement. You want sex or you want violence or you want something exciting. Take these game shows they have. The emcee comes out and he's all dressed up and it's all smart and it's all full of life and someone's going to win a lot of money. And they try to make it exciting. So they're going to have some kind of a turning of wheel or like throwing the dice or something to see what kind of a prize he wins and someone gives the prize. And they get grilled before they go on there. They've got to make a big expression over every kind of merchandise that comes out that they're going to get if they win this. ALL to make it exciting. Entertain people. That's what people want. How about us? Are we like the rest of the world? Do we just want to be entertained? I sometimes wonder.

But they were also bringing unhappiness and misery on themselves and they were just trying to escape from it now and then, by thinking they're getting something enjoyable and exciting. That's the way it is today. That's the way it is today. It gets so, that to find some excitement in life, we had topless restaurants. Well that got to be old stuff and it wasn't exciting anymore so they had bottomless restaurants. Then finally they had shows with sexual intercourse, performed with naked man and woman right on the

stage and people pay admission to get in there and see it. That's how rotten this world's gotten. They want pleasure and they want excitement. Now maybe we don't want pleasures quite like that. But maybe we want pleasures a little more than we realize brethren. Now why don't we stop and think about it once in a while?

They were in such misery, in spite of what pleasure they thought they were getting in between times, that God just simply did the kindest thing he could do for them out of love for them. He snuffed out their lives in two claps, like that. And when they die and when they lose consciousness and the next when they wake up it'll be in the Great White Throne Judgment. And there, they will first give account for their sins but they will find that Christ died for their sins, if they want to change. And then that judgment, it will last a certain time to see if they want to change, they'll have to prove it by their performance. They'll have to bring forth "fruits meet for repentance," as John the Baptist says. That's what we have to do NOW. That's what you and I have to do. We have to prove it by our performance. And how are we proving it or how much are we still in the world and still going the way of Satan, wanting to be entertained, amused and just thinking of things like that. I tell you, we need to wake up brethren. It's a lot later than we think.

Now, we can stir up our emotions on certain things and get all heated up about it. God took them away from that violence and they'll wake up when there isn't any Satan around to deceive them. And when some of you and I, and I hope it's all of us, are going to be God-beings there to supervise them and teach them under Christ, ruling with Christ on His throne, having power over the nations to teach them. Now that'll be those who are still living on into the millennium for the thousand years and that'll be those who will wake up in the Great White Throne Judgment resurrection, a thousand years afterwards. Well, let me tell you why that is important and why this whole thing is important. And why marrying such as they chose was important!!

God created the first man and the first woman and told them to be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth. But before that first man, God put him in the Garden of Eden. Now I'm not going to read these scriptures because you know them already. Now I'm just going to talk about this and explain it for a while, just like I did to the ministers the other day. God had a purpose in creating man and that was to create in him God's own perfect, holy, righteous, character. And none of us has that fully yet at all. Maybe we've started on that way. I hope we have. But that's why we were created. And God is reproducing Himself and we will be born as God, as the Sons of God. But we have to have that character.

The Two Trees

Now God created a man. He put him in His Garden of Eden. There were two trees in that Garden of Eden. I've gone over this so many times. Let me just rehearse it quickly without reading all the scriptures. One was the Tree of Life. The other was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Alright, there's great meaning in those two trees, very, very great meaning. Man did not have life. God did not create him with real life. God created him with a temporary chemical existence that is like an alarm clock wound up that is running down. And when it runs down, it's through, if it isn't rewound. Well, we're like that. But we rewind our clock about three times a day when we eat food that gives us new energy to keep going. And if we don't keep poking food down our mouths and eliminating it and taking more and more, we won't live long.

There's a man up in North Ireland now, who's just about to die. I think he's past his sixtieth day of fasting, something like that. You can't live much longer than that. You can fast forty days and forty nights. There are a couple of examples in the Bible and one of them was Jesus Christ, Himself. Most people think that if you fast one day you're going to die. [audience laughs]

The Pope in Rome just a couple of days ago, was asking this man, pleading with him to please eat some food. Please put in some fuel so you'll go on keeping this chemical existence going. But so far, he didn't obey it. I haven't heard any news this morning. But I think as of last night he was still alive.

Well, God offered Adam life. I mean life that was inherent life. REAL LIFE. IMMORTAL LIFE that was INHERENT within one's self. Now God has that kind of life. Animals don't have it. Birds and fishes don't have it and Human Beings don't have it. But God offered him life. He didn't have life, he had a chemical existence. Now get this! God was not going to let him have life eternal, where he never could die and where he would live forever. God was not going to let him have that if he had to live forever in misery, in pain, sorrow, in suffering, in unhappiness, in wretchedness, in frustration and in agony. God is love. And every good thing comes down from God above. And God was not going to let him enjoy agony and sin and suffering and pain and screaming forever.

Now the devil's got people believing that if you don't do good in your own eyes, what you, yourself, think is good, that you're going to roast forever in hell, just screaming and screaming in agony and pain, never-ending. Well thank God; God, Himself, never made any such a hell. God made a hell that's a lot hotter than that. God made one that will burn up. It hasn't been made yet but it will be. The whole Earth will become a molten mass and it'll burn up those that go into it. And they'll be as though it never been. They will be ashes under the soles of our feet. Sometimes I wonder what these Protestants and Catholic preachers think when they see scriptures like that in the Bible? They just don't believe it or else they overlooked them. They skim right over them somehow.

But you see, God had a Law which defines a way of living, a way of life. If you live that way, you will be happy and you will make others around you happy. You will be peaceful. You won't be at war with your neighbor. He

will be peaceful. He won't be at war with you. You will be helping him. He will be helping you. You will help each other to have more to do more. You will help each other to be more and more happy. You will have more happiness. You will have peace. You will have joy. You will have, well since we're material beings on a material Earth; we will have more of the material things to enjoy. We don't live that way. We don't have that kind of happiness. But there is a way, that lives that way and that is the Law of God.

Now understand this. Love is the fulfilling of the Law of God. But **you** don't have the kind of Love to fulfill that Law because it is a spiritual Law. And you only have a natural love or a carnal love. It requires what the Bible says is the Love of God, shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit. God **gives** you that Love. God, Himself **is** that kind of Love. God is Love.

Now, before Adam, in the Garden of Eden, was the Tree of Life. And that tree was a symbol that if he took of that he would be taking the Spirit of God which is the Love of God that would have fulfilled the Law of God in his heart, in his mind. A way of living that would have made Adam happy, his children happy. They would have made one another happy. They would have had peace. They would have had everything good. And God offered it to him. God wanted him to take it. Also the Spirit of God, that he would have gotten if he would have taken of that tree, would have given him that Spirit that would have added to the spirit that was already in Adam from the time he was created to give him spiritual understanding and spiritual knowledge. Now the natural man does not have spiritual understanding or spiritual knowledge. He has a spirit that I call a human spirit but it doesn't impart spiritual knowledge.

Physical Knowledge vs Spiritual

Knowledge comes into the mind only through the five senses. Through

your eyes, through your ears, mostly eyes and ears. Some knowledge comes in through the nose some through the mouth and the sense of taste and some through the sense of feel or touch. Now you can't see spirit. You can't here it. It doesn't vibrate. You can't smell it, taste it or feel it. You can't know anything about spirit. The spirit in you doesn't see. It doesn't hear. The brain hears and sees. The brain hears through the ears and sees through the eyes but it's the physical brain that does the seeing, not the spirit. But the physical brain is like a computer and it programs whatever knowledge comes into it, into the spirit. The spirit is the memory that stores it up and gives it back and that's why a man, a woman, a human being, having the Spirit of God can think, can have instant recall of any bit of knowledge that has ever gone into his mind through the eye, the ear, the nose, the throat or the sense of taste. Animals don't have that.

But we were made in the image of God and we had a spirit in us so that we could have the Spirit of God which would have given us immortal life. Now if Adam had taken of the Tree of Life, that would have given him life, immortal life inherent in himself. That would have given him the Holy Spirit; would have opened his mind to comprehend spiritual knowledge. It would have given him the Love of God that could fulfill His Law to live that way. But he didn't have it. Instead what did he take? The knowledge of good and evil. In other words, he took to himself, the ability to manufacture and think out in his own mind which way he thought was best to live, the way to live. And man thinks the best way to live is to get, to take, to take away from someone else and to say "Look, I love me, but I don't love you. I don't care about what happens to you. I don't care what happens to you. If you suffer, that isn't going to hurt me. That's no skin off my nose. Like that song."

"Oh I love me; I'm wild about myself. I put my arms around myself, And give myself a squeeze. I'm wild about myself; I'll marry me someday. I just love me."

Adam Had To Choose

That is what Adam decided to take to himself. Vanity, exalting the self, thinking I'm pretty big, when he is not. Wanting to decide for himself what is right and wrong. If he does something that he thinks is alright, he says, "Well, I wasn't wrong. I decided that's good. That's good. It's not evil." You see, God's Law tells us what is good and what is evil but Adam rejected that. He rejected the Law of God; he rejected the Way of God. He rejected LIFE! Because he rejected living the Way of God.

And all of his children, ever since, have gone that way. And Satan has pumped out that way into every little child that has ever been born. That includes you when you were a little child, every one of you. And by the time you were 6, 7, 8, 9 months old, you had a lot of a kind of vanity and selfishness in you. You put two little children down on the floor together and one toy and watch them fight and see who gets that toy. Satan's been to work on them. But modern parents today don't think they need to teach them anything. SATAN'S TEACHING THEM. He's getting to them all the time. But our parents don't. They're neglecting it. We as parents are doing that and we're guilty of it and we're going to give account before God for it.

Now Adam had to choose. And he chose to take to himself the knowledge of what is good and what is evil. And in the days of Noah, they took to themselves the wives THEY chose. Adam made a choice. When he chose that, he chose something that's going to bring death on him because he chose the wrong way of life. And so God drove Adam out of the Garden of Eden and he barred reentrance from that Garden of Eden lest humanity would go back and get from the Tree of Life and eat and live forever. And so the Holy Spirit of God was shut off from man. Now what happened? Satan was still there leading them all on. Well God gave Adam knowledge and Adam was able to transmit a lot of that knowledge to his sons. And Cain and Abel

each had a little bit of that knowledge. But they were still doing what they thought was right. What they chose. And so Abel chose to bring as a sacrifice for God, a lamb. But Cain chose to bring just some vegetables and fruit that he raised out of the ground. Now Cain knew that the lamb was a type of Christ that would come as a sacrifice that would be for us. They had that much knowledge. And God spoke directly to Cain. God spoke directly to some of those way back there. He doesn't speak to us that way, directly today. But he did then to them.

And so man started living the way that seemed right in his own eyes. And the way that was not the way of God at all, the way that would bring unhappiness on him, sorrow, suffering, misery, pain, anguish and by the time of Noah, men were making a choice about wives they would take and they took to themselves wives which they chose. But God had not chosen that kind of wives for them.

The Cause Of Our Troubles

Now I want to go into some of that with you. Let's get a little bit about the Way of God. Turn to Deuteronomy.

Deuteronomy 32:8 When the most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam,

Oh today they say that the cause of our troubles and racial troubles is segregation. So the Supreme Court of the United States, in human wisdom, without any wisdom from God, says we're going to have integration. Man wants to go—you see, man chooses him the way that seems right in his own eyes. He takes to himself the knowledge of what is good and evil. That's what our Supreme Court did. But...

Deuteronomy 32:8 When the most High divided to the nations their

inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, [notice, segregation not integration] he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel.

Different people, different families or different races, had their own land, their own plot of the earth. And God's way is GEOGRAPHICAL SEGREGATION. AND INTEGRATION IS **NOT THE WAY OF THE ETERNAL GOD** (pounds on desk). It's the way of deceiving man. It's the way of Satan. And look what its doing in this country. Look what is going on in the 1960's in this nation and the violence that came here and there and all over the nation. I'll be going over this in other sermons that are coming on, like I did fifteen or twenty years ago. It's time to get back to a lot of that again. Because man always thinks he knows better than God. It's all what man thinks is the right way to go.

A Son In His Likeness

But each person is born after his parents and after their kind or family. And we are born in a family. And the Bible doesn't speak about race very much. It speaks about families. And there should not be inter-family marriage because a family is a kind. Now there's a whole lot about where did the different races come from and a lot of things like that. I won't have time for that. I'm only just going to start a foundation for this, today. I'm going to have a lot of sermons on this subject. I know Satan's going to bring it up and I'm going to beat him to the punch. [audience laughs]

Each is born after his own parent's kind of race, one way or the other. And either he'll be yellow or black or white or he'll be a mixture, of one or the other. Let's go back now to Genesis 5

***Genesis 5:3** And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begat a son in his own likeness, after his image; and called his name Seth:*

Adam begat a son in his likeness. A black man married to a black woman begets a son after his likeness or a daughter maybe and they will be black. A white man and a white woman begat a son or a daughter after their likeness, and the son or the daughter will be white. And if you mix it, they won't be either one. They'll be part one and part the other, a blend of the two. Now I want to go a little further. But man, going the way HE chose, marrying the ones HE chose, instead of the way God said it should be, wanted to amalgamate, wanted to integrate. God had decreed segregation. Man wanted integration. Come now to Genesis 11, the first eight verses.

Genesis 11:1-8 *And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. (2) And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; [And this is after the flood now, shortly after the flood] and they dwelt there. (3) And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar. (4) And they said, Go to, [that is, "let's get going here"] let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; [skyscrapers, we call them] and let us make us a name, [WHY?] lest we be scattered [or segregated. We want integration **WE don't want segregation**. Lest we be segregated, scattered.] abroad upon the face of the whole earth. (5) And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. (6) And the Eternal said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. (7) Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. (8) So the Eternal scattered them [or segregated them – He didn't integrate them, He segregated them and scattered them] abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city.*

The Generations Of Noah

They stopped it. Now I want to go back to Genesis 10:5

Well let's see, this is talking about now, these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth and so on. The sons of Japheth, Gomer and so on. Now it mentions some of the sons of Japheth here and in verse 5 it says,

Genesis 10:5 By these were the isles of the Gentiles divided in their lands; every one after his tongue, after their families...

Or their races. The Bible uses the word family instead of race. A family is what you generate, as I say, two Japanese married will produce a Japanese child which we might call the Yellow and not the Caucasian race. Two Caucasians or whites will produce a white. Two blacks will produce a black. But it was after their families, after their races, in their nations. Now the sons of Ham and he begins to give them and I won't go into those genealogies now. But there were a good many there.

Now, at the time of the flood, now let's see. Man going the way He chose, wanted to amalgamate and integrate the races. Now, at the time of the flood, again. Noah was righteous in his generations, plural. Not his generation. Meaning in his ancestry. Noah, in Genesis 6, in a minute I'll have it here. Let's read this again.

Genesis 6:9 These are the generations of Noah: Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations...

He wasn't perfect in himself or spiritually or anything of that kind. He was only perfect in generations or in his ancestry. He was the same strain that he had been. And if you want to check it all the way through, and his ancestry on down, you'll find Noah was white. Noah's wife was white. Now

apparently, he was the only man left that was pure white. He had not mixed the strain. The family had remained intact, as God had decreed that it should.

But the others were not. They had intermarried and interracial, brought racial trouble they had racial violence and other violence in those days and we're back to the same things today. As it was in the days of Noah, so it is today and that's exactly where we are today.

Now let's get something after the flood. After the flood in Genesis 10.

Genesis 10:31-32 *These are the sons of Shem, after their families,* [or in their race, family, race. The Bible uses the word family instead of race, usually] ... *(32) These are the families of the sons of Noah families* [families or races of the sons of Noah], *after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood.*

A Wife For Isaac

Alright. Abraham was of the family of Noah. And Abraham was white. God called Abraham and told him to leave the family where he was and people of all of his race, his family, or his color or whatever you want to call it and go to a land where he would show him. In that land were people poaching there that didn't belong there and God had never given it to them and God intended to give him that land, because it is the geographical center of the Earth, and it's marvelous for climate. And once again, when God restores it like it used to be, it'll be a land of milk and honey, which it is not exactly today. But it's marvelous what has happened to it since the Israelis went back there. And the part that they have is rich in agriculture already. Whereas other parts that are occupied by Arabs are not. But Abraham went to a land that God showed him and it was a Promised Land that God was going to promise to him. Now God said to Abraham in that land, that he would give it to his children forever. That is the Promised Land but at that time, there

were the Canaanites there. And they were black not white. Alright. Abraham finally had a son of his own through Sarah and the time came to select a wife for Abraham's son. So he sent this older servant, which was really, the manager of all of his properties and over all his other servants, of which he had many, he sent him to his own family, where his family lived, to select a wife for Isaac. "Isaac must not," he said. Well, let me read that. Let me see. I think I have that marked here. I guess I didn't. It's Genesis 24, in the first four verses.

Genesis 24:1-4 And Abraham was old, and well stricken in age: [and if you chase the genealogy, Abraham was of the same strain as Noah, from Shem, right on down] and the LORD had blessed Abraham in all things. (2) And Abraham said unto his eldest servant of his house, that ruled over all that he had, Put, I pray thee, thy hand under my thigh: (3) And I will make thee swear by the Eternal, the God of heaven, and the God of the earth, that thou shalt not take a wife unto my son of the daughters of the Canaanites, among whom I dwell: (4) But thou shalt go unto my country, and to my kindred, [of his family or of his race, they were all of the same race] and take a wife unto my son Isaac.

Because Of The Wrong Religion?

Now some people will say that when Ezra and Nehemiah cause people, who had intermarried with another race, to send their wives and even the children born back away from them, and divorce them, and put them away, they said, yeah but that was because of their wrong religion. Oh no, it wasn't. Abraham sent over to his kindred, to his color, but they were of a different religion. So a little later, you will find, Abraham's grandson, Jacob, who had worked for Laban for a long time you know, and when he left Laban, his wife Rachel stole the idols from her father Laban and carried those little idols with her. And Laban came out to find them. They were his gods. So they were

worshipping a different god over there. But Abraham sent to get someone of that race, of that color, of that family, for a wife for Isaac, even though they were of a different religion. But I think they got God's religion, once Rebecca came over. She got God's religion through Abraham and through Isaac. So you can say that the only reason for not marrying another race is because it means that you'll be going into a different religion. That's not the reason. Rachel was of a different religion than knowing God and she stole those gods when they fled.

Now the ancient nation Israel is called the family of Israel. There were a family and they were of that race. I have traced it down and I find that God kept that family pretty well intact all the way down through Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and down into the Children of Israel. And they didn't mix with the Egyptians. They were in a country of their own, geographically segregated in the land of Goshen and not with the rest of Israel. And they were making bricks and things that were carried over to the Egyptian part of the land and not the same at all.

Now let's look and see what we're going to be in the time of the millennium Let's look into Zechariah 14.

***Zechariah 14:16-19** And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations [or families or races] which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles. (17) And it shall be, that whoso will not come up of all the families of the earth unto Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, even upon them shall be no rain. (18) And if the family of Egypt [or race, there again, it's a family, the family of Egypt] go not up, and come not, that have no rain; there shall be the plague, wherewith the LORD will smite the heathen that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles. (19) This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of all nations [or families] that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles.*

Now, that's what it will be like in the millennium when God is ruling. Now what of us in the Church? In the church, God said that in Abraham would all the families, all the races of the Earth will be blessed in Christ. One race has just as much chance and just as much blessing in Christ as any other. Race is only a matter of generation, of begetting children. And that's why the marriage is so important. God is not the author of discrimination. We should love one another and in God's Church, we've been trying to do that. But we find this racial prejudice, which gets down to hatred if you don't squelch it before it gets that far. It keeps cropping up every once in a while. I'm sorry. I don't want to have to get back to it like I did about fifteen years ago or twenty. But I see that it's coming out again and we're going to have to get back to it.

What Is The Color Of The Sun?

Now in the resurrection and in the World Tomorrow, how many of us will be black and how many of us will be white, brethren? And how many will be yellow? If we're in the Kingdom of God, not one of us will be any one of those. Our faces will shine as bright as the sun. What's the color of the sun? That'll be the color of your faces and your skin. Well maybe not your whole body, but there isn't going to be any matter of color at all. You know why?

What about sex in the millennium? There won't be any. There won't be men, there won't be women. We won't have sex. We'll be as the angels in heaven, so said Jesus Christ. Sex is a matter now of generations but it has nothing to do with coming to God through Christ and gaining Eternal life and getting into the Kingdom of God. It has to do with the raising of children and God wanted the races kept separate.

Now we have different color of roses. We have different variety in a lot of things. We have different variety of horses, different varieties of cows,

different varieties of dogs. And different varieties can interbreed. But if you're a stock raiser and you're raising stock for display, to win a prize, at a stock show, you're not going to mix the breeds. It'll be a thoroughbred or a pure blood or whatever you want to call it. And that's the way it ought to be with us.

Race is only something that has nothing to do with your salvation. It has only to do with reproduction. Now that's why when you integrate, you get in danger of interracial marriage. We have integration at Ambassador College here. And this college was going so far over into Satan's way, that we had an interracial marriage here. I don't know was it, one year ago or three years ago? Something like that. Now one man who was one of our leading ministers, endorsed it and was going to perform that wedding. I understand he backed out at the last minute. And the couple, of course it was a black man and a white woman, they went over to Las Vegas and got married over there.

God is not in favor of interracial marriage. God is not in favor of discrimination either. But marriage and the reproduction of children is another thing altogether. Now this church has done everything it could for the black people. We've tried to have no discrimination of any kind. You know how the college in Bricket Wood actually got started? I went over there in 1969. We'd outgrown the office. We had to get a bigger office in London. And at the time, I had the idea, because we had not gone to integration in the college. But we wanted to do what we could for our black people. Because they were in the church but we were not accepting them in the college just because we were afraid it would lead to interracial marriage. But they were accepted in the church. And one thing I wanted was an office that would be on the kind of a property where we could also have a school for black men since we could not accept them at Ambassador College. Because I thought a lot about them. And I didn't want to discriminate and I wanted to give them every opportunity that the white man had, and that is as ministers. And we

were only thinking of men only at that time because we were only thinking of a school for ministers. Actually what we found, we ran across the place that we did, and when we saw that, we said, “well God wants a whole, liberal arts college over here. He led us to a property for an entire big college. Not just a little small place. We found a little place that would have taken of the kind of the little school. I thought about only having thirty five students. And we found a small place that would have taken care of that. The office and 35 students and a school. It led to an entire college. But that’s what we had in mind at the time.

Geographical Segregation

Now in the millennium, there’s going to be one pure language so that all nations can worship God but they are going to be segregated geographically in their own different places. Now if you turn to Nehemiah 13:

***Nehemiah 13:23-26** In those days also saw I Jews that had married wives of Ashdod, of Ammon, and of Moab: (24) And their children spake half in the speech of Ashdod, and could not speak in the Jews’ language, but according to the language of each people. (25) And I contended with them, [and God had divided them and divided their language in order to divide the nations, geographically] and cursed them, and smote certain of them, and plucked off their hair, and made them swear by God, saying, Ye shall not give your daughters unto their sons, nor take their daughters unto your sons, or for yourselves. (26) Did not Solomon king of Israel sin by these things? Yet among many nations was there no king like him, who was beloved of his God, and God made him king over all Israel: nevertheless even him did outlandish women cause to sin.*

Well anyway, Ezra and Nehemiah just simply caused them to divorce those wives and to send them away. And they were the ministers of God and

that is the way of God. Now there is a great deal more to this. I only wanted to give you just sort of a foundation and the background today. But we're going to have to go into this. This church still has a little leaven to clean up and get out of our house. But we've been getting it out and we're going to continue getting it out. And we're going to continue right along to now. So that's as much as I'm going to take time for today. But I'm going to write some more on this God willing.

I don't know how much longer I'm going to keep this up, if this temperature that I have, sore throat, head cold (laughs) and everything doesn't leave. It's indeed very difficult but I'm fighting through trying to keep up. I hope you understand. I'm not up to par at all. I'm speaking to you and I'm way below par but God has given me the truth in my mind just the same and I hope that you're getting it brethren. I'm doing the best that I can and I don't know how I can do much more. Thank you very much.

Grateful for God's Blessings

Sermon (May 4, 1982)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Grateful for God's Blessings.....	1107	God's Glory	1121
Comparing Man To God	1108	Importance Of Attitude	1123
Understanding The Bible	1111	Glory Which Shall Be Revealed	1124
Also Christ's Greatness	1113	Our High Priest	1127
Human Potential	1115	World In Danger	1130
Satan's Attitude Causes Sin	1119	Benefits From God	1132

... God's headquarters – temporary headquarters – for our time now, if we realize how God has blessed us here, if we realize what we really do have. The Bible Studies: I've said it before, but they continue to be so exceptionally interesting. They're interesting. They are educational. They are inspiring. They are eye opening, and they give us God's truth. They give it in an entertaining and an interesting way, and almost an exciting way.

I have noticed that different speakers in the Bible Studies have different approaches, their own different personalities, different types of subject matter, and we have variety; and. I never cease to thank God for it. I think of the type of Protestant church I was brought up in. They didn't have anything like that. It was boring by comparison.

Then the morning service and so interesting, so inspiring, invigorating all the way through; and then this service so far, and sermonette. I wonder if you realize what God is giving you here? I wonder if you appreciate it? I wonder how much you thank Him for it?

Now, I'm very thankful for the great increase in attendance and very often even overflow crowds, especially on the Bible Study Friday nights because we have Sabbath morning services and Sabbath afternoon services in two different places, so we have more auditorium space for the Sabbath

daytime services than we do the Friday night Bible Study. But we certainly are blessed, and I just wanted to mention that. I think that we all ought to just praise God for it and be so thankful.

You know, it would seem like somehow that Satan has managed to move our best ministers, our best speakers, out of the Church. I was remarking (Was it last Sabbath, or when was it?) how 50% of those ministers who have reached the top rank in God's Church have gone out or had to be put out. Really, they seemed to be the most able speakers. Yet we're getting so much more inspiring sermons today than we did then. Now, why is that?

It seems that the good ones went out, but that was all personality and self. It's a good deal like God said to Zerubbabel: "It's not by might, or power, by your own human personality; but by My Spirit," says God, (the LORD). I think that somehow God's Spirit is getting into us in a way that we didn't seem to have it to the same extent five years, seven years, ten years ago, fifteen years even ago.

If we just dedicate ourselves still more – spend more time in Bible study, more time in prayer, and appreciate these things and how much more wonderful it is, and how much more satisfying really than a football game, a basketball game, or a movie, or some entertainment or excitement in this world, which are... Well, I don't know. They are dull, and boring, and depressing by comparison; and I think we ought to think about it.

Comparing Man To God

Yet, when we do, I wonder if you ever wonder yourself "Why should the great God be concerned about you?" (You, you, you, you – just you sitting down there.) You as an individual! Who are you? What do you amount to? Why should God be concerned about you? I wonder if you realize how insignificant, and how unimportant, and how little you are – at least

compared to God.

You know, when I take off in the G-2 airplane, or if you take off on any airplane, as you swoop on up from the runway and you begin to gain a little bit of altitude, if you're looking out and down (out the window and down), you notice that for the first minutes or two (for a few seconds) people begin to shrink. Then you get up a little higher and you look down and see streets, if you are over a city, and automobiles get smaller. They are little tiny specks down there, and you can't see the people any longer. Even houses and buildings get smaller until they just shrink and there isn't anything left of them. They look so small!

I wonder how they look to God, and how we look to Him. I'd like you to notice back in Isaiah 40. This is a chapter that I have been using for, I would say, more than 40-45 years now, off and on. Beginning with verse 15, Isaiah 40:

Isaiah 40:15 Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, he [God] taketh up the isles as a very little thing.

They're fighting over the Falkland Islands down there in South American, off the coast of South America, now – as if they were very big and important things. They are very little things really to God.

Isaiah 40:16-17 All nations before him are as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity. [Oh, yes, lots of vanity. We think very much of ourselves!] (17) To whom then will you liken God? [Now this is comparing how little we are compared to the great God. "To whom then will you liken God?"] Or what likeness will ye compare unto him?

Then dropping down to verse 22:

Isaiah 40:22 It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth [Oh, yes,

God knows very well the earth is round. He created it and put it here. “The circle of the earth ...”], *and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers.*

You know, there was a comedy record about an airplane flight to Hawaii from California – the great Al Ferguson Airline. Did any of you ever hear that record? (About 15 years ago, or something like that?) They got on this little airline that believed in economy, you know. I think it was the DC-1, something like that. They dispensed with seats, because they wanted economy; and it was only the first-class passengers that had straps to hang on to. The others had to stand without even a strap to hang on to. Someone looked out the window, and said, “Well, look, the people down there look just like grasshoppers.” Then the captain said, “Well, those are grasshoppers. You idiot! We haven’t even taken off yet.” [Audience laughs.]

Ever since, I’ve been thinking how people are just less than grasshoppers or little tiny ants. You know there are different kinds of ants; but some of them are these little tiny things, and they can be real pests sometimes when they climb into your house or up into the second floor. They get all around. I don’t know how they do it; but they go through the tiniest cracks, you know. Well, that’s the way we seem.

Isaiah 40:22 It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain [That’s what God does.], and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in.

Now to verse 25.

Isaiah 40:25-26 To whom then will ye liken me, or shall I be equal? saith the Holy One. (26) Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath created these things, that bringeth out their host by number [That is, the stars.]: he calleth them all by names by the greatness of his might, for that he is strong in power; not one faileth.

Comparing man to God – we are AS NOTHING, as a tiny speck of dirt or dust; and yet we tend to think we are something sometimes. Yet there does exist somehow in the mind, or the nature, of every one of us a certain inferiority complex. I've noticed a lot of people suffering from that inferiority complex. They try to ride over it. I've known some that want to think they are scholars. So they are scholarly; and now they think, "Well, now I am important. I'm a somebody." We have to get to thinking we are a 'somebody' it seems, or we smart under the feeling of inferiority.

The colleges and the universities of this world inculcate in students in higher education an attitude of professionalism. "I'm professional now. I'm running a profession. I'm better." It makes me think of the one who says, "I better than you is." Only they don't use that kind of language. They are clear above that now. They're above everything and everybody! Of course, they are even above God, those little ants some. I wonder what God thinks of them.

You know even Saul, who was ... Wasn't he the tallest man in Israel at the time? But, at the beginning, he was little and small in his own sight; and he was all right as long as he was little in his own sight. But when he began to realize how big he was physically, and thought he was big compared to God, God couldn't use him any longer. We have to be small in our own sight. We simply have to be.

Understanding The Bible

Now, if we turn back to Hebrews (And I've been going through Hebrews now the past two or three Sabbaths. It's one of the most wonderful books in the Bible, certainly.), in the first chapter we see something again about how great God is; and not only God, but how great Jesus Christ is.

In Isaiah 40 we see something about the greatness of God; and, in a

sense, that was speaking of Yhwh, who became Christ. That was the only God they knew anything about in the Old Testament. Jesus Christ came. He was the Yhwh of the Old Testament. He came to **reveal the Father**. In the Old Testament time, Israel didn't know there was God the Father back of the One they thought of as God. The One they thought of as God was the Word, who became Christ. They didn't know that; and people don't seem to know that even today. Yet that is true; and many, many scriptures in the New Testament prove it.

So now we know how great God is compared to man. Let's see how great Christ is. Let me go over it again. You know some of these things are worth going over again and again and again. Someone can say, "Well, I've read the Bible. I've read it all the way through. I don't want to be bothered with it any more. I read that before." Well, so have I. My wife and I, not too long after we were married, had read the Bible ALL THE WAY THROUGH – from Genesis to Revelation. I let her do most of the reading, because she was a fast reader and I was a slow reader. But to me it was just a lot of blah, blah, blah, blah. I didn't know a word ... I didn't understand it. I just used to say, "Well, I just can't understand the Bible." And that is true of most people!

Now, of course, some parts of the Bible, anyone with a good mind can understand because a great deal of the Bible is history, and people can understand that. Some of it is instruction about the right kind of living, and even much of that is easily understood by even a carnal mind. Much is prophecy, and very few do understand that. Yet there is a spiritual side of the Bible, and almost nobody seems to understand that.

But I have noticed, when I read the Bible again (and I read this chapter over again), I see something new there that I never saw before. I know I have preached on the same subject. I preach a sermon to you. I travel, and I speak to another group in some part of the United States the next Sabbath. Some of them who have traveled with me on the airplane – I tell them, "I'm sorry. I'm

going to use that same sermon. I hate to do that and you be bored by hearing it all over again.” Well, they do; but they say, “It was like a new sermon. I got things out of it I didn’t get before.” If we are speaking spiritually, that’s true. That’s the way it is with God’s Word, the Bible. You go over it a second time, and you see things you didn’t see the first time. We don’t get it all with one reading!

Also Christ’s Greatness

And some of these things in Hebrews are worth going over again and again and again. So now, going back to the first chapter again:

Hebrews 1:1-2 God, who at sundry times [and as great as God is] and in [different] manners spake in time past unto the father by the prophets. (2) Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of ALL THINGS, by whom also he MADE the worlds.

All things were created by Jesus Christ, but they were all created by God **through** Jesus Christ. Christ is the Word. He spoke, and it was done; but He spoke only what God the Father told Him to speak. The power of the Holy Spirit is the power that actually did what Jesus Christ spoke, and so there is **power** back of His word.

Hebrews 1:2-3 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir [that is, heir to inherit] all things [but He has inherited all things now.], by whom also he MADE the worlds. [God, who created all things by Jesus Christ, as you’ll read in Ephesians 3 and verse 9.] (3) Who being the brightness of his [of God’s] glory, and the express image of his person ...

That is, **stamped with God’s own character** – in the **image**, in the CHARACTER, of God. Now God said, “*Let Us make man in OUR image*

(Genesis 1:26), *after OUR likeness.*” He not only meant, as He had just in the verse before talked about making cattle after the cattle kind and other animals after their kind, now He said “Let Us make man after THE GOD KIND.” After the GOD kind! Now God made us little. He made us insignificant. But there is something else that I want you to see as we go along.

Hebrews 1:3 Who being the brightness of [God’s] glory [which is so great that our minds can’t conceive it], and the express image of his person [or stamped with God’s own character!] ...

When God said make us “in His image,” He meant to stamp us with His **character**. Now, we weren’t born with it. We have to ACQUIRE IT, and that requires our decision, our desire, our acquiescence to that way – which is God’s way. And to realize we’ve been going the wrong way (ever since we were little children, you might say). That we’ve been filled with self-centeredness, with vanity, with greed, with jealousy and envy, with the spirit of competition and strife – all of which is just the opposite of God’s way of love.

Hebrews 1:3 ... the express image of his person, and upholding ALL THINGS [The Moffatt translation and others have that “upholding THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE” ‘all things’ here means. It does mean all things, and I’ll prove it to you later now. The universe ...] by the word of his power.

In other words, Christ is **sustaining** the universe and keeps the earth turning on its axis, keeps the earth going around the sun once a year, keeps the moon going around the earth once every 29 1/2 days approximately. Christ is the Heir who now is doing all of that! He has that much power. That is how great He is! God has given Him all that glory, the glory of God.

Hebrews 1:4 Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

Angels were separately created, but Jesus was begotten of God, sired by God, and born of God in a way that no other human was, that no angel has been. He is the only human ever born that did not have a human father but had God as His Father. So He was God as well as man (although He was born of a human mother).

Hebrews 1:5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

But He gave up all of the glory He had – and He had all that glory with God – and came down here to be a human being, as little in God’s sight (you might say, in a sense) as we are (like a little grasshopper, or an ant, or something); but He still had the Spirit of God, and He lived as we ought to live, and He set an example for us. Then He gave that life, and He loved that human life. He knew what it was to live even a human life. It’s only a temporary existence. It’s not real Life in the immortal sense. He hated to give it up, but He did; and He gave it up for you and me because He loves you and me, and He did it for us. That’s about the greatest thing anyone can do for another – is to give your life for them.

So again we see how great not only was God, compared to man, but how great Christ was.

Human Potential

Now coming on to the second chapter, and beginning ... I’m covering over some fast ground once again, coming over to verse 5.

Hebrews 2:5 For unto the angels hath he NOT put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak.

The subject matter here, what it’s speaking about, is the World

Tomorrow. In other words, the Kingdom of God after this world is done. It's the next world, "*the world to come, whereof we speak.*"

Hebrews 2:6 *But one in a certain place testified, saying [This is a quotation from the eighth Psalm.], What is man, that thou art mindful of him?*

Yeah, little man down here. All nations are as a drop in the bucket compared to God. We are like little grasshoppers. **Who are you? Who do you think you are?** What is man that God, GREAT AS HE IS, should be mindful of one of us?

Hebrews 2:6-7 *Or the son of man, that thou visitest him? (7) Thou madest him a little lower than the angels.*

Now angels are very important, very high in the scale of life. We're made lower. They are way above us. So we were made even lower than the angels.

Hebrews 2:7 *Thou crownedst him [That is man now.] with GLORY ...*

Oh, now it's speaking about the glory that God has! And God has crowned MAN (who is like a little ant or a grasshopper) with GLORY. Now let's begin to get it.

Hebrews 2:7 *Thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands.*

Now, what are the works of God's hands? Well, He created matter; and He set us over it. He's talking about "*the world to come.*" That is not under subjection to angels. But He set us over the works of His hands.

Hebrews 2:8 *Thou hast put ALL THINGS [And again, it means the universe.] in subjection under his feet.*

In other words, ALL THINGS – **THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE** – is put in

subjection UNDER OUR FEET. Now God is beginning to raise **US** up to **His status of glory and honor!** Yet ALL NATIONS have been as a drop in the bucket to Him. **As mortal flesh, as human beings, we are as nothing!** But when we receive the Holy Spirit of God, and when we begin to imbibe the very nature – **the divine nature** – of God (*“Partakers”* as Peter writes it *“of the divine nature.”*), and we just drink in and soak in that divine nature (the very nature of God, the personality of God, the CHARACTER of God) ...

You see, Jesus was stamped with God’s own CHARACTER; and **we are to become stamped with His character**, but it is a gradual process and you don’t get it all at once. Now He’s beginning to show us how important we are, how LITTLE we are without Him; and yet how important **through** Him we can become. Why should He be concerned about YOU or about ME? Because He is going to make any **one** of us greater than all of the nations on this earth put together are now. Brethren, I wonder if we can begin to grasp what God has in store for us, and what is the actual **human potential** – what we may become!

It’s hard for us to realize how INSIGNIFICANT and how UNIMPORTANT we really are, and yet how **GREAT** and how **MIGHTY** we can become (IF, and “if” is the biggest little two-letter word in all the English language.), **IF** we repent of the way we’ve been living and get out of our minds and hearts what has been there – selfishness, vanity, lust and greed, envy, malice, jealousy, the spirit of competition and strife, glorifying the self, wanting to get and take away from others for our self and for vanity.

Look what Jesus gave up. He gave up everything. He gave up EVERYTHING to come down and be born as a human being so that He could die and give up that life after He had that life. He had to give up that. He gave up all the glory He had with God before He was born as a human being. He GAVE UP. He gave; and He wants us to learn that the right way of living is giving, not getting.

Oh, you can go over this again and again and get something new out of it. You need to think it over again and again. Someone will say, “Well now, isn’t Mr. Armstrong going over this again? How many times before has he gone over that?” Yes, several times. I expect to several times more yet, and next time you’ll get something you’re not getting now out of it too.

Hebrews 2:8 Thou has put all things [That’s the whole universe.] in subjection under his feet. For in that he [God] put all in subjection under him [man], he left **NOTHING** [You see, it’s another thing the universe. He left nothing ...] that is not put under him.

He didn’t leave some other galaxy. He didn’t leave other parts of the universe that is not put under us. It’s all-inclusive. He excluded nothing! In other words, we are to **BECOME GOD**. God said, “*Let Us make man in Our image.*” In other words, make man after the God kind! God is reproducing Himself! He wants us to be **begotten** as His children; and so that He can say of us, as He did of Christ, that we are **BORN OF HIM**. (Not during this mortal, human life.) That will come through a resurrection in the next life. But we can have that glory. We can be **BORN OF GOD!**

We are far more insignificant, and little, and small, and of nothing than we think we are now. But we can become so many millions times – billions times – greater than we think we can, **ultimately**, if we only can open our eyes to see what God is trying to tell us. That’s what we can become.

Hebrews 2:8-9 But now we see **not yet all things** ... [We don’t see ... The universe isn’t put under us yet. (9) But [What do we see now?] we see *Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels* [And He came down as a human being, just like us.], *for the suffering of death.*

He was made mortal for that purpose, in order that He could suffer death. Now in, let me see, it’s the 13th chapter (I think) of Revelation, that He was slain as the Lamb of God – slain from the foundation of the world. In

other words, when Adam made the wrong decision and sinned and defied God, right then Christ offered Himself to come; and it was agreed between God and the Word that the Word should become flesh and dwell among us and give up ALL OF THE GREAT GLORY that He had with God (because God had created everything – all the angels, all the universe – by Him).

Satan's Attitude Causes Sin

He was going to give up ALL of that and come down to be like one of us, but **different** from Adam. He was the second Adam, and He never committed a sin. Different from you and me, He **never let** a sinful attitude enter into His mind. We should have been able to have lived like that; but we just weren't, not one of us. One reason is that Satan got to every one of us before we were a year old, because he's the prince of the power of the air.

Just as there are many voices and pictures in the air right inside of this auditorium now, not one of you are seeing it. But you could put in a television set, and tune it in, and the pictures will come and you can see them; and the voices, and you hear them. They're here! Only you can't ... you are not tuned into the frequency, or the wave length, or something; and you can't see it and you can't hear it without a machine, without an instrument, to bring it in. But the sounds are here, just as much as if you were listening.

Through the air, Satan can put in the child's mind as it begins to develop in the first year of an infant's growth (before he's a year old) can put an attitude of self-centeredness – an attitude of vanity, of self-centeredness, and wanting to grasp and take and have. That attitude begins, and that attitude is what causes sin.

Now sin is when the temptation comes and you harbor the thought, and you think about it maybe a while (maybe you don't just sin immediately), but

then finally it conceives into a sin – into an action! Sin is the action.

I tell you, some of these thoughts came into the mind of Christ; but He didn't let them stay there. He cast them out. He was SO CLOSE TO GOD because He prayed to God more often than you do, brethren. Not one of you pray like He did; I don't either, I'm sorry to say. I don't know. I think if I prayed as often as Jesus did maybe I wouldn't have time to get all the work done; still He had time to get all of His work done, but He had time for prayer too. I guess He was just more devoted to it than we are. He had His mind on it, and that was number one on His mind. But He was able to think of two things at a time – to think of the need to pray to God and the need of doing what He was doing.

I can't seem to do that. I can only have one thing at a time on my mind; but I can go from one thing to another, and I can shut one thing out of my mind and open up my mind to something else. But I have a single-track mind. I can only have one thing at a time on it.

Now I know a man who can be writing at a typewriter. Someone else can come, and he'd go on writing and thinking what he was writing and still talking in a conversation to another man on another subject. Now I could not do that in a million years, I don't think. My mind won't do that. And I've seen piano players that can play and they can talk to someone else, and they go right on with the same music while their minds are on something else; but they have to also have their mind on what they are playing, or their fingers wouldn't do it. I could never do a thing like that.

Some people can because some people have talents that others don't have, I suppose. Talents and abilities vary within different people. That's true. But we all have acquired the same nature that has come from Satan nevertheless; and, as a result, all of us have gone into the nature – the act, actually – of sin.

Romans 3:23 All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

God's Glory

But, from the time of Adam's sin, it was decreed and decided – covenanted between God and the Word – that the Word was to be made flesh and dwell among us, and give up all of the glory He had with God, and come down in the lowliness of a human being (lower than an ant or a grasshopper) – when all nations (and He was only a little tiny one individual of one nation) and all nations were as a drop in a bucket to God. That's how small He let Himself become. Even then, He loved that life (just as you love yours) – that temporary existence. That's all it is. But He was willing to give it up, for you and for me.

He only came down in order to give up that glory with God, for you and for me; and then He gave up this life, for you and for me. But God resurrected Him after He had done that. Now He is **the firstborn of many brethren**, so we can be born of God and now come into the same GLORY THAT HE HAS, **and be as much God as He is God!** God is reproducing Himself, and He wants us to become His children until we become as GREAT as God is. When we begin to catch the vision of that, and we begin to want to serve God instead of self, and we begin to get back on the track (as we've been trying to do here in the last three or four years), God begins to bless us. And, oh, how He is blessing this Church and the headquarters here, and the HARMONY that we have here at headquarters now.

Satan isn't going to let that just lie there all the time. We thought we had such harmony in different places, and then we'd find there was a little bit here that we didn't notice. I wonder if you ever noticed on the Days of Unleavened Bread, you work so hard on the preparation day to get every bit of leaven out of your home; and have you ever noticed, you women, that you

discovered some little bit in a nook or a cranny somewhere that you had overlooked and you didn't get out. See: that is to teach us that when we think we've gotten all the sin out, we just haven't yet. Some of it we overlooked and we didn't get out.

We thought we had everything straightened out down in Australia. We had a lot of trouble back there in 1980. I had to send a couple of men, or even three men, down there to help get it straightened out. Let's see, about three or four ministers were brought to see the mistake they were making; and they got back on the track. There were two or three that had to be put out, that wouldn't get back on the track. We thought we had them all back on the track; and then, just recently, we found another one. He was a "rightist."

So, as you heard in the sermonette, you are not to turn to the right or the left. In other words, don't add or diminish to the commandments of God. That means just go right down that line. Stay on the track! Don't go to the right or to the left, and don't get derailed **off the track!**

Here was a man that was a "rightist." He said that the other ministers were still "leftists" and that they were not back on the track. That he was the only one that was back on the track! Well, we had to put him out of the Church. Our minister in charge of things in Australia had to fly back to headquarters. He had made a very exhaustive investigation. He brought me report from lay members and other ministers – not just his own idea at all; but absolute, complete evidence. I had to decide to put him out. So he went back there and had a conference with him and told him what had happened.

Once he realized he was on the outside, that really hit him. That brought him to repentance, I hope. I don't know whether it's a complete, full repentance or not. But, when he did, he's been accepted back into the Church; but, so far, not back into the ministry because one thing is all the evidence showed that he was a square peg in a round hole. He never should have been

put in the ministry. Even when he was in Ambassador College, he was in another part of work. He could deal with things, but he couldn't seem to deal with people; and that was the main thing. He couldn't deal with people. So far he's not back in the ministry, but his attitude is right.

Importance Of Attitude

Now there was another man, a minister over a flock. He was called in, and I had to talk to him. He was doing things that weren't right; and yet his attitude was good, and he didn't mean to do wrong. But he was doing wrong. Yet he was a good minister. He was a good speaker. He was not doctrinally in disagreement. Two can't walk together except they be agreed. Well, he agreed all right. But I had to take him out of his pastorate and put him under an older, stronger minister. But he had a **right attitude**.

IF your attitude is right, God can use you! You can repent. You can change. You can get right with God, and you can go on. But, if your ATTITUDE is wrong, nobody can deal with you. God can't. Nobody can. You have to have a right, willing attitude or even God can't deal with you because God gives you the right ...

We talked a little bit in the sermonette about rights, and we have our human rights in this country. Yes, you have a right to go out and kill someone, if you want to, maybe. God gives you that right; but, of course, the police don't. They are probably going to catch up with you, and you're going to suffer at man's hands, and you'll also suffer at God's hands. You are going to suffer doubly. You may not see how God is punishing you at the time.

You have a right to lie. You have a right to steal. But God allows you to. He doesn't give you a right to. I think maybe that's not stated quite right. I don't know that He gives you a right to. But yet, in a sense, since He is allows it, you can do it. You are the one who can decide. God isn't going to

prevent it IF you are going to insist on doing it. But God wants us to come in a right attitude.

You see: God Himself has the right attitude. That is an attitude of love to all of us. No matter what you've done, God still loves you. It took me a long time ...

[***Tape skips at 42:58*]

Of course, I do know that God isn't going to bless them in evil and evil doing, and in some of the things they've been doing that has made them enemies. So I know that asking God to bless them doesn't mean that I am asking God to help them go on with their evil, because God is not going to bless anybody that way. That isn't the way God blesses. We do need to pray for our enemies.

Glory Which Shall Be Revealed

Well, now, if you notice ... going on here. Jesus was made human **for** the purpose of death. That's why He came down here; and He was the Lamb of God "*slain from the foundation of the world*" – from the time that Adam sinned. That's why it is written in the book of Hebrews also, in the 9th^{[1](#)} chapter that we'll be coming to later:

Hebrews 9:27 It is appointed [for all] men once to die, but after this [after that death] *the judgment* [because this life is only temporary].

That's why death is called "sleep" in the Bible. You go to sleep, and you're going to wake up in a resurrection.

Hebrews 2:9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, **for the suffering of death**, [Now, wonder what we see. We don't see all things put under our feet yet, but we do see Jesus ...] *crowned with glory*

and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man [for you and for me].

“Every man” means every person. It isn’t a matter of gender.

Hebrews 2:10 *For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things [That is, the whole universe.], in bringing many sons [Or children. There won’t be any sex in the Kingdom. So even those who are female and women now will be called sons I suppose in the Kingdom of God.] unto glory [because there won’t be any matter of sex one way or the other. “And bringing many children, (or sons) unto glory.”], to make the captain of their salvation [who is Christ. “To make Him ...”] perfect through sufferings.*

Now, that takes us back to the 8th chapter; and, once again, let me just hurriedly go over that – in the 8th chapter of Romans, and beginning with (let me see) verse 18:

Romans 8:18 *I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the GLORY which SHALL BE revealed in us.*

You are so little now, but you are only a tiny speck that even couldn’t be seen in one of the whole nations; and yet all the nations of the earth are not a drop in the bucket to God. That’s how insignificant we are NOW! But talking about the glory which SHALL BE revealed in us.

Romans 8:19 *For the earnest expectation of the [creation, as that should be] waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.*

You read in I John that:

I John 3:2 *Beloved, now are we [already, now] the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear [That is, it can’t be seen now.] what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear [and cometh, the Second Coming], we shall*

be like him: for we shall see him as he is.

Then you have to turn back here to Philippians to get what that will be like, that we'll be like then. Let's see. Philippians 3:21, about the Lord Jesus Christ:

Philippians 3:21 *Who shall **change** our vile body [That is, at Christ's Second Coming. At the time of our resurrection, "Change our vile body ..."], that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious [or glorified] body [And that's what we shall be like!].*

Now "waiting for the manifestation of the sons of God" – that's the same as waiting until we appear, we can be changed; and they can actually see that glory. It can't be seen now. In the 8th chapter of Romans then: "Shall be revealed in us [that glory]." It will be revealed so the people can see it.

Romans 8:19-23 *For the earnest expectation of the [creation] waiteth for the manifestation [until we can be seen] of the sons of God. [It can't be seen now.] (20) For the [creation] was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope, (21) because the [creation] itself [Not "creature" but "creation." The physical creation ...] also shall be delivered from the bondage [or the thralldom] of corruption [which it is in now] into the glorious liberty of the children of God. (22) For we know that **the whole creation** groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. (23) And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit ...*

Because we are **the firstfruits** – those that God is calling to teach us and train us, so that He can use **us** in teaching and training THE WHOLE WORLD to become sons of God. That was brought out so well in the sermonette, or the, yes, the Bible Study last night.

Romans 8:23 *... even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for*

the [It should not be “adoption” but it means really the real BIRTH as sons of God.], to wit, the redemption of our body.

When this vile body will be changed into a glorified body – until our eyes will be like flames of fire, and our faces shining like the sun. Our faces shining like the sun! Well that shows how great our future can be, what is the MARVELOUS, INCREDIBLE, almost, well, beyond imagination – the potential that God has in store for us, and what we may become (little though we are now). Also, that shows you the great power of God – that God has POWER to do even that; and think what power that is.

Now then, let’s see. On to verse 18, did I cover that in Hebrews the 2nd chapter? Well, no. “*Forasmuch then ...*” Let’s go down to verse 14 in the 2nd chapter.

Hebrews 2:14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he [That is, Christ.] also himself likewise took part of the same [He was flesh and blood, the same as we are.]: that through death, he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil.

Our High Priest

And then in verse 17 again:

Hebrews 2:17-18 Wherefore in all things it behooved him to be made like unto his brethren [We are His brethren, and He is not ashamed to call us brethren.], that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in all things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. (18) For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

In other words, we have a High Priest who was tempted in every point just like we are and yet without sin. He is at the right hand of God,

interceding for us as our High Priest. Now, **ALL THIS WHOLE THING** is that God is reproducing Himself and we are to be born into His Family until God becomes a great, vast Family. Oh, what **A WONDERFUL POTENTIAL** it is! Brethren, what do things amount to in this earth, in this world, that seem to attract us so much and slip into our minds? And our whole hearts get set on carnal, temporary things that are of no value whatsoever, until we just entirely loose a sense of the true values; and we go after false values.

It's too bad that the world is blinded to these things. The churches don't understand why Christ came. They say, "Well, do you know the Lord, brethren?" That's all it means – "Do you know the Lord?" They don't know what the Lord looks like. They don't know much about Him, one way or the other. They just think if you say, "Yes, I give my heart to the Lord. Well, I accept Christ." Then you can forget all about it and go about your own carnal way, just like you were before. But you said you accepted the Lord, so you think that now you go about and still live the way you did and you go to heaven when you die. They don't have any idea what heaven is, except that you live in idleness and ease and won't have any responsibility, won't have anything to do; and they think that's going to be what they want. That would be the most boring thing in the world that could possibly happen to them.

Well, now we'd gone on through the 4th and the 5th chapters of this book of Hebrews; and I'd come down to the last verse of the 4th chapter, and I didn't get to that. I think I got on to something else and ended the sermon without it. So let's go back and begin with the 12th verse of the 4th chapter [{2}](#). The 15th verse, I mean, of the 4th chapter.

Hebrews 4:15 For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities ...

He is there to intercede for us. Now the one interceding at the right

hand of God, who God says is His Son – and is now actually sustaining the whole universe with the word of His power – great as He is (and He is as great as He is described back in the 40th chapter of Isaiah that I read to you at the beginning of this sermon, and He is restored to that great position now, and great as He is and He is there interceding for us) He is:

Hebrews 4:15 ... not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was IN ALL POINTS [tested] like as we are, yet without sin.

Now, if a thought never entered His mind, He wouldn't have been tempted. So the thoughts did enter His mind. They did tempt Him! But He didn't entertain those things in His mind. He didn't retain them in His mind, and He didn't act upon them. He shoved them out of His mind before they conceived into an action, and He never sinned. But you have sinned and so have I.

*Hebrews 4:16 Let us therefore come **boldly** unto the throne of grace ...*

Brethren, how many troubles do we carry? We suffer persecution. Let's see. Where was it I heard about [3](#) a tree that was very, very, very old; and it had many scars. Yet it withstood the most terrible storms. It was scarred, having been struck about six or eight times by lightning; and they left terrible scars. It had almost been blown over, off of its roots, by storms; but hundred of years that tree had lived. Finally, it was some little tiny beetle that got through to the very life and the heart of it; and the tree finally it died.

Well, we have to endure these things That tree lived on, and on, and on. You know, you hear those things in sermons and Bible Studies. Our ministers are bringing you things like that. There are **lessons** in it that you need to get, and to remember, and to heed – because they help us in our understanding so that we come to a comprehension of who and what God is, and who and what we are, and what is our potential, and what is it all about. God reveals to us

WHY things are like they are in the world, why they are having the troubles in the world they are!

World In Danger

Now it's terrible that two nations like Argentina and Britain (formerly called Great Britain) have to be striving like they are, fighting like a couple of little kids fighting over a toy. You know, if Christ were here and the Kingdom of God were here, and if we were ruling with Him, He'd get that whole thing decided in a hurry as to who should have sovereignty. Does it belong to the Argentines because it's in their physical locality, down there nearer than it is to England? Or does it belong to the British because its people are British and want it to remain British? Now that's what you get down to; and man doesn't have the wisdom to answer that, so they want to fight, fight, and fight.

That kind of fight down there, going on, brethren, let me tell you: that could escalate into a nuclear war that would absolutely wipe out every life – man, woman, and child – on the face of this earth if God didn't supernaturally step in and stop it **by a supernatural act of God**. The atheist who doesn't believe in God, well he's just left without any hope because, otherwise, there isn't any hope. Sooner or later, that's going to happen! Some madman CAN touch it off.

What about the madmen we've already had in this world? There are some of them even today. What about Khomeini? If he isn't a madman, what do you call him? What about Arafat? He would blow up a whole airplane with women and babies on it, that have nothing to do with the disputes – to settle the disputes – with other people. Arafat wanted an interview with me. I refused. I won't talk to him. I talk to heads of state, and I'm going to be talking to the king of Greece on this next trip in a couple of weeks. Arafat, I

don't want to talk to.

I'm not an official ambassador of any earthly nation. And they think, you know, that these nations are great. Well, all of them put together are not a drop in the bucket to God, whom I represent; and I am His ambassador.

But there are madmen. I think Arafat wouldn't hesitate to use nuclear weapons, if he felt he needed to (to get his end). What about, let me see, this man down in Central Africa. He's gone out of the picture now. Uh, king ... Oh, I had his name in my mind; but it won't come to me. What about this Gaddafi? We've had madmen, wild men; and many of the Arabs are like a wild people.

Now, Arab leaders I've known are not wild people. King Hussein is very sane. He's not insane at all, and I don't think he's going to start any nuclear war and kill the whole world. Neither would Mr. Sadat, although he was willing to start a war; and then later he repented of that. He must have, when he went over to Israel and declared peace finally, and changed. But he risked his own life, and finally it cost him his life. He was assassinated by his own people because he did it, and now they've lost their lives, and President Mubarak. They are sane men. I don't think that they are going to start a nuclear war that would set the world on fire. But there ARE madmen that could.

These smaller nations either have, or soon will have, nuclear weapons. Today almost any nation can have the secrets and know how, and also have the material to produce nuclear power; and many small nations already have. It wasn't too long after the United States and Russia had it, until (let me see) Britain and France and one other nation also had nuclear weapons; and there was then "the big five." Well now several other nations do. Even little Israel apparently has it. I don't think they're going to start plunging the world into nuclear warfare. At least, if there's a madman at the helm down there, I

haven't met him yet; and I have known all of the heads in Israel for the last ten years, or twelve years.

But this world is in danger. Well, you'll get some of that. I believe that's the program that will be on tomorrow morning and tomorrow afternoon on television. But this world is in real danger!

Benefits From God

Anyhow, we read here about the kind of High Priest we have; and He understands. We are troubled. We are weak, and we make mistakes a lot of times just because of our own weakness; but we have a High Priest who understands it.

How many sufferings do we bear? You know there is a song in the Protestant hymnbook, "Oh, what needless troubles we bear" or something. I can't just remember it. I haven't sung any of those songs for so many years now. I think ours are so much better, with the words of scripture. Most of the words in the songs that are sung in Protestant churches are songs just singing the praises of the people that sing, about how good we are. They really are. (There was a sermonette preached one time at the Feast of Tabernacles on that, that I remember; and many of those songs were quoted and the words that show how we sing how good we are and all that sort of thing.) But there is this one about what pains and sorrows we needlessly bear when we have a High Priest we could go to.

We don't go there often enough, and we don't realize the **benefits** that God has given – the great things He has given. And, brethren, He's given us the benefit of **divine healing**; and we're not taking the advantage of that as we should, because we're not close enough to God and we're not so full of His Spirit that He's given us **by** His Spirit the very faith of Jesus.

Now you can't work up faith for your own healing. That faith God must give you. Christ had that faith. He had the faith to walk on water, to raise the dead, to turn water into wine. I don't know that He's going to give you faith to take some plain water and make wine out of it, so you can go and get drunk on it. But there are areas in which you need faith, and you don't have it; but God would give you the faith that Christ had. Well, it's the same faith that God has, and it comes from God through His Holy Spirit.

The Holy Spirit means so many things. First of all, of course, it **begets** this Life of God within us and makes us heirs of God. We are begotten children of God. But, actually, that's something that will appear in the resurrection IF we continue to GROW in grace and knowledge and endure to the end.

But the Holy Spirit in us: the first manifestation of it is that it opens our minds to comprehend **spiritual knowledge**. Now a carnal mind cannot comprehend spiritual knowledge – just like you can take a science professor that can try to teach physics, chemistry, or zoology, or biology, or astronomy to a cow, or a chicken, or a turkey! They are not going to get any of it. Even though it is revealed to them and told them, but they don't understand the language at all; and they are not going to get it. Yet they have brains; and a cow's brain is just like ours, but it doesn't have that spirit in it. Our spirit needs the other spirit – the Holy Spirit of God, and the first thing the Holy Spirit does is to open our minds to comprehend the way of God.

So we have to be led by the Spirit. It opens up the Word of God, to understand the right **way of life** of God; and it's as many as are LED by the Spirit of God. In other words, we have to decide whether to follow it once our minds are open to it. It's as many as are **led** by the Spirit of God that are the sons of God.

Then we find that that way is the way of love, and that love is a love we

don't have. We don't have the kind of love to love our enemies. I never had; but praise God and thank God, He's given me a love now that I can even have love for my enemies. I don't love what they do. I don't love their despicable attitudes. But them I do love, and I pray for them; and I mean it from the heart. I really do. I think I hadn't grown very far until I learned that; and I don't think I understood that five years ago, but I do understand it now. God gives us the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit – the only kind of love that will fulfill His law, because even though with your mind you UNDERSTAND the law of God ...

Now, without the Holy Spirit, you can't even understand it, because the law of God is **spiritual** and it is spiritual knowledge; and the natural, carnal mind can't understand spiritual knowledge. But even understanding it, without "*the love of God shed abroad in your heart*" you don't have the kind of love it takes to fulfill that law! And you don't have the faith to **trust Christ**; and there He is, our High Priest. So:

Hebrews 4:15 We have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities.

I tell you: Just to think that He is sympathetic, and He knows what we have to put up with, and He knows that we are weak where He was strong. He loves us, and He has that love of God; and He loves YOU and He loves me, and He loves every one of us (just as we ought to love even our enemies).

We can go to Him, and we go to the Father in His name; but He's there interceding for us. He was in all points tempted like we are. He knows what we are up against. He suffered against the devil, and He knows the devil is after us. The devil would rather persecute us than he would people that are already going his way. We are the ones Satan is angry with!

Hebrews 4:16 Let us therefore come BOLDLY ...

Are we timid? Don't come timidly. Don't be too timid to come, but:

Hebrews 4:16 ... come boldly unto the throne of grace [in prayer, to find ...] ... help in time of need.

There is Christ, with all of this POWER – sustaining the whole universe by the word of His power – who already has suffered and died for you; and He loves you (because He died for you). He's there to help you. And God the Father loves you because He gave Christ to do that for you. We can come to Him. Only that's one of the great benefits we “don't get [4](#).”

I heard Amy Semple McPherson preach a sermon on healing one time. She gave the illustration of a man who was on a steamer taking a trip to Europe. That's when we didn't fly to Europe. We always took steamers way back in those days. Of course, she's been dead now probably 30, 40 years, or more. Anyway, her sermon was of the man that got on a steamer and didn't think he could afford to buy meals on the steamer. So he loaded a lot of crackers and cheese in his suitcase, and just ate on nothing but crackers and cheese. (You could almost get sick on a diet of nothing but crackers and cheese – morning, noon, and night.) Then he found out that meals were included. He just didn't know that. He thought he'd have to pay for it. But on a steamer, you know, why you don't pay for your meals; and, boy, they give you some wonderful meals. But, of course, the price of the ticket for the passage is expensive enough to cover all that. You pay for it all right; but the thing is, he'd already paid for it and he didn't know it.

Now, it's one of the benefits that go along with it. God has already given you that, and Christ has paid the price that you could be healed. So we don't come boldly enough to the throne of grace, and we don't do it in enough faith. Now we have to faith in Him, sure. But, as you read in the 3rd chapter of Galatians (Or is it the 2nd chapter?), that we have to have faith in Him in order that we may have HIS FAITH placed within us by the Holy

Spirit. Then we get even Christ's own faith. That is real faith!

Brethren, if we just pray a little more to God and get closer to Him in prayer – and appreciate what God gives us, and realize how He's blessing us here at headquarters of His Work. He's blessing our brethren all over this world! What you heard last night about people down in Africa (those of you who were here, who heard that message about it down there), the terrible conditions that they live in. They live on a small enough amount of money that you would think you couldn't live two days on what they live a whole month on. Yet we have Church members down there, and they are our brethren. They are reaching out for the same final glory that we are! We need to pray for that. They need our prayers and our help, because they are our brethren.

So we need to have more of the love of God and more of the faith of Christ, more of the understanding of His work; and we need to keep closer to Him and spend a little more time in prayer than we do, and attend these Bible Studies, and instead of the attractions and the interests of the world, spend our time in the things that this Church is providing for us to get closer to God.

Now, I know we are going to have a lot of things tomorrow in the way of just fun and activities; and that is all right. Even the Church is trying to provide us with enough of those things to give us a little bit of relaxation and efforts of fun. I'm going to try to be out to the field day with the youngsters and even up into high school. Of course, they're not youngsters any more. They're grown up, they think. Well, I think back. I think I was beginning to get grown-up by the time I was sixteen on to eighteen. But I was beginning to think seriously after age sixteen, and not too much yet until eighteen; and by that time I was beginning to think more seriously. I guess that's the way it is. We all have to grow up.

Anyway, as they say, “Hang in there.” I’m sure still doing it, and I have to. Every one of us do. But there’s a glory waiting for us we can’t know anything about.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor’s note: Mr. Armstrong said the 8th chapter, but he quoted from Hebrews 9.

[{2}](#) - Editor’s note: At first Mr. Armstrong mistakenly read from the 5th chapter of Hebrews, but then he corrected himself.

[{3}](#) - Editor’s note: Mr. Armstrong stumbled around a bit at this point, saying, “Was that in a sermonette or the sermon this morning? Or, maybe that was the sermonette this morning; and I guess it was. About ...”

[{4}](#) - Editor’s note: In this context, Mr. Armstrong doesn’t mean we can’t get this benefit from God. Rather he means that we don’t “get it” – that we don’t seem to really comprehend and put it to use. Thus, to further make his point, he gives the illustration of the man only eating crackers and cheese on a steamer when his meals were included.

Why Only a Few Chosen Now?

Sermon (June 5, 1982)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Why Only a Few Chosen Now?.....	1138	Foundation Of The World	1154
What Is The Church?	1138	Time Of Judgment	1156
Christ's Gospel	1141	Spirit Of Man And God's Spirit	1158
The Time Is Fulfilled	1142	This World's Civilization	1160
Called Out Of The World	1143	Begotten, Then Born	1164
God And The Word	1144	Called To Be Doers	1166
God's Way Of Life	1146	A Few Called Now	1167
Law And Government	1148	Called To Be Teachers	1172
Result Of Rebellion And Sin	1149	Preparing Teachers First	1175
Renewing The Earth For Man	1151	Meaning Of The Church	1177
The Mind Of Man	1153		

I have already passed my 50th anniversary in the ministry, and I missed just 3 1/2 months of my 50th anniversary in my marriage. And I wonder if you realize that last Monday, last Sunday rather, we all passed the 1951st anniversary of this Church, because it was 1951 years ago last Sunday that the Church was born—on the day of Pentecost, in Jerusalem.

Some newspaper reporter was saying to one of our men recently that “Well, Mr. Armstrong founded this Church, didn’t he?” Someone said, “No, he didn’t found it.” “Well, I thought he did. Everybody said Mr. Armstrong founded this Church.” Oh, no. No. The Church was founded by Jesus Christ, way back 1951 years ago. I just came in sort of the “Johnny came lately,” like all of you did. So this is rather an old Church, when you get down to it.

What Is The Church?

And it seems like it has taken 1951 years for the Church to learn WHAT

the Church is and WHY it is. Why should there be a Church? What is the Church? I want to tell you, the world does not know. People in what they call the Methodist Church don't know. The Baptist Church, the Congregational, the Presbyterian, the Lutheran, or the Roman Catholic; they don't know. The Church actually has been called "the called out ones"—a Church called out. But called out of what? Well, we're called out of the world. And if we're called out of the world, WHY? What's wrong with the world? And why should we be called out?

The people in the world don't understand that. If you ask them "What is the Church?" they say, "Well, it's a building. We have a number of them here in town. There's one down on the corner with a very steeply sloping roof and a steeple on top pointing up to heaven, a cross on its facade; and Sunday morning people go there, to that church.

I read the Bible and found something else—a different kind of a Church, where I found the Church went to a building. Or the Church sometimes went out by the riverside, where prayer was commonly made. Or the Church assembled in somebody's home. But the Church is the **people**, not a building; and yet the Church is compared to a building in Ephesians, let me see, the 5th or the 3rd chapter.

But if it is called out of the world, why? What's wrong with the world? Well, in this world we find a world of awesome progress. On the other hand, while it's been progressing so rapidly... It began progressing fairly rapidly in the 19th century, and it has just run riot in its progress in the 20th century. We've sent men to the moon and back; and we've had close-up photographs on the surface of Mars, fairly close-up photographs from Jupiter and Saturn. We've invented the computer and so many new machines. Aircraft have come this century. Do you know the first airplane was flown when I was 11 years old? Man had never flown in the air, except to get up and sail maybe a little bit with the wind blowing on a balloon, until I was 11 years old. And yet

it is only very recently that we've come to the jet plane that really moves along once we get up there in the air.

So it's a world of **awesome progress**. But also it's a world of APPALLING TROUBLES, unsolvable problems and evils, sorrows, suffering, anguish, violence, war, and a discontent and unhappiness everywhere. Half of the world is illiterate. Half of the world is in abject poverty, living in filth and squalor. We are supposed to have minds to learn what to do, and yet we haven't learned to do it very well.

Now, the Church was started by Jesus Christ. He was the founder of the Church. And He came into a world such as we have. The world has progressed a great deal since that time. We have a great deal more progress. We are doing things they had never known how to do when Jesus came into the world. But also the appalling evils and troubles have multiplied since He was here. So it's gone in opposite directions, and nobody seems to think of the contradiction there between progress and retrogression at the same time. And why? And what has caused all of that?

Well, Jesus came into this world; and He said, "*I will build My Church.*" [Matthew 16:18] And He said that the gates of the grave would never prevail against it, and it has continued on. However, the Church lost a great deal of its original teaching. And when I came among them—came into the Church and among the people of the Church—I found they still had the basic law of God. They had the name, the Church of God.

The Old Testament Church was the Church of Israel, or the Congregation (which means the same thing) of Israel. And Israel was a man, a human man. But this Church is not the Church of a man—like Luther, or Calvin, or Wesley, or Fox. This is the Church of **God**. It is God's Church. And that is the Church that Jesus said He would build. He said in II Corinthians 6:17: "*Wherefore come out from among them...*" That is, of this

world. It is a people called out of the world.

II Corinthians 6:17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you.

So Paul there quotes Jesus as having said that.

Christ's Gospel

Now Jesus began with His message that He brought from God. And the message was the foundation of the Church, and the Church was built on that message. And we read of it (as I have read so many, many times) in Mark the 1st chapter:

Mark 1:1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ.

What is **the gospel**? Well, I was noticing on television I think it was just last night. After I got home, there was a religious program on; and they were trying to get money to tell the people about Christ. And they seemed to think the gospel is man's message, man's gospel, about Christ—where really, in the Bible, **the gospel is Jesus' message about the Kingdom of God.** Here you read, "*The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ.*" Then it talks about John the Baptist, and finally the baptism of Jesus in the Jordan River by John, and then His temptation by Satan. And then verse 14:

*Mark 1:14-15 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching **the gospel** [What gospel? The gospel about Jesus Christ? No, it was Christ doing the preaching. And he said, "the gospel...] **of the Kingdom of God, (15) and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.***

Now, why did He say that? What does it mean? **The Kingdom of God,**

you'll find if you research it a little farther in the Bible, is the begotten and then born Family of God—of people that are born into the very Family of God. And they are as much God as God is, only God is the Father; and Christ is His Son, and the Bridegroom or the Husband of those that are going to be born into it. You will be His wife, ultimately. But they'll all be the same Family. God the Father will be in supreme command. And Christ will be the Husband, who is the head of His wife. And the wife will always, even though of the same Family, will be subject to the Husband in all things.

The Time Is Fulfilled

But why was the time fulfilled? The time was fulfilled because, I'm going to show you, there was a kingdom here on Earth; and there was a throne over the whole Earth. One sat on that throne, and that was Satan. And Satan was carrying on a sort of **government** all over this Earth, all over the world. Jesus Christ had come to wrest that government from him. And Christ had qualified, as you read in just a verse or two ahead of what I was reading. The one verse ahead, the 13th,

Mark 1:13 [Jesus] was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan.

He overcame Satan; and, in so doing, He **qualified** to take over the throne of the Earth and to rule over all the Earth. Now, He's not only going to rule over the Earth; He wanted to help people be begotten and then born as the children of God, and to become His wife and help Him because a husband needs a wife to help him. And Christ, when He comes to RULE this world, is going to need a helper. That's where you and I come in. I hope you realize it.

Well now, the time was fulfilled because at last someone had qualified to replace Satan and sit on that throne. The first man, Adam, had had his

chance to qualify; but as you know (I've spent a lot of time lately telling you about that) he failed to qualify. And Satan continued to stay on that throne. But now "the time was fulfilled" BECAUSE CHRIST HAD QUALIFIED.

Mark 1:15 The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of God is AT HAND...

Why was it AT HAND? Brethren, I don't think you ever realized that; and I know the world doesn't realize why the Kingdom of God was then "at hand." You are going to have to come to see that **THE CHURCH**—that means all of you, and all of the rest of the Church all over this world—**THE CHURCH IS THE KINGDOM OF GOD** in embryo. Not yet born, not yet developed very far. Only an embryo or a fetus, so to speak. Unborn, but begotten. **We ARE the Kingdom of God in embryo.** I don't think we've ever really come to realize that at all.

Called Out Of The World

He called us out of the world. Why? What's wrong with the world? God is continually revealing **new truth**. Now, new truth is just a little further understanding on truth we already had. As I explained last night in the Bible Study, the Bible is like a jigsaw puzzle of several thousand pieces. You get a certain group of pieces together. That's what I did first to start 55 years ago. I had a number of scriptures that went together; and, all together, they formed a picture. They formed the truth; and that was that the Sabbath was made holy time, and God commanded us to keep it that way (keep it holy). And that is one of the very foundations of God's law, and it is **the test commandment** of God's Ten Commandments. It is the one that is the crucial test, more than any other is the Sabbath.

But what is wrong with the world, and why must we come out of the world? You know, we are the beginning of another world. **WE ARE THE**

BEGINNING, just in embryo; or, you might say, we are just the begotten fetuses. We are begotten children OF THE WORLD TOMORROW. We are the world tomorrow, not yet born. And we are to have nothing to do with this world, except that we have to live in it; but we are not to be of it. We are to come out of it.

That doesn't mean put on some special kind of uniform. Women [wearing] an old fashioned black bonnet of some kind, looking like a covered wagon put on her head. Or men with some kind of a hat with a wide brim going around all the way. I've seen some religious people doing that. No, it means a different way of living, an entirely different way of living.

You can't understand unless you know how this world started, because Jesus came **TO START ANOTHER WORLD–THE WORLD TOMORROW!** And He called us out of this world. Now, how did this world start; and what's wrong with it? It's just that simple. So let's get back to it. Everything started with the Creator, and I have to start there is you're going to find a place for starting. And once again I'm going to go to the first chapter of John.

John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word...

And the Word was a great personage, the Spokesman in the Family of God.

God And The Word

John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word [That is, a personage.], and the Word was with God [God was another personage. Now we have two persons.], and the Word was God.

It's just like saying, "I saw John, but John was with Smith; and John was Smith." "You mean John was..."

You just saw one man?” “No, I saw two men.” “Well, what do you mean? How can you see two men, when one is John and the other is Smith?” “Well, they’re both Smith. You see John was Smith’s son.” Or John was Smith’s father. (One or the other.) Smith is just a family name. One of them was named John, and the other was Mr. Smith. We don’t know which person it was for that one.

Anyway, here was the Word and God. They are two persons; and They—two combined—made **God**.

***John 1:2-3** The same [the Word] was in the beginning with God. (3) All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.*

You read, in Ephesians the 3rd chapter and 9th verse, God “*created all things by Jesus Christ.*” Now, God is the leader. He directed what should be done, what should be made. He told the Word to do it. The Word was the Spokesman, and the Word spake. As you read in one of the Psalms, “*He spake, and it was done.*” [Psalm 33:9] Now we also find that, when He spake, the POWER—the Spirit that emanated from both God the Father and from the Word (who was not yet His Son, but later was born as God’s Son)... The Spirit was the power that did whatever He said, and He only said what the Father told Him.

***John 1:4** In him was life...*

L-I-F-E. He had life inherent, life within Himself. Immortal life. He had always been. Now, of the Word who became Christ, the fourteenth verse:

***John 1:14** And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us [and became Jesus Christ].*

Now we read over in the book of Hebrews that Christ was immortal, and there never was a time when He came into existence. He had ALWAYS

existed. And, of course, your mind can't conceive that; so don't try to. My mind won't, and I don't think yours will either. But He was "*without father, without mother, without descent,*" without beginning of days, "*having neither beginning of days, nor end of life.*" [Hebrews 7:3] You and I don't have that kind of **life**. We have to have our life by breathing air, which will oxidize blood and keep the heart pumping blood throughout your body. And the blood in you is the life thereof, as the Bible says; and the breath is the breath of life. That isn't life. It's only a physio-chemical existence, and that's all we have now.

But you notice that They lived. If They had life, then They lived. If They lived, They had to live a certain way. They had to do something. What did They do? Well, They created. And the Word made everything that was made. God is the Creator, but the Word did only what the Father told Him. And God created all things **by** Jesus Christ. So that was Their job. That was Their profession. That is what They did.

God's Way Of Life

But **how** did They do it? How did They live? That is quite important, because They lived **together**. Now, two cannot live together except they be agreed. So They were agreed. When Jesus came to Earth in the human flesh, He said, "I and My Father are one. I have spoken nothing of Myself. The Father that sent Me told Me what I should say and what I should speak, and I have spoken according to His Word." There was perfect agreement. So They could walk together, because They agreed. Two can't walk together except they be agreed.

They knew how to love. Now when Jesus came to Earth, was born and grew up to about age 30, and He was baptized in the River Jordan by John the Baptist; and God the Father said, in a voice from heaven, "This is My

BELOVED Son, in whom I am well pleased.” He LOVED the Son; and Jesus LOVED the Father, and He obeyed the Father. And there was love between Them. There was cooperation. They were in perfect agreement, but one had to be the leader over the other.

You take a couple getting married, and someone “Well, we don’t want the husband to be the boss now. We want a 50/50 marriage.” Oh, you do. Well that’s not what you are going to have. That’s just what you think you are going to have. But if you think you are going to have a 50/50 marriage, the wife will be wearing the pants. She’s going to run the roost. **ONE HAS TO LEAD**, and one always WILL lead. But there must be harmony. There must be love. The husband should dominate his wife, but NOT domineer over her. There is quite a difference. He should be the leader in love, and there should be perfect agreement and harmony. And they should get along. There should be no quarrel, no difference of mind whatsoever. And, if you are not of one mind, you shouldn’t get married in the first place.

On the Earth was a throne. They created angels first. Then the angels were the first occupants of this world, of this Earth. But you read in, let me see, it’s II Peter 2:4, “*God spared not the angels that sinned.*” And so angels did sin. And we find elsewhere in the Bible it was about one-third of the angels that sinned. Apparently the other two-thirds are still holy and righteous, and have not sinned. But one-third of them became demons. And God took a super archangel, the cherub named Lucifer, and set him on the Earth.

Now, God and the Word had a way of living together. They had a job to do, and that was creation; but there was **perfect cooperation**. There was a leader, though. That is necessary if there is direction; and you have to have direction, especially when there is more than one person. If there’s two or more, there has to be a leader. Always there has to be a leader. They had a way of living together. That **way of living** becomes a law.

Law And Government

What is a law? A law is merely a guide that is a way of life. You break the law means you live contrary to that way of life that is defined by that law. A law is always a way of living. And laws that we have in the world are supposed to be designed to help us cooperate along together and get along with one another—husband and wife get along together, neighbors get along together, people to get along together. The trouble is nations don't get along together. Nations have troubles; and finally, you know, they set up a Court of International Justice.

Now, I have actually entertained at dinner all of those justices of the International Court of Justice in The Hague, in the Netherlands. And I've been photographed with the President and with Dr. Singh, who is one of the judges on that court (representing the nation India). And, by the way, I must see him next time I'm over in that part of the world, in England and that area. I would have seen him this last time. I was just over there just last week. But I understand that he was not there but he was back in India at the time, and I didn't want to go over there.

However there has to be a law, or there has to be a rule of conduct, to guide the way you get along together; or you're going to have trouble, and you don't get along. You'll have nothing but trouble, and friction, and unhappiness; and one impedes the work of the other. And so God set angels on the Earth, and He set A LAW, He set a government over them. And He put one of the super archangels, Lucifer (who's one of the two archangels or cherubs whose wings had spread out over the throne of God, right on the very throne of God). He was experienced in the administration of **the government of God** over the universe.

And God set him on a throne on the Earth to rule over angels. Now, we don't find in the Bible very much given about it. You find quite a lot about

this and what brought on the sin of the angels in the 14th chapter of Isaiah and the 28th of Ezekiel. And we find that the one on the throne was named Lucifer, which means “shining star of the dawn.” And he was given, naturally, a law—which is the law of God, which is love. L-O-V-E.

We find in the Bible that God’s law of love is divided into **two great laws**. It’s love to God first of all, and love to neighbor. Why God first of all? Because you have to have direction, and the direction has to come from God. He’s the leader. And without that leadership, you are sunk. And then that is divided in turn. Love to God is divided into the first four of the Ten Commandments, how to love God. And how to love your neighbor is divided into the last six of the Ten Commandments, telling you how to love your neighbor. They’re just ten broad principles—in the principles of the spirit, or the attitude, of love; and love is an attitude. It is a spirit, and it is a spiritual principle. It is a spiritual action, rather than a material action.

Result Of Rebellion And Sin

But the angels sinned. Lucifer led a rebellion. He inoculated his angels with a spirit of rebellion—a spirit of get instead of give, of hate and opposition instead of love, of vanity and of coveting and wanting to get, and towards others of jealousy, of envy, rebellion against authority, of competition leading to strife and violence and destruction, and all that sort of thing. So they had that attitude towards God. One of rebellion. One of vanity. I mean one of vanity towards themselves; and one of jealousy, and envy, and competition against God. And they flew up to heaven to try to pull a coup, and knock God off the throne, and rule the whole universe instead of just this Earth. But they were cast back down to the Earth.

Now, something happened to the Earth. And the Earth became, as you read in the first chapter of Genesis, where it says “*without form and void,*” or

that comes from the Greek words “tohu” and “bohu”. Actually, it means chaotic, in confusion or decay. Probably it was decayed. It probably had been a long time. God did not finish the Earth. He put them here to finish it, and to work on the Earth. The Earth contains not only just matter, but it contains many forces like energy, and many forces of energy that can be put together. Even electricity can be created and energy in various fuels. And finally we’ve found the energy of the atom, the atomic bomb and now the hydrogen bomb, and other things like that all exist in the matter of this Earth.

But the Earth had come into, where it had been in light—the light of truth and of God’s truth—now it was in the darkness of error and of sin. So we read in Genesis 1, “*In the beginning God...*” And God there, the Hebrew word was “Elohim,” which is a uni-plural noun and includes the one who is God and the one who is the Word; and it was including those Two, which is the God Family. And it began with those Two who had existed always, forever. “*God created the heavens* [and it should be plural, and is as Moses wrote it in the original Hebrew] *and the earth.*” They were created all at the same time, as you read in the second chapter of Genesis and verse four. You can read that, but I’m not going to take the time now.

So the Earth was, or became, in this chaotic and decayed state. “*And darkness was upon the face of the deep.*” Now you read in the 104th Psalm, and verse 30, that God RENEWED the face of the Earth. It says:

Psalm 104:30 *Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they were created: and thou renewest the face of the earth.*

So notice here now:

Genesis 1:2 *Darkness was upon the face of the deep* [It was all a watery ocean surface.], *and THE SPIRIT OF GOD moved upon the face of the waters.*

There is the Spirit of God, **the power** that was going to do it.

Renewing The Earth For Man

Now, what about the Word of God speaking? Genesis 1:3 And God said... Oh, the one who said it was the Word. And what did He say? Whatever the Father told Him to do. Whatever God said to say. He said, “*Let there be light: and there was light.*” So He went on REMAKING, renewing, the face of the Earth **for man**. And after He had done that, then in verse 26 (after He had created animals after the animal kind, cattle after the cattle kind, dogs after the dog kind, and others; and I’ve gone over that so many times) He said:

Genesis 1:26 Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness.

“Let Us make man **after the God kind**.” Now, man was made to be born into the God Family, right there. And the first man, Adam, was not given eternal life. You read in the 7th verse of the next chapter that:

Genesis 2:7 God formed man [And that was the man, Adam, and his wife, Eve] out of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life [Breath is called “the breath of life.”]; and man became [The dust of the ground became...] a...soul.

So a soul comes out of the ground. It is not spirit, but is matter. But he didn’t have eternal life. He only had a temporary existence. Now, you know the story. There were two trees in the Garden, and Adam had to make a choice. One was the Tree of Life. The other was the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. The tree of knowledge meant the knowledge of taking to himself **spiritual knowledge**. Now that was the knowledge of the way of life. That kind of knowledge meant **a way of life**. But he would decide FOR HIMSELF how to live. He would decide right from wrong, good from evil—

all by himself. He would not look to God as a leader. He would not look to God to tell him which way is right and which is wrong. He took it to himself, when he took of the fruit of that tree. That's why God forbade it.

Now, what about the Tree of Life? That was also a tree of knowledge. That was **revealed knowledge from God**. But that kind of knowledge was a **way of life**—the SPIRITUAL WAY OF LIFE, the way of cooperation and peace, the way of happiness. The way that God and the Word had always lived together. The way that He had intended the angels to live, but they didn't live that way. Adam made the wrong decision. He took of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. He rejected the Holy Spirit of God, which would have revealed to him God's knowledge of the right way to live, a way of life. The way we see in Christ. In the Word was life. [John 1:4] The way He lived. And that could have been in Adam.

Now, in the 3rd chapter of Genesis in verses 22 to 24, you find that as a result of man's sin... Adam was on trial to see if he could take over the throne of the Earth from Satan. He had to reject Satan's way of living. He had to accept God's way that would have come through the Holy Spirit of God because you cannot understand spiritual knowledge, which God must reveal. But even though God reveals it, you can't understand it without the Spirit of God.

Let me explain this. A cow has every faculty that you have for receiving knowledge. The only way you can receive knowledge is either through the sense of sight, or hearing, or smelling, tasting, or feeling. You can't tell me any other way you receive knowledge. You don't get it any other way. You just don't get it through your little toe. You don't get it through any other organ or any other part of the body, just through those five senses. Now a cow has every one of those senses. A cow can see, and it can hear.

But you try to explain some of the laws of chemistry, or physics, or

astronomy to a cow. Well, it has ears to hear, if you want to talk. It has eyes {1} to see, if you want to give it to him in writing. But it can't understand anything, not any more than a chicken or a turkey; and they don't even know enough to get out of the middle of the street.

And so Adam made the wrong decision, and he did not qualify; and Satan remained ON THE THRONE. Satan {2} deceived Eve, and Eve led Adam by the nose to do the wrong thing, and many wives have been misleading their husbands ever since—when a wife is supposed to be her husband's helper, and they're supposed to get along together. But it takes two to get along together, and just one alone can't do it. But the two had better both be right, or else they're in trouble.

So now God shut up the Holy Spirit. He shut up the Holy Spirit UNTIL Christ, the second Adam, should come—until someone could qualify to set up God's world, God's government. Adam would had to have accepted God's government, which God would have revealed to him through the Holy Spirit if he had taken of the Tree of Life. But Adam never did get it, and he never learned God's law really. He never learned spiritual knowledge because he rejected that. And Satan went on with the whole spirit of rebellion, of vanity and glorifying himself, with the spirit of coveting and trying to get everything he could, of competition, of strife and vanity and jealousy, and of hate, and of tearing down instead of building up.

The Mind Of Man

Now, we have to understand the mind of man at that time before we go any further. I've explained that again and again. But I just want to cover it again so we'll have it in mind. **The mind of man is brain plus spirit.** A cow has a brain, just like a human has. An elephant has a brain just like a human; only an elephant's brain is bigger. A cow's brain I think is a little smaller. At

least a chimpanzee's is just a little smaller than a man's, than a human brain. But the difference is they have no spiritual comprehension. You give them spiritual knowledge, they haven't any idea what you are talking about. In fact, they don't have even material knowledge—the animals. They only have instinct born in them—instinct.

Man has to have knowledge. He has to be trained because his mind has to lead everything his hands, or his feet, or his body does. The mind has to govern. In other words, you have to have a head. Just as we need God over all people, your own body—to perform and to function—needs a brain to guide it and tell it what to do. Man had to have knowledge. He not only had to have knowledge to deal with matter and with things. God created him with that kind of a mind. But He didn't create him with a mind to get along with other people. And in making things, the reason man never learned to make very many things until this 20th century, was because... (And that's the 20th century since Christ. It's a lot more than the 20th century from Adam.) But it's because man did not have the Spirit of God and spiritual knowledge. He only had the knowledge to deal with things.

But one person alone does not build an airplane, or an automobile, or a steam engine, or a railroad train. One man doesn't do it. It takes the cooperation of many men. One man can't build a great steel works that supplies the steel to build many of these things with. And men can't work together except there be a right leadership, and a way of living and working together. And that requires the law of God, or you are in trouble. And the world's been in trouble all the time, ever since Adam.

Foundation Of The World

Now, I've gone through this about the human mind again and again. But at the time that God closed up the Holy Spirit from man, at that same time...

Well, I want to read you first a scripture here. It's in Revelation 13 and it's just the latter part of verse 8, where it speaks about "*the Lamb*" (which is Christ) "*slain from the foundation of the world.*" **The foundation of the world** was the time of Adam because the world didn't start until Adam made that decision. And the world started in Adam, as he was influenced by Satan.

So at that time it was decided that Christ was to come and be the second Adam, that He could **pay for the sins of humanity**. Otherwise, humanity could never be redeemed from the sin of Adam. Now you take the sin of Adam, and his son Cain was born the same way, and Abel. But you see Satan got to Cain and began influencing him before he was even six months old. Cain had a spirit in him; and that spirit was on the wavelength of Satan, who is a spirit. And Satan's spirit had access to his spirit, and put a spirit of animosity and contention and disagreement; and Cain disagreed with his brother Abel. He was about to have a fight, and God talked to him. And God warned him and said, "You be careful, or you are going to be in trouble." But he didn't listen to God.

He didn't have God's Spirit, and he wasn't in tune with God. He went ahead and killed his brother Abel. Now God did speak to him, but his mind wasn't open to understand what God said. He didn't comprehend any truth that God revealed. God revealed the truth to him. He'd be in trouble if he did it, if he went ahead with his anger and his spirit of revenge. Well, he got revenge all right; and his brother Abel was dead. Cain was greatly punished. Then he complained that his punishment was too great. And that's the way that humans have been ever since, just like that—same attitude.

Now, also at the time when God closed up the Holy Spirit, the foundation of the world, you read in Hebrews 9:27... This became the policy of God. It was appointed from that time for men **ONCE TO DIE** but after that judgment. God had a policy, Christ was to come, that there would be **a time of judgment** when people would have a chance. Their sins would be forgiven

by Christ, and they would have a chance to receive the Holy Spirit that Adam had rejected. And that was set up from that time. From that time it was decreed that Christ would come, that the Lamb of God would be slain. That was about 4,000 years later, but nevertheless it did happen.

Also it was decreed, as you read in I Corinthians 15:22, 23, 24 and on.

I Corinthians 15:22 As in Adam all die...

Adam only had a temporary life. He was going to die. And God said, "If you take of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall surely die." Well, his children did the same thing; and they've been dying! So it's appointed to men once to die, but after this a judgment. Well there has to be life after that, or there couldn't be a judgment. And so:

I Corinthians 15:22 As in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all [The same all. All who died.] be made alive [by a resurrection].

God decreed that! He decreed that Christ would come and pay [for] the sins of people; and that they would be given a chance, like Adam had in the first place. But God had shut up the Holy Spirit.

Time Of Judgment

Now, we have to know something about the human mind; and I've gone into that again, and again. But I think it's good if I read a couple of scriptures again, because I think this is something that many of you have not yet **fully** gotten. I wonder how many of you could explain this to someone else. If someone out in the world, not in the Church, would say, "Well, what is this? I understand psychology."

And there's a man who used to be on our faculty. He's now on the faculty of another college, and he's teaching psychology: That you are an

okay person. That you must have confidence in yourself. You must have vanity. You must think you are a somebody. And it's only if you think you're pretty good that you ever will be. But it's all in your OWN SELF. You don't need any help from God. You just do it yourself, on your own. That's what Adam had! That's what the world has been doing ever since, and look at the world. That's the world Christ came to call us out of! And here's one that's been here, and graduated from this college, and been on the faculty, and been a head minister in the Church, but is now TEACHING that kind of **ROT!**

SOME HAVE TURNED BACK, like Lot's wife. There was something in the sermon this morning, if you were here for the morning service, about turning back. And unfortunately some have gotten to the top in this Church, and then turned back. I don't know that they will turn into a pillar of salt, like Lot's wife; but they certainly won't turn into children in the Kingdom of God and sons of God.

I don't know. I read in the book of Hebrews that, if after we have come to this knowledge of the truth and tasted of God's Holy Spirit, that if we fall away it is **impossible** to renew us to repentance again. And I sometimes wonder. The only chance that some of those people who have been here have is IF (so far as I can see now) if they never were really converted in the first place and God had not called them, and if He will do it sometime in the future. Otherwise they have had it! They'll live the rest of this life, and **THEY'VE ALREADY BEEN JUDGED! WE ARE BEING JUDGED NOW**. But the people from Adam's time on, until Christ, were NOT being judged. It's appointed to man once to die, **AFTER THIS** the judgment. They have not come to their judgment yet. Now do you realize that?

Why is it God is only calling a few, and that we are the firstfruits? And God isn't calling others in the world? I want to come to that before I'm through with this sermon today. I want to show you why God **COULD NOT** have called the others. You think He's playing favors to call us and not

others? Oh, no! If anything, He's playing favorites for them. But that needs to be explained.

Spirit Of Man And God's Spirit

Well, now about the human mind. Here in Job the 32nd chapter and verse 8, "*There is a spirit in man.*" And now you turn to verse 18; and it says, "*I am full of matter [We are composed of it.], the spirit within me constraineth me.*" That is, it influences. Or, well, it doesn't force you. It doesn't compel you. But it does tend to **lead** you, and it does **motivate** you. The spirit. And Satan is a spirit, and he gets you into a wrong spirit. And that wrong spirit does motivate you into the wrong attitude and the wrong way all together.

Now in I Corinthians the 2nd chapter, let me just go over a little of this once again. In verse 9:

I Corinthians 2:9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man [as man is made now], the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

In other words, a man cannot receive spiritual knowledge since the Holy Spirit was shut up. That's exactly what that's talking about. Now the next verse:

I Corinthians 2:10 But God hath revealed them unto us **by his SPIRIT.**

Now the Spirit doesn't do the revealing, brethren. The Holy Spirit is not a teacher. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of God to open your mind to comprehension. God is the Teacher. Notice here: "*But GOD HATH REVEALED...*" Not "the Holy Spirit hath revealed." "*God hath revealed them unto us **BY his Spirit.***" The Spirit is merely the means that opens

your mind to comprehend when God **teaches**, when God **reveals**; and it is revealed knowledge.

I Corinthians 2:10-11 For the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. [Now here it comes, next verse.] (11) For what man knoweth the things of a man [Has the knowledge that a human can have—knowledge of chemistry, knowledge of physics, knowledge of astronomy, mechanical knowledge.], save [by] the spirit of man which is in him?

The spirit of man is what gives you physical knowledge, but it doesn't give you spiritual knowledge.

I Corinthians 2:11 Even so the things of God [Or the spiritual knowledge, and what God reveals, and what God teaches.] knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

The Spirit of God will open your mind to understand, and you can't understand the things of God until the Spirit of God comes. Now get what I said about a cow. A cow does not have A SPIRIT. It just has a brain. And its brain is as good as your brain. It's just like your brain—made in the same way, of the same kind of matter, in the same form and shape in every way at all, every way. But a cow can't understand mathematics. And you can't explain a computer and how to operate it to a cow, or a chicken, or a horse, or even an elephant (which is perhaps what we would call a little more intelligent, but not of man's intelligence).

But these tools—the spiritual tools—are revealed by God but THROUGH the Holy Spirit, and cannot be understood except after you have received the Holy Spirit. Now God closed up the Holy Spirit from the time of Adam, until Christ should come. So I want you to notice, when Christ came, He said “*I will build My Church.*” But before I come to that, I want to talk about the world Jesus came into.

This World's Civilization

A civilization started with Adam. And Adam only had the knowledge to deal with things. He did not know how to even deal with other people, let alone how to deal with God and to receive instruction and direction from God, and supervision. And you must have supervision. You must have a supervisor. You must have a leader. We have many departments in this Work, but there is a leader over every department. And others are under him, and he supervises their work. And they're all responsible to me, and I am responsible to Christ. And that's the way it has to be. It has to be an organization.

Christ said He was the Vine, and we are the branches; and the grapes come off of the branches. Now there's one main stem. There are other little stems off of that, and different little branches. It's the branches that produce the fruit. But they can produce it only as long as they're joined onto the main vine, and the larger little branch, and that branch onto the still larger one. Or, like in the tree, there are many twigs; and then there are larger branches, and they just down into bigger branches, and they're all joined onto the trunk. And all of the life of the tree comes out of the roots. That's a comparison all the way through.

But when Adam rejected it, the Holy Spirit was not yet available. So Adam started a world—because he had children. He had Cain and Abel, and he had Seth. Now, the Bible says he had other sons and daughters; but it doesn't name them. And others came, and they had sons and daughters. And it came to the time when population was increasing, at the time of the Flood. They were having a population explosion. God caused them all to be drowned because they were going **the wrong way**, except Noah and his family, eight people. And ALL THE WORLD has come from those eight people. But they have come on without the Spirit of God, without the direction of the Spirit of God, without the Spirit which would open their

minds to understand the teaching of God.

Now there was the kingdom of Israel raised up from slaves. And God **REVEALED** His law to them. God **REVEALED** truth to them. But they didn't understand it. They didn't have the Holy Spirit. So they weren't taught it. It can normally be understood through the Spirit to open up your mind to understand it.

A cow can't understand what a man can, because it doesn't have the spirit of man. It's the spirit of man that makes your mind understand materialistic knowledge. I hope you can understand that. But Adam's children, now, gradually got into a civilization. As they were then, they didn't [have] many people. They began to realize they had to get some kind of organization. So they had men at the head of this and that and the other. But they didn't have right knowledge about how to get along with one another. And the man at the head was always self-centered. And he tried to use those under him for his own good, and his own benefit—where God uses those under Him for the benefit of the ones under Him. God is a Giver, not a getter. But those who are head over other people in this world try to GET from them.

The **rulers over governments**, and kings over governments in this world, they pretend to be and they pose and represent themselves to be the benefactors of the people. They pose as the servants of the people. Politicians running for office, they're trying to tell the people how they are going to serve the people. Don't kid yourself. They want to get rulership over the people to serve themselves. Anytime a person gets in a good-sized political office, he doesn't have to worry about where his money's coming from the rest of his life. You don't know how it's manipulated and how it's handled, but he finds a way; and he always gets along just fine.

Now, I remember when the President of the United States got \$50,000 a

year. (\$50,000 a year.) And then I remember when it was raised to \$75,000. Frankly, I don't realize what it has been raised to now; but it's not so great. Many people in the large industries—presidents who are board chairmen of large industries—get a much bigger salary than the President of the United States. But no President of the United States ever needs to worry what's going to happen to him if he only served for four years. Jimmy Carter will never have to worry, and he doesn't have to live off of his peanuts. [Audience laughs.] For one thing, they can write their memoirs. And great money is going to come. And there are a great many little ways through politics that money keeps coming into. Ways you don't know anything about; and I don't know either, so I can't tell you.

But anyway, a civilization got started; and man began to have his own government. First, after the Flood, there was a city started by Nimrod; and his wife, Semiramis, started the religion. And so different religions became involved, other religions came. And then there were different cities. There were just city-states—no new countries, no nations yet for a long time. Finally we came into ancient nations. There was Egypt, and there was Greece, and Syria, and Assyria, and other nations like that. And then one king over Babylon got many nations together into a united empire. And the first world empire was the Chaldean Empire, called Babylon. And so we came to live in empires, and ever since we have different nations or empires. Now empires are just about gone. The British Empire, the sun has set; and it really isn't an empire any more. It is no longer Great Britain. It is just Britain.

But there came governments over the world. There came a system of education **devised by** man. And man believing in himself and teaching psychology of believing in your own self. But don't believe in God. Different religions came. A different system of society, or a certain system of society, and it came into what we call **civilization**. That's the way people were living when Christ came; and that's the way people are living today, only it's bigger

and it's worse today than it was then.

The only reason they didn't produce materially and physical things a lot sooner... Men could have gone to the moon and back a lot sooner than they did, but they didn't know how to cooperate together. There was always competition. Man didn't know how to get along with man. And so even his MATERIAL PROGRESS was slowed down very greatly and almost stifled. But a human society was built, and human nature came.

Now, human nature came from Satan the devil. Maybe I should read from Ephesians 2. But let me just say the one thing. In Ephesians 2 it says *"You...were dead in trespasses and sins."* And you were, because you are just going to die. Anyone is subject to death in this life. People think they are going to live forever—you're not. This life, we are only here for a short time. I just wonder whether I'm going to live tomorrow. Here next month I will be 90-years of age, and I have to think about that. Now, I know God can keep me alive. He could keep me alive for another 30 years. He doesn't do that to very many people very often. I know that He could, but I don't know that He will. But whatever is His will, He will do; and I have to be subject to it. And I am. I mean to be, and I want to be.

But here was this world. And we are the same as dead in trespasses and sins. But now God says, "You are alive." In other words, we have life through the Holy Spirit. Jesus came and called His Church **out of this world**. Jesus came to QUALIFY to sit on the throne of the Earth. And He did, before He came to preach a word. After He had qualified, He said **"THE TIME IS FULFILLED."** Now He had qualified, and He could proclaim the good news of the Kingdom of God. That's the government of God, the Family of God, that will rule a different civilization. And He came to call people out of this world and to START that NEW CIVILIZATION—the World Tomorrow. And that's what the Church is. It's a new civilization just begotten, just started.

Begotten, Then Born

Let me explain right now, while it's on my mind, what that means. How were you born? I've explained this before. Let me go over it once again. I want to refresh your minds right at this point. You were an ovum in your mother's womb. You came out of one of your mother's ovaries. She had two of them, and you came out of one of them. You were a little tiny ovum, the size of a pinpoint or the size of a period at the end of a newspaper sentence in just ordinary small type. But there was no life except a maximum of not longer than 28 days, and probably not that long. It was only **a temporary existence.**

You wouldn't have been born except that a sperm cell from the very body of your father entered into that ovum and imparted life to it. And it took the male to impart life, otherwise it would only have a temporary existence. And then you became an embryo. You were an embryo human being, but you weren't a real human being yet. You didn't even have human form or shape, and you were as small as a pinpoint.

After four months, you were beginning to take on human shape. There was a sort of a body, and off of that body were sprouting arms and legs; and there was a head. Things like that were beginning to appear, and inside of that body a heart was forming. And veins and arteries were beginning to form; and blood was beginning to circulate, and the heart was beginning to beat. You were taking on human form and shape. But you were still very, very tiny and just beginning to have human shape.

And it took five more months for you to develop. You weren't born again. You weren't born yet. You were **begotten**. And after five more months you were ready to come outside of your mother and to be born, and now to have your own life. But even now it was only a temporary life, and you had to grab your first breath. And you yelled, "Whaa, whaa." I know I've heard

that three times with three of my own children, when they were born and drew their first breath. I guess it hurts the lungs when you grab that first breath and makes them yell out. And that's the way you were **born**.

But now let me tell you, if you received God's Spirit in the Church, the Church is merely an ovum with the Holy Spirit of God impregnated. And we are an impregnated ovum. We are, therefore, an embryo impregnated by the Holy Spirit that comes from the very body of the Father, who is God. This is the divine Father coming into us. His Spirit, therefore, mingles with our spirit. And the spirit in us, as we grow up, is the nucleus. And we as a human being. An adult human being is a fetus. A fetus that only has a temporary life, and it is not an embryo until the Spirit of God comes. When the Spirit of God comes in, that is (you might say) the earnest—not a full down payment—on eternal life.

But you are now begotten to be in the Kingdom of God. So the Church is AN EMBRYO. The Church **IS** the Kingdom of God, but not yet born. Not yet with divine life, only the life of the Holy Spirit in us with ours. And Satan the devil is still getting to us. The Spirit of God now is going to open our mind to understand God's knowledge. And it's as many as are **LED BY THE HOLY SPIRIT** as God through the Holy Spirit reveals knowledge. God is the Teacher. The Holy Spirit opens your mind to understand that teaching. Does the Spirit of God open your mind to understand what I am teaching you now today? How wonderful it is that we can be begotten into the Kingdom of God!

We are **begotten Gods**, children of God. Do you realize how great that is, brethren? Or is it of that much consequence to you? **THAT IS THE MOST IMPORTANT THING THAT COULD POSSIBLY HAPPEN**. And we just take it as if it's: "Now everyone's supposed to go to church, and I guess maybe we should have the Holy Spirit." But you don't know if you've got it or not. Is that the way you look at it? Is it just of no consequence? Or is

it the most important thing that ever happened or ever could happen in all the universe, to anybody? To be **AN ACTUAL CHILD OF GOD**. And the scriptures say “Behold, **NOW** are we the children of God.” It just doesn’t appear yet what we will be. That doesn’t appear yet. It will appear, because then we’ll be like Christ; and this vile body will be changed into a spirit body like His, when He comes.

So I tell you: What is the solution of all of the troubles in the world? The world is in trouble. People say, “Well, Christ is the solution.” What do you mean? Just believing that there is a person like Christ? A great evangelist, Billy Graham, has said that. “Christ is the solution.” In other words, you just believe that Christ is and say “I accept Him.” Oh, that’s not the solution. The solution is that the Spirit of God must come as the result, through Christ. Christ is the door. But Jesus said “**NO MAN CAN COME** to Me except the Father that sent Me draws Him.” And God is only drawing a few now!

Called To Be Doers

I want to get to that now. Why is God only drawing a few now? Why is God calling **THIS CHURCH**; but He’s not calling the people in the Methodist, or the Baptist, or other churches? Now, does that sound like I’m a competitor and I’m talking competitively? Not at all! We’re not in any competition with anybody. It’s just, I’m only stating the fact. And it’s just as many of you sitting here as **HAVE** the Spirit of God and **ARE BEING LED BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD** that are really in the Church because you’re not baptized into the church in water. You say, “Well, are you a church member?” “Oh, yes, I was baptized.” “What do you mean?” “So-and-so baptized me in water.” That didn’t put you into the Church. Do you think it did? Well, you’ve been thinking wrong! That didn’t put you into the Church. Let me read it to you.

Romans 8:9 *But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit [That's the Spirit of God.], if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his [He's not a Christian, and he's not a member of the Church.]*

By **ONE SPIRIT** are we all baptized into the one Body of the Church. By one Spirit! Not by water. Water baptism is only something you are commanded to do to show that you're willing to do what God said. But that doesn't put you in the Church. So don't ever say, "Oh, I'm a member of the Church because I was baptized" meaning you were baptized in water. Not unless you have the Holy Spirit to open your mind to comprehend the teaching of God, and unless you are being LED by that teaching. Once you hear it, that you follow it. Not the **HEARERS** of the law are just before God but **THE DOERS OF THE LAW** shall be justified. You first have to hear it, or read it. Then you have to do it! Just knowledge alone won't save you. But you have to have the knowledge before you know what to do. But it's the doing that finally saves you, brethren. Oh, I hope we can get these things straight.

A Few Called Now

Now then I'm coming to the most important part of all. Jesus said, "I will build My Church." But He said also John 6:44. Read it in your Bible there. I've read it so many times.

John 6:44 *No man CAN come to me...*

There's only one door to God, and that's Christ. There's no other way you can get to God but through Christ. And yet He said:

John 6:44 *No man CAN come to me except the Father draw him.*

And God is only drawing a few. Why? Why isn't He drawing them all?

How did God start the Church? Let's get to that. Jesus called twelve disciples. They didn't choose Him. He was walking along a place, and I know I've walked along that same place many times. I've been all around the Sea of Galilee, and I think there's only one place that could be the place where He was walking along. And He saw Peter and his brother, Andrew, out in the boat with their father; and they were fishermen. You know: like father, like son. They were two sons that their father. And it was Simon and Andrew really, because his name wasn't Peter. His name was Simon. And Jesus called them and said, "Come, follow Me. I'm going to make you fishers of men. You are through fishing for that kind of fish." And they came. Apparently the father didn't. Apparently Jesus didn't even call the father. But He called those two brothers, and they came.

And when Jesus saw Peter (There's another scripture, in John, that indicates it was the first time He saw him), He said, "Thou art Peter." Or Cephas; I forget, but it means the same thing. And anyway, Peter is merely a surname. And it says that Jesus surnamed Simon "Peter." Now his real name was Simon the son of Jonas. And Jonas was his father. But Jesus SURNAMED him. And a surname is a title designating the kind of job or occupation you'll have. "Peter" is the title of a **leader**, and Peter was made to be the human leader in the Church of the apostles. Christ made him the leader. He chose eleven others along with him.

The Great Commission

But now I want you to notice the great commission. Jesus taught those apostles for 3 1/2 years. They went to school. They didn't sit in a classroom. It was a little different. They didn't follow Plato's system of a building with seats and a teacher with a desk up front. No, He followed His own system. They went from city to city, and they all went along with Him. They had to walk most of the way. I don't know how they slept. It doesn't say very much

about that in the Bible. But Jesus taught them, and they were listening. And now Jesus preached to the people, but as a witness. He didn't call them to be converted. He only called primarily these Twelve. However, to those He preached, He said, "REPENT ye, and believe the gospel (the good news) of the Kingdom of God." And it is recorded that, on the day of Pentecost, there were a total of 120 including those Twelve that had come and were there ready to receive the Holy Spirit when the Church was founded on that day.

Now Jesus taught them so that they could become teachers. I want you to get this principle. He didn't start a Church with a lot of members. He only started a few **students**, that they could **become teachers**. Then He could start the Church around them, and then they would be THE FOUNDATION of the church; and they would be the teachers. Do you get that, brethren? He didn't call members of the Church at all. He called students, and they weren't members of the Church. They were taught so that they could become teachers. And when He started the Church, He had teachers already there. The teachers were the apostles. Now I don't think you've ever understood that before. Did you get that?

All right. He taught them. And when He had finished teaching them, now He had some people taught to become teachers. They had been students. Or, you see, if you look up in a dictionary. I'm sitting at my desk. If I reach down in this drawer down here for a dictionary. Of course, this isn't my desk. This is only a platform here. But in my desk in my office I can reach down in my dictionary. And I look up the word "disciple." And what do you think I find in the dictionary? It means a student or a learner. One who is learning and who is a student. And the DISCIPLES were students, and Jesus was the Teacher.

Now then, when they were taught and ready to be graduated... And they didn't graduate until they received the Holy Spirit, and that was going to come later, after Christ's crucifixion. But He called them, and I want you to

notice now in Matthew 28. Notice the Great Commission. Let's see if you don't see something here you never noticed before. Here's the Great Commission.

Matthew 28:18 Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

He had **qualified**. Now He had ALL POWER in heaven and earth. And He said:

Matthew 28:19 Go ye therefore...

In view of the fact I have that power, and you represent Me, I'm giving you power of attorney to represent Me, and I'm conferring some of that power on you. "Go ye therefore" and what? What is that next word? Can you read it?

Matthew 28:19 Go ye therefore, and **teach**...

They were now teachers. They were going to become the teachers, and the ones they teach were going to be the students. But no man was going to come and could be taught spiritual knowledge except the Father drew them. But He said to Peter, "Feed the flock." Go and teach.

Matthew 28:19-20 Go...and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name [or, into the name] of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy [Spirit]: (20) **teaching** [There again, teaching.] them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you.

He spent 3 1/2 years teaching them the doctrines, the way of life, how to live; and it's all based on the word **love**. It's all based on loving God first of all, and then on loving your fellow man as yourself. But you have to even love your own self because the body is the temple of the Holy Spirit, and you need to take care of it. Be sure of the food you poke into it. Be sure of the

kind of mental food you poke into your mind. And take care of this body. And most people don't. Most people don't know what they ought to eat. They've never studied to find out. A very large percentage of people are way overweight. They eat too much. They abuse their bodies by eating too much. They feed their minds on the wrong kind of food. You don't even love yourself like God intended you to. It is love to God and your neighbor **as yourself**. And it's a responsibility towards your own self. So that's what He said to do.

Now the Holy Spirit was not then given yet to everybody. Back in Joel 2:28, where Joel the prophet made this prophecy.

Joel 2:28 It shall come to pass afterward [Actually, this has not fully happened yet. "Afterward..."], that I will pour out my spirit [That's God speaking. God says that He will pour out His Spirit.] upon ALL flesh.

He's not doing that yet. He's only pouring out His Spirit on those that God calls; because Jesus said no man could come except those that are **CALLED BY GOD**. Now why did Jesus? He didn't go out and say, "Well, who will come?" Whosoever will may come? Oh no. He chose twelve. **He selected them**. They didn't have anything to say about it. Jesus decided who He would call. Peter didn't decide he'd be the head—the leader among the ministers of the Church, the apostles. Jesus decided it! The apostle Paul didn't decide it. Jesus struck him down, blind, and put him through quite an experience to wake him up, because he was going the wrong way and Jesus just turned him around to go the other direction, so to speak.

So it isn't a case of "whoever will" can come get into the Kingdom of God. Not now. And there's a reason, and I want to explain that reason. I haven't come to the real crux of this sermon yet. All this is building up to it, Now we are coming to it. The day of Pentecost He called 120 that were filled with the Holy Spirit that day. I don't need to turn and read that, Acts the 2nd

chapter beginning with verse 1. But now, with the spiritual mind, they were sent out to grow in grace and in knowledge. II Peter 3:18, where Peter said... It's the last words of Peter in II Peter.

II Peter 3:18 GROW in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

Anyone who comes to have the Holy Spirit, now the Spirit of God will open their mind to understand—when they are taught. So you must grow in spiritual knowledge. In other words, go to school. That's what it means. Go to school.

Called To Be Teachers

Next I want to read from Hebrews the 5th chapter and verse 12. I want you to notice. Paul says here, in writing this book of Hebrews:

Hebrews 5:12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers [Now, he's talking to people in the Church. And it says "you ought to be teachers"—you in the Church. You should have learned enough to be a teacher.], ye have need that one teach you again [because they weren't good students; and they weren't paying any attention in the 1st grade, and the 2nd grade, and the 3rd grade. And they didn't learn very well. It says "teach you again..."] ...the first principles of the oracles of God [that is, in spiritual knowledge and the way of God]; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat [Or, solid food. Only just liquids and milk like a little baby. A baby hasn't grown up yet.]

We—although we are grown human beings—are merely infants in Christ. We are merely in the embryo and the fetus stage of the Kingdom of God. Now you notice Revelation 5 and verse 10, where it's speaking here of Christ.

Revelation 5:10 *Hast made us unto our God* **kings and priests**

[“Priests” means teachers; and we are to be teachers and kings, ruling and teaching.]: *and we shall reign on the earth.*

That’s in the Kingdom of God. And we are being taught. Everyone in the Church is now a student BEING TAUGHT so we can become **TEACHERS** and **RULERS UNDER CHRIST IN THE KINGDOM!** That’s the point I’ve been trying to get over. Now I want you to notice what Jesus said here in Revelation 3:21.

Revelation 3:21 *To him that overcometh* [overcomes the wrong things, and goes by the way he’s learning; and learning in spiritual knowledge] *will I grant to sit with me on my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father on his throne.*

And in Revelation 2, verses 26 and 27:

Revelation 2:26-27 *And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give POWER over the nations: (27) And he shall RULE them with a rod of iron..*

But we are going to teach them **a new way of living!** The Kingdom of God will have to live a different way if we are going to have peace. But we don’t have peace in this world. We have some progress, yes; but even that progress has been retarded by competition. Competition even within an organization. Capital is against labor, and labor is against capital. And the laboring man is taught “Well, give the boss as little work and cooperation as you can. Get all you can get from him. We’ll go on strike for more wages, but let’s give less. Let’s not give him anything if we can get out of it. Let’s produce as little as we can.” And so in everything today it’s man against man.

Two Different Ways Of Life

Brethren, listen. Take two people. It started out with God and the Word.

They were two beings. Now take two people today. One is trying to get something for himself. He has to get it out of the earth. So he tries to get something for himself out of the earth. But here's this other person over here. And the other person is trying to keep him from getting anything, and trying to take away from him even what he already has, and to stop him from getting any more. And so this man is trying to prevent this other man from getting anything and to stop him from getting any more, and take away from him what he has.

No wonder it took us up into the last century of 6,000 years before we could send men to the moon, and photograph Mars and Jupiter and Saturn; because man was working against man to stop his progress and to prevent it. Competition! Everyone against everyone. Everyone trying to get, and trying to keep the other person from getting.

Now then, we have two persons; and each is wanting to help the other. And this person is interested in what he can produce out of the earth, and so is the other; but this man 'A' over here, he tries to help 'B.' He says "I'll do all I can, and I'll help him do what he can." And 'B' says, "Well, I'm going to help 'A.' I'm going to work with him. We'll cooperate. Together, will they produce more than if the two are fighting against each other and he's trying to take away from the other? Can you see? When cooperation comes..."

Now Satan argued that competition is better. He argues, you see, that you're all for yourself that is a spur to endeavor and to arouse you to ambition, so you'll work harder and therefore you'll produce more. Yeah? You'll produce more when you are working against the other guy, and he's working against you, and each of you is trying to prevent the other from getting anything? Oh, no. You work more when you both put your heart in it, and both trying to help one another, when you work together.

I'm going overtime. I'm going to have to stop. But I've given you the

message. I didn't know it was so late. I got so interested in it myself. I don't go over time very often. I hope you were interested too. But the Church is the Kingdom of God in embryo.

Preparing Teachers First

Now let me just...I have to give you this in conclusion. When I was over in Amman just recently, in Jordan, I found that the princess, who is the wife of the heir-apparent to the throne. In other words, it's King Hussein's brother, Prince Hussein. She had started a school for the mentally retarded. I got interested in that, and I went out to see the school. The princess showed me all the way through. They had mentally retarded children, and they were trying to teach them. They even had to teach them how to put a button in a buttonhole. They had to teach them how to go to the toilet. And they had little practice toilets for these little kids. They had to be taught how to do everything, because they were mentally retarded. Their parents didn't know how to teach them.

Now they had just a little over 100 pupils there, I believe it was. And I said, "Now, is this all the mentally retarded people in your nation here?" She said, "Oh, no. It's only a small fraction." I said, "You mean you've got a lot more mentally retarded?" "Oh, yes." Well, I said, "Why can't you go on and teach them all?" "Well, Mr. Armstrong, we can't teach them until we first teach teachers. We have to get other people **taught how to teach** them. And we can't do it."

And I'm trying to do that. Do you see? Jesus couldn't start the Church until He taught some to be teachers. Jesus can't start the Kingdom of God until He has **ALL OF US AS TEACHERS** to teach the millions. So He called twelve to teach a few thousand. And there were 3,000 converted that very first day, and they were taught by the Twelve. And then they were multiplied

for a few days. They must have gotten up to about 100,000 or so, and about the size of this Church right now. And then they went backward. Then the false doctrines came in, and false apostles; and the true gospel was suppressed, and was not preached to the world.

And even the true Church began to lose most of their teaching that they had. When I came among them, they knew the right name, the Church of God {3}. They knew about the Sabbath. But oh there was so much they didn't know. They didn't know about the annual holy days. They didn't know the purpose of the Church. They didn't know the meaning of it. They didn't know what's going to happen in the Millennium. They just knew there would be one, but they didn't know anything about it.

You have to teach teachers to teach the others. Christ came to start A **NEW WORLD. A NEW CIVILIZATION!** People think this civilization is wonderful. Oh, it's Satan's civilization. Jesus came to start **God's civilization.** He started it with twelve. Then He started it with the Church. Now here are more than a thousand of us right here today. And each of us is going to be able to teach several hundred, if not a thousand. And if there are 1,000 of us and each of us can teach 1,000—a thousand thousand, let's see, is that a million? I guess so. How many does it take to teach the billions of the Earth?

That's why God did not call everybody. He was not calling the world to salvation. The world can't be saved until they **LEARN** the way of God. And to learn, they first have to have the Spirit of God; and then begin to learn at the beginning, in 1st and 2nd grade. And then maybe the equivalent to Junior High and High School, and then they can get into the college and university. And **He's calling US now** in order that, in the Millennium, we can teach the millions and even the billions.

Listen, the world thinks that Jesus came to teach. And if you just say

you got the password, “I accept Christ,” and you go forward and get a little Billy Graham literature, you can go home and forget about it tomorrow morning, but you’re going to get into the Kingdom of God. Oh no. We have to learn the way of living of God—the way that is cooperation, that helps to produce. And, brethren, ultimately (after that 1,000 years and the Great White Throne Judgment) we’re going to go to other planets, and we’re going to raise up new people. We’re going to start new worlds. And it’s going to go on and on until here are BILLIONS TIMES BILLIONS of people. And God is starting with a few of us.

DOES THAT MEAN ANYTHING TO YOU? IS THAT A CHALLENGE TO YOU, TO GET ON FIRE AND TO LEARN MORE? But learning alone isn’t enough. You have to be **doers** of the Word, as well as hearers and learners. So God is developing **CHARACTER**—and that is the knowledge plus the action of doing.

Meaning Of The Church

Now I want to give you THE MEANING OF THE CHURCH. The people in the churches of this world haven’t any idea of the why there should be a Church. Why has not God called everybody? Just like in Jordan, they have to teach teachers before they can teach others of these kids. And God has to call and teach teachers before we can teach the others. And they have to be taught before they know how to live in the way to build a right society and a right civilization that will be both happy and productive, and everybody cooperating with everybody. Everybody at peace and enjoying life; and none of the troubles that we’re having in this world today. Do you get the message, brethren?

This Church is doing everything it can to that end. We’re trying to teach you every way we can. We’re trying to not only put ministers over you in

churches all over this world, and now there are hundreds of ministers. God used me to start Ambassador College. Not only here; but finally we started in Bricket Wood in England, and then we started in Big Sandy, Texas. And, I tell you, over 50% of all the men who have graduated from Bricket Wood in England are in the ministry today. And I think about 40% both here and in Big Sandy have become ministers. And many of the girl students that are graduated through these years have either married and become wives of these men, helping, or they themselves are employed someway in the Work of the Church.

The purpose of Ambassador College is merely to call, and to teach, and to train people for the Work of the Church. And the purpose of the Church is to call people that GOD HAS CALLED, and God selects them, to be **educated**, to be taught now as students, so that we can become teachers when God does start to save the world! The world has to be TAUGHT how to live! The world has to be TAUGHT how to cooperate. And they have to be taught that they have to have a Head, a Leader, who is God. And God leads through Christ. And Christ has to have human leaders. He leads on this Earth with me, through me. And I lead through different ministers and through heads of different departments; and through men over the heads in Australia, in South Africa, in England, and in other countries around the world. There is **organization**, and there has to be such organization.

Satan has done everything he could to stop this. He tried to kill the Christ Child. Then he tried to get Christ tempted when He was 30 years old, just before He began to preach. He has thrown everything he has at me personally. You don't know what Satan has thrown at me personally, and what I've had to suffer. And Satan is the accuser of the brethren. He's accused me of this, that, and the other thing. Every rotten thing that Satan can think up, he just thinks it up; and I'm supposed to be guilty of it.

And brethren, I want to tell you, those who were in the Church and have

got embittered and have gone out they are much more concerned about this Church and what goes on in the Church than you people who are in it. To them, it's their life. It's just their energy. What's going on in this Church? They're against it, and they want to destroy it. To them, it's A PASSION. Is it a passion with you—to learn, to be a student, to get good grades and learn the way of God, the way of life of God, and to be a teacher of others? You don't just go out and get others to say "I receive Christ." It isn't like that. They have to be **taught**, from the ground up, the way of life of God and of Christ. And you're all called, or otherwise what are you doing here if God hasn't called you?

God help you to open your minds to see and to have a vision and to have ambition to get there, and for the Kingdom of God. An **ambition** is the desire plus the willpower to put forth the effort, the inspiration to WANT TO DO IT. **Is your whole heart in it, brethren?** Or it is just a little something? Are you just here to be amused and entertained? Or were you here to learn something today?

Well, God help you. You were given the opportunity that Adam had. And you have to make the same decision he did. But you are now, you're students. What are you going to do? How much are you going to learn? As I say, we're doing everything we can. We not only have ministers, look at the publications we send out. For the Church, we have the Good News. We have the Worldwide News. We have all kinds of booklets. We have the *Bible Correspondence Course*. We have a letter going out every month from me. We have the *Plain Truth* [magazine] and that contains matters for others—to feed our people as well as the outside world. And for children, we have the *Youth '82*. And we have all kinds of things to feed people. We are trying to teach you, and you are students.

There's no Church like this on the face of the Earth. The others are not churches of God. They are churches of men! They're part of Satan's world.

And Jesus says that the people in them are the children of Satan. You're called to become the children of God. Oh, brethren, I hope you get it. I hope you can put YOUR WHOLE HEARTS into it. And some of you are, in fact many of you are.

I know there've been many good reports have come. But I feel as somehow we haven't really been stirred. We haven't really gotten the message. And we don't have that **inspiration** we ought to have. Well I hope that God gives me a little of that inspiration, and that it's catching, and that you catch it, and that you get to have the dynamic interest and vitality, and will to go ahead in it that God has given me. I wear myself out. And I hope that you will, too. Well, I've gone overtime today—I don't do that very often, but you needed it. Thank you very much brethren.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Editorial note: wrong word said. The original was: "It has ears to see."

{2} - Editorial note: wrong name said. The original was: "Adam deceived Eve."

{3} - Editorial note: wrong word said. The original was: "the right name, the Kingdom of God."

Another Civilization

Sermon (October 2, 1982)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Another Civilization.....	1181	End Time Elijah	1200
Pray For Your Enemies	1183	The Two Trees	1202
Christ's Gospel	1189	God's Coded Book	1203
The God Of This World	1191	Man Incomplete	1204
The Whole Armor Of God	1192	Only Those God Calls	1210
God's Great Purpose	1194	The Firstfruit Teachers	1212
The Creator God	1196	Becoming Ready	1214
Angels Created First	1197	Predestined As Firstfruits	1215
The Creation Of Man	1199		

This is the largest festival, the largest gathering, that is held anywhere in the world every year eight days. Although we are gathered in many different feast sites (or festival sites) all around the world, we are all together; and we are joined together by satellite television as one body. Very soon now we are going to come to the time that you read of in the 11th chapter of the book of Revelation, beginning in verse 15:

Revelation 11:15 And the seventh angel sounded [and that 7th trumpet will be sounding soon. I don't mean this year; but very, very soon.]; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, **The kingdoms of this world** [That means the United States, Canada, France, Britain, Germany, Russia, Japan; every nation all over the world.] are become [and will then become] the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign FOREVER.

And we shall be there, brethren, hopefully (and I hope we all will be there) reigning with Him. It will be a different world all together than this world, because this world is NOT God's world. I wonder how many of you think it is God's world. Mostly people do. There's something wrong about

this world, and a better world is coming – a new world, a new civilization – with peace, with happiness, with joy, with great accomplishment.

We will be accomplishing things forever and ever because we will have immortal Life. We'll have self-containing Life. We won't have to breathe air to live. We won't have to refuel about three times a day with food and water from the ground. We won't have to have a heart beating. We'll have Life inherent, self-containing Life, immortal Life in the Kingdom – the Family – of God. The Kingdom of God is the Family of God into which we may be born. Jesus Christ was THE FIRSTBORN OF MANY BRETHREN! Are you going to be born into that Kingdom, as He was?

As a basic theme for this entire great festival I would like to read to you my mother's own favorite passage in the Bible. It's the 133rd Psalm. I would like to set this as **the basic theme** all through this entire eight-day festival.

Psalm 133:1 Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!

Or then, as I said last night, in John 13 and verse 35:

*John 13:35 By this [Jesus Christ said, "By this ..."] shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have **love** one to another.*

You know the law of God, which the world seems to hate; they say it's done away. They try to say (and the Protestant churches especially are trying to claim) that Christ did away with His Father's law, His Father's commandments. But He said, "I have kept My Father's commandments, and I've set you an example that you should do as I have done." And He sent the disciples out to teach others to do exactly what He had taught them, and that was to keep His Father's commandments.

But those commandments are just **love**, and love is out-flowing towards others in service and into the concern for the good, and the welfare, and the

happiness of other people – instead of trying to compete, to harm, to hurt, to take away from others, to **get**, and to take for yourself. That is the way of this world. But this is not God’s world.

Pray For Your Enemies

Now love is **God’s way of life**; and we are to love, brethren, all people. We are to love even our enemies! And I think I mentioned last night that when I pray, I customarily pray first of all ...

Well, first of all (let me say) I give God thanks. I believe perhaps the most prevalent sin is ingratitude. People are not grateful for what God has given them, most people. We should be grateful, and I want to **thank God** for what He has given. Thank God for His great purpose. Thank Him for His great master plan, for revealing it. I thank God first of all for that, and that the greatest POWER (greater than any other power) is that power of God, who is love. Who loves us all so much He gave His only begotten Son to die and give His life for us – to pay the penalty that we have incurred on ourselves, every one of us. That is love, and I want to be grateful for it. So I usually, in my prayers, start out by thanking God (if that is any kind of example to you).

Next I pray for my enemies, and they are many; and I do have enemies. There may be some waiting to serve a subpoena or summons of some kind on me outside right now, for all I know. There have been the last two or three days. There are enemies trying to destroy this Work. And right now Satan has great wrath. He is very angry, and he is angry at the Church of God – the Church that Jesus Christ started 1951 years ago. Satan tried to destroy the Christ-child when He was born. And before Jesus Christ preached a word, Satan met Him in the great confrontation and tried to destroy Him.

Jesus QUALIFIED to sit on the throne of the earth and to RULE ALL NATIONS when He overcame Satan. Satan said, “If You fall down and

worship me, I'll give You all the governments and the kingdoms of this world – because they are mine! I sit on the throne of the earth.” And he does! And he said, “You just fall down and worship me, and I'll give it all to You.” Jesus didn't dispute that they were Satan's, but He knew it had to come from God.

He told Satan to get out and to leave Him. He gave a command, and Satan had to obey and slink away. So I do thank God that even though there are enemies, the greatest **power** is God; and that enemies, and even Satan, can do absolutely nothing except God allows it. When Jesus was on trial for His life before Pontius Pilate, Pilate said, “Do you know that I have the power of life and death over you?” Jesus said, “You could have no power at all over Me except it is given to you (and permitted or allowed) by My Father in heaven. You can have no power.”

Satan can have power only as God allows. Brethren, that's a wonderful comforting thing to know. I have to know it. My wife of fifty years said (before she died) that Satan would rather destroy me than any man on the face of this earth, and he would rather destroy her next; and he has tried. Believe me, he has tried; but God has not allowed it, and I don't think He's going to. Not yet.

Right now Satan is full of great wrath. You read here in the 12th chapter of the book of Revelation, beginning with verse 7 ... I want you to see what we're facing in right now. While we're gathered here in these feast sites to celebrate the World Tomorrow, let's realize the kind of world we're living in; but we must not be of it. I want to show you about this world, and what WE are trying to **qualify for** – the world to come. But in [1](#) the 7th verse of the 12th chapter of Revelation:

***Revelation 12:7** And there was war in heaven ...*

Now the time of that is approximately the present. That may have occurred just prior to the assault of the largest state in the United States trying

to end this Church and this Work – in the great lawsuit of the state of California against the Worldwide Church of God and against me. They didn't win that lawsuit.

You know, it was the government that sought to destroy the apostle Paul. It was the government of Rome, (that was ruling the world) that put Jesus Christ to death at the behest of the Jews who rejected Him. And many of those Jews were Jews who BELIEVED ON HIM, but they didn't **believe Him**. There's a great difference! They didn't believe Him, but they said they believed on Him. I wonder how many of you just say, "Oh, yes, I believe on Christ." But you don't **believe what He says**. Do you believe Him? That's what you have to do if you are ever going to have eternal Life.

But here is a time when there was to be "war in heaven." If it hasn't happened already, it will happen any day now; and I think it possibly has already happened. Let me read it to you.

***Revelation 12:7-9** Michael [a super archangel] and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, (8) And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. (9) And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan ...*

Now he is a former archangel himself. He is the former cherub, Lucifer. Michael is a cherub of the same rank. And so Michael here was fighting against the former cherub who now has become Satan, the devil.

***Revelation 12:9** ... which **deceiveth the whole world**; he was cast (out into the earth), and his angels [who are now demons] were cast out with him.*

I think I want to come back to some of that a little bit later.

Now only this very morning here in Pasadena, California, this Church and I were on the front page of the newspaper of another lawsuit. This one filed by an individual; and I think that I could read you from the first chapter

of Romans, where those that have been closest to you – who have eaten of your bread, and whom you have fed – will turn on you and rend you (as you read [2](#) in Romans 2:1).

There have been any number of lawsuits filed against this Church. I would say there may have been 30 or 40 just in the last few years. So far, every one has failed. God has prevailed. God has defended this Church, and we have won every lawsuit. But, brethren, we have to keep on our knees; and we have to keep praying, because Satan is very powerful. He sits on the throne of this whole earth, and this is his world. **IT IS NOT GOD’S WORLD!** But remember, as I said, Satan can do nothing God does not allow. And the one who has the **GREAT POWER** is the God of love – who loves us, and who loves His Church.

Now, as I was saying a while ago, we are to love even our enemies. We are to love all people, and I pray first even for my enemies. I wonder if you’ll understand why? I don’t pray and ask God to harm them. I don’t say, “God, smash them. Make them suffer, God.” Oh, I don’t say anything like that. I say, “God, I want You to bless them. I want You to bless my enemies.” I pray for them before I pray for YOU, because the only way God can bless them is if they turn around and start to go the other way – the blessing of pulling them **out** of the way they’re living in now. I want them to have God’s blessings.

You know, for years I couldn’t understand when Jesus said, “Pray for your enemies.” Well, how can you pray **for**? Most people think, “Oh, I should pray against my enemies.” Oh, no. I don’t pray against them. I **PRAY FOR THEM**, and I name them by name; and there are several that I name every single day.

God is going to hear my prayers. They are going to find out where God is working. Of Jesus Himself, He said He could do nothing. Let me tell you,

of myself I can do nothing. Of myself, I have done nothing! A wonderful Work has been built here. This is a wonderful campus, and the three campuses you just saw. Maybe you think I built them? I did not build them. Jesus Christ built them.

All Have Sinned

I did give myself over to Him as an instrument. And, as I said last night (And I think you all heard it. You should have heard it, if you attended the service last night.), I haven't left myself 100% in God's hands. Have you? Can one of you say, "Well, I have; I'm better. I'll point a finger of accusation at you, Mr. Armstrong"? Oh, you can't do it because YOU HAVE SINNED TOO and every one of us has even sinned since we have given ourselves over to God (since we've considered we were Christians). You read of it in I John the 1st chapter.

I John 1:9 If we [We in the Church.] confess our sins [and turn away from them], he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us of all unrighteousness.

Yes, I've made mistakes; and I've actually committed sins – but not willfully, not maliciously. And so have you, brethren (every one of you). You can't point a finger of accusation to anybody, nor can I; nor do I. I don't point a finger of accusation to my enemies. I ask God to **ble**ss them. There's kind of blessing, I tell you, the world doesn't understand; but God does. I know He won't bless them in any way that is not right. Not in any way that is not right.

Well, I just want to say, brethren – you people over in England, you people all through Canada and all over the United States – I need your prayers personally. There are thousands of you that have written that you are behind me 100%. I have to have you behind me, brethren, because Satan does not love me very much. I have to fight my own self. Do you have to fight

yourself? I'M STILL HUMAN, and I do fight myself; and it isn't easy. But by the strength of God and by His grace I shall succeed. Not by my own power or strength, but by the power of the Spirit of God I shall.

Well, I need your prayers because very soon now you're going to find what will come here in the 20th chapter of the book of Revelation, beginning with verse 1 (where John recorded what he saw in vision on the Isle of Patmos about 90 A.D.):

Revelation 20:1-2** And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. (2) And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan [Now you see who this serpent is, who the devil is. He is the serpent. He's called that, and a dragon, in the Bible.], and **bound him a thousand years.

This is his world. Thank God, his time is about up! And it won't be his world any longer in just a very few short years; and it could be fewer than you think. It could be no more than 4 or 5 more years until the Millennium will be here. It's possible.

***Revelation 20:3** And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled.*

Brethren, do you realize that he will still be living a 1,000 years from now? He is **immortal!** He has self-containing Life. But he had a mind. He had free moral agency, just as you and I have; and he made the wrong decision. He turned in **rebellion** against God. He turned against God's way of love, and he turned to the way of hate. He turned from God's way of give, to his way of get. He turned from God's way of humility and obedience to God, to rebellion; and instead of love towards others, and cooperation, and serving, and helping – to competition and strife, to envy and jealousy, to hatred, to destruction (instead of construction and building).

Brethren, God has called us to be on the side of CONSTRUCTION, building UP. That's what we are trying to do – build **character**. We've builded two great campuses. That's only a physical setting to work in. But the main thing is the character in the students and the character in you and you people in God's Church. That's what we are trying to really build. That's only the setting of the diamond.

So (in finishing this) he will be removed; and at the end of the 1,000 years, he'll be released for a little season – for just a little while. But **THIS IS NOT GOD'S WORLD!** I'll show you whose it is. It is Satan's world.

Christ's Gospel

I'm going to turn now to II Corinthians 4, verse 3 and 4.

***II Corinthians 4:3** But if our gospel ...*

That is the gospel of the Kingdom of God, not man's gospel about the person of Christ, but Christ's own gospel of the Kingdom of God. And that is the World Tomorrow. That is another world! Satan is ruling this world. This is not God's world. The gospel is about **ANOTHER WORLD THAT WILL FOLLOW THIS WORLD**. We are the pioneers of that world.

II Corinthians 4:3-4** If our gospel [which is about the World Tomorrow] be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: (4) In whom **the god of this world ...

Who is the god of this world? I've just been reading to you about him: That old dragon, Satan the devil.

***II Corinthians 4:4** ... the god of this world hath **blinded** the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel OF Christ ...*

Not a gospel **about** Christ, but the gospel **of** Christ. That is **the gospel**

Christ preached. They don't preach that gospel. It was NOT PREACHED FOR 1900 YEARS, brethren – until God raised me up to begin to preach it to the whole world. CAN YOU REALIZE THAT? That may be a preposterous statement, but that happens to be true! That gospel was not preached 100 years ago. That gospel was not preached 75 years ago, when I was a young man.

The world heard a gospel ABOUT Christ. “We must tell the world,” they say, ”**about** Jesus.” That’s all. But they don’t even know what sin is. I asked a minister up in Oregon one time for a definition of sin. I said, “What is sin?” He couldn’t answer it. I knew that he knew, but he wouldn’t answer – because you find the answer in I John 3 and, let’s see, verse 4.

I John 3:4 Sin is the transgression of the law.

But he tried to say the law is done away, we don’t have to keep the law of God. That’s the law of love. You know why he didn’t want to keep it? Because that law talks about the holy Sabbath day that belongs to God, and says that belongs to Him (not to us) and to quit profaning it. But he didn’t believe that. That’s **the test commandment** – and the churches of this world don’t believe it – and the annual Sabbaths, of which this is one (and also this is a weekly Sabbath) on which I’m speaking. He didn’t believe it, and he couldn’t answer.

I said, “I want a **Bible** definition of sin. What does God, how does He define sin?” (Just like a dictionary definition.) He refused to answer it. This world is deceived AND WILLINGLY deceived! I’ve opened the minds of many, even ministers. They just give some sarcastic remark and go on with their false doctrines and their false beliefs just the same.

Now, notice this:

II Corinthians 4:4 ... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of

them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel OF Christ ...

Not about Christ, but the message Christ preached. The Bank of Morgan in New York was not a bank inside of Morgan. It isn't something he swallowed that was in his stomach. It was a bank he owned! The Kingdom of God is the kingdom God owns. It's God's Kingdom. The Kingdom of heaven is a Kingdom not in heaven but a Kingdom of heaven.

II Corinthians 4:4 ... lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is in the image of God, should shine unto them.

You know a bright light, when you've been in darkness, will just blind you all of a sudden. It hurts your eyes. And I guess the truth does hurt the eyes of people that don't want it but that love this world.

The God Of This World

This world does have its pleasures; and its pleasures, and the things it likes, you find on television. Television today is a commercial enterprise to get over the commercials to sell merchandise to you. They say, "Don't go away, stay with us," and so on, so you can get the commercials to sell you some merchandize. And yet, what is the entertainment they give you? It is either sex (illicit sex, the wrong kind of sex. And even the commercials are filled with sex. Nearly always a man and woman together; and they get their faces up as close as they can get them in order to give every indication of something sex to work on your mind) or in the many programs that are filled with violence and excitement. That's what people want today.

There's an old saying in the business world: "Jones pays the freight. Give Jones what he wants." Television gives the public what they want; and what they want (what they have an appetite for) is that which is evil, which Satan puts in their minds and hearts to desire – which is not right and not

good for them.

So there is Satan. Now I want you to notice something in Ephesians [{3}](#) 6 and verse 12.

Ephesians 6:12 *For we wrestle not against flesh and blood ...*

That is, we're not having to strive against it. It's not flesh and blood striving against us. The lawsuits I told you about, it's not just human beings. It's Satan in back of it. Here it is, brethren.

Ephesians 6:12 *For we wrestle not [or struggle not] against flesh and blood [or other people], but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness [or wicked spirits] in high places.*

This is Satan's world. He is the god of this world.

The Whole Armor Of God

Now I'd like to have you notice verse 11, where it tells us:

Ephesians 6:11 *Put on the whole armour of God that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.*

And then continuing after the verse I read to you, in verse 13:

Ephesians 6:13 *Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day ...*

We're in that evil day now; but we're here (all over the world) to celebrate a day and to look forward into a day of happiness and peace and joy, when the world will be at peace. But we are to live that way among ourselves now, even praying for our enemies; but not praying for the world.

Ephesians 6:14-15 *Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth [which is the Bible], and having on the breastplate of righteousness [right doing according to the law of God, which shows you the way of righteousness]: (15) And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace [instead of war] ...*

I'm often called "an ambassador for peace" to the nations of the world, and I talk regularly with the heads of state all over the world. My most recent conference was with Mrs. Thatcher, who is the Prime Minister in England. Just as you heard in the sermon this morning, we've come to the time when women are ruling over men. You know the first thing I said to Mrs. Thatcher when she ushered me into a sort of living room (it wasn't in her office), and she ushered a very comfortable chair up for me; and she said, "I think you'll be more comfortable here." She said, "I'll sit on the sofa." Then we sat down, and I told her ... I said, "Well, Mrs. Thatcher, now I can say, having met you, that I have met all four of the women prime ministers of the big nations of the world."

So then she began to try to name the other four. Well, she could name Mrs. Meir of Israel (whom I met and knew very well), Mrs. Gandhi of India (who spent at least 20 minutes trying to explain to me why she couldn't send an ambassador into Israel – because the then Minister of Foreign Affairs of Israel had asked me to give her his love when I saw her and to ask her to send an emissary of some kind, or if not an ambassador some other emissary, to Israel to establish a connection between the two governments. She spent 20 minutes explaining why she couldn't do that, because of the Arabs on her border.).

Mrs. Thatcher stumbled just a little bit on the other woman ruler, who was Mrs. Bandaranaike of Sri Lanka. She became Prime Minister when her husband died, who was the Prime Minister; and so they just had her take over. I think her term, of course, has expired before now; but I also saw her in

the living room of her home, where she served tea, and spent quite a little time in an afternoon with her.

Yes, women are ruling over men today. That was started by mother Eve, and she started the ERA movement. In case you never knew what ERA stands for, it is **Eve Ruled Adam**. E-R-A. [audience laughs] And now we are at it again.

So we must put on this **whole armor of God**. You find it in the Word of God, and through faith, and through the faith OF Jesus Christ.

God's Great Purpose

Now, if this is Satan's world, how did this world get started? And how does it happen that this is not God's world? You know, God has a **great purpose**. I've said time and time again (You've heard it many times. I've said it on television. I've said it on radio. I've said it in print.) How Winston Churchill said during World War II and before the United States Congress, he said, "There is a purpose being worked out here below." Now, naturally, "a purpose being worked out here below" implies God Almighty doing the working out – God above.

WHAT IS THAT PURPOSE? Winston Churchill didn't know. He knew somehow there is a purpose. He didn't really understand what it is. The world does not understand it! The world does not understand it. Let me tell you what it is. **GOD IS REPRODUCING HIMSELF!** You read in John, in the New Testament ... That is the first place (so far as the historic record is concerned) about God, and God's existence, and the origin of God.

John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word...

Now, the Word was a personage. That was originally written in the Greek language, and the Greek word was *logos*. The *Logos*, or in English [{4}](#)

it means Word; and it means Spokesman, the one who speaks. That's precisely what it means.

*John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was **with God** [God is another person. We have two persons.], and the Word was God.*

Well, you can say at a certain time there was John, and John was with Smith; and John was Smith also – two persons. Well maybe John was Smith's son, or maybe John was Smith's father – one or the other. Smith was the family name.

"GOD" is THE FAMILY NAME! We come into that Family. We are begotten into the Family. "As many of you as are LED by the Spirit of God, you ARE the **children** of God;" and we are named after our Father. The Church; and it is not the church of Luther. It is not the church of Calvin or Wesley. This is the Church OF GOD! God is a Family name, and we are going to be begotten into that Family; and God is reproducing Himself. NO CHURCH ON THE FACE OF THE EARTH BELIEVES THAT! NO CHURCH BELIEVES THAT. **DO YOU BELIEVE IT?**

Brethren, I didn't believe it until two or three years after Ambassador College was established here in Pasadena; and it was established 35 years ago. I had seen it in the Bible. I had seen it here and there all through the New Testament. I had seen it in the Old Testament. But I said, "Well, it can't be true. I ... I ... I ... Apparently it can't mean that. It would be blaspheme to believe that we're going to become God – that He's going to reproduce Himself and we'd be **born** as His own children. We'd be like Him. We'll be God – in the God Family." Finally, I saw it so many places in the Bible; and it is consistent all the way through the Bible in **the whole purpose of God**. That is the purpose of God!

Another thing that made it difficult for me to believe: I'd been raised in the Protestant world, and it was hard to come out of it. It is much harder to

unlearn error than it is to learn new truth, and I have had to do both; but it was very hard to unlearn some of the error. But I had to do both.

But what about this world (if it's Satan's world), and how then did it get started?

The Creator God

God's purpose is to reproduce Himself. Now, God is Creator; and God is more than one person – the Word and God. In verse 14 of John 1 it says:

***John 1:14** The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us ...[and became Jesus Christ].*

Then again, in Ephesians 3 and verse 9, it says that God created ALL THINGS, but how?

***Ephesians 3:9** [He] created all things **BY Jesus Christ**.*

Jesus Christ is the Word. How did Christ create all things? How did God do it through Christ? Christ is the Word, and one of the Psalms says:

***Psalm 33:9** He spake, and it was done.*

He spoke. Well then, **how** was it done? [Psalm 104:30] He sends forth His Spirit. Christ speaks. The Spirit responds. The Spirit is the POWER.

Brethren, I saw a personal example of that one time; and it was in the first week in the year of 1914. Now most of you weren't born yet then, 1914. But I was then a traveling editorial representative of a national magazine (the largest magazine of its kind, the largest magazine in the trade paper field, in the United States) – the Merchants Trade Journal published in Des Moines, Iowa. And they had asked me, right after the first of January. I was over in New York State, and they asked me to catch the first train back to Detroit. We

didn't fly yet in those days, we went by train. (We've flown afterwards.)

So I took the next train to Detroit to see Henry Ford. He had put a new \$5.00 a day wage scheme into affect. So I went to Detroit. I saw Henry Ford. I was 21 years, 22 years old at the time ... Let's see, 1914, yes, I was 22; and I have to count back to find out. Anyway, I was a young man. I was getting along pretty well. I was already a correspondent for a national magazine at age 22. I saw Henry Ford in a business suit, just like I'm wearing today and like most of you are wearing. He was in the breezeway between the big office building and the factory. (It was out on Highland Avenue at that time. That's a long time ago.) But I didn't see Henry Ford making anything, yet he was the manufacturer of the Ford car.

But I looked through the breezeway; and in that great giant factory I saw thousands of men. It was a vast building. (Later he built one out at Boulder, and it's a much bigger factory now than the factory no longer out on Highland Avenue.) But it was in 1914, in January; and there I saw men in overhauls working. But the men themselves still didn't do the work. They did what Henry Ford told them and paid them to do. He paid them wages. But they were making the Ford car by the use of machinery and electricity and power. That was the **power** that they used to make the Ford car, but Ford was the maker.

Now, God is the Creator; but He created things by Jesus Christ; and Christ Himself is the Workman. But how did He do it? He did it by speaking, and He only spoke what the Father told Him to speak. But **the Spirit of God is the POWER** that leaped to do what Christ said. And that's the way you were made. That's the way all creation was made.

Angels Created First

God had created some archangels. You know of three of them

mentioned in the Bible – Lucifer, and the other two: the one I just read to you about, Michael and ... Why can't I remember names? The other one was familiar as my own name: Gabriel. (Names don't come to me, people just understand. It doesn't mean I don't know it. It just won't come to my mind.)

God first created angels, but He gave them free moral agency. After He created the earth, you'll find in the book of Job and the 38th chapter, that the angels were already created when He created the earth; and this was to be their home, and they were shouting for joy. The archangels were shouting and the angels were singing for joy because it was to be their home.

God set a throne on the earth; and He put a super archangel there, and he'd been one of the cherub whose wings spread out over the throne of God in heaven, as you read back in the 25th chapter of Exodus in the Bible. One of the super archangels whose wings spread over the very throne of God, and he was put here to enforce the law of God. That is, to ADMINISTER THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD.

Now, all government is run by law. You can't have a government without laws, or rules of conduct. And government is merely regulating according to the rules, or the conduct, or the laws. You have to have rules in any game or sport. You have to have it in any city, in any county government, any state government – any kind of government.

God cannot have a government without a LAW, and God's basic law is the law of **love**. It's love to God and love to neighbors. Love to God comes out in 4 points of the first four of the Ten Commandments. Love to your neighbor is expressed in the last 6 of the Ten Commandments, starting with loving your father and your mother; and so on down to love your neighbors.

Well, Lucifer rebelled. He became envious. He said, "Look, God gave me this little Earth." He knew that there were other planets much bigger than this Earth. He said, "Why didn't God put me over some of them?" He said,

“God kept all that for Himself. God kept back a whole lot. God wasn’t fair. So I’ll ascend. I’ll exalt my throne above Him.” You read of that in the 14th chapter of Isaiah, beginning with verse 12. His name was Lucifer, and in Ezekiel 28 you learn that he was perfect in all of his ways from the day God created him TILL INIQUITY – or lawlessness, rebellion – was found in him. He was so beautiful, and the beauty went to his head.

Beauty is the thing with which Satan is gripping **you women, you young girls, you teenage girls and you women.** You want to sit before a mirror, and admire yourself, and paint up your face and CHANGE the face God gave you, and change it another way. I’m glad that was mentioned in the sermon this morning here in Pasadena, and I hope it’s mentioned in other festivals. Oh but that makes some women angry; and they get angry at me if I tell them GOD’S WAY!

God says, “CRY ALOUD, AND SPARE NOT, AND SHOW MY PEOPLE THEIR SINS.” I’M SHOWING YOU WOMEN YOUR SINS, BUT YOU’RE REASONING. YOU CAN’T REASON IT OUT or against it. Women write me: “Mr. Armstrong I want to show you a woman’s viewpoint about that.” Listen, you women, I’m not interested in a woman’s viewpoint! I am interested IN **GOD’S VIEWPOINT!** Do you understand that? And you’d better get interested in God’s viewpoint instead of a woman’s viewpoint. I’m not interested in a man’s viewpoint. I’m not interested in a teenage viewpoint. I’m interested in God’s viewpoint, and you had better be, and you men. You’d all better be on the same boat there, on that.

The Creation Of Man

Well, Satan went wrong and he became Satan the devil; and then God created man in His own image. Now we go back to Genesis 1 and in verse 26, after God had created the land animals each after his own kind.

Genesis 1:26 *God said, Let us [not “Me.” “Us” (more than one) God was Elohim, more than one person. That was God and the Word. “Let us ...”] make man {5} in our image, after our likeness.*

Not “in My image,” or anything but “ours.” Now He made man in the form and shape of God; but God is composed of Spirit, and He didn’t compose {6} man of the same material as spirit, of the same composition. Verse 7 of the next chapter, verse 2, or chapter 2, I mean, and verse 7:

Genesis 2:7 *And the [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became living soul.*

What came out of the dust of the ground – matter, material – became a soul. A soul is not spirit, but there is a spirit in man. But a man’s life comes from breath; and the blood thereof is the life thereof [Genesis 9:4, Leviticus 17:14], not a spirit. The spirit only gives you and imparts the power of intellect to the human mind. Animals don’t have a spirit in their minds as a human does have.

Now remember the government of God had been taken away from the Earth. Adam had the chance to **RESTORE THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD**. Restore the government of God!

End Time Elijah

This morning, here in Pasadena, the sermon had a great deal to say about Elijah and about the book of Malachi, the 3rd and 4th chapters. Elijah, Jesus said, was going to come and restore all things; and Jesus said that **after** John the Baptist had already finished preparing the way before the First Coming of Christ. After John the Baptist was in prison and his work completed, Jesus said: “Elijah shall YET come and **restore** all things.”

[Matthew 17:11] Elijah did not restore.

What was taken away? The heavens have received Jesus “*UNTIL the times of restitution of all things.*” - (Acts the 3rd chapter and verse 19 down to 21.) **Restitution** means restoring something that had been taken away, restoring to a former state or condition. What was taken away? THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD ON THIS EARTH! The government of God was taken away. It was to be restored.

Now something else I'm going to show you later: The GOSPEL – as soon as Christ brought the gospel – inside of 22 years it was supplanted by another gospel; and the true gospel of Christ was suppressed. And for 1900 years (a thousand nine hundred years) **the gospel OF CHRIST** was NOT PROCLAIMED around the world at all. Even the Church of God had lost it. And when I came among the true Church of God of the Sardis era, they had LOST the gospel and didn't know what it was. They had what they called a third angel's message instead of the gospel. But God raised me up to restore it.

God raised me up to restore THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD, but it is only restored so far in the Church. I have no authority from God, no ability, to restore the government of God any further than just over you brethren in the Church; but that has been done. That has been done, brethren. You go back and read Malachi 3:1-5, and Malachi 4, and where Jesus said, “Elijah truly **shall** come.” Even after John the Baptist was put in prison, he was yet to come. But he was to restore! John the Baptist didn't restore.

You'd better realize, brethren, what this Church is and what you are behind when you say you are behind me 100%, and how this gospel is going as Christ said. It is going to the world, and it is going the heads of government all over the world.

The Two Trees

Now, God formed man; and He gave him the opportunity to restore the government. There were Two Trees in the Garden of Eden. One was the Tree of Life, and God offered him that fully. Now, God did **not** give him immortal Life, but the Tree of Life would have given him eternal Life. But he had to choose between that and the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Satan induced them, through Eve, to take of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Let me just turn over one little page here in the Bible and read that in the 3rd chapter of Genesis.

Genesis 3:1 Now the serpent [I read to you in Revelation who the serpent is – Satan, the devil.] *was more subtle than any beast of the field which the [Eternal] God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?*

“Didn’t God hold something back?” You see Satan had just said, when He was Lucifer he said, “Well God held a lot back. He didn’t give me everything. God is holding something back. He should have given me it all.” Now he’s says to Eve ... He tempts her the same way he’d been tempted. “Didn’t God hold something back?”

The woman said, “Well, we can have everything but that one Tree; and God said ‘If you take of it, you shall surely die.’” And then, in verse 4, the serpent replied unto her, ”*You shall not surely die. You won’t surely die. You’re an immortal soul.*” Well, Eve believed that. Do you believe that? That you are an immortal soul? The world does! The Protestants do. The Roman Catholic Church does. “Christianity” believes it. The organized “Christianity” of this world believes it. But they are of **this world**, and Satan is the God of this world. Now put the two and two together. Satan is the god of this world.

Genesis 3:4-6 *The serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: (5) For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods [Or I think he really said, ‘You’ll become God.’], knowing good and evil. (6) And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food [As far as she could see, it looked good.], and that it was pleasant to the eyes [It looked pretty, and she looked at that.], and a tree to be desire to make one wise [It appealed to the vanity of mind, and so the first woman had her vanity alright.], she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and **he did eat.***

He had disobeyed God, and he rejected ... If he had taken of the Tree of Life, he would have received **the Spirit of God**. And through the Spirit of God, God would have revealed to him all about the government of God, the way of life of God, the attitude of God (of love toward other people instead of competition and strife and hatred). And Satan would have been deposed then! But Adam didn’t do it, and then **this world started**. They had rejected the way of God. They rejected the revelation of God. And the revelation of God is in the Bible. God has had it written.

God’s Coded Book

But brethren look, I had a broadcast recently. I don’t think that’s been aired yet. I don’t really remember whether it has or not. One of the vital things in World War II was the secret code that Hitler had, a secret code. And he said that he thought it was absolutely unbreakable. It took a machine something like a computer to decipher that secret code.

You know it’s like a secret alphabet I had when I was a boy. Let me see, I must have been about 14 or 13 years old. I worked out a secret alphabet, and a lot of us kids used it. Our parents couldn’t understand a thing we were writing. We could write notes to one another. We could understand it, but our

parents couldn't understand a word because of the secret alphabet.

Well, every government has its secret code to transmit information to its other officials in other parts of the world; because they know other nations are going to see the message on the way, but they want it to be transmitted in a way that only their own people will understand it. Do you know that no nation has an unbreakable secret code, but that God does?

Do you know God has a **secret code**? And THE WORLD CAN'T CRACK IT! Do you know what it is? Here it is. It's got words in it. **The holy Bible!** That's God's message for those that are His. The world can see the message, and they don't understand it. They can't read it. They can't really make head nor tails of it. It's A MYSTERY to them without the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the machine, or the computer, or whatever that helps you to decode it. With the Holy Spirit you can understand the Bible.

Do you think I could have ever understood the Bible, to give you the truth of the Bible, of myself? I had to surrender to God. I had to be willing to give up my way. I had to let God give me His Holy Spirit. It didn't depend on my righteousness. It did depend on my intention, and my will, and my purpose. But I didn't have perfection of will or purpose within me yet, and I still don't have. After age 90, I still don't have. But God took and used me because I did give myself into His hands.

Now, if someone else is giving himself into God's hands more perfectly than I, tell me who it is. I'd like to know. I wish there were many. I certainly do. I just wish that there were many. But God says that none is righteous, no not one – except Christ; and that is true. Not one of you is righteous, and we can't point a finger at one another in any way at all.

Man Incomplete

Let me read you one scripture now in the 3rd chapter of Genesis, after Adam had made that decision.

***Genesis 3:23-24** Therefore the [Eternal] God sent [Adam and Eve] forth from the garden of Eden ... (24) He drove out the man [and, of course, the woman with him] and placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.*

GOD SHUT UP THE HOLY SPIRIT FROM THE WORLD! GOD SHUT OFF THE HOLY SPIRIT, AND THE WORLD HAD NO ACCESS TO THE HOLY SPIRIT UNTIL JESUS CHRIST CAME. That's why they can't understand the Bible. You can't understand the Bible without the Holy Spirit.

So this world started from Adam, and it was influenced by Satan; and Adam went right along. He not only went along with his wife Eve and let a woman rule him, but he went along with Satan; and Satan has deceived **ALL** NATIONS (as I read to you in Revelation 12). This whole world has been deceived by Satan, and this is Satan's world.

Now then, into such a world finally Jesus Christ came as the Second Adam. Jesus Christ came as the Second Adam. God's purpose is to reproduce Himself. People have gone the wrong way. They didn't have God's Spirit. God's Spirit was shut off until after Christ should come and pay the penalty of our sins. Even then, God wasn't going to give His Holy Spirit to everybody at all.

Man was created incomplete. Now let me go back to something in Genesis 1 again. Man was created **incomplete physically** because God's purpose is to reproduce Himself and, in order to do it, man had to reproduce himself so there'd be a lot of him; and God is going to convert millions of human beings to become His children. But Adam had to begin reproducing

himself with other children BEFORE GOD COULD REPRODUCE GOD'S SELF!

But Adam was not complete. God first created a man, but a man couldn't reproduce himself. Did you ever see a man that could reproduce himself and have children all by himself? I never did. Tell me, who is it? No, man wasn't **complete**. He wasn't **physically** complete until God made him complete by creating a woman; and the woman and the man – the two – became one.

Now go back. God is creating Himself in us, recreating Himself. God and the Word are one. Jesus said, "I and My Father are one." We are to become one with God. That's what we learned in the feast of the Day of Atonement, just five days ago. We are to become one.

When God made a woman for Adam to be his wife, they became one. They had children. They were one family – one family, not several families. As soon as they had Cain, there were three of them. Their first child was named Cain. Their second child was named Abel. But they didn't train their children properly. They didn't have God's Spirit. They didn't have God's teaching. They didn't understand God's law, as they should have. And so the first son they had, Cain, became a murderer; and he killed his brother, Abel. God said, "Where is your brother, Abel?" And then Cain lied to God about it. He said, "I don't know. Am I my brother's keeper?"

Then they had another son, whose name was Seth. And he became the father of all living from that time on. Then he had other sons and daughters. But we've all sprung from Noah, and Noah was descended from Seth (not from Cain or Abel).

So man was created **incomplete**. I compare it this way, brethren, to a woman who has baked a cake; but it is not complete. And yet she's completed her cake in a sense, but it still isn't complete till she puts the icing

on it. You get the point? The man wasn't complete until God created the woman.

The Human Mind

Now then: God gave the man a mind, which He didn't give to animals. Man has animal life. And animals have a brain, just like a man; but they don't have the mind like a man. What's the difference? Man has a spirit in his brain. Animals don't have any spirit in their brain. But man had one spirit, and that one spirit gave him the power of intellect to understand material knowledge.

Now he had the power of coming to **an attitude** either of love or hate. God could have instructed him in the right way and given him the love of God to go the way of God and fulfill the law of God, but he rejected that. Instead he let Satan lead him into the wrong attitude, the wrong thoughts, the wrong intent, the wrong purposes.

Now then, he built a civilization that has come along to the world today. Today, look at the civilization. It has **amazing**, absolutely **incredible**, and (what's the word I use regularly?) awesome progress – awesome accomplishment – in the world today. Look at the airplane I fly in – men going to the moon and back. Look at the awesome computer, and it is an **awesome** thing; and now you can buy little ones for your own home and your own office.

And yet, while man has made such progress, at the same time he has gone the other way just as rapidly. He has gone into APPALLING EVILS, and harm, and bringing suffering on himself, hurting one another. And the world is going to more and more evil all the time. As it advances physically, mechanically, and electronically, it is going backwards spiritually because man's mind was not complete. God didn't complete it. It's like He baked the cake but didn't put the icing on yet.

What man needed was the Spirit of God. The one spirit in man was alone and lonesome. That's why man is unhappy. That's why he is discontented. You may have contented cows, but you don't have contented people. Cows out in the pasture go ahead munching on their grass, and they are contented. People are not contented because THE SPIRIT – that one spirit in people – gets a wrong attitude, and it clashes with the spirit in some other people. Their spirit will not be in harmony with God's Spirit.

They needed the Spirit of God; and, until they had the Spirit of God, they were **not mentally complete**. Mentally, intellectually, the mind of man is only half there. The greatest intellects in the world, with all of the PhDs and other doctorate degrees after their names, they are of all men most ignorant. They don't understand the truth of God. They can't understand this Book [{7}](#). It's foolishness to them. They can't understand it. They are wise in their own conceits, but the things of God are foolishness to them. And yet their wisdom is foolishness to God because they don't have a complete mind. Their minds are only half there.

Psychologists don't even understand the makeup of the human mind. The Bible reveals it. If you have the Holy Spirit of God, you can understand about the human mind; but all of the psychology courses and all of the universities can't teach you what the human mind is. They don't know. They are ignorant! But they would call you and me ignorant, brethren, if you have the Spirit of God. That is just the way it is.

Now, Jesus came to start another world. Here was a world. It is Satan's world. It's man's world. It's a materialistic world. It has its educational systems. It has its governments all against one another. The educational system is entirely materialistic. You don't find the Word of God taught in the universities.

You find hundreds of books. Now we have to have books in our

libraries, because we live in this unhappy world. And you notice on the film at Big Sandy there are, I think it said some (What is it?) 40- 60- 80,000 volumes of books. They were all written by men. But you find a lot of Bibles over there too. But in most of them you don't find many Bibles. You just find books written by men; and without God, and without God's inspiration; they just say a lot of nonsense, absolute nonsense.

Students To Become Teachers

With the Holy Spirit shut off, a human civilization has been built blinded by Satan. Into such a world came Jesus; and He came to start ANOTHER WORLD, which Adam could have started. To **START A WHOLE DIFFERENT WORLD**, brethren! Now the world doesn't understand this. Now get this. Everything I said up to now is only just background material. Here's the real message. Now get it.

Jesus came to start **another civilization**, to start another world. He didn't call everybody volunteers and just hocus-pocus "Just accept My name, and I'll send you up to heaven." Nothing of the kind. He didn't come saying, "Please believe in Me. Won't you accept Me? Won't you let Me into your heart?" You can't find that in the Bible. He didn't say anything of the kind.

Jesus, however, came and chose **twelve**, twelve disciples; and "disciple" is only an old English word that means a student, one going to school and learning. Jesus was the teacher, or the professor; and He was teaching them. Now they didn't have a classroom with armchairs, like Plato started in the Platonic system. They went by foot from village to village, and Jesus taught them wherever they were. But it was a 3 1/2 year course; and, at the end of that 3 years, they were ready to graduate and become apostles.

Now they were ready to be sent out and start to teach others. Jesus sent them out saying, "Go to all the world and **TEACH** all nations. Go out into all the world and **teach** all nations, **teaching** them to observe all things

whatsoever I have **taught** you.” [Matthew 28:19-20]

Brethren, if you come into the Church, you are a **student**; and you are to **learn** and to **study the Word of God**– to study a new kind of civilization that is in the Book of Life. If you think just accepting Christ and warming the seat of a church service is going to get you into the Kingdom of God, you are of all people most deceived.

I tell you, I worry about so many of our own people; and I wonder how many of them really are converted. Are you a student? Are you studying the Bible? Are you praying every day? Are you meditating on the Word of God and thinking those thoughts? Put your thoughts and everything on the things above not on the things of this world. Where are your thoughts? What’s in your mind? Aren’t you thinking about the football or the baseball games, and the basketball game, instead of thinking about the things of God, and the Kingdom of God, and the way of God, and the way of Life of God? And this rotten civilization and how we are just pioneers to start building another world.

Brethren, every one of you was an ovum in your mother’s womb. You would never have become a human being if that ovum had not been fertilized from the very body of your father. Every human being is A SPIRITUAL OVUM, and you will die. It’s appointed to all men (after Adam’s sin) all men to die, and after this the judgment. And as in Adam all die, so in Christ shall all be made alive; but not all yet. Jesus didn’t call everybody yet. He only called twelve.

Only Those God Calls

Now, others followed Him. At the end of His ministry of 3 1/2 years, only 120 were still with Him because many began to leave Him (who had followed Him and were students under him). He called more than just the

Twelve, but He called twelve to be named to become apostles later. There were 120 when the Church started, and the Church started with that 120 on the day of Pentecost. There were thousands of people there though and saw the great display of the Holy Spirit coming with a rushing sound of a mighty wind, and they could see the flames of fire on the heads of the 120. Peter preached and said (when they wanted to know “What should **we do** then?”), he said:

*Acts 2:38-39 Repent and be baptized, every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ ... and **you** shall receive the ... Holy Spirit ... (39) ... And to your children and to all that are afar off, **even as many as the Lord our God shall call.***

But only those that God will call, because, (now in John the 6th chapter and verse 44) Jesus said:

*John 6:44 **No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him.***

God only called a ... He didn't call for volunteers. He constricted those. He drafted those He was calling. He said to His disciples, “You did not choose Me. I chose you.” First Andrew and Simon had intended to be fishermen. Jesus called and said, “You come out of that.” Another two were with their father in fishing boats, in the fishing business. He said, “Leave your father, and come with Me” and they did.

He took Simon, whom He had called, and gave him the title of Peter; and Peter is a surname or a title. Jesus surnamed him Peter. That means he was the leader of the apostles. Some people don't believe that, and don't even know it; but that is the truth. There was a chief apostle. There always has to be a leader. God never works through committees. God works only through one man at a time, and always did. All through the Bible you will find that God had to work through one man at a time.

The Firstfruit Teachers

But now I want you to notice back in Joel the 2nd chapter and verse 28.

*Joel 2:28 It shall come to pass afterward [God said], that I will pour out my spirit **upon ALL FLESH.***

Now, He had shut up His Holy Spirit and shut it off from all flesh; but the time would come when He would open it up. Well now, Jesus came to make that possible; but Jesus didn't yet open up the Holy Spirit **to all flesh** at all. He simply did not! He chose those, and no one can come to Christ except God the Father draws him.

Now let me show you something else that the world doesn't understand. The 1st chapter of the book of Ephesians and in verse 11, it's speaking about Christ here, just two lines above:

*Ephesians 1:11-12 [Christ] in whom also [We in the Church. He's speaking to the brethren in the Church at Ephesus.] we have obtained an inheritance, being **predestinated** according to the purpose of him [What is God's purpose? I just told you: to reproduce Himself; and we are "predestinated according to the purpose of him"] who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will: (12) that **we should be** [the FIRST] the praise of his glory who **FIRST** trusted in Christ.*

We are THE FIRSTFRUITS! The day of the Pentecost, one of the annual holy days, is to show us that we are the **first** to believe in Christ. Christ isn't calling the whole world at all yet. He called a few. Now then, the Twelve and all the other 120 had been taught by Him. 3,000 more were converted on that day of Pentecost. The very next day 2,000 more, but the 120 could teach all of them. The Twelve could teach any number.

We send one minister out that has graduated from Ambassador College;

and he can pastor a Church of 300, or in cases up to 600 or so. Usually, if we have a Church of 600 though, he'll have an assistant or a co-pastor. But one can teach several hundred other people, and each one of them becomes a student.

Each of you, brethren, you don't have to come to Ambassador College. You are still a student to study your Bibles, and to pray every day, and to meditate on these things, and to keep your mind on these things instead of the things of this world. In the Millennium, you'll be a king or a priest ruling over the world and teaching the world.

How much can you teach right now? Ask yourself – you sitting in that seat right out there, you sitting over here in this seat, you over there. If you were today put to teach 300 other people, are you qualified? Could you do it? That's what you're going to have to do when Christ comes and in the Millennium; and, if you couldn't do it, you are not ready yet to meet Christ when He comes. **YOU ARE STUDENTS, AND YOU ARE TO LEARN!**

I started learning 56 1/2 years ago. I started learning many things before that, but that was in this world. I only started learning God's truth about 56 years ago. Brethren, I have learned more in the last 2 years than I think I have learned in any other 5 or 10 years. I am still learning; and God is revealing new truth to me all the time, because I keep on studying.

Although my eyes – one eye's blind and the other is so dim I can hardly see even with a magnifying glass; and it is very difficult for me to study, but I still study. I have things blown up and we have special equipment to blow up things for me in larger type. Even then I still have to use a magnifying glass. I have to work at it. Are you doing it, or do you just want me to do all the work for you? Brethren, you have to do it too! I mean that.

Becoming Ready

You had better think: **Are you ready?** Most of you are not ready yet, brethren. Now this Church is beginning to get ready. We are getting back on the track. I think we make a good impression in the cities where we visit here in these feast sites. I think we conduct ourselves very well. Well, it's good that you've learned some things. Let me tell you one thing that some of you have not learned. Some of you come to the festival services improperly dressed. Some of you men don't even wear a jacket, and you come in your shirtsleeves. You come in work clothes, any old way.

Some years ago, as a matter of fact, it was on December 1, 1968 I was to meet the President of Israel. I was to announce to him that we were ready to accept their invitation and go in with them at \$100,000 a year contribution on the great archeological project to clear the way for Christ's throne to be ready for His Second Coming. I was in the offices of one of the professors of Hebrew University. We'd been in his office; and he said "Well it was time to go." We started down the hall, and he was dressed in his shirtsleeves. He said, "Wait, wait. I've got to go back and put on a jacket. I'm going into the presence of the President. I can't go into the presence of the President like this. I've got to be better dressed." So he went back and put on a jacket.

You know, Jesus gave a parable of a man that came to a wedding; and he didn't have on the proper wedding garment. It shows God talking to him and saying, "Cast this man clear out. He's not worthy." You come, some of you, just come dressed ANY OLD WAY. WHEN WE COME INTO A CHURCH SERVICE BRETHREN, OUR FELLOWSHIP IS WITH **GOD THE FATHER** AND OUR FELLOWSHIP IS WITH **CHRIST THE SON**. WE ARE COMING INTO GOD'S PRESENCE! HOW DARE YOU COME INTO GOD'S PRESENCE LIKE SOME OF YOU DO. HOW DARE YOU!

Yes, I see some sitting out in front of me in their shirtsleeves; not

dressed up. I imagine it's the same all over the United States, Canada, and Britain, New Zealand, and Australia. You are coming **into the presence of the holy Almighty God**. You don't have to go out and buy something you can't afford. I didn't say that. Just wear the best you have, but dress the best you can. HAVE RESPECT FOR GOD. HONOR GOD. Don't come in like thumbing your nose at Him, and insulting God by the way you dress.

You women, likewise: Dress with the best you have. Now there's certain separate evening dress that women wear, sometimes long skirts; and then shorter skirts in the daytime. Now you don't have to dress formally (I don't mean that.), but at least be well dressed when you come into the presence of God. That's just one little thing that came to me, but we need to know those things.

Predestined As Firstfruits

Now the time is coming – the beginning of the Millennium – when God will begin to pour out His Spirit UPON ALL FLESH; and **WE, BRETHREN, ARE THE ONES THAT ARE GOING TO HAVE TO TEACH ALL OF THEM**. Every one of you may have to teach two or three hundred other people Are you **qualified to teach** 200 people? If you are not, you are not ready yet. I want to get that over to you. Also, I would like to have you maybe read in Romans, the 8th chapter of Romans from verse 28 on.

***Romans 8:28** And we know that all things work together for good to them [But not for everybody. Oh, no. To them ...] that love God, to them who are the CALLED according to his purpose.*

That is not to everybody. Those that are **called** and to them that **love God**. Now then, go on:

***Romans 8:29** For whom he [God] did foreknow, he also did*

PREDESTINATE to be conformed to the image of his Son ...

Brethren, if you are in the Church, it's because God wanted you a long time ago. God **CHOSE** you. God **DRAFTED** you. You didn't come of your own accord. **God chose you** (and probably out of another 2,000 people). There are 4 1/2 billion people on this earth; and there's just a little over 100,000 of us, brethren, here hearing my voice today right now. A little over 100,000 – and each one of you is going to have to teach a great many out of that 4 billion (which is 4,000 million).

***Romans 8:29** For whom he did foreknow [He did foreknow you.], he also did predestinate ...*

Predestination does not mean God has decided what decision you are going to make. Oh, no. It means that God decided when He would call and whom He would call **first**. We are the **FIRST** to be called. He is not calling the world yet. Brethren, if **YOU** were predestinated, He called **YOU**. He drafted **YOU**. That's why you are here, brethren.

***Romans 8:29** ... to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he [Christ] might be the firstborn among many brethren.*

He was born by a resurrection from the dead. A lot of these people who say they are “born again Christians” don't know what it is to be born again. They haven't even **started** towards being born again yet.

***Romans 8:30** Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also [will glorify].*

It says “was” here, speaking as if it was already past; but that is yet present.

***Romans 8:31** What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us,*

who can be against us?

Well, we have to think of that when we are persecuted; and the persecution is mounting and increasing, as I told you at the beginning of this program. Now today, where are we? Coming to the 20th chapter of the book of Revelation and beginning with verse 4, after Satan is put away (which we celebrated 5 days ago), John here is giving what is going to happen:

Revelation 20:4 *And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them [Are you going to be on one of those thrones? Each one of you is to be on one of them.]*[8](#)...

Editor's Notes

[1](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong stumbled with his words before saying the right verse.

[2](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong stumbled with his words before saying the right verse.

[3](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong stumbled with his words before saying the right verse.

[4](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said, "in England" but he undoubtedly meant "in English" because he was talking about languages and not places.

[5](#) - Editor's note: At first Mr. Armstrong said "make man after our likeness, after our image, or after our image. Well, there's a better word for what it is." And then he read the rest of the verse correctly.

[6](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said "He didn't compose God of spirit" when he assuredly meant to say "He didn't compose man of spirit."

[7](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong was thumping on his Bible at this point.

{8} - Editor's note: The tape is suddenly cut off at this point.

The Purpose Here Below

Sermon (October 9, 1982) – Given during The Last Great Day
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Purpose Here Below.....	1219	Coming To Christ	1232
The Trunk Of The Tree	1220	Government Now In The Church	1234
Pre-History	1221	Elijah Shall Come	1236
God’s Lifestyle	1222	Gospel And Government Restored	1238
Creation Of Angels	1223	Government Restored	1240
The Super-Archangel Lucifer	1224	The White Throne Judgment	1241
Renewing The Earth	1226	Opening The Graves	1244
God’s Purpose	1227	Rise In Judgment	1245
Man Made Only Mortal	1227	Commuted Death Penalty	1247
Beginning Of The Human Family	1229	Concluding God’s Purpose And Plan	1249
God’s Master Plan	1231		

One of the so-called great men of the world, Winston Churchill, said before the United States’ Congress, “There is a purpose being worked out here below.”—certainly implying a purpose that God above is working out. God has a master plan for working out that purpose. That purpose is in two phases you might say. First was **the physical stage**, beginning with Adam. That is still going on. That is this world. The second is **the spiritual stage**, beginning with Jesus Christ and the Church. That too is still going on. And that is God’s REAL creation, the spiritual creation: “the world tomorrow”—another civilization, another world that will follow this world.

And we in the Church are merely THE FIRSTFRUITS of that world. Merely **the first** to be drafted, to be called of God, to be chosen, each one of us from perhaps thousands of others to be selected by God and chosen to come to Him. To repent, to change our whole way of life, to change our minds, to admit how wrong we have been and how wrong this whole world is, and how wrong we have been in it and with it. To turn around and go the

other way. To realize what Jesus Christ came and did for us. Not only to accept Him but to BELIEVE HIM! Repent and believe are the twin conditions to receiving God's Spirit. And we are the first; and that spiritual creation is still going on, and is going to continue going on some time yet.

Now we just completed what we call the Millennium—that is, the observance as a foretaste of that Millennium. We are not into the Millennium yet; but it sort of seemed like it, I think, in some of these festivals. Now in this festival I didn't visit as many feast sites as I formerly did. For many years I visited every feast site in the United States and Canada. And one year I visited all the feast sites in France, England, United States and Canada. And that meant speaking at two different sites in the same day about three of the days of the feast. But this festival I was able to fly on over to Big Sandy, Texas for about three days; and then up to Lake of the Ozarks for another large group (of, I think, seven or eight thousand up there) and enjoyed the festival with our brethren there, and with the ministers and their wives. And now I am back here on the final day, speaking to all of you once again by satellite. So to you in Big Sandy and you in Lake of the Ozarks (where I spoke to you just a few days ago), I send greetings.

The Trunk Of The Tree

Now, the Millennium that we have just observed as a foretaste—that is, to have it pictured in our minds again and to know that it is coming—it is neither the beginning nor the end of God's purpose. God's purpose began long before and will continue on after that, and today I would like to cover from the beginning to the end. Customarily when I speak to you, it has become my custom now in these latter days, to stay with “the trunk of the tree” of the gospel and of the message that God wants delivered to all of you brethren. You know, it reminds me of the two trees in Genesis. And that's where God's whole purpose for humanity started, in the Garden of Eden; and

there were the two trees.

Did you ever stop to think about a tree? That all of the life comes from the trunk; and then there are the big main branches, other smaller branches from those, and smaller branches from those smaller branches and then twigs, and finally the leaves, and whatever. But it is all sustained by the trunk of the tree and by the root system below.

So, I sort of stay with the trunk and leave it for our ministers, our various ministers in Churches all over, to take some of the smaller details and magnify it and go into more detail on some of the branches, and even some of the twigs that still are important.

You know the truth of God it is just like the Church is a body; and God says, in 1 Corinthians 12, that even the members we consider the least important are very important in the body. Did you ever stub your little toe? Maybe you think the little toe is of no use to your body. If you ever stubbed it real good and got a good bruise, you realize how important that little toe is. So, every part is important. And even the smaller branches and the twigs of truth—and of God’s revealed truth and of the gospel—are important. But I just try to cover a sort of a synopsis over all, and let the ministers fill in and magnify and enlarge on details; and that’s all-important too.

Pre-History

Now before the creation of the earth, and before humanity, there was God. Let’s begin at the beginning. And you find the beginning in the first chapter of John in the New Testament, rather than in Genesis 1 verse 1. In John 1:1, it says that, “In the beginning was the Word.” Now the Word was a great personage, a personage that had lived forever and ever, without father, without mother, without descent, without beginning of days or end of life, as you read in Hebrews. That Word was a great personage but He was with

another personage called God, and the Word also was God.

They were two personages, and They were Spirit beings, and They had always lived. They were never born. Without father, without mother. Never was a time when They began living. They have always lived. Now your mind can't comprehend that. You can't understand it, nor can I. But there had to be life, because life can come only from life; and there is life in this universe, and that life started with God and with the Word.

They had life. So you read in John 1 and verses 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, that in Them was life. If there was life in Them, They lived. Now if They lived, HOW did They live? What did They do? Well, They had an occupation; and creation was the occupation. So you read in John 1 and verse 14 that "*the Word became flesh and dwelt among us,*" and became Jesus Christ our Lord. But He spoke about the glory He had with the Father long before His human birth, and long before even the world was. Long before that!

Then in Ephesians 3:9, you will read how **God created** all things BY Jesus Christ. He was the Word. He spoke, and it was done (as you read in one of the Psalms); and that's how God created everything. And there was law there because Jesus obeyed the Father. The Father told Him what to say, what to do, what to create. He spoke. The POWER that did it was the Holy Spirit, the Spirit that emanated from God and from Christ and by which They are everywhere present. Everywhere!

God's Lifestyle

Now HOW did They live, and work, and create? Their way of life was co-operation, and not competition. It was love. They loved one another. When the Word became flesh and dwelt among us and became the Son of God, God the Father looked down and said, "This is my BELOVED Son." He loved the Son, in whom He was well pleased. And Jesus said He loved the

Father and obeyed the Father. There was love, but there was also obedience. And Their way of life was the way of love, and love is out flowing. Love is flowing out to others.

God's love flowed out in love to His Son for everything that was good, and for those that He created, and for His creatures. And God's love and mercy is greater toward **us** (His creatures) than the heavens are high above the earth.

Love is the very personality of God. And in Jesus that love was so great for us that He gave His life for us and died for us to pay the penalty we've all incurred, which is the second death. And He paid that in our stead so we won't need to pay it IF we will conform to the two conditions of repent and believe, and then go on growing in grace and knowledge, and enduring to the end. So God's Way was one of cooperation, of love, of obedience to the Superior Power; and that means GOVERNMENT. And the Son was governed by the Father, and so there was government.

Creation Of Angels

As Creator, They first created something else even before the earth. Even before the sun, the earth, the moon, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, before the other planets, other galaxies afar off—They created angels; and angels are Spirit beings who have immortal life. They have self-containing life, which humans do not have. Then God created the earth after angels. Now you read in Job the 38th chapter in the first several verses there, you read about that; and how the angels shouted for joy and the cherubs shouted for joy and the ordinary angels sang in great happiness and joy at the creation of the earth, because it was to be their home and their abode. And they were happy because they were following God's law and they were under the government of God. And so God, on the earth, placed angels here before man.

Now I'm just going to go over this quickly. You should already know many of these scriptures. God set a throne on the earth, and He put His government here—the government to regulate the way they would live so they would live as God and the Word had lived, loving each other. But there always has to be a leader. And God is the leader; and the Son followed Him, and did whatever the Father said. And so they were placed on this earth. And while they were here, there was happiness and there was joy. And it was a wonderful thing. As long as the government of God operated on this earth, there was happiness and joy because that government regulates the way of life THAT PRODUCES PEACE and happiness and joy. But then something happened, and in II Peter 2:4 it says:

II Peter 2:4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned...

Oh, brethren can you imagine, we all think of angels as holy and righteous, but here it says angels SINNED. They sinned, and that was before man had ever been created. Angels sinned.

II Peter 2:4 ...but cast them down to [Tartaroo, it should be, and hell is just an English word and should not be there,] and delivered them unto chains of darkness, [That's the Tartaroo,] to be reserved unto judgment.

And I want to talk to you today about judgment.

The Super-Archangel Lucifer

There is a judgment coming for them, and there is a judgment coming for all humanity now under their sins. And over them was a super archangel called Lucifer. You read of him in the 14th chapter of Isaiah, and you read more of him in 28th chapter of Ezekiel. I won't take time to read those now. You should be familiar with them. But they did sin. And this leader, the super archangel—the cherub Lucifer, whose wings had been formerly over the very

throne of God in heaven—he had been trained in the government of God at the very throne of God, in the government of God. He was set on the earth to govern the angels under him over the whole earth. And as long as he continued to regulate their lives according to the law of God in **the government of God**, there was happiness and peace, and great joy. But, rebellion entered into him.

In Ezekiel 28, it says, he was perfect in his ways, from the day God CREATED him until iniquity, or lawlessness, was found in him—rebellion. And he began to resist God. He began to want to destroy instead of to create. God is a creator, one who builds up. God is light, truth, Satan became one who tears down. He turned to darkness and turned the whole earth into darkness. And so the whole earth came into a state of decay and ruin; and darkness filled the whole earth. And the whole earth was covered with water, like a flood. And that’s what you find back in Genesis.

In Genesis, you begin “In the beginning God...” And the word for “God” there was written as Moses wrote it in the Hebrew language “Elohim,” which means more than one person but one God. Just like a family can be two persons, or ten persons, or twelve; but one family. A Church... I see many hundreds of you right here in Pasadena, and I’m speaking to many thousands of you at the same time; but we’re one Church, brethren—the Church of God. Not the Church of any man or of Satan, but the Church of God; and that means the children of God.

Now, as a result, decay came to the earth, and you read of that in the very second verse of the first chapter of Genesis.

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning [Elohim] God [more than one person] created the heavens and the earth.*

And the earth BECAME full of decay and ruin, and darkness filled the whole ocean and the whole earth was filled with water at that time.

Renewing The Earth

And then the Word came and spoke and said, “*Let there be light,*” and the Holy Spirit acted and light came. And then He divided the light from the darkness. And then He let the dry land appear. And then He continued to create, and re-create the earth for us. Now in Psalm 104:30, you will read of how God RENEWED the face of the earth. He sent forth His Spirit and He RENEWED the face of the earth, after the angels had destroyed the surface of it.

Now when God created the earth, He did not finish it. And I like to compare that to a woman baking a cake. And she has baked her cake and still it is not really complete yet. She has not yet put the icing on. And God had built the earth, but He intended for the angels to improve its surface; and, instead of that, they destroyed the surface of the earth.

In Psalm 104:30, you find how God sent forth His Spirit and RENEWED the face after that. That’s what He did in Genesis 1, beginning with verse two, throughout the rest of that first chapter. That’s not the original creation. That is a re-creation. And God said to Adam and Eve after He’d created the first man, “Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth.” The earth had been filled with life before, but it was angel life. He didn’t say “plenish” the earth. He said “*replenish*”—fill it up again.

Now, in Genesis 1, God had created matter, and now He’d re-created the earth for man. And in verse 26, you read:

Genesis 1:26 [*Elohim*] said [That’s more than one person, but one God.], *Let US* [Not “Me.” “Let Us...”] *make man in our image, after our likeness.*

He made cows after the cattle kind; He made dogs after the dog kind; elephants after the elephant kind. Now He said “Let Us make man after the

God-kind.”

God’s Purpose

WHAT IS **GOD’S PURPOSE** BEING WORKED OUT HERE BELOW? HIS PURPOSE IS NOW **TO REPRODUCE HIMSELF!** GOD FIRST CREATED ANGELS. THEY WERE GIVEN IMMORTAL LIFE. But they had minds. And a mind must make a decision one-way or the other. A mind is capable of good or evil. A mind is capable of an attitude of right or wrong. And the angels that God had put on this earth had minds, and they had free moral agency. They had the right of deciding for themselves; because God’s purpose was to create character, even in angels.

God’s purpose in humanity is to **CREATE CHARACTER** and **REPRODUCE HIMSELF**. God is reproducing Himself. That is the overall purpose of humanity and of God in creating humanity. The world doesn’t understand that. I’m quite sure Winston Churchill didn’t have any understanding of that. He knew somehow there was a purpose being worked out here below, but he didn’t know what it was. He didn’t know what it was.

Now angels went wrong, a third of them. And those who went wrong are going to have to suffer through all eternity. They are in a state of mental frustration. They are most unhappy. God isn’t going to let that happen to humanity. God’s purpose for humanity is to reproduce Himself. He did **NOT** try to reproduce Himself in angels. He is doing that in mankind.

Man Made Only Mortal

Why, now, did He make man only mortal? He reproduced man after His likeness—that is, in God’s form and shape. But He did not make man out of Spirit, as God is composed of Spirit and as He had made angles out of Spirit.

But in Genesis 2:7 you read:

Genesis 2:7 ...God formed man of the dust of the ground [just out of matter] and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life and man became a living soul.

The dust of the ground became a soul. There's no "immortal soul" whatsoever. And your life only comes from the breath of air and the circulation of blood, and refueled by food and water out of the ground. And you come out of the ground and back to the ground you will return, every one of us.

God formed man of the dust of the ground and gave us only temporary existence, not life. And God is Life. HE DID NOT CREATE IMMORTAL SELF CONTAINING INHERENT life in man. Why? He was building character. God is reproducing Himself and God is SUPREME HOLY AND RIGHTEOUS CHARACTER. And that character must be inculcated in us. And it must be inculcated in us while we are yet in **a temporary physical existence**. And if we don't create that character, and if we do as the angels did, and if we rebel and go wrong, we will simply become as if we had never been. We will become ashes under the soles of those that survive. We're not going to burn, and burn, and burn, forever and ever and ever, in an imaginary hell, which Dante Alighieri concocted. There is no such hell as that. But there will be a lake of fire that will devour all of those who lose every chance that a loving God is giving them. And even Jesus came and gave His own life to pay the price that they might have immortal life.

But there's only one-way we can have immortal life **in happiness**, and that is through the LAW OF GOD and through the GOVERNMENT OF GOD. The angels were happy as long as the government of God existed but when they rejected the government of God, they became **unhappy**. And I want to tell you that the most unhappy, the most wretched, personage in all

the universe is Satan the devil, and next to that are his demons.

I have had the power that God has given me to cast demons out of a few people. And I heard at Big Sandy of one of whom I had cast out demons and [he] had let demons come back in again. But that person has somehow been delivered and is doing very fine today, and I haven't seen him for many years. And I was very happy to know that [he's] been delivered from demons that can come in, if you lose your temper, if you want to blaspheme against God in anger where you lose your head, or something.

Now Satan the devil, or a demon, can't get into you and possess you if you don't allow it. I can tell you, you don't need to worry about it. But it has happened. And there are some that I love that had been possessed of demons, and they've been cast out.

Beginning Of The Human Family

Well now, to get back, I want to carry this story right on through. Adam was created as the first man. Adam was not complete. I say God didn't complete the creation like a woman that didn't complete her cake till the icing was put on. God wanted Adam to reproduce and replenish the earth, but Adam couldn't do it alone. He was only half there, and he was male; but he needed another person, who was female. So, God took one of his ribs and made a female; and they two then became **one family**. Now they had a son, his name was Cain; and now there were three in the family. They had another son, his name was Abel; now there were four in the family.

But Adam let his wife take him by the nose, started the ERA movement. I think I've mentioned that before, a week ago. ERA started with Eve; and ERA stands for Eve Ruled Adam, E-R-A. And women are still trying to do that, because men are not standing up for the position that God intended them to fulfill. Men are becoming weaklings today, and women seem to have to

take over and rule—because men aren't competent to stand up to the responsibilities that God has given them, and to do the ruling that God intended them to do.

Well Adam followed his wife, Eve. I won't go into that again. But he had to make **a choice**. He had the chance now to TURN TO GOD'S WAY OF LIFE. And one tree was the knowledge of good and evil. The other tree was the knowledge that would be imparted from God through His Holy Spirit. The one tree is the tree of **death**, but the other tree is the tree of **life**. They were **both trees of knowledge**. One was God's inspired knowledge through the Holy Spirit—the tree of life. The other tree was man taking the spiritual knowledge of what is good and evil TO HIMSELF, and not believing what God would reveal through His Holy Spirit. Adam made that choice and then God shut off the tree of life, or He shut off the Holy Spirit from man and closed it UNTIL THE KINGDOM OF GOD.

Now, Adam had a chance to take over the government of the earth. Adam disobeyed God but he obeyed Satan, followed Satan; followed Eve who obeyed Satan and was deceived. And so, Adam failed to restore the government of God on the earth. So now man has to repent of that, and has to be changed; and God set up right then a plan by which man, who had sinned, could be REDEEMED. Angels can't be. They're already immortal. God made man only with temporary life. He can be redeemed. And if he doesn't, his life can be stamped out; he won't have to go on suffering forever. Oh, the mercies and the wonders of God (that are past our finding out). How wonderful they are.

Well, at that time that Adam made that decision, the government of God was **not restored** on the earth. But the government of Satan was going to go on, and Satan was going to stay right on that throne of the earth. He deceived Eve. He's deceived all mankind ever since, as you'll read in Revelation 12 and verse 9.

God's Master Plan

At that very time (you read in Revelation 13:8) the Lamb of God, who was Christ, was **slain** in God's plan. Now, He hadn't actually come yet; He hadn't even been born human yet. But it was DECREED in God's plan and purpose—in the Master Plan—that Christ would come and live a sinless life, and would ransom man whom Satan had now “kidnapped” so to speak. So, it was decreed **at that time** that a Savior would come and redeem humanity.

Now at the foundation of this world, at that time, God also decreed it is appointed unto men once to die. That's in Heb.9:27. *”It is appointed unto men once to die, and after that the judgment.”* Now God shut the Holy Spirit off from man; but He decreed that, after a first death, they would be resurrected back to life—AFTER Jesus Christ had come and paid the penalty of sin so that they could be **redeemed**. Oh, what a wonderful thing is God's plan, and the world doesn't understand that at all.

Also it was decreed that Jesus was to come; and, when He was to come, He was not only to come as a Lamb to be slain for us. He was coming **to qualify** where ADAM HAD FAILED TO QUALIFY! TO WREST THE GOVERNMENT FROM SATAN; AND TO SIT ON THAT THRONE; AND RESTORE THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD! THAT'S THE WHOLE PURPOSE—TO RESTORE THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD BACK TO THIS EARTH.

So you read in Isaiah 9:6-7 of how it was said to ancient Israel... And God had set up His government in Israel; but they didn't have His Holy Spirit, and so they never obeyed that government. The government of God was not established on the earth. But God gave them His laws and made them a nation, ancient Israel. But it was said to them that a Son was to be born unto them as a little baby. And in Isaiah, you will read how He was to come. And His name would be Emmanuel, which meant God with us. And He would

save His people from their sins. And in Isaiah 9:6-7 it is stated that the government would be on His shoulders. **He** was going to restore the government that Satan had taken away.

And then Jesus finally was born, in Bethlehem of Judea. Satan tried to destroy Him when He was a little baby. And again Satan tried to destroy Him just before He began to deliver the message that God sent by Him, and to do the Work of starting the world tomorrow—of starting a new world, of starting a new civilization. And that's where Satan finally made his last stab at Him. You read of that in Matthew the fourth chapter beginning with verse one—the most titanic struggle that has ever occurred in the whole universe, Satan trying to destroy Jesus Christ.

And Satan said to Jesus in that great temptation, “Bow down to me and worship me, because I rule the whole earth; and, if You worship me, I'll turn over this whole government to You so You can rule.” Well Jesus knew that wasn't the way to get the rule. He told Satan to get behind Him; that He would obey God, and the laws of God, and the government of God. He was coming to restore **GOD'S GOVERNMENT**, not a government of rebellion as Satan had done (because the former Lucifer had now become Satan).

Then Jesus had **qualified now** to start the **NEW WORLD**—a new **GOVERNMENT**, if you please; and restore the government of God back to this earth. So Jesus said (as you'll read in Matthew 16, verse 18), “*I will build my church.*” And the Church was merely to be the embryo that would grow into, and be born into, **the Kingdom of God**—which is **the FAMILY of God** that would restore the government of God to this earth.

Coming To Christ

But Jesus did not go out to just try to save the whole world. He didn't have, what some people have on this earth, “a soul-saving crusade.” He

didn't go out and say, "Won't you give your heart to Me? Oh, if you'll just hold up your hands/ If you'll accept Me, you'll go into heaven." He didn't say anything like that at all! It's too bad that men are blinded in this world, that they don't understand the very truth and the WONDERFUL TRUTH of God. How wonderful it is! No, instead, Jesus said:

John 6:44 NO MAN CAN come to me, except the Father which sent me draws him.

God is going to hand-pick people to be in a different kind of a world, a world of peace. A world that will live like the Word and God lived before even the angels were created—that will live according to the government of God. Now He had to pick people that had already sinned, because sin gets into every one of us before we are a year old, during the first weeks and months of our lives.

By the time a baby's about nine months old, he is real selfish. And Satan gets that attitude. He's the prince of the power of the air, and he's able just through the air that is surcharged with his attitude of selfishness, of vanity, of lust and greed, and of jealousy and envy, of competition and strife. And this world is filled with that. It is filled with that.

Jesus called His people that He did call, and He drafted them, and He just chose twelve to be His real disciples. Others followed Him. There were 120 that endured. Many, who started to follow Him, left. He said to His disciples once, "Would you also leave Me?" And they said, "But where would we go? You have the words of truth." Some have left Jesus—disciples in His Church, in our time. But where have they gone? Who else has had the truth? Nobody, my brethren! Nobody else has had the truth. And they have gone into outer darkness, not into truth—those who have left.

But God has chosen every one of us. Every one of **you** has been **chosen** out of perhaps a thousand or several thousand other people. To come and be a

disciple; and to learn; to surrender to God and God's Way; to build God's character in your own life so that you can rule over and you can judge. And you can teach others until THE WHOLE WORLD has finally come to live God's Way, and that's the way it will be in the world tomorrow.

Government Now In The Church

Now back in Joel, one of the prophets—the second chapter of Joel and verse 28. It was prophesied that God said the days would come when He would pour out **His** Spirit on ALL FLESH. He closed up the Spirit of God at the time of Adam's sin. And it was closed up on all flesh UNTIL the government of God should be restored. It isn't opened yet. It was opened to the prophets of the Old Testament for the writing of the Bible. Yes, it was opened up to Moses; it was opened up to Elijah; it was opened up to Daniel; it was opened up to David—so that they could write the Bible, and that is all. It was not opened up to the world, or to the nations. It was only opened in Jesus time to those that God called; and Jesus said... I quoted it.

***John 6:44** No man CAN come unto me unless the Father which sent me draws him.*

God selects you, and we are predestinated to be called; and we're called not to... **Predestination** has nothing to do with the decision that you will make. It has only to do with **the** time of your calling. But you're drafted to be called to help rule, and help God to start A NEW CIVILIZATION of happiness, and where the government of God will be restored TO THIS EARTH.

Now God put His government in the Church, which Christ started. And you read, in twelfth chapter of first Corinthians and in Ephesians four, of how God set organization in the Church. God is the Head of Christ; Christ is the Head of the Church; apostles came next on earth under Christ; and then under

apostles were evangelists; and next in authority were pastors; and under that were other elders; and then teachers; and deacons to assist in physical things in the work of the Church.

Now the Church was only the firstfruits, and the Feast of Pentecost every early summer tells us that. We're only the **first** to be saved. It isn't a universal salvation yet, not yet. But for the world, remember, it was appointed for them to die and after that the judgment; and so the world has been dying. And ALL who died are to be resurrected into judgment, and that's what I want to come to. In I Corinthians 15 beginning with verse 22, you read, "*As in Adam all die.*" Because of Adam's sin, everybody dies the first death. Your sins will impose upon you the penalty of the second death. And that will be eternal, if you ever die that second death. God help us to never need to die that second death! But:

I Corinthians 15:22 As in Adam ALL die, so in Christ SHALL ALL...

THE SAME "ALL"—everyone from Adam! Cain and Abel and Seth; all of those that lived before the Flood; all of those in ancient Israel; all of those in ancient China; and ancient India are **all** going to come alive in the judgment.

*I Corinthians 15:22-24 As in Adam all die, so in Christ shall all be made alive. (23) But every man in his order [God has **an order of resurrections.**]: Christ the firstfruits [as you read in verse 22 or 23 there, "*Christ the firstfruits*"], and afterward they that are Christ's at His coming. (24) Then comes the end...*

And other resurrections follow that. That is **God's order**. And the government is to be restored IN AND THROUGH the Church.

Now God put His government IN THE CHURCH! But that government went out of the Church after a few generations. And in just less than one

generation, the Church had turned to another, false, gospel. And the gospel that Christ brought—the gospel of the government, the Kingdom of God—was destroyed. And it was never preached to the world for 1900 years, until God raised me up to proclaim it. And precisely 1900 years, right down to the very week after it was destroyed, God had me preaching it—proclaiming it to all of Europe on the most powerful radio station on earth, after it had been proclaimed coast to coast over the United States for nineteen years. Brethren you're living in very, very important times.

Elijah Shall Come

Now, in the Church the government was to be restored. It was taken away; and the government was destroyed for a while. But now I would like to have you notice next (in Matthew 17 and verse 10) Jesus' disciples, while He was on earth, asked Him:

Matthew 17:10-11 ...Why then say the scribes that Elijah must first come? (11) And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elijah truly shall first come, and restore all things.

Talking about restoring the government, Elijah “shall” come and restore. Brethren, when this question was asked and when Jesus said that, John the Baptist had **already** come. Now you read in Mark 1 and verse 1, “*The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ.*”

Mark 1:14 After John was put into prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the Kingdom.” [{1}](#)

[**At 44:04, the tape skips to point marked [{2}](#) below.]

And Jesus didn't begin preaching until John the Baptist had been put in there, and yet (beginning with verse 2) it says that, in one sense, John the Baptist fulfilled the Elijah prophecy. He prepared the way for Christ's First

Coming.

Now John the Baptist had already filled his ministry when Jesus said this. Notice the next verse here:

*Matthew 17:12 But I say unto you, That Elijah is come {2} [****At 44:06, the tape has skipped to here.**] already, and they knew him not.*

They didn't even recognize it was Elijah. They didn't. No one recognized that John the Baptist was the Elijah. Now John said he was not. He didn't tell a lie. He was not; but Jesus explained he was **another** man, but he came in the power and spirit of Elijah. He did fulfill that prophecy. Now there was **another** man to come, because the prophecy is in Malachi 3 (beginning with verse 1 and the first 5 verses); and there it shows it's a messenger to prepare the way before Christ's SECOND COMING. And John the Baptist was a forerunner, a prototype, of the one to come and prepare the way for the Second Coming of Christ.

John was already in prison before Jesus even began to preach. And **after** John's ministry was all over, Jesus said, "*Elijah truly shall first come, and restore all things.*" And yet, John the Baptist had already come and was in prison, and maybe his head had already been chopped off! He was talking about someone to **come later and restore**.

Now brethren, John the Baptist did **not** restore the government of God. John the Baptist DIDN'T COME TO RESTORE. He came to prepare the way for the First Coming of Christ, and that's what he did. And he called people to repentance. They already knew about the law, and he told them to repent for breaking that law.

And listen. After Jesus came and proclaimed the gospel of the good news of the KINGDOM OF GOD (and that's the FAMILY OF GOD, and the fact we can be born into that Family, and **restore** the whole government to

the world), the gospel was suppressed. And that gospel was not preached until the year of 1954, precisely one century of time cycles from the time that you read of in Galatians the first chapter 6th and 7th verses where the gospel was suppressed, and that gospel was no longer preached.

Gospel And Government Restored

THAT GOSPEL HAS BEEN RESTORED, brethren, in your ears; and it is being restored this minute. **THAT HAS BEEN DONE. AND THE GOSPEL HAS BEEN RESTORED. AND THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD HAS BEEN RESTORED INTO THE CHURCH.**

And when I first came among God's Church of the Sardis era there was no government. The government IS in the Church today and has been restored. I wonder if you realize the significance of the days that you are living in, brethren. These are very, very serious times and serious days.

Now, if immortal life was closed, when God shut up the Kingdom until, until the government of God should be restored, and that will be at the Second Coming of Christ. Now you read in Revelation 11 and verse 15, the seventh angel is to sound. We've already celebrated that on the seven-day festival just ended.

Revelation 11:15 ...and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world...

That means the United States; that means Britain; that means France, Germany, Russia, China, Japan; that means the governments in the nations of this world.

Revelation 11:15 ...are become the kingdoms of our Lord and his Christ, and he shall reign forever and ever.

And we in the Church, if we overcome and endure unto the end, WE shall sit with Christ and reign with Him on His throne; and we will be given power over the nations. We shall teach them, for the Word of the Lord and the law of God will go forth from Jerusalem. And the whole world in the Millennium is going to be FILLED with the knowledge of God as the ocean beds are filled with water.

Now we come down to that. But now I want you to notice next what happens, the 20th chapter of Revelation. We've just been going through a celebration of seven days of the Feast of Tabernacles. But now in the 20th chapter of Revelation beginning with verse four:

***Revelation 20:4** And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them.*

That is US. We will sit on thrones and judgment; we will teach the world; we will judge the world; and we will RULE the world. When Christ comes, the government of God will be restored. Now there's another scripture I wanted to read, right in Acts the third chapter. When Christ comes, He not only will rule all the nations of the earth but notice what Peter said here just a day or two after the day of Pentecost, in a sermon that Peter was preaching at the Temple in Jerusalem. He said:

***Acts 3:19-21** REPENT YE therefore, and be converted, that your sins maybe blotted out, [When?] when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord; (20) And He [or, God] shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: (21) Whom the heavens must receive UNTIL [Christ has gone to heaven as our High Priest. The High Priest of THIS Church! Not the High Priest of the churches of this world, the High Priest of God's own Church—interceding for us, brethren. And we certainly need Him there. But they have received Him until] the times of RESTITUTION OF ALL THINGS.*

He is coming. What does restitution mean? Restitution means restoring to a former state or condition. Restoring what has been taken AWAY. What was taken away? The government of God! What is Christ going to restore when He comes? THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD!

Government Restored

Brethren, that government has been restored already in the Church, but not in the world. Jesus Christ has been able to restore that government in the Church through me—through a hunk of clay down here that I said, when I was being converted, was not worthy to be thrown on the human junk pile; and, of myself, I'm not. All worthiness is in Christ, and whatever has been done Christ has done. I've merely been an instrument. I want you to understand that. But there is no limit to what Christ can do IF we only open up ourselves as an open channel for Him to operate in, and we're entirely submissive to Him—complete submission.

The heavens have received Him **until** the times of restitution of all things. He is coming to restore the government of God. That government has already been restored in the Church; and, brethren, we do have a turnover in the Church. It seems that every year a few go out. But every year more are new ones coming in than the few who quit and go out or get put out. Unfortunately, a few have had to be put out; and, in every case, it has been resentment and rebellion against the authority of God—against the government of God in the Church.

What made a devil out of Lucifer? Resentment of God's authority over him, resentment of God's government; and that's the way Satan gets people today. He causes them to resent the government of God. He causes them to resent the government of God.

Now getting back to the 20th chapter once again of Revelation. Now I

want you to notice, for a thousand years the saints are going to reign with Christ. And then beginning with verse five:

Revelation 20:5-10 *But the rest of the dead lived not again till the thousand years are finished. This was just the first resurrection. (6) Blessed and holy are they that have part in the first resurrection: on such the second death [That's the final death.] will have no power, but they shall be PRIESTS of God and of Christ, and shall reign [They'll be priests and shall reign. They will teach, and they will rule.]. (7) And when the thousand years are completed, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, (8) and shall go forth to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth [at the end of the Millennium], Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. (9) And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city [Jerusalem]: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. [That is spoken of in the past tense; but, in other words, that will happen. It's just as certain as if it already had happened, and that's why it's spoken of in the past tense.] (10) And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet were cast, and shall [That's the devil.] shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.*

The White Throne Judgment

Now then we come to the place, brethren, of what we're celebrating today—at the end of that Millennium, and after Satan has been released, and God puts him away, once again FOREVER. Now notice the next verse, verse 11.

Revelation 20:11-12 *And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it [which will be Jesus Christ], from whose face the earth and heaven fled*

away; and there was no place found for them. (12) And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God [a resurrection of those who had died previously]; *and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life* [Some are going to be written in the book of life at that time.]; *and the dead were judged out of those things that were written in the books, according to their works.*

Now brethren, after Adam sinned, God closed the tree of Life. In other words, He closed the Holy Spirit. He closed salvation. And He let this world go on. The world has had to learn and get a stomach full of the wrong way of life until we don't want it any more. You know there are some cures of alcoholism, and they put something into you. It makes you so that you get so sick of alcohol you don't want to ever take any more of it. They say that you lose the urge and the desire. You just, you can't stomach it anymore.

Well, God wants us to get so sick of sin that we can't stomach sin; and we don't sin anymore. So you read, in I John 3, that we'll not only be like Him when He comes. We're already the children of God; but we're not yet born again, and we will be like Him when we are. What we will be doesn't yet appear. We haven't been born of the Spirit yet. Just begotten, not born. There's a great difference. But when we are born again (and in verse nine of I John 3), we will never sin; and we will be unable to sin. It will be impossible for us to sin, because God's seed will remain in us; and everything else will be gone. We will simply **be God**.

We have got to get so sick of sin in this life, and have OVERCOME sin, and fought so hard to overcome sin in this life, that we never want to sin again; and we never will. And in the Kingdom, we'll be made so we can't sin. We won't want to. It's impossible for God to sin. And the only reason it's impossible... It isn't that He doesn't have the power to sin. It's simply that He has set His mind that He won't, and there is no other power great enough to make Him do it. Oh, thank God for that. That's wonderful.

Now, we come to that great Judgment. And look at ancient Israel. We go back now to the 37th chapter of Ezekiel, and beginning with verse one.

Ezekiel 37:1 The hand of the [Eternal] was upon me, and carried me out in the spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley full of bones.

You know, I heard a sermon on this once by a so-called great lady, Amy Simple-McPherson; and it was illustrated in her temple in Los Angeles. She said that this valley of dried bones were all the other churches, and they were all dried out; but her church was full of life. Well, I think we'd better take God's interpretation of His own explanation here.

Ezekiel 37:1-5 ... in the midst of the valley full of bones [the valley of dry bones],(2) and caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, there were very many in the open valley; and, lo, they were very dry.(3) And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? [Now they are dry. That means they're very old. They've been dead a long time. They're skeletons. Now can these bones live?] And I answered, O Lord [Eternal], thou knowest. (4) Again he said unto me, Prophecy upon these bones, and say unto them, O you dry bones, hear the word of the LORD. (5) Thus saith the Lord [Eternal] unto these bones; Behold I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live.

Now, what kind of breath? The breath that comes from the air and mortal life. Angels don't need breath. They are spirit. God doesn't have to breathe to live He has self-containing life. These will be brought back to human life—not immortal life, back to human life just like they were. Now remember: "It's appointed to all men once to die, after this the judgment." Now here comes the judgment. And God says,

Ezekiel 37:6 I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and you shall live; and

you shall know [Now, finally, they're going to know something they never seemed to know before. "You shall know..."] *that I am the [Eternal]*.

Opening The Graves

They didn't really realize who He was before. KNOWLEDGE is going to come into them. They're going to come to knowledge that they didn't have in this world.

Ezekiel 37:7-12 So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. (8) And when I beheld, lo, the sinews, and flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no breath in them. (9) Then said he unto me, Prophesy unto the wind [Now, that's just air or wind.], prophesy son of man, and say unto the wind, Thus saith the Lord [Eternal]; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain that they may live. [Now here comes a resurrection.] (10) So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived [or, existed again], and stood upon their feet, an exceeding great army. (11) Then he said unto me, Son of man, these bones are [All the other churches? Oh, no. Here's God's own explanation, God's own interpretation. "Son of man, these bones are..."] the whole house of Israel: behold, they say, Our bones are dried, and our hope is lost [No hope, frustrated, no hope whatsoever.]: we are cut off from our parts. (12) Therefore prophesy and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord [Eternal]; Behold, O my people [ancient Israel], I will open your graves...

And that's our "Israel" today and all of those who are dead—and the American and the British people. And I'm speaking to you all over the United States and Canada; and **you are Israel**. And that applies to the dead that have not been converted, that haven't been even called to be converted.

Ezekiel 37:12-14 And cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel, (13) And you shall KNOW [Knowledge will now come into them.] that I am the [Eternal], WHEN I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves, (14) and shall put MY SPIRIT INTO YOU...

Then finally—after the KNOWLEDGE comes—God will put His Spirit into them, which [they] did not have. The time will come when God will POUR OUT HIS SPIRIT ON ALL FLESH. Brethren, that time has not come yet.

Those people lived and died. It was appointed to them “once to die, after this the judgment;” and that judgment is the great White Throne judgment. They come into that judgment, all judgment has been given over by God to Christ. God the Father judges no man; Christ will do the judging. They will come on the judgment seat of Christ, and they will give account for what they did in this life. And the Judge is going to say, ‘You are guilty! The sentence is GUILTY, and I pronounce sentence on you. The sentence is the second death.’ But then knowledge is going to come to them that He is God, and that He has come (since they died, for most of them) and died for them.

And He’s going to say, ‘Now if you want to repent. If you want to really believe, which you didn’t do in your lifetime. If you want now to begin to learn, and if you want to believe Me, and believe what I say, which you didn’t believe in your lifetime. If you want to put an end to your life and action, if you want to have the Spirit of God and the attitude of God, and the way of love and co-operation; and live that way, and even pray for and bless your enemies instead of cursing them, I will put my Spirit into you and you shall live.’

Rise In Judgment

Brethren, that time is coming. God has not tried to save the world. But He called twelve. He called a few others with them. There were a hundred and twenty which received the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost. Three thousand more were converted that day. The government of God was given to them. The government of God was restored just in the Church, to be the government that will produce all the happiness in the world tomorrow—a new world, a different world than Adam’s world that we’re living in.

Christ came and called us to come out from among them of this world, and be separate in the way we live toward other people and toward God. Not to wear a different kind of a hat or uniform, or something of that sort; but to live differently in our attitude toward God and toward our neighbors. And to study to show ourselves approved unto God, and to grow in grace and the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ; and to overcome and to endure until the end.

Other nations had been cut off, and the Holy Spirit was not given to them in their lifetime. Let’s notice some of those nations now, real quickly. Matthew 12, verses 41 and 42.

***Matthew 12:41-42** The men of Nineveh [Jesus said] shall rise in judgment with this generation [that was living when Jesus was on earth], and shall condemn it; because they repented at the preaching of Jonah: and, behold, a greater than Jonah is here. [And they did repent in Jonah’s case, but he’s talking about the judgment that will come.] (42) The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon...*

Christ had come, and they wouldn’t listen to Him. Now, next I’d like to have you turn to Luke 11 verse 31 and 32.

***Luke 11:31-32** The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment*

[That's this great White Throne judgment.] *with the men of this generation, and condemn them...* [And then again in verse 32.] The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it...

And so on, same thing again, saying that they didn't have the truth. They weren't called to the truth; but they will come up in the judgment. But those who rejected Christ when He was here, they had their chance, and they went down. Now, Luke 10, verses 12 and 14, let's turn back a page. "*But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom and Gomorrah...*" and then again verse 14 "*But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you.*"— Jesus said to those who were rejecting Him when He was on earth. And He was preaching directly to them, and they were scorning everything He said, and rejecting it, and simply turning the wrong way.

Commuted Death Penalty

In the judgment, Christ will tell those that they have been found guilty; and He will pronounce a death sentence, the second death. But then they will find that, even so, He paid the death sentence for them. And He'll say, "It's been paid for you, if you want to accept it." And if they will, then apparently, they are going to be given time to receive the Holy Spirit; and (if they grow in grace and knowledge, and if they endure, if they build character in a mortal body) apparently they're going to live for one hundred years. Now notice Psalm 103, verses 10 and 12.

Psalm 103:10-12 He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. (11) For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him. (12) As far as the east is from the west [How far is that? Keeps getting farther all the time.], so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.

That's what He will tell them then, and they will have a chance. And apparently the 65th chapter of Isaiah explains some of that. Now there's another interpretation, and other translations will give this in a different way; but I'm inclined to believe that the King James has it correct. Isaiah 65, beginning with verse 17.

Isaiah 65:17-20 *For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth* [This is after the Millennium. It's talking about after the Millennium. "And a new earth..."] *and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. (18) But be ye glad...in that which I create: for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. (19) And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in my people; and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying. (20) There shall be no more [from that time, no more] thence [or, from that time] an infant of days...*

Now that can be translated in two ways. Some of them translate it there'll be no more infants dying in a few days of age; they'll go on living. But there is another meaning. It appears to be here in the King James, that there will be no more from that time an infant just a few days old.

Isaiah 65:20 *...nor an old man that has not filled his day* [but they will all live to be a hundred years old].

Now regardless of the translation of that particular passage, there is going to be time—in this great White Throne judgment—for those who had never been called. They're going to have to do the very thing, brethren, that we in the Church are having to do now. They're going to have to receive the Spirit of God, and then overcome. But they won't have Satan to overcome (just themselves) because there won't be any Satan around. Christ will be ruling. We will be there teaching. We will be God! We will be helping them. They will have every help. What a wonderful thing it is going to be.

Concluding God's Purpose And Plan

And now, finally, from Romans 11. I think a good way to close this wonderful eight days that we have had, is this passage here, from Romans the 11th chapter, beginning with verse 33.

Romans 11:33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and the knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!

The world doesn't understand these things. The world doesn't understand the PURPOSE of God. THE PURPOSE IS HE REPRODUCING HIMSELF—His Master Plan. First there were the angels. Then He created man on the earth. He recreated the earth, and renewed the surface of the earth for man; and we were supposed to put the icing on the cake just as angels had been.

Man has ruined everything on this earth his hands have touched. We have polluted the land; we have polluted the waters; and we polluted and befouled the air. We have polluted God's law; we polluted His way of life. WE HAVE FOLLOWED SATAN. The world has done that. Brethren, I hope WE have come out of that in the Church. I hope we have come out of it. And we are being called now to study to show ourselves approved unto God, a workman that needs not to be ashamed; but rightly dividing the Word of truth, and understanding it.

God has blessed us with the Holy Spirit. It's WITHHELD from the world as a whole, until later. We're the firstfruits being called. We're to judge those during the Millennium. And those converted during the Millennium will be made God, and they will be judging all the BILLIONS of people that'll be in that final resurrection. BILLIONS OF PEOPLE! We'll be there to help them. Satan won't be here any more. They will find how Christ died

for them, and they'll find the right way of life; and, IF they want to, they can choose it and live that way.

Romans 11:33-36 *O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and the knowledge of God... (34) For who hath known the mind of the Lord, and who hath been His counselor? (35) Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again? (36) For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever [and ever]. Amen.*

God has a wonderful purpose, brethren. Let's go on, because the race is not yet over. Satan is very angry at us right now because he knows he has but a short time, because the truth is going out. God's government has been restored to this Church. God's truth—the message, the gospel—has been restored and preached around the earth by this Church. That much has already been done; but there is more yet to be done, and we're far from through.

God bless you all, brethren, all over—everywhere. God loves you. So do I. Thousands of you are writing in how you love me, and how you are behind me 100%. Let's stay that way, and let's continue on overcoming, growing in grace and knowledge, ENDURING to the end. Not resenting God's government, but being submissive entirely to it in love and in Jesus' name.

Thank you all.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Editorial note: Our audio file skips from the point marked {1} and picks up at {2}. The wording in between is from another transcript of this sermon, which we have used to keep the flow of the points Mr. Armstrong was making.

Aversion Therapy

Sermon (October 16, 1982)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Aversion Therapy.....	1251	Man Has Polluted Creation.....	1261
Why The Flood?.....	1251	God's Way.....	1262
Annual Sabbath Days Revealed.....	1252	God's Purpose For Angels.....	1262
New Truth Still Being Revealed.....	1254	Angels Sinned!.....	1263
Two Trees.....	1255	Man Is A Living Soul.....	1266
Why Man Created Mortal?.....	1256	Man Is Incomplete.....	1267
What Is God's Purpose?.....	1256	The Two Trees.....	1268
God Is Creating Character.....	1257	Mr. Armstrong's Experience.....	1271
Two Persons – One God.....	1257	Apostle Paul's Experience.....	1276
What Does God Do?.....	1258	Truth Of The Resurrection.....	1280
Why Make Man Out Of Matter?.....	1259	Relax In God's Hands.....	1283
Dual Stages Of Creation.....	1260		

Well brethren, it's hard to realize that another Feast has come and gone but I am sure you were all elated. All reports that I have had from all Feast sites were simply wonderful, and everybody says "the best Feast ever." And we hope that next year will be, and I think it did slightly excel the year before. We must keep excelling every year.

I spent three days over at the Big Sandy site. Spoke there once and then up to Lake of the Ozarks and then back here for the remainder of the Feast. But that doesn't mean that everything is all accomplished. Now it's just time to start all over again and realize that time is short and we don't have much time to go.

Why The Flood?

I did and recorded two television programs this week and in both cases the subject was on the Flood in Noah's day. That was inspired by a

documentary that I had seen as to whether there ever was a Flood, which of course, if it was in the Bible, science says it just couldn't have happened. The Bible's got to be wrong—nothing in the Bible could ever be right! But now they're beginning to find some kind of scientific evidence that perhaps there really was a Flood after all. Now I didn't speak on that phase of the subject at all. What I was concerned with on the television program was the question: Why, if there is a God of Love and mercy (since there's so much question today going back and forth over the United States about the death penalty and whether it's right for the State to put guilty criminals that are a menace to society to death), why would a God of mercy put millions of people to death—all at once and by drowning, in fact all of the people on the face of the earth except Noah, his wife, their three sons and their wives? Just eight people left alive to start the world all over again. Why would God do that?

I think it will be three weeks or four, I don't know, it'll be certainly two, I think three or four weeks before you see the first of those programs.

But I want to get back to that. Why would God have put all of the people to death, in the days of Noah, except for Noah and his family?

I've been discussing for a great deal for the last year about the two trees and some really very important new knowledge has been revealed to this Church during the past year and now I wonder if this afternoon you can bear a little more new light that throws still more new light on all this subject, if we can take a little more new knowledge. It seems like that's difficult for God's people to do.

Annual Sabbath Days Revealed

I remember that when God revealed to me about the annual Sabbaths – and He didn't reveal the whole Feast of Tabernacles – just the annual Sabbath Days to me at the beginning back in 1927 in the spring, and my wife and I

kept that first Passover in the spring of 1927. Immediately I began to preach about the Holy Days as “new light” and “new knowledge” to the people in the Sardis church in the Willamette Valley in the state of Oregon. They wouldn’t hear of it. Now they believed in the Sabbath; they had the name Church of God; they didn’t know yet what the Gospel is—they didn’t preach the Gospel because they didn’t know what it is. The Gospel had been lost. Seventh Day Adventists don’t know what it is; no church on earth knew what it was. It just had not been proclaimed for over 1900 years. But the thing I found is that they had gone so far and the people in the Sardis church had accepted the Sabbath; they had accepted the Name of God; they knew there would be a Millennium but they had no idea what would happen. They didn’t know that it meant ruling the whole earth and that we would be ruling under Christ. As a matter of fact they didn’t have the Gospel in any way really. But they would not accept any knowledge in addition to what they already had.

Then the Church was raised up that was the beginning of this Philadelphia era of the Church – in a country schoolhouse out west of Eugene, Oregon. Now those were my new converts that God gave to me, and so I taught them and among the new knowledge (it was all new to them, they were newly converted) were the seven annual Holy Days. So they accepted all of that. Seven years later God revealed to me about the Feast of Tabernacles and the real meaning of the annual festivals, which I had never known. All I knew was God said “Do it”.

I had read how God said to Abram, who became Abraham, He said “Get out of your country and go to a place I will show you.” He didn’t quibble about it; he didn’t say “Well, do I have to?” He didn’t say, “Well, can’t I go later?” Or “can’t I go to some other place?” or “I would rather stay here!” It just says “Abraham went” – and I had learned that lesson in my conversion. And when I saw that God had made the annual Sabbaths holy the same as the weekly Sabbath – that they were commanded forever – I didn’t know why. I

didn't say "Well, I won't do it until I know why!" I said, "Well, God says, 'Do it.' I will do it!"

My wife and I did it and we had to observe those seven annual Sabbath Days seven years alone by ourselves. When I proclaimed it to the Church, they laughed me to scorn. Now, as I say, the new Church learned it, and for seven more years, they would keep the annual Sabbath Days and then I learned that we should keep the Feast of Tabernacles and arranged for us to keep the Feast of Tabernacles at Belknap Springs in Oregon. Do you know that half or more of those who had come in to the beginning of this very Church would not come out except on the annual Sabbaths?! Oh, no sir, they would not learn anything new! They'd go just where they are and they won't go a step further. Brethren, how about you? GOD IS REVEALING NEW KNOWLEDGE STILL.

New Truth Still Being Revealed

I used to admire a gentleman who was past 80 years of age (I think about 81, 82) when I was preaching in those years back there over 50 years ago. Because every night he would say, as he left the hall where we were holding the meetings, he'd say "Mr Armstrong, I learned something new tonight." You know, later I made him an elder in the Church because he had been an elder in the Christian church but he came out of that when he learned God's Truth. He was able to advance, to admit he had been wrong. He was able to learn new Truth.

Now I have said the hardest thing in the world for anyone to do is to admit you are wrong. And the next hardest thing is to believe God. Well along with that, it's a most difficult thing for anyone to do is to accept some new knowledge you never had before, especially if it's spiritual knowledge out of the Bible. People just don't want any more knowledge out of the Bible

than they already have, and most people haven't got any and that's where they want to stop right there. They don't want to hear any. Like our advertising agency, the head of it from New York was out this week and we had a little meeting and he had mentioned that there's one thing. We can't have any thing about the Bible on any of the networks on television. They won't have the Bible preached on the networks! They don't want any of it. Well, I wonder if we can open our ears and our minds to additional light on what we've had and go a little further because God is revealing new knowledge all of the time.

Two Trees

Now you remember I've shown that God gave Adam a choice. He was made mortal and he had to make a choice – between the two trees. One was the Tree of Revealed Spiritual Knowledge, revealed by God that would result, if he took it and followed it, in eternal life. The other was Self-Acquired Spiritual Knowledge—and spiritual attitude, you might add—that he would acquire by himself—but just the life that he had. And it would result in death. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, if he took it, he would surely die. The other tree was a Tree of Life, but it also was a tree of knowledge. Revealed spiritual knowledge, revealed by God, and also revealed attitude—meaning your intention, your purpose, your objective in life. And it's just as if God had said to him, “Do you want to sit on the throne of the world? Do you want to produce a whole world that will be your own children and then rule over them? Or would you rather go along with Satan who is now ruling, sitting on the throne?” Adam chose to stay with Satan. He rebelled against God, just as Satan had when he was Lucifer the archangel before him.

And so God closed up the Tree of Life. That is, He made it inaccessible to man unless God Himself offered it. Unless God had a reason for choosing

someone and giving it to them, no one had access to the Tree of Life from that time on (as you read in Genesis 3:22-24, the last three verses of the third chapter of Genesis).

Why Man Created Mortal?

Now the question is this: Man was mortal. He did not gain immortal life. He had a carnal mind. Why did God leave people here on the earth with a temporary existence? They didn't have life, only a temporary existence. Now they lived, most of them lived 900 years and over. Adam lived 930 and Methuselah lived a little longer. (Methuselah apparently died in the Flood.) But why did God leave them on earth?

What Is God's Purpose?

We need to know God's purpose. And once again I would like to get back to what I have said again and again and again and again—how Winston Churchill, the last of the so-called great men of the world, had said before the United States Congress that “there is a purpose and design being worked out here below”.

Now what is that purpose—God's purpose? First of all, what is God? He is Creator, and God is a Spirit. He is composed of spirit, and God is Creator. And as Creator, God first created spirit beings, angels. And there were three types of angels in three grades, three levels you might say: (1) ordinary angels; (2) seraphs, a little higher in rank or in kind; and (3) cherubs, which were the highest and were next to God so far as any created being is concerned. So God is creating.

God Is Creating Character

Now what is God creating? God is creating character. And character is the ability of a separate created entity, separate, independent, individual of itself, having mind power and free moral agency or the right of free choice to come to see the right way and the right attitude as opposed to the wrong. The True as opposed to the false. And even against own, even against self-desire, to choose the right, and to have the will to go the Way of the right and resist the wrong and to do it permanently. That is perfect, righteous, spiritual character. And that is what God is creating.

Two Persons – One God

Now God finally said, after the angels had sinned (I'll come to that in a minute), but in Genesis 1:26 we read how God said "*Let us make man in our image.*" Now the first place you find God mentioned, as far as time is concerned—not the first place in the Bible, but going back the farthest in pre-history—is in John the first chapter and the first five verses, "*In the beginning was the word, and the word was with God.*" Now there are two persons. The Word was a Person. God was a Person. The Word was God. The Two formed One God. Two different Persons, (I don't need to go into that again. I've gone into that so many, many times). The Word, however, became flesh (perhaps billions and trillions of years later, whenever it was). That was about 1950 some years ago, or 1980 some years ago; and He became flesh and dwelt among us and became Jesus Christ of Nazareth. He was God-With-Us, God in the human flesh. Now God created all things by Jesus Christ. He was the Word; He spoke nothing except what the Father told Him to speak. But God told Him what to do, and God created all things by Jesus Christ. He would speak. The Power that did it was the Holy Spirit that would respond as Christ spoke and whatever has been created – everything—was created by that

process.

Now God said in 1:26, not “let me,” but it was Elohim and in the first chapter of Genesis we read the beginning of the physical creation. The beginning of the spiritual creation is in John 1, in the New Testament; but the beginning of the physical creation is in Genesis 1. You see the Old Testament is pretty much concerned about the physical creation, and the New Testament of the spiritual creation. Now in the beginning Elohim, because it was written in the Hebrew language and Moses used the term Elohim, which is a uni-plural (like the word, church or family—several people maybe, but only one church or one family, one team, or whatever. We heard something about a baseball team in the sermon this morning—in the Sermonette this morning. But it can be nine players out there on the field at a time and I think the average baseball team carries about 25 players altogether, or perhaps one or two more. However, it’s only one team. And God is one God, but more than one person and God said, “*Let us* make man after our image.” He had made cattle after the cattle-kind, and animals after their kind, but now He said, “Let us make man after the God-kind – after Our kind.” God was now going to—God was going to reproduce Himself!

What Does God Do?

Now get back to it again. What is God? Of course, God is composed of spirit, John 4:24. God is composed of spirit – but what is God, what is His occupation? It said that the Word and God lived, in Them was life. They lived. If They lived, what did They do? They had an occupation. What They did was creating. They were Creators. They designed and then They brought into being what They designed. They produced it. They were Creators.

At first They created angel-beings out of spirit, but finally They created matter. The angels were already created; and the archangels were singing and

the ordinary angels were shouting for joy on the creation of the earth at the time it was first created. So God, finally, had created matter. Now why did God create matter? Why did He make man out of matter instead of out of spirit? I haven't gone into that very much in past sermons, but I'd like to go into that this afternoon.

Why Make Man Out Of Matter?

Man was formed and shaped physically out of matter, but he was formed and shaped in the same form and shape as God. In other words, God has two eyes, a nose, a mouth, two ears. He has arms and legs. He has hands and feet. Animals aren't made quite like that. They are made in a little different form and shape. But God formed and shaped man out of matter; and He made him out of matter so that later that matter could be converted into spirit, and he could become spirit.

Now let me explain a little about how that can happen. We have a very beautiful piece of sculpture just out this side of the Auditorium, and, in front, well, right in front of the Auditorium. I think it's to the left. I'm thinking of my own office and it is the left of my office, but it's out in front of us here now. And that sculpture was made by a very famous sculptor, David Wynn, of England; and I think that he now has become the recognized number one sculptor of the world. But I saw a part of this bird sculpture out in front, the *Egret* sculpture. First he made it out of something. I think it may have been like plastic-clay or what material, some kind of material that was soft enough it could be formed and shaped. But it would sort-of hold its shape if you didn't push it too hard, squeeze it too hard, or something. Anyway, he converted that into bronze, which is very hard and permanent. Now what he made was only temporary because, if something comes up against it hard enough, it would squeeze it all out of shape or destroy it. So a mould was made, and it was made in pieces for the various parts and they had to be put

together right here on campus. And then into those moulds of the various pieces was poured molten bronze. Now as soon as that bronze cooled off, it hardened, and now it is just like rock or stone; it's very hard and very enduring.

Now I knew Elbert Hubbard, a great philosopher, in this world. He didn't know anything about God. He only knew something about matter and the world. But he said "nothing is permanent, but change." Now in the material world that is true. Matter never remains constant as it is. Matter is constantly changing. Now here I have a microphone. Here's a desk in front of me. And, you know, these things if you take a hundred years, a thousand years from now, they're not going to look like they do now. Even metal, even stone – one of the most enduring things there is in matter – stone itself will corrode and look different after a few thousand years. I've seen a lot of stone that is a few thousand years old, and it doesn't look now like it once did. Matter changes! Matter is not permanent! SPIRIT DOES NOT CHANGE! Jesus Christ was made SPIRIT, and He said—it says in the Bible—that Christ is the same yesterday, today and forever. He will NEVER change. GOD DOES NOT CHANGE! Spirit does not and cannot change! But matter is changeable.

Dual Stages Of Creation

Now let's go back to the angels. God created angels first. He created them out of spirit, and remember that spirit does not change. Now I have to come to something that you have to realize. You've heard me say more than once that God has created in dual stages. There's so much duality in God's plan, the way He works out His purpose. For example, there was the first Adam, Christ was the second Adam; the first was wholly matter, the second was matter plus spirit and has become wholly spirit. There was the Old Testament and the New Testament, duality. I have said, recently, a great many

times, that God's form of duality in His creation is a great deal like a woman baking a cake. But she bakes it in two stages. Now in one sense her cake is baked, but not yet finished – because the icing has not yet been put on. Until the icing is put on it is not complete. As far as it's gone it's complete; as far as it's gone it's as good as it's going to be. It's not going to be changed – until she puts the icing on. Of course, that just finishes, it doesn't change it.

Now God creates in dual stages. I am convinced myself—and I think there is enough evidence in the Bible to substantiate it (although there is nothing in the Bible that says this just in so many words, but I am certain that it is implied and indicated)—that God created the earth in stages, like a woman baking a cake. When He first created the earth it was not finished. He intended the surface to be finished and have a finish put on the outside surface. And when He put angels on the earth, I am certain He intended the angels to work in the matter. Inside of the earth there is not only dead matter, there is living matter in the earth too – life, living matter. And there is energy within the earth, in oil, gas, other forms of energy. He intended the angels to finish the earth by putting more beauty on the outside of it. And instead of that, they ruined it; and you find the ruin in the first chapter of Genesis, in verse two. The earth had become, well, chaotic and in a state of decay, waste and empty, as a result of the angels.

Man Has Polluted Creation

Now in six days God renewed the surface of the earth as you read in Psalms 104 and verse 30. And God renewed the surface of the earth for man; and that's what you find in what we call “the creation chapter”—in Genesis 1. It is not a first, original creation. That's where God changed and renewed the surface of the earth for man, but He intended man to put the icing on the cake, so to speak. He intended man to beautify the surface of the earth. What has man done to this earth? EVERYTHING THAT MAN'S HAND HAS

TOUCHED, HE HAS BESMIRCHED, HE HAS RUINED, HE HAS POLLUTED, HE HAS BEFOULED. Look what we've done to the air; look what we've done to the water; look what we've done to the soil. Man has ruined every part of God's earth that God gave man to work on. Instead of beautifying it, man has gone the other way.

God's Way

Well, I will say this, brethren, this is the Work of God. And this is God's little temporary headquarters here on the earth, until Christ comes and moves it back over to Jerusalem. And we have tried to let God work in us, and do things God's way as He would do it. And we have tried to beautify what is here. Now the very ground on which this Auditorium stands was the nearest thing to a, well, the most ugly part of Pasadena—slum area—that you could possibly think of. We had to buy up each little 40-foot wide lot; and most of them had two houses, one in front and another in the back. And we had to buy them all, wreck the houses, take them off and beautify it with this jewel, this Auditorium, which is a jewel – and much real jewels in it. There is more onyx and the beautiful sort of creamy-pink onyx than any other building in the world. And I don't think you could possibly get that much more – I don't think that much more exists now that men know about. We have tried to do it God's Way and make it beautiful. And three times this campus has won the award at being the most beautiful, the best landscaped, and the best maintained campus of any college or university in the United States. Because this is God's Headquarters and we've tried to do it God's Way.

God's Purpose For Angels

Now God's object, however, ultimately was (1) in angels to create character and (2) in humans to do something more – to reproduce Himself –

but also the creation of character because that's what God is. And when God reproduces Himself in man that means God's character—holy, righteous, spiritual, perfect character, spiritual character – must be formed in us. And then by a resurrection from the dead, we can be made, what we shall be, wholly spirit, if we receive God's spirit; if we grow in grace and knowledge; if we continue to obey and be doers and not only hearers of God's Will and God's Law; and if we endure unto the end. We shall be beautiful.

Angels Sinned!

Now, angel creation was dual. It, of necessity, had to be. Because angels, we think of as being holy and righteous, but in II Peter 2:4 we read, *"For if God spared not the angels that SINNED"* - you know that ought to stagger anyone to read that, that angels sinned! What? Holy, righteous angels they sinned! How could they sin? Now if God had made them holy and righteous to begin with, and their creation was complete, they had to stay the way they were made. They couldn't change, because spirit does not change. But they did change some way; they became sin, sinners.

Now we read back here, in the 28th chapter of Ezekiel [{1}](#), speaking of Lucifer, who became Satan the Devil, in verse 14, *"thou art the anointed cherub that covereth."* He had been on the very throne of God in heaven; he had known the way of God; he knew the government of God; he had been there observing and having a part in the administration of the government of God at the throne of the whole universe, and then God had put him on the earth. And then verse 15,

Ezekiel 28:15 Thou wast perfect in thy ways, from the day that thou wast created, TILL INIQUITY was found in thee.

Now that can mean one thing only. SINCE SPIRIT DOES NOT CHANGE, it can mean only one thing—that when God first created Lucifer

and his angels, their creation was not completed. HE CREATED THEM IN DUAL STAGES. The icing on the cake had not been put on. CHARACTER HAD NOT BEEN FORMED IN THEM. Now, of necessity, it COULD NOT have been formed in them because character is the ability of a separate entity with free moral agency to make up ITS OWN DECISION, independent of God. And, in other words, the separate entity that becomes perfected, and completed, has a part in its own creation.

Now you and I have a part in our creation as we ultimately are to become, brethren. We have a great part in it. But don't forget that we are a work of God's hands. His creation is going on in us, but WE HAVE OUR PART IN IT. And yet the character that is to come into us comes from God. It's God's character which must come into us, but it must come with our consent, with our desire, with our will and willingness. And we have to will ourselves and have the willpower to GO THAT WAY and go that way constantly. That's why we were put here; that's the purpose of life.

Now angels had minds. But angel creation could not be complete, since they were to have CHARACTER, until the CHARACTER had been formed in them. So angels were made out of spirit, but UNFINISHED. They were given minds; they were given free moral agency. They could have knowledge; they could weigh it; they could think about it, because they had independent minds. Each angel had an independent mind, all his own, just as you and I have. But angels, finally, had sinned. They made their own decision. Now you explain that from Ezekiel 28, where he was perfect as God formed him, but was like the cake is perfect – but it isn't finished till the icing is put on it, now let's get that! "*Till iniquity was found in thee,*" now that iniquity didn't come from God. God DIDN'T CREATE THAT IN HIM. But God CAN'T CREATE PERFECT CHARACTER BY FIAT. The independent entity, the created entity, has to make a decision and have its own part in that creation and in that decision, or there can be no character.

Now in verse 17, “thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty. Thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness.” God made him so beautiful it went to his head.

You know I’ve seen so many humans. They suddenly are promoted and they get a higher office in the Work of God—it goes to their head. And do you know that half of those that have been raised and elevated to the highest rank in God’s Church – to that of evangelist – half of them have either gone out, or been put out of God’s Church! They couldn’t take it! They didn’t endure to the end. In fact I think some of them had never admitted they were wrong in the first place. Of course, God knows; I don’t.

Satan’s Method:

But the very fact of what you read here in Ezekiel 28 means God had NOT completed the creation of the angels UNTIL THEY THEMSELVES had decided. And this Lucifer let this brightness go to his head. He let envy and jealousy come into him. Now all of his angels followed him, and that was a third of the angels. Now they didn’t each one independently think of it; because we find that, when he had turned, Lucifer became Satan—and Satan is a deceiver. He deceived all of the world; well, he deceived his own angels. And I feel that he could not have done that just in one 24-hour day. He probably—he’s very cunning, very subtle—so he came to them as an angel of light, as he always pretends to be. Little by little he got them to thinking that maybe God wasn’t quite fair. God had given Lucifer and these angels only this little Earth down here, and the whole Universe is a pretty big place! Even in our own solar system, look at the larger planets, Jupiter, Saturn, other planets bigger than the earth—and a lot of other planets. And God was still ruling all of that and all of the other galaxies, millions and millions of times more of them. And the very fact that he said to Eve “Didn’t God hold something back? He didn’t give you all of the trees in the garden, did He?”

Well, you see, he'd been using that same psychology on his angels. "God didn't give you everything; He held something back!" He got them to be a little bit envious, a little bit jealous, and finally a little resentful—until they turned against God and were willing to be formed into an army to swoop up into heaven and try a coup and take over the Throne of the whole universe from God and rule the whole universe. But they got cast back down to earth; and Lucifer became Satan the Devil, and his angels became demons.

Now they're immortal. Now once their character was complete and they had to have their part in it, and once they had made their part of the decision, their character was complete. And once their character was complete, well, I tell you what it makes me think of. It's like our pouring cement. At first, it's sort of unfinished. When we pour it, it's fairly thick; but it's still somewhat liquid. Men can walk down in it and splash it around, but in a few hours it hardens. It dries and hardens. And once it hardens, it becomes very hard; and maybe it's not permanent. Over enough thousands of years, cement wears. But, for the time being, it is very hard. Now once angels made their DECISION – once their creation was complete – THEY ARE SPIRIT AND THEIR SPIRIT IS COMPLETE! THEY ARE COMPLETED SPIRITS AND THEY CANNOT CHANGE. SATAN CAN NEVER CHANGE. And God can't be born as an angel, and redeem the angels and redeem Satan. Or, if He can, it certainly is not revealed that I've found any place in the Bible. And apparently they're going to have to go on in their own wretched minds—that they have set themselves to, that they have chosen of their own free will – knowing the other side and knowing better. They had never sinned in the first place. They just went into sin deliberately. They knew (they had great minds) and they had the knowledge. (How long they had existed before they sinned we aren't told; but apparently it was a long, long time.)

Man Is A Living Soul

Now then, after they had sinned, God formed man after His own image. But how did He form man? Go back again to Genesis and in verse

Genesis 1:26 [God said], *Let us make man after our image, after our likeness,*

But what did He form man of? Not spirit like angels.

Genesis 2:7 [just across the page in my Bible] *And the [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground [not out of spirit like He had angels, but of the dust of the ground] and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and man [the dust of the ground] became a soul.*

Now there is living matter; but that doesn't mean it's permanent, like spirit. It's only temporary. And he became a temporarily living piece of matter; he became a living soul. But a soul is material. It came out of the ground. It's not spiritual; it's not eternal. And God said to that soul, "If you take of the Tree of Revealed Knowledge and of the Love of God, that will give you the love to fulfill the Law which He will reveal," then he would become immortal; but he was not made immortal. Again, his creation was complete physically, but his creation was complete only physical, physically [{2}](#).

Man Is Incomplete

Now physically he was made incomplete, though, at the start. Let me go back on that. God's purpose was for him to multiply and replenish the earth—in other words, to reproduce. But the man alone could not reproduce. I've mentioned this a number of times. So God had to take a rib from him and make a woman. And now he was complete. The two became one. They became one flesh. And they could reproduce, and they did; and they had a son. His name was Cain. They reproduced again and had another son. His

name was Abel. But they didn't follow God's Way. They didn't want to follow God's Law. They didn't teach Cain God's Law or God's Way. So Cain became the first murderer and perhaps the first human liar, although Satan gave the first lie.

Now they were also mentally incomplete and they were spiritually incomplete. God gave them a mind that animals do not have. In order to do that, God put one spirit—a human spirit—in Adam. And God so formed Adam that, in every human born, a human spirit would come into that human. Now that spirit is no part of the human. It's just something in him, that leaves him at death, and it is something that imparts the power of intellect to a physical brain. The human physical brain is no better than an animal brain, but it can do a lot of things an animal brain can't because of that spirit that is there. But mentally it's only half there. It has only one spirit. To have a full mind it needs another spirit, the Holy Spirit of God. And it can't receive spiritual knowledge. So it was spiritually incomplete too. It had one spirit all right, and that gave it spirit, so the spirit in it can come to have spiritual attitudes of malice, of resentment, of hatred, of competition and strife, of rebellion, of vanity, of greed, lust. Oh, it can have all of that! But it, of itself, does not know how to have Godly love. It does not know how to have love toward others.

The Two Trees

So that gets into the Two Trees, which I've spoken on so much now for about a year and a half. Now one of those trees meant God-revealed knowledge and attitude. And, of course, if he took of that, that was the Tree of Life and that would give him God-Life and even that God-Life would come in the dual stages. First in this life, with the Holy Spirit, and secondly through a resurrection he would come into complete spirit being. Now then, the second tree was a tree of Self-devised knowledge and attitude. Now God

made him and created him with ability to deal with matter, as I've said so many times, and material things. But also he had the ability to come to a certain spiritual attitude, but not the attitude of God's Love; because it takes the love of God shed abroad in our hearts to pour out from us in that kind of love, and Adam was not made with that. So he was made incomplete. Again, God starts His creation incomplete and then has to be finished later as He goes along.

Now why did God make him mortal? Why did He make him of matter, instead of spirit? Well, if man chose the wrong Way, if he did the wrong Way, he could change; he could repent and **MATTER CAN CHANGE!** Matter can be changed; it's always changing any way. Spirit cannot. Once the angels made the wrong choice, and their creation was complete, they can never change. They're always going to be evil – forever – and they have immortality and will exist for ever.

Results Of Adam's Decision:

Now with Adam, it's just as if He had asked Adam, "Would you like to take over the rulership of this whole universe?" And he could have taken it over from Satan, but he made the wrong decision. He made a decision just like Satan had made, but the decision that man made can be changed because he's mortal, because he's made out of matter. Now then, at the time Adam made that decision, four things happened. I've taken a lot of time to go over these four things; I'll just mention it real quickly.

At that time (as you read in Revelation 13:8) Christ, as the Lamb of God, it was decreed then and arranged in God's plan, that He would be slain in due time, the Lamb of God, slain from the foundation of the world. The foundation of the world began when Adam made that decision.

Now it was also decreed at that time, and God decreed it, that it was appointed that man, then, should DIE, but after that the judgment. And that

there should be a resurrection and God ordained that man, if he made this mistake, everyone who ever had lived was going to be resurrected or as you read in First Corinthians 15.

***1 Corinthians 15:22** As in Adam all die, so in Christ shall all [the same ALL] be made alive, but every man in his own order. [Now Christ became human, and He was the first to be resurrected, immortal, 1951 years ago.] Afterwards they that are Christ's [I hope that includes us, brethren] at Christ's coming*

And then after that two more resurrections are to come, as you read in the twentieth chapter of Revelation.

Then, another thing happened, you read in Genesis 3:22-24 [{3}](#), God closed the Holy Spirit so man can't, just of his own accord, go in and take the Holy Spirit—not unless God decides to give it to him.

This World Founded:

Now then, that founded this world – under those conditions. And this world was founded. It started. As I say, the first son born killed his own brother and then lied to God about it, and man started out in violence. Now notice how things continued from then. Chapter 6 in Genesis,

***Genesis 6:1** And it came to pass when men began to multiply on the face of the earth and daughters were born unto them [skip down to verse]*

***Genesis 6:5-6** And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. (6) And it repented God that he had made him on the earth, and it grieved him in his heart. [Then we read further in verse]*

***Genesis 6:11** The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled violence and God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was*

corrupt; and all flesh [ALL flesh] had corrupted his way upon the earth.

Now God had given them a temporary existence and, up till that time, they were living about 900 years of life. Now God found Noah; Noah found favour in God's sight and he was perfect in his physical generations, and God chose Noah to save humanity alive.

So why did God kill all of those people? I want to come on a little further before I answer that question. Man's temporary existence was cut off of all of them, as I say, except eight people, and He started the world all over again. Why did God allow carnal life for the 6000 years? Why didn't God cut human life off at the time of Adam? Why has He allowed carnal people to go on and yet the Holy Spirit SHUT OFF FROM THEM SO THEY CAN'T BE CONVERTED? And God's purpose is the creation of CHARACTER, and God's purpose is to REPRODUCE HIMSELF OUT OF US, out of man. Why did He allow people to go on, and no salvation was offered to them?

Mr. Armstrong's Experience

I think my own experience shows a little of the reason. I've thought about that a great deal, brethren. Why did God allow people, and give them no chance of salvation, what has that got to do then, what has human life through these 6000 years up to now, what does that have to do with creating righteous, holy, perfect, spiritual character within us?

I look back at my own experience. It came to me one night, just as I was preparing for bed and for sleep, I was thinking on these things and I began to think that God was somehow dealing into my life and with me, before my conversion. Now my conversion didn't take place until I was 34 years of age. I had been what I thought was quite successful in this world and then God had taken every bit of that away from me. God had caused, in the flash depression of 1920, my clients, from whom all of my income derived, to go

into receivership and those who had any money invested lost what they had and all of the officers of the companies were removed. Now, that included, Goodyear Tire and Rubber Company. That included the JI Case Plough Works. That included John Deere and Company. They were my clients. They all went. The name went on – the companies still exist today. But I went down and lost everything at the same time those great corporations did, because my income came from them.

But you know, I have thought many times, that the experience I had in those years prior to age 34 when God struck me down into poverty after I had been successful—I had made what today would be a third of a million dollars a year, when I was only 28 years of age, and I don't think many young men have made that much money in this world. I had an office in the Loop of Chicago for seven years and I was quite successful, if I may say so; I was cocky and conceited and I had to get rid of that. I had to find that I was nothing but a burned out hunk of junk, and I had to find if I was going to ever amount to anything at all or accomplish anything, I had to just yield and let Christ do it in me, not do it myself. I couldn't take any credit either.

But my experience was a lot like the Apostle Paul's, in principle (not in kind, but in principle only) and I had found—now the things that I learned then have had a great deal to do with the building of this Church and this Work. A number of things are responsible for the building of this Work of God and this Church. But of them I would say that my writing, and the experience that I had in learning and coming into writing ability—and a certain kind of writing—has had perhaps more to do than any other one thing with the building of this Work. It was—God was preparing me for what I have done after He got hold of my life and after I gave it over to Him. Also, public speaking, I had had quite a little experience in speaking to groups of business men in my earlier life. I had pioneered in making surveys and investigations to determine public opinion – like the Gallup Polls and those today; I was the

one who originated all of that. Maybe you didn't know it, brethren, but the first time that was done appeared in a national magazine in the year of 1915 and it's all developed since then. One of the largest advertising agencies, and I believe it was the largest in the country, it was NW Ayer and Company, saw that article that was published in this national magazine; and they began making such surveys. And later it's become a thing. Today we have a Gallup Poll, a Harris Poll, the *Los Angeles Times* takes polls; the *New York Times* take their polls, and all kinds of polls are being taken—and really they don't know as much about it as they think they do!

Then I look at the experience of the Apostle Paul and how God prepared him during his carnal life, when he was going exactly the wrong direction, for what he was going to do later. Now I want to go into that and show you why God has let us be carnal, and let this world go for 6000 years, cut off from His Spirit.

There are alcoholic cures for alcoholics and tobacco cures—that they have a type of treatment that you can call “Aversion Therapy”. In other words, they make you so sick of alcohol that if you take the slightest drop it makes you sick, you can't stand it. You're so sick of it, and you've come to despise it so much, you don't ever want to do it again! And, you know, I think that, in a sense, is the same principle that God is using, Aversion Therapy.

There Is Some Good In This World:

Now all in this world is not evil. There is some good in this world, believe it or not. It's not righteous in God's sense of the Holy Spirit, and yet there is morality of a certain kind. There's too much immorality too! But I was reared by honest and completely moral people, and there are morals even in this world's religions. Now take the Protestant religions, the fundamentalist Protestants. They have a certain amount of God's Truth of the Bible, but there's so much they don't have too. So that they just don't have

God's Truth. They have a little of it. But some little that they have is good.

I had another broadcast, I don't know whether it's been aired or not, of how there is some good. For example, there is singing and there's been dancing that is good. David sang and danced. He danced to the glory of God, got criticized for it by his wife too. But God didn't praise her for that; rather He took away the ability of child-bearing from her as a result of it. But David sang so many songs that one whole Book of the Bible is composed of the words of his songs, called Psalms, and most of our songs that we sing are from the Psalms, quoted right out of the Bible. So there's a kind of singing and there are certain things of taking human talents and abilities and of excelling in them. Now this Auditorium we turn over to share with the whole public of Southern California what they can enjoy. They wouldn't enjoy coming in to hear this sermon today, I'm sure. They'd say "Oh, no thank you. We don't want to hear anything about God!" But they will come in here to hear some very beautiful music. Now in just a few days they're going to hear the Vienna Symphony Orchestra on this stage. Then a few days later they're going to hear, what I think is generally recognized as the greatest and finest orchestra in the world, the Berlin Philharmonic, conducted by Herbert Carrion. I know him. I've met him and met his wife, over in Germany. And I think he's considered the greatest conductor in the world. Now the choicest seats are being sold for \$50 a piece for that and we find that they're almost sold out, and we could have sold for at least – they'll be here for four performances – and two of them we could have sold out four or five times, especially when they play Beethoven's *Fifth Symphony*.

So there are good things. There are some good things in this world. It's not all evil and yet man essentially is an evil thing because he is carnal—and the carnal mind is hostile against God, is not subject to the Law of God, neither indeed can be. Now take the experiences that did happen. God called a nation. They were carnal; they didn't have His Holy Spirit. He never gave

them His Holy Spirit, but He did show them His Way of Life. He did show them the Way of Righteousness. They didn't really follow it. They did a lot of things that were wrong. But turn over for the moment to the tenth chapter of First Corinthians and let's begin now with the first verse.

***I Corinthians 10:1** Moreover, brethren, I would not that you should be ignorant, of how all our fathers [that's Ancient Israel] were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea [now dropping down to verse seven]*

***I Corinthians 10:6-7** Now these things were our examples, to the intent that we should not lust after evil things as they also lusted. (7) Neither be you idolaters, as they were some of them, as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink and rose up to play. [And then, let me see let's continue on with verses 11 and 12]*

***I Corinthians 10:11-12** Now all these things happened to them for examples and they are written for OUR admonition [that's in the Church, those of us who are called and are building God's type of character] for our examples upon whom the ends of the world are come. (12) Therefore let him who thinks he stands, take heed lest he fall. [I'd better add that too! We need to know that also.]*

So there was a reason. They were writing something. We learn by experience. An alcoholic perhaps learns something by his alcoholism. Once he gets sick of it, he never wants to return to it again. And WE'VE GOT TO BECOME SO SICK, SO FED UP WITH THIS WORLD, WE NEVER WANT ANY MORE OF IT AGAIN! That's God's purpose. Now that never happened to Lucifer and the angels. Don't misunderstand. I don't mean to say that it was necessary for us to commit sin in order to get righteous – far from that – I didn't say that at all. But I want you to notice that there has been some purpose in it and we have to make our own decision.

Apostle Paul's Experience

Now if you turn to the ninth chapter of the book of Acts, I want you to notice a little about Paul's experience. In the first two verses (his name originally was Saul),

Acts 9:1-2 And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord [and he had actually consented wholly to the stoning to death of Stephen, the martyrdom of Stephen, and] he went unto the high priest (2) And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues that if he found any of this way [that's Christ's Way], whether they were men or women that he would bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

He was going after them to make them prisoners, to have them punished, he was fighting, breathing slaughter against God's people and Christianity and the Work of God. Now come to verses six and seven—well, he was struck down on the way, as he journeyed to Damascus he saw a great light and he was struck down blind

Acts 9:4-5 And he fell to the earth [this is verse 4] fell to the earth and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? (5) And he said, [Well] Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

When he heard a voice saying, after he'd been struck down, "I am Jesus" that really hit him; that really shocked him. And then they carried him on to Damascus. But God spoke to a man in Damascus, Ananias, and He said, see,

Acts 9:15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way [he was told to meet Saul when he came and to baptize him] Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me.

Now, notice, Saul didn't choose it himself; he didn't volunteer. He didn't just decide he'd get converted. Christ called him; Christ struck him down; Christ said "I have CHOSEN him."

Do you realize, brethren, that God has chosen each one of you? Or you couldn't have come, if he hadn't sent His Holy Spirit to draw you. He chose you and drew you – but there are MILLIONS UPON MILLIONS UPON HUNDREDS OF MILLIONS of others in the world He has never drawn; He has not chosen. You're just one out of many hundreds of thousands, probably, that God has called and that's the responsibility on you.

Acts 9:15-16 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way for he is a chosen vessel unto me to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel. [And I believe I've become a chosen vessel for this time, in the same way, and I, too, have had to go before kings and people all over the world.] (16) For I will show him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake.

And I learned, at my time of conversion, that if I gave myself over to Christ and if I set out to let Him lead my life from now on, that I would suffer much persecution. I didn't know what or how much; I didn't dream of how much. But I did count the cost and I said "OK, I will be willing." And now it comes, I have to be willing. Now I have to be willing. My life has been threatened and there's been a great deal of persecution.

Now I'd like to turn to the seventh chapter of Romans [4](#) and verses 12 on, where Paul said,

Romans 7:12-15 Wherefore the law [the law of God, a spiritual law of love] is holy, and the commandment is holy, and just and good. (13) Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might APPEAR sin [so that I'd recognize it and know that it is sin] working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might be

exceeding sinful. (14) For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under death. (15) For that which I do I allow not: and that which I would, that do I not.

Now he wanted to do the Will of God, the Law of God. He had been converted now. This is Paul after he was converted. First I read you his experience before conversion. Before conversion Paul had become quite a scholar. He was highly educated at the foot of Gamaliel, the greatest teacher of the time. And he had an experience that now God could TURN HIM AROUND TO GO THE OTHER DIRECTION and Paul could be of great service.

So what he learned in his carnality was of great value once God changed his direction, put His Holy Spirit in him, gave him a different attitude altogether.

Romans 7:15-18 *That which I do I allow not: for that which I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. [Are you like that, brethren? I am.] (16) If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it [the law] is good. (17) Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. (18) For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing [the Holy Spirit of God dwelling in him was good, but not in his flesh] for to will is present with me.*

To will, to even do the Way of the Law of God; and still he didn't always do it! Now this is after Paul was converted! Paul was still committing sin; Paul was still doing that which was wrong. He didn't want to, he didn't mean to. With his mind he wanted to go the other way, so he said

Romans 7:18-25 *For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwells no good thing; but to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. (19) For the good that I would [which I want to do] I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. [So do you, brethren, and so do I and*

so does every Christian.] (20) *Now ...it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me. (21) I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. (22) For I delight in the law of God after the inward man [that's what he wanted to do; he didn't hate the law of God, he delighted in it]. (23) But I see another law in my members warring against the law of my mind [which is God's Law] and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. (24) O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from this body of death? (25) I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord [in other words, I am thankful that it is God through Jesus Christ that will deliver me]. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.*

Then he went on.

Romans 8:1 *Therefore there is now no condemnation to them which are IN Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.*

Then he comes down to the seventh verse,

Romans 8:7-9 *Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be [and that is the way of all the world and has been for 6000 years] (8) So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. (9) But you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit IF so be that the Spirit of God dwells in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.*

Sitting in a seat here in this service doesn't make you a child of God. If the Spirit of God is not in you and guiding your life and your mind and your will and your whole desire and purpose and you're striving to overcome even though you find you occasionally do go the other way—unless that Spirit is in you and you're being led by the Spirit of God—you are not a Christian; you are none of His.

***Romans 8:11** But, [verse 11] if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from dead in you shall also quicken [or make immortal] your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwells in you.*

Now, let me just see how much time we have left; coming along OK I see. I may want to come back to the eighth chapter of Romans a little later if I have enough time.

Truth Of The Resurrection

Now Lucifer was sitting on God's throne, remember, before he turned the wrong way. He started out right, but he turned wrong. Lucifer had not sinned until he was given the responsibility and kingship on the throne of the Earth. He's still on that throne, by the way, even though he now is Satan. Well, man started making the wrong choice at the very beginning. Man started out wrong and let Satan make him make his first decision the wrong way. Once Lucifer had made the decision, his creation was complete; and, being SPIRIT, IT CAN'T BE CHANGED. Once man made the decision, being mortal, HE CAN BE CHANGED because he's made of matter and matter can be changed. And Christ could come in matter and become human like us and live a perfect life in our stead, and die in our stead to pay the penalty in our stead that we have incurred; we then can be resurrected. And that's why God made His plan, that it was appointed to all men once to die, but after this the judgment. All will die in Adam, but in Christ they will all be made alive. Brethren, let me tell you, in the churches of this world, of Christianity, you DON'T HEAR MUCH ABOUT THAT. They only talk about going to heaven or hell; they don't talk about the resurrection. And I believe that I should put on the air now, in the broadcast that goes out over the world, the fifteenth chapter of First Corinthians about the resurrection. I tell you the person (the average church-goer) in a so-called Christian church

knows practically nothing about the resurrection. They just think that you go either to heaven or hell when you die.

Man Is Being Given Aversion Therapy:

Man was started on the wrong way. Man is being given a great dose of aversion therapy. You see what I mean? We have got to come to the place where OUR STOMACH'S SO FULL OF THE ROTTENNESS OF THIS WORLD WE DON'T WANT ANY OF IT; WE WANT TO VOMIT IT UP. And I don't know anyone who wants to go out and swallow up his own vomit again.

Why is God going to allow the Great Tribulation to come? It's a time of trial and testing, a final trial and testing. And men are going to get so sick of this world and of its way, so fed up with it (just to use a little modern slang) that they never want to return to it again. That they never want to return to it again.

Turn to First John. First, the first chapter, and it's speaking to us in the Church here,

I John 1:1 That which we have seen and heard declare we [and it speaks of our fellowship being with the Father and with Jesus Christ, speaking of Christians, and later he says]

I John 1:8-9 If we say that we have no sin [we in the Church] we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. [I just read you how the Apostle Paul, one of the greatest Christians that ever lived, was not always doing what he really wanted to do, following the Law of God. He found himself going the wrong way once in a while, but when he did, now here's what you must do. I found since I was converted that without realizing it I was just letting myself go the wrong way once in a while, caught off-guard.] (8) If we say that we have no sin [we Christians] we deceive ourselves. IF WE

CONFESS OUR SINS [IF WE ADMIT WE'RE WRONG – THAT'S SO HARD FOR PEOPLE TO DO, admit they're wrong. Brethren you have to admit you're wrong, whenever you go wrong. I ADMIT I HAVE GONE WRONG SINCE I WAS CONVERTED. Do you? Now, IF WE ADMIT IT.]
(9) IF WE CONFESS OUR SINS He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us of all unrighteousness.

But to admit it, you have to confess it and want to turn away from it and ask God to help you turn away from it and He will certainly do it, because His mercy is greater toward us than the heavens are high above the earth. And it's going to take a great deal of admitting we're wrong, brethren, before we ever get into God's Kingdom.

Now then, let's go right on over to the third chapter,

I John 3:1-2 Behold, what manner of love the Father has bestowed on us [that's in verse one] that we should be called the sons of God. (2) *Beloved, now are we the sons of* [we already are the sons of] *God and it does not appear yet what we shall be* [that is, what we shall be can't be seen yet, it isn't visible, it doesn't appear] *what we shall be, but we know that when he shall appear* [at the Second Coming of Christ] *we shall be like him, we shall see him as he is.*

We won't look like we do now. We won't have the same colour of face as we do now. Maybe our eyes will be just like His then, like flames of fire; and our faces like the sun in full strength. And then you read on down to verse nine, "whoever is born of God." Now that which is born of the flesh IS FLESH, that which is born of the Spirit IS SPIRIT; and, when we are born of God, we will BE Spirit. You won't be flesh; you won't have a heart pumping blood any longer; you won't have to breathe air to live.

I John 3:9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin for God's seed [his seed meaning God there, as the antecedent of 'his'] *remaineth in*

him [in man, the man born again] and he CANNOT SIN because he is born of God.

In other words, once you become spirit, you are no longer flesh; you become spirit, and spirit doesn't change, and then you won't be able to sin. Now Satan finished his creation in the wrong way and he can never change. God can never change. He is righteous; it's impossible for God to sin. It was not impossible for Jesus to sin, because he was in human flesh and he was tempted in all points like we are—yet without sin—just like it's possible for us to sin. But once we have gone through this experience (once we have learned from our experience and we've gone through this aversion therapy and we get fed up enough with this world and we don't want anymore of it), God will make us in a condition of spirit where we can't sin. God speed that day!

I am getting so sick of sin that I want to be at the place where I can't sin anymore. I hope you do too, brethren. I hope you do too.

Relax In God's Hands

Finally, just a word here from the eleventh chapter of Romans, in verse 33,

***Romans 11:33** O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and the knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments and his ways past finding out!*

How wonderful are the Ways of God – clear beyond understanding. And the people of the world don't understand the things I've given you today, brethren. It's a wonderful thing.

But we're made mortal; we can be changed.

Now I overlooked some very important scriptures. One is how God is

the Potter and we are the clay and He can fashion and mold us; we are the work of His hands but we must submit. Now I had to take a little therapy. I had a very bad knee yesterday. And my left knee is heavily wrapped in wrapping today and I think it will be all right in another day or two now. But while the doctor who takes care of that type of thing was working on me, and I had a cartilage a little out of joint and he had to twist and jerk the leg and it was a little painful at the time, but I had to just relax. I had to relax in his hands. And that's what we must do in God's hands. We must relax and let God form and shape us His way and He will do it. I, years ago, used to take some osteopath treatments, and I learned that the osteopath couldn't do what he wanted to, in his twisting of my body and massaging and one thing and another, if I didn't just completely relax. And that's what we have to do in God's hands. And I tell you, what He has in store for us, people in this world have no idea! It is, well, it is not just fantastic; it is awesome and clear beyond any human understanding or realization now—The Awesome Human Potential.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said the wrong book of the Bible. The original reads: “Now we read back here, in the 28th chapter of Hebrews.”

[{2}](#) - Editorial note: A change has been made to keep Mr. Armstrong's obvious intent. The original reads: “And God said to that soul, “If you take of the wrong fruit, instead of taking of the Tree of Revealed Knowledge and of the Love of God, that will give you the love to fulfill the Law which He will reveal,” then he would become immortal; but he was not made immortal.”

[{3}](#) - Editorial note: At this point, Mr. Armstrong mentioned the wrong Bible book. The original reads: “Then, another thing happened, you read in Revelation 3 verses 22-24.”

{4} - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong corrected himself, and those changes were kept in the transcript. The original reads: “Now I’d like to turn to the eighth chapter of Acts, the seventh chapter really—the seventh chapter of Roman, I meant; and verses 12 on, where Paul said.”

United States Of Europe Is Coming

Sermon (November 27, 1982)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

United States Of Europe Is Coming.....	1286	Sunday Worship	1301
Meeting Heads Of State	1287	Gospel Not Preached For 1900 Years	1302
The Plain Truth – Ahead Of Its Time	1288	End Is At Hand	1303
Unification Delayed	1291	Satan On Earth’s Throne	1304
Daniel’s Vision	1292	The Four Beasts Of Daniel	1306
The Ten Toes	1293	The Great Whore	1308
Reunification Moves Forward	1295	The Final Resurrection	1311
Banner Headline News	1297	The Great Tribulation	1312
Brezhnev Dies	1299	The Mark Of The Beast	1317
Our Work Will End	1300		

Greetings, everybody. I just came back Monday night from a trip half way around the Earth and halfway back again. In other words, almost the farthest point away from Burbank Airport, where we garage our plane, to almost the farthest landing strip around the Earth from there that we can have. So it amounted to a trip around the world. And I am glad that Mr. Gene Hogberg gave you a rundown on that trip last night, so I won't have to take the time today. It was a marvelous trip and very, very successful in every way. However, I have really a very serious and a very important announcement for you this afternoon.

We've been talking about giving thanks, and we've had Thanksgiving Day. And I remember when I was just newly converted or being converted. I don't know whether I'd even been baptized yet. But I was attending different churches. I was looking into the Truth for the first time in my life. (This is about 55 1/2 years ago now.) I was attending a certain Baptist church one Sunday, and they had had a contest going on. They gave an award for the one that could answer the question the best—of what is the most prevalent sin, the

most often committed sin, the most widespread sin. I don't know how you would answer that question. I'm not sure I'd answer it even the same way. But, anyway, a young woman won the prize by saying that the most prevalent sin is **ingratitude**, failing to be thankful for what you have; and certainly it's a sin that just about everybody commits.

Now it happens that I sort of begin my prayers regularly by giving thanks. I'm not sure that's just the way it ought to be, but I don't think it's a wrong way. But Jesus gave us a sample prayer. I want to mention that. And He didn't say give thanks the first thing. He might have, because it certainly is right. But the sample prayer He gave was "*Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name,*" exalting the name of God. In a sense that is giving thanks; and giving thanks is hallowing God's name, because you are giving thanks to Him.

But the next thing He said to pray "*Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth, as it is in heaven.*" Now, brethren, we should be praying for that: **"*THY KINGDOM COME.*" I have news for you. God's Kingdom is a lot nearer than we thought when I left on this trip.**

Meeting Heads Of State

I learned a number of things in Europe. In Europe I talked with heads of government, especially in Athens and in Spain. I had a very fine meeting with the king of Spain, King Juan Carlos, whom I had met eight years before when he was the Crown Prince; and he was very glad to see me again. And in fact, when he heard that I was coming, he personally gave orders that we were not to be questioned. We didn't need to show passports. Our whole party just walked off the plane, came through a VIP lounge into the cars that were waiting. No questions, no formalities, no anything. And the king personally asked me if they had taken care of his order. He was checking up on them,

and they certainly did.

Well, I had a very enjoyable forty minutes with him. He's a man that dictator Franco had selected to succeed him. And, shortly after Franco died, he was made king; and is now the head of state in Spain. But both there and in Athens I learned that the very thing that I had been proclaiming for the last almost 50 years—that I put on the air up to 48, 49 years ago—is just about to happen, and very possibly within the coming year.

I want to tell you a little more about it, and that is the coming of the United States of Europe. Now, brethren, you've heard me mention that time and again. And I think that perhaps we don't realize what **a pivotal thing** that is in world history, and what it means to us especially. Well I can tell you now that the whole world is soon going to be **ROCKED WITH ASTONISHMENT AND AMAZEMENT** when they find that, possibly within a year now, there is **a new super nation** (a new super power, possibly greater than the Soviet Union or the United States) that has gone together in Europe: the prophesied resurrection of the so-called Medieval Holy Roman Empire—the United States of Europe.

The Plain Truth – Ahead Of Its Time

Now, the very first issue of “The Plain Truth” was published in February 1934. It came out right on the 1st of February, 1934. That is practically 49 years ago, just almost 49 years ago. I'd like to read you what I said. Now I wonder if you could see it on the screen? I think we have it; and you can see a copy of the front page of that issue of “The Plain Truth,” and I believe they have it ready to show you on the screen. (Pause) Well, I don't know if you can see it very well or not. Anyway, I would like to read to you some of the things that were in that. I haven't read it myself for several years. I have seen it. I've seen copies of it. We have a number of copies around. It's

been reprinted a number of times. I was rather astonished when I once again read what I had written there, very close to 50 years ago. In just a couple of months, three months, it'll be 49 years.

Well, the heading is: “Is a World Dictator About to Appear?”

“Will it be Mussolini, Stalin, or Roosevelt? (Now, Mussolini and FDR were both in office at that time. It continues:) Everybody senses that something is WRONG with the world...that some mighty event is about to occur [{1}](#). What is it? Bible prophecy tells! Here is a solemn warning...and it is the plain truth!

We live today in the most strenuous, anxious, momentous hours [{2}](#) of the earth's history.

Today we stand on the very threshold of colossal events that will stagger the mind of mortal man. Just now it is like the lull before a great and devastating storm. Everyone senses it!”

Then there was a subhead: “The Lust for World Power.”

“Ever since the Pharaohs ruled in Egypt—on down thru ancient Assyria, Babylon, Persia, Greece and Rome—on to Napoleon, and then the Kaiser (And then to the time that I was writing, when Mussolini was in office.)—there has been a lust for power to rule the world. ...

It is commonly known today that Mussolini's whole aim is to restore the ancient Roman Empire (That is, the resurrection of the Holy Roman Empire. Now, this is nearly 49 years ago that I wrote this.) in all of its former splendor, power and glory—and Rome ruled the world!”

Now, as a matter of fact, it was about that time that Mussolini proclaimed he had done that very thing. He had taken, along about that time, an expedition down to Ethiopia; and had conquered Ethiopia with his air

forces. I had remarked at the time in many of the sermons I was preaching, and the broadcasts on the air, that this time in prophecy it said he would “*pass over*” whereas before his predecessor had passed through; and passing over meant in the air.

Anyway, he had conquered Ethiopia. He added that to Italian Somaliland (which he already had), and Eritrea, and Italy; and had made a concordant with the Vatican. So once again there’s the union of church and state, although it wasn’t a real union; but he proclaimed he had renewed the Roman Empire. Now I am going to read you, if I have time a little later, in the 8th verse of the 17th chapter of Revelation, that very thing. It was “*the beast that was, and is not, and yet is*” at that time.

Now continuing, I wrote: “Today Prime Minister MacDonalD...” (He chuckles.) That’s funny. That’s before your time, most of you. But he was the Prime Minister of England at that time.

“...Prime Minister MacDonalD of Great Britain and President Roosevelt are striving frantically to avert, or postpone, the impending next world war (World War II had not yet come. For the next world war...)—while the nations prepare even more feverishly for WAR!

Three or four short years ago many laughed and scoffed when we [{3}](#) said that there would be another world war in five to seven years. They do not laugh and scoff today. Everyone KNOWS the next world war is coming, and SOON.”

And it did come in 1939, and this was written... I mean, wait a minute, 19—. This was written in 1934; and world war came in 1939, just five years after I wrote that. So once again “The Plain Truth,” even in its first issue, was way ahead of its time. It was predicting what was going to happen. People scoffed and said, “That’s a crackpot. He doesn’t know what he is talking about.” But World War II did happen. It did come.

Now, however, the reunion of Europe: Mussolini didn't have a real reunion of Europe, and what he had didn't last. It was just that (as you read in the 8th verse of the 17th chapter of Revelation) which was, and was not, and yet it was. And the announcement was on the inside of newspapers at the time. It didn't even make page one. It was not considered a great world event, but it did fulfill a prophecy nonetheless.

Unification Delayed

But now, why the delay? I have known for years (and you have heard me proclaim again, and again, and again) that the United States of Europe is coming. They are going to unite—ten nations in Europe; and the Vatican will be on top of the heap. Why has it not happened? Forty-nine years have gone by. At last I can tell you that it is. All the pieces are falling into place now, all of a sudden.

Well, in Europe there are many nations. They speak different languages. They are divided by various languages. They are divided by different national aspirations, and national patriotisms, and by different currencies. They have the German mark, the French franc, the English pound, and the lira in Italy, and the peso (or whatever it is) in Spain. They have different kinds of currency, different kinds of money.

Now they have gotten together in an economic system. That's been going on now for a good many years—the EEC, or the European Economic Community. But that is only something that knocks down tariff barriers for the international trade among the nations of Europe. Now what they want is **political** union. What they want is one **military force**. What they want is one great world **power**; and, actually, they are right on the borderline of the Soviet Union.

Now, we are a long ways from Russia; and we are fearing the Soviet

Union. The two great powers in the world are the Soviet Union and the United States—the Union of Soviet Socialist Republic and the United States; and we are really fearing Russia. Let me say right here: I know of no prophecy in the Bible that speaks specifically of any war between Russia and the United States; and I have been saying for years and years that is not the way that World War III will come.

However, let me say that the resurrection of this so-called Holy Roman Empire that existed from 554 on to 1814 in Europe WILL TRIGGER World War III—the **nuclear** World War III that is going to DESTROY OUR MAJOR CITIES. I MEAN DESTROY THEM! One third of our people are going to be **killed**. Another third are going to **die of famine and pestilence**, according to Ezekiel's prophecies. And the third remaining are going to be taken as **slaves** into other nations and moved out of this country.

Now this thing coming is going to IMMEDIATELY TRIGGER all of that. I don't know, maybe that doesn't mean anything to you, brethren. But, I want to tell you, it had better; because now it's really going to happen, and soon. We are getting very, very close to it.

Daniel's Vision

Now, they have even been divided in religion. The Roman Catholic Church was on top of the heap from 1954. Actually the old Roman Empire had succeeded the Greco-Macedonian Empire, which had succeeded the Persian Empire, which had succeeded the ancient Babylonian or the Chaldean Empire that goes back to 604 BC–604-585 BC, the first world empire. God had given Nebuchadnezzar, who had put that empire together, a message that GOD had given him his seat, and power, and authority. And through the prophet Daniel, God had told Nebuchadnezzar that He ruled everything; and He had given Nebuchadnezzar, the gentile king, a chance and

an opportunity to yield to God and to let God really rule him and his empire.

I don't know what might have happened if Nebuchadnezzar had done it. But Nebuchadnezzar did not do it; and, as a result, the empire was taken away from him. He was sent off for seven years, and he became like a wild man. Later his kingdom was restored to him. But his son denied God, and you remember there was the handwriting on the wall. His son, Belshazzar, in that very night the empire was overthrown... Darius the Mede came in and took it over. Then began the "*times of the Gentiles*." And Jerusalem has been "*trodden down of the Gentiles*" ever since, except that Judah is back over there for a time now.

Now, in 554... Well, the Roman Empire actually started before the Greco-Macedonian Empire had been swallowed up. It really started in 31 BC. But by before-the-time-of-Christ the Roman Empire was really ruling, you might say, the world. And in the days of the New Testament and the apostle Paul (the book of Acts), the Roman Empire was ruling. That lasted from 31 BC until 476 AD.

Then, it wasn't very much later, from 476 till 554... But in 554 Justinian, who was the emperor in the East at Constantinople... (Constantinople has been changed now to Istanbul. I have been there a couple of times, and it's the large capital in the East.) And it was the capital of the Empire in the East{4}. Now the Roman Empire had two capitals—one at Constantinople in the East, one at Rome in the West. That is pictured by the great image in the 2nd chapter of Daniel, the dream that Nebuchadnezzar had that the prophet Daniel interpreted for him. The two legs of that image were the Roman Empire; and it was the divided Empire, both East and West.

The Ten Toes

Now, in time sequence, it came clear down to the feet and toes. And it

says... Let me just read that to you for a second. It's back here in Daniel, 2nd chapter and verse 44, just the tail end—after Daniel had explained this dream to the gentile king, Nebuchadnezzar. And he saw a great stone, not in human hands but as a miracle from God, come down out of the sky and smite the image on the feet and toes (on the ten toes) and destroy them. Those ten toes are the ten divisions of ten nations that are going to form the United States of Europe now, that is coming together right now; and here's what you read. Verse 44:

Daniel 2:44 *And in the days of these kings [Now, half of them were in Eastern Europe and half in West. That's the thing I want you to notice.] ... the God of heaven [shall] set up a kingdom which shall... not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever.*

That'll be the Kingdom of God. In other words, it is the time of the second coming of Christ; and, brethren, we are getting just that close to it. Now, for the first time, I can tell you that. I've never been able to tell you that before. I can't say now that this is going to go...the pieces will all fall together, and it will actually come into being within a year; but it very possibly may. And there are reasons to believe that the Vatican is setting next year as the year. They are setting next year as a certain year of reunification in Europe, and the whole Catholic Church is proclaiming that.

Well, I want to go on a little bit further. Now even the religion has been divided. We have had the Eastern Orthodox Catholic Church and, of course, the Roman Catholic Church in Rome; and the religion has continued to be divided down to now. Now many of the political leaders, while they want a political union in Europe, they have all these things to overcome—the various languages, different nationalities, different patriotisms, everything of that kind; but then the religion is divided. Now many of the leaders, the political leaders over there, don't want religion to have anything to do with it. They'd

rather religion would stay out, but they cannot bring themselves together. And the Pope of Rome knows that, and he made that very plain in his recent trip to Spain.

I didn't discuss that part of it, I purposely didn't, when I was talking with King Juan Carlos; but nevertheless we have a report on everything that the Pope said recorded in the press. Now the Eastern Orthodox Church has refused to go together with the Roman Church because the primary thing is they have rejected the papal supremacy. They have rejected the idea that the Pope has got to sit on top of the heap.

Reunification Moves Forward

And so now I would like to show you what we learned on this trip. I arrived in Athens. I had come up from South Africa and from Nairobi. And in Nairobi I had started a college with President Kenyatta, back a little over six years ago; and we had made a certain small contribution through the Ambassador Foundation. And then those congressmen in the Diet of Japan who consider themselves my Japanese sons, as they call themselves... There were eight originally, and now there are about fifteen who call themselves my Japanese sons; we have a lot of fun about that. But they got busy in the Japanese Diet and appropriated about 29 million United States dollars, or the equivalent in Japanese yen, for that college.

And now it is the Jomo Kenyatta College of Agriculture and Technology. And they built quite a college there. With 29 million dollars, they've been able to build quite a college. And they gave me quite a plaque, all carved in copper, as co-founder with President Kenyatta of that college. And it is quite a plant; they have many buildings, all new. They are not quite of the caliber of the buildings that we have here on the Ambassador College Campus, but they are new. They are ultra modern. They are very good. They

are less costly in construction. But they have a auditorium; they have an administration building; they have a big science hall; they have a big home ec hall for women. They have greenhouses with all kinds of plants and things growing, because it is an agricultural college as well as mechanical. And they even have an athletic track, and they have many things. I was given quite a welcome there and presented with, as I said, quite a plaque.

Now, I came on up to Athens. It was I think about a day before I arrived that the what-is-called, I think they call it, the European Parliament had had a meeting in Athens. Now the European Parliament is not official. But it's a body that has been elected, of leaders in Europe that are working for political union of Europe, trying to turn the Common Market (which is only economic in a matter of trade) into something that is political, monetary, military, everything as a super nation. They had had a meeting in Athens. And Mr. LaRavia had flown over and had arrived I think about two days before I, in Athens. And he attended this meeting, which occurred before I arrived.

Now here's what he wrote me about it, that I could use to give you and for The Plain Truth. This is the information and statements made by the Rotary president. And, by the way, I gave an address to the Rotary Club in Athens; and I found that the president that he speaks of here, who is, let's see... Well, anyhow, there were two very prominent men. Both had been reading The Plain Truth for a long time. And one of them is head of the big shipping concern over there that have freight ships going up and down the Mediterranean. It is quite a big concern. And the other one is head of the Olympiad Airlines, the National Airlines of Greece. And both of them have been reading The Plain Truth for some time.

So now let me read Mr. LaRavia's report. This is information and a statement made by the Rotary president: "Constantine R. Rengus, (Mr. LaRavia, if I mispronounce it, pardon me.) President, Hellenic Mediterranean Shipping Lines concerning the reunification of the Roman Catholic Church

and the Eastern Orthodox Church.”

Now, by the way, let me interrupt right there and say the last time I was in Jerusalem, the Patriarch of the Eastern Church at Jerusalem came to see me in my hotel suite. And he gave me what he considered the highest prize he could give, which was the cross of Constantine—Constantine the Great—which dates back to 325 AD, 325 years after Christ. And Constantine is the one you know who called the Nicene Council, and who practically dictated a lot of the doctrines of the Catholic Church. Constantine was the ruler of the empire at Constantinople, and Constantinople was named after him.

Well this cross, it is quite a good sized cross, it was hanging on my.... I think it is supposed to hang around your neck and hang down in front, and it would really show. It was of gold and quite decorative solid gold. And I was the 129th person to receive that award since 325 AD. So they consider it a very high honor because very few have ever received it. Anyway, I asked the Patriarch of the Eastern Church... He is the Patriarch at Jerusalem. He considers he's probably the highest man in the church, but I think generally the one at Athens is considered the highest. Nevertheless I asked him, "Do you think that there will be an Ecumenical movement so that the Eastern and the Roman Church will go together and be rejoined?" And the answer was, "We are praying for it."

Banner Headline News

Now here's what I learned on this trip, which I had never known before; and I think this is a banner headline news story.

The disagreement on the giving of the Holy Spirit (that's been a problem with them) has been resolved. The issue had been this: The Roman Catholic Church dogma concerning the Holy Spirit states that the Holy Spirit is given by both God and Jesus Christ. The Eastern Orthodox Church

contended that the Holy Spirit is only given by God the Father.

The Roman Catholic Church was willing to concede on this. Now the Roman Church conceded on that. Well, there was a little trade made. Now second:

The issue as to who will head the united church has already been resolved.

Now, that was news to me. The Eastern Orthodox Church has already agreed to accept a secondary position for the Patriarch (That's of the Eastern Church.) in deference to the Pope, so that the Pope will be on top of the heap, just as the Bible says exactly.

We only want (This is a quote. "We only want...") to have our input and impact. The Pope will be

the leader of the combined churches.

Now third:

The only disagreement that remains to be resolved is the infallibility of the Pope. "We can't buy that," they say in the East. "He is only a human being."

Well, let me say that it is my understanding that the Pope does not claim to be anything but a fallible human being. And their contention is that he does not claim to speak infallibly. Only when he speaks officially for the church, and he makes it known that it's like an encyclical, or an official pronouncement. And he does not make, apparently, such an official announcement without having consulted the heads of the Curia in Rome. And now they are the chief of course—the, the, oh the top men (I have that name in my mind. I don't know why words and names stick on my mind.)—Cardinals, that wear the red beanies on their back you know. Well, that's what they seem

to me. Anyway, the chief Cardinal, which is the highest office next to Pope.

It's something like in our Church. We have a number of the highest people here, in office next to Pastor General, are the evangelists. And we have a certain number of evangelists here at Headquarters. Now on the Advisory Council of Elders I have a number of the evangelists who are resident here in Pasadena. There are other evangelists that are resident in other parts of the world (England, and well I guess Canada, and other places) that would qualify perfectly to be on the Advisory Council; but they are just not as convenient, they are not handy.

We don't have a Curia however, but the Roman Catholic Church does. So my understanding is that the Pope does not speak infallibly—that is, to claim infallibility—except when he has checked it with his Curia. And I think that Rome will now make the concession that they will also listen to the top Greek officials before he makes any such pronouncements. But that won't be much of a give and take for him; and I am quite sure that'll be done, and I think it will be done very quickly.

Brezhnev Dies

Now something else has happened on this trip that is putting all these things right together. It's all of a sudden going together. And that is that, while I was in South Africa and I was having a meeting that night at the home of Dr. McCarthy; and they announced... (It sort of startled me, because I couldn't get my mind on much of anything else for that evening, because I could realize the very importance of it.) President Brezhnev of the Soviet Union had died, and we just got the news. They had held it up 24 hours; and this was just 24 hours later, when they made the announcement that day. And someone got the news there and told me that night.

Well, Brezhnev is gone; and Andropov, former head of their...well, the

same thing as our not Secret Service but FBI; and he's been a real tough guy, as they say. He is now President and has taken over everything that Brezhnev had, and he is starting out in a very tough manner. His speeches are very tough.

Now one of the great things that is urging Europe on, and perhaps the greatest thing that will cause them to hurry and get together on this, is their fear of what's going on in the Kremlin and the Soviet Union. And Andropov is frightening them, and that is going to rush them. They are losing confidence in the United States as having a military umbrella over them to protect them, and they want their own military force to protect themselves. That's the way they feel over there. Now that is a chief incentive to unite them and that is taking place.

Furthermore, while the Pope was in Rome... I don't mean Rome. I mean in Spain. The Pope just recently, just a short time before I was there, had made a tour of Spain; and it was a terrific tour. It's the first time that any Pope has ever visited Spain; and yet Spain is the most Catholic of all the Catholic countries, and was just 100% Catholic under... Oh, there again I had his name. I've mentioned it already. I can't think of it again now. The dictator that just died recently... (Franco.) Anyway this whole United States of Europe, when it goes together, is going to trigger nuclear World War III.

Our Work Will End

Now let me tell you what else it's going to do. It's going to **END OUR WORK! OUR WORK WILL BE THROUGH** of **getting the gospel to the world**. That is, very shortly after it goes into force and effect; because they will move in such a way that it will end it. And then I'll tell you what will happen. As you read here in Amos, the 8th chapter and verse 11 of Amos.

Amos 8:11 Behold, the days come, saith the Lord GOD, that I will send

a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, ...but of hearing the word of the LORD.

In other words, the gospel has not been preached for 1900 years. It didn't go to the world until I went on Radio Luxembourg, the first week in January of 1953—exactly one century of time cycles from the time the apostle Paul wrote to the Churches in Galatia that the gospel had been suppressed and was not being proclaimed any longer. Now I want to read you some of the things about that. Matthew 24. The disciples had asked Jesus:

Matthew 24:3 Tell us, when shall these be? [He'd been talking about the destruction of the temple, which did happen in 70AD.] and [something else] what will be the sign thy coming, and of the end of the world?

Now He went on to tell them that they should not be deceived, that many would come preaching **about** Him, coming **claiming** to be His ministers, come in His name, saying that Jesus is the Christ—and yet deceiving the world. How can they teach Christ and deceive people? How can they **believe** in Christ? How can they **accept** Christ, and still be deceived and lost? Well, Jesus said: *"In vain do they worship me."* You can even worship Christ all in vain. How? He said *"teaching for doctrines the commandments of men"* making the Law of God and the Commandments of God *"of no effect by your tradition."* They will not accept the commandments of God (neither the Protestant nor the Catholic Church).

Sunday Worship

A very prominent Cardinal of the Catholic Church, Cardinal Gibbons... This goes back about 60 or 70 years ago, but I remember it very well. He said, "You may search the Bible from beginning to end, and you cannot find one word authorizing Sunday worship. Everywhere the Bible enforces the Sabbath, Saturday. The only authority you have for Sunday is the authority of

the Roman Catholic Church. And you Protestants are bowing down to us—the Roman Catholic Church—and accepting our authority every Sunday morning.” It is. Sunday is the mark of the beast; and the Sabbath is the sign of God. And God made it a Sabbath Covenant for all eternity! (The 31st chapter of Exodus, verses 12 through 18.)

Now then, Jesus said **many** would come deceiving, preaching in His name; and they did, and they have up till now. They have not preached the gospel of the Kingdom, the gospel He preached. And finally, He got down to their second question about the sign of His coming. And He said:

Matthew 24:14 And this **gospel of the KINGDOM** shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and **THEN** shall the end come.

Gospel Not Preached For 1900 Years

Brethren, I wanted you to realize that Gospel was not preached for one thousand nine hundred years. Now, nineteen years is a time cycle. The sun, and the moon, and the Earth are set in conjunction to set off spaces of time. One revolution of the Earth measured by the sun is a 24-hour day. One revolution of the moon around the Earth is a lunar month. One revolution of the Earth around the sun is a solar year. So you see: the sun, the moon, and the Earth mark off days, months, and years—time. And they only come into conjunction exactly every nineteen years. So nineteen years is a time cycle.

God does things on time. And precisely a century of time cycles after the gospel was suppressed and not preached to the world, God raised up this Church to preach it through me—through the most powerful radio station in the world, Radio Luxembourg. And for nineteen years, and beginning precisely nineteen years before that... (** *Tape skips at 45:03.*)

Matthew 24:22 (Moffatt) And except those days [should] be shortened,

there should no flesh be saved alive.

In other words, humanity would be ERASED. There wouldn't be a MAN, WOMAN OR CHILD LEFT ALIVE IF GOD DIDN'T SUPERNATURALLY INTERVENE TO STOP IT BEFORE IT GOES THAT FAR. Now it's going to start, but it just isn't going to go that far. God will stop it before it gets that far.

You know it did happen once that God blotted out ALL the lives except eight on the Earth, by a flood in Noah's day. Jesus said, "*as it was in the time of Noah, so will it be* " in the days just before His Second Coming. Just before His Second Coming.

End Is At Hand

Now let's go on a little further. "*But (He said) for the elect's sake.*" Brethren, that is you and the rest of our brethren around the world in the Church of God. "*For the elect's sake those days shall be shortened,*" before it's too late, before all humanity is destroyed. It got down to eight people in Noah's day. I think it will not get down to that small a number this time; but a great many million, millions and hundreds of millions of people, that are now living are going to be killed in the next few year's brethren.

You are right on the threshold of things! I don't know. I think sometimes we sit there and think: "Ah, that was a nice sermon Mr. Armstrong preached. I was entertained by it." Well, I think you had better be **STARTLED BY IT** because the end of our Work is at hand. And **the end of this life** is about at hand. Things are going to happen that are going to **SHAKE YOU UP**, brethren, and shake the whole world in a way it's never been shaken before. Now, dropping down to verse 29, same chapter.

Matthew 24:29-30 Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall

the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens [which means Satan and his demons] shall be shaken: (30) And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and... all the tribes of the earth shall mourn [That's all of the nations.], and shall see the Son of man [Jesus Christ] coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory [in all the supernatural power of the great God, to take over this Earth and to rule].

That's what we celebrated on the Day of Atonement. I wonder if we just think that we celebrate these annual holy days just as sort of a custom. It doesn't mean anything. You know, they are looking forward to the greatest event that is going to just, well, stagger this world beyond words. I don't know how to put it in a way to... Sometimes I think I need to shake everybody up and make us realize the seriousness of these things, and I just feel like I am totally unable. I just don't have the power to do it.

I read in the Bible how people have been just so nonchalant, and they're just not interested. Just like in Thanksgiving Day, they were just interested in football and turkey and things like that, not interested in what they should be. But that means the Second Coming of Christ.

Satan On Earth's Throne

Now to see what this thing in Europe is going to trigger. I say it will trigger World War III. Well, let's go on. Let me prove that now. Let me go on and show you a little bit more. The 13th chapter of Revelation, let's get back to that now. John is telling what he saw in his vision here in the book of Revelation in chapter 13 verse 1.

***Revelation 13:1** And I stood on the sand of the sea [shore] and [I] saw a beast...*

Now he takes a wild animal, and this wild animal is only a type of a great nation. And he uses the kind of animal whose nature typifies the **nature** of the nation, or the empire, that it's talking about.

*Revelation 13:1-2 ...and [he] saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, [Now they were not on the heads, but on the horns.] and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. (2) And the beast which I saw was **like** unto a leopard [Now, it wasn't a leopard. A leopard is cat like, and the cat is a very quick animal. It moves quickly and gracefully.], and his feet were as the feet of a bear [That is the preponderant part of a bear, its feet.], and his mouth as the mouth of a lion [That's the strongest part, especially of a male lion—the mouth—and even a female lion. They catch their prey. They break its neck, or they snap it; and they kill it with the mouth.]: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.*

Now Revelation 12 and verse 9. The dragon is "that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan {5}." And it identifies it right just ahead of this, in chapter 12 and verse 9.

Revelation 13:2 The dragon gave him his power, and seat, and great authority.

Now Satan is sitting on the throne of the Earth. And this is Satan's world, not God's world; and it is Satan. Now God gave Nebuchadnezzar his seat. Nebuchadnezzar did not take it. But Satan has given that seat to those in the times of the Gentiles, ever since Belshazzar saw the handwriting on the wall and his kingdom was taken that night. Satan has given the power, and seat, and great authority; and they have served... Well, he is the god of the world. He appears as an angel of light. And **deceived people don't know they are deceived.**

Brethren, I don't say this thing to accuse. I don't say it because I am

angry at the people of the so-called beast, or beast power, or the person. And maybe I already know in person, somewhat intimately, the one who will be that beast. If so, I feel sorry for him; and I don't accuse him of anything, because he believes he is right. He's sincere, and we need to realize that. God has not called us to sit in judgment. Christ is the Judge. Let us be thankful God has opened our eyes, our minds, and called us **out**. "*Come out from among them (in this world) and be separate.*" The world is **deceived**, but there is a lot of good in this world.

You know the people in this world, they have their professional ethics. They are people of what they call high morals, of high standards, good standards. Oh, yes, they think they are right; and yet they don't have God's Spirit. They don't have the love of God. It isn't their fault. They don't know any better. We're not to sit in judgment of them. We're not to hate them. We're not their enemies. They are not our... Well, I hope they are not our enemies anyhow.

Revelation 13:3 And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death [That's the last head, the Roman Empire.]; and his deadly wound was healed: [That was in 554. As I just told you, the Holy Roman Empire.] and all the world wondered after the beast.

The Four Beasts Of Daniel

You have to go back to Daniel 7 to learn what is meant by the symbol "beast." In Daniel 7, Daniel saw four beasts. The first was like a lion, the second like a bear, the third was a leopard. It had four heads. And the last one had the sort of a combination of all of those first three [{6}](#), but different from all of them; and it had one head, but it had ten horns. So there you have the seven heads and ten horns and so on.

Now it said that they are kings, or kingdoms, or empires. The beasts

then are **kings** or **kingdoms**, as you read in Daniel 7. Also it says in Daniel 7 (I won't take time to go back and read all of that.), the saints are finally going to take the kingdom and rule the kingdom forever. But the gentile empires—from the Chaldean Empire, on down through the Roman Empire, and to this coming reunion in Europe – it's finally going to be taken over by the saints; and we will rule under Christ forever.

Now, I read to you from Daniel 2:44; and in Daniel 2 you find who those empires are. The one—the lion, the head—was the same as the head of the image; and that was Nebuchadnezzar of the Chaldean Empire. The bear then is the Persian Empire. The leopard was the Greco-Macedonian Empire, divided into four divisions for its four heads. And the other, strong as iron, was the Roman Empire. Now it had ten horns; and each of those horns became another head, as you find in the 7th chapter of Daniel.

Now then, I want to go back to the 17th chapter of Revelation. The 17th chapter of Revelation, and notice the first six verses.

***Revelation 17:1** And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials...*

Now these are the seven last plagues poured out at the time of Christ's coming. Remember I am reading you what John saw in a vision, and what he saw in a vision is just before the coming of Christ. And so the seven angels having the seven vials that are poured out are plagues poured out on the very time of the coming of Christ.

***Revelation 17:1** ...and he talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee **the judgment** of the great whore [That is, God's doing the judging, or Christ is doing the judging, on a great whore, a fallen woman.] that sitteth upon many waters.*

Now she sits “on many waters.” And down here in verse... Let me see,

verse ten? Verse nine I guess it is. I've got so many marks on here, I can't even read it. "*The seven heads are seven mountains.*" No, it's another place. Oh, here:

Revelation 17:15 *And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and [languages or] tongues.*

In other words, many nations speaking many different languages. In other words, Europe. Same thing, all just what I've been telling you about. See "*the great whore that sitteth on many waters,*" that is many nations speaking different languages. "*With whom the kings of the earth,*" those who have committed fornication. They claim to be the Church. The Church is supposed to be the affianced bride of Christ. But she didn't wait to be married to Christ at His Second Coming. She was **married** to the kings of this world.

The Great Whore

Now the Pope's name, he's called the Vicar of Christ. I wonder if you know what Vicar means. Look it up in the dictionary. Vicar of Christ means in place of Christ. It doesn't mean a representative of Christ. It means one who has just shoved Christ aside, and knocked Him out of the way, and taken over. One who said, "Christ, get out of here! I am taking over for You. I am running it now." IN PLACE OF CHRIST. The Roman Catholic Church has **claimed** that the Kingdom of God IS the Roman Catholic Church, that the Pope IS in the place of Christ, (that) the Second Coming of Christ has occurred, (and) he is ruling the nations of the world. And they ruled for 1260 years the nations of Europe, and they call it the HOLY Roman Empire. That's why the Bible speaks of her in such terms of rottenness, of filthiness. Let me go on and read it to you.

Revelation 17:3-5 *I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast*

[Now the beast is the civil government, the political government. The woman is a church. A “beast...”], *full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. (4) And the woman was arrayed in purple* [That is the color of royalty.] *and scarlet* [The color of a harlot, or a whore. “And scarlet...”] *color, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand* [A woman is always the symbol of a church. A civil government is spoken of in a masculine gender in symbol in the Bible.”...in her hand”] *full of abominations and the filthiness of her fornication. (5) And upon her forehead* [the church’s forehead] *was a name written, MYSTERY BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS...*

In other words, the Babylonian MYSTERY religion, the ancient PAGAN “BABYLONIAN MYSTERY RELIGION”—now called, falsely, “Christianity” and claiming to be the original Church. And notice that: *THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS* who came out of her protesting and calling themselves “Protestant,” in protest. And God calls them “harlots,” brethren. Now, they are deceived. They don’t know it. I am not calling them names. I am reading you what God says. It is God who is doing. God has a right to call them names if He wants to. I am not doing it.

Revelation 17:5 ...HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

This thing is FILTHY in God’s sight, and yet we’ve come up among some of that. WE’VE BELIEVED A LOT OF THAT; and Christ has said COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM AND BE SEPARATE. Christ has called His Church **out** from among all of that—to **be separate**, brethren; and we have to live a different kind of life.

Revelation 17:6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints.

You know that she called them... If they kept the Sabbath instead of Sunday, they were declared “heretic,” or “anathema from Christ.” Now the accusation “anathema from Christ” made by the church was considered a capital crime by the government. And the government, the political state, put them to death; and they were martyred. And the woman is drunken on the blood of the saints. The woman says, “Oh, I never killed anybody. Oh, no, we didn’t put anyone to death. No, we just pronounced them ‘anathema from Christ.’ It is the government; the government put them to death.” But the woman sat on top of the beast.

A woman riding a horse is weaker. The horse is much stronger. It carries her, but she makes it go! You know, “gee” or “haw,” turning right or left. And she controls it, and guides it—which way it goes, and what it does. And that’s exactly what happened, a woman riding a beast.

***Revelation 17:6** And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.*

Now we come down to verse eight.

***Revelation 17:8** The beast that thou sawest was, and is not...*

I have to get **the time** of this prophecy. At what time was John seeing in his vision? And I think it was right around the year of 1934. And that’s about the time Mussolini claimed that he had revived the so-called Holy Roman Empire. As I say, I don’t think it even made front-page headlines; but I saw it, and I announced it on the air at the time myself.

***Revelation 17:8** The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit [You see, it’s to come out, one more head yet.], and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall **WONDER** [when they behold], whose names [that is that] were **not** written in the book...*

All (except those in the Church) that are going to look on with absolute dumbfounded **wonder** when they see this United States of Europe rise up.

Now, undoubtedly, Greece will be in. The Pope is going back to Poland in just a few months, and they are declaring this coming year a certain year of rejuvenation of Europe. And I know that they are planning to try to put it over in this coming year. They're really. They know they've got to work fast now. And it's going to go to pieces, fit in pieces (not "to pieces") very, very soon.

The Final Resurrection

Now let me show you a little bit of the final, the end of it. The ten horns, in verse twelve, I want.

***Revelation 17:12** ...the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.*

The beast will be over the ten nations. Each nation will have a king on its throne. It may be five in Western Europe, five in Eastern Europe. Poland may brake away. Czechoslovakia would like to. I am pretty sure that Romania would. I've been there three times. And I've had even the top people from Romania, right near the top of the government, as our guest here in Pasadena. And they say, "We are communist, but we certainly are not Moscow communists." And they would like to cut loose from Moscow. And also so would the former nation of Tito, or Yugoslavia.

Now Yugoslavia seems to be hanging together. It's really several nations put together. And I thought they might split after Tito died, but they seem to be holding; and I think that they might come in. Undoubtedly, Greece will come in. The people I saw in Athens are very anxious to come into this. And, strangely enough, even the United States' politicians want this

thing to go through in Europe. They are all for it. But now notice this:

Revelation 17:13-14 These have one mind, and shall give their power and [their] strength unto the beast [That's in the military power of their nations.], (14) and these shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings...

That means the Second Coming of Christ! THEY WILL FIGHT AGAINST CHRIST WHEN HE COMES. That gets you down to the very time just before the Second Coming of Christ. (Now, I'm afraid I am going to have to take a little extra time. I've still got a little time, and hopefully I can get this without going over time.)

The Great Tribulation

But now next, I want to show you what connection that has with the Great Tribulation, and with the United States, and with us. Isaiah 47 now. Back in Isaiah 47 and beginning in verse one. Now, let me see. I want the first seven verses

Isaiah 47:1-7 Come down [This is a prophecy. "Come down..."], and sit in the dust, O virgin **daughter** of Babylon...

Now remember the ancient Babylon was always a "he," masculine gender, under King Nebuchadnezzar 604 years before Christ, down to 554 BC. That was in the masculine gender. But this is a DAUGHTER of that Babylon. This is a CHURCH. Remember the "her" is always a **church**.

Isaiah 47:1-6 Come down, and sit in the dust, O virgin **daughter** of Babylon, sit on the ground: there is no throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans: [A **church** that has been riding on top of governments speaking different languages. This ties right in with what I just read you in the book of Revelation]: for thou shalt no more be called tender and delicate [in female

terms]. (2) *Take the millstones, and grind meal; uncover thy locks, make bare the leg, uncover the thigh, pass over the rivers.* (3) *Thy nakedness shall be uncovered, yea, thy shame shall be seen; [and] I will take vengeance [That’s God speaking. “I will take vengeance...”], and I will not meet thee as a man. [That is, God won’t meet as a man.]* (4) *As for our redeemer, the [Eternal] of hosts is his name, the Holy One of Israel [meaning Christ].* (5) *Sit thou silent, and get thee into darkness, O daughter of the Chaldeans: for thou shalt no more be called, the lady of kingdoms. [A church riding over governments, “the lady of kingdoms.” God says:]* (6) *I was wroth with my people.*

His people are Israel, and we are Israel. And you have to know ‘who is Israel’ and ‘who is Judah’ to understand this. “I was wroth with My people.”

*Isaiah 47:6-7 I have polluted mine inheritance [which is Israel], and given them into thine hand [This church riding over the kingdoms. “And given them into thine hand.”]: thou did show them no mercy [Now notice that—“Thou did show them no mercy.”]: upon the ancient hast thou very heavily laid thy yoke. [Notice: that yoke is going to be **on our people** by this very UNITED EUROPE.]* (7) *And thou saidst, I shall be a lady for ever [This is the daughter of Babylon.]: so that thou didst not lay these things to (thy) heart, neither didst remember the latter end of it.*

Now there is a great deal more to the prophecy, and I’m just cutting it short to give you the general meat of it as quickly as possible. It’s addressed to the house of Israel. The next chapter starts out, “Hear this, O ye house of Israel [{7}](#)” and so on. Now this message, all the way through, is to the house of Israel—which is Britain, and the United States, and the English-speaking people.

Now, next I would like to go to Jeremiah thirty and beginning with verse three [{8}](#).

Jeremiah 30:3 For, lo, the days come, saith the [Eternal], that I will

bring again the captivity of my people Israel and Judah.

For example, the Israelis are really “Judah” and not “Israel.” There are more Jews in New York City than there are in Palestine, or in the country called Israel; and there are almost as many out here in Los Angeles. There are a great many Jews in Los Angeles. And, for some reason, the Los Angeles Jews are... They misunderstand us, and they have been against us; and I wish they weren't. I wish they knew how we've cooperated with their own people over in the nation Israel, and what friends we have with them over there.

***Jeremiah 30:3-7** For lo, the days come ... when I will bring the captivity of my people Israel and Judah, saith the [Eternal of hosts] ...I will cause them to return to the land that I gave to their fathers [That's back in Palestine.], and they shall possess it. [Now that's after the Second Coming of Christ] (4) And these are the words that the (Eternal) spake concerning Israel and concerning Judah. [Showing that they are two different peoples altogether, because they were divided.] (5) For thus saith the (Eternal): We have heard a voice of trembling, (and) of fear, and not of peace. (6) Ask ye now, and see whether a man doth travail with child? Wherefore do I see every man with his hands on his loins, as a woman in travail, and all faces are turned into paleness? (7) Alas! For that day is great, so that there is none like it:*

In other words, there can only be one time so great and so terrible that nothing's ever been like it before or ever will again. It's the Great Tribulation!

Jeremiah 30:7** ...so that none is like it: ...even the time of **Jacob's trouble.

Now “Jacob” means “Israel” (not Judah in this case), because the dying Jacob crossed his hands on the sons of Joseph, Ephraim and Manasseh, and said “*Let my name Jacob be named on them.*” So we have that name Jacob,

not Judah.

Jeremiah 30:7 Alas! for that day is great, so that none is like it...the day of Jacob's trouble; but he shall be saved **out** of it. [He'll get into it, but be saved out of it after he gets into it; but it's going to be terrible.] (8) For it shall come to pass in that day, saith the (Eternal)of hosts, that I will break his **yoke from off thy neck** [Remember I said that Babylon, the daughter of the ancient Babylon, will have a yoke on **us**. And here it is again. "From off thy neck."], and will burst thy bonds, and strangers shall no more serve themselves of him: (9) But they shall serve the (Eternal) their God, and David their **king**, whom I will raise up unto them.

That is, in the resurrection at the coming of Christ. David is to be resurrected and is to be king over **all** of the nations that come from the twelve tribes of Israel. That includes the United States, the Israelis, Britain, France, Holland, Sweden, Norway, all of these countries. And David will be resurrected and be king over us.

Now the next scripture that I want to read is Jeremiah 50, and the first four verses.

Jeremiah 50:1-3 The word that the (Eternal) spoke against Babylon and against the land of the Chaldeans by Jeremiah the prophet. [Now let's see. I want the first four verses.] (2) Declare ye among the nations and publish, and set up a standard; publish, and conceal not: say, Babylon is taken, Bel is confounded, Merodach is broken in pieces; her idols are confounded, her images are broken in pieces. (3) For out of the north there cometh up a nation against her...

Now this is against Babylon. And this is speaking of the Communist countries finally coming against what-you-would-call Catholic Europe. And Russia is to the north, and they are to the south. "Out of the north there cometh up a nation against her."

Jeremiah 50:3-6 ...which shall make her land desolate, and none shall dwell therein: (and) they shall remove, they shall depart, both man and beast. (4) In those days, and in that time, saith the (Eternal), the children of Israel shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the (Eternal) their God. (5) They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, saying, Come, and let us join ourselves to the (Eternal) in a perpetual covenant... [That's the new covenant, and then it goes on to say:] (6) My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray [the ministers], they have turned them away on the mountains [the various nations, it means here]; they have gone from mountain to hill, and they have forgotten their resting place.

Then it says, beginning with verse 8: “Remove out of the midst of Babylon, and go forth out of the land of the Chaldeans, and be as the he goats before the flocks.”

To Israel, God says a lot of those things; and there is a lot more here. But it shows that He is talking about the time just before the Second Coming of Christ, and going into that time. Our people are going to be taken slaves, the third that are left alive. Now in all of our dwelling places, our cities are going to be destroyed. That is in Ezekiel. Well, let me see. I think I have that all marked out here to read that. Here it is in Ezekiel six and verses six and seven{9}.

Ezekiel 6:6-7 In all your dwelling places the cities shall be laid waste... [Again, in verse seven.] (7) And the slain shall fall in the midst of you [And this is to the house of Israel, not to Judah. This is to the United States and Britain, and our people, and our nations. If you don't know that, you can't understand it.], and the slain shall fall in the midst of [before] you, and ye shall know that I am the LORD.

Now that expression, “you shall know that I am the Lord” or the

Eternal, is one that occurs several times in Ezekiel's prophecy. Always it refers to the Second Coming of Christ. They **did not** know He is the Eternal. They **will** know it, when He comes a second time. And that is mentioned a good many times there. Well, that is repeated here just a few verses later. Let me see. It's over in the twelfth chapter and verse twenty.

Ezekiel 12:20 And the cities that are inhabited shall be laid waste, and the land shall be desolate; and ye shall know that I am the (Eternal).

That's the Second Coming of Christ. These are things that'll happen just before the coming of Christ; and then He is going to take us, those that are left alive of our people, back.

Now then, you also have to read in the third chapter of Revelation, speaking of the Philadelphia era of the Church. We are going to be taken to a place of safety, or to a place of protection, during this time. I don't know how to make anything else out of it. And that's in two different places in the Bible—that we, and again the twelve chapter of Revelation, we are to fly into a place where it is prepared. Now how God is going to do that, how He is going to bring it, we just have to trust Him in faith to open our minds to understand it when the time comes. And I think it is now going to come very, very soon.

The Mark Of The Beast

Well, brethren, I have been preaching this now for the last forty-eight or forty-nine years. That's before a great many... I'd say half of you have been born since that time. And now it's all coming to pass, and it is **reality**. It's going to come very soon. You can laugh it off. You can go off and say, "Well, I think that we've called Mr. Armstrong 'God's Apostle.' I guess he's just a crackpot." if you want to. Or you can heed and be protected.

Now let me tell you what else is going to happen, and this is one thing that has been seen in Rome very lately. Tags—giving the days of the week; and showing that the seventh day of the week is Sunday, and that Monday is the first day of the week, and that Saturday is the sixth day of the week. Do you get the significance of that, brethren? They've been trying to change the calendar in Europe for the past twenty, thirty, forty years. They haven't changed it yet. The new United States of Europe will do it!

There is one commandment that is **the test commandment**. I want to tell you, the people of the world and of Protestantism and of Catholicism, they will admit that we shouldn't have other gods before the true God, the first commandment. They will admit that we should not make images (I don't know if the Catholic Church will or not; but the Protestants, most of them will.) of God. That we shouldn't take His name in vain. They will admit that we should honor our parents. They will admit that we shouldn't commit adultery. That we shouldn't lie. We shouldn't steal. It's wrong to steal. Murder is wrong. Oh, yes, we have human laws against those things, against stealing and murder especially. And, of course, lying. Sometimes if you lie in court, and it's called perjury, why you can be held in contempt of court and get fined. Of course, it's done all the time anyway. And it's wrong to covet. But they won't admit that the seventh day is the Sabbath, and that it is holy to God, and we are commanded to keep it holy.

There is ONE COMMANDMENT THEY WILL NOT **ACCEPT**. **THAT IS GOD'S TEST COMMANDMENT!** And it's going to be a test for us. And the mark of the beast is soon going to be **ENFORCED**. **AND YOU'RE GOING TO FIND THAT YOU WILL NOT BE ABLE TO HAVE A JOB. YOU WILL NOT BE ABLE TO BUY ANYTHING. YOU WILL NOT BE ABLE TO RECEIVE ANY MONEY** unless you turn back to **SUNDAY**. **BRETHREN, I TELL YOU, THAT IS GOING TO HAPPEN IN THE VERY NEXT FEW YEARS.** And it may happen by next year or the year after. **The**

mark of the beast is going to be enforced, which is Sunday (instead of Sabbath).

The Sabbath is God's sign. I've got to preach some more sermons on it. And I just heard that... I didn't realize that when this Church was beginning to go LIBERAL (just before I began to work with might and main to put it BACK ON THE TRACK here only three or four years ago) that they were also beginning to say "Oh, well, you can buy all your merchandise, you can work if you have to, anything on the Sabbath." They were saying that. Even the ministers in this Church! They're gone. They're out of here now. And you show me any minister who will say that; and I'll see that he gets out of the Church in a hurry, because no such minister belongs in the Church of God. It's time this Church gets cleaned up. It's time we get **ALL THE WAY BACK ON THE TRACK**. I've been moving every way I could to get us back on the track.

I'm pretty well torn apart physically. I'm past ninety years of age now, and I still have to be the dynamo that keeps it going! I can hardly read. I just see out of one eye, and it's so blind I've bothered you; and I'm sorry. I apologize for having had you sit there while I struggle and try to read the Bible to you. But I do the best I can; and I hope you do the best you can, brethren.

You know, I'm just reminded, last time I saw Mrs. Thatcher of England, the Prime Minister. As we were leaving, she said, "Well, there's one thing. Our two countries, the United States and Britain, must absolutely continue to hang together." And I said, "If they don't hang together, they'll probably hang separately." And that's the way it is with us, brethren. We had better get on the track, and be sure that we are there.

I wish you could have all heard the sermon this morning. I have to preach on things like this. I have to bring these things to you. Other ministers

can bring you spiritual food for your every day living, but there are things like this that I have to bring to you. Now we are going to have to get back onto the Sabbath question, and what is the mark of the beast. I've been giving you a little bit about 'who the beast is' now, this afternoon.

All of a sudden... I've been preaching this for years; and now, all of a sudden, these things are all falling into place. It's going to happen. The question is: **Are we ready?** We're going to be put into a test that you can't dream of. The TEST COMMANDMENT is going to be a test; and YOUR LIFE is going to depend on whether you can trust God, or whether you will give in. And I predict that SOME OF YOU are going to give up the Sabbath, and give in, and go with the world. But the **PLAGUES OF GOD WILL BE ON YOU IF YOU DO THAT!** But everything that the civil government, and police, and the power of MAN can do to you will be on you IF you don't give in on the Sabbath/Sunday question.

Where are you going to stand? You're going to be put to a test such as you've never had before, brethren, and very soon. And I tell you the time has come when you had better do a little fasting, and praying, and get back close to God. And be sure that you are so close to Him that you can rely on Him, that you can trust Him; because you are going to have to trust Him with your life, and very soon.

Now I hope this shakes you up a little bit because, if I can shake you up now, that's fine. But if I don't, the conditions in the world are going to shake you up and very soon. Let's all get back. And we'd better hang together. So pray for me as I pray for you. We need to pray for one another now as never before.

Thank you, brethren.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said the word "happen" whereas the magazine article reads "occur."

{2} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said: "We live today in the most momentous, anxious moments of earth's history," misreading this part of the sentence in the magazine article.

{3} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "I," whereas in the original magazine article he wrote "we."

{4} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "West," but he meant "East."

{5} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong reversed the names, saying "Satan and the Devil."

{6} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "a combination of all of those first four," when he meant the fourth beast is a combination of the first three.

{7} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong was paraphrasing the scripture. Isaiah 48:1 begins: "Hear ye this, O house of Jacob, which are called by the name of Israel."

{8} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said he was beginning with verse 2, but he actually started reading verse 3.

{9} - Editor's note: Although Mr. Armstrong said verses 6 and 8, he read verses 6 and 7.

Mark Of The Beast

Sermon (December 11, 1982)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Mark Of The Beast.....	1322	Vatican City, A Separate Nation	1338
United States Of Europe Imminent	1323	Mark Of The Beast	1341
The Spirit In Man	1323	The Sign Of The End	1344
Holy Spirit Closed Till Pentecost	1324	The 144,000	1346
Israel And Judah's Captivity	1326	The Mark And The Commandments	1349
The Holy Roman Empire	1328	Only One Commandment Altered	1351
Daniel's Dream	1333	Sabbath A Sign, Not A Mark	1353
The Beast Out Of The Sea	1333	Israel Lost Their Sign	1354
Deadly Wound Healed	1335	The Sabbath Question	1356
The Beast Out Of The Earth	1337	Very Imminent Now	1357

Well greetings once again, everybody; and a special greeting to all of you ministers who are here for the refresher course from around the world. Fifty years ago I was putting emphasis on certain things where I was actually at least fifty years ahead of my time. You know, actually the 1st century apostles were more than 1950 years ahead of their time. They thought the Second Coming of Christ was going to occur way back there in their lifetime; and, of course, it didn't. But 50 years ago I could see that we were coming into the last generation of this world. So many things had been happening.

I wonder if you people can understand? I don't think that very many of you can see things as I do. For example, I remember things that happened back in the 19th century. I remember very well staying up until midnight to see the old century out and the new century in. And 1899 was going out and the year 1900 was coming in. Of course, I was only 7 1/2 years old. I couldn't understand why my parents kept me sitting up all that time in a Methodist Church; and they wouldn't let me go to sleep, and I wanted to go to sleep so badly. Sometimes children can't understand some of the things

their elders do.

United States Of Europe Imminent

But today it becomes a very solemn warning, and now the time is very imminent. The new United States of Europe is on the verge of going together. It has gone together a number of times already. Well, five times directly; and a sixth time that the world hardly noticed. And we are waiting now for the seventh resurrection of the Roman Empire. The whole world is going to be astounded; and, I can tell you, it could even happen next year. But along with it, I want to come specifically today into a certain subject I have not touched on I think for some years now. I think that perhaps most of you have never heard me speak about it. In fact the booklet that we had on it has become out of print. And that subject is “The Mark of the Beast.” What **is** the Mark of the Beast?

We began to see that I was ahead of my time actually. And I think we’ve said, and said publicly and in our advertising, that the Plain Truth is a magazine that has always been ahead of its time on foretelling news events and giving the meaning of today’s news. (Today’s world news – what it means, where it’s taking us, where we are heading, what is going to happen next.) And now we are right at the time where the so-called Holy Roman Empire is going to be revived again.

The Spirit In Man

Now, those of you who saw the Bible Study last night saw a lot of the events that led up to the present time. And it goes clear back to ancient Israel. Actually, God had raised up a nation.

Let me go back even further than that, from the time of Adam – after

Adam made the wrong decision, rejected the Spirit of God, turned his back on God, decided to take to himself the knowledge of right and wrong, good and evil. Now “the knowledge of good and evil” has nothing to do with dealing with matter and material things, with science, with technology, with such subjects as chemistry, physics, astronomy. It has nothing to do with building a house, building an automobile. But it has a great deal to do with your relationship with other people, but most of all your relationship to God. And that’s what the world has COMPLETELY lost, because “the knowledge of good and evil” not only represents **knowledge** of spiritual knowledge (of spiritual things, attitudes, events, and what God has in store for those who love Him and not for others); but it is a matter of **attitudes**.

And all troubles in the world come from the attitude that springs from **the one human spirit** with which every human being is born. Otherwise you wouldn’t have a mind. As I have said many times, even a cow out in the field has a brain as good as yours. An elephant’s brain is a great deal larger. I don’t really know if a cow’s brain is a little larger or a little smaller. It’s one or the other. But a cow appears to be rather stupid compared to a human being, because there is no spirit in connection with its brain. And it doesn’t have attitudes of competition, and strife, and of coveting, and the type of attitudes that we humans get into in relation to one another.

But humans have forgotten all about, it seems, their relationship with God. We have all kinds of relationships with other humans. And so husband and wife can’t seem to get along together in so many cases. Parents and children, capitol and labor, next door neighbors, group can’t get along with group, race with race, nation with nation. We get into conflict, and its all attitudes of mind.

Holy Spirit Closed Till Pentecost

Now, God closed up the Holy Spirit. When He closed the Tree of Life, He closed the Holy Spirit. When Christ came He said, *"I will build My Church."* He started it with twelve disciples. After He had taught them and on the day of Pentecost, the Holy Spirit came to them; and there were 120 actually that had followed Christ who received the Holy Spirit that day. Later that day (after Peter's sermon) about 3,000 others were baptized. Then the Holy Spirit was opened, but only to those that God would draw. Jesus said no man can come to Him except the Father who sent Him draws them. And on that day of Pentecost Peter said the Holy Spirit was for *"as many as the Lord our God [should] call."* Go back and read it in the 2nd chapter of the book of Acts, about the 39th verse. *"As many as the Lord our God shall call."*

And let's see. Wasn't it in the...? I guess it was in the sermonette this morning, it was mentioned that you didn't volunteer to become a follower of Christ, or to become a Christian. You were drafted. You are not a volunteer. God chose you! And for each one of you, you were chosen out of perhaps a few thousand others that were not chosen. And so I have tried to tell you that there is a very, very great responsibility on you because you have been chosen for something very great.

Now way back at the time of Moses, many hundreds of years before Christ, God had decided to call the descendants of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. And He made them into **a nation**. But they didn't have the Holy Spirit. It was not open to them. God gave them promises; but the promises He gave them were all materialistic, nationalistic, or material wealth and national dominance over other nations even. But there was always a condition, and they never would fulfill the condition.

After a long time, they even divided among themselves into two different nations. One was still called the kingdom of Israel. But they rejected their king; and they went in for democracy; and they chose the man who had practically been King Solomon's prime minister. He'd practically run the

government anyway for Solomon. Jeroboam.

Israel And Judah's Captivity

The tribe of Judah split off and formed its own nation, called the kingdom of Judah. And they are the Jews, and the Jews from that time on are not Israel. They are the nation of Judah, not the nation of Israel at all. And the world doesn't know that. So many of the people in the world don't know who they are. The people of the United States, of Britain, of Western Europe don't know who they are. The Germans don't know who they are. The Jews don't know who they are. They have lost their identity.

I^{1} was just remarking in the wings out here, just before the song service, that I really need five or six sermons for what I want to tell you today. It's so many different facets to it, so much that I can't get to more than just a part of it this afternoon.

But God offered finally... Well, they split up into two nations. Let's go back to that. And first, after 7 dynasties and 19 different kings, Israel had followed their kings. And every one of those kings had rejected God and God's way of life; and they had all gone the way of sin – contrary to the law of God, which is God's way of life.

God's way of life is the way God and the way Christ have always lived from eternity, so far as we know. At least we know, as far as we know, They have always lived that way. And it's the way of peace. It's the way of cooperation. It's the way of love. It's the way of happiness. And it's the way of real great accomplishment and achievement, and of a satisfying and fulfilling life. Humans don't know that.

So God let Assyria take Israel captive. They began to move away. And by about 118 or 120 years later, 130 years later, they had lost their identity

and moved westward and northwest. And I'm going to tell you a little later why Israel lost her identity. Now, Judah kept her identity; and I am going to tell you why a little later. The Jews think they are Israel, and I'm going to tell you why. They are not Israel. They are Judah. And they don't really know who they are.

So I wish you all could have heard last night's Bible Study because it was a prelude of what I want to say today; and the Bible Study the week before. But I want to get back to this "Mark of the Beast" because it is soon now again going to be enforced; and it **has** been enforced in the past, in ancient history. You probably, most of you, don't even know that. Well, we will come to that.

Anyway, then God used King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon to take Judah captive because they had turned away from God. Well, they never really turned to him. They professed to, back in the days of Moses; but they never really had done it. Through Daniel, God gave King Nebuchadnezzar a knowledge of the true God and that GOD had given him the right to rule. Now you are going to see that, later on, a continuation of that was given its seat and power and authority by Satan the devil. But it was GOD who gave Nebuchadnezzar his seat, and power, and authority. And God was showing (if you will read between the lines in the book of Daniel, especially in the 2nd and the 7th chapters and others in between) God was giving king Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon the chance to become God's Kingdom and replace Israel; but the Gentiles rejected it.

King Nebuchadnezzar was sent off for seven years. He finally acknowledged God, and he came back; and God gave him the kingdom back. But his son rebelled and went the other way, and then the kingdom was taken away. And so it was succeeded by the Persian Empire. And that in turn by the Greco-Macedonian Empire, or Greece; and there were four different divisions there. And that in turn was succeeded by the Roman Empire. The

Roman Empire began about 31 BC and ruled until 476 AD, when the barbarians of the north conquered it and destroyed it.

The Holy Roman Empire

Then we had three nations – the Heruli, the Vandals, and the Ostrogoths – that came in there for a few years, less than a hundred years after 476; but by 554, at the behest of the Pope at Rome (The Catholic Church had grown by that time rather powerful.), Justinian, who was ruling the Empire in the east. Now the Roman Empire had been divided. There was a capital at Constantinople in the east. Constantinople today is called Istanbul, which is the real metropolis of Turkey today. It used to be Asia Minor, and up in the land of the Galatians and some of those people in biblical days. Anyway, he restored what they called the Roman Empire. And again, it was raised up again by Charlemagne, a French head who came to his zenith in 800 AD. And a little later Otto the Great of Germany; and after that Charles the Great, I believe it was, of Hapsburg of Austria. And after that came Napoleon. And there you had five different resurrections of the Roman Empire. But, by the time of Otto the Great of Germany, they were calling it The Holy Roman Empire. That was all explained last night. And it actually meant that they believed that the Kingdom of God had come.

The Pope was called Vicar of Christ. Did you ever look up that word “vicar” in the dictionary? He is supposed to have a name on his crown. I don’t think it is there. It’s never been found. I’ve heard it is supposed to be. I don’t know whether I am pronouncing it correctly, but as it would seem to sound out in English ‘VICARIUS FELII DEI’ or something like that. I don’t think there are any such words on the crown, however.

But the word “vicar” means “in place of.” It does NOT mean “the representative of.” It doesn’t mean that he represents Christ. It means he’s

kicked Christ out and taken over. Well, that's rather brutal; and that's plain language. But I want to make it blunt enough so that you understand what I am saying, because that's what it actually **means**. Christ has been kicked out! There has been a revolution. There has been a military coup. The Pope has taken over. Christ is out of it; and they're supposed to rule now – not for just a thousand years, but forever.

Well, you know, when Hitler came he was... Mussolini had made a little bit of a resurrection of the so-called Holy Roman Empire. But it didn't really rise up to anything very big until Hitler joined with him in the axis. And Hitler's whole idea was a thousand years of rule of the master race, the Germans. Now the Germans are not the master race. They are a race of orderly people who are very great producers of certain mechanical things, have very great talents in certain directions. They are a people who have been down and out after World War I. And Hitler came around and raised them up with the idea that they are better than any other people on earth, and he practically had them hypnotized. I think a great many people in Germany today realize that, and I don't think you find very much of Hitlerism in Germany today.

However, it's coming in a little different way today. Once again, they are right on the verge of raising this thing up once again. Now, because it didn't happen in our lifetime, many people don't realize how it has happened time after time from 554 on up to 1814 when Napoleon, as we say, met his Waterloo. I go to Waterloo for lunch once in a while. King Leopold lives right practically there in that very vicinity, and we've been very close friends now since 1968^{2}.

Anyway, this whole system of Gentile governments began with Nebuchadnezzar; and now we find the **LAST RESURRECTION OF IT IS COMING UP. AND IT MEANS SOMETHING TO YOU AND ME. AND THE MARK OF THE BEAST IS SOMETHING THAT IS GOING TO**

BE ENFORCED, AND YOU ARE GOING TO RISK YOUR LIFE ON IT in the very near future. It is speaking of these very same things. Jesus said, *“He that hath an ear, let him hear.”* And I say to you, if you have ears to hear, you **BETTER** hear; and you had **BETTER UNDERSTAND. And don’t take this lightly, because your life is going to be at stake.**

I am going to tell you one of two things is going to have to happen to you, every one of you; and we’re going to face it collectively as a church, but each is going to face it individually also. You are going to be tested. If you try to save your life, you are going to lose it for all eternity. You may have to give your present life in order to make the Kingdom of God. Are you going to try to live on and save it? Or are you willing...? There is one place in the 12th chapter of Revelation where, after Satan has had the battle in heaven once again and has been sent back down to earth, where the *”saints loved not their lives unto death.”* And that’s speaking of our time, and our people, and those of the Laodicean Church to follow us almost immediately. And the Laodicean Era of the Church has not yet come, but it will; and I think that we are doing a whole lot to raise it up.

But a lot of people have been hearing on radio and on television, and they realize they are hearing a message that is **UTTERLY DIFFERENT** from **any other religious message** they hear ANYWHERE. And a lot of them, of course, say “Well, how can one man be right and all the others wrong?” because all the others preach about the same thing. And **millions** have been reading it in The Plain Truth, because over 5 million copies... I think it has gone down in the last two months a little bit because of renewal subscriptions, but about 3 months ago it was up to about 5 1/2 million. But it goes right back up again. I think it came down to about 5 million, one or two hundred thousand; and in another few months it’ll be right back up there, and then going on toward 6 million – God willing, we hope.

Nebuchadnezzar’s Dream

All right, now I want to get back; and I want to pick up this story in Revelation 13. It really starts in the 2nd chapter of Daniel. Now you know the story of the 2nd chapter of Daniel. King Nebuchadnezzar had finally put together the first great world empire.

Civilization started with city-states. Nimrod is the first one we have a record of. I believe it's the (What is it?) 5th chapter of Genesis, something like that. Nimrod built Babylon, Nineveh, and a number of other cities. And for a long time the only government was in each city. Each city had its own government, and we had what they called city-states; and each city had its own king. They didn't call them mayors. They called them kings.

And then they got into nations; and we had ancient Egypt, and we had ancient Greece, and certain others. And, of course, there was ancient Assyria; and later came the Medes, the Persians, and others. But Nebuchadnezzar got even many of those together into a world empire of a number of nations, the first World Empire.

Nebuchadnezzar had a dream. He saw a great image; and that image showed what was going to happen, beginning with him. It was a **great** image. I forget what it was. I think it was 10 feet tall, or else it was a great deal taller than that. Anyway, we've shown you pictures of it on the television programs and in the magazines.

The head was of gold. That represented Nebuchadnezzar. Now it started there, and it showed what was going to happen as we come down through the image. Its breast and arms were of silver. That was the next empire to succeed him, or the Persian Empire. And then later on would come Greece, or the Greco-Macedonian Empire. And that was the belly and thigh of brass. And then came the Roman Empire and its two legs, because Rome was divided. And Satan's kingdom is divided. And part of the Roman Empire was

in the East and part in the West.

Now incidentally the Roman Catholic Church grew up, but it wasn't all Roman Catholic. There was the Eastern Orthodox Church as well as the Roman Catholic Church, and that has come down to today also. However, the Roman Empire fell in 476 and 554, as I said a while ago. Justinian was brought from Constantinople over to Rome to restore the empire in the West. And it wasn't restored as the Roman Empire in the East at that time. But it has had a number of successions, and now it's going to be restored once again.

Now Daniel 2 shows it finally coming down to the toes of the feet; but you see one of those feet is planted on Eastern Europe, and one on Western Europe. And it comes down to the final end – of the Second Coming of Christ and smashing this whole succession of Gentile governments on the toes of the feet. That's the ten kingdoms that are going to go together in Europe perhaps next year, perhaps the year after. Now I can't set dates; and, if it doesn't happen till two or three years from now, don't say how Mr. Armstrong said it was going to be in 1983. I didn't say that. I say it **could**. I didn't say it **will**. Now if someone tries to say I said it, I've got all you as witnesses. I didn't.

They've tried to say, back in 1972, that I said things I did not say. Some people thought I said the Second Coming of Christ is going to occur then. No, I could see reasons why I thought this empire might go together at that time. And **our Work** will stop very soon after this Holy Roman Empire has this next, and last, resurrection. And **OUR WORK WILL STOP** and **then** will come the **GREAT TRIBULATION**. AND OUT OF IT AND DURING THE **GREAT TRIBULATION** will rise up the Laodicean Era of God's Church.

But this Church... Well you are either going to risk death, or your going to take the mark of the beast – one or the other, unless we are taken to a place

of protection and safety; and there are two places in the book of Revelation that certainly indicate we shall be. But it's going to take **a miracle**. Now it took a miracle from God to get the Israelites out of Egypt way back there in the days of Moses. He had to strike a rock, and water came out of it. And He may have to perform just as great miracles again this time. You had better begin to believe in miracles, because your very existence may depend on it.

Daniel's Dream

Well, anyway, you come to Daniel the 7th chapter; and he saw the same thing but in the form of his dream, or vision he had of four [{3}](#) wild animals, or beasts. The first was a lion, and that was the Chaldean Empire. The second was a bear, and that was the Persian Empire. The third was the Greco-Macedonian Empire, and it had four heads. Well, it was divided into four divisions; and each one had its own head. And, then, that made up six heads; and then the Roman Empire, the seventh head. And that was the fourth beast he saw; and, of course, it had one head. But it was strong, stronger than any of the others, and snapped over the territory of all of them and replaced them all – the Roman Empire.

The Beast Out Of The Sea

Then we come into the 13th chapter of Revelation, and it continues that same identical thing. I want to begin now in the 13th chapter of Revelation, and I am going to take a little bit of time to go through it word by word. As I say, I wish I could have many, many hours for this. Now John is telling here in the book of Revelation what he saw in a vision, like a dream. He was on the Isle of Patmos, and he was being shown the time of the Day of the Lord. That's the time when GOD will step in and intervene in world affairs; and it will climax in the Second Coming of Christ, and then the thousand-year rule

under Christ. Now the 13th chapter of Revelation: He is showing what he saw in his vision. He says,

Revelation 13:1 *And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns [Now notice: the crowns were not on the heads. They were on the horns. “And upon his horns ten crowns.”], and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.*

So there was something evil about it.

Revelation 13:2 *And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard [It wasn't a leopard; but it was quick and cat-like, like the body of a leopard. It had the best characteristics of a leopard.], and his feet were as the feet of a bear [The most powerful part of a bear are its feet. And it had the strongest part of a bear, because it was a very powerful thing. But it wasn't a bear. It just had the feet, like a bear.], and the mouth AS the mouth [It wasn't the mouth of a lion, but AS the mouth...] of a lion [Now that is the strongest part of a lion, especially a male lion. I don't know whether that's stronger than a female, but just looks bigger.]: and the dragon [Now, in Revelation 12 and Revelation 20 you see very plainly that the dragon is Satan the devil.] gave him his power and his seat, and great authority.*

Now let me give you one little key right here. “Gave **him**,” that's the **male** gender. In these prophecies, the “him” or the male gender represents civil, political government – political and military. The “she” or “her” or the **feminine** gender always denotes church. When you get to the 17th chapter, you find a woman riding the beast; but the woman is a church. The beast is a “he” or a “him,” which is a military or a civil or political government.

This thing is of Satan the devil, who gave it its seat and power and great authority. This whole system as it started, GOD gave Nebuchadnezzar his seat and power and great authority. But by the time it gets down to this

point... And I'm going to show you that this includes the four beasts of Daniel 7, and this is speaking of the Roman Empire. Now there is a chart^{4}; and I worked out that chart, believe it or not, some 55 or 56 years ago while I was being converted. God showed me the truth. Now if you take...

The only way you can understand this, and there are other chapters in Daniel that bear on the same thing. It is a very complicated thing, and the only way you can understand it... It is like a large problem in arithmetic, or mathematics; and it is greater than you can figure out in your head alone. You have to put it down on paper; and add and subtract and divide and multiply; and one thing and another. It gets a little confusing. You take 10,897 and divide it by 32 and multiply that by 4 and then subtract 822 and something else. Now do you have the answer? Anybody here got it? Well I haven't either. You can't do that. You have to put a thing like that down on paper to get it. Well, that's what I did; and I guess no one else ever thought to do that.

Deadly Wound Healed

Revelation 13:3 And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.

Now I want you to notice the time sequence. It has been healed; and now, since it's healed, the whole world is wondering after the beast. Let me give you a little bit here in the Revised Standard translation.

Revelation 13:5 (RSV) And the beast was given a mouth uttering haughty and blasphemous words, and it was allowed to exercise authority for forty-two months.

Now this mouth was haughty, blasphemous words. Brethren, I don't want to accuse human beings (and this is all ancient history anyway, and not

anyone now living); but that was the Popes at Rome. And here you have the Roman Empire and its deadly wound. It was wounded to death.

Revelation 13:3 (RSV) But its mortal wound [This is the Revised Standard now.] was healed, and the whole earth followed the beast [Or “wondered after the beast.” Now that’s the beast after it is healed.] with wonder.

Revelation 13:4-5 (RSV) Men worshipped the dragon [Which is Satan the devil, and he is the god of this world. And, brethren, I don’t think we realize that the world is worshipping Satan.], for he had given his authority to the beast, and they worshipped the beast [The beast now healed – which is now, after Justinian, from that time on.] saying, “Who is like the beast, and who can fight against it?” (5) And the beast [This is the healed beast, after 554] was given a mouth uttering haughty and blasphemous words [That mouth didn’t come till after 554.], and it was allowed to exercise authority for forty-two months.

Now “a day for a year” in those times meant 1260 years. It was started in 554, and it ruled for 1260 years. If you can figure that, that takes you to 1814; and that is when Napoleon was finally defeated at Waterloo.

Revelation 13:6 (RSV) It opened its mouth to utter blasphemies against God, blaspheming his name and his dwelling, that is those who dwell in heaven.

And of course, “those who dwell in heaven” are angels that are described in the 4th and 5th chapters of the book of Revelation.

Now a lot of that blasphemy... I have been in Rome and down at the Pope’s summer palace at Castel Gandolfo, and seen 5,000 people just screaming (and frantic, as if they were in a trance or a frenzy): “**Viva Papa, viva Papa;**” and calling, “The Most Holy Father.” The Most Holy Father –

that is a title that belongs only to God; and they do give that to the Pope, even unto this day.

Revelation 13:7-8 (RSV) *Also it was allowed to make war on the saints and to conquer them. [And thousands and even up to a few million Christians, or professing Christians, were put to death. And I'm going to show you because of "The Mark of the Beast," because they wouldn't accept it... But I'll come to that later.] And authority was given it over every tribe and people and tongue and nation [That is, of course, speaking about Europe and the different languages; and they have different languages in Europe.], (8) and all who dwell on earth will worship it, everyone whose name [is not] written before the foundation of the world in the book of the life of the Lamb that was slain [from the foundation of the world].*

Well now, in the King James it says "*the Lamb [of God] slain from the foundation of the world.*" It was decided at the foundation of the world (at the time of Adam, when Adam rejected the Tree of Life) that Christ would come as the second Adam and be slain to pay the penalty of our sins.

The Beast Out Of The Earth

Now coming to the next verse; verse 9, I believe it is:

Revelation 13:9-11 (RSV) *If any one has an ear, let him hear: (10) If any one is to be taken captive, to captivity he goes; [Now this is coming down to a time now, when it does apply to us.] if any one slays with the sword, with the sword must he be slain. Here is [the] call for the endurance and faith of the saints. (11) Then I saw [John says what he is seeing in a vision now.] another beast [Who and what is this beast? "Another beast..."] which rose [up] out of the earth; [The first beast was out of the sea, and this one is out of the earth.] It had two horns like a lamb and it spoke like a dragon.*

I believe that's a little different in the King James. Let me see if I can find that in the King James.

Revelation 13:11 *Another beast coming up out of the earth; and he [It's a "he" now. It's not "she." So this cannot be just the church as such.] had two horns like a lamb and he spake as a dragon.*

Well, a lamb pictures Christ. He appeared like Christ, but he spoke like Satan. The dragon is Satan. "*Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh*" says God. So says your Bible. So actually, while he was pretending to be Christ (Christ on earth, ruling. The Kingdom of God was here.), he was actually speaking like a devil.

Now the Bible says some very horrible things about the Roman Catholic Church. That's why the Catholic Church has never encouraged people to read the Bible. And for a long time in Spain, before {5} the present government, anyone sending a Bible (even as a gift to a friend, if someone was having someone trying to send a Bible into Spain) it would be confiscated on the way in. Bibles are not allowed to be brought in. And Spain is more Catholic than Italy.

Revelation 13:11 *...I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth...two horns like a lamb... [but spoke] as a dragon.*

So actually it was **masquerading as Christ**, but out of its heart it was speaking what was in its heart; and it was Satan the devil, or the tool of Satan.

Vatican City, A Separate Nation

Revelation 13:12 *And he [Notice, it's "he" again.] exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.*

It's not "*the first beast*" **before** his deadly wound was healed, but "*the first beast whose deadly wound [had now been] healed.*" So it is the one that became the Holy Roman Empire. Now the Holy Roman Empire was political. What is this other beast? The only thing that it can possibly be is that the Roman Catholic Church is **both church and state**. I wonder if you realize that Vatican City is a separate nation. The Vatican is the state part of the church. That is the "**he**" part. The church is the "**she**" part. But there is a marriage. Well, I don't think they're married either. It is fornication, not marriage. Anyhow, many nations send ambassadors to the Vatican. It is a separate state within the nation of Italy.

I have been there. I have been inside of the Vatican library, and I have examined pages of one of the three oldest copies of the Bible in existence – the Codex Vaticanus. And I had to have a letter from Mrs. Clair Luce, who was the American ambassador in Rome at the time, who sponsored me and guaranteed that I wouldn't destroy it, or steal it or take it out, or anything of the kind. And so they were very polite; and they let me have it, and hold it in my hands, and read it. I could have spent two or three hours there reading it, if I had wanted to. But I just wanted to see it for the novelty of it and because it is one of the **oldest** copies, and it may be **the oldest** on the face of the earth, of the Bible.

Revelation 13:12 ... he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him...

Now this is really the GOVERNMENT part of the Roman Catholic Church. But this is the political GOVERNMENT part, and it **DID** exercise the **POWER. The Popes were on top of it**, and the political rulers had to do what the church said. I want to tell you, they are coming to the place of doing that again. And just recently in Germany there has been a new law passed that the holy days to be observed as rest days, or national holidays, are to be decided by the church; and they **must** be either Roman Catholic or

Protestant. And each state, like Bavaria or other states within Germany, can decide what they want. And whatever they decide, the people **have to follow**. Now just bear that in mind because we are coming to something.

Revelation 13:12 He [That is the government part of the Roman Catholic Church.] *exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him* [And that is the Roman Empire **after** it was healed, or the Holy Roman Empire. And why it was called “Holy” is because the Pope was supposed to be ruling it.], *and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast* [which is the Holy Roman Empire], *whose deadly wound was healed.*

See, not the first beast **before** its deadly wound was healed, or whose deadly wound was **yet to be** healed; but to worship the beast whose deadly wound **had** been healed.

Revelation 13:13 *And he* [Now it’s the Roman government, church government.] *doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.*

If that has ever happened, I don’t know. But a lot of this is yet to come to pass, and it may be that that has some significance. Now the book of Revelation speaks in symbol a great deal. I don’t know why. I haven’t done any research on that particular little detail right there – to find what that fire, if it symbolizes something other than literal fire. I’ll have to check that later. Let’s just pass right on over that.

Revelation 13:14 *And deceiveth them that dwell ON THE EARTH by the means of those miracles which he had [the] power to do in the sight of the beast.*

Wait. Now let me read that. We’re getting down to verse 14. Let me read that. I think there’s another word that I want you to get in the Revised Standard translation.

*Revelation 13:15 (RSV)... [all] those who would not worship the **image** of the beast to be slain.*

In other words, they had to worship this government or be slain – the government of the Catholic Church.

Mark Of The Beast

*Revelation 13:15-18 (KJV) He had power to give life unto the image of the beast that the image of the beast should both [Now remember: the image of the beast is the Vatican, or the civil government of the church.] (speak,) and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. (16) And **he causeth ALL, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a MARK** [Now we come to the MARK of the beast. “To receive a mark...”] **in their right hand, or in their foreheads:** (17) *And that no man might buy or sell,* [To “buy” means to purchase whatever you need, food, clothing, buy a new home, buy and automobile, whatever. “Or sell,” now that means that you can’t engage in the business of buying and selling; and you won’t have the money, you won’t have the wages to buy anything with. “That no man might buy or sell...”] *save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. (18) Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred three-score and six [Or 666, six hundred and sixty six].**

Now, of course, people have tried to count that in every way. People have said that “Mark of the Beast” is this and that and the other thing. It was the fasces on the dime years ago because the fasces was a Roman symbol of ancient Rome, the Roman Empire. And it was Franklin Roosevelt’s NRA, some people said. People normally read a thing like this and just make up in their own imagination what they think it is. But remember, the Bible itself

must interpret the Bible. The Bible must explain its own symbols. And we can't use our own ideas. If I give you my idea, I am not leading you properly

Now I want to show you something in the chain of events in the book of Revelation. We go back to the 6th chapter of the book of Revelation, and there you remember there were **the four horsemen**. And the first was a false Christ, those that were coming saying that they were the representatives of Christ – not that they were Christ, but they were the representatives of Christ – and deceiving many. They were preaching that Jesus was the Christ, and deceiving the many. After that came war, and then came famine, and then pestilence and death. Let's see first there were false Christs, then war, then famine, and then pestilence. That was the four horsemen. Now, let me see, we go back to the 6th chapter, and I want to begin now with verse 9.

***Revelation 6:9** And when he had opened the **fifth** seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that **were** slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held:*

Another Martyrdom Of Saints

Way back in the Middle Ages, some reports say there were **millions** that were killed because they would not bow down to worship the papacy and because they would not observe Sunday; and they kept the Sabbath instead of Sunday.

***Revelation 6:10** And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long O Lord, [faithful] and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?*

Now, they are dead; but it's like their blood is crying out for vengeance. Of course, they are dead. They don't know anything until the resurrection. But this is just as if they were like (It's all like an allegory.) as if they were crying out "Why don't you avenge our blood?" And God hasn't done it yet;

and that's been a thousand years, or more, ago since a lot of them were martyred.

Revelation 6:11 And white robes were given unto every one of them [And white robes always represent righteousness.]; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season [In other words, remain dead in their graves yet a little season.], until their fellow servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were [as they were killed], should be fulfilled.

In other words, there is going to be another martyrdom of saints. Now in ancient history, long before any of us were born, there were thousands and millions. It used to be sport in Rome. In fact, maybe several of you may have visited Rome; and you've gone into the great coliseum there where they used to throw Christians on a Sunday afternoon. It was the Sunday afternoon sport. They had lions that were real hungry. They let the lions get hungry, and then they turned the lions loose; and the Christians in the arena, no place for them to go. And the lions would get them, and tear them apart, and eat them up; and the people used to watch it with glee. As the lions tore them open, they would bleed; and the lions would eat them up.

Now that kind of thing has happened. We think that there's never been a time when people could be as fiendish and as evil as some things are now. I think perhaps they'd been more in the past. It just wasn't as widespread and general as it's got to be now. And so that is **the Great Tribulation**, and others are to be killed in the Great Tribulation. And that is representing the time sequence of the Great Tribulation, in the 6th chapter of Revelation.

Revelation 6:12-13 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal [What happens right after the Tribulation?] and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood; (13) And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth even as a

fig tree casteth her untimely figs...

Revelation 6:15-17 *And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich [This is the Day of the Lord. Now I want you to notice: rich] men, and the [great] captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains; (16) And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb; (17) For the great day of his wrath is come [That is, the Day of the Lord].*

The Sign Of The End

Now then, let me read you that very same thing back here in Matthew 24. In Matthew 24, I haven't marked this. I hadn't intended to use this, but I want to. Let me show you a time sequence. They were going to come, and there would people representing Christ (in verses 4 and 5). Many would come in Christ's name saying that Jesus is the Christ and deceiving the many, and all of these other things would be happening. Then in verse 14:

Matthew 24:14 *And this gospel [finally, this gospel] of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness to all nations; and then [will come the end of this world].*

Brethren, this is the Church that's doing that! And I have been doing it, and you've been backing me in doing it.

Now, what is next? Verse 21:

Matthew 24:21-22 *For then [right after that] shall be great tribulation such as was not since the beginning of the world to this [same] time, no, nor ever shall be. (22) And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved [alive]: but for the elect's sake those days [will] shall be shortened.*

In other words, it's going to be the Great Tribulation! Now, WE are proclaiming that WARNING. **WHILE WE HAVE BEEN PROCLAIMING THAT WARNING, 30 years** ago the hydrogen bomb was first produced – the **FIRST TIME** a weapon of mass destruction could wipe out all humanity on the face of the earth. And this says right after, immediately after that, will come the Great Tribulation. That's going to come as a result of the reformation of this empire over in EUROPE. **And it will be so BAD.** It'll be **NUCLEAR WORLD WAR III.** If God did not intervene, no one would be saved alive.

Now what's going to happen right after the Tribulation? How is He going to end that Tribulation? *“For the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.”* And we, brethren, are **the elect!** Notice:

Matthew 24:29-30 *Immediately after the tribulation of those days [verse 29] shall the sun be darkened [It's the same thing I read in Revelation 6, the sun be darkened] ...the moon shall not give her light... the stars [of heaven] shall fall... the powers of the heavens shall be shaken [Those powers are spiritual powers of Satan and his demons.]; (30) And THEN SHALL APPEAR the SIGN of the Son of man in heaven [They will see God sitting on His throne in heaven.]; and then shall all the tribes [or nations] of the earth mourn, AND THEY SHALL SEE the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory [the Second Coming of Christ].*

Brethren, we are the last thing triggering just before the Great Tribulation. The Great Tribulation is going to be brought on by this United States of Europe. It is not going to come by Russia, but by them. They will be a greater power than Russia or the United States. Now then, let's get back to some other things. I was reading out of the 6th chapter of Revelation just a moment ago. Now let's get back to the beginning of the 7th chapter. I want you to notice a few things.

Revelation 7:1 *Now after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding [up] the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth...*

The 144,000

Now, they are the winds that blow on the trumpets – the trumpet plagues that come just before. As a matter of fact, the trumpet plagues are the 7th seal. And the 7th trumpet is the 7 last plagues, and Christ comes at the time of the 7 last plagues. Now comes the sealing of the 144,000. And then, separate from that and a little later, is this (beginning with verse 9).

Revelation 7:9-10 *After this I beheld, and, lo, A GREAT MULTITUDE, which no man could number [The 144,000 appears to be this Church, brethren. And we're not that big yet, but we are getting that big, fast. "I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number"], of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and [different languages] ...stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes [He sees a vision that represents things on earth.], and palms in their hands; (10) And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.*

Revelation 7:13 *One of the elders [in verse 13] answered, saying unto me, What are these [that] are arrayed in [the] white robes? ... (14) [And he said] ...Sir, thou knowest. And he said unto me, These are they which came OUT OF [THE] GREAT TRIBULATION, [Now, modern translations say "the" great tribulation.] and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.*

That would be the Church. That would have to be the Laodicean Church that will follow this Church and come out of the Great Tribulation. Now, I want you to notice something in Revelation 20 and verse 4. Revelation 20

starts out with the angel taking Satan the devil and binding him a thousand years; but in verse 4:

***Revelation 20:4** And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus [Martyrs – both way back there several hundred years or over a thousand years ago, and **those yet to be martyred** during the coming Great Tribulation {6}.], and for the word of God, and which had **not** worshipped the **beast**, **neither** his [name], neither had received his mark [Now there's the mark of the beast again.] upon their foreheads or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.*

Those who **refuse** to have the mark of the beast will reign with Christ a thousand years. Now, plainly, the martyrs over a thousand years ago refused that mark. And there are others that are to be martyred in the future – in the next few years, maybe within a year and a half or two years from now. It could be that soon. So now let's go back to Revelation 14. The martyrs over a thousand years did {7} not receive the mark. Now let's see, Revelation 14 and verse 1.

***Revelation 14:1** And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having [the] Father's name written in their foreheads.*

Now where's the mark of the beast to be written? The mark of the beast will be stamped in the forehead and in their hand so that they can't buy or sell, or can't hold a job and have money to buy or sell. Now take verse 4, just to skip and get the important ones.

***Revelation 14:4** These are they which were not defiled with women; [and] they are virgins. [That is, spiritually speaking “not defiled with.” In other words, with the churches of this world; but are virgins from that point*

of view, plainly referring to this Church.] *These are they which follow the Lamb withersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men being the **firstfruits** unto God and to the Lamb.*

Again: we are the firstfruits, brethren. How many times do we see that, and we get that on the day of Pentecost. Now, beginning with verse 9:

Revelation 14:9-10 *And [There were now two angels with messages.] the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand [Here it is again, about the mark of the beast.], (10) the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb [at the Second Coming of Christ].*

IF YOU DO NOT RECEIVE THE MARK OF THE BEAST, you're tortured. You may be martyred. **IF YOU DO RECEIVE THE MARK OF THE BEAST**, then this [banging on the Bible] is going to happen to you! And brethren, every one of you may personally in the next 11/2 to 5 years, maybe 10 years... I can't set a date. But it's VERY, VERY IMMINENT NOW. And the time has come to WARN. **YOU'RE GOING TO HAVE TO MAKE A DECISION.** You'd better know what is the mark of the beast.

Revelation 14:11-12 *And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever; and they have no rest day (n)or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name [the mark of the beast]. (12) Here is the patience of the saints: here are they [Now these do NOT have the mark of the beast.] that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.*

The Mark And The Commandments

On the one hand are those who have the name of God in their forehead and, when it comes to work and things, they have the commandments of God. And one of those commandments tells you what day you can't use your hands in work, and that day is the **Sabbath** day. **IT HAS SOMETHING TO DO WITH THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD! Now why would Satan the devil use a church to try to make you break one of the commandments of God?** Satan is a great deceiver! Satan is a **great** deceiver. I want you to notice there are two classes. One will not [{8}](#) have the mark, and they will be martyred. And many things are going to happen to you by the police and the police state, and they are going to take over this country. If you are not killed in the war and the famine and pestilence that is coming and prophesied to come almost any time now, then you are going to face this.

But if you REJECT the mark... Let's see. Revelation 12:17. (12:17; I don't remember why I put that right in here.) Let's get that. Revelation 12:17, oh yes, that's it.

Revelation 12:17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have [the faith, or] the testimony of Jesus Christ.

That's the Word of God, the Bible. And what churches do have it? Brethren, I had to find out (way back there 56 years ago now) that the churches do not believe the Bible. They do not follow the Bible, but they preach precisely the opposite of the Bible. And when it comes right down to following the Bible, this is the only Church I know! The Sardis Church did as far as they went, but they didn't go far enough. They didn't even know what **is** the true gospel. They didn't know what will happen during the Millennium. They knew there would be a Millennium all right, but they didn't have the true gospel of the Kingdom of God. They don't know we could be born of

God. They had the Bible as far as they've got it, but they only have a little of it.

But now the martyrs did NOT have the mark of the beast. Those who obey the human government may save their human life, but they are going to suffer all these plagues that I've read to you here from God and will not make it into the Kingdom of God. Those who obey God may be tortured.

Let me tell you what kind of torture. They used to run needles right up under your fingernails and thumbnails, into the quick. And boy, that does hurt. All right, now let's get down to... I wanted to prepare you. Now I'll give you one. They would tie a rope around your wrists together. They would tie another rope around your ankles holding them together. The one rope would be hitched up to one horse. The other rope from your feet would be hitched to another horse. And they'd start the horses in opposite directions, and they'd pull you until they'd pull you apart. Actually would pull your legs, or your arms, right out of their sockets until you're pulled apart. That's the way they tortured people, until they died. It's so fiendish that I'd hate to tell you some of the things that have happened. And those things have happened, and former people have gone through that in order to keep the commandments of God.

Now the two-horned beast is merely a sort of enforcer. They enforce the mark. They compel obedience. And they don't kill anyone. They... You'll notice that they "*are drunk with the blood of the saints.*" But they didn't kill them. They "*caused them to be killed.*" They just simply announced them "anathema from Christ," and the government killed them; but they ruled the government.

Now, they are going to **compel disobedience** to God. But they are not going to compel you to lie. They are not going to compel you to commit adultery. They are not going to compel stealing. They are not going to compel

you to covet your neighbor's goods or your neighbor's wife. They will not compel you to dishonor your father and mother. They will not compel you to have other gods. (They might to worship idols, and they might not.) They won't compel you to use profanity. But I tell you what they will compel you to do – to observe Sunday, instead of the Sabbath.

Only One Commandment Altered

Now, they call the Sabbath “The Lord's Day.” They say the church **changed** it. And the church did change it, the Roman Catholic Church; but GOD DID NOT. Cardinal Gibbons of the Roman Catholic Church wrote in my earlier life... He's dead now, but I remember when he did. You see, he wrote this: “You may search the Bible from Genesis to Revelation, and you cannot find one word in the Bible authorizing the sanctification of Sunday. The Bible **everywhere** enforces the sanctification of Saturday, the 7th day of the week.” But he said, “You Protestants have to admit the AUTHORITY of the Roman Catholic Church that is BRANDED ON YOU WHEN YOU OBSERVE SUNDAY, BECAUSE YOU HAVE **NO OTHER AUTHORITY FOR SUNDAY BUT THAT OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.**” And it came out of the sun worship that they brought in. The so-called Christianity, they put the name of Christ on it. It has to affect one of the commandments of God.

Now what commandment affects your business? How many of our people have had to change their jobs (that has affected their job and their earning of a living and the buying or selling) because of the Sabbath? Now the Roman Catholic Council of Laodicea, that was 363 AD, they passed this. “Christians must not Judaize by resting on the Sabbath.” They called it “the Sabbath.” They didn't try to say... It's the Protestants that began to call Sunday ‘the Sabbath.’ The Roman Catholic Church never did. Rather they said, at this Council of Laodicea: “Christians must not Judaize by resting on

the Sabbath (That, they said, is Jewish.), but **must** work on that day, **resting rather on Sunday. But if any be found to be Judaizing, let them be declared anathema from Christ.**”

AND WHEN THE CHURCH CALLED THEM “ANATHEMA FROM CHRIST,” THE **GOVERNMENT OF THE HOLY ROMAN EMPIRE TORTURED THEM OR PUT THEM TO DEATH** if they didn’t obey and start to worship on Sunday. There is no question about it, brethren. And that has happened. It is the only commandment that they have altered. They haven’t altered the others, but they did try to alter this one.

Now I’d like to have you notice back in Daniel the 7th chapter and verse 25. And this is speaking of the Roman Catholic Church, among Daniel’s four beasts here. And there was to be a **small horn** that was to come among them, which was the papacy.

Daniel 7:25** And he shall speak great words against the most High [Isn’t that just like I read in Revelation?], and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change **times and laws...

You change the law in respect of time, and they changed the Sabbath into Sunday. And they changed the day from beginning at sunset, to beginning at midnight. And they changed the months from the new moons to the way it is. They’ve changed times all along, and it all came through the Roman Catholic Church.

***Daniel 7:25** ...think to change time and laws, and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.*

In other words, 1260 years. And they did that, carry it on for 1260 years.

Sabbath A Sign, Not A Mark

Now I want you to notice that the Sabbath is NOT a mark. It is a sign. And I want to show you there is a difference between a sign and a mark. A sign is something that a man hangs out in front of his business. “Jones & Company Furniture.” Now that identifies it, tells who owns it, tells what it is. It’s not a drug store. It is not a men’s clothing store. It’s a furniture store. A **sign** identifies. But a merchant hangs it out of his own accord. It is not branded on him. He takes that himself and puts it out. A sign is always something that you hang up yourself to identify. Or even a doctor would have a little neat sign outside of his door; but it identifies who is in there, who is in that room. Let’s turn back for a moment to Exodus 31, beginning with verse 12.

Exodus 31:12 And the Eternal spake unto Moses, saying,

I want you to notice that this is something. It is a covenant, and it’s eternal. And it has nothing to do with the Old Covenant. This is made **after** the Old Covenant was made. That means set apart for holy use and purpose. It IDENTIFIES WHO ARE GOD’S PEOPLE. IT IDENTIFIES GOD. Now, let’s read on. I’ll show you how.

*Exodus 31:14 You shall keep the Sabbath therefore; for it is **holy** unto you...*

The world doesn’t want to put any difference between the holy and the profane. This one Church is one Church that does, brethren; and you’ll have to begin to put a difference between the holy and the profane. The Sabbath Day is holy. Your first tithe, which is God’s tithe, is holy to Him. You are stealing if you use it. You are stealing if you use the Sabbath Day that belongs to God. It’s not your time. It’s God’s.

Exodus 31:14-15 You shall keep the Sabbath therefore for it is holy

*unto you; every one that defileth it shall (surely) be put to death: [Now that was, of course, in the nation Israel. It was a death penalty.] for whosoever doeth any work therein, that soul shall be cut off from among his people. (15) Six days may work be done; but (in) the seventh is the Sabbath of rest, **holy to the [Eternal]**; whosoever doeth any work in the Sabbath day, he shall surely be put to death.*

Now there is a death penalty in Israel if you don't **keep** the Sabbath. The beast now says there is a death penalty in THEIR law if you don't **break** the Sabbath. You see how Satan wants to contradict, and yet he wants to counterfeit and let a lot of people think it **is** the Sabbath.

***Exodus 31:16-17** Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath, to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations, for a **perpetual covenant**. [A PERPETUAL COVENANT. This is a COVENANT.] (17) *It is a sign between me and the children of Israel [That is, it identifies them as God's people. It identifies God. Why?] forever; for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and was refreshed.**

It doesn't say He created. He "made." And you'll find that many... He did create a few things. He created the land animals and people on that day. But He didn't "make" the earth at that time. He was remaking its surface, as you find in the 103rd Psalm and verse 30. Oh, there is so many of these little things that so many people in the churches of this world just don't understand in the Bible. But a sign identifies.

Israel Lost Their Sign

Now let me tell you a few things. Why do the Jews think they are Israel? Why is it that **OUR PEOPLE ARE ISRAEL, BUT DON'T KNOW WHO WE ARE?** Because the first thing that Jeroboam did, when Israel

rejected king Rehoboam, was to not only get rid of the priesthood (and the Levites went back and joined in with Judah); but he also changed the day of worship from Saturday to Sunday. And he went right along with the pagans over in Assyria that were observing the Chaldean MYSTERY RELIGION. And because they lost their sign that identified them, no one knew who they were; and they finally lost their own language, and they lost their identity.

Why do the Jews think they are Israel? Because they have kept the Sabbath through these centuries and years, and the Sabbath has branded them as Israel. But it's a sign they have voluntarily kept. No one forced them to do it. **BUT THE MARK OF THE BEAST, A MARK IS A BRAND.** It's branded on you, like you brand cattle. The cow doesn't ask you to do it. The cow doesn't do it voluntarily. You do it to him. And the **MARK** is one that is **MARKED** on you.

A mark also identifies, doesn't it? The sign identifies. Both a mark and a sign identify. One is the sign of God. The other is the mark of the beast. They both have something to do with the right hand and the forehead, with work. Christians, who have the sign of God, have the **name** of God – the **Church of God**, the name written on our foreheads. We have it in our hand. And you'll find that the commandments will be bound in their hand and in their forehead in other places in the Law of Moses when speaking of the commandments of God.

There is only one commandment that the world absolutely will not obey, and that is the Sabbath. The Sabbath is **GOD'S TEST COMMANDMENT**. That is the one that is the **TEST** above all. God's law is love to God and love to neighbor. You know, the carnal mind will often have a certain amount of love to other people. For example, a lot of husbands and wives, who are entirely carnal, get along because each is getting what he or she wants from the other. They can get along. Of course, too often they don't get along. It all depends on what they **get**, not what they **give**. But they don't

seem to want to have anything to do with God.

The Sabbath Question

You can't come to love God unless you **loveless** your own children, your father and mother, or those closest to you. Not that you have to "hate" them, as it says in the King James translation of the Bible. But the world doesn't realize that it makes any difference whether we love God or not. God's law is love. It's love divided into two divisions. The two great commandments: Love towards God (That's the first four of the Ten Commandments). Love toward neighbor (That's the last six.).

The Sabbath is the one that shows love towards God, and there is NO REASON IN THE WORLD to keep the Sabbath **except** it's holy to God and you are obeying God and keeping your foot off of the Sabbath (as He says I believe.... Let's see, is that the 56th chapter of Isaiah? It's one of the chapters of Isaiah). Keep your foot off of it from polluting it, mudding it all up.

Oh, I could preach you sermon after sermon after sermon about the Sabbath. And we've been taking it for granted, because we keep it and we just take it for granted. And I haven't been preaching much about the Sabbath in a good many years now, and I used to have to preach that subject more than anything back 50 years ago. But now we are coming to the place where you are going to see how important it is. There is no question whatsoever. I tell you, brethren, I'd... It just seemed like we didn't need to talk about this subject in our Church because we understood it. Another thing, the Sabbath question was a great question before the public 55 years ago.

But today it hasn't been so important. It's going to get important once again. So we haven't been talking about it much in this Church. We take it for granted. Well, don't take it for granted! It is VERY important! I think we need a few more sermons about the Sabbath, and I think that I am going to

preach a little more about it and also about the very immanency of these things. We are in the time now of **our final exams**. In fact, we have been for the last two or four or five years. I have been telling you that. But we are in that time, and there isn't much time to go.

I have some other things that I thought I would read to you about the coming of this Empire in Europe, but I just haven't had time. So I am not going to take time, because time is up now. But I want you to realize the seriousness of this, and the immanency of it; and the time of trial and testing is coming. And the time when we are going to have to be concerned about it, if we are going to have to get out of here and leave here. Leave this auditorium. I don't know what will happen to it. God will look after that. It's dedicated to Him. I think He'll take care of it whatever way He wants it done.

Very Imminent Now

We may have to all go someplace. I don't know how we are going to go. God's going to have to show us a lot of things He hasn't revealed yet. We're coming to the time. And we are going to come very shortly now to the time when, I tell you, the ministers of this Church are going to have to tell all you people in the congregation its better not to have more children from now on – because there is a curse pronounced on those who have either nursing babies or new babies that are that young at the time of this Great Tribulation. And it is going to come very soon now. I think it's bound to be one, two, three years at least. I don't think it's going to be here tomorrow or next week. Now don't misunderstand me. I'm not setting a date. I am just telling you it is VERY, VERY imminent.

I wish I had time to read you some letters here. And there is one very important man that has a lot to do with this getting of Europe together. Well, he is one of the two most important men; and he is going to come. He wants

to have a meeting with me, and I just missed a meeting with him on this last trip.

But there is to be plenty of meetings of the European Parliament, which is that division of the people of the Common Market trying to get this together as **a political union**. And their meetings, it's the same as the San Francisco Conference that drew up the Charter for the United Nations. And they expect to have their charter for that all completed by (I believe it was... Now I forget the date again. I had it given to me again yesterday.) it was in early March. I think the 7th or 8th of March, something like that. It's supposed to be completed by that time.

Now things are going together faster than you realize, and most of it is not hitting the public press. You aren't going to read of it for a while in the public press, but I get it confidentially from those on the inside. And I have fortunately had access to them. And I want to tell you that it is moving. They say it is not moving fast enough for them. They are very disappointed that it isn't moving faster, but they are putting everything back of it that they can. And we've got to put everything back of **getting ourselves ready** that we can.

I am going to have to declare a time of fasting and prayer in the next two or three weeks, but I am not going to do that this minute today. I want to think it over; and I'll send it out in a general letter to the whole membership and at least to the ministers, who will announce it in their respective churches. So it'll be maybe just a week or two.

From NOW ON, brethren, UNTIL THE KINGDOM OF GOD, IT'S NOT GOING TO BE ALL peaches and cream. If you think it's going to be just all beautiful, and everything is hotsy-totsy and dandy, **FORGET IT**. WE'RE IN FOR NOTHING BUT TROUBLE, AND THE **WHOLE WORLD IS**. But we are on God's side; and that means He is on our side,

doesn't it? And we need to get a little better on His side, and we are going to have to do some fasting and praying. And I'm going to set aside a time for fasting and prayer in the next few Sabbaths.

So that's it for now, brethren. But whatever you do, keep close to God from now on because I want to tell you that times are different; and the Devil knows he has but a short time. Now maybe we don't know it. We better wake up to the fact that he does only have a short time, and that means we only have a short time to be ready.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong had a false start here. "And of the things I..." was thus deleted.

[{2}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong originally said 1948 here, then corrected himself.

[{3}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong originally said 7 here, then corrected himself and said "four."

[{4}](#) - Editor's Note: The chart can be found in the booklet – WHO IS THE "BEAST"?

[{5}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong originally said "under" but corrected himself to "before."

[{6}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong repeated the previous part of this verse again.

[{7}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said "received" instead of "did not receive."

[{8}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said "have" here, instead of "not have."

Spiritual Health Checkup

Sermon (April 1983) – given before Passover
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Spiritual Health Checkup.....	1360	Difference In Human Mind	1377
Proof Of The Bible	1362	God Reveals Through His Spirit	1378
Mystery Of The Church	1363	Ingenuity Of The Human Mind	1380
Bible: Source Of All Truth	1367	Adam Rejected The Tree Of Life	1381
Plural Of The Word ‘God’	1370	Prince Of The Power Of The Air	1383
New Knowledge	1371	Jesus Came To Start God’s World	1385
Revealing Yhwh Elohim	1373	Only Heirs Now	1387
The Physical Creation	1375	Repentance Needed First	1388

Last night in the Bible Study I was reading to you from I Corinthians the 11th chapter and verse 22. I would like to read it again. In verse 28, I should say – verse 28.

***I Corinthians 11:28** But [and this is just before the Passover, but] let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread and drink of that cup.*

So we are commanded to examine ourselves just prior to the Passover and before we take it, but the command **is** to take it. I mentioned last night that it is a very safe thing to have a health checkup at least once a year. It is more necessary to have a spiritual checkup, and this is the time for that spiritual checkup. Also we should examine why we have the Passover service. Examine what it means. Why do we have it? What is the significance? What does it mean?

You know the pagan holidays and their special annual services have no meaning whatsoever. Actually, Easter does not celebrate the resurrection of Christ. He was not resurrected on a Sunday. Good Friday does not celebrate His crucifixion. He was crucified on a Wednesday and not on a Friday. He

rose late on the Sabbath day, not on a Sunday. Christmas does not represent the birth of Jesus Christ. He was not born at that season of the year, but considerably earlier.

The festivals of God all have a very, very important meaning. I said the question that I had questioned, back when I was first challenged about the Sabbath question, I questioned whether God exists. I had been challenged not only on the fact of the Sabbath. When my wife had listened as well ... She had listened to a neighbor lady but allowed this lady to have her turn to certain scriptures and read them aloud; and they plainly said to her that she'd been keeping the wrong day, and the Sabbath was God's day. Jesus said He was Lord of the Sabbath, so therefore the Sabbath is the Lord's Day. A lot of people don't think. They think Sunday is the Lord's Day; and, of course, there is nothing in the Bible making a statement of that sort at all.

But I was challenged at the same time on the theory of evolution, which at that time (It was back in the fall of 1926.) was just coming to be widely accepted in all higher education, in all college and university teaching. As I delved into the doctrine of evolution and the writings of its advocates, I found them somewhat convincing. Their arguments, however, were based on a false premise that had been carelessly taken for granted; and everybody seemed to just assume.

I began to question: does God exist? I had been taught from childhood about God; and I just realized I took God for granted, that I had never proved whether there is a God. Now I said, "I have to prove it. I have to know. I have to prove if evolution is true." There are two theories of origin. Today, the one accepted theory in the world and in all of higher education is the theory of evolution. The other is not a theory. That is the one that in educational circles they call "special creation" – or it is the historic fact that is recorded in the 1st chapter of Genesis.

Proof Of The Bible

I proved the Bible account to be true. I proved the existence of God. Then, after I had **disproved** evolution and **proved** the existence of God, the next thing I wanted to know: could I rely on the Bible? As a matter of fact, it was things that I saw in the Bible that pretty largely convinced me of the existence of God. Among them were promises that God made to the ancient Abraham, and how He has kept them in a manner that the world doesn't seem to understand. But it is quite evident and does stand proved. Is the Bible God speaking?

Now at the same time I said, "I want to also now examine the writings of other religions." There was the Koran of the Islamic religion and the whole Arab world. Then the writings of the Buddha and the writings of the ... (Oh, what was the name? Another oriental religion.) I decided to look into those also. I **proved** the authority of the Bible. I proved that the Bible is God speaking. I proved that Jesus Christ is the Word of God in person, and that the Bible is the same Word of God in writing, and that there is no difference between Jesus in person and what He said and what is said in the Bible. It is Him speaking in print.

The Bible reveals God. It reveals who and what God is. Also the Bible reveals the truth about humans. Now, incidentally, I found this as I studied further: that no religion knows who and what God is. The followers of Islam don't know who and what God is. They call Him "Allah," and they know that there is some God; but they don't understand. I'm going to show you, in one of his writings in just a moment, that even in the Koran it does speak of God in the plural, as more than one person; but they still don't understand it. The other religions, the oriental religions, simply do not know who or what God is.

You would think the Christian religion would understand it. But the

Christian religion (that is known as Christianity in this world) does not know who and what God is. Roman Catholics, and I think primarily Protestants, believe God is a Trinity – God in three persons. God Himself does **not** reveal Himself in that manner at all! They still don't know who and what God is.

Now another thing, they also do not know what humans are or why. How did we come to be here? What are human beings and why are we here? Also they don't understand what is this world. How did it come to be? Why is it and why is it as it is? Why is the world a world of awesome progress, today especially in this 20th Century, at the same time with the crazy paradox? It doesn't make any sense at all. While it's a world of amazing progress, it also is a world of appalling evils and troubles and suffering and everything wrong. It's going backward farther than it is going forward, and how can you go forward and backward both at the same time? This world is really doing that, and it is a mystery. It's a mystery that they don't understand.

Mystery Of The Church

Now you might say the church ... The Church is also a mystery, and it's spoken of as a mystery in the Bible. It's something they don't understand; and, brethren, I wonder if we have understood it? It is not generally understood. Who and what is God? What and why is mankind? What is this world? Why is it like it is, and what causes that? What and why is the Church? What is it? So many people, I think most people, think the Church is a building with a very steeply sloping roof and a steeple pointing heavenward and a cross on the facade of it (a pagan sort of a building) and that the people go to church instead of the Church going to a building (or congregational worship). It is a mystery, and they do not understand it.

I'd like to read you a little from the Koran (that is, one of these

religions). One thing about the Koran, their people believe the Koran. One thing they believe in the Arab world about Christians, they look at Christianity as a sort of Sunday-only religion. The people observe Sunday, and they don't know why they do. And that's true. They observe it; and for some people that are supposed to be good, they go to church, and of course most people aren't good anyhow so they don't go to church.

But it's a time for sports, games, anything like that. It's a time though when you lay off your work and enjoy yourself in sports and fun and whatever. But I have here some quotes from the authorized English translation of the Koran. It's from their book Sura chapter 7, verses 11 and 12; and this is quoting the same thing that the Bible quotes in Genesis 1 and 2, or primarily in the 2nd chapter of Genesis about the Two Trees. And this is what they quote, and this is supposed to be God speaking (or "Allah" as they call Him). By the way, to them, Allah does not mean a different God. They think of Him as the same God as Christians are supposed to think of – only they don't understand Him, and Christians don't either.

Allah is only the Arabic language name, just like Elohim is the Hebrew name. Well, for example, we have the name "Henry" in English, and in German it would be "Heinrich." It's the same name, but in the German language. Allah is the same name, but in the Arabic language. So they quote Allah as saying:

"And **we** created [not I but **we** created] **you** [meaning man], then fashioned you, then told the angels 'fall ye prostrate before Adam;' and they fell prostrate, all save Eblous, [which meant Satan] who was not of those who make prostration."

Now the reason that is there is because Islamics are required to make themselves prostrate three or four times every day before their god, Allah. Now they go through the motion, but I don't think anything of any great

significance goes through their minds at that time. It is just an exercise they go through, and I have seen them doing it over in those countries. And it continues:

“He said, ‘What hindered thee [That is, Allah is supposed to have said to Satan: ‘What hindered thee ... ’] that thou didst not fall prostrate when I bade thee?’ Eblous said, ‘I am better than him, thou created me of fire whilst him thou didst create of mud.’”

Instead of the dust of the ground, they use the word mud. Now it continues on:

“And unto man he said, ‘Oh Adam, dwell thou and thy wife in the garden [And so he mentions the Garden of Eden there.] and eat from whence ye will; but come not nigh this tree lest ye become wrong doers.’ And Satan whispered to them that he might manifest unto them that which was hidden from them of their sin. And he said, ‘Your Lord forbad you from this tree only, lest ye should become angels and become of the immortals.’ And he swore unto them [That is, Satan swore to Adam and Eve.] saying, ‘Lo, I am a sincere advisor unto you.’” [Well, they had that much right: he posed as an angel of light. “I am a sincere advisor to you.”] “Thus did he lead them on with guile. And when they tasted of the tree their shame was manifest to them and they began to hide.”

Now you will notice there that God is supposed to have said that, **if** you take of the forbidden fruit, you will become wrongdoers. There is nothing said about **death**, because Mohammed wrote and taught them that you are an immortal soul. He still believes Satan’s lie; and, of course, the Islam religion believes that. So they can’t put it into the mouth of God (or Allah) that “*you would surely die.*”

God Is A Mystery

They don't understand the purpose of life. They don't know God's purpose. They don't know God's master plan. They don't understand this world. They don't understand who and what God is; what and why man is. They don't understand any of these things. They don't understand about this world.

They do follow their religion. They do believe their bible, the Koran; and they follow it exactly. And the one thing they won't tolerate is anyone saying anything against the Koran. They think it is holy and sacred, much more than Christians do the Bible.

Well, I think it's time that we come to understanding and know the things that seem to be a mystery to the world and hidden from the world, but **God reveals them**. Now the Bible is the Word of God, and in the Bible God reveals Himself. There is a reason why He reveals Himself to us and not to the world as a whole. There is a reason why the whole Arab world (Well, its a few hundred million people.) believes this false religion. And you can see that whoever wrote the Koran knew something about the Bible but didn't believe it and twisted it around his own way. The forbidden fruit is mentioned. They refer to the Two Trees.

Now Buddha, for example, wrote about human good principles and morals. And his is merely a teaching about human-devised good teachings and morals that the human mind is capable of devising and understanding. I want to explain that now in just a moment as we go along. But there is no revelation **of** God or **from** God in the writings of Buddha, nor in the writings really of the Koran, and no understanding. Then, (I'm trying to think of that other oriental religion that's quite popular, the same one) ... Confucius. They are just sayings of Confucius; but it could not be an **inspired Word of God** where God is revealing Himself and revealing things that are a mystery to the world.

I say the world doesn't understand who and what God is. They don't understand why and what man is. They don't understand the world. Those things are a mystery. Now God does **reveal** all of those things, and no other religious writing does reveal them. That's what I want you to understand. There is no supreme authority but the Holy Bible! Even that is not generally understood, and I want to show you a little bit why this afternoon.

Bible: Source Of All Truth

There is no revelation of the Family relationship of God, of the purpose of God, and the purpose of human life and why we were created and why we were born, why we are here, where we are going and what is the way – none whatsoever. Nor is there any in this world's Christianity. They do not believe the Bible. They teach precisely the opposite in most essentials.

I was brought up to believe that I was an immortal soul, not that I *"would surely die."* I believed if I sinned I would live forever in hell fire, that that was the wages of sin. I didn't believe that *"the wages of sin is death."* Neither did I believe that eternal life was *"the gift of God through Jesus Christ."* I thought I already had eternal life. I believed I would go to heaven – while Jesus said, *"No man has ascended up to heaven."* The Bible teaches that the righteous shall not inhabit, but the righteous [{1}](#) *"shall inherit the earth"* and dwell therein forever.

Now the Christian religion doesn't teach that, and I wasn't brought up to believe that. I was brought up to believe the Protestant religion. The human mind can come to certain principles, ethics, lofty ideas, and so on. But it can also have a lot of evil in it, and a lot of selfishness; and it is essentially selfish (the normal natural mind) although even a selfish mind can have certain good principles and ideas. The human natural mind is capable of that. There is a difference between human natural mind and a spirit-filled and a

spirit-led mind (very great differences).

All of the knowledge and the purpose of life is revealed in the Bible, and we begin for example in John the 1st chapter and the first 4 verses in the New Testament and in the beginning of the Two Trees. You have to go back to **origins**. Evolution is the subject of origins. That's where God started me. I was challenged on this subject of origins when I was challenged about the Sabbath. God rested on the Sabbath day because in 6 days He had created the heavens and the earth and rested on the 7th day. The Sabbath day is merely a memorial of Creation, and it has something to do with origins. Evolution has a great deal to do with origins.

So the very beginning of my teaching and training, and when God first called me, was on this subject of origins. If you don't find out how it began, and what has happened since, and get the purposes – you simply can't understand. That's why all of these things are a mystery to most people in the world. Now most people just don't want to know. They shut up their minds and say, "Don't bother me. I don't know about that. I want to go see this basketball this afternoon" (or tonight, or this baseball game, or whatever). "I'm only interested in the prize fight. I want some of this world's activities."

But we begin in the Bible really in the New Testament – in the first chapter of John, verse 1 on to 4:

John 1:1-3 In the beginning was the Word [That is a personage.] and the Word was with God [God is another personage. Now we have two persons.], and the Word was God. [They're both God; but they are two different persons, and each one is God.] (2) The same was in [The Word is "the same" there.] in the beginning with God. (3) All things were made by him [That is, the Word.]; and without him was not anything made that was made.

Now who is this Word? In verse 14 it says:

John 1:14 *The Word was made flesh and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.*

The Word then is the one who was born of the Virgin Mary as a human infant, grew up and became Jesus the Christ from Nazareth. And it says in verse 4:

John 1:4 *In him was life; and the life was the light of men.*

So in God was life, and in the Word was life. Now in John 4:24 you read that "God is a Spirit." God is composed of **Spirit**. But now we turn back to Genesis 1 and verse 1, and here we find the beginning mentioned in another place; but this is second in time order.

Genesis 1:1 *In the beginning God created the heaven(s) ...*

And it should be heavens; and the only translation I know of that gives the singular there ("heaven") is the King James. All other translations, so far as I know, have it "heavens;" and it is in the Hebrew original. Moses wrote it "heavens," and it should be "heavens" – plural. "In the beginning God ..." Now the word for God that Moses wrote ... He didn't write in the English language.

You know that makes me think of my Quaker grandmother, because I was born and raised in the Quaker Church; and, of course, the generation of my parents didn't still speak like the generation ahead of them had. But my grandmother was of the generation before, and she never said "you" or "yours." She said "thee" and "thou" and "thine" and so on. She used that kind of language.

I was in impudent little boy, as a little boy. And I said to my grandma one time, I said: "Grandma, why do you say {2} thee and thine instead of you and yours?" And she said, well, she wanted to speak just like Jesus did. Well,

of course, there wasn't any English language when Jesus lived as a human. He was speaking in Hebrew, and He spoke somewhat in Greek; and all of the New Testament was written in the Greek language. Although Jesus spoke many of the things in the Hebrew, in the writing of it the New Testament, the things He said, the writers wrote it in the Greek language; and we have that translated into the English language. Now the "thee" and the "thy" is merely the King James type of English of about 400 and some years ago; and the English language has changed in 400 years. We don't use it that way any more.

Plural Of The Word 'God'

But now something else has come within the last week. I have always said: *"In the beginning God"* and the Hebrew word was "Elohim" and that "Elohim" was a uniplural type of word. Like the word Church: One Church, but many members. One God, but the two persons (God and the Word): That it was like a sports team of some kind. It might be one team; but nine players, or five players, or eleven players, or whatever but only the one team.

Now I find in the Hebrew that is not correct; and I received that from a student that I believe knows what he is talking about; and I am perfectly willing to accept that. So it is the PLURAL of God. The singular is Eloah, and Elohim (adding 'im' on the end of Eloah) pluralizes it; but does not make a uniplural. It is just plural of the word God. Eloah is God. This then is "Gods." Now in the Koran where God is quoted He said "we." And you notice in verse 26 here:

Genesis 1:26 ... *God [or Elohim] said, Let us make man in our image*

...

There is more than one person there. Now that's what we're confronted with. It is speaking of the Word and God, exactly as you find in John 1:1.

Now it doesn't change the actual meaning. It's merely a matter of grammar and getting the grammar correct. It is **not** a uniplural. And the two persons do... Through begetting us through the Spirit of God, and when we are born of God, we become a Family; and God is a Family. For example, there is the human family; but two humans are not one family. They are two humans, or five humans, or ten humans, or whatever. And the two Gods are two Gods. That's just God and the Word. It's just that simple. But They are a Family.

There's the angel family. There's the human family. There's the animal family, or kingdom. So then we have an animal kingdom. (And it's called a kingdom right along. We're all familiar with that.) There can be an angel kingdom. There's a human kingdom. There's a God kingdom, and we're going to be born into the God Kingdom. And it is a Family relationship! That's what it will become. The one who is called God will be Father of that Family.

Jesus is the Son of God by a first birth by the Virgin Mary as a human being. Then He was born **again**, this time born of the Spirit (as you read in Romans 1 and verse 4) – and, by the Spirit, born of God and **became** very God. And He is God! He is spoken of as God in the first chapter of Hebrews where it is quoted as saying; *“Thy throne, O God ...”* speaking of Christ. So Christ is God. The Father is God; but Jesus, who **is** God and was God in the human flesh, and He was also called Immanuel {3}, and Immanuel merely means ‘God with us’ in the human form. That's what it means. But *“In the beginning God [or it is the two who are Gods] created the heavens and the earth.”*

New Knowledge

Now then, if you look ... I want to give you something new that is new knowledge for us just within the past week. God keeps revealing additional

things. See if that changes any understanding or any truth. It doesn't at all. The earth was in a very chaotic condition "*without form and void.*" The Hebrew words are 'tohu' and 'bohu,' and it means waste and empty, decayed and in a condition of that sort.

Genesis 1:2-3 ... *darkness was upon the face of the deep.* [There was no land. It was all ocean, and it was dark.] *And the spirit of God moved upon the waters. (3) And God said, let there be light and there was light.*

God said. Elohim said. Well, which person said it – God or the Word? The one who later was called the Son, or the one who was called the Father after Jesus was born? In this case, it is the Word. Jesus said when He was on earth as the Word of God and as Immanuel (or God with us); He said, "*I have spoken nothing of myself, the Father which sent me ... He told me what to say and what to speak.*" (John 12:49) He has spoken His Father's words faithfully.

So His Father had **told** Him to say this, and He is the one who said it; and the Holy Spirit is the power that did what He said and obeyed that Word. But it came from God the Father through Christ, and the Holy Spirit performed it. Then later He said, "*Let the dry land appear.*" Well, that was the one who later became Christ who said that. Now then we come down a little later to verse 24.

Genesis 1:24 *And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind ... [And so on.]*

Well, who said that? The Word did. He said it as the Father had told Him to say it. But this is the Word speaking, and it happened. Now to verse 26:

Genesis 1:26 *And God said; Let us make man in our image ...*

There it looks like one of the two that form God is speaking to the other

and said “Let us do something.” Now would that be Christ the Word speaking to God the Father and suggesting, “Well, I’ve got an idea. Look, I tell you Father, let **us** do this. This is MY idea.” Is that the way you would interpret that? By no means whatsoever! That was God the Father speaking. Elohim there is the two, and it could be either one of the two speaking. But you have to determine by what is in the sentence, and as you find it explained in other places in the Bible, which one of the two was doing the talking. This was the Father saying to the Word “*Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.*”

Revealing Yhwh Elohim

So the idea of the creation of man came from GOD, the one who became the Father of Christ and who is our heavenly Father. We then are the product of God the Father. ”*And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion ...*” Then, in chapter 2, another name is introduced.

Genesis 2:1-3 *Thus the heavens and the earth were finished and all the host of them. (2) And on the seventh day God [rested {4}] His work which he had made ... [That’s Elohim rested on the seventh day after the work which He had made.] and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. (3) And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.*

Now who did that work? Read the next verse.

Genesis 2:4 *These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the [now here you have another word] **LORD** God ...*

The word “LORD” is in all caps, but capital letters and not lower case

letters; and that means that it comes from the Hebrew word, Yhwh. And the word God here is Elohim – the **Yhwh** Elohim. Now the Yhwh Elohim is the one who became Christ. Now it speaks definitely of the Word under the name Yhwh.

Genesis 2:4 *These are the generations of the heavens [plural] and of the earth [in the day] when **they** ...”*

Not just the earth; but “they,” including the whole universe. “*When they were created*” – all in the same day! That means that the earth was created at the same time as all the rest of the Universe. I don’t think that God had ever created matter prior to that time. There is no record of it. This is the first record of the creation of matter in history, right here when “they” – the whole Universe – was created.

”*In the day the YHWH Elohim*” or the Eternal God (because Yhwh really means Ever Living or Eternal; and the one who became Christ made the earth and the heavens)... So it was Christ who made it. It was God who said: ”*Let us make man,*” however. It was Yhwh who had done the speaking, but He only spoke as God had told Him. Now then if we read on:

Genesis 2:5 *And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew [In other words, they were already bearing grain and fruit at the time they first started at the creation.]; for the (Eternal) God [or Yhwh God] had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground.*

So there wasn’t time to plant a lot of things and till the ground and wait till it grew so it was a harvest. In other words, it was in the fall; and the harvest was all there with the fruit and vegetables and things for the man and the woman that God was going to create to eat. Now read right on.

Genesis 2:6-7 *But there went up a mist from the earth and watered the*

whole face of the ground. (7) And the [Yhwh Elohim, which is Christ] formed man of the dust of the ground ...

Now put it together. It was God the Father who said, “*Let us make man in our image.*” But Christ spoke only **as the Father told Him**. So it was **Christ who formed man**; but God is the one who said [{5}](#), “*Let us make man in our image after our likeness.*” So, in verse 27:

Genesis 1:27 So God [or Elohim] **created** man ...

Now there is a difference here. Some of these verses use the word “made” and others use the word “create.” There is a distinction, and you need to get that distinction if you want to really understand the Bible. It’s most necessary to understand this beginning if you are going to understand what has happened since and what is now to understand the present. It’s very necessary to understand these things. Now:

The Physical Creation

Genesis 2:7, 9 And the Eternal God [{6}](#) formed man of the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life: and man became a living soul [Just this kind of temporary life, but not an immortal soul. He was mortal.] ... (9) And out of the ground (caused the Yhwh God) [and that was the one who became Christ, or the Logos] to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden and the tree of [the] knowledge and good and evil.

And then coming down to verse 16:

Genesis 2:16 And the (Eternal) God commanded the man saying [Now here is what the Word said as God the Father had told Him.], *Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat (17) But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it; for in the day that thou eatest thereof*

thou shalt surely die.

Now that was Christ saying that, but He said only what God the Father had told Him to. So now we have that all straight. Now I've gone into this so many, many times we don't need to go over that again. The first man was created, but his creation was not physically complete. God wanted him to reproduce and have children. As I've said before, the poor man couldn't do it. A man can't have children by himself. It was just one man. That was the only human being on earth. God had to provide the wife and create her too. But He made her from one of Adam's ribs.

Now man was **physically** complete, and the two became one physically; but they weren't one mentally or spiritually. That's why we have so many troubles today and why so many marriages break up. They become one physically, and they were one physically. In each one was a mind; and, as I've said before, God creates in **dual** stages – sort of a one-two punch.

A few of you used to be Lakers fans years ago. The Lakers had a one-two punch (They are all retired now. They are not on the team I guess any longer.), and it was Gerry Westin/Alvin Baylor. They called it a one-two punch because they were the ones that got most of the baskets and made the scores. Well, God creates in that form – a sort of a one-two punch, if you want to call it that.

The mind was not complete. It was first just physical, but it also had a spirit. So there was a spiritual content in that mind as God created it, but still it was not complete. Now the human mind: we know now from the newer science of brain research (scientific knowledge that has come recently) the human brain is just the same as an animal brain. The cow has a brain just like you do, or an elephant, a chimpanzee, a whale or a dolphin. The whale, the dolphin, and the elephant all have bigger brains than you do – a chimpanzee just slightly smaller, other animals still smaller (some of them). They're of

the same composition, but the difference is they are not minds.

Difference In Human Mind

Human mind is brain plus spirit. Now there is no spirit in the animal. It's just brain only. It is physical only. There is nothing spiritual in an animal. But then man IS a spiritual type being. He is created with A SPIRIT IN HIM, and he is BORN with a spirit in him.

I've said before we don't know (I believe, wasn't it last night I mentioned that? Recently I did.) at what time the spirit enters the human brain. It has to be one of three times, and I have always thought that the most logical is at the first breath because breath and air are both the same word in both the Greek language and the Hebrew language. Air or breath – it is “pneuma” in, let's see, that's the Greek I think. What's the word in the Hebrew? Maybe I forget that, as well as names I guess. Anyway, it is the same word for air or for spirit.

And Christ, in speaking to Nicodemus, likened even the Holy Spirit to air or wind. Spirit is likened to wind in a sense. God likened the Holy Spirit to water, and pouring out of water. He talked ... He said the time would come when He would “*pour out His Spirit.*” It'll be poured on “*all flesh.*” And Jesus called the Holy Spirit “*rivers of living water*” on one or two occasions. So it moves, and is fluid, and also it is sort of like being gaseous in nature. It is not a spirit being. It is not a ghost. It is not a spirit person. It is spirit essence within each one.

Now it either enters with the first breath, or it could enter at the time the heart begins to beat. Something has to trigger and spark the heart and cause it to begin to beat. It could be that the spirit enters at that time during pregnancy. That's about the time (somewhere near the time) between what is called the embryo and the fetus, after about 4 months after conception. Or it

could be at the time that the male sperm fertilizes (meets with) and sparks life into (or that kind of life into) the female ovum.

Now God doesn't tell us when or how the spirit enters, but there is a **spirit in man**. And that He says in many places: the 32nd chapter of Job, and 2nd chapter of I Corinthians and many, many places in the Bible. In the 8th chapter of Romans, God's Spirit witnesses with **our** spirit (the spirit in us) that we are the sons of God. That's a spiritual knowledge, and so on.

Now I've said so many times that the human mind with a human spirit it can acquire physical knowledge, but it cannot acquire the spiritual knowledge of the things God has in store for us – of God's purpose, of God's program and of what God is going to do. There is **NO WAY** that a natural carnal mind can come to understand or know that. In, let me see, I Corinthians 2 and verse 9:

***I Corinthians 2:9** ...eye has not seen ... ear [has not] hear, [nor has it] entered into the mind {7} of man, the things which God hath prepared for [those] that love him.*

God Reveals Through His Spirit

The natural mind cannot come and see them. In verse 14 it says that they are foolishness to the natural mind, but in verse 10 it says **GOD reveals** those things. Now, not the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit doesn't do the revealing. GOD does. And God reveals it through Christ, His Word. But God reveals those things to us. **HOW? BY HIS SPIRIT IN US!** Does God reveal it then to the average PhD in a University in the great minds of this world? Oh no, they don't have the Holy Spirit, and God does **not** reveal it to them.

God does the revealing, but you can't understand what He reveals. You have ears to hear if it's spoken, and you have eyes to see if you read. You

have all of the five senses, and the only way knowledge comes into the human mind is through one of those five senses. But the natural mind, no matter how good that mind is or how highly educated, **cannot** know the things of God and the things that God has prepared for us.

The one who wrote the Koran didn't know that, and so he doesn't reveal any of those things. He didn't know it; and the whole Arab world is in darkness, and they don't know those things. And the Christian world has the Bible, and GOD SAYS IT HERE. BUT THEY DON'T HAVE THE HOLY SPIRIT, AND THEY CAN'T COMPREHEND IT. HERE IS GOD SPEAKING IN THIS BOOK. BILLY GRAHAM HAS IT. HE DOESN'T UNDERSTAND IT. JERRY FALWELL has it; and when he reads God can speak to him, but he doesn't understand it because God reveals to us BY HIS SPIRIT. And if they don't have God's Spirit, they cannot understand it. Now I am not making statements to accuse them one-way or the other. I am not trying to judge whether they have God's Spirit or not. I just say you know them by their works, you know them by their fruits.

Now Adam ... Let's get on with this. Adam had never committed a sin when God first created him and when he had to make a choice. God had these Two Trees. God talked to him and gave him a command: "Don't take of that Tree." Now we know God had been talking to him, and all that God said it not revealed. God could not have said "You will surely die" under the condition (if you take that) unless God had explained about **the law** – because He was pronouncing the penalty of that law on condition; and if He hadn't explained about His Law to Adam, He couldn't have said that.

Even though it isn't recorded in words here in Genesis, I know that God explained about His Law – that sin is the transgression of the law of God, and the law of God is love; and its love to God first of all, and then love to neighbor. What this world leaves out is love to God. They have a certain kind of love to neighbor. There are certain principles you know that the human

carnal mind can have: principles of honesty and morality and certain integrity and things of that sort. The natural mind of man can have those things, but they still are selfishly motivated.

Mother love even is selfishly motivated. She loves her child, but it's like part of her. The child came out of her and she has fed it. She nourished it. It's hers. So there is a little bit of carnality in that. Now even carnality can have good principles, but what carnality can't have is the knowledge of what God has in store for us and cannot have the **LOVE OF GOD**. That's a different **KIND** of love. That's the love that is only "*shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit*" Romans 5:5. The **LOVE OF GOD** is spread abroad in our heart **BY THE HOLY SPIRIT** and no other way.

Most of us don't have that kind of love. That's the kind of love that loves even your enemies and prays for them that "*despitefully use you and persecute you.*" That's not carnal love. So what about the natural mind of man? No matter how lofty its ideals, no matter how honest it wants to be or tries to be, no matter what good morals – the natural mind of man, "*the carnal mind is enmity (which means hostile) against God* " and "*is not subject to the law of God neither indeed can be.*" Romans 8 verse 7.

Ingenuity Of The Human Mind

Now there can be a certain amount of good in the natural carnal mind, up to a certain point; but **IT IS NOT THE LOVE OF GOD**. That love is **ONLY GIVEN BY GOD**, and it's the love **ADDED** to the love we already have, and it is the love that comes by the Holy Spirit. Now, I said that God had not finished the creation of the human mind. He only put **ONE** spirit in man. That's the human spirit, and that is capable of a selfish love; but it is also capable of hate, of wrath, or anger, of animosity, or envy and jealousy, of competition and strife and selfishness and of great evil.

The natural mind of man is capable of anything from mother love and high moral principles and integrity to the basest of human motives. Without the Spirit of God he is capable; and God CREATED man capable of all of those things beside the capability of acquiring physical knowledge. That's why man with that kind of knowledge has produced awesome things out of physical matter. He is able to solve even going into outer space and going to the moon and back; making of an automobile and airplane, all of the marvelous machines that they have, the marvelous computer. And man has invented many things.

And now I see one thing else added. We thought we'd reached the ultimate when the hydrogen bomb came. That could destroy a city as big as New York or London, a thousand times more powerful and more destructive than the atom bombs that destroyed Hiroshima and Nagasaki in Japan. Now they are beginning to produce (and its coming out of Russia, and the United States is behind Russia but coming along on it scientifically) laser beams that can be shot from outer space and can wreck things and be far more destructive than even the hydrogen bomb. And you wonder what man is going to come to in his destructiveness finally. You'd better stand aghast at that. (Now I don't think you've read that in any newspaper or magazine yet. That's one of the latest things. I think it has been in one or two scientific magazines, but you probably didn't happen to read one of those.)

Adam Rejected The Tree Of Life

Now where are we? Adam made the wrong choice; and, as a result, God closed UP the Holy Spirit (the Tree of Life) which was offered to him. The Holy Spirit would have revealed the KNOWLEDGE of the things of God. The Holy Spirit would have given him spiritual understanding. The Holy Spirit would have given him the love of God – a DIFFERENT KIND of love, SPIRITUAL LOVE (not carnal love).

The Holy Spirit would have impregnated him with **God-Life**, with immortality, self-containing inherent life; but he didn't get the Holy Spirit. He was SHUT OFF from the Holy Spirit. So that was the foundation of the world. God SHUT UP the Holy Spirit from mankind; and, as a result, man ever since has not, on the whole, wanted to have any relationship with God. The few people that wanted a relationship with God, they are very few and far between. But without God's Spirit you can't have a real relationship with God.

Now certain things happened at that time. One thing is that God CLOSED OFF the Holy Spirit from man. Secondly, you read in Revelation 13:8 that at that time it was decreed that Christ would come to pay the penalty of human sin, to redeem us, that we now needed a redeemer because man had sinned. Now man had sinned. When God first talked to Adam, he had not sinned yet. He had not committed any sin. ADAM DIDN'T NEED TO REPENT, he had never done anything to repent of. Then he did the wrong thing, and God just shut the Spirit off from him after that.

Now it is decreed that **the second Adam** would come, but God closed up the Spirit of Life UNTIL that second Adam should come. Now thirdly, Hebrews 9:27 (I'm not going to read you those scriptures again, I've given them to you time and again.) – it was appointed that men should die once, and after that the judgment. In other words, God had not yet judged man. Man had to die; but the judgment comes later, by a resurrection.

***In I Corinthians 15** Beginning with verse 22 (and you can read on the verses after that):" ... as in Adam ALL DIE."*

Now He decreed that everyone had to die from Adam on," ... *so in CHRIST* [the second Adam that they say should come] ... *ALL be made alive.*" The same "all" will be made alive, and then they'll be judged. So going clear back, the question is: will Adam be made alive?

The assumption is then judgment is on the Church today (those that have been called). It is not on the world today, and the world started with Adam. So apparently judgment is not on Adam, and he'll come up in the Great White Throne Judgment; and maybe Adam will have a chance. He didn't know about the Redeemer. At least everyone since Adam will come up in that Great White Throne resurrection, those who are already dead I mean.

Now then, when we come to what humans have done, there was Satan; and Satan was getting at people. Next I would like you to turn to Ephesians. (Oh, let me see. I had that here.) Ephesians the 2nd chapter and verse 1 – talking to those who already had the Holy Spirit in Ephesus, the Ephesian Church (This was to those who had the Holy Spirit.), the apostle Paul writes:

Ephesians 2:1-2 And you hath he quickened [or made alive, spiritually alive], who were dead in trespasses and sins [they were spiritually dead]; (2) Wherein in time past you walked according to the course of this world ...

Prince Of The Power Of The Air

Now a world developed from Adam, and everybody walked according to this world. It was a world based on selfishness, on vanity and on greed; on the “get” principle instead of the “give: principle; a world cut off from God; a world sinning.

*Ephesians 2:2 ... in time past you walked according to the course of this world, [now that's the world] according to **the prince of the power of the air** ...*

Well, he is **the god of this world!** He is the one who has cause the world to go his way – **the prince of the power of the air**. Now in II Corinthians 4:4 Satan is called the “god of this world;” **and the world really looks on him as god**, but they don't call him Satan. The one that they think is

God is really Satan, because they don't understand the real God; and Satan is the god of this world.

*Ephesians 2:2 ... the spirit that [now] **works** in the children of disobedience.*

And that spirit did work in every one of us. EVERY ONE OF US have had that spirit working in us from Satan from the time we were born; and before we were a year old we all had it, every one of us. Satan is the prince of the power of the air. He broadcasts through the air (just like television and radio goes through the air), and he gets those attitudes into our minds.

Now the world's civilization was really influenced all the way by Satan, who is the god of this world; and the whole world is deceived. In Revelation 12 you read that all nations are **deceived by Satan**. EVERYBODY is deceived! Now look, how does God look on persons that are deceived by Satan? A deceived person doesn't know he is deceived. I sinned. You sinned. Yes, we all did. Did we know we were doing wrong? Well, most of the time, yes. Sometimes we sinned in a way we really didn't realize it was wrong, but Satan was the real instigator.

Now we had our part in it. Christ came to pay the penalty of our part once. We had to turn away from it and repent however. Christ did not pay Satan's part, and Satan himself is going to have to bear that. That's a truth that we learn on the Day of Atonement every year. But Satan has ruled this world, and it is his world. It is not God's world. This is **not God's world!** It is a world cut off from God.

Yet human standards of good conduct and lofty principles and ideas are mixed with selfishness, self-centeredness (the idea of "get" instead of "give"); and men are, whether they realize it or not, they are cut off from God. And most of them don't want any contact with God, so it is come to the spirit of competition and violence that are filling the world today.

Jesus Came To Start God's World

Now finally the second Adam, Christ, came; and when He was about 30 He began to speak. He said, *"I will build my church"*(Matthew 16 verse 18). Now why? *"As in Adam all die ... in Christ shall all be made alive."* Christ came to START A NEW AND A DIFFERENT WORLD. THIS WORLD STARTED WITH ADAM. It is SATAN'S WORLD, started through ADAM. CHRIST CAME TO START GOD'S WORLD. THIS IS NOT GOD'S WORLD. JESUS CHRIST CAME TO START GOD'S WORLD. THAT'S THE WORLD TO COME.

Now, He brought a message; and His message is the GOSPEL. The word GOSPEL means GOOD NEWS. AND WHY IS THAT GOOD NEWS? The good news is the fact that GOD'S WORLD is coming! HE CAME TO ANNOUNCE THAT. He came to start it, and he said, *"I will build my church;"* and that was the start of God's world.

This is not God's world. Now God's world is that when Jesus had said, *"Come out from among them and be separate"* to come out of this world. He is calling certain ones that are in this world, who have been deceived by the Devil. Yes, we have sinned; and some of us have sinned willingly too, not necessarily willfully. There is a difference between willingly and willfully. But we have sinned willingly.

The Church and the people now being called, unlike Adam, have ALREADY sinned. When God talked to the first Adam, he had not sinned. Now when Christ came, He had not sinned; and He never did because He was God in the human flesh. The second Adam is one who did not sin and who lived as the first Adam should have lived. The first Adam didn't.

Now the second Adam is here to "found" another world. The first Adam founded this world, and this is his world; but it's Satan's world really because

that first Adam died but Satan is still here running it. Christ came to start ANOTHER WORLD. The Church is the embryo of that world.

Now He called twelve especially. There were many who followed Him. Of those who started following Him, many deserted Him. He said to the twelve, “Are you going to desert Me also and go away?” He has called many in this Church. Many have sat right here in this auditorium who are no longer with us. They’ve gone away. Several deserted the living Christ when He was here. He is using me now as His apostle. Many have deserted me. They are not sitting here today.

So that’s all my fault? Well, not only Judas (one of the twelve), but probably hundreds of others departed from Jesus during His ministry, which was only 3 1/2 years – because it’s those “*who endure unto the end*” that are finally going to be saved.

So the Church (unlike Adam) had sinned. Now we, as I just read you in Ephesians 2:1, we have all been part of the course of this world; and we’re called out of it. We’re **called out** of sin. That is fundamentally what we do first. Where do we start? We repent. So Jesus came preaching the Gospel. Now we turn back to Mark first and you find here “*the beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ.*” The word gospel means “good news.” He came as a Newscaster with good news. In verse 14 you read about His good news (His message).

Mark 1:14 *Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee preaching the **gospel** [which means good news] of the **kingdom of God.** [Came announcing GOD’S **WORLD**, GOD’S Kingdom.]*

I said a while ago there is the animal kingdom, the human kingdom, the angel kingdom and the God Kingdom. We are in the human kingdom now. He came to announce the God Kingdom, which will be all the children of God – a world to come. And Adam could have gone into that world if he’d

taken of the Tree of Life, but he did not take it.

Only Heirs Now

And Jesus said, “*The time is fulfilled.*”. It was fulfilled because He had come. The second Adam had come. He had been tempted of the Devil, and He had conquered the Devil and qualified by turning away from Satan’s way (where the first Adam fell for it and swallowed it). Jesus rejected it and told Satan to get behind Him and to leave Him. And Satan had to slink away and obey Him. Jesus qualified to set up God’s world, for this has been Satan’s world. It’s not God’s world. Jesus came to start God’s world. So:

Mark 1:15 ... *The time is fulfilled; the kingdom of God is at hand,*
[because He had qualified for it, to START IT.]

Now all we get now is the impregnation, not yet born into the Kingdom; but He said that those who would repent and follow Him could then receive the Holy Spirit, those that were called. So you see we have to repent, where Adam didn’t. That’s the first thing that we have to do. We make the choice like Adam had to make a choice, but if and when we are called. Now in Acts ... Now I should, I wanted to read here John 6:44; and I forgot to mark that, but I want to read it right here. I want to read that because many times I have quoted it. I want you to know it’s here. I think if I read it, it stamps it on your memory a little more than if I just say it. John 6:44, Jesus said:

John 6:44 **No man can come to me except the Father which hath sent me draw him.**

Now you see, it’s the Father who said “Let us make man in our image.” It is the Father we have disobeyed really because He is the Lawgiver. Jesus had merely told Adam what God had told Him to say, and it was God the Father that he really disobeyed; and really it is God the Father we are cut off

from. You notice that the Protestant churches today talk a lot about Christ. They say very little about the Father. It's the Father we've been cut off from. It's the Father we need to get back to, and there is no way back to the Father except through and by Christ.

Jesus said no man could yet come to Him except God the Father chooses you and selects you. Every one of you has been **chosen** as one out of several thousand other people of all of the people on the earth. If God has called you, you are only one out of several thousand. And God has looked down and picked out, and by predestination has called you and you are given that wonderful chance. But what did Jesus say here?

Mark 1:14-15 ... came ... preaching the gospel of the kingdom ... (15) Saying the time is fulfilled ... the kingdom of God is at hand; [and then He said] REPENT YE and believe the [good news about the Family, the Kingdom of God and being born into that Family, into that God Kingdom till we are in the Kingdom of God].

Now both the Word and God are in that Kingdom now. The angels are not, and there is not one word in the Bible that says that ANYBODY else is in that Kingdom now except God and the Father. But we are already **heirs** of it – if we are Christ's and if the Spirit of God is in us. And, if we are led by the Spirit of God, we are already the begotten sons of God; but only heirs now and only begotten now.

Repentance Needed First

Now in Acts 2 and verses 38 and 39, the day the Holy Spirit came and the Church was started:

Acts 2:38 ... Peter said unto them, Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins and ye shall receive

the **gift of the Holy Spirit** {8}.

Now the Holy Spirit was being poured out on those that were **called**. And then he went on and said:

Acts 2:39 For the promise ... [Of the Holy Spirit. It's not for the whole world now. I want you to notice: Who is the promise to, the whole world? No, the promise] ... is unto you and to your children and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

Oh, only as many as the Lord our God shall call; but not to just “whosoever will.” The one time that “whosoever will” is mentioned in the Bible is in the last chapter of the Bible, long after even the Great White Throne Judgment has occurred.

Now, we who have sinned are called into the GOD WORLD – **THE GOD WORLD, A NEW WORLD** – and to be part rulers of that world (as Adam could have been). Yet first we have to repent though, because we have all sinned (where Adam didn't {9}). That's the first hurdle. Jesus said, “Repent and believe the good news about the Kingdom of God.” How can they believe that kind of good news of the Kingdom of God when they had never even heard it, and most in the world have not heard it? Now, I tell you, millions have heard it by my voice by now, and in print; and the gospel is being published in all the world (as you read in Luke the 21st chapter).

Now, third, as you read in II Peter 3:18, once we receive the Holy Spirit we have to “*GROW in grace and the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.*” We grow in spiritual knowledge, which we don't have at the beginning. And then the 4th hurdle; “*he that endures unto the end.*”

Now we have obeyed what Christ said: Come out from among the world and be separate. We have obeyed the command in the 18th chapter of Revelation {10} and verse 4; “*Come out of her.*” That's Babylon (all the

religious confusion) and that's the Roman Catholic and Protestant churches primarily. Then in Revelation 2:26 and 27, if we OVERCOME now and endure unto the end, we will be given "*power over the nations.*" We will rule them, and we will be in the Kingdom of God and ruling the rest of the world that is not yet in the Kingdom of God. Yet they'll be mortal. We'll be immortal in the Millennium.

If we overcome, we will sit with Christ on His throne while He judges the whole world; and then judgment will be on the world, and Satan will be gone. We will be **KINGS AND PRIESTS, AND WE WILL REIGN ON THE EARTH** (Revelation 5 verse 10) – **if** we repent, and **if** we do till Christ comes and grow in grace and knowledge as God reveals it in the Bible, and **if** we have the Holy Spirit so that God's revelation makes sense to us and we understand it.

Now Satan will persecute and will hinder us; but in Ephesians 6 verses 10 to 18 you will read that we are not fighting against people, but unseen spirits (Satan and his demons, who really rule this dark world). This is Satan's world, but Protestant churches believe this is God's world. The Pope at Rome preaches that this is God's world. He is trying to make this world a better world. God is not trying to cure this world! He's calling us **OUT OF THIS WORLD**. He's starting a **NEW AND DIFFERENT WORLD**. That is the Gospel, and it's **news**. It's good news. Another world is coming. We can be pioneers in it; but we have to endure, we have to put on the whole armour of God and continue on from now on straight through to the end.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said "the wicked shall inherit ..." but he obviously meant to say "the righteous."

[{2}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong stumbled over his words a bit here but eventually got it the right way round.

[{3}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong couldn't remember this name of God at first, but it eventually came to him.

[{4}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong used the word "rested" here but the original says "ended."

[{5}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong wanted to be sure to quote this verse correctly and eventually did.

[{6}](#) - Editor's Note: The tape skips in the middle of this verse so we assume the whole verse was originally quoted.

[{7}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong uses the word "mind" here but the original says "heart."

[{8}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong uses the word 'Spirit' here; the original says "Ghost."

[{9}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong didn't mean that Adam never sinned. As explained earlier in this sermon, he was referring to the fact that "Adam had never committed a sin when God first created him and when he had to make a choice." We, on the other hand, had all already sinned when God called us.

[{10}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said "Romans" here but quoted from Revelation.

Sin

Sermon (April 4, 1983) – Days of Unleavened Bread
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Sin.....	1392	Man's Incomplete Mind	1404
Good News Of The Gospel	1393	God's Plan Revealed	1406
Man's Creation	1395	God's Law Book	1407
The Two Trees	1397	A New World	1409
Human Nature	1399	This World Of Satan's	1411
Man Makes A Choice	1401	Rightly Dividing God's Word	1414
How Satan Works	1403	Getting Sin Out	1417

Well greetings, brethren. Now we have come to the final service of the first of the festivals of the year 1983. Prior to the Passover, for a few weeks prior, we heard many sermons about examining ourselves – being ready for the Passover [{1}](#) and Days of Unleavened Bread, as the apostle Paul had directed us in the 11th chapter of I Corinthians. Then we came to take the Passover a week ago last night, renewing our acceptance of Jesus' stripes (being beaten with stripes) for our physical healing – something I'm afraid we don't take advantage of as we should, but which we could; and that's one of the great advantages God has given us. It's something extra He doesn't charge for, that He wants to give; and I think He's displeased when we don't take better advantage of it. Then, of His shed blood for the remission of our sins; and now for the seven Days of Unleavened Bread to picture once again to us the coming out of sin and putting sin out of our lives. So where are we now? Where do we go from here?

The next festival will picture to us the coming of the Holy Spirit. For us of this time – when Jesus Christ has come to start a new world (an entire new civilization) and has called some of us out of this world (which is Satan's world) has said *“Come out from among them [of this world] and be ye*

separate.” – first comes repentance. Then comes belief in Christ, and then comes the promise we shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. Now the next annual festival is a one-day holy day, the Day of Pentecost, that will come in (let me see) I guess it’s now just over six more weeks – after 49 days, to the 50th day.

But let’s notice from the sixth chapter of Hebrews, the first two verses:

***Hebrews 6:1** Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God.*

... because repentance and faith are the two original conditions to receiving God’s Spirit, especially for those that God has **called**. As Peter explained on the Day of Pentecost, the promise is to as many as the Lord our God shall call; and Jesus Christ said no man could come to Him except the Father, which sent Him, draws the person. And so those of us that are called now are drafted. God is not trying to convert Satan’s world. He is pulling some out of Satan’s world to be **speciallly trained** to be leaders, to be teachers, to be rulers in God’s world to come.

Good News Of The Gospel

So many people don’t understand what the word “gospel” means. It means “good news.” As I’ve said so many times, Jesus came as a newscaster. He came with news, and it was good news. It was the good news that another world is coming. The Kingdom of God IS the next world – God’s world! This is **not** God’s world, and God is not trying to improve Satan’s world for him. He’s calling some of us **out** of this world all together.

It isn’t a matter of just anyone who “will” may come. The one place in the Bible where that expression “*whosoever will may come*” is in the last

chapter of the book of Revelation. The time setting is long after the Millennium and the Great White Throne Judgment, and when Satan is gone, and when God is calling **everyone** to salvation. It does not apply now.

Now he continues in verse 2:

***Hebrews 6:2** Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.*

So we should go on unto perfection. God is perfection. God is absolutely perfect in every way. Jesus Christ was perfect. No one could point out one thing that Jesus had ever done contrary to God's law, God's commandments, or what God had taught and the way of God. Again, the very last words in Peter's letter of II Peter, we should:

***II Peter 3:18** Grow [now] in the grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.*

Now you can't put sin out of your life without putting righteousness in. Once again, I've mentioned the bottle. It doesn't necessarily have to be a milk bottle, any kind of a bottle. Let's say that the bottle is filled with some very dark, ugly and poisonous liquid; and you want to empty it out (like we must empty ourselves of sin, and get sin out of our lives). You can't get that polluted liquid out of the bottle without letting something else go in, because the bottle is not going to be a vacuum. For every little cubic-centimeter (or whatever you would call it) that goes out, an equal amount of air will have to come in or something to take the place of it.

We can't put sin out of our lives without putting **God's righteousness** in to replace it. Sometimes the way to get sin out is to put righteousness in, and it will just force the sin out. That is the best way to put sin out of your life.

Now, the festivals of God show the completion of the creation of man. I

have said so many times that God (I won't say He always does, but so far as I can see and think of just now) in every case God creates in **dual stages**. I've said that He didn't finish the creation of angels until character had been established in them. Each individual angel had to make his own choice, had to make a decision, before that character could come into him. He had his own part in that process.

Man's Creation

And man was not completed at the time of the creation of Adam. He created man; but we read back here in Genesis the second chapter, and beginning with verse 18:

***Genesis 2:18-19** And the [Eternal] God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help **meet** for him. [Or adequate, or fit, competent for him.] (19) And out of the ground the [Eternal] God had formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them unto Adam to see what he would **call** them; and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof.*

Now that certainly implies that God said to Adam, "I want you to name them." One thing I might call your attention to right here, I don't see here any rebellion in Adam as yet. I don't see any resentment against God, any hostility. He didn't say, "Ah, go do it yourself." He didn't say, "Well, why should I do it? Let someone else do it." No, Adam just went ahead and did it.

***Genesis 2:20-24** And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet [or fit for him, adequate] for him. (21) And the [Eternal] God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam [That's what they do before they give you an operation in a hospital. They give you a deep sleep with an anesthetic so that Adam didn't feel what was going on.], and he slept: and he [God]*

*took one of his [Adam's] ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; (22) And the rib, which the [Eternal] God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. (23) And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. [So Adam even went on to name her, and give the name Woman.] (24) Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be **one flesh**.*

Adam was not complete. God wanted him to reproduce. No man can do that by himself. So He made a woman. Now they were two, and He brought them together; and the two became one. But one what? Not one spirit! They became **one flesh**. Now man's physical creation was complete. Just his physical creation! However, the spiritual creation is what God is really doing, and He's starting by making man a sort of a clay model that will be changed into spirit later on. Physical creation complete, but the spiritual creation had not.

Now Adam was mortal. I've read so many times, Genesis 2:7, that "*God formed man of the dust of the ground.*" He was made in the image of God – in the form and shape of God. In that sense, he was different from other animals. But "*He breathed into his nostrils the breath of life [just the same as He did in animals], and man became a living [nephesh or] soul.*"

Animals had also become living "nephesh," only in the King James translation they translated it three times in Genesis 1 that animals had become living "creatures." They came to the **same** Hebrew word referring to man and they called it "soul." That's because the ones who did the translating into English still believed Satan's lie (that we are immortal souls). But it doesn't mean immortal. It just means a physical being. The dust of the ground became a soul.

The Two Trees

Now Adam only had a temporary, chemical (or physical) life. His life was limited, and was limited to breathing air and the circulation of blood. But God is immortal. God has eternal Life. In Him is **Life**– self-containing Life, inherent Life. God offered that to Adam through the Tree of Life.

Now once again, there are the Two Trees. If I mention it, someone's going to get up and walk out and say "There's Mr. Armstrong getting back to those Two Trees." You betcha! And I'm going to do it again, and again, and again – because you can't understand salvation, you can't understand what Christ is doing, you can't understand the Church, you can't understand the world or what's wrong with it, you can't understand ANYTHING unless you understand the lesson of those Two Trees and the incident of the forbidden fruit.

One was the Tree of Life. That was freely offered to him. The other was the Tree of Self Knowledge, taking to himself the knowledge of good and evil. Now that had nothing to do with knowledge of building a house, of knowledge of making clothes to wear, knowledge of food to eat or physical things. Or later on (as mankind advanced) knowledge to make automobiles, railroad trains, airplanes, spacecraft, computers, the many marvelous machines that we make today. Good and evil does not give you knowledge to do any of those things. Good and evil is knowledge merely of a relationship with, dealing with, other minds.

It's the spirit in the mind that gives the attitude, and it has to do then with **spiritual knowledge** and **spiritual attitudes**– attitudes of love, or of hate; of cooperation, or of competition; attitudes of give and cooperate and serve and help, or attitudes of get and take away and of animosity. It has to do with right and wrong. So God forbade him to take this kind of knowledge to himself.

God had made man with a mind that was not complete. Now man's creation physically was not complete until God had made a wife for him. But his creation spiritually and mentally was not complete, and is not yet! The spiritual creation of man is still going on, and our spiritual creation is not yet complete.

We've just come to the place in the annual holy days, and they picture the spiritual creation. We have just come to the place now of having repented of sin, having accepted Christ and His sacrifice for the remission of sins and as our Savior through, whom we may receive eternal Life from God the Father. We haven't even come to the place in the annual holy days that picture the coming of the Holy Spirit. So that creation is STILL going on. It's not even complete yet.

Now the Tree of Self Knowledge (of trying to take just to himself the knowledge of right and wrong) – spiritual knowledge: And spiritual knowledge has to do with what **life** is all about, why God created man, why He put us here, where we are going, what is the purpose of life, what is our objective. **If** man was to be made into God – and that is God's purpose, He is reproducing Himself – but what IS GOD now? God is supreme mind and **spiritual character**.

It took **supreme power** to create matter. There was a time when there was no such thing as matter. There was no earth. There was no sun. There were no galaxies. No universe! (Nothing physical whatsoever.) Only God and the Word! And then next God created spirit beings, or angels. They are spirit and invisible to human eyes. They are not matter. But God has **supreme mind**. He was able to first design angels (what form and shape they would be), design their minds. But the one thing God couldn't do was to create character within them. You see, character is something we have a share in; and no one knows that better than God.

So, when He created Adam, the Tree of Life simply meant spiritual mind, spiritual knowledge of God and God's purposes, and spiritual righteous character (perfection of character). That's what GOD IS. He's making God out of us. He is reproducing Himself out of us!

Human Nature

Now if the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was going to result in death, I think we could call that the tree of **death!** But it was a knowledge tree of a certain kind of materialistic knowledge. It also had a certain spiritual type of knowledge, but it was not God's type of spirit. A human mind, (a carnal mind) can have good aspirations. A carnal mind can have a high sense of morality. He can have good intentions. He has attitudes – either good or bad. But there is one difference. He has only this human spirit within him, and the human spirit is intensely selfish.

Now I said a while ago Adam did not at first show anything evil. God told him to name the animals, and he did. He submitted when God put him into the deep sleep, and he accepted the wife that God made for him. That shows that what we call "human nature" was not created in Adam. God did not create something evil in Adam. Something evil **got** into Adam, but it was not created there at first by God; and we have to go back to these Two Trees to understand some of these things.

The Tree of Life meant the Holy Spirit of God, and that meant the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit (Romans 5:5). That's a kind of love God did not put in Adam when He first created him. Adam was capable of exercising a certain love, but it was a selfish love.

When Eve became a mother of Cain, I think she loved Cain. We think of mother love as being about the highest form of love. Well, it's only the highest form (if it is a highest form) of carnal love; but it is selfish in nature

because that child was her child. That child came out of her. It was hers, belonged to her. She had to take care of it.

We always seem to be in favor of what is ours. Maybe it's our basketball team, or our football team; but we are for it, and we are against the team that is against it. That's a type of selfish attachment and selfish love; and that's the only kind of love that Adam was competent or capable of.

If he had taken the TREE OF LIFE, he would have received THE LOVE OF GOD. God would then ... But Adam had to make that decision. That is the kind of love which in us does certain things. First of all, the Spirit of God **impregnates** with immortal, self-containing, inherent Life (which Adam did not have). Secondly, the Spirit of God **opens** the mind to **understand** spiritual knowledge, and spiritual attitudes, and a spiritual sense of right and wrong (which the normal, carnal human mind **cannot** understand to that extent).

The Holy Spirit is much more than that. The Holy Spirit is the **love of God**, and love is the fulfilling of the law. Once you understand what the law of God is, it is love towards God with all your mind, heart, soul, and strength and love your neighbor as yourself. Now man doesn't have the KIND of love that will do that!

The people in this world – with high aspirations, with a good sense of morals, high ethics, everything of that kind in business – usually they don't care anything about God. They don't know anything about the things God has in store for us. They don't have the love of God. They just simply have what we would call 'good character' from just the human point-of-view because they have the human spirit within them.

The Tree of Life meant a spiritual mind that could acquire spiritual knowledge that God has in store for us, and God's purposes, and what God plans, and spiritual character so we could become perfect like God. So, you

see, both Trees were trees of knowledge. One was knowledge that can come only by the human spirit within man. The other was knowledge that comes by the Spirit of God.

Man Makes A Choice

So man's part in his spiritual creation begins with man making a choice. He has to ... What Adam had to do was to reject Satan and Satan's way and accept eternal Life from God and would be accepting the knowledge that God would reveal; and through the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit in him would open up his mind to comprehend and understand what God was revealing. Then that would give him the LOVE to fulfill the law. It would give him the FAITH to rely on God. It would give him the spirit of POWER. It would give him so many things that he lacked, and that every child born ever since has lacked as they were born.

Now Adam yielded to Satan and to Eve. Sin had not entered Adam until he yielded to **Satan**. I'd like to just show you something now. Once again, let's go over this in the third chapter of Genesis.

***Genesis 3:1** Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the [ETERNAL] God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?*

In other words, he right away is belittling God and accusing God of being selfish and taking everything to Himself. "He held something back, didn't He? He didn't give it all to you, did He? Well:

***Genesis 3:2-4** The woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: (3) But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. [Now watch how Satan goes to work.] (4) And the*

serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die.

In other words, “God is deceiving you. You can’t believe God. You can’t rely on God.” He started to discredit God. He started to cause **doubt** about God. You know, I’ve noticed that in the Church some that haven’t been members too long will come say, “Well, I’ve got questions.” Questions mean they have doubts, that they are doubting God. They are doubting God’s truth. They are doubting the Bible. Now, if they are really honest, sometimes we explain their doubts; and, oh, they see it and that’s just fine. They go right along. They remain loyal, and they grow in grace and knowledge. But sometimes they are critical; and they are just trying to find something wrong, and they refuse to see anything that is right.

Genesis 3:4-6 *Ye shall not surely die. (5) For God doth know* [“He already knows this. He’s deceived you.” He knows ...] *that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. (6) [Now, it was] when the woman saw that the tree was good for food [Now, it really was good for food.], and that it was pleasant to the eyes [Now it began to appeal to her sense of sight, one of the physical senses. It was desired. A desire for something beautiful came in to her, and for the taste of good food.], ... desired to make one wise [That appealed to intellectual vanity. She began to think what she could do with her mind. “What is this power in me I find suddenly created? I’d better use it.”], she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.*

Then something happened to both of them! Something happened to their minds. They had made a choice of self-centeredness, of selfishness. They wanted what looked good to them. They denied God. First Satan destroyed God’s credibility and the AUTHORITY of God. “You can’t rely on God. God is no authority.”

How Satan Works

Now the Bible is merely God speaking. The biggest church that professes to be “Christian” in this world says, and its top cardinals have said (and I think this has come from Rome), the Bible is not a sufficient guide to heaven, as they say. Well, heaven isn’t what God has promised us any way; but they assume that.

So at first he had to try to destroy the credibility of God, and the authority of God. Secondly, he appealed to intellectual vanity – to make man feel he’s SUPERIOR to God, till man would look down on God. Now I want you to see how that has come through the centuries down to our time. That’s where it started. You have to go back to find how we got to be that way. It started that way. That was the foundation of this world, and this world is Satan’s world.

Today universities feel that they are very superior to God’s College. Practically every student ... I think that there may be one or two exceptions; but, on the whole, the students who have been to Ambassador College and then gone to one of the universities for higher degrees have come to look askance at Ambassador College. They become ashamed of it. It’s not on the high level of this scientific university. Didn’t we all use to feel that way? Frankly, I am awakened to the fact that I think I did. We weren’t quite as good as they were. They were intellectual.

I know in the early days, when we had two students here who had master degrees from Oxford University, we had others from other universities: Northwestern University, I think from Harvard, or one from Yale. We used to try to advertise that fact, to show how good we were – that we even had students from those fine colleges. You see, they were way up there; and that seemed to elevate us. I look back with shame on that now. We were higher than they were all along, but we didn’t seem to know it. We

hadn't advanced that far in the knowledge of God.

Today in the world fundamental religion, even though they are wrong, those who are fundamentalists are those that claim to believe the Bible. There's the "Bible Belt" down in Kentucky, and Tennessee, and that area; and they are generally looked on with contempt by the educated people of the world. They are looked on as ignorant. God is ignorant! That's the psychology that Satan has generated in this world! If you believe in God, there's something wrong with your mind. The only thing that is wrong is that their minds are only half there.

Man's Incomplete Mind

God made the human mind only half there. It had one human spirit, and the human mind is human brain **plus** human spirit. But it isn't complete. God made it to need another Spirit – the Spirit of God. The Spirit of God coming with the spirit of man in the mind (just like the male and the female became one physically) then they become one spiritually and mentally. Man is not complete, is not all there even **mentally**, until he **receives the Spirit of God**; and he **can't** have the Spirit of God holding God in **contempt**! He's got to look on God as the supreme AUTHORITY. He's got to recognize the supreme credibility of God Almighty and of Jesus Christ.

When Jesus was on earth – the Scribes, the Pharisees, the Sadducees – they were the mighty men. They were the scholarly (so they thought). They tried to show how ignorant Jesus was, so they asked Him trick questions to back Him into a corner. But somehow they always found that He made sort of monkeys out of them. Maybe He caused them to believe in evolution? [Audience laughs.] At least, their descendants have come to believe in it.

But sin had not entered into the minds of Adam or Even until they yielded to Satan. And so "human nature" is that nature that entered in when

they accepted Satan instead of God, and God closed off the Tree of Life (or the Holy Spirit).

Bible fundamentalism is ridiculed in intellectual circles today, and those of higher education. It is ridiculed in the newspapers. It is ridiculed on television. Do you think that, with God's truth, that I could get time on NBC, or CBS, or ABC and their network? They ought to just willingly give time – all three networks – and let the people KNOW THE TRUTH! But, no, I would have no credibility with them. They think that the truth of God is so much foolishness.

Now we find it over here ... I hadn't intended to read this, but let's turn to I Corinthians 2. They have their language of scholarship today. But Paul said, beginning with verse 6:

***I Corinthians 2:6-7** Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world [Not in the language of scholarship.], nor of the princes of this world, that come to [nothing]: (7) But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery...*

A “mystery” because they don't understand it! They cannot understand it without the Holy Spirit. So they just say it's so much foolishness. Now let's read on, and I'll show you.

***I Corinthians 2:7-8** ... even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory. (8) Which none of the princes of this world ...*

Now ‘princes’ in this case not only means a prince who might become a king someday, but it means the leaders. That could mean commercial, industrial leaders, and political leaders, and leaders in all lines of thought (education) and everything.

***I Corinthians 2:8-9** None of the princes of this world knew [They don't*

have that kind of knowledge!]: *for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. (9) But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart [or the mind] of man, the **things which God hath prepared for them that love him.***

God's Plan Revealed

What is the real plan? What does God have in mind? Where are we going? What's going to happen in the future? Why did God put humanity on the earth? Look, humanity is all against God. Poor God. Is there anything He can do about that? They don't know what His real plan and program is. They are blinded to it. They can't know.

***I Corinthians 2:10** BUT God hath revealed them **unto us** [Who revealed it? The Holy Spirit? No. GOD has revealed it unto us. How?] *by his Spirit* [that dwells in us].*

The Spirit didn't reveal it. God did. But the Holy Spirit opened our mind to comprehend what God revealed so that we can understand. Now it says:

***I Corinthians 2:11** For what man knoweth [even] the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him.*

A cow doesn't have that spirit. A cow can't understand human knowledge. A cow can't understand physics, and chemistry, and astronomy. He can't understand music, art, literature; and they don't have the attitudes of good and evil that man has – because they lack the spirit of man. Man wouldn't have that knowledge except by **the human spirit** that is in him.

***I Corinthians 2:11** ... even so the things of God [What God has in store for us and the plans of God.] knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.*

We can understand, if we have the Spirit of God, for GOD reveals it. How does He reveal? The Bible is His Word. It's revealed right here. [Thumping on his Bible.] Now we read on:

I Corinthians 2:12-14 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world [or the attitude of the world], but the spirit which is of God, that we might **know** [that is, come to knowledge] the things that are freely given to us of God. (13) Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teaches [not in scholarly language], but which the Holy Spirit teaches, comparing spiritual things with spiritual. (14) But the natural man [the ordinary carnal mind, the natural man] receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Without the Holy Spirit, you can't come to know it. The Holy Spirit gives you **the power to comprehend** (to discern, to understand) the truth that God reveals. He reveals it to us now today in the Bible, which is God's Word in writing.

God's Law Book

The educators of this world don't understand. Last Friday I talked to a group of people down at the University of Southern California in the law school in a meeting of a certain scholarship, or a chair, established by the Ambassador Foundation in my name. There was quite a ceremony. In fact they said this was one of the very highlights, and keystones, of the whole history of the university. They had two professors, who will be on that scholarship there, who gave speeches; and the president of the university made a speech. He said some very nice things about me. Then I said a few words.

I told them that, when I was five-years-old, my father had said that

when I grew up I would be a Philadelphia lawyer. Now, of course, when I was five-years-old what I wanted to be when I grew up was a streetcar motorman. I'd get up front and watch the motorman drive and handle his car, and that intrigued me. That's what I wanted. Well, I asked my father so many (as he called it) crazy, fool questions that he got tired of answering why this, and how that. I wanted to know "how" and "why" all of the time! I wanted understanding, and I wanted him to explain so I could understand. He said I'd be a Philadelphia lawyer sure enough, when I grew up.

I said that I was challenged finally, at age 34, on **a point of law**. "Now all of you are interested in law here in this law school, the University of Southern California. I was challenged on a point of law, and I had to examine a certain textbook. It's a textbook that I fear is not used very extensively in the law school. [Audience laughs.] It's a law book however, and it's called the Holy Bible. You know, I discovered that that Book gives instruction about law from beginning to end; and it is quite a thick book." [Audience laughs again.]

And I said, "All of the laws that we have, constitutional law – the Constitution of the United States, and deciding law as to whether it is constitutional and in accordance with the Constitution – it all emanates from that Book; and that Book sets the principle. Whenever law deviates from that Book, it is not administering justice and it is not administering truth because," I said, "THAT IS THE CRITERION. That is where all law really emanates from."

I said, "I became, in time, the Pastor General of the Worldwide Church of God. The Work has grown around the world, a lot larger than our physical size. I have found that in this great law book, called the Holy Bible, that it says that sin (which is evil and everything that we punish people for in courts of law) is the transgression of THE LAW. But that is God's law!"

“But I find that the real author of the book, Jesus Christ, gave a history of the future of the Church in the second and third chapters of the book of Revelation (sometimes called the Apocalypse in Roman Catholic circles).” And I said, “There He showed what would happen – the chief characteristics of the Church – in the various eras from that time until now.” And I said, “It happens that we are in the era called the Philadelphia Era.”

“Now sin is the transgression of the law, and I do a lot of teaching and preaching about LAW and transgressing the law; and I try to show people how to avoid lawyers and judges [Audience laughs.] by not breaking the law. But I happen to be a law teacher in the Philadelphia Era, so I guess my father was right after all. I have become a Philadelphia lawyer.”

Now, I don't know whether they thought I was a lunatic [Audience roars with laughter.] or what they thought; but I think some of them began to think that one over a little bit. I know that several expressions were heard in the audience. They really got something new, they'd never thought of before.

A New World

Into such a world (that Satan has gotten into that condition) came Jesus Christ. He was begotten by God (not by a human father), but He was human; and He came and started in this world. He started the Church. The Church is merely another world.

This world was founded in the time of Satan; and, when God shut off the Holy Spirit and men had no access now to the Spirit of God, they developed a world based on the spirit of MAN; and the world grew not wanting knowledge from God. As a matter of fact, they sort of fear God in a sense – not that they look at God as a terrorist, but they're afraid that they might have to get righteous. So they are sort of afraid of God because He might tell them they're wrong, and they don't want to be told they're wrong.

The hardest thing in the world is to admit you're wrong, and they don't want that!

But Jesus came not to reform or to convert the world of Satan, and Satan's world, or Satan. He came to start a new and different world such as Adam should have started. He came to also to confirm the promises made to the fathers. Now this morning we heard quite a sermon from Dr. Hoeh about the promises. You'll find a great deal about those same promises in the book "The United States and Britain in Prophecy" and the Old Covenant made with Israel and the New Covenant that will be made.

Now the Old Covenant formed Israel as a nation. That was a physical nation, and that's as far as God has gone in the creation of man so far. They're all just physical and human. The New Covenant will be a SPIRITUAL covenant that will form the nation, the Kingdom of God. It will be a spiritual Kingdom. **All** of those will be God in the same sense that Jesus Christ is God. He is the firstborn of many brethren, and He was born God by a resurrection from the dead (as you read in the first five verses of Romans the first chapter).

It's all based on the promises made to Abraham – the promises of the New Covenant. The Church was founded only after the death of Christ; so it was, as Dr. Hoeh explained, the New Testament – **a witnessed will** that only takes effect after the death of the Testator. But even then Jesus still said no man could come to Him except the Father (God) draws them.

Jesus did NOT come to save ANY AND EVERYBODY that would say, "Well, I volunteer. I'd like to get saved" (like the churches of this world and Protestantism teach). God **selects**, He **drafts**, those that He wants to be **educated**, to be trained SPIRITUALLY, so that they IN the new world (which Christ has come to build and to start) can with and **under** Him **rule** and **teach** a new way of life. At that time Satan will be put away, and he

won't be here.

Now this world of Satan (with Satan here, and influence), Jesus didn't come to try to reform, or convert, or save this world. He came to call certain ones **OUT OF THIS WORLD** and be the **nucleus** of starting a World Tomorrow. Now He's going to have a good many thousand of those that were converted in the first years of the Church, beginning with 31 A.D. The foundation of the Church are the apostles and the prophets, and the prophets begin with Abraham apparently (unless you would say Moses was one of them).

Jesus came to confirm the promises made to them, but they were **spiritual promises** made to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob (as well as physical and material). They can be fulfilled only through Christ!

So now look at some of Satan's world today. We find it in Romans. By the way, I just mentioned something in Romans – the third and the fourth verses [{2}](#):

***Romans 1:3-4** Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord ... [Just taking out the modifying words, it continues] (4) ... declared to be the Son of God ... by the resurrection from the dead.*

Just taking out modifying little clauses in between, that is the actual sentence there. He's the Son of God by a resurrection. He's the firstborn of many brethren. WE are to have the same inheritance and inherit everything that He has – **if** we overcome, **if** we grow in grace and the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, and **if** we endure until the end.

This World Of Satan's

But now I'd like to read you some of the things, beginning with the sixteenth verse of Romans [{3}](#). Here's a picture of this world.

Romans 1:16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ.

Now why did Paul say that? Satan has discredited God. He has made people **ashamed** of the gospel of Christ, **ashamed** of the things of God. This world is superior, in their own smug complacency.

Romans 1:16-18 I am not ashamed of the gospel [which means the good news; and the good news is the news that the Kingdom of God – another world altogether – is coming] ... *for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth* [“Power of God” He’s affirming the power of God, and the credibility of God, and the authority.]: *to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. (17) For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith. (18) For the **wrath** of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men ...*

Now, does it say that the wrath of God is revealed against men? Oh, no. It doesn’t say that. I want you to notice. The wrath of God is against all ungodliness and unrighteousness that is in men.

Romans 1:19 Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them, for God hath showed it unto them.

Yet they look askance on God. They try to belittle God.

I remember even when I was a boy, other boys saying, “Well, I’m no saint.” I remember going to see a young fellow about my age (actually, a little younger) one Sunday. He was fixing his own automobile out in front. I knew him quite well, and I’d never heard him use any foul language. He never did in my presence. A couple of other guys came, with cigarettes in their mouth, and stood around talking; and I heard this fellow begin to pour out a gush of foul language and profanity that I never had heard come from his lips before. I was just aghast and staggered. But, you see, he was ashamed not to appear

to be like them. He would be ashamed to be a goody-good.

Romans 1:20-25 *For the invisible things of him from the [foundation] of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal **power** and Godhead: so that they are without excuse. (21) Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful: but became vain in their imaginations [“In their imaginations.” Their reasoning, their human reasoning and thinking, are all vanity.], and their foolish heart was darkened. (22) Professing themselves to be wise [Yeah, they’re scholarly. They’re learned. They are scholars.], they became fools. (23) And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and of birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. (24) Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts [or minds], to dishonor their own bodies between themselves. (25) Who changed [That is, these people who were wrong, changed ...] the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever.*

Let’s see. They held back the truth in unrighteousness. Didn’t I read that? That’s in there.

Romans 1:26-27 *For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections, for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: (27) And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another [homosexuality].*

Today they try to glorify that. It is coming to the place where it is gaining public acceptance; and it’s coming to the place that the law of man is saying that, if you are against anything that is now accepted by public acceptance, you are wrong and you’ll be punished. Now, you will find that very soon now, homosexuality is going to be absolutely accepted. You may have a homosexual as President of the United States. They GLORIFY EVIL,

and LUST, and perverted minds.

***Romans 1:27-28** Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet [it says here, which means again adequate or fit]. (28) And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge ...*

Now the knowledge in the universities; do they retain God in the knowledge in the universities? Do they disseminate the knowledge about God? NO! They don't want anything to do with it.

***Romans 1:28-31** God gave them over to a **reprobate** mind, to do those things which are not [well] convenient [or are not proper]. (29) Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, (30) Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, (31) Without understanding ...*

They have no real understanding. They have much knowledge, much education. But I've always said knowledge is of no value except as you can put it to work; and, if you can't put it to the right kind of work, it still is of no value.

***Romans 1:31-32** Without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: (32) Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.*

Rightly Dividing God's Word

And they've held back the truth of God. In other words, they change to another gospel. The gospel of Jesus Christ was suppressed; and the

Protestants, and the Catholics, and the churches that call themselves “Christian,” do **not** know and do **not** preach the gospel of Christ. The good news is the news Christ brought. It’s the message God sent by Christ. He was the Messenger. They only preach about the Messenger, but not His message!

Jesus came not to convert Satan’s world. So He called certain ones that God has selected to be THE LEADERS in HIS WORLD! And, brethren, do you know that you are among those leaders – except you be reprobate. What a responsibility it is! You have been drafted. You are a drafted army. To us God said, “Come out from among this world and be separate.” We are not the same. Are we ashamed of the gospel? Are we ashamed of the Bible? Are we ashamed of Jesus Christ? Are we ashamed of God’s truth? I hope not. So let us go on to perfection. You know all the scriptures. There are so many. Jesus is our High Priest. He’s at the right hand of God in heaven, and He is there working for us now.

Now let me see. I wanted to read something here from II Timothy, the second chapter and verse 15:

*II Timothy 2:15 Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, **rightly dividing** the word of truth.*

Brethren, in the churches of this world they do not rightly divide the word of truth; and they will not! The hardest thing in the world to do is admit you’ve been wrong. The Protestants have been WRONG, and they don’t want to admit it. The Catholics have been wrong. Some of them do admit it. We have, I should imagine, there some among you here today that were raised as Catholics. I hope you were never a real devout one; but, nevertheless, you probably were Catholic.

So we have to grow in grace and knowledge, and study the Bible – rightly dividing it. Also, in Ephesians 6:18, which is so very, very important:

Ephesians 6:18 **Praying always** with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit [That's real earnest prayer. Not just some casual prayer, just to get it done as a routine; but putting your whole heart in it.], and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints.

When we study the Bible, God is talking to us. When we pray, we are talking to Him. And so that's the way we get acquainted with God. Now I'd just like to read a little something in closing, in I John [4](#). We read in the third verse:

I John 1:3 *That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you* [This is John, of course, speaking; and he had been with Jesus and knew Him. In his old age, he was writing this.], *that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly **our fellowship** is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.*

We walk daily, then, with Christ. If we have come out of sin, if we have repented, He has called us. God the Father really called us, and we have come to Christ because of that. Now if you will notice also beginning with verse 8:

I John 1:8 *If we* [That's "we" in the Church now.] *say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.*

Brethren, even after we receive the Holy Spirit, we're not going to be perfect yet. It's a matter of growing in grace and knowledge. It's a matter of continual overcoming. And we don't do it all at once.

You know, there's a little story back in the Old Testament. God told Israel, when they went into the Promised Land, that they couldn't drive all of the inhabitants out all at once; but they must drive them out, or they would become (you know) pricks in their sides and a great source of trouble to them. But they couldn't do it all at once. Well, they just didn't drive them out.

They didn't obey God, and they were a trouble to them. So you don't make it in one fell swoop, as we say. We have to get rid of these things as we find them.

Getting Sin Out

***1 John 1:8-10** If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. (9) If we [And “we” means the Church.] confess our sins [If, when we slip, we do confess it ... and it doesn't say just your faults. It says sins!], he is faithful and just to forgive US [The “us” means Church members, those who have God's Spirit. “To forgive us ...”] our sins, and to **cleanse us** from all unrighteousness. [We've got to be cleansed and not do it again. We've got to overcome.] (10) If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word [{5}](#) is not in us.*

Now it continues right on here:

***1 John 2:1** My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not.*

We are not to sin. But if we do, walking along with Christ, two can't walk together except we be agreed. We're walking along with Christ. We stumble and fall down. We committed a sin, not maliciously. It might have been knowingly (through temptation, through habit, or whatever), but not maliciously. What's the other word that I want? It's defined in the booklet about the unpardonable sin. Not willfully. Sometimes willingly, but not willfully; there's quite a difference.

***1 John 2:1-2** These things write I unto you, that you sin not. And if any man sin, WE have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous [He's our High Priest up in heaven, at the throne of God.] (2) And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the*

whole world.

Most of the world is not called yet, but they will be; and that shows that our sins are in contrast to the world outside (that are not in the Church). That shows he's talking there to the Church. So from here on we must overcome.

Now the next holy day will be the Day of Pentecost – the coming of the Holy Spirit; and what a wonderful truth to come to us at that time. These holy days picture God's program for changing man (as he was after Satan got through with Adam) till God's creation of man is complete, as it finally will be.

We have something a little different to face than Adam did. He had not sinned. He just had to accept the Tree of Life, and he didn't. We have already sinned, and we've got to repent of that before we can even come to accept the Tree of Life. We have to repent of doing as Adam did. It isn't easy, and the path ahead is not easy; but the rewards are so tremendous. We will be VERY GOD. We will have **perfect righteousness**.

You know the most unhappy thing is when you know you are wrong and it's bothering your conscience. It gives you fear and everything wrong. But when your conscience finally is complete, and you know that you will finally become perfect, and also (if I'd gone on to read I John the third chapter) once we are BORN AGAIN ... We are not now born again. We sin, and "*if we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins.*" But once we are **born again**, I John 3:9 it says we CANNOT SIN because God's seed remains in us; and we **cannot sin** because we are born of Him – as Christ is now **born of God**.

Christ cannot sin now. He could have when He was in the human flesh on earth. He just didn't. He was tempted, but He didn't sin. We've been tempted, and we all have – every one of us! But now God is there to cleanse us and bring us out of this sin. Let's come on all the way out of it. But as I

said now, in the beginning, to put sin out we have to put God's righteousness in. Let's **hunger and thirst** for God's righteousness, and be filled with that. Jesus has given us the promise that, if we hunger and thirst for righteousness, we shall be filled.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said Feast of Tabernacles, but he was undoubtedly speaking of the Passover and Days of Unleavened Bread.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong failed to mention that he was referring to the first chapter.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong failed to mention that he was referring to the first chapter.

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong failed to mention that he was referring to the first chapter.

[{5}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said, "the truth is not in him;" but the text reads "his word is not in us."

Hungering For God's Righteousness

Sermon (June 11, 1983)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Hungering For God's Righteousness.....	1420	Magnifying The Law	1436
God's Purpose	1421	Good On A Human Level	1437
The Called	1422	The Liberal Approach	1439
This Civilization	1423	The Spirit Or Intent	1440
Those Judged First	1424	The Ways Of Death	1442
The Way Of Love	1426	Expanding The Law Of Love	1444
How Sin Entered Our World	1430	The Liberals	1445
Human Love And God's Love	1432	Examining Scriptures	1447
Another Civilization And Lifestyle	1433	Out Of Harlotry	1450
Letter Vs Spirit Of The Law	1435	Government	1452

Greetings again, everybody. Nice to see you out on such a beautiful day. It's not raining inside. "*Come out from among them (of the world) and be separate, saith the LORD.*" And He said He would receive us, but it's not all. And you know, we find out at the summer camps, some of the children sort of let things out about their parents at home. Their parents don't realize. And we find that there are ... And I don't necessarily mean this Church. I don't know there's a one in this Church here. In Pasadena, I mean. But in different Churches over the country, some of the children tell on their mothers. They wear **make-up** through the week, and especially when they go shopping at the store or the supermarket. They take it off when they come to Church. Well, that is deceiving; and it is not honest. They are disobeying God. I'm glad it's only a few. I'm glad that most of our women want to get into the Kingdom of God.

And, brethren, I tell you it's a matter of what are we hungering and thirsting for? To be like the world? Or are we hungering and thirsting for God's righteousness? I wonder if you've ever thought about this thing of

hungering and thirsting FOR GOD’S RIGHTEOUSNESS. I remember just recently it hit me in a different way than I ever saw it before. I thought about God Himself. He has that righteousness, and He certainly doesn’t have to have any hurt conscience. He doesn’t have to have any fears or worries about having to reap what He sows. He has perfect faith.

It makes me think of a song “Oh, What A Glorious Feeling.” Where was that song? I don’t know what it was. It just comes to my mind. But it is. If we just had God’s righteousness, what a wonderful feeling it would be in our minds! Even then, harm might come to us – persecution, accidents in this life; but at least we wouldn’t be bringing them on ourselves. We bring so many things on ourselves, and we don’t realize it.

God’s Purpose

Now the greatest subject in all of the universe is God’s purpose. God and the Word lived. I’ve discussed how They lived a number of times. But They lived. And if They lived, They must have lived for some purpose. In the book “The Seven Laws of Success” I have written that the first law of success in this life is having the right goal. Well, do you know that God has that right goal? God’s purpose. That is the first law in God’s life – His purpose. That is His goal, what He intends to accomplish.

God is looking down through the stream of time. God has ALWAYS existed. God always WILL exist! And He’s looking into the far, far, far future – forever; and He’s thinking ahead. What is His purpose? What is His goal? What is He trying to achieve? What **is** His purpose? The Bible says His purpose **shall stand**, and it will! His purpose shall be accomplished. We read in Romans the 8th chapter, now beginning with verse 28:

***Romans 8:28** And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God ...*

Now we had a minister. He had to leave the Church because he kept preaching one thing: “All things work together for good.” And he stopped right there. He forgot it is “*to them that love God.*” He didn’t add that. And he did not love God himself, and he was not leading his flock towards God. He isn’t in that pulpit any longer. He’s out of the Church. But it’s:

The Called

Romans 8:28 ... to them that love God, to them who are the called
[Now notice: It’s only those that are called. Them that are called.] *according to HIS PURPOSE.*

God’s purpose: That’s God’s own goal; and, brethren, you and I are part of that ultimate purpose and goal of God. That is the most important thing to Him in His life. It’s your future and my future. That’s the most important thing to God.

That’s why I’m so glad that when a thing like this comes up, this particular subject ... It’s only one subject. And incidentally the dirt, or colored dirt, on your face isn’t going to harm your face so much. The harm is in the attitude and the spirit, and in your mind and heart. The sin isn’t the dirt. Sin is the thing that is in your mind, and attitude, and heart, and then the action that it leads to. But notice:

Romans 8:28-29 ... according to God’s purpose. (29) For whom he did foreknow ...

You see, we are “the called” that He did foreknow. Now those that are not called He did not foreknow. It is only referring to predestination; and we, brethren, have been predestinated to be called NOW. Others are to be called, yes, but later. Everybody is going to be called.

Now it’s appointed to all men once to die, and after this the judgment.

Again, as in Adam all die (I Corinthians 15:22), so in Christ shall the same ALL be made alive. All who ever died are going to come back to life again; and all of those are going to come into a judgment, and in that judgment the book of life is going to be there. Some are going to have their names written in that book of life. In fact, I think most of them. God doesn't tell us how many because I think He Himself doesn't know.

He made us free moral agents. And God has purposed (That's part of His purpose.) that we ourselves must make that decision. He isn't going to make that for us. He WILL make the decision of whom He will call, when. Now He has decided to call you and me **now**, in advance of the others. We're called at a time when it is much more difficult for us than it is going to be for them when they're called.

I tell some people, "Well, God is calling us now; but salvation is not for others now." And they say, "Well, then, God's unfair." Oh, no! God is calling us now in a more difficult time than He's going to call them; but He's calling us now to learn and to become priests and rulers – kings and priests – and to reign over the others, and to help call them, and help them bring in the harvest when He calls them.

They'll have an easier time. There won't be any Satan around then. And there was a marvelous sermon preached here this morning on Satan and the demons, and the devil. And this is their world! What a terrible world it is, and it was pretty well pictured this morning from this pulpit.

This Civilization

Notice that: **Romans 8:29** *For whom he did foreknow, [them also] he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he [the Son, Christ] might be the firstborn among many brethren.*

Now, I want you to get this. In fulfilling God's purpose, Christ is the second Adam; and He started what the first Adam did not start. This is Satan's world, and God is starting another world – another civilization.

You know, people think if civilization ended that would be the greatest tragedy that could happen. Oh, the end of civilization, wouldn't that be terrible! Well, I think I need to have a telecast on that. Civilization is going to end, and it ought to end. The sooner this civilization ends the better. When we are told to pray "*Our Father which is in heaven ... Thy kingdom come,*" we mean "Thy civilization (another civilization) come;" and this civilization has to go. And the sooner this civilization is gone, the better for everybody.

So notice that Christ was the firstborn. Now we are next. In I Corinthians 15:22, it says:

I Corinthians 15:22-24 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive ... (23) Christ the firstfruits [He was the firstborn.]; afterward they that are Christ's [That's the many brethren.] at his coming. (24) Then comes the end.

Afterward will come the resurrection of all the others, after the Millennium. During the Millennium, salvation is going to be open to everybody that is still alive on earth. But we are going to be kings and priests. We're going to be changed from mortal to immortal.

Those Judged First

We won't be human any longer. We'll be God. And we'll be there to teach, and to judge them as Paul wrote in one scripture "know ye not that we shall judge the world." That's when judgment comes on them, but judgment is on us now. Judgment is now on you and me! And when I say ...

I used to have to speak to the men who smoked. At that time women

didn't smoke. I guess we've got smoking pretty well out of the Church. I hope I don't have to speak on that any more. There still may be a few doing it secretly. Well, I may talk about that a little later, and how we learned that smoking is a sin (although the Bible says nothing about tobacco or tobacco smoke).

Now I want you to notice a little more while we're on this scripture. Let's go back in this same 8th chapter, and notice what he's talking about; and notice the purpose of God. Go back to the 18th verse. Paul says:

***Romans 8:18** For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with **the glory** which shall be revealed in us.*

“The GLORY that shall be revealed in us.” But let me just say, the women that want to glorify themselves in front of a mirror now and seeking a certain vain, self-glory won't even be in that glory. Just leave it to God and let Him glorify you, and you'll have a glory that passes all your imagination – the glory that shall be revealed in us.

***Romans 8:19** For the earnest expectation of the [“creation” it should be] waits [{1}](#) for the manifestation of the sons of God.*

Manifestation is when we can see that we are the sons of God. Now in I John 3 you read that, behold, even now we are already the sons of God; but it does not appear yet what we shall be. That is, it isn't manifested. You can't see what we shall be when we are like Him, with our faces like the very sun and our eyes like flames of fire. We have pale faces now, and women want to paint them up – some women. The women of the world do. But the whole creation is waiting for the sons of God to appear.

***Romans 8:20-23** For the creation was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope, (21) because the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of*

corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. (22) For we know that the whole creation groans and trembles in pain together until now. (23) And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit.

Once again, we're just the first to be called. And Christ is the first of the first, the firstborn of many brethren. Well, you see, we are to rule the whole universe ultimately; and the whole universe is going to be changed! It's going to be a different universe than it is now, entirely. And what God has planned for other planets and other worlds, He has not revealed; but He gives us a hint here and in the 2nd chapter of the book of Hebrews, where it says that the whole universe is going to be put under us. We are going to have power over the whole universe, and we're going reign.

Well, I must get on. I'd like to dwell on that a little more, but God's wonderful purpose is to reproduce Himself. Ultimately, He put mankind on earth for that purpose. But when you consider **what IS God:** God is holy, righteous, perfect, spiritual character. And to reproduce Him, His character – His righteousness – must be reproduced in us. It must be!

Now all of this involves the question of sin. I wonder how many of us yet understand sin and what it is, and how do you define sin. Even in this Church, brethren, we've been mixed up to a greater extent than we have realized on how we define what is sin. Just what is sin? We know that "*sin is the transgression of the law.*" But let's go back a little farther.

The Way Of Love

I talked about the purpose of God, and that God originally lived (before He created mankind on the earth and before He even created angels). Now how did God and the Word live when They lived together? They lived in the manner of **love**, and love is an outgoing concern for the welfare and the good of the other. That is, desiring the welfare and the good of others. Not wanting

to take from others, not glorifying the self. Concern for others, but God first of all. Worship and obedience of God; and then love, cooperation, helping, serving, sharing toward man.

Love itself is a way of life, and it is outgoing (never incoming). Incoming is **lust**, and love is the opposite. It goes in the opposite direction. Now the way that love can come in is if you love your own mind and body to the extent you know it is the temple of God's Holy Spirit and that your mind controls. And God has giving you the responsibility of taking care of this mind and body of yours, keeping it clean and useful for His Spirit to dwell in it. That kind of love is how you love yourself. You see, "*Thou shall love thy neighbor AS thyself.*" But that doesn't mean self-glory and selfish love in the sense that people of the world love themselves. Love, then, is a way of life. It is, then, a law.

Now what is law? I spoke before the law school of southern California, the University of Southern California, a few weeks ago; and I defined law to them. It is simply the rules that regulate human performance, or human conduct. For example, it's the RULES of life. The rules of a basketball or a baseball game, or something, are the law of that game. Law means the rules that regulate conduct. That's what it is. It is a way, then, of life. All right, let's put it in modern language. It is **a lifestyle**.

Now people have got the idea that there's a new lifestyle going on in the world today; and that lifestyle involves the wrong kind of music, the wrong kind of dress and of exposure (especially on the part of women). That lifestyle involves a lot of things that they do, and it involves what they call good grooming or make-up; and that is not necessary to good grooming under any circumstances whatsoever. That's a misnomer.

How Sin Started

Well, now, how did sin ever start? Because "*sin is the transgression of*

the law,” and the law is love; and the law is love, and that’s the way God and the Word lived. That was Their lifestyle. Now I’m talking about God’s lifestyle; and I’m talking about God’s motive, God’s purpose, or God’s goal and what He had. And His goal concerns you and me, and we are vitally concerned in it.

Now let’s go back and see how sin first started, because sin entered the world; and it entered through Adam. But before Adam sin had come into this earth. We go back to the 28th chapter of Ezekiel and in verse 15. Speaking of the great archangel, Lucifer, God says:

*Ezekiel 28:15 Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast **created** [He was a created being. He wasn’t ever born. He was separately created.], till iniquity was found in thee.*

That is, lawlessness. He broke God’s law. In other words, a different lifestyle: a different way of thinking, a different attitude towards life, and towards God, and towards everything. We heard so much in the morning sermon about attitude, and attitude toward things. And that’s the whole thing, in your mind. It either leads to sin or to righteousness. Now, in verse 17:

Ezekiel 28:17 Thine heart was lifted up [Why?] because of thy beauty.

Beauty went to his head! Now, does that ever happen to a woman? “Oh, yeah, yeah, it’s not vanity. Oh, no.” You know, women, if there were no mirrors no one would wear make-up, would they? I know a woman who said, “I would rather look pretty in the mirror and with my make-up on than have good knowledge, or wisdom, or understanding, or good character. I just want to see my face look pretty to me.” Now that is NOT character, I’m sorry to say.

It’s a funny thing: That same woman said one time in England, she said, “You know, Mrs. Hunting is not pretty. She’s beautiful!” Do you know what

she meant? Mrs. Hunting didn't wear make-up, but the beauty was in her character. The beauty that you could see down through her eyes, not anything she painted around the outside to frame the eyes or to make them stand out. It was something that you could see down inside.

If you want to know what I mean by that, let me just say something. The Academic Center I have named after my wife, who died over 17 years ago now. It's named in her honor. Her picture is there on the mantle in the grand lobby of Ambassador Hall. Go up and look at that painting of my wife's face and look at those eyes. If the light isn't good, turn the light on so you can see it. You can see down in ... There's no paint on her at all, but look down inside and you'll see **character**. That's where **real beauty** is.

I remember my grandmother said when I was a little boy that beauty is as beauty does. Beauty is **inside**, and it's **in the heart**, or the mind – or that faculty of mind that involves your intent, your attitude, your purpose, your desire, what you live for.

Ezekiel 28:17 Thy heart was lifted up because of thy beauty...

Desire to have beauty! And that brought about the thing that is just, you might say, the father of sin. You might say the root of sin. I know they say that the love of money is the root of all evil, but here is something that is really the father of sin. His heart was lifted up because of his beauty.

Ezekiel 28:17 ... thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness.

That is, the brightness of his beauty! And that's where it started. Now that in itself was not just the whole sin. That is where it started. It led to violence. It led to what you heard described in the sermon this morning. The whole purpose of Satan is to destroy. It is hatred – hatred toward anything and everybody – and a desire to hurt, to harm, to destroy, to get for self but to

destroy everything else. And it all started from beauty. The beauty was the father of it that started it. Vanity is self-glory; and it leads to wanting to get; and it led to sin. And that's where sin first started in the universe.

He had been perfect in his ways from the day that he was created. God didn't make him evil. God made him very, very beautiful. Now we go to another passage about him in the 14th chapter of Isaiah. Let me see, (My pages got mixed up here a little bit.) beginning with verse 12:

Isaiah 14:12 *How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer ...*

His name was Lucifer, and Lucifer means “shining star of the dawn” or a bringer of light. In other words, he was one who **proclaimed** righteousness. He knew righteousness, and he turned away from it.

Isaiah 14:12-13 *O Lucifer, son of the morning [or, morning star]! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! (13) For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt **my throne** above the stars of God [or, the angels of God].*

Now, he had a throne. It was on the earth. He was going to go up to heaven. He was going to ascend. So he was down here on earth, and he was going to ascend above the clouds.

Isaiah 14:13-14 *I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: (14) I will ascend above ... the clouds [So he was under the clouds.]: I will be ...*

It says here “*like the most High.*” I believe, if you get the original Hebrew, it will say “*I will become the most High.*” That's what he really meant, I have always believed.

How Sin Entered Our World

That is how sin entered in the first place, in the universe. But now, how did it enter humanity. How did it enter into the world? We go back to Genesis now, to the 3rd chapter of Genesis. God had created the man, and I've gone into that and the two trees that were set before them. Man was to have jurisdiction over his wife, and she was supposed to be subject to him; but she wasn't. And he wasn't on the job, and she sort of stole away and sneaked away. I don't know where Adam was. He wasn't watching after her.

Genesis 3:1 *Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the [Eternal] God had made.*

And the woman encountered the serpent, which was Satan the devil in the form of a serpent or a snake.

Genesis 3:4 *And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die.*

God said, "You will die. You are a soul; and a soul that sins, it shall die. If you sin, you are going to die." But he said, "You won't surely die, for God knows better."

Genesis 3:5-6 *For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods [Again, "you will be God," just as he wanted to be. Now he tempted her to want to become God.], knowing good and evil. (6) And when the woman saw [Now she saw something with her eyes, and her eyes entered into it.] that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes ...*

There again, what is pleasant to the eyes is a great temptation. When she looks into a mirror today, and her face; she wants to make it look better; and she thinks paint makes it look better. I don't! I disagree with any woman who thinks paint makes her face look better.

Several times I turn off certain programs on television when I see such

painted women (painted hussies, I call them) that I can't stand to look at them with all that paint, and eye make-up, and all that stuff on their faces. They don't look human. Well, maybe they do look human. They don't look like God made them! They look like they are human-made all right. Anyway,

Genesis 3:6 When the woman saw ... that it was pleasant to the eyes, ... and desired to make one wise [That appealed to her vanity again, intellectual vanity.], she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband ... and he did eat.

So he wasn't looking after his wife; and she wasn't subordinate to her husband, as God said a wife ought to be. Then Satan's government started, because they started out obeying Satan rather than God. And Satan put his ideas into the minds of Adam and Eve. Adam got it too, and something happened to their minds at that time; and a world started.

Human Love And God's Love

Now, I've explained how they had the one spirit; and they needed a second spirit – the Spirit of God. They didn't have God's Spirit. They took the knowledge of good and evil. In other words, to decide for themselves what is good and what is evil. Now there is good in what-we-call human nature. There is good in this life. And many of the people in the world that are filled with human nature and God isn't in their life, they pay no attention to God, and hardly ever think about God. They're conscience that there is a God and once in a while it comes to mind and all of that. Some of them are atheists and don't believe in God. Some say, "Well, I suppose there is a God." But they never think about Him. He's not part of their lives in any way.

And so they have high and lofty ideals. They have good morals. They have many traits of good in them. (I can't think of all the words I want to use right now.) There is good in this world. There is a certain amount of love in

this world. I would say that mother love is perhaps the highest, but even that is selfish when you stop to think. Now the love of God is a greater love. That mounts up all together a different level! It's a different kind of love.

Now *“sin is the transgression of the law,”* but the law is love. And while I'm on it, I want you to listen. Love is the fulfilling of the law, But **YOU WEREN'T BORN WITH THE KIND OF LOVE THAT CAN FULFILL THE LAW OF GOD!** All human love is carnal. There is another kind of love that's on a higher level, a higher plane all together; and that is *“the love of God ... shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit”* – Romans 5 and verse 5. And that is the only kind of love that can give you God's righteousness.

Do you hunger and thirst for that? Brethren, we are **called** to hunger and thirst for that. That's what we are called for! We've had our opportunity. We are having it **now!** We're being judged now. We're not going to get another chance later. The world has not had any chance yet. The world has hasn't been called **yet.** **WE HAVE BEEN CALLED TO COME OUT OF THIS WORLD.** This is Satan's world. It is Satan's world, started with the human Adam, which started obeying Satan.

Another Civilization And Lifestyle

Jesus Christ came, the Son of God, to start God's world; and God started His world – **God's world** – by Jesus Christ, the second Adam. That's why He's called “the second Adam.” Now it started out like a grain of mustard seed, one person. But that person was God in the human flesh, Jesus Christ. He called twelve, and He began to teach them. At the end of His ministry, there had been 120 that followed and still endured.

On the day of Pentecost, that 120 received the Holy Spirit and started the Church. Just 120. It started quite small. That's a very small Church. Look

how many more of us are right here in this auditorium this afternoon. And I think a lot of others are going to hear this sermon, because it's being recorded; and I want them to hear it in other places.

So Satan's government continues, and Satan is sitting on the throne of this world. Jesus came then as the second Adam. He came to start **another civilization** – a civilization with a different lifestyle, a civilization that would obey the law of God. Now Satan sat on a throne. He was a king and here to administer the government of God; and he was a teacher of light, of truth. That was his name. Lucifer means “shining star of the dawn” or “light bringer.” Light means truth in this case – the truth of God and the right way. Jesus came then as the second Adam to start a DIFFERENT civilization! He didn't come to save Satan's world. He didn't come to try to convert the people in this world.

He met the woman at Jacob's well on the way up to Samaria, in the land of Samaria. Let's see, I guess He was going on up to Nazareth. And He met this woman, a Gentile, at the well. He said, “Give Me a drink of water.” And He said, “If you knew who it is speaking to you, you would ask Him and He could give you **living waters**; and you would never thirst again.”

Well, she didn't know what He meant, of course; but she said, “Well, give me this living water.” What a wonderful opportunity that was for Jesus to convert her and say, “All right. I'll tell you, I can give you. If you just repent, just believe on Me and accept Me in your heart, and give your heart to Me, I'll give you the Holy Spirit.” That's what He meant by living water. But He didn't do that! He told her of her sins.

He said, “Go and call your husband.” She said, “I don't have any husband.” “Well,” Jesus said, “you told the truth for once, didn't you? You've had five husbands, and the one you're living with now is not your husband.” She wondered how did He know all those things about her? Well, He was

God in the human flesh. That's how He knew.

But Jesus came and said, "I will build My Church." And so He started the Church – people coming out of this world to live A DIFFERENT LIFESTYLE. That's what it amounted to, brethren.

Letter Vs Spirit Of The Law

Now in II Corinthians. Well, I think I did quote that a while ago. He calls those that are called, and He said to come out from among them of the world and be separate and live a different lifestyle. In other words, come out of sin; and "*sin is the transgression of the law.*" The law is God's way of life. And the very start of transgressing that law is vanity. I won't say that vanity is just the chief sin. I will say it's the father of all sin. It's where it starts, and it's going to lead you into to other sins.

Now, this world lives in sin. "*Sin is the transgression of the law.*" I John 3:4. "*The law is spiritual.*" Romans 7:14. It's a spiritual law. It is the way of love, and that is A PRINCIPLE. A way of life! It's a principle of out-flowing love, or concern for others' welfare. Towards God, it is worship and obedience. Towards neighbor, it is desire for their welfare and all of that sort of thing. (Now, let's see. II Corinthians 3:6, do I have that here?)

II Corinthians 3:6 *Who also hath made us ...*

Oh, yes. About how we observe the law: "*Sin is the transgression of the law.*" Now I want you to notice how Paul is teaching in the New Testament. Speaking of God:

II Corinthians 3:6 *Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament: not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.*

Now, they had to obey the law according to the letter in the Old Testament. They could not obey it according to the spirit because they didn't have God's Holy Spirit. As I said awhile ago, the love with which you are born is NOT capable of really fulfilling the spiritual law of love. It takes a love on a higher plane. It requires "*the love of God ... shed abroad in our hearts.*" They didn't have that love in the Old Testament.

On the day of Pentecost, the Holy Spirit came; and Paul now is talking to people that had access to the Holy Spirit and should have received the Holy Spirit. And so Paul says that we've obeyed the law according to THE SPIRIT – in other words, the principle of the law.

Now, let me explain a little bit about **the principle of the law**. The law is love (one word), but it magnifies. Now what is the whole purpose of God? I said, reproduce Himself. In other words, enlarge Himself – magnify Himself until there are many other persons that are BORN of Him, becoming His BORN children and become God just like He is God.

But His Spirit and the kind of love that comes with His Spirit – and the kind of attitude, and life, and lifestyle that goes with it – has to be begotten and born into you before you can become God! And you women won't have any paint on your faces when you are God, let me tell you that.

Magnifying The Law

PRINCIPLE, and it's a principle away from self. It's love away from self, because the only kind of love that **fulfills** God's law – a love that fulfills His law is the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit. Now you **magnify** the law. It becomes love to God and then love to neighbor. Now you see love in two directions: first towards God. That's what the world overlooks, and that's most important. That's more important than loving your neighbor, but you have to love both.

God's Holy Spirit shed abroad in our hearts means God's righteousness as compared to the world's goodness. The world has goodness on one hand and wickedness on the other. Different people in the world, some have certain virtues and certain good morals, good intentions, high ideals, and all that sort of thing, ethics; and others are just criminals through and through.

On television the last couple of days, they've pretty much mentioned that a certain man has been a criminal and been in penitentiaries. Twice he's escaped recently. As soon as he escaped the last time, he killed a woman and raped her. Every time they put him in, he'll try to escape and go out; and it just seems he doesn't want to be reformed. Well, some get down to that. Others have good ethics, fine ideals, but they have vanity too; and they think they are pretty good in their own selves, in their own righteousness.

But it is **the righteousness of GOD** (which is humility and never vanity), which exalts God first of all. And God says He will not give His glory to anyone else. You can't glorify yourself in front of the mirror. God is the one to be glorify.

Good On A Human Level

Now, this world follows Adam and the way he went. When it comes to the knowledge of good and evil, that's what he chose. And there is both good and evil in the world, but it is not God's kind of righteousness. It's not the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit. And I'll tell you, the love of God shed abroad in the heart of a woman is not going to sit in front of a mirror and pluck out her eyebrows, or put on something to make her eyelashes stand out, and put eye shadow on the upper eyelids, and outline her eyes so her eyes stand out and attract attention to the eyes. And she's not going to put on a lot of lipstick and other things that women wear in make-up. She just isn't going to do it.

When Adam took the knowledge of good and evil, he took good as well as evil; but it was good in the human sense. As I said, that is not good on a plane high enough to get you into God's Kingdom. It's not the kind of love that really fulfills God's law. It's not God's righteousness. That requires another kind of love all together. Human good but carnal love.

Now, the purpose of God and the Church is that we hunger and thirst for and receive God's righteousness. We have to become like God to become God! To become His children! God is not going to give eternal life to any of us unless and until we ARE like that, and have received that kind of righteousness – because we are to BECOME GOD. The purpose is to make man supreme, with supreme spirit, like God; and supreme in character – the character of God, to become God.

Now, in the spring of 1927, I was converted and baptized. I'd been a light smoker. Some of you may be astonished to know that I used to smoke. Well, I did. I smoked a type of cigarettes that came in a box of ten. I always wanted quality. It was a quality brand all right, a little more expensive than the average brand; but a box of ten lasted me three days. In other words, I didn't average but only about three cigarettes a day (not three packs).

Once in a while I'd smoke a cigar. I didn't like cigars because I couldn't control the saliva flow in my mouth. If I would swallow the saliva, it would make me very sick – like I was when I chewed tobacco when I was five years old; and you may have read about that in my autobiography. I was always having to carry an extra handkerchief or two, and keep spitting into that handkerchief when I smoked a cigar.

I remember in Chicago years ago, I used to do that especially if we've attend a Monday luncheon of the Association of Commerce, of which I was then a member; and it was fashionable then to smoke a cigar. Well, I was part of the world. I hadn't been converted yet. So, if I smoked a cigar, I didn't

smoke any cigarettes all day.

The Liberal Approach

Now the idea of smoking came up. I was converted. I realized that the Bible said nothing about tobacco or tobacco smoke. All right, is it a sin? Let me get this point over. All the liberals take this kind of attitude: If there isn't a specific "Thus saith the Lord, Thou shalt not" – then, isn't it okay? Can't we go along with Satan and Satan's world? Isn't it okay? We only have to leave Satan just as far as God MAKES us.

You know, they are like the woman that was in the Church when it first started up in Eugene, Oregon many years ago now (about 50 years ago). She hadn't been in the Church very long. She was new. She hadn't received quite the fullness of God's Holy Spirit yet.

She came to me one day. She hadn't been converted very long, just maybe a couple of months or so. She said that she had just received a sum of money that she had inherited. Someone had died (maybe a grandparent, or someone) and left her money. She said, "Mr. Armstrong, I want you to tell me how much of this I have to tithe. Now, I don't want to tithe any more than I have to. I don't want to do any more towards God than I have to, but I do want to get into God's Kingdom. Now, tell me how much I have got to do to get into God's Kingdom." But she wanted to go with the world as far as she could.

Well now isn't that the attitude of people who say, "Well, unless God says specifically 'Thou shalt not' it's okay to go along with Satan"? You can't go along with Satan ANY, not to any extent at all! Satan and his way has got to be put out of your attitude, your intent – your attitude of mind – completely.

Now, you are never going to get it out completely of your mind and your actions perhaps; but we have to grow more and more into it. We have to continue to overcome. That is a process. You don't overcome everything all at once. And you don't receive the full measure of the Holy Spirit to the extent that Jesus had the Holy Spirit at one fell swoop. Maybe He had 100% and you only received about 1 or 2% at the start; but you have to GROW in grace and knowledge – the knowledge of Christ. That's what we have to do.

And we don't grow trying to go Satan's way and saying, "I'll just go as far in God's way as He commands me and makes me go, but I don't want to go that way any farther than I am COMPELLED to do." If that's your attitude, why then, just make up your mind that you are going into the Lake of Fire. Just say "Good-bye, God. Good-bye, Church. I'm going to live it up while I can. I'm going to get what pleasures the world offers." It doesn't offer very much. I can promise you that.

The Spirit Or Intent

Well, I looked at smoking. I knew it wasn't in the Bible. But I read this in II Corinthians the third chapter. I knew that you have to apply the law **according to its spirit**, or its principle, its obvious intent. I said that gets down to there has to be a reason for smoking. Why do I want to smoke? Why do I ever do it? Do I do it to show love towards God? Well, now, I thought I'd read where prayers and things ascend up to God for a sweet smelling savor; but I didn't think my second-hand smoke would be a "sweet smelling savor" to God's nostrils. So I said, "No, I don't do it to please God. I don't do it to show love towards God."

Well now, do I do it to show love towards neighbor? Is it for his benefit and for his welfare? Is it love towards neighbor? There might be one out of 100 or so that might enjoy my second-hand smoke. But, on the other hand,

there would be a great many others who would be repelled by it and find it obnoxious. And so many are finding second-hand smoke obnoxious that they are having to put on commercial airlines now, they tell me ... I haven't flown on one for so long, but they tell me that now they have separate compartments where there is no smoking. They are even getting some restaurants where there is a no-smoking section, or something like that. No, I didn't do it to show love towards my neighbor.

Well now, what about taking care of myself, love towards self, in the sense of taking care of my mind and my body? No. I knew what lungs do with the functioning of the lungs. I didn't know smoking had anything to do with lung cancer. I don't think anybody else knew anything about it back in 1927. But I did know the function of the lungs, and I knew that smoke in it was going to prevent the lungs from filtering out the impurities and helping the elimination of poisons and toxins from the body for good health. Therefore, it would be bad for my health. So I said that the principle is not love towards God. It is lust towards self. Or it is wanting to go along with the world because others do it, and because I want to smoke with others because they smoke. So I said, "I will not smoke;" and I have not smoked since.

I'll let you in on a little something. I told someone about this personally the other day, and I don't mind letting you in on it. This must have been about ten years after that, when I was in Portland to do a broadcast. I had to stay up there about three days, and this time my wife didn't go along. I was up there alone in a hotel room. You know, I got to thinking: "I don't smoke. And I think that I would find that, if I smoked again, I would find that I don't enjoy it like I used to; and I just wonder." Now I thought, "I won't let myself go ahead and smoke, but I'm going to test it." I noticed that Solomon tested this, and that, and the other thing.

So I bought another box of those same cigarettes that I used to smoke. I went up to my room. I undressed. I took everything off. I left my clothes in

the closet with the door closed, so no smoke could get in. If my wife smelled it when I got back home, woe be to me! I was stark naked, and I lit one cigarette. Half of it was ... a couple of three puffs was enough. I felt dirty. It didn't smell good. I didn't like it. I threw it down the toilet, and all the rest of the cigarettes; and I threw the box in the wastebasket.

I never did tell my wife. Maybe I'll have to tell her in the resurrection, but I can't tell her now. That was the end of smoking. I learned my lesson. But I don't say that I ever smoked again, because I just took a couple of puffs or three. That was enough. I hadn't smoked half of a cigarette or anywhere near it.

Okay, now you know all the worse about me. [Audience laughs.] And that's why the whole Church is not smoking. I applied **THE PRINCIPLE**. **WHY DO I DO IT?** Will a woman be honest in **applying the principle** of why does she look in the mirror and paint up her face? There are some women in the Church that have not been honest about that, but God knows: They are doing it for the reason of vanity, or they are doing it to be like the world, or they are doing it because they are afraid of what the world will think of them if they don't. It has got to be one of those three reasons. You tell me a reason why they do. Why do you need to change the face that God gave you?

The Ways Of Death

Now I'll come to ... Well, I might just as well do it while I'm on it. What about this thing of good grooming? Some minister's wives have written me (two or three ministers' wives). They say "Mr. Armstrong, I want you tell you a woman's viewpoint about it." Well, I'm trying to tell you, brethren, God's viewpoint. A woman's viewpoint ... God says there is a way that seems right unto a man (well, unto a woman too), the ends thereof are the

ways of death. [Proverbs 14:12, 16:25] The ways are a woman's viewpoint, or a man's viewpoint.

I know a lot of men have a viewpoint about smoking – that it's all right and I'm all wrong. Well, they'll go their way; but I'm going to go God's way. Now, at that time, women didn't smoke. They do today. But men don't wear makeup (except on the stage or theatre, or some place like that), and they look horrible when they do. I know, when I started on television in 1955, they insisted I go in and have a makeup man put makeup on me because it was in a Hollywood studio. I let a man start to do it once, and I had him take it off. I began to feel miserable the minute he began to put some stuff on me. I don't want my face painted. I don't need to wear makeup when I'm on television.

Now another woman, who performs, said, "Well, I only wear makeup when I am on the stage and giving a performance. Brethren, that is not necessary. If we are going to fear ... and it is a fear of what the world will say to you.

Let me tell you another expression. I know a man that I knew quite well, and I had never hear him use bad language. He never did in my presence. I went to see him one Sunday afternoon, and he was out in the front of his house. He lived way out in the suburb up in Portland, Oregon; and he was doing a repair job on his own car. He did his own repair work. We were talking, and I had known him for quite a long time. A couple of other guys came along, and they began to use God's name in vain and use other four-letter words. It was very bad language, and I began to hear this man use foul language that I had never heard come out of his mouth before. He was ashamed **not to** go along with these other guys, and used the same foul language they did. He wanted them to think he was one of them.

How many women wear makeup because they want the women in the world to think they are the same. They don't want the women of the world to

think they are different. Now, I don't notice. I understand there are some of you women **IN THIS CHURCH THAT ARE STILL WEARING MAKEUP!** It's only a few, but I have to go to another woman to find out because men don't always notice it. I wouldn't notice it. I just don't pay attention to it. If you use very much, then I notice it; and I don't like it. But it's only a few, I understand, in this congregation. I won't say, "Shame on you;" but I will say to all the rest of you women that I commend you – that you have wanted to go along with God and honor God, and fear God a whole lot more than you fear what the world's going to think of you.

Expanding The Law Of Love

Now we have to make up our mind. It's **THE PRINCIPLE** of the thing! And the law expands. Now then, the law is **love**. It expands into love towards God and love towards neighbor. At Mount Sinai, God – in the person of Christ (because it was the Yhwh, the Word who later became flesh and dwelt among us, and who is called Jesus Christ) – who gave them the Ten Commandments at Mount Sinai. No wonder He is Lord of the Sabbath; and so Saturday, or the Sabbath, is the Lord's day.

He stretched the principle of love into ten different points. The first four elaborate how you love God, and the last six elaborate **the principle** of love towards neighbor. If you love ... Your parents are your closest neighbor. You express love to them by honoring them. Your husband, or wife, is nearest to you. Now outside of ... Your parents came first, then husband, or wife; and now you won't commit adultery. Now you won't murder. You won't steal. You won't lie. You won't covet. Now those are only the principles.

Now Jesus came **MAGNIYING THE LAW**, expanding it. God's expanding Himself – so that **WE** come into His Family! Now He expands His law, His lifestyle, His way of life. And Jesus said that under the Old

Testament, when they had to go by the strictness of the letter, a man hadn't committed murder until he killed another man; but if you just **hate** a brother without cause you have committed murder in your heart already. He expanded the principle way beyond the Ten Commandments.

In the Old Testament they hadn't committed adultery until the act had taken place. But Jesus said, "I say to you that any man who looks after a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart," and is guilty. Now maybe the woman didn't even know he was doing it. She had no part in it. She didn't know anything about it. But there's the principle, and we apply sin according to its obvious intent or principle.

"Why did I smoke?" When I asked my question, myself that, and I had gave an honest answer; I saw I shouldn't smoke. You ask a woman; and, if she gives an honest answer, she'll say, "I'll take makeup off." **BUT I KNOW WOMEN IN THE CHURCH WHO HAVE NOT GIVEN AN HONEST ANSWER.** They've given a dishonest answer! And I say to any of you women, "If you want to give a dishonest answer to why you use makeup, **YOU ARE NOT GOING INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD UNTIL YOU REPENT OF THAT!**" Did you hear me? – because I am speaking in the name of Jesus Christ, and by His authority; and you had better fear God in that sense.

The Liberals

Now, liberals don't want to apply the principle. Unless there is a specific "Thou shalt not," they say, well, isn't it okay then to go along with the devil and to go Satan's way. The world hungers and thirsts after the world's lifestyle. Liberals tried to **twist** the Scriptures and to approve makeup in an article that came out in The Plain Truth back in, let's see, it was 1974{2}.

I'll tell you what happened, since I've got time to go into a little of that. I was in a trip to the Far East, to Tokyo; and I think that was a trip when we were going to then go over the North Pole and from there back over into Europe. I don't remember just which trip. But my son came to me and said that our, ah ... I'd been talked into foolishly (and I should not have, but I had been) appointing a Doctrinal Research Committee, supposed to be scholars to look into the Greek and the Hebrew and everything. And I found out later that they were all liberals; and every one of them had just one motive and one intent – his real intent, his real motive, was to prove that I was teaching the Church wrong and to discredit the Church. They were serving the devil and not serving God at all.

Well, he came to me and said they had found that what was in the original Hebrew in a scripture in the third chapter of Isaiah didn't mean what I had thought it said. And, therefore, makeup is not a sin; and God doesn't condemn it. So isn't it all right? And, I don't know. I have a single tracked mind.

I was just mentioning during the song service, if I get to hear the music, I don't get the words. I don't know why. I really should. We were told this morning during the song service to think of the words. [Laughs] I happened to mention that I can't do that. I don't know why. If I think of the words, I don't get any sense of the music. I have a single tracked mind; but I can concentrate quite deeply on one thing, but I can't on two things.

I knew a man who could type a letter, and he was thinking what he was writing; and he could carry on a conversation on a totally different subject at the same time with someone else. Now how he could do that, I don't know. I couldn't do that! I can only do one thing at a time, but I can do that fairly well.

Well, anyway, it's one of those things that just ... I had other things on

my mind; and I said, “Okay.” I left; and, on the plane I remember that I wrote a few things to send in for what was then the Pastor General’s Report (only I think it was called the Bulletin at that time, back in 1974, almost nine years ago).

Now, I never saw what they printed. Several years later it was brought to my attention. What they printed in there, they stuck things in there up over my signature, and put my printed signature on there, so that everybody thought every word came from me. They put a lot of things in there I had not written! And it’s a dead give-away because later, part of it written by another man had word-for-word the same thing he’d put in as if I had written it; and I didn’t write that. Then they added a lot of things, and they ran into a lot of scripture to “prove” that they didn’t say anything against makeup; so therefore makeup was all right.

Now their whole argument was wrong. It was all along to the idea that if there isn’t a definite specific “Thou shall not,” it’s all right; and let’s go ahead and be like the world. That’s what they wanted to do all along.

Examining Scriptures

Well, I could go into those. I don’t know whether we have time. Maybe I can start to go through some of them just a little bit. I’ve got just a little more time.

Isaiah 3:16 Moreover the LORD saith, Because the daughters of Zion [Now Zion can mean our people Israel nationally, or it can mean the daughters in the Church – either one.] are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and wanton eyes [Now other scriptures translate that ‘walk with their heads high.’ In a haughty manner, you see, and **wanton eyes**.], walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling with their feet.

Now, it's not only the one concordance I looked into that showed the original words meant **eye paint**; but the other mostly credited commentary also quotes something to the same effect. Anyway, I'll just say other translations now – if you look into a lot of them – will say **using the eyes to flirt**.

As one of our ministers was saying the other day in my office, that women use eyes in a different manner when they have makeup on. Makeup is used to attract attention to the eyes; and you can tell by a woman's eyes a good deal what her motive and intent is. If she wants you to make advances towards her, she tells you with her eyes. I'm a male, I know; and these women know it too, whether they want to admit it or not. There might be a few women that don't. It's a feminine trait, but I think most of them do. I don't think my wife ever did, but she just wasn't that type.

There's one of them that says that the thing that accompanies the use of makeup, that draws attention to the eyes, they use eyes in a different manner. Now one or two of the translations use the word "flirt" (that they flirt with their eyes) in translating this scripture. At least it is not the meek and quiet spirit that you read of in I Corinthians 3:4, that God says we should have.

Now women say, well, they want to be well groomed. All right. I favor good grooming. I favor that. I try to be well groomed and set the example to men. I've even spoken in sermons about coming improperly dressed here to Church. But you don't have to put a lot of paint on your face and be like the world to be well groomed! I would feel like slapping the face of anyone who would come up and say to me that my wife, Loma, was not well groomed because she didn't wear makeup. And Mrs. Charles Hunting was well groomed, but she didn't need any makeup on. Yet one woman who did wear makeup said she was beautiful, but she was talking about her character.

Well now the next one, let's see, is ... Anyhow, it shows the spirit and

attitude; and it is not the spirit and attitude of hungering and thirsting for God's righteousness. You know that. I'm certain that you all know that. Now let's see. Ezekiel 23:40 next.

Ezekiel 23:40-41 And furthermore, that ye have sent for men to come from far, unto whom a messenger was sent; and, lo, they came: for whom thou didst wash thyself, paintedst thy eyes, and deckedst thyself with ornaments, (41) and satest upon a stately bed ...

This is talking about a whore, or a harlot; and it's God speaking of Israel. It's speaking of her as she was His wife, as a nation. She was playing the harlot with other nations. But it is speaking of her as if she were a woman here, and that she did commit adultery.

Now these men that are criticizing, they pointed out: Well, it says *painted her eyes*; but was it wrong to *wash herself*? To *deck herself with ornaments* wasn't wrong because God decked Israel with ornaments in another passage where He shows His love for her as a bride. This is showing the attitude of mind all the way through; and painting is one of the things that women use that shows a wrong attitude of mind. So you can't use that to say then it's okay. It just simply does not do it. And if you want to take your chances with God and say that God's apostle does not have understanding of the Word of God, and you understand it better than I do, go on out of the Church. Take your chances with God; but say "Goodbye" to the rest of us, because we're not going in that direction.

Now Jeremiah 4:30. Well, God is speaking of Israel who had gone into adultery here – speaking of her as a woman again.

Jeremiah 4:30 And when thou art spoiled [That is, in war; and defeated in war.], what wilt thou do? Though thou clothest thyself with crimson [Crimson, or scarlet especially, is the color of a harlot.], though thou deckest thee with ornaments of gold, though thou **rentest thy face with**

painting, *in vain shalt thou make thyself fair; thy lovers will despise thee ...*

In other words, it is showing going the way of the world to attract men. Now there are ways in which a woman can wear jewelry modestly, and not wear it lavishly. I was in a jewelry store in Beverly Hills; and they showed me a bracelet that a very noted movie actress was going to buy. In fact, she came in and was photographed with me at the time. It was \$100,000.00. But it was a blazing thing to appear on a bare breast with diamonds that would knock your eyes out. Now, it was not modest in any sense of the word; and that kind of thing would be condemned because it is extravagant, it is overdone, and it's too flashy. It attracts attention, and it is in bad taste. We believe in proper grooming, and good taste, and all of that kind of thing; but there is a limit to some of these things.

Now, II Kings: Let's see. II Kings 9 and verse 30.

II Kings 9:30 *And when Jehu was come to Jezreel, Jezebel ...*

Now Jezebel is one of the most evil women pictured in the Bible. She was extremely worldly.

II Kings 9:30 *Jezebel heard of it; and she **Painted her face**, and tired her head, and looked out a window.*

Well, Jehu came and had her thrown down; and the dogs ate her flesh; and that was the end of Jezebel at that time. But it shows that Jezebel was one who painted her face.

Out Of Harlotry

Now I have said that the modern use of makeup on women came from harlots, and it did. One minister's wife was here. That was several months ago. That might have been a year and a half ago, about the time this was

coming up before. This minister's wife cried, and acted like a spoiled child; and she said that I was accusing the women of being harlots. I have not done anything of the kind, and you brethren know that. I say that IT CAME OUT OF HARLOTRY, and I say that women are FOLLOWING HARLOTS! That doesn't mean that they themselves are harlots, but IN THAT they are following a harlot. Maybe not in fornication – I mean, harlotry; but in that they are. And harlots do it to attract men, and they are of the world. There is evil in the world. It's wanting to be like the world, and like the evil in the world; and that's the only reason why women do it.

Now, brethren, I don't expect to keep hammering away on this thing of makeup. I don't expect to talk about it again, and I'm sorry I have had to today. But we've started getting this Church back on the track. I don't know whether I'm going to live a lot longer. I think a lot of you brethren don't realize that I am not only going to enter my ninety-second year next month, but that over five years ago now I had total heart failure; and I have to watch my heart every single day, and I don't know in what minute it is going to stop; and it's beating irregularly now. I have to have my blood pressure taken very often, sometimes every day; and, when I am traveling on a trip, I have my blood pressure taken every night and every morning (and my pulse felt). And I never go without having an oxygen tank taken along. We don't know what minute I'm going to have to have oxygen, or you just won't have me with you any longer. But I want to get some of these things straightened out in the Church while I am still here, and I hope that God will.

Maybe it's going to take a miracle from God to keep me on very much longer. I talked to a brother-in-law of mine on the telephone yesterday. He looks ... because I haven't seen him in recent years ... and when he talked yesterday. He's five or six years younger than I am, but he seems to be a great many years older. But thank God – God has given me a mind that has continued to be usable, a voice that has continued to be usable; and I'm doing

the best I can to continue on the job as long as I can. But I do have to tell you that it is just by the grace of God that I am still with you, and how much longer I will be with you maybe one more heart beat. It may be several years. That depends on God, not on me. I have nothing to live for but you brethren and the Work that God has set before me. I hope you realize that, and I think you do.

Well now, just in closing, finally: Why do men smoke? Why do women paint their faces? I told you why men smoke; and women paint their faces for **vanity**, which is the very father of sin (as I have shown you). It was vanity that seized mother Eve and started her and Adam into sin. It was vanity that started the great archangel into sin and started sin in the first place in the whole universe. Or, secondly, it is **to be like the world** and to look like the world. Or, third, it is **fear** of what the world is going to think of you if you don't. Fear God, and not the world, brethren.

Government

Now, God had put government here on the earth. Lucifer was supposed to govern. He didn't. It went wrong. Adam could have governed. He didn't. Christ came. He didn't come to govern the world. He came to call some out that will govern the world. But He did put **government** in the Church. The apostle Paul wrote to the Church at Corinth "Put that man out!" Now shall I come with a rod, or shall I come in kindness, brethren? Which do you want?

He said that we should be, to the ministers over us that we should have love to those who bear the **rule over us** in the Church. There is rule, there is government, in the Church. And we are to govern the world! It is Lucifer, who became Satan, who took government out of the Church.

God is restoring government in this Church. It had gone when I came into the Church over fifty years ago, just about fifty. Well, I came in among

them over fifty years ago now. But we are about to the fiftieth anniversary of this Church, and we will celebrate it during the Feast of Tabernacles this year. We are into the fiftieth anniversary of the Church, and we are getting into the third generation really of the Church now. My, so many of you sitting here today were not even born yet when the Church started fifty years ago, because perhaps most of you are under fifty years of age.

But, anyway, the Church has got to be back on the track; and I thought we were getting back on the track; and we need to get a little closer **on the track**. I hope we understand now a little better and I've made it a little more plain today what sin is. It is not a direct "Thus saith the Lord – Thou shalt, or thou shalt not." Of course, if God says "Thou shalt not," it means you shall not! If He says, "You shall," then that's a definite command. But I mean **we apply the principle**. Where there is no definite "Thus saith the Lord," we apply the principle. That is what I have tried to do, and that is what I am trying to cause you to understand.

That principle – of applying **the principle of love** to God and love to neighbor, and expanding that principle – it will expand into any given circumstance. Any question that may come up, you can tell whether it is God's will or not by just applying that principle that I have shown you here this afternoon.

So let's go on, have the Church cleaned up and have the Church not only on the track but steaming full speed ahead on the track, brethren.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said "watches" but the verse says "waits."

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: As Mr. Armstrong was thinking, he first said 1960; but then he changed it to 1974.

From Sardis to Laodicea

Sermon (June 24, 1983)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

From Sardis to Laodicea.....	1454	This World And God's	1474
Transition: Sardis To Philadelphia	1455	Separate From This World	1476
Sin And Government	1461	Unto Another Gospel	1479
What Government Is	1464	The Lost Century	1481
How And What God Created	1465	The Gospel Suppressed	1482
Government On The Earth	1465	Mystery, Babylon The Great	1484
Sin Begins	1467	God's True Church	1485
Man Formed In God's Image	1469	A Short Time	1486
Man Made Incomplete	1470	The Name Of God's Church	1487
Sin Enters Humanity	1472	History Of Philadelphia Era	1488

I want to give you some of the truth tonight; and I hope it will open your eyes because I think, brethren, that so much Protestantism has rubbed off on us. We just have come to take it for granted, and just assumed that their concept (of God, of Christ, of salvation, of the purpose of everything) is right and true. And it seems to me that they couldn't be much farther **wrong** than they are.

In the eighteenth chapter of Revelation and the fourth verse, God tells us **COME OUT OF ALL OF THAT!** What He tells us to come out of is *"BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH."* [Revelation 17:5] And that Babylon the Great IS the Roman Catholic Church, and the harlots that are her daughters are the Protestants that came out of her in protest. And yet we have had so much of that rub off on us. I hope I can make some parts of that a little more clear and plain tonight, so that you can understand.

I am going to give you tonight something that I have already put before the television cameras (It will be on film.), and that you will be seeing some

night during the Feast of Tabernacles. But I want to give you a little preview of it tonight.

Now we are having refresher courses constantly of ministers called in from all parts of the world here. There is on in session right now. And you know we all need a refresher once in a while to refresh our memories. And maybe there are several things that we have never quite fully understood; and we need to get it straight, and to be brought up to date on it. So I thought you wouldn't mind having a preview of it tonight.

I'm probably not going to say everything just the same way anyway as you will be it on... And I hope that you will attend during the Feast of Tabernacles the night that this same message is given. It will take the place of the "Behind the Work" film that we've had the last two years. I hope that there will be time to work some of those two films in with it, because I took just an hour and fifteen minutes to give this part of it before the television cameras; and I think that it can go a full two hours with an intermission at the Festival. So I hope that they'll have about 45 minutes to put in other parts that you saw last year and the year before, on the "Behind the Work" film that gives more of the work itself and what has happened since this Philadelphia Era of the Church came finally into being.

Transition: Sardis To Philadelphia

Now what I want to give you is a history of the transition of the Church between the Sardis era and the Philadelphia era. What I'm going to give you tonight is something I have never given you before. It's something that most of you have never heard. How did it happen? When did the Sardis era end? When did the Philadelphia era begin?

Brethren, I want you to know there was no just sudden ending of the one and beginning of the other. There was **a transition** where one gradually,

over a period of some few years, merged from the one into the other. Let me tell you, Jesus said in Matthew 16 verse 18:

***Matthew 16:18** I will build my church, and the gates of [the grave] will not prevail against it.*

Did you ever stop to think what that meant? One Church wasn't going to die, and another begin. There has been no time—never a day, never a week, a month, or a year—since the Church started in 31 AD that there hasn't been some people **in** the Church. And there were people in the Church when part of them were already beginning in the Philadelphia era. Those people were still in the Sardis era, and they were meeting together. And I'm going to show you that I pastored both for some time. Some of this part of it, and the details that I'm going to give later tonight, I think have never been fully published. I've published parts of it, but never fully, and completely.

The Purpose Of God

You know the greatest subject in all the universe, the greatest thing, the most important thing that should come to your mind is **the purpose of God**. God's purpose! That is the most important thing in your life, the most important thing in the world, the most important thing that exists. What is God's purpose? The scriptures say His purpose shall stand. Nothing can interfere with it or interrupt it. It will stand.

Satan has tried to stop it. Satan has tried to prevent it. He hasn't been able, and he never will. Let me read you something first, in Romans the eighth chapter, and beginning with verse 28, verses 28 and 29. It's starting, you might say, right in the middle of a sentence, verse 28.

***Romans 8:28** And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God.*

Now some people, one minister was preaching continually "All things

work together for good,” and he stopped right there. He forgot it’s “to them that love God.” Otherwise, all things don’t work together for good.

Romans 8:28 *All things work together for good TO them that love God, to them who are called [the called]...*

How many times have I been saying recently that we are not a volunteer Church. We are a conscripted, drafted Church. God has drafted us. God has called us. It isn’t a matter of ‘whosoever will’ may come. The only place in the Bible that applies is after the Second Coming of Christ. And you find it in the last book of the Bible, the last book, the book of Revelation. The last chapter, I mean, of the book of Revelation [Revelation 22:17.] It is not a ‘whosoever will’ may come now. Jesus said:

John 6:44 *No man CAN come to me except [God] the Father...draw him.*

You have to be called, and drawn by God. So notice it:

Romans 8:28 *All things work together for good to them that love God, [Now this explains who “them that love God” are.] to them who are the called [according to THE PURPOSE] according to **His purpose**.*

You were **called** according to God’s purpose. What is that purpose? Next notice the next verse, the twenty-ninth.

Romans 8:29 *For whom he did foreknow [Do you know that He foreknew us? It says He did.], he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his son, that he [the Son] might be **the firstborn** of many brethren.*

He was **born** very God by a resurrection, as you’ll read in the fourth verse of the first chapter of Romans. Jesus Christ became a Son of God by a resurrection from the dead. And we become sons of God and born of God at the time of the resurrection when we either are immediately changed from

mortal to immortal or resurrected if we have died in the mean time. Otherwise, we are not yet born.

Christ is THE ONLY ONE who has been born of God. He was the firstborn! Jerry Falwell talks about being ‘born again.’ He doesn’t know what the word means. He is no more ‘born again’ than a mosquito. [Laughter.] Not a bit! Now, if he is deceived, he is not judged. But you and I are being judged. And if he is not being judged that means that God hasn’t called him YET, but will latter. So we mustn’t sit in judgment of him either. A deceived man doesn’t know he’s deceived. So we can’t blame him really.

Now, I’d like to begin back in the eighteenth verse. I want to give you a little something about God’s purpose. Again, he’s been saying that if the Spirit of Christ dwells in us, He that raised up Christ from the dead will also make immortal our mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwells in us. (That’s verse eleven.) And if we are led by the Spirit of God, then we’re already now the sons of God [Romans 8:14]; but only **begotten** sons, not yet born. Not born sons. Now verse eighteen:

***Romans 8:18** For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time [while we’re just begotten] are not worthy to be compared with the GLORY that shall be revealed in us.*

Oh, now we see something of God’s purpose: “*the GLORY that shall be revealed in us.*” Brethren, do you ever stop to think that such... Do you know what that glory is? And it’s that kind of glory, if you understand what it is, will be **revealed in you**—IF you have repented, and believed, and have the Spirit of God (which you should have); and IF you grow in grace and the knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ; IF you continue to overcome, IF you endure to the end.

***Romans 8:19** For the earnest expectation of the [creation]...*

Now the word there should be “creation” and it is in all other translations. It was just a misprint, a mistranslation here. But the earnest expectation that the creation—the whole universe! That means all the other planets, the sun, the moon, the stars, everything in the universe.

Romans 8:19 ...waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

Now do you understand that? In first John three, you read:

I John 3:2 Behold, [even] now [**already**] we are the sons of God: and it does not yet APPEAR what we shall be.

In other words, what we shall be doesn't appear. You can't see it yet. Not until we are born again. You can see us, flesh and blood. You can't see spirit. And we're not spirit yet, anyway. And so “what we shall be” is something you can't see YET. But we know that, when He comes, we will then be like He is; and we will be seen like He is. We will appear as He appears, so we can be beheld by the eye.

And then in verse 9 of I John 3 [{1}](#), I believe it is: When we are born of God, we will not even be able to sin, for “he that is born of God CANNOT sin.” He just **can't** do it, because God's seed remains in him. Now, we haven't come to that place yet. We still can sin. We just better be careful that we don't.

Romans 8:20-21 For the creation [Now, that's the whole creation.] was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him which hath subjected the same in hope [In other words, there's hope for all this whole universe, and the whole creation.], (21)because the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption. [It is in a corrupt condition of corruption now.]

Now I knew long before cameras landed on the surface of Mars and sent back photographs on the surface of Mars, I knew what that surface was

going to look like. It's going to look like something all burned out and decayed. And the Bible says that's the way the universe is. I knew that's the way they'd find the moon, when they got up there. They finally got up there, in just some very few years ago. So the whole universe is going to be delivered from the... I think one translation says "thralldom." And here it says, "*bondage of corruption.*"

Romans 8:21 *...into the glorious liberty of the children of God. (22) For we know that THE WHOLE CREATION groans and travaileth in pain together until now. (23) And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit.*

There again, we're the first to be judged, the first to have salvation. Others will have it later. God hasn't rejected the others. He just hasn't called them **yet**. He's calling us **now**, so we are "*the firstfruits of the Spirit.*"

Romans 8: 23 *Even we ourselves groan within [It's not an easy life, this Christian life.] ...waiting for the adoption {2}, [that is, or] to wit, the redemption of our body [when our bodies will be made like His glorious body].*

Now that is **the purpose of God**. And if you compare that with the second chapter of Hebrews, you find out that **ULTIMATELY**—after this Earth is made God's headquarters for the whole universe—we are going to restore, from corruption, the whole universe.

Now, that'll take a long time. That won't be a year, or 100 years, or 1000 years. How long are we going to live? Oh, we're going to live more than 1000 years. We're going to live FOREVER! It'll never end. We just keep on going, and going. Now, it may be a few million years from now before a lot of this gets done. But we're sure going to enjoy **the doing**.

We're going to be just THRILLED with **the anticipation** of the plans

ahead when God begins to reveal them, and we see what we're going to be able to do. Then, as we look back on the accomplishment, we'll be even more thrilled at the accomplishment. You know, there's a saying: "The anticipation exceeds the realization." Well, it won't. The anticipation will be thrilling enough. But the realization, once it's accomplished, will be even a greater thrill, a greater joy. That is what is coming.

All right, now. That's only an introduction. God's purpose then is to reproduce Himself through human beings that are made out of clay, from the dust of the ground. He's going to make that of us. We are going to be **born** as His children—born of Him—till we become God, even as He is God. But we have to have HIS CHARACTER, received from Him and begotten into us, before we can be like God. We can't be God without having God's character! And now is the time for receiving that character, for building that character.

Sin And Government

Now, this all involves the question of sin and of government. Everything revolves around the question of **SIN** and of **GOVERNMENT**. I want to show you that. Last time I spoke here, I had to speak about women wearing cosmetics. That's just a minor thing, in a sense. But sin is sin! And people don't **know**, and don't **understand**, what is sin. And so many don't want to know. They want to sin. So they don't want to realize that what they're doing is sin and, therefore, is wrong. And sin brings a penalty on you. The penalty is eternal death. In other words, instead of becoming God, you just will become extinct. But you will suffer (a suffering that you can't imagine now) before that happens.

Now, it ALL began before the world was, before this Earth even had been created. I want to begin at the beginning, and I want to trace the whole thing—the purpose—from the beginning. I want to show you the Church from

the beginning, and then show you its history. Now, let's get going.

God is first shown in John in the New Testament, chapters one to four.

***John 1:1** In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

Now you also read in the beginning of the Bible:

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning...* [Again, just the same as in John.]

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning Elohim [as Moses wrote it in the Hebrew language] created the heavens and the earth.*

“Elohim” means more than one. Well now, if God is more than one, who was God? Because in verse 26:

***Genesis 1:26** God said, Let **us** make man in our image.*

He didn't say, “Let Me.” There was more than one person, and it was God speaking to the one who was called the Word. Now John the first chapter, in the New Testament, explains who God is. God is the Word, which is one person.

***John 1:14** And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us.*

He was the Word before He was born. He had always existed. He was then the Word. But the Word divested Himself of the supreme **glory** that is God. He gave that all up to come here, into this miserable world, and live the life that the first Adam should have lived. To set us an example; and then die to pay the penalty of our sin, to be resurrected to make possible a resurrection for us, that He might be “the firstborn of many brethren.” We can be born as He is now—God once again, as He was before.

***John 1:1** In the beginning was the Word [That is the one that became Jesus Christ.], and the Word was **with God** [Another person. And then it*

says...], *and the Word was God.*

And the Word is God, again. Jesus is born “God” by a resurrection from the dead (Romans 1 verse 4). Now, it says:

John 1:4 *In him was life.*

If there was life in Him, He lived; didn't He? And if He lived, He had to do something. He had to be doing something if He lived. He had to. “Lived” means motion. He didn't breathe breath, because He didn't need to. But He lived, and the Father lived. **God lived.** HOW did He live, and how did God live? They both had to live. And if they lived, what did they do? Now, there's two things: how they lived, and what did they do.

All right, the way they lived was **the way of love**; and that way is a lifestyle. That's the way they lived in relation one to the other. God loved the Word. The Word loved God. And when the Word became flesh, God said (at the time He was baptized):

Matthew 3:17 *This is My BELOVED Son, in whom I am well pleased.*

God LOVED His Son. Well, He had always. God doesn't change. He was the same yesterday, today, and forever. So He did love the Son eternally. And Jesus loved the Father, and obeyed the Father. So the way They lived was **love!** That meant affection and love, each so interested in the good and the welfare of the other; and it meant cooperation, and not competition. It meant each was serving and helping the other. It was that kind of life. And that kind of life becomes A WAY OF LIFE, or a lifestyle. And so that **Way** becomes **a law.**

Now, what is the word “law”? “*Sin is the transgression of the law.*” [I John 3:4] But it's the transgression of God's law, of course; and the law is spiritual. God is a Spirit, and it is a spiritual relationship. It's a spiritual relationship! Now, it is a way of life; and a law is merely the way of life.

What Government Is

What does government have to do with that? **Government** is only an organized system of administering and enforcing that WAY of Life on those that are under the subjection of the government. Here in the United States, what man has built under Satan, and perhaps (I believe) this is the best country, but this whole world is the world of Satan. But there is good in the world, as well as evil. I'll say more about that a little later. It's not God's kind of "good," unfortunately.

There is a Constitution of the United States. It's a basic law, and ALL LAW has to be in conformity with that. And it's only something that defines the way laws are to be made to regulate the way we live—one in relationship to the other, or one group with another group, and so on. Human relationships.

Now, that **Way** is defined by God's law. Government is merely a system of organizing those under the government to regulate the way they live according to that law. Now, what did God and the Word do? I told you how They lived. Now They had to do something. Another thing, two cannot walk together except they be agreed. They were **perfectly agreed!** You can't find one place where Jesus ever disagreed with the Father, or where the Father ever disagreed with Jesus. They were in PERFECT agreement—just like one mind. Of the same mind, They believed the same way; They agreed 100%. What did they do? They were Creators. And to create, you have to think first, and to design what you are going to make.

Before this auditorium was built, we spent about 10 years with the plans, designing. And every little cubic inch of this auditorium was put down on paper. Oh, all the plans were papers about an inch and a half to two inches thick. There were so many blueprints and papers; and they were good-sized papers too, big papers. And every bit of it was all planned and designed.

How And What God Created

And God had to plan and design before He created. What did God create? First of all, God and the Word created **angels**. Now, how did They create? Well, in Ephesians 3 verse 9, you read God “*created all things by Jesus Christ.*” You read in the Psalms that Christ spoke, and it was done. [Psalm 33:9] The POWER that did it was the Spirit that emanated from Them, because they are both composed of Spirit; and Their Spirit emanates from Them and has power to create matter, to create this or that, or form and shape matter in whatever way They wanted to. So God gave the order, and Christ only obeyed and followed it.

The first thing they created was angels. And after the angels were created, we find that then they created **the WHOLE UNIVERSE**, and this Earth. They created **matter**. There had never been such a thing as matter, and then God created it. In the thirty-eighth chapter of Job, I’m going to go right through this pretty quick now. I won’t turn to these scriptures. You should know them. I’ve gone over it before anyway. We find that when God created the Earth, the angels were there. And “the morning stars” (or the archangels) were singing together, and all the other angels were shouting for joy [Job 38:7] because the Earth was to be their home. They were going to have a solid Earth of matter to live on, and they were put on this Earth first. God hadn’t created any human being yet at all.

Government On The Earth

Now, on this Earth, God set a throne; and there He put the supreme archangel that He put here over them. There are two other archangels mentioned in the Bible, or cherubs: one is Michael, and the other is Gabriel. And we don’t find that they were, at that time, put on the earth; but this Lucifer was. He was the archangel, and he was put on the Earth over the

others.

Now, God's only way of life is LOVE, and that becomes a basic law. And government—to regulate the lives of people—has to be based on law. And that was the basic constitution of the basic law of the government on this Earth. And to enforce it, or administer it, God put **a throne**; and He put this Lucifer on that throne. So that means GOVERNMENT was put onto this Earth. Now that law, what is it?

But, first, let's just turn to something about that Lucifer. We read of him now back here in... First I want to turn to Isaiah fourteen; and beginning with verse twelve, we read this. First, it talked about the king of Babylon; and now it rises up to the one who is over the king of Babylon—because Satan is the god of this world. He's on that throne! And this is talking about a man that is under that throne. And now, the type rises up, lifts all of a sudden to the antitype, or to Satan. And it says:

Isaiah 14:12 *How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!*

Lucifer is a name that means “shinning star of the dawn.” And the “stars” are angels. He was the cherub, the super-archangel. Now verse thirteen:

Isaiah 14:13 *For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ASCEND into heaven [He was on the Earth.], I will exalt **MY THRONE** ...*

So there was a throne on the Earth, and he was the only one who sat on that throne. Now, here's a super-archangel on a throne on the Earth **to administer the government of God**. That's the government of love.

Isaiah 14:13 *I will exalt my throne above the stars [or angels] of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the [far] north [And that is the location from the Earth here as to where the throne of*

God exists.]: *I will ascend above the heights of the clouds* [He was below clouds. He was on Earth. I don't think we find any clouds on the moon, or on Mars. There are on Earth.]: *I will be* [it says here] *like the most High*.

And I privately think that's a mistranslation. It should have been, what he meant was "I will become the most High. I'll knock God off the throne, and take His place. I will rule everything!"

Now we read a little more about him in the twenty-eighth chapter of Ezekiel, and we need to know that at the beginning. It's speaking of the same one of whom the prince of Tyre was a type. He's called here "the king of Tyre." So I'll just drop down to the fourteenth verse, where it talks about this super-archangel, this cherub. And it says that:

Ezekiel 28:14 *Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth.*

You find that in the twenty fourth chapter of Exodus. One of the angels (the archangels, or the cherub) whose wings spread over the very throne of God in heaven. He had been there. Now God had put him on a throne down here. He had learned about God's government on God's Throne. Now he's placed on a throne of his own, here on the Earth, to administer God's government—which is a way of life, which is the law of God—the law of love.

Sin Begins

Ezekiel 28:14 *...I have set thee* [So God says. Then verse fifteen.] *(15)* *Thou wast PERFECT in thy ways* [his lifestyle] *from the day that thou wast CREATED* [He was not born; he was created separately, a separate created being], *till iniquity was found in thee.*

Why did he turn to iniquity, when he was put here to administer God's Law of LOVE? And now he wants to go up and fight God. What happened? Iniquity is lawlessness. Why was he—instead of "law enforcing"—now "law

breaking”? The seventeenth verse:

Ezekiel 28:17 Thine heart was lifted up because of thy BEAUTY, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy BRIGHTNESS.

He was so brilliant, so bright. His beauty, it went to his head.

I don't know why it is: We call women “beautiful.” We don't call men “beautiful” at all. But women want to be more beautiful. It goes to their head. So they want to put a lot of dirty paint on their faces, which God didn't design. God is the Creator. He had to design a woman's face. You know I believe that, if you could have seen mother Eve before the Devil got to her, you'd have seen the most beautiful woman that has ever lived. I don't think she needed any paint on her face. I think after the Devil met her though, if she had had a looking glass, she'd have put some on. But I don't think she had a looking glass, or a mirror.

Now the throne was there. And his beauty, that led to... He got to thinking of himself, and self began to have vanity. “I'm going to be greater than God. I'll go up and knock God off the throne.” So you see how VANITY is, you might say, **the father of sin** and of rebellion against the law of God.

That's another reason that **vanity** ought to be kicked out of this Church! Vanity is self-glory. It's not glorifying God. It's glorifying the self. It's thinking, “How beautiful am I. How lovely am I. Well now, I get to thinking about myself, and I want everything.” And that leads to wanting to get, and take away from the other; and that leads to antagonism against others. That leads to jealousy and envy. It leads to competition and strife. It leads to hatred and murder. It leads to sin! And **THAT'S THE WAY SIN BEGAN!** From vanity and thinking, “How beautiful I am.” It's **the very principal of sin.**

Now we need to see (That's how sin entered the universe.) how did it enter mankind? How did it enter the world? Well, destruction came to the

Earth as a result of the sin of the angels. In the one hundred and fourth Psalm and verse thirty, you'll find how God in six days **renewed** the surface of the Earth (or, the face of the Earth) for man. And what you'll find in Genesis 1 is not an original creation, but the renewing of the face of the Earth in six days for mankind.

Satan was already here. I've shown you how he got here. Now, he was already here; and he was sitting on a throne, and there was government here. But Satan had thrown away God's government of love and substituted instead the government of self-self-righteousness, self-beauty, self-glory, self-desire, selfishness. And that became "the law," instead of love.

Man Formed In God's Image

So now we go back into Genesis, and in six days God reformed the Earth for man.

Genesis 1:26 *And [then] God said [And this was God the Father saying to the Word.], Let US make man in OUR image.*

So God formed man **in His image**. He had formed cattle after the cattle kind, dogs after the dog kind, and elephants after the elephant kind. But He said, "Let's form man after Our kind—the God kind!" WE WERE MADE TO BECOME **GOD**. Now, you find that all the way through the Bible, and that begins here in the very first chapter of all the Bible.

Now, in the second chapter of Genesis, in verse seven [{3}](#). Let's see.

Genesis 2:7 *The [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground [He took the dust of the ground, and made a man of it.], and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life: and man [from the dust of the ground] became a... soul.*

A soul, then, is matter—made from the dust of the ground.

Man Made Incomplete

Now there were the two trees. God did not give [Adam] immortal life, but God OFFERED it to him. God made him, as I've said so many times, **incomplete** at first. Just like a woman bakes a cake that is incomplete until she finally puts the icing on, when she finally finishes it. And God hadn't finished His Creation. In fact, He hasn't finished it even yet in our time. He's trying to finish it in the lives of all of you people here tonight, and those in God's Church. He's called us now to begin to finish that Creation IN US. He's not trying to finish that Creation in the Churches of this world. He's not trying to finish that Creation in the outside world. Only in those He's calling NOW.

We have to fight against Satan, and fight against Satan's world and all of the people in this world. And when He does call the others, they won't have to fight anything like that (except their own selves). They'll have us to help them. We'll be God. We'll be there to teach them. We'll be there to help them. And then they're going to have **their chance**, and they'll have a far better chance than we do. But we're being judged now. The world is not yet judged.

Adam chose the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. That is, **to take to himself** good and evil. Now, he was made with a spirit in his brain, and that formed the human mind. The human spirit, one human spirit inside of a human brain, made him a mind. A cow has a brain, but he can't think. He can't love music, and art, and literature. He doesn't know anything about arithmetic and mathematics. He doesn't know anything about astronomy, or physics and chemistry. A cow can't think; but he has a brain just like we do.

It's THE SPIRIT IN US that adds the psychic part and imparts that

power of intellect to the brain and makes it possible. Psychologists don't know these things, brethren. They're not taught in the universities and the colleges. Scientists don't know these things. **GOD REVEALS THESE THINGS!** And the revelation of God reveals knowledge that the human mind just doesn't know, or understand, with all of their vaunted knowledge in the colleges and universities.

Impregnated With God's Spirit

Now, what happened? They hadn't made a choice yet. God has a choice there. If they had taken the Tree of Life, which is open to us now finally... We get eternal life by first receiving the Holy Spirit of God, and the Holy Spirit of God imparts eternal life to us temporarily. Or, that is, in a sense of begetting us; but we're not yet born. It's just the impregnating germ. That's all. But the first thing that it does do is open our minds to comprehend God's law, and God's truth, and the things God has prepared for those that love him.

The natural mind of man **CANNOT** understand the things that God has **PREPARED for us**. The normal mind born in us can go, but that mind needs something else. Just like the cake that isn't finished till it has the icing put on, the mind isn't finished and complete **UNTIL the Holy Spirit of God joins with our spirit**.

I've said time and again, Adam was not physically complete. God wanted him to reproduce, and he couldn't do it. So God created then a woman for him, made a woman out of his rib. Now He had two persons. And the two, male and female, became one family; and now they could reproduce and have children.

The mind was alone with one spirit. It needed another Spirit to go with it, and then we become **ONE WITH GOD**. And that's what the Atonement means, at-one-ment; and it means that, through the Spirit of God, we become "at one" with God.

I'm telling you things tonight you won't hear in any church on this Earth, except one of our own Churches. And, unfortunately, you aren't hearing this in too many of our own Churches because too many of our ministers haven't quite learned it yet themselves.

Sin Enters Humanity

How did sin then enter into humanity? The third chapter of Genesis:

***Genesis 3:1** Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which God had made.*

And the woman sort of strayed away. She was supposed to be submissive to her husband. She wasn't. She stealed away from him. Or, stole away from him, I guess I should say. And she encountered Satan in the form of a serpent, and he said: "Yea, hath God said, 'Ye shall not have every tree.' Didn't God keep something back from you?" "Well, we can have every tree except that one; but God said we'll surely die if we take of it." He said, "Oh, now look, God knows better than that. You won't surely die."

[**At 47:19 this highlighted part is missing from the audio file we have.]

"God lied to you. He knows better than that. You'll become God, if you take of that tree; and God doesn't want you to compete with him and become God. And look how beautiful it is! Go ahead and take it. God was deceiving you." And it was really Satan who was deceiving her.

And so they had obeyed Satan instead of God. God's Word, the Bible, says:

***Romans 6:16** His...ye are to whom ye obey.*

They disobeyed God. They obeyed Satan. They believed Satan. They

didn't believe God. And the way you have to, that we have to, come into eternal life now is first of all to **believe God**. And then repent, and be baptized in token of that belief. But it means not only believing in God; but **BELIEVING GOD!**

Now, when that happened:

***Genesis 3:23-24** Therefore the [Eternal] God sent [the man] forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. (24) So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.*

Lest he go back and gain eternal life in sin! And sin brings unhappiness, and sorrow, and punishment, and pain, and suffering on people. God did not want that to happen. So He wasn't going to let him live forever in that kind of unhappiness, and misery. So **HE CLOSED UP THE HOLY SPIRIT**. And now the Holy Spirit was closed up from all mankind until Christ, the second Adam, should come. Now all through the Old Testament times, and for four thousand years, the Holy Spirit was **CLOSED UP**. (God only made one exception.)

Now, Christ came as the second Adam to start the kind of world that Adam should have started. But God actually started that world way back before. He started it with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob; and later with the other prophets: Samuel, David, Elijah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, all the prophets, and so on. And so the Church is based on the foundation of the prophets and the apostles, Jesus Christ being the chief cornerstone. [Ephesians 2:20]

Earth's throne and government continued right there with Satan. But Satan on that throne now had gained dominance over human beings. He's "the prince of the power of the air." [Ephesians 2:2] He was able, through the air, to communicate an attitude—an attitude of self, of self-glory. And that's

what's in women that want to paint their face, and they DON'T KNOW IT. And I want women to **wake up** in the Church, and realize the truth. They're going to find out God's truth some day. God doesn't share His glory with anybody. He will glorify us, if we obey Him. In time, He will.

Earth's throne continued and developed **a world, and a CIVILIZATION**. Now this civilization, it consists of governments. They're all man-made governments, and not one of them works! Democracy is against Communism; and that's against Fascism; and one kind of government is against every other kind of government. So people go to war, and they fight; and they try to kill one another.

It developed a world with such a great paradox—a world that is right now in the throes of AWESOME PROGRESS and development, all physical and mechanical. We are doing wonderful things physically and mechanically; but it's a world of **APPALLING EVILS**, of sorrows, of trouble. People starving to death; people killing one another; people inflicting torture on one another. Unhappiness, no contentment, discontent, unhappiness, selfishness—and yet progress. Such things ought not to be, brethren. So that's the civilization that we have.

This World And God's

Into such a world came Jesus Christ, the second Adam. He was BORN with the Holy Spirit. From the time of His birth, He had already made His decision. Before He was even born, He divested Himself of all **the supreme glory** that He had and shared with God. He gave that up for you and for me. He came down, just like we are, as a human being that could die. He became a human MAN, but He was also God in the human flesh. His name was called Emanuel, which means “God with us.” His name was also Jesus Christ. He has many names, for that matter.

Now, He came to start **GOD'S WORLD**. This world was developed by Satan through the human, Adam. Jesus came to develop God's world by Christ, started by God; and God gave Him the order to come down here and do it. So Jesus said, "I will build My Church, and the grave will never prevail against it. [Matthew 16:18] It was going to exist through every generation, and it has existed through every generation. Now I want to begin to come to the history of it.

He came also that we might have LIFE and have it more abundantly. God offered Adam life, and he took the other tree instead. **God offers us life**, and that life comes **through the Holy Spirit**. And it will be much more abundant than the temporary existence that people have in this world. But God now decided to start it from the beginning. This world was started with the one man, Adam. God's world is going to be started with one Man—the second Adam, Jesus Christ. All right. He came to start it. Already some start had been made by the prophets. But they didn't... Well, they couldn't start the Church, or anything. Christ came to start that. We just have the writing of the prophets.

Jesus then called Twelve. **HE CHOSE THEM**. He said to them, "You didn't choose me." [John 15:16] No. Peter and Andrew wanted to be fisherman. Let's see, wasn't it Matthew wanted to be a tax collector. They all wanted to be something else. Jesus said, "Drop what you're doing, and come follow Me. I've called you." You have to be CALLED to come into God's Kingdom. So He came to give **the life** to those He called—the life that had been SHUT OFF from the sons of Adam.

Now when Adam died, it was appointed at that time for men "once to die, but after this the judgment." [Hebrews 9:27] And so everybody who ever lived is going to be resurrected and brought to judgment. And that means a chance at salvation. They're not lost, as the world thinks they are; but neither were they saved. They died in their sins. In the resurrection, they'll realize it.

They'll be sentenced to death. Then they'll be pardoned, because Christ paid the penalty in their stead so they won't have to pay it. That is, all who repent and all who begin to live God's way. And others will just be completely destroyed, burned up in the Lake of Fire.

Separate From This World

So Jesus CALLED first the Twelve. Now He gave the parable of the grain of mustard seed as a sample that the Church would start the smallest. The Kingdom of God, He was talking about God's Kingdom. God's Kingdom is God's civilization—The World Tomorrow, a new world. It started with the one Man, Christ. Then, He called the Twelve apostles. But He said in John 6:44: "*NO MAN CAN COME to me...*" now, and get into the Church at this time, and come under judgment now, except those that God calls. "*No man can come unto me except the Father that sent me draw him,*" John six verse forty-four.

Jesus also, as you read in II Corinthians 6:17, said to those He did call: "*COME OUT from among them [of this world] and be ye separate.*" We are to BE SEPARATE FROM THE WORLD. But, some of the women in God's Church will say, "Mr. Armstrong, I don't want to be separate. Look, I want to tell you a woman's point of view. The women of the world all wear paint on their faces, and lift up their eyebrows. They pluck them out, and paint new ones in a little higher up. And I want to be like them! Now unless God says, 'Don't!' isn't it all right? Isn't it okay to go Satan's way? I HUNGER AND THIRST to **go Satan's way with the world**, Mr. Armstrong. That's what I want to do. Now, I want to get into the Kingdom though. How much do I HAVE TO DO to get into the Kingdom?"

I'll tell you what you have to do. You have to get rid of sin! And maybe you have to wash up your face a little bit. No, the women don't hunger and

thirst for God's righteousness. They hunger and thirst, some of them... I don't mean all of you at all. In fact, I don't mean most of you. But some few have been hungering and thirsting for this world, and they're afraid of what the world will think of them.

You know the first thing when I saw the truth of God, and was facing conversion, and baptism—I thought, “Well, what are my business associates going to think? Between them and the world, what will they think of me?” Oh, I thought, “Oh, boy. They'll look down on me if I just go to Saturday instead of Sunday, and try to get converted and give myself over to Jesus Christ.” Well, I had to come out from among them, my former associates, and be separate; and all you men have to do the same thing. I learned I had to quit smoking. I had to do a lot of things I had to give up. And you women have to do the same.

Sin And The Law

Now again, WHAT IS SIN?

1 John 3:4 Sin is the transgression of the law.

The law is love, and it is a lifestyle. It's the way you live. It's one of the things you do. The law is love. Now love is **a principle**. It's a principle that can be magnified. Now, it is love. All right, let's go a little further. It's love to God, and it's also love to neighbor. It's not love to yourself, though, in lust or vanity. That glorifies the self, and that's love of self. It's love OF GOD. It's humbling yourself. It's a spiritual principle, and the spiritual principle can be applied to anything that comes up.

It's love to God, and love to neighbor. The first four of the commandments tell you how to love God; the last six, how to love neighbor. When Christ was on Earth, He magnified it further. He said that you haven't committed... They use to say you didn't commit adultery until the act had

been performed. “I say unto you, a man who just lusts after a woman has committed adultery already in his heart with her” [Matthew 5:28] although the woman may not even know anything about it. Maybe the woman didn’t know he was looking at her. Under the Old Testament, you hadn’t committed murder until the other guy was dead, or you’d killed someone. Jesus said, “I say to you, you have broken that principle of that law; and you are a murderer if you just hate a brother in your heart.” [Matthew 5:22] Hate means you want harm to come to him—instead of wanting to cooperate and help him, and concern for his welfare and good.

Now, **what is the fulfilling of God’s law?** How do you perform it? **LOVE is the FULFILLING of the law!** And love is an action. Love is in motion. Now, what kind of love? Is it the love of man? Oh, no! Any love you’re born with is so much filthy rags to God. That’s self-righteousness, and that will not fulfill God’s law. **The ONLY love that can fulfill God’s law is THE LOVE OF GOD shed abroad in our hearts by His Holy Spirit.** That’s Romans five, verse five. Mark that down. Look in your Bible

Romans 5:5 The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit.

God has to give you that love; and, if you hunger and thirst for it, He will. But that’s the love that loves God more than you love your cigarettes, or more than you love paint on your face, or more than you love the ways of the world.

Now, God’s righteousness is compared to the world’s righteousness; and the world’s righteousness is just self-righteousness and so much filthy rags. Oh, there’s good in the world as well as bad. In this world, a lot of people have a high sense of morals, a sense of integrity, or a great sense of honor. The Orientals have a great sense of honor. They lose honor if they do certain things. But that is all carnal! That falls far short. It’s on a lower level

than the love of God and God's righteousness. God's righteousness can only come by the Holy Spirit, and the Holy Spirit God gives only **to them that obey him**. That's another scripture [Acts 5:32]: the Holy Spirit that God gives to them that OBEY him.

Now Adam took good as well as evil. Human "good" is carnal, and it's just like self-righteousness. It's so much filthy rags to God. It does not fulfill God's law. The purpose of God, and of the Church, is that God's righteousness comes **into us** so we can be made God. But you can't become God unless you have **His righteousness** and you're righteous like He is righteous. I hope I make that plain. So we finally become God.

Unto Another Gospel

Now, the history of the Church. All right. Jesus... (Let's see, how am I coming? I got by this on the telecast. Well, if I hurry up maybe I can get through now.) It started with Jesus alone, like a grain of mustard seed—one person. He chose Twelve. Others began to follow Him; and, by the end of His ministry, there were 120. So on the day of Pentecost, when the Church started, there were 120 there who received the Holy Spirit.

That same day 3000 more were converted by Peter's first inspired sermon on that day. Now we find that the number of the people, just a day or so later, 2000 more were converted in the temple when Peter preached a sermon. And then you find that the number of the disciples was multiplied. But you will notice carefully in the book of Acts that it takes two or three pages for one event; and you get clear over the first seven chapters, and it's only a few days. It's not several years. It's only a few days time.

So now we come in the book of Acts, to chapter eight, which is only a few days (not several years) later. You read here:

Acts 8:1 And at that time...

It's when Saul was consenting to Stephen's death. Stephen was martyred, and that was the first martyrdom; and Saul was consenting to his death. At that time there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria—except the apostles. Now, persecution set in. They began to turn away from THE GOSPEL, from **the true gospel**.

Next we turn to just a little later. This now is about 22 years later now. In Galatians one, the Apostle Paul writes to a Church that had been established up there. Turkey is there today. It's what we now call Turkey. But they were Galatia in those days. Paul says here:

Galatians 1:6-7 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that CALLED you [You see, they'd been called. God had chosen them. They'd been called, and they'd turned from Him.] into the grace of Christ, UNTO ANOTHER GOSPEL [And the Gospel of Christ was being taken away]: which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ..

Now I would like to turn next to II Corinthians, the eleventh chapter. And at that time, in II Corinthians, Paul wrote to the church over in Corinth:

II Corinthians 11:4 If he that cometh preacheth another Jesus [Which they were doing. A Jesus that was a smart aleck young man, that knew more than His Father, and did away with His Father's law. And they were trying to do away with the law of God in the Gentile countries.], whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with [it].

And Paul had said that “*I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve* [II Corinthians 11:3], they would also deceive you, and beguile

you.” He’s been beguiling many IN THIS CHURCH TODAY! We have to be alert, brethren. We have to realize that the world has been deceived! Now we see more about these ministers who were preaching other gospels and deceiving the people (verse thirteen, same chapter):

II Corinthians 11:13-15 For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. [They weren’t Christ’s apostles at all. Notice what they were.] (14) And no marvel, for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. (15) Therefore it is no great thing if HIS ministers [SATAN’S MINISTERS] also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness [which they were not]; whose end shall be according to their works.

And that’s what was going on at that time.

The Lost Century

Then we entered a time that I call “The Lost Century.” And they... Well, let me read you something in history. Now from the history of THE DECLINE AND FALL OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE by Gibbon, chapter fifteen—a recognized history: “The scanty and suspicious materials of ecclesiastical history seldom enable us to dispel the dark cloud that hangs over the first Age of the Church.”

Many say now that it seems like a curtain was rung down on the history of what happened to the Church for 100 years. And when the curtain is lifted up and you look up and see what was going on, you find the Church as different as night is from day, as black is from white; but CALLING ITSELF “Christianity,” still **USING THE NAME OF CHRIST.**

Now let me read you something else. There is a German theological school [{4}](#) that has this. They call that century an obscure century, from 50

AD to 150 AD. And this much I'm quoting,"...violent contest was going on between two gospels. Some wanted the gospel of Christ," which means the same gospel Christ preached, the gospel of the Kingdom, "and others wanted a gospel about Christ".

By 150, the people that were in favor of the gospel **about** Christ had won, and the other was being stamped out and persecuted. And anyone—that wanted the gospel **of** Christ, and would keep the Sabbath, would keep God's law, and those things—was martyred, were put to death, were tortured. You read Foxe's BOOK OF MARTYRS, and you get a history of what happened to millions of real Christians back in those days.

The Babylonian Mystery Religion, as a Hellenistic tradition, became the Roman Catholic Church by 150 AD. And the Roman Catholic Church claims that they started in 33 AD; and that was the year of Simon the magician, or the sorcerer, you read of in the eighth chapter of Acts, at the same time that the great persecution had entered in. It's in the same eighth chapter of Acts that I just read to you a while ago, the persecution setting in. You read about this Simon that started the Roman Catholic Church in that same chapter.

The Gospel Suppressed

The Gospel was **suppressed from the world** from about 53 AD; and **THE TRUE GOSPEL OF CHRIST WAS NOT PREACHED TO THE WORLD UNTIL GOD HAD IT PREACHED BY MY VOICE** in 1953—one hundred time cycles of 19 years each—on the most powerful radio station on the face of the Earth (Radio Luxembourg, over in Europe). I had already proclaimed it coast to coast in the United States for 19 years. And then, one hundred time cycles after it was suppressed, God had it going out **BY MY VOICE** with many of you backing me. Most of you, however, have come

into the Church since that time.

The false church you read of in the seventeenth chapter of Revelation. Let's turn to that just a moment, in the seventeenth chapter of Revelation. Here we find, and you trace it from the second chapter of Daniel, the seventh chapter of Daniel, the thirteenth chapter of Revelation, and this seventeenth chapter of Revelation. They're all speaking about the same thing. Daniel seven and the Revelation chapters speak about beasts, or wild animals. And the wild animals began with the Babylonian Empire, or the Chaldean Empire of Babylon 600 hundred years before Christ; followed by the Persian Empire; then the Greco Macedonian Empire; then THE ROMAN EMPIRE. And then it had a deadly wound that was healed in 554, and then they called it THE **HOLY ROMAN EMPIRE**. And the Pope was sitting on top of it, and it was 100% Roman Catholic.

Now in the seventeenth chapter of Revelation, you read of that. At the same time:

Revelation 17:1-2 There came [out] one of the seven angels which had the seven vials [That's the seven last plagues, at the Second Coming of Christ. That's just a few years ahead of us right now.], and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: (2) with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

They're drunk on it—so bleary eyed, they can't see the truth—on her doctrines. They PROFESS CHRIST. They talk ABOUT Christ. The Protestants talk ABOUT Christ. They don't talk about the Kingdom of God. They don't tell you what that's going to be like. They don't talk about THE LAW OF GOD. They don't talk about SIN, what sin is. They take it for granted that sin is just something that maybe you think you know already.

They don't talk about the things you hear talked about in this Church!

It's just like someone was saying the other day. You go into those churches, and you listen to their telecasts on the air, or their broadcasts on radio; and it's just so much FROTH. "Oh, it's lovely about Christ." And "God loves you." And then "He's going to perform a miracle for you today." All that kind of poppycock! It's talking about Christ and about your life now. They don't get down to **the solid meat** of what Christ came to teach and talk about; and of God's purpose; and what God is doing; and what He's doing in our lives; and what of the future; and what has God prepared for us in the future.

Mystery, Babylon The Great

Now notice:

***Revelation 17:3** So he carried me away...into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast.*

And that scarlet colored beast was the Holy Roman Empire. The woman was the Roman Catholic Church. And in verse five, he said:

***Revelation 17:5** Upon her forehead [the church's forehead] was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT [In other words, the Babylonian Mystery Religion having become great, and ruling over the nations of Europe as they did in the Middle Ages, up until 1814.], THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS...*

She's a Momma Church. Her daughters are the other churches that came out of her in protest; and they call themselves Protestant, who protested.

***Revelation 17:5** ...OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE*

EARTH. (6) And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints.

God couldn't speak more harshly about any system on Earth than that. Now then, in the eighteenth chapter and verse four, God says here about that Babylon and her harlot daughters:

Revelation 18:4 COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

And some OF OUR PEOPLE want to still be in it. God says, "Come out of her!"

God's True Church

All ready (Now I'm ready to get down...) the Church began to lose. Even the true Church existed at all times. In the twelfth chapter, you read of **the true Church**. Let's turn back to that just a minute, the twelfth chapter; and here is another Church pictured. That was the great Roman Catholic Church. Here's the true Church:

Revelation 12:1 And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet.

This was the true Church; but this was ancient Israel, before she had the Holy Spirit and before Christ came. And there it shows Satan, the devil, as:

*Revelation 12:3-5 Another wonder in heaven...a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns [Just like the beast did that he gave power and strength to in the government.] ... (4) His tail drew a third part of the stars of heaven [A third of the angels were with the devil.], and did cast them to the earth [And the dragon was ready to devour her Child as soon as it should be delivered. Now Christ was born of Judah.] ... (5) And she brought forth a man child [That was the birth of Christ.], who was to **rule all***

nations...

Now we're getting back to GOVERNMENT again. Satan has been ruling all this time. Now, Christ is to rule all nations, and sit on that throne of the whole Earth, taking it away from Satan.

Revelation 12:5 ...to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child [which was Christ] was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

That goes over His lifetime, His crucifixion, His resurrection, and His ascension up to heaven, caught up to God. That one little sentence there covers the whole lifetime of Christ.

A Short Time

Now it's after Christ:

Revelation 12:6 And the woman [Now this is the Church that had the Holy Spirit, the New Testament Church.] fled into the wilderness [In the Middle Ages, when she was persecuted by the woman. The martyrs of Jesus fled into the wilderness. Now, she fled on her own feet.], where she hath a place prepared of God [And she had to go into a place of protection. And now finally...] (7) There was war in heaven.

That's about this time. I think that may have happened just recently—before the government of the State, the largest State in the United States, tried to attack this very Church, and tried to take it over; and they did not succeed.

Revelation 12:7-9 There was war in heaven: Michael [That is one of the other two archangels.] and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels [The dragon is Satan.], (8) and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. (9) And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan.

Now, there's another battle in heaven; and this time Michael is fighting against Satan. And he's cast down to Earth, where he's really angry and begins to persecute the Church. Now we're coming down to the time of salvation and the Kingdom of our God [Revelation 12:10], which is just ahead of us now.

Revelation 12:12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

How does he know he has but a short time? Jesus said you know by **when** this gospel of the Kingdom is proclaimed once again to all the world. THEN will the end come. [Matthew 24:14] And Satan knows that, brethren. Do you? Do we? I hope we do.

Revelation 12:14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is [to be] nourished for a time, and times, and half a time [That's 3 1/2 years.], from the face of the serpent.

And then he goes after **the remnant**—that'll be the Laodicean Church—and persecutes them. And then Christ comes. And half of that Church, you read in Matthew twenty-five, the door is shut, and they're kicked out or kept out; and half go in. That's the Laodicean Church that hasn't risen up yet. That'll come up out of the Great Tribulation, just ahead of us now.

The Name Of God's Church

All right, now let's get down to the history right up to now in the Church. God's true Church has ALWAYS kept the Law of God, which is God's way of life. (And is not to keep us out of sin.) It has ALWAYS been a

Sabbath keeping Church. And another thing, it has ALWAYS been kept in **the name** of GOD. Jesus prayed three times, in the seventeenth chapter of John, that the Church would be kept in God's name. He said to God:

John 17:12 I kept them in Thy name.

While He was on Earth, He kept them in God's name. He prayed that we would be kept in God's name. Twelve times in the New Testament the only name of the Church is "**the Church of God.**" They kept the name. They kept God's law. They made a difference between the holy and the profane. Now, that's about all. You find the Churches that have done that, and you find **the true Church.** The Protestants have not. The Catholics have not. Even the Seventh Day Adventists have not. They changed their name.

History Of Philadelphia Era

Now let me give you some history. In 1860 the Church of God was at Battle Creek, Michigan. Now there may have been other bodies of them in Europe and other places. I don't know about that. I just know that we have a history of the Church in Battle Creek, Michigan. A number of the members of the Church wanted to split off and take another name. They had a hymnal, The Hymnal of the Church of God. They were known as the Church of God. The majority took the name "Seventh Day Adventist," and split off. They adopted at least three great doctrines of their Mrs. White that are false: the investigative judgment, the 2300-day doctrine, and (The, oh, what was the other?) the spirit of prophecy. And so the majority left, and the smallest amount carried on.

They moved to Marion, Iowa. There they published a paper every week for Church members, called "The Bible Advocate." Then, about the turn of the century, they moved to Stanberry, Missouri; and The Bible Advocate was continued to be published.

Meanwhile, God began dealing with a man that He had been **raised up for a purpose**. In the years 1911 and 1933, God raised up a man that I think looks a great deal like I do. [Laughter.] And he had been very successful in business. By the time he was 28, he'd been making what today would be about a third of a million dollars a year. And that's a pretty good income for a young man only 28. He had been successful.

He was married at age 25, and before I was 28 I was making a lot of money. But while I was still 25 (Only a matter of, oh, let me see. It was less than a month or two after I was married.), my wife had a dream that was the most real thing that had ever happened to her. It appeared to be more of a vision than a dream, and it excited her.

Now, I didn't know about God. I had never studied the Bible. I had been brought up in the Quaker Church, but I didn't know what they believed. I was never interested in religion; and, at age 18, I dropped out of church because I was never interested.

But my wife had **a vision**. In it she saw birds coming with something like angels coming in the sky. It was out at a great crossroads where two roads, well, crisscrossed. There was about a five corner there out on Sheridan Road in Chicago. She was standing right out in the middle of the street; and everybody began to see it, and a crowd came along. They were coming on down, and it wasn't birds; and she saw it was angels. And finally, it seemed like it was one Angel. And she thought, "Well, this must be the Second Coming of Christ." He came down; and, to her surprise, He came down and put His arm on her and me.

I was going to movies...

[***Missing content at 1:28:49.***]

Then we got on **all** the major United States stations every day—all the

big 50,000-watt stations. The Work was then growing 30% a year for 35 years, up until 1968. And it finally became WORLD WIDE, as it is now. And so I will close in one scripture, Matthew 24. The disciples had asked Jesus for a sign of His Second Coming and the end of the world. (I have slipped a few minutes overtime. I'm sorry, but I wanted to get this complete.) The disciples came to Jesus and asked Him privately, saying:

Matthew 24:3 *When shall these things be? [The destruction of the Temple at Jerusalem.] And...the sign of Thy coming, and of the end of the world? (4) [Now] Jesus...said...Take heed that no man deceive you . (5) For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: [but deceiving the world].*

That is what they have done! That was the whole controversy in that first 100 years—a gospel about Christ, rather than the gospel of Christ. The gospel of Christ is the gospel of the Kingdom. And it was not preached—**for 1900 years the gospel of the Kingdom was NOT preached.**

Now in verse 14, and now Jesus came to tell them when would be the sign of His coming and the end of the world.

Matthew 24:14 *And this gospel of the kingdom SHALL be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations: and THEN shall the end come.*

Now, immediately after that, the Great Tribulation is to come; and it is going to come. This thing of the Pope in Poland this last week has brought it much nearer. I'm going to be saying many things about that. And there is something about it in the coworker letter that should have been mailed out today.

Immediately after the tribulation of those days, the Day of the Lord will come. The sun and the moon will be darkened, and so on—the Day of the Lord. And then they will see Christ coming in the clouds of heaven, with POWER and great GLORY, to set up **GOD'S KINGDOM**—the new

civilization, The World Tomorrow—which the first Adam should have set up, but which he didn't.

Well, brethren, I tried to hurry through. I went into a little more I think with you here tonight than I did which you'll hear on the tape during the Feast. But I think that you'll agree that many of these little details you have never heard before. And I thought you'd be interested in knowing. I think you should know **our roots**. Where did this Church come from? How did we come down to here? God has RESTORED the true gospel; God has RESTORED an annual holy day; He has RESTORED His law, and many things, into the Church. And He's used me in most of it, in doing it; and here we are.

I don't know how long I can continue. But, it's all in God's hands. I know my work is far from finished. I hope that God will just keep me going. I don't know. Next month, just a matter of a few weeks now, I will enter my ninety-second year. Now wait a minute, is it ninety-second? Yes. I'm 90 now. And, as soon as I am 91, that will be entering the ninety-second year.

Well, I don't know. We've got people that retire at age 55. I think I should have a lot of back pay. I should have retired, and have retirement pay for all those years. [Laughter.] But I'm not going to ask for it. I won't say anything about that. Don't you mention that I did. [More laughter.]

Good night, brethren.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editorial note: Wrong chapter given. The original said: "And then in verse 9 of I John 2, I believe it is."

[{2}](#) - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong said "waiting for the redemption;" but at the place where he was reading the Bible says, "waiting for the adoption."

{3} - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently read the wrong verse. The original said: “And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us.” (John 1:14)

{4} - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong fumbled and then corrected himself. The original said, “It was; there is a German theologian, theological school that has this.”

Success Based On God's Law (Origins)

Sermon (July 30, 1983)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Success Based On God's Law (Origins).....	1493	What Is The Holy Spirit?	1507
False Premises	1494	Second Law Of Success	1508
Importance Of Origins	1496	Third Law Of Success	1511
God's Way Of Life	1500	Fourth Law Of Success	1512
First Law Of Success	1501	Fifth Law Of Success	1513
God Is Reproducing Himself	1502	Sixth Law Of Success	1513
Man Needs God's Spirit	1504	Seventh Law Of Success	1514
God's Law Of Love	1506	Fitly Framed Together	1516

Well greetings, brethren, once again. Next Sabbath I expect to be speaking in Boston – Boston, Massachusetts. I'm leaving on Monday for my third visit this year up to Orr, Minnesota for the camp up there. And then I'm going over to the camp at Loch Lomond. Ah, what do you call it, Lake Lomond? Anyway, in Scotland; however they pronounce it over there in Scotland. And I think it is good and perhaps necessary that I get over and speak to these young people – these youths from 13 to 18 years of age, or including 17. They are the leaders of just about 15 and 20 years from now. And what this Church is going to become, a whole lot depends on them. I wonder if we realize just how important they are.

Well, let me ask you the same thing you heard earlier this afternoon: Why we should come out of the world. This world is right now in the first stages of the crisis at the close of this age, or of this whole world – this present world. And another, better world is coming. Right now everything is stepping up. God has delayed certain events, but He says that He will make a short work and cut it short suddenly. Jesus gave us the expression of how it will come when it is least expected. And like a rat getting caught in a trap that

snaps, when it didn't even know it, until it is caught. And that's how suddenly things are going to happen very, very soon.

How much longer God will delay before He does that, I don't know. But there is every reason why I can sense that we are coming very, very close to that time. Europe is reuniting; and, when it is reunited, our work will be finished. And that will lead fairly quickly into the Second Coming of Christ and the World Tomorrow. So the world is at a crisis.

False Premises

This world is evil. The world is wrong. I've said many times that all errors and evil is merely the biggest error you can have; that all errors come from a false premise that is assumed and taken carelessly for granted. A certain premise that we assume, and it's the foundation or the basis on which everything and every argument and all so-called knowledge after it, is based; and yet it is false. And you find that in most cases, nearly always, errors are based on a false premise taken carelessly for granted and assumed as if it is so self-evident that it needs no proof.

Adam took the tree of the knowledge of good **and** evil, and we do have both in this world. There's a certain kind of good that is a selfish good in the world, but also there's a great deal of evil. Now it all traces back to its origin. And this subject of **origins** is something that it seems science fails to look into, education fails to look into, religion fails to examine it; and yet that is the basic **premise**. That's where it all starts. If your premise is wrong, everything based on it is going to be wrong. That's why this world is wrong!

Satan has blinded this world on a false premise. (Let's see now, I have some notes I have scribbled down here that I want to bring to you.) Well, the false premise that Satan has given the world of education and science is that of **evolution**. That is the premise on which everything is based. In other

words, that's their origin. They trace origins through their doctrine, or theory, of evolution. That's where everything began. And it cannot explain the troubles in the world. It gives no hope for a solution. And the whole world is in trouble. Now that's science, that's education, in the world.

But now look at religion in the world, especially in Christianity as a whole. Religion looks at it that, ah, God created man and God's plan failed right at the very beginning. Adam made the wrong choice, and it was **the fall of man** and ever since God has been trying to repair the damage. Satan came along and damaged what God had created, man. And God has been trying to repair the damage and make the man as good as he was in the first place, before Satan came along and caused him to fall.

Now, if you trace it, God wasn't succeeding very well; and so, 430 years after Moses, God formed a **nation** to be His nation. God tried to a new scheme. But the nation didn't obey; and Satan got the best of Him there, on the nation. And then He sent Jesus Christ to come try to repair the damage and make everybody in this world as good as Adam was before the fall, and to save the whole world in that way, one at a time; and go out in a crusade. So they look at it that Jesus Christ was sent into the world on a soul-saving crusade.

Well, I can't find any place in the Bible where Jesus went on a soul-saving crusade – where He ever pled with anyone to give Him their [{1}](#) heart. I do see in the Bible where a young woman came to Him up in Samaria at Jacob's well. He spoke of the Holy Spirit in the terms of living water. And she said, "Give me this living water." She was asking for it. What a wonderful opportunity for Him [{2}](#) to have converted her. Instead, He said, "Go and tell your husband." And she said, "Well, I don't have a husband." And Jesus said, "Well, for once you've told the truth because you've had (What was it? I think...) five husbands; and the one you are living with now is not your husband." He didn't try to convert her. He told her her sins and

what was wrong.

And that's the way it is in the world. So the world has been **deceived** in regard to religion, to success in life, to our problems. They have been deceived about God's way of life; and they've been living a different and a wrong way of life, because they don't know its origins.

Importance Of Origins

So today I want to talk to you a little about the seven laws of success. I want to talk too about the origin of law and of government, and basic things of that kind that explain WHY the world is wrong. I want to tell you why, and why I've been now for about two years going back to origins. I've gone back to the two trees. I don't know whether some of you have said, "Ah, there goes Mr. Armstrong again. I wish he'd get off of those two trees." I'm not going to get off of them.

Did you ever tune on a movie on television, or go into a movie motion-picture theatre, and the play is about one-third, or half, or two-thirds over? And you can't make anything out of it. You haven't seen what when on before, and you don't understand what you are seeing now. Well, brethren, we came into LIFE; and all life is a moving picture of God's program and plan. There is **a purpose** being worked out here below, and God has that purpose; and it is God who working it out. And in the working out of that purpose, we've come in, well, at about the eleventh hour – when it's almost over; and most people look at it from here. Not having seen what went on before, they don't understand where we are now or what causes the condition that we see now. You have to go back to **the origin** and see how it all **started**. We have to get the **premise** right, or else our conclusions based on that premise are going to be false.

So the world has been deceived in regard to religion. The world has

been deceived in regard to education, to success in life. It's been deceived in government, in every way. It doesn't know the **origin** of **law**.

Recently I spoke at a meeting down at the law school of the University of Southern California. And I mentioned to them something about the origin of law and of government. You know, I don't think that they know the origin of law; and yet it's a law school, and they are studying law. And I don't think that the judges on the Supreme Court of the United States understand the origin of law and of government. They've come in like we have, at this late hour; and they don't understand it. If you don't go back to the beginning, you are all mixed up. You have a wrong perspective. You don't understand what's going on now.

I explained to the law school of the University of Southern California – that is, to a group of them – I explained how, when I was five years old, my father told me that someday I would be a Philadelphia lawyer. Because I was always asking so many questions, he got tired of answering them. Well, when I was age 34, I was **CHALLENGED** on a question of law. And I told them I went to **a law book** to solve this question of law. I said it was a book that I didn't know whether they had a copy in the library or not? I doubted if most law schools had a copy of this book on law. But it's a basic book on law, and it speaks about law from its very beginning. In fact, that book is **the Holy Bible**; and it speaks about law in the 2nd chapter of the very first book. And all the way up to the last chapter of Revelation, you still see law spoken of. It's about law all the way through!

Now sin is the transgression of the law. And it has a lot to say about **sin** and about **law**. You know, they discovered down at the University of Southern California law school that they did have one copy of the Bible there; and they said they were placing an immediate order for several more copies. Well, I think they are to be congratulated. The Bible should be the basic textbook on law.

I gave them a hint on the origin of law and of government, and how it all ORIGINATED. Where did this thing of law start? Where did government start? What is law? Lawmakers, judges, rulers of government don't understand. That's why they are messing everything all up today. They just don't understand where it began. They have a wrong premise.

What is law? And what is government? Well, **law** is the rules that regulate human conduct in relation to others. For example, you might call the rules of a football game or a baseball game, you might call them THE LAW of the game. Law is merely rules that regulate conduct so that we get along, so that everything goes along like it should. But the law schools don't understand the origin of law. As I say, I don't think the judges on the Supreme Court of the United States do.

What Is God?

Now the first words in all that LAW BOOK, which is **the chief source of law**; and the beginning (and every law school ought to begin here) is Genesis 1 and verse 1, where it says:

Genesis 1:1 In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.

Now "God" is a plural word, Elohim. It was written in the Hebrew language. That was written, let me see, well I guess over 3,000 years ago; and it was written in the Hebrew language. And we have an English translation. We have the English word "God." "*In the beginning, God...*" Well, the word "God" is an English word translated out of the Hebrew word "Elohim."

Now Elohim is a plural, meaning more than one. How do you explain that? What is GOD? I've said "What is law? What is government?" Now, WHAT IS GOD? Well, we go back to John 1 verse 1 in the New Testament, as I've done many times before.

John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word.

Now in Genesis, “*In the beginning* [Elohim]” – more than one Person. In John 1:1, “*In the beginning was the Word.*” What is **the Word**? Well, in the 14th verse it explains:

John 1:14 *The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us* [and became Jesus Christ].

So the **Word** was Jesus Christ before He was ever born as a human being. Now if you’ll ask further “What is God?” – God is a Spirit. (John 4:24.) So the Word was, then, a Spirit; but the Word was made flesh, and He became human. And before that He’d been a Spirit. Now, continue in John 1:1.

John 1:1 *In the beginning was the Word* [That’s a Spirit Personage.], *and the Word was with God* [We know God is another Spirit Personage, because God IS Spirit. So now we have two Spirit Personages.], *and the Word was God.* [The Word is also God.]

Now, that can only be in the same sense that, if you’d say “In a certain place was John, and John was with Smith, and John was also Smith.” You’ve got two people and they’re both Smith, and Smith is the family name. And they both have **the same Family name**. However, God is not the Word. And the Word, well the Word was God – because They were both God. And the Word did become... When He was born human, He did become the Son of God; and God became His Father.

If you read a little further on (to the 2nd, 3rd, and 4th verse), you read that all things were made by Him – the Word. And later on it says in Him was life. Now, They both had **life**. They both lived! If They had life, They lived. If They lived, that means action. That means performance. That means doing something. What did They do? Well, they were **Creators**. And to create, you have to first think out what you are going to create. You have to design. You have to plan. You have to think it out. And then you have to produce and

form and create. And so, God had to do all of those things. Now we get back to Genesis 1, verse 26:

Genesis 1:26 *And God said, “Let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness.*

You see, God said that to the Word; and there are two people there. God didn't say “Let Me.” He said, “*Let us.*” He told the Word to do it. Now HOW did the Word create? And HOW did God have anything to do with it? In Ephesians 3 and verse 9, you read that God created all things; but He did it **BY** Jesus Christ. In other words, Christ is the Word. One of the Psalms says He spoke and it was done.

Well, how did He speak? His own ideas?” No. When He was in the human flesh – and He didn't change, because He said He's “*the same yesterday, and today, and forever*” has always been. He said He spoke only what the Father told Him to speak and commanded. Now, God created things **BY** Christ. God told Him what to do; and He spoke, and the Spirit of God that emanated from both the Father and the Son is the power that did it. So that's the way that the Word created, and that's the way the Father also was back of creation.

Now, They lived; and, as I said, They created. We have two there, and They were working together in this creation. When two are working together and living together, two can't get along except they be agreed. So They had to be agreed. I've shown you now **WHAT** They were doing. They were creating. Well, **HOW** did They do? **HOW** did They get along together?

God's Way Of Life

Well, in the first place, where there are two they not only have to be agreed; but one of them is going to always be the boss, or the leader. You

have to have **leadership**. And so God created everything by Jesus Christ. And God told Jesus, or the Word, what to do; and He did it.

Now how did They live together? What was Their manner of relationship one to another? What was Their lifestyle, if you please? Their mode of life. When Jesus was baptized, the Father's voice said from heaven, *"This is My beloved Son [Or, You are My Beloved Son.] in whom I am well pleased."* He LOVED His Son! His Son was His Beloved Son. And Jesus loved the Father and obeyed Him.

And so Their way was cooperation. Whatever the Father said do, the Word did. He did it instantly. They were both together. They were agreed. One was the leader. There was cooperation. Now Their WAY OF LIFE – the way They lived – was **love** one toward the other. That **way** simply was a rule of life; and, therefore, was law. And in God's creation and God's purpose, that way – LOVE – becomes the supreme **LAW!** That's the **way of life!**

Now, first of all, you know you can expand that a great deal; and Jesus came to expand the law. To... (What's the word? I can't think of it right now. I don't know why a certain word that I've used maybe a thousand times in my life won't come back to me when I want it.) Anyway, it is a principle that does expand. There's a better word than expand that means the same thing. Love became the law, a way of life!

First Law Of Success

Now God had a purpose. I'd like to get back to my book "The Seven Laws of Success" and let's see if they square up with God's way. The first law of success, according to the book which God inspired me to write (I hope, and I believe), was having a purpose. Having a **goal!** If you don't have a goal, you don't know where you are going. **A goal** is your objective. Where are you going? What are you going to do?

Most young men never think about having a goal. They never think about what are they going to do when they grow up. They never think about what kind of work are they going to do, what kind of occupation or what kind of profession will they get into. Or, if they do, they just think “Well, I’d like to be a dentist.” “I’d like to be a doctor.” “I’d like to be a lawyer.” And they decide to go to a school. And maybe the one who decides to be a lawyer would be better talented, and equipped, and have more ability to become a doctor.

Well when I was eighteen years of age, I put myself through a self-examination by a book I found in the public library that examined whatever abilities or talents, if any, and what weaknesses, and shortcomings, and faults I had. And also it went through a complete examination of the professions, the occupations, the different jobs, to see where those particular talents or abilities fit and where those weaknesses and handicaps did not seem to do so much harm.

Now I didn’t choose just the right profession because the one that I should have chosen I didn’t know yet, until God called me. I had no way of knowing it at the time. But what I did choose I think God guided me in, because it **prepared** me for what I...and gave me the experience that I needed when I did start the real profession that God later did call me to.

All right. **God has a purpose** that is being worked out here below. That’s the beginning now, of the first law of success. And, you see, that’s what God does in His life; and Christ. They had a purpose. And Their purpose was this:

***Genesis 1:26** Let Us make man in OUR image.*

God Is Reproducing Himself

Now, what did that mean? That simply said “Let US reproduce **Ourselves!** Let Us take dirt out of the ground.” And so in the 2nd chapter of Genesis and verse 7:

Genesis 2:7 God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life.

And the dust of the ground became a soul. So a soul is made out of matter, and not spirit. God’s purpose, then, was **to reproduce Himself**. Job asked:

Job 14:14 If a man die, shall he live again? [He said,] All the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come. [He said “God shall...] call, and I will answer...He will have a desire to the work of His hands.

WE are each one a piece of God’s workmanship. When God created Adam, He was creating something out of which He meant to develop and reproduce Himself, or God, and in other words, to have that one ultimately created and born into the God Family.

Now, when reproducing Himself, you have to ask then “What was God?” Well, God is Spirit. Yes. But God is a lot more than that. God was also **perfect, supreme, righteous spiritual character**. He had CHARACTER; and that character was all **built on the way He lived, which is love**. And love was the foundation, or the basic premise (if you please), on which He based that and His whole character.

Now in order to create a God out of man, and out of the dust of the ground, God had to get God’s character into that man; but it couldn’t be character if a man didn’t choose it himself. If God just simply did it by fiat and forced a certain character into him, that’s like a machine you make. It has to do what you tell it to do or what you cause it to do. You turn a motor on; and it has no mind, it has no volition. It can’t say “Oh, I’ll decide to be turned

on and to run.” Or, “I won’t.” You turn on the motor in your automobile, and it’s going to turn on unless there’s something wrong with it. But it has no mind to decide. There’s no character.

Man Needs God’s Spirit

But God was creating CHARACTER now. To do that, He put one spirit in man; but he was incomplete. I’ve said so many times, He creates in a principle of **duality**. It’s like a one-two punch. Man was physically incomplete without a wife. He couldn’t reproduce and have children of his own. So God gave him a wife. And now he was physically complete. But he wasn’t mentally and spiritually complete! He had one spirit.

Now God also made animals that breathe the breath of life. And animals have all of the sense a man has. They have eyes to see with, and ears to hear with. They have nerves to feel with. They have nostrils to smell with, and they have a sense of taste and everything that man has. But they can’t think. And it’s THE SPIRIT that God put in man that causes him to think. But now that spirit needed...

It was incomplete and it needed another spirit to go with it; and that was the Holy Spirit of God. **The spirit man had did not give him life!** How did man get his life? Not from that spirit. God breathed the breath of life into him. The life gave him breath. And the Bible says the blood thereof is the life thereof, not the spirit. Nowhere does it say the spirit of man is the life thereof. The spirit of man simply gave him the power to think, and the power to come to physical knowledge, and the power to make decisions (either good or bad) up to the extent of the knowledge that he had.

So there was another tree in the Garden of Eden. There was one tree – the tree of life. And God wanted the man to have that. If he had taken of that tree that would have meant God would have injected GOD-LIFE into him. In

other words, the God Spirit. And **God's Spirit** is the very life of God! It is the MIND of God. It would have given him God's intelligence, God's mind, and God's life. But he rejected that.

The other tree was the knowledge of good and evil, just on his own; and he chose that. Now it's true that men that have been born from Adam (And today there are 4 1/2; billion {3} of them.), that some of them have desires of good. They have good intentions, good morals, good ethics. It's all selfish. It's all self-centered.

I've explained how mother-love is even selfish. She doesn't love other children the same way as she does her own; and many a mother doesn't love other children at all. But her own is part of her, came out of her. That's selfish. And self is an empirical self. It includes everything that is yours. Now that can even be your football team, your basketball team, your baseball team. You root for them. You want them to win. You don't like the other team. You see, you're selfish; and you take sides. And that gets into competition; and that gets into strife; and it gets into the very opposite of the cooperation and love that existed between God and the Word.

Now God's law and government was the basis of God's character. His character is merely **God's law in action**; but it must be chosen voluntarily, and activated voluntarily, by the one who has it – or he couldn't become God. God Himself WILLS and has made the decision to have that kind of love instead of having competition, and vanity, and jealousy, and envy, and hatred. God is a God of love, a God of mercy and compassion. That's His character!

Now man had to make a choice. Otherwise God couldn't reproduce Himself. That part man had to do for himself. So there was the tree of the knowledge of good and evil; and the man chose that. He chose that kind of good and evil, which is self-good and self-evil. And there was Satan there, influencing him to do it; and Satan is evil. Sin is the transgression of the law

of love and of the way of God's character. I John 3:4. So the first man sinned. Then God cut off the Holy Spirit from man.

Now then, we get back to the basic premise. We get back to origins. And we know how life started. And we know how humanity started. We know how the world got started. We know the origin of God. We know the origin of man now. Science doesn't know it. Governments don't know it. The Supreme Court judges don't know it. The ministers of the Christian religion don't know it – traditional "Christianity." They just don't know it.

God's Law Of Love

Righteousness and character are all based on God's law, and God's law is **love**. Now, how does love act? Well, love is the **fulfilling** of the law. Love is a noun, and that's what it is. But it also is a verb. And love is the fulfilling of the law – active love. But, as you read in Romans 5 and verse 5, it is:

Romans 5:5 The love of God... shed abroad in our hearts BY the Holy Spirit.

Now that is a love you can't have until the Holy Spirit comes into you. If Adam had taken the tree of life that would have meant God would have INJECTED God-life into Adam. He didn't inject God-life. He injected simply a chemical, mechanical, temporary existence into the man. You see there is energy in matter. Think of the energy in an atomic bomb or a hydrogen bomb, that all comes out of the ground and out of matter.

And so the breathing of air and the circulation of blood, combined with the eating of food and the drinking of water, it all tends to create energy; and it's **physical energy** within you. That's an energy that God set in motion, but it isn't specifically and directly caused by God and given by God. That's an energy God set in motion that you just have yourself.

But the Spirit of God is **divine energy**. It's a different kind of energy, and it's a different kind of love. It is the basis of God's character. Now human love with the one spirit of man CANNOT fulfill the law of God, because it's a spiritual law and it requires the love of God. The Holy Spirit in us is the only kind of love that can fulfill that law. It's impossible for you to really love God in the sense you must love God, because the **real** love of God (if you love God) is simply the love of God shed abroad in your heart – the Holy Spirit coming into you and then going back to Him.

In other words, it's like electricity coming into... Do you see what I've got here? If I turn it around a little bit, you can all see that light. But there are two wires going into that light; and electricity comes in, and it circulates around and goes back again. It's on a two-way circuit. And that's the way God's love is. And it takes the love of God shed abroad in our hearts.

What Is The Holy Spirit?

Now we come to the question then "What IS the Holy Spirit? And let me tell you, the world does not know. And I don't believe Billy Graham knows, and I don't believe that Jerry Falwell knows. I don't think they KNOW what is the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the life of God injected into us. I mean if we have received the Holy Spirit, it is that.

Let's get back to the principles now. If you have the Holy Spirit and you have a purpose in life and the laws of success. First you have the Holy Spirit. Now you have to have the laws of success if you are going to become God. And it starts with your repentance, baptism, and RECEIVING of the Spirit of God. Now the Spirit of God **in you** puts within you the mind of God, the life of God, begotten into you.

But you see when you first had physical life begotten into you, you were a little tiny (Oh, now I've used that word thousands of times.) embryo.

And you were about the size of a pinpoint. Not the head of a pin, but the point of a pin. But you had to grow physically, fed on food – on physical food; because you were going to grow physically into a physical form and shape and into a physical life, all based on the breathing of air, and the circulation of blood, and the refueling by food and water.

Now if you are going to become God, that is **a spirit life**, being begotten and born. And so you have the Spirit of God, and that gives you a purpose in life – to become a child of God, and become born of God, and really to become God – to grow spiritually.

Second Law Of Success

Now the second: You've got a goal now alright. Second, to achieve that goal, the second is education or knowledge to acquire that goal. Well, to be educated, your Teacher is God. And God teaches you through His Word. Now Jesus is the Word of God, as I have said. But the Bible is the same Word in writing, and Jesus is the author of the Bible. In other words, He is the Word who speaks. And what He speaks, all that He speaks that we have to know now, is written here. Now He could speak maybe a lot more, but He speaks here all that He intended us to have now. And so, God becomes our Teacher in and through the Bible.

But I have said recently a great many times (I didn't know this a long time ago.) but the Bible is **a coded book**. And humans ordinarily cannot understand the Bible. Billy Graham can't understand it. I know he has said to others, and it's come to me, that I understand the Bible. But without the Holy Spirit you CAN'T do it, because the Holy Spirit is the key that decodes the coded Book so you can understand it.

Now let me explain that. Here was Paul speaking to people some of the truth – but he didn't go into the language of scholarship – with plain, simple

words; and yet the people couldn't understand it. (Ah, wait a minute.) I Corinthians 2 He said:

***I Corinthians 2:7** We speak the wisdom of **God** in a mystery...*

It's a mystery. It's a code. In other words, it's a code that they can't understand. A mystery is something that is mysterious. You can't understand it. It's a mystery to most people.

***I Corinthians 2:7-9** ...even the hidden [mystery], which God ordained before the world unto our glory: (8) which none of the princes of this world [That is, the leaders. Maybe the leaders of education, maybe the leaders of government, the leaders of business, the leaders of any kind. None of them have understood it.] ...for had they [understood] it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. (9) But it is written [Now he's quoting Scripture.], Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart [or, the mind] of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.*

That is, God's purpose. What God is going to do. What God's purpose is. In other words, it's talking there about the basic premise, which is God's purpose and what He's doing – what's going on, what your life is all about, why you're in the world, why things don't go better than they do, and how they would go well. That is all a mystery, and they can't understand it. It is explained here in the Bible; but, as I say, it's a coded Book. The next verse explains, the 10th.

***I Corinthians 2:10** But God hath revealed them unto us [Us who are begotten of God and who have received His Holy Spirit. To us who have the Holy Spirit in us.] by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.*

In other words, God is the Teacher. God reveals these things to us. And here it is – the Bible. But He reveals what is in the Bible by the Holy Spirit,

and without the Holy Spirit you can't understand the Bible. The Holy Spirit is the instrumentality God puts within you to un-code the Bible, to decode it, to make it so you can understand it. The world cannot understand the Bible. The ministers, the electric evangelists on the air, cannot understand the Bible.

I'll tell you another thing: "*A good understanding have all they that do His commandments.*" Do they do God's commandments? No, and they won't. And they all feel a very great sense of competition against me. They try to control television stations. They try to keep me off. They'll all go together; but as long as you have any of the government of God in it, they don't want anything to do with it. It gets back to law and government again. And they know that I keep God's commandments. "*A good understanding have all they that do His commandments.*" And "*the fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom*" and understanding. And they don't seem to understand that.

Now it goes on to say that a man couldn't even have human knowledge except for that one spirit that is in us. A cow, an ox, can't have it. But in the same way, a man (who can understand human knowledge) can't understand the things of God without the Spirit of God. That's the next verse here, verse 11. Then verse 14 says... Let me see.

I Corinthians 2:14 *But the natural man* [Just your ordinary man with one spirit in your brain.] *receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God* [the Bible]: *for they are foolish unto him...*

And the Bible is foolishness to most people in the world, and to the highly educated in the world. That's why they had to search and see if there was even one Bible down at the law school of the University of Southern California.

Now then, let's see, we've been on this second one: knowledge and education. Well, it requires now not only the Holy Spirit to open the Bible;

but the Bible teaches you, and that's where you get your education. But it requires **study** and **prayer** on your part to get that education. That now is the second of the seven laws of success.

Third Law Of Success

Now the third law of success: (I'm getting so even the way I wrote large black type or print that I've made up my notes, which I could read four or five months ago, I can't even read any more. My eyes are getting worse apparently.) Oh, yes, the third is spiritually in our case of being begotten of God until we become God... The third law of success, then, is good health. Well, now we have to look at it in spiritual health. The Bible also gives you a number of laws about physical health. But it is especially concerned about **spiritual health**.

Now the dieticians say that you are whatever you eat physically, and that's pretty much the truth. Well, you are SPIRITUALLY pretty much what is fed into your brain. Not fed into your stomach, but fed into your mind. For example, in Matthew 4:4. (Let me see. I didn't put a marker here to that. I'll turn to it in just a second.) Matthew 4:4, on the great temptation of Jesus, where Jesus was tempted by the devil; and He said... (Well, I don't need to read it. It's too hard to read. But I know it anyway by heart.)

Matthew 4:4 Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word...of God.

And Jesus said: *"I am the bread of life."* And He is the Teacher who teaches, and that is spiritual food. Now you have to have spiritual health. And so, you see the seven laws of success apply spiritually on becoming converted.

Fourth Law Of Success

Now the fourth one I have as drive or initiative, and that might be called (Oh, I have another word for it. I think I wrote it down here, I wanted to use.) applying yourself. You have to strive, and apply yourself, and drive yourself. And it is love put in action; and it's the Holy Spirit, the love of God shed abroad in your heart by the Holy Spirit. But you yourself have to put it into action. Let me explain it this way. As many as are LED by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. That's in Romans 8.

Romans 8:14 As many as are led by the Spirit of God [they] are the sons of God.

You see we have something to do about it. Just having the Holy Spirit doesn't make you into a God. It doesn't give you the character of God. The character of God requires YOUR ACTION! YOUR EFFORT! YOUR DRIVE, if you please. Initiative. You've got to work at it. You have to be led by the Holy Spirit.

Now the Spirit of God, and the Spirit of God comes into you, it will open your mind to understand the Bible. The first thing the Holy Spirit does {4} is impregnate you with the life of God. Next comes, in order, the opening up to your mind the way of God. In other words, education so you can understand the Bible. And it is **an attitude**. The Holy Spirit is an attitude, and an attitude is the direction you're going – your purpose.

It means obey God. It means submission. “*As many as are led by the Spirit of God.*” In other words, brethren, the Holy Spirit (and I've said this before) is not going to drive you and force you to do anything, if you're not willing to USE the Spirit of God in you. Now if you are being led by it, it's not going to pull you. It will show you the way, but you have to use the human effort to go that way. So YOU HAVE YOUR PART IN IT – physically

as well as spiritually. So the Spirit of God will give you understanding. It will give you the love of God. It will give you faith and power. It will give you all of those things. (Well, wait a minute. I'm getting way ahead of myself here.)

Fifth Law Of Success

Anyway, the fifth one was resourcefulness. (Let's see, the fourth. I covered that, didn't I? Yeah. Drive, initiative, or exerting your own self; and you have to do that.) You are led by the Holy Spirit, and you have to supply the driving force; but you are going to need some help, and that comes from some of the other things the Holy Spirit gives you.

Now you're going to run up against problems, and you don't know how to solve them; and it's going to take resourcefulness to solve those problems. Now part of that is going to come from God; and part of it is from knowing and understanding the Bible, which gives you directions enough to show you how to do and how to solve problems. But also by prayer and by turning to God, God will fight your battles for you. God will do many of these things. But it requires a resourcefulness that comes from the knowledge of the Bible, and the Holy Spirit, and faith. And it's a living faith which... Well, that is really... (Let me see. I can't read my notes any longer. You'll just have to forgive me, brethren. I can't help it. But my eyes are failing.) That is the fifth of the laws of success.

Sixth Law Of Success

Now the sixth is endurance. Stick-to-itiveness, I've called it. The Bible says:

Matthew 24:13 He that endureth unto the end, the same shall be saved.

I've talked to you about the four hurdles. The first is repentance. The

second is faith, believing God. And the third is growing in knowledge. Now we've covered all of those, and they do come in on the seven laws of success. Then, *“he that endureth unto the end, the same shall be saved.”* Now that...

One of the next things that the Holy Spirit gives you is **power**. And that power is to drive you on. That power is power over yourself. Power to resist the world. It is power to endure if you need to, when the going gets tough and gets hard.

Seventh Law Of Success

Now seventh comes the guidance of God, and that comes by the same two things I've mentioned before. It comes from Bible knowledge, understanding (and you can only have understanding by the Holy Spirit of God **in you**) and by prayer and talking to God. And God will inspire you and just literally put things in your mind. He often puts things in my mind. I sometimes wonder how they got there. But I'm meditating, and I'm thinking along that line; and I have so many things of the Bible in my mind anyway already. And He'll cause one of those things to come and just open the door, and the solution, and how to solve this-or-that-or-the-other matter.

In my position, I have to make important decisions quite often. Very often Mr. Tkatch comes in. He's got these questions that have come up from some of the ministers, and that question; and they get into all kinds of ramifications.

The Holy Spirit in us is **a begettal of the life of God**, which is INJECTED into us – that **divine life**, which we never had before! Then the Spirit of God is an attitude. And you pretty much come to that attitude before you repent and are baptized. But you have to continue in that attitude, which is your direction of life – to go God's way; and the attitude of love instead of competition, instead of strife, instead of envy and jealousy, instead of all of

those things. It's obedience to God instead of to man.

Then another is, yes, obedience and attitude; and then obedience to God. And, let's see. Now that would make it...one, two, three. Understanding would be four. Love... Well, love is... The first thing the Holy Spirit gives you, outside of attitude and a spirit of obedience, is understanding of the Bible. God reveals these things to us **by His Spirit**. But we have to **apply the Spirit**. It takes drive. It takes application. And sometimes it isn't easy to push ourselves on. The Holy Spirit won't push you. It won't shove you. It won't get hold of you and pull you and drive you. It'll just open your mind. But now it will give you help, and God will give you help if you need it. Then you have the love of God, and now you have to put it into action – fulfilling God's law, and loving even your enemies; and love is an active principle. It's something that you do. It's a way of life!

Next comes, not you working up faith, but the receiving **the faith of Christ** by the Holy Spirit until you have the very same faith He had. And you have to have faith to rely on God for some things that are out of your power. You can't do of yourself. You have to rely on God through FAITH to do some things for you. Then comes **power!** And those are the things that the Holy Spirit will give you. The Holy Spirit is all of those things. It is DIVINE LIFE put into you. It is the power of understanding, but it has to come with the attitude of submission and obedience.

Do you think that the Catholic and Protestant churches of the world have those attributes? No. By their fruit you know them. I think there was, it was either a sermon or a sermonette this morning on attitude. I mean on **bearing fruit**. We have to bear fruit. We have something to do with that. Christ is the Vine. We are each individually the branches. But we have to bear fruit, or we are going to be cut off; and that is **our** doing. That is action. That takes study. It takes prayer. It takes doing. It isn't just to say you got saved and you have nothing further to do but just wait until you go to heaven. It's

making you into a God!

Now this is Satan's world, and this world is going to die. I haven't explained all of God's plan here this afternoon. I've done that on other sermons. But God is calling us out of the world, because Jesus came as the second Adam; and He came to start A NEW WORLD, A NEW CIVILIZATION, and He only called a few. And no one can come to Him except God the Father calls them. And we've come out of the world, but yet we live in it. But we are **of** THE WORLD TOMORROW – living a different way, as we have the Holy Spirit and are **led** by the Holy Spirit.

The world is NOT led by the Holy Spirit. The world is led by **lust**, not love. The world is led by competition and strife, selfishness, greed, anger, violence – all of those things. And we have to live by love and cooperation, and obedience to God. And it's an **active** life. And we have to each one of us bear fruit.

Fitly Framed Together

Now there's another thing. Here one says, well, you see the churches are like Christ said about the Vine. There are many branches. So there are many churches. There's a Baptist church, a Presbyterian, and this and that. And one, who left this Church and started another church of his own, said he's one of the branches – that there are many churches, not just one Church.

But they are all joined onto the Vine, and that's speaking of individuals; and there are individual Churches, but they are all joined onto the Vine. Now there's a Church here. There's one that met this morning in this same place. There's another one meeting this afternoon over in the Imperial Gym, I guess it is. We've had Churches today meeting today in Boston, where I expect to speak next Sabbath. You know, they're all branches too. But we're joined together! And we are **joined in, and through, and by Christ** – together.

We all speak the same thing, not different things. And you find in Ephesians 2 and Ephesians 4 that the Church is like a building. It's all joined together, "fitly framed" together; and like every joint is welded on to the other joint, so to speak. That is, not in physical location; but in understanding, in belief, in doctrine, and in the way of God instead of the way of the world. That's why we are to come out of this world and be separate. But there's only the **one Church** in the long run.

So I hope we have the understanding of those things, because the world does not have understanding. The world doesn't understand about God's Holy Spirit, and what it is, why we need the Holy Spirit of God. It's like Jesus said, "Without Me you can do nothing." And Jesus Himself said, "Of Myself I can do nothing. The Father that dwells in Me does it." And each of us has to realize that. It takes the Spirit of God in each one of us!

But we all believe the same things. We all speak the same thing. We all live the same way, which is **God's way**. We all have come out of the world. And yet we are joined together through Christ and through His principles. And we are a united body. And we must produce fruit. And individually each of you must produce fruit. And so we have many things for you to do.

And I noticed that today they were asking for volunteers to do this and that. Now, in a Co-worker letter (Well, it was the next to the last one now.) I asked for contributions for the summer camps because there was a need. Well, a lot of the people in God's Church are bearing fruit. Actually twice the amount that was the bare need came in – because brethren were liberal, and brethren were bearing fruit, and they responded. Now that's the part they had to do. I can't do it all. I have my part, and each of you has your part.

And, by the way, if you look at the telecast tomorrow morning, I wonder are you indifferent – thinking "Well I don't need to look at it"? Well, brethren, it's money that you pay in. Of course, it's God's money. But that's

what's paying for it, and each one of those telecasts tomorrow (The one tomorrow morning on Channel 11, and the one tomorrow evening on Channel 9.), each one of those just for that one-half hour is costing several thousand dollars. Did you know that? But they reach a lot of people; and telephone calls come in by the hundreds and the thousands as a result immediately, from people clear outside of the Church.

But that's part of your work. I just happen to be the speaker. But you notice that it says, "This is sponsored by the Worldwide Church of God." Not by me. I don't sponsor it. You are **all** the Worldwide Church of God. The Worldwide Church of God is all of us combined, put together. And we're ONE BODY fitly framed and joined together whether we are in Australia, New Zealand, Canada, the Philippines, South Africa, England, Germany, or where – ONE BODY, many offices, many things to do; but one body. So let's understand that. And each of us has his own job to do. That's why one scripture says, "*Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling*" because we each have something to do.

Well thank you, brethren. It'll be two weeks now before I can be back, but I'll see you the next time I can.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Originally Mr. Armstrong said, "to give them His heart;" but he corrected himself and said, "to give Him their heart."

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: A false start was eliminated here, where Mr. Armstrong said: "opportunity for her to, for Him rather..."

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong originally said "million" instead of "billion."

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: A false start was eliminated here, where Mr. Armstrong first said, "The first thing the Holy Spirit does except..." and then repeated to

correct himself.

What Is a Christian?

Sermon (August 27, 1983)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

What Is a Christian?.....	1520	Injected With God-Life	1535
Speaking In Tongues	1522	Knowledge Of Good And Evil	1536
Are You A Christian?	1524	Man Chose Death	1538
What The Holy Spirit Does	1525	Abundant Life	1539
God's Goal And Purpose	1526	God's Unfinished Workmanship	1541
How Christ Became God's Son	1528	Satan Broadcasts Everywhere	1544
More Than One God	1530	Selfish Carnal Love	1545
How God Lives	1531	Godly Love	1547
God Created Angels	1532	Teachers Needed	1549
The Creation Of Man	1534	Pray For Enemies	1550

I want you to notice in Romans the 8th chapter, verse 7: *Romans 8:7*
Because the carnal mind ...

And that's the natural mind you're born with. And that is, well, specifically if you would run this down it is not speaking with exactly the mind you are born with, or the mind that Adam was created with. It is the mind that Satan has made a natural mind to you.

Now we think of nature. Nature is that which comes **naturally**. We in the Church become partakers of God's nature. We receive God's nature. We weren't born with it. That's something we receive and we take on until it becomes natural – until it becomes natural to have a nature like God. Now God has a nature, and that's the thing, the way that just comes naturally to Him.

The carnal mind is in some translations translated as the mind that is on materialism and material things. It is the mind that Satan has gotten into and changed, at least in its attitude. But:

Romans 8:7 The carnal mind is enmity against God.

Now that word “enmity” we don’t use very much any more. Remember the King James translation is translated back in 1611, and that’s about 350 years ago; and in today’s language we would say **hostile**. The natural mind – as Satan has influenced that mind to become selfish, and materialized, and thinking of material things and material acquisition, wanting to have material things, to get material things – is hostile against, against, God.

Romans 8:7 It is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

Romans 8:9 *But [Verse 9, now see if you are a Christian.] you are not in the flesh [That is, having fleshly desires and your mind on the things of the flesh as some translations will give verse 7. “You are not in the flesh ...”], but in the Spirit [That is, not fleshly minded but spiritually minded.], if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you.*

Now, what difference does that make in your life? How do you know whether the Spirit of God is dwelling in you or not? Some people say the way you know is you speak in tongues. Now, if you’ll notice, they get the tongues speaking; and I’ve often thought that some of these days I want to just give a sermon on that. They get it from the 2nd chapter of Acts, on the day of Pentecost. And if you’ll go back and read that again carefully (I’m not going to go into it right now.), you’ll notice that there were 120 there receiving the Holy Spirit. Now there were at least 3,000 – and probably more than 3,000 – there, because there were 3,000 that were baptized that day after Peter’s sermon.

The Holy Spirit came that day for the first time. I’m going to show you how God had ... I’ve shown you so many times how God had closed up the Holy Spirit way back in the days of Adam. That was 4,000 years earlier – 6,000 years ago now. And for the first time now the Holy Spirit began to be poured out upon a certain group of people, and it came first on the 120 who

... That is, they were 120 altogether including the twelve apostles; but the Holy Spirit came to enter into them.

Now, if you'll notice, they **heard** the Holy Spirit coming. It came with a great noise. It sounded like a rushing, mighty wind. I don't know whether you were ever in a real tornado or a cyclone back in the Middle West somewhere, but a **rushing** wind makes a terrific noise. Now that's something that they could **hear**.

And then they SAW the Spirit coming in the form of flaming tongues – just like a tongue, but like flames of fire – and sitting on the head of each one of them. It was something they could **see**. Now in modern Pentecostal meetings, you don't see anything like that. They don't hear anything except a lot of “Praise you, Jesus” and “Glory, hallelujahs” coming out of the voices of people that are on sort of an emotional jag or drunk.

Speaking In Tongues

And then, if you go a little further, they spoke with tongues all right; but read what kind of tongues it was. Go back and read it, 2nd chapter of the book of Acts. And of the 3,000 others there, every man there (coming from different countries, and it goes on and mentions many of the countries) heard them – the 120 – speaking in **his** language; and he could understand every word they said. They didn't need any interpreter.

Modern tongues people think they have to have an interpreter. You know up in Salem, Oregon at some meetings we were holding back in 1933 (and I refused to participate any further in those meetings); but there'd always be different ones would get up and have to jabber on in what they called “tongues.” And it was ... They'd noticed that without an interpreter you should keep quiet and never speak. That's in the 14th chapter of I Corinthians. So they had a man there that would always interpret. So, he had

his interpretation all memorized.

One person would speak in one kind of gibberish and go [Mr. Armstrong made a lot of strange sounds at this point that are not intelligible.] or something like that. I don't think you know what I said, because I didn't say anything. But always he'd get up and interpret the same thing. He had it memorized. Then, at another time, another person would get up with another different time of so-called "tongues." But he had the same interpretation all right.

Now I think those poor souls really believed it was the truth. I don't know. They were deceived. Maybe they honestly believed that was the truth. But on the day of Pentecost the Medes who were there heard them speak the language of the Medes, the Median language. The Italians there heard them speak the Italian language. The Parthians there heard them speak the Parthian language – the whole 120. Now there has NEVER SINCE been that kind of tongues speaking, and "tongues" merely means "languages" anyway. It's just an old English word for **languages**. They spoke in different languages so that each man from each different country understood what they were speaking. You never hear that in the modern so-called "tongues movement."

Now the one chapter on the whole thing, of course, is I Corinthians 14. There you will notice that Paul said: *"I speak with languages more than you all (tongues, or languages. But he said): ... I had rather speak five words with understanding (That people could understand and get some kind of **meaning** out of.) ... than ten thousand words in (these) tongues.*

That's the value that the apostle Paul put on it. And he absolutely forbade people to speak in any kind tongue unless there was someone there that understood that language and could translate it so that everyone would understand it.

Now often I speak in foreign countries. I've spoken in Japan. I've

spoken in Thailand and other countries like that, and in China. And I will have an interpreter because those people wouldn't understand what I say. So I say it, then he interprets it. And often we have a man who can talk right along just as fast as I do, and interpret it with me. Sometimes he can't. Then I have to say a short sentence and stop, and then he will repeat that sentence. Then I take another short sentence, and he has to take a little more; and on we go. It takes twice as long that way, but at least people understand what is being said; and **understanding** is the main thing.

Are You A Christian?

Now, notice this:

***Romans 8:9** You are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, **IF** so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit [of God] of Christ [Here it says Christ.], he is none of his [None of Christ's].*

If the Holy Spirit is not DWELLING IN YOU, you are not a Christian! Now you go a little further and over here in, let's see, the 14th verse says:

***Romans 8:14** As many as are **lead by** the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

The Holy Spirit opens your mind to comprehend and understand the Word of God; and the Word of God is God's instruction, God's teaching, God's message to you. And the Holy Spirit is the interpreter, really, that opens your mind. In other words, the Bible is a coded book. Like Hitler had a coded machine, and he would put a message he was sending to one of his field generals out in another front; the machine would scramble it all up and uncode it so it didn't make any sense. And the only way you could get anything out of it, that same machine could recode it back again. So each general had a similar machine with him. He would put it on the machine so

he could understand it.

You know, the British finally were able to get most of the parts of such a machine, and complete it, and put it together; and they began to get all of the Germans' secret messages. They knew just where the Germans were expecting the Channel invasion to strike. So they just let them amass all of their forces there, and then the Allies proceeded to strike in a place of a distance that the Germans simply couldn't get to them. So the landing was a success.

What The Holy Spirit Does

Well, the Bible is **a coded book**; and the most highly-educated people in the world CANNOT UNDERSTAND IT! "Eye has not seen, ear has not heard, nor has it entered into the mind of man the things God has PREPARED for those that love Him." That's in I Corinthians the 2nd chapter. But God has revealed them unto us by the Holy Spirit, which is in us.

Now, did the Holy Spirit reveal? Oh, no. The Holy Spirit is not the teacher, or the revealer. God is the Teacher, and God teaches through His Word – who is Christ; and Christ is the Word in person. The Bible is the same identical Word in writing. So God reveals to us [Mr. Armstrong can be heard tapping on his Bible at this point.] in the Bible, but through His Holy Spirit. We have to have the Holy Spirit in us. That is the "machine" that unscrambles and puts it back together again so we can understand it.

So one of the things the Holy Spirit will do in you, it will open your mind to understand God's directions as to how you should live. The whole thing is about sin, and sin is the transgression of God's law. It's a way of life. The Bible explains how, and how we should live. And then "*as many as are LED BY the Holy Spirit*" – that means the Holy Spirit will open your mind to understand; but you're the one that has to do it.

Now the Holy Spirit will lead; but it will won't get hold of you, and yank you, and pull you. You have to follow on your own power. Now sometimes you don't have enough power. Maybe you're a little weak. Well, that's where faith comes in. You have faith, and God will help you. God will give you extra **power**, and that will come by the Holy Spirit too. But the Holy Spirit won't pull you. It'll give you power if you call out for it, if you need it.

Now then, let's carry on a little farther here. Verse 11:

***Romans 8:11** But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken [That is, make immortal. Turn from human into God.] your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwells in you.*

That is **HOW** we are to be **MADE INTO GOD**. From human to God is through the Holy Spirit. But we need to know more about God's Holy Spirit, and what it is, and how **REAL** it is! In the first place, people don't realize how **REAL** God is; and they certainly don't realize how real His Holy Spirit is.

God's Goal And Purpose

How important is this to understand? It's the most important thing in your **life** to understand this. The most important thing in all of the universe, brethren, is God's purpose. Now if you've read my little booklet that was written many years ago (I think I should go over it now, and expand it, and bring it up to date, and rewrite it.) – The Seven Laws of Success – you find that the first law of success in life is having the right goal. It's not only **a** goal. It's the right goal.

Now there are many people that do have a goal; but it's the wrong goal, and it will lead them to the wrong place. Other people, most people, have no

goal whatsoever. They're just going nowhere, and they'll never arrive anywhere either. They'll never be a success. But God has a goal, and that goal is His **purpose** – the most important thing to God. And the most important thing to man is to **understand God's purpose**. That's **God's goal**, and what **He** is existing and **living** for.

Now we read right here in Romans 8, same chapter, and beginning with verse 28:

***Romans 8:28** And we know that all things work together for good.*

Now we had a minister in one of our largest cities teaching that. And he was teaching that whatever you do and any evil you do, go ahead and sin. It will work together for good. It isn't what it says!

***Romans 8:28** All things work together for good to them that love God.*

And you can't love God without His Spirit in you, because you don't have the kind of love to love God. Really loving God is His Spirit in you returning back to Him in love.

***Romans 8:28** All things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are **THE CALLED** ...*

There again is that word "called." It doesn't say to them who **volunteered**. It doesn't say to them who heard an evangelistic meeting, and went up to the altar, and went forward to let the preacher pray a short prayer for you and hand you a piece of literature. But:

Romans 8:28** To them that are the **called** [That God has called and chosen.] **according to his purpose.

Now, He has **CALLED YOU ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE!** In other words, it has been His purpose to call you. Now that's pretty important to God! If you're one He has called, that's something that is very important to

Him. Now read the next verse.

***Romans 8:29** For whom he did foreknow ...*

And that means that He has called you. If you put all of this and the 1st chapter of Ephesians (where it talks about predestination) and put it together, you find that God foreknew you.

***Romans 8:29** For whom he did foreknow, he also did PREDESTINATE...*

What? To be saved? Or to be lost? Maybe predestinated to be lost? No. It doesn't say that at all.

***Romans 8:29** He did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son.*

That's what you were predestinated for; and that means to be saved, that means to receive His Spirit, that means to be made one of Christ's brothers. He calls you a brother. That means to make you a son of God until you become BORN OF GOD, and you become just as much "God" as He is. My sons born of me are just as much human as I am. So notice it now, just take word by word, every little phrase of the sentence even.

How Christ Became God's Son

***Romans 8:29** For whom he did foreknow [He foreknew those He called.], he also did **predestinate** to be conformed to the image of his Son [who is Christ], that he [Christ] might be **THE FIRSTBORN OF MANY BRETHREN**.*

Now how was Christ born? And He was the FIRSTBORN. That means you'll be born like He was. He was just the first one of the brethren to be born. You are one of those brethren IF the Spirit of God is dwelling in you.

Now, to understand that, we have to go back to the 1st chapter of Romans. (Didn't I put a marker in that for the first chapter of Romans? Anyway, here we are.) I want you to notice how Christ became a Son of God. Verse 3, chapter one, Romans 1, right at the beginning of the book of Romans, breaking into the middle of the sentence:

Romans 1:3-4 Concerning his Son [It's talking about God. Concerning God's Son.] *Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; (4) and declared to be the Son of God* [Then it puts in some other words.] *with power, according to the spirit of holiness,* [Then **how** is He made [{1}](#) the Son?] *by the resurrection from the dead.*

Now take out the modifying clauses and just read the sentence as it is. The sentence, without its modifying clauses thrown in, is this: Christ, our Lord, declared to be a Son of God by the resurrection from the dead. He was then **BORN A SON OF GOD by a resurrection from the dead!** He was the **FIRSTBORN OF MANY BRETHREN**. Many of the brethren are right here in front of me this afternoon, and I hope that means all of you. He was the firstborn. We haven't been born yet.

Of course, I know now that there are some that think they are already born. Most Protestant preachers think they are, and Jerry Falwell included. Oh, he's a "born again Christian," don't have any understanding what it is to be born again at all because there's no really understanding of the Bible.

Now, it goes on to show what we will be ultimately; and I'm not going to take time to go through that this afternoon. If I'd go back a few verses would show you, and connect that up with the 2nd chapter of Hebrews, that **ultimately** after we **are** born of God and made very God, and after the Millennium here on earth – ultimately we are going to restore and renew the entire universe. Not only this earth, but many other places. But this earth will become the capital of the whole universe, and God the Father will be

dwelling here at that time.

More Than One God

[** *Tape skips at 23:12 and picks up with Mr. Armstrong reading Genesis 1:1.*]

Genesis 1:1 *In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*

And then again in verse 26:

Genesis 1:26 *And God said, Let us [Not “Me.” Let us ...] make man in our image.*

Now, Moses wrote that in the Hebrews language. “*In the beginning God ...*” The English word “God” is translated from the word Moses wrote, “Elohim”; and Elohim is a plural word that means more than one. Yes, more than one God. And it was God who said to the Word, “*Let us make man in our image*” in verse 26 “*after our likeness.*”

But now, if you want to understand how there is more than one God and yet you read in the Bible there is only one God, well you have to turn then to John in the New Testament. Again I say the Bible not only is a coded book, it's like a jigsaw puzzle. One explains the other. John 1 verses 1 to 4:

John 1:1-4 *In the beginning [again] was the Word ...*

Now, who was the Word? In verse 14 it says the Word became flesh and dwelt among us and became Jesus Christ. So:

John 1:1 *In the beginning was the Word [before He was born as Jesus Christ], and the Word was with God [That's another person. Now you have two persons.], and the Word was God.*

The Word is God, and God is God; but They are two persons.

John 1:2-3 *The same was in the beginning with God. (3) All things were made by him [the Word].*

And in Ephesians 3:9 you read how God created all things **by** Jesus Christ. He's the Word who spoke. But Jesus said, when He was on earth, He spoke only what the Father told Him to speak. So God is the one who said, "Do it." God told Him what to speak, how to speak. Jesus spoke. The Holy Spirit is THE POWER that leaped to do it when Jesus spoke. But Jesus said, "*I and My Father are one.*" And They are **one God!**

Now you can have, at a certain place, Sam; and Sam was with Smith; and Sam was Smith. Well, you see, Sam – maybe he was Smith's son or Smith's father; but they are one family, both the same family. God is one in the sense of **one Family**. And the Church is one, one family; but many, many members.

How God Lives

Now in verse 4 back there in John 1 (I'm not going to turn to it right now.), "*In Him [the Word] was LIFE ...*

So He lived; and He lived with the Father, and God the Father lived. They both lived. Now **how did They live?** Well, They lived a certain kind ... Today we'd use the plain word about lifestyle. Maybe you could call that Their lifestyle, only usually lifestyle means a certain out and out fashion and way-out fashion of today. It's Their **Way of Life**, and Their way of living was love. The Father loved the Word; and, when He became Jesus and was baptized, the Father said, "*This is My **beloved Son**, in whom I am well pleased.*" He loved the Son. Jesus loved the Father and obeyed the Father.

Their way of life then was one of cooperation, love, and all of that. Again, as I've said so many times, two can't walk together except they be

agreed; and They were agreed. And two can't walk together either except one is boss. One is the leader. The Father was the boss, and it's made plain all the way through the Bible. Jesus said, "My Father is greater than I. My Father that sent me." The one who sent Him was greater than the one that was sent. "And I have said only what My Father commanded Me to say." He shows that the Father was at the head of the Family.

Now, if They lived, They had to be doing something. What did They do? Well, They were Creators. And to create They first had to design, and plan, and think what They were going to create, and what form and shape it would take, and what it would do.

God Created Angels

Now they first created angels. And in Ezekiel 28 you read something. I'm going to go over a few of these scriptures a little bit again because I want them to be fresh in your mind. I've already gone over them many, many times. But in Ezekiel 28 is the archangel, and only three have been mentioned. There were ordinary angels, then there were seraphs, and there were cherubs. Now the cherubs are the highest of all, in power and rank and in superiority. And speaking of this super angel, God says of him in Ezekiel 28:14, "*Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so.*"

Exodus 24-25 explains where it shows the throne of God pictured on earth as Moses was given a pattern to picture that on the throne of God were two cherubs, one on each side, his wings spreading over the throne so the wings touched each other, spreading out over the throne of God. And so he was one of those. Then in verse 15:

Ezekiel 28:15 Thou wast PERFECT in thy ways from the day that thou wast created [He was not born. He was a created being.] till iniquity was found in thee.

Iniquity is lawlessness. Now verse 17:

Ezekiel 28:17 Thine heart was lifted up because of thy **beauty**, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness.

He was so beautiful, so bright, that it was brilliant! It was brilliant, and it was dazzlingly beautiful; and it went to his head. Vanity seized him, and then he glorified himself. He wanted to be first above all. He wanted to be above God. Then he wanted to be the boss, instead of God. He wanted to own and have everything. He wanted to take away from God. He began to oppose God. He began to want to destroy what God had done. He wanted to begin to grab and use what he did; and what he didn't like he wanted to destroy; and it all started from that **vanity**.

Again, we read of him next in Isaiah 14. I really should have read that first, perhaps. His name was Lucifer. Here it speaks of him, Isaiah 14 beginning with verse 12:

Isaiah 14:12-13 How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! [Or, morning star. "Light bringer" is the meaning of the name Lucifer.] How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations? [Or, thou which did weaken the nations, thrown down to the ground.] (13) Thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven. [So he was below heaven. He was on earth.], I will exalt MY THRONE ...

So God had set him on a **throne** on the earth! At that time he was perfect in all of his ways. **He had been at the very throne of God in heaven.** He knew God's government. Now, God's government is based on a law; and a law is merely the code of rules of living, of how to live. And God's way of living is that of love, of cooperation, of serving, helping, cooperating, doing good, construction, building up. Satan had turned to the other way – destruction, (instead of loving) hating, competition, strife, taking away from others (instead of giving and helping). Just the very opposite! But

now he says he had a throne, and the throne was on the earth.

Isaiah 14:13 I will exalt my throne above the stars [or the angels] of God.

He was going to be the most high. He said in verse 14:

Isaiah 14:14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be [it says here] like the most High.

I'm quite sure the right translation of that would be "I'll become the most high myself." That's what he wanted. He wanted to take God's throne away from Him. AS A RESULT OF ALL OF THAT, and God placed angels on earth under him, and he with his cunning deceived the angels into also becoming demons. He became Satan the devil, they became demons – hostile against God, just the opposite from God's way of love; and destruction came to the earth as a result of it.

Now in Psalm 104 and verse 30 (and I would like to turn to that and read it). It's just one little verse, but I've read it many times. But I think you forget this. I want you to remember this.

*Psalm 104:30 Thou [God] sendest forth thy spirit [That's God's Spirit.], they are created [All the things that are created that it's been talking about here.]: and thou **RENEWEST** the face of the earth.*

The Creation Of Man

The whole face of the earth had come to the condition we read of in Genesis 1 and verse 2 – chaotic and in confusion, waste and empty. In six days, as you read in Genesis 1, God sent forth His Spirit; God told the Word what to do; and the Word spoke. And the Word said, "*Let there be light.*" Darkness was all over the fluid surface of the earth. It was all water. There

was no land. God said, “*Let there be light.*” That was, Christ was the one of God that said that, because His Father told Him to; and light appeared.

Then He had the dry land appear, and so on. Come down to verse 26, and it that was God – it was not Christ; it was God the Father who said “*Let Us make man in Our image.*” It just says Elohim there; but you can tell which one of the Elohim said it, and there’s no doubt about that.

So He made man **in His own image**, male and female made He them. But in Genesis 2 and verse 7 you’ll read that:

Genesis 2:7 God formed man of the dust of the ground.

Now He formed angels out of spirit. What is God? John 4:24 says “*God is a Spirit.*” God is Spirit. Man though is only dust, matter, out of the ground. So man was given only a temporary, physical existence – a chemical, physical existence. Yet God said, “Let Us make man in Our image, after Our kind.” **After the God kind!** And we learn, as I read to you in the beginning, that Jesus was THE FIRSTBORN God Being OF MANY BRETHREN. So it was God’s purpose to have man, which He made out of the ground, finally become God! How was that going to be?

Injected With God-Life

Now he didn’t have any Life in him. He had a temporary existence, as long as he was breathing air and as long as his heart was pumping blood; because the air is the “breath of life,” and “the blood is the life thereof” is another scripture in the Bible. And all the life you have within you now, naturally (which you were born with), comes from the breath of air and the circulation of blood. But God has Life inherent. Spirit Life doesn’t have to have a heart, doesn’t have to have any blood being pumped, doesn’t have to breathe air, doesn’t have to be fueled with food and water. But God placed

Life available before the man, because He had put him in the Garden of Eden; and there were the two trees (as I've said so many times), and one was the Tree of Life.

Now I wonder if you can understand what that meant. It meant Life injected from God – **the Life of God** injected into him. Now he didn't have it. All he had was what life was injected through just chemical actions, the physical elements of the ground. And, you know, there is great power even in matter. Look at what the atom can do. Look at nuclear physics. And look what power there is, even the power of electricity and of lightning; and that's all material. It's material power. But God offered him God's Life – that God would put HIS OWN LIFE and beget it right into Adam. It meant the injection of divine GOD LIFE into Adam.

Now that was one of the trees. That meant eternal life – the Tree of Life. But if he was to have that, he'd also have to have the mind of God and the righteousness of God, the CHARACTER of God, because what is God? Well, He's composed of Spirit; but above all God is **perfect, spiritual, righteous character**. And He was going to build that type of holy, righteous, spiritual character into the man; but the man had to make his own choice. He had to have something to do with it himself, to become a God.

Knowledge Of Good And Evil

So the other tree was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Now good and evil is not knowledge of how to build a house, or a barn, or an automobile, or an airplane. That's just physical knowledge, and God made man with ability to acquire that kind of knowledge. He already had that. But in front of him was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Now that's **spiritual** knowledge. That's either doing what is good or what is evil; and that has to do with the RELATIONSHIP to your own Maker, and secondly

relationships to other people.

Now, you see, God had purpose. Part of His purpose was that Adam and Eve were to have children, and their children would have children; until finally there'd be a lot of people on earth. And, if there's going to be a lot of people, they have to LIVE together just as God and the Word had lived together. Now, how were they going to live together? Well, God's way is GOD'S LAW; and that is the foundation of His government.

That is the **law**, the government, that Lucifer rejected; and he turned to the opposite way. Instead of obedience to God and the way of LOVE, he turned to the way of competition, strife, wanting to get, wanting to take, and wanting to destroy instead of wanting to create and build.

Then, Satan tempted Eve to turn to the way of **taking** the knowledge of good and evil; and he deceived her into thinking that she was already an immortal soul, that she had eternal life already (which she didn't have). And, of course, he tempted her on the beauty of the thing when she **saw** how good that tree and how beautiful it was, and good for food, and desired to make one wise.

Now, she had a mind; and she thought that now she'd have ability to decide right from wrong. And that's a higher knowledge than just the knowledge like carpenter knowledge of building a house or a barn or something. That's knowledge to deal with other spirit beings because there is a spirit in man, or you wouldn't have had a mind in the first place. So she took of the forbidden fruit, and gave to her husband, and he did eat with her.

And then, as a result of that: And I don't think I need to go back and read it again. But in the 3rd chapter of Genesis, the first 4 verses, you find how Eve was tempted. Then Adam followed her. Then verses 23-24, because now that Adam had made his decision – Adam had REJECTED THE LIFE OF GOD, which was offered to him – decided to just keep what physical life

he had; and God said, “You will surely die if you do that!” Yes, he had temporary life; but it was only temporary, and he was going to die. And Adam chose that, and that he would decide for himself how to get along with God and how to get along with neighbor. That is the knowledge of right and wrong.

Man Chose Death

The foundation of the world was at that time. Adam could have had Life, but he didn't. And so, at that time, God decreed that the Holy Spirit would be shut off from man, or the Tree of Life (eternal life), until Christ, the second Adam, should come. Now it was decreed at that time, as you will read in Revelation the 13th chapter, that Christ as the Lamb of God would be slain to pay the penalty of sin. God said to Adam that it would be sin if he disobeyed and took of the fruit of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, and death was the penalty. But God decreed at that time it was appointed for all man once to die but after that the judgment.

It was also decreed at that time that Christ would come as the Lamb of God. That is, Christ is the one that was the Word, who became Christ; but He would come and be born as Christ. That HE would die in the place of man, who had already sinned. HE would pay the penalty in man's stead; and, once the penalty was paid, man could again be reconciled to God.

Now when Adam disobeyed God and took the wrong fruit, he cut himself off from God; but God didn't cut Himself off from man necessarily. He just simply cut off the Holy Spirit from man. But man did cut himself off from God! Now God still talked to Adam's first son, Cain. When he was angry with Abel, God talked to him and cautioned him to be careful. But Cain went ahead and killed his brother anyhow, and then he lied to God about it.

Noah walked with God. Enoch walked with God. Abraham did. God

took Abraham's children and made a nation out of them and gave them His law, His way of Life; but He didn't give them His Holy Spirit. And love is the fulfilling the law; and it's the love of God shed abroad in our hearts **by the Holy Spirit** (according to Romans 5:5).

God had not given ancient Israel that kind of love. They still were mortal, and it was appointed that they should die. Then how could they have a judgment after that? In I Corinthians 15:22, you will read that:

I Corinthians 15:22 As in Adam ALL DIE ...

And because of Adam's sin, EVERYBODY had to die; and everybody under 150 years of age (and there isn't anyone over that now that I know of on earth) has died. Everyone who's ever lived has already died. And every one of us living will die, unless God prevents it somehow in the future; and, brethren, he's never done that for any generation.

Now, in due time, Christ was going to come. And "*As in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive*" in a JUDGMENT; and in that judgment they are going to be pronounced guilty, and the death penalty will be on them. Then they are going to find out that Christ came and paid that death penalty in their place; and so they can still be released from it, if they want to finally (at that time) turn to God's way and have Life instead of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Then every one ultimately is going to have to make his own decision, just like Adam did.

(I can't read my own notes here sometimes.) The Life that was offered to Adam meant God Life – God Life injected into him; but man chose death. One tree was death and the other was Life. The Holy Spirit was closed to man until Christ, the second Adam, should come.

Abundant Life

Now finally, 4000 years later, Jesus **was** born. Now why did Jesus come? In John 10 and verse 10, we'll read He said:

***John 10:10** I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.*

Now, they didn't have Life. Adam had rejected it, and they were all cut off. Jesus came that now they might HAVE LIFE and have it much more abundantly than just a chemical existence. But there's one other thing, and I want to read this because I've said it so many times but I want to get through this, because I want you to be very familiar with it. John 6:44 – because all Protestants think that God is trying to save the world. He wants RIGHT NOW. “Now is the only day of salvation,” they say. Many have gone out of this Church who **still believe that**.

***John 6:44** No man can come to me [{2}](#), except the Father which hath sent me draw him.*

God has to choose and draw those that are coming now. Joel had made a prophecy (In Joel 2, let me see, verse 38 or something like that.) that the day would come when God would pour out His Spirit on all flesh. He closed it up in the time of Adam, but the time would come when God would open up His Holy Spirit; but that time hadn't come yet.

Now Jesus was born by the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the Life of God injected into us. The Life of God was injected into an ovum in either the fallopian tube or the uterus of His human mother, Mary; and that imparted Life to a human ovum. And there was not a male sperm cell. It was the Spirit of God. And so Jesus was born **the only begotten Son of God**. No other human has ever been begotten and born humanly like that. He's the only begotten Son of God so far as human birth is concern. Now we can be begotten sons of God, but we were humanly begotten by a human father. But you are begotten for ETERNAL LIFE by the Spirit of God.

Now, thirty times or more (I read you thirty times recently here, from this platform.) in the New Testament where it says that the only ones that can come to Christ for salvation are those that God has called, or those that were chosen, of those that were (Let's see, called or chosen or), elected – the elect.

Now what does all this mean? It simply means that God was going to produce, out of the ground, by man (formed and shaped like God but with a temporary, chemical, physical life) ultimately – by infusing HIS SPIRIT, HIS LIFE but also His mind, also His CHARACTER, also His attitude of love, of cooperation, of giving, of concern for others just as much as concern for yourself, self-LES-ness instead of self-ISH-ness – but God was going to make us into His own children, into Gods.

God's Unfinished Workmanship

But it's a process, and what He created was not finished yet. When a woman bakes a cake, she takes the cake out of the oven; but, when she hasn't put the icing on it yet, it is still an unfinished cake. It's not finished until she puts the icing on. Now Adam was not even finished physically until God made a wife for him. Then they two became one family. He put one human spirit in the man; but he was not SPIRITUALLY finished without the Holy Spirit of God, which is GOD'S LIFE being injected into him. So he still was **unfinished**.

And mankind is **unfinished** all over. Now then, human beings then are an UNFINISHED piece of God's workmanship, as God is working to produce His own kind and reproduce Himself.

I don't know, brethren, whether this is real to you and whether you can see the MAGNITUDE of this and how great it is! God looks like we. He thinks like we, only His thinking is so much more **perfect** than ours that there's no comparison. His mind is perhaps a few thousands times greater

than our minds in its capacity and what it can do. And we are all **an unfinished piece of God's workmanship**. Notice that now in Job, in the 14th chapter of Job and verse 14. Job asked this question:

Job 14:14-15 *If a man die, shall he live again? [Let's see.] All the days of my appointed time will I wait, till **my change** come. [He's going to be changed. Then he says:] (15) Thou shalt call, and I will answer thee: thou wilt have a desire to **the work of thine hands**.*

We are an unfinished piece of God's workmanship. Now if we turn back to Isaiah 64. Let's see, Isaiah 64 and verse 8.

Isaiah 64:8 *But now, O LORD, thou art our father [Now notice that we become His children. "Now, O LORD, thou art our father."]; we are the clay, and thou our potter; and we all art **the work of thy hand**.*

We are His workmanship – an unfinished piece of His workmanship. We are a cake that doesn't have the icing put on yet; but, in this case, the icing is going to be by far the most important part.

A Few Called Now

Anyway, in the meantime, what has happened to those God has not called? Well, I told you a while ago. They are not called now. They will live and die, and they are having the experience of finding out that the way of Satan is wrong. They are unhappy. Their lives are unhappy. They are miserable. They are discontented. And there's so much suffering, starvation, violence, anguish of every kind. Nothing is satisfying.

Ultimately, God's time will come for EVERYONE to be called; but He is calling a few now. Brethren, why does He call a few of us first? You know that before you start a school ... I wanted to start a school, a college; but before I could start I had to have **teachers**. If I bring a lot of students here and there's no one to teach them, what kind of a school would that be? If you

take a bunch of six-year-old kids and say, “We’re going to start you in the first grade, but you don’t have any teacher there.” They come into the schoolroom, but there’s no teacher. They aren’t going to learn anything, are they? First you have to have TEACHERS, and you have to have some discipline; and the teacher has to also rule, or regulate, or administer certain rules or disciplines.

Judgment now is already on the Church. It is not yet on the world. Now you’ll notice that in I Peter 2, verses 9 to ... Let me see, 9 to 11. That’s not what I wanted. I Peter 4 verse 17.

I Peter 4:17 For the time is come [already] that judgment must begin at the house of God; and if it first begin with us [That’s why we’re the firstfruits.], what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

Well, their time of judgment will come later. Now then, the Church today is only **the firstfruits**. But I want to show you what we are. Now that’s I Peter 2 verses 9-11 that I turned to a while ago. But here’s what it says of us, brethren. If we have God’s Spirit, here’s how different we are from the world.

I Peter 2:9 But you are A CHOSEN GENERATION ...

You see, we’ve been chosen. We’ve been called by God. We haven’t volunteered. God has called us. In some way God put it in your mind to get interested, and you wanted to know more. You wrote for literature. You began to study it. You began to look in your Bible. God began to speak to you through His own Word, the Bible. You finally talked to one of our ministers, and he counseled with you. He didn’t try to talk you into becoming a Christian or anything. But when he saw you were ready, he finally baptized you; and it’s God’s Spirit that put you into the Church. So look what it has made you.

I Peter 2:9-11 You are a chosen generation [different from the rest of the world], a royal priesthood, an holy nation [Just like a nation, or a holy Church.], a peculiar people [different from the rest of the world]; that ye would show forth the praises of him who hath CALLED YOU [Again, we've been called. "Hath called you."] out of the darkness into his marvelous light: (10) Which in time past were not a people, but are now **the people of God**: which had not obtained mercy [not then], but now have obtained mercy. (11) Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims [in the earth. Not part of this earth. Not part of this world, I mean. "As strangers and pilgrims.], abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

The things that the world are doing. We've had to COME OUT of the world, to live separately a different kind of life – God's kind of Life according to God's law; and God's law is merely the rules of that Life the way it must be lived.

Satan Broadcasts Everywhere

Now I want to show you some important things. The main thing I want to say I haven't even gotten to yet, and time is almost up. So listen very carefully now. Adam took the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, and there can be good in an ordinary human nature. Even Satan will allow a certain good, but Satan has his idea of what good is. It is good as long as it benefits you. In other words, you can be good to the other guy as long as you think it's going to pay you to be good to him. But always there's a selfish motive. Now I want to show you that. Turn to Job, back now to the 1st chapter of Job and verses 6-10.

Job 1:6-7 Now there was a [time] when the sons of God came to present themselves before the [Eternal], and Satan came also among them. (7) And the LORD said unto Satan, Where have you come from? Then Satan

answered the LORD, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it.

Now, by the way, one comes out with an article against the idea that Satan gets to us and influences us by injecting a certain **attitude** of selfishness into human beings, even beginning in babyhood; that he's the "*prince of the power of the air.*" He says Satan is just one person at one time, and he can only influence one person at a time. Poppycock! And he depends on this, that he said "going to and fro upon the earth."

Satan is the prince of the power of the air, and he is **exudes** a spirit that **permeates** the air. I'm in one place, and my voice goes through the air around the earth wherever it goes on television. And on the first day of the Feast of Tabernacles I will speak from here. They will be hearing it in New Zealand at that same moment; only it will be the next day there, but the same moment. They'll be hearing it in England. They'll be hearing it in southern Canada and the United States. But I'm only here. I'm not at all those places. Satan is the prince of the power of the air. What I'm saying is going to go **through the air**. So if you've ever read any of that kind of thing, I want you to understand.

They came to present themselves to the Lord, and Satan came also among them. The Lord asked Satan, "Where have you been?" And then Satan answered the Lord and said, "From going to and from upon the earth, from walking up and down on it." But when he broadcasts as "*the prince of the power of the air,*" it goes out and permeates the air all over the whole earth.

Selfish Carnal Love

Job 1:8-11 And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that fears God and eschews evil? [Now look at Satan's answer

about what is good. And we see Satan's concepts of what he considers good right here.] (9) *Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Does Job fear God for nothing? [“If he's good, doesn't it pay him? He's not good because he's unselfish. Oh, no. He's selfish.”] (10) Hast thou not made a hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he has on every hand? Thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. (11) But [Now here's what Satan argued.] put forth your hand now, and touch all that he has, and he will curse you.*

“Then he won't love You anymore. He only loves You because of what he gets from You. He loves You because it pays him! There's a selfish motive.” BRETHREN, THAT'S THE ONLY KIND OF LOVE THAT ANY CARNAL-MINDED MAN CAN HAVE IN THIS WORLD. A mother loves her own child; and we say that mother love is the finest example of human love, and perhaps it is. But that child is **hers!** Does **she have that same kind of love for every other child?**

You know, there was a mother; and another woman claimed her child and said, “No, that's my child.” That was way back in the days of King Solomon, the wisest man that ever lived. They brought it before Solomon to decide whose child it was. Solomon said, “Well, I'll tell you what we'll do.” He called a man with a sword. He said, “I want you just to slice that child right in two, right down the middle. Give one half to one woman, the other half to the other woman.” And one woman fell down and begged, and pleaded, and said, “Don't do that that. Kill me, and not the child. Or let her have the child, rather than that.” And the other woman smiled and said, “Well, it's all right with me. Sure, I'll take half.” Solomon then knew who was the real mother.

Human love is selfishly motivated, my brethren; and you need to learn that. Did you ever notice that change that came over? What change does the Holy Spirit make in us? It's a change of attitude. It's a change of motive. It's

your whole purpose in life. You come to have a different **purpose**. It's a start, just like the first principle of the laws of success is having the right goal. Your **goal** changes! You have a different goal. It's no longer **selfish**. It's the love of others, and there's not many ...

Godly Love

Now, take Christ. He didn't have to die. But He loved the people, and it's the only way they can be saved. And by His death He paid the penalty of all of the world, and billions of people can now, if they will. They still have to have the will to do it, too, and make the decision. If they will, they can receive God's Holy Spirit; and they can grow to become God. But it's a case of **growing into the CHARACTER of God**; and that character doesn't come all at once. I've explained the milk bottle. As you get a little of God's Spirit in, a little of the air has to go out.

Christ was born with the Holy Spirit without measure. He had the Holy Spirit fully. He had none of the carnal spirit in Him. But He could have had. He was tempted in all points, like we are; and He had to watch it every second. He had to pray to God. Why, if we prayed, well, maybe 1/10th as much or maybe 1/50th as much as Jesus did, we'd be a lot better than we are, brethren.

But with the Holy Spirit GOD'S LIFE has entered into us, if the Holy Spirit has entered. Then the very LIFE of God – that means also the MIND of God. You read in Philippians, "*Let this **mind** be you, which was in Christ Jesus*" – the very mind that was in Christ. The only thing is His mind hasn't fully entered. There's still some of the old mind still there. And we have to constantly overcome and root out the evil.

I haven't done it all yet. In just another week or two, I will be in my 92nd year, and I still have much to do, much to overcome yet; and I know it.

And I want to make the grade, don't you? And it's not easy. This world is going the way that glitters and glammers. It looks tempting, and you kind of want to go along with them; and you have to resist that.

But we are not Gods yet! We have to “*GROW in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.*” That knowledge is the way to live! We have to learn more about how to live. And someday we're going to have to be teachers. And we've got to learn **now** how to teach others, to guide the lives of others, counsel with them, dealing with them when Christ comes. And then we will start a new civilization, under Christ.

What's different now between the Holy Spirit and Satan's spirit (which had entered into all of us and has entered into everybody in the world)? You read in Ephesians, the 2nd chapter just comes to mind right now, how you were dead in trespasses and sins; but now you are no longer that way. Now the Life of God has been injected into you, and some of His Life. The trouble is, we haven't gotten all of His Life. It isn't **fully** in us yet. We have to grow in that.

I don't know, sometimes I get a little discouraged. I talk to some of our ministers at my office where we get private, and alone, and talking. I say, “I just wonder how many of our brethren really do have the Holy Spirit.” And they begin to remind me of **the fruit**. When we go up to the Feast of Tabernacles, I tell you the local people there see us as an entirely different people than the rest of their people, or other people that they have seen. Then they begin to see some of the fruit.

Well, brethren, the fruits are there. We **are** the people of God. But we have to grow, and we've only grown so far up to this point; and we have to grow further. We have to realize it. We have to **pray more**. We have to study the Scriptures more. We have to have our mind on those things more and more.

Now Satan injects, not the Spirit of Life (such as God). When the Holy Spirit comes, that injects THE LIFE OF GOD; but it also injects the attitude of God into us. So our attitude is love toward others, instead of competition and trying to get and take from others. It's a different attitude all together! But the Holy Spirit can inject **actual LIFE**.

Now Satan injects something into us, but he cannot inject actual Life into us. All he can do is put in an attitude, and you can root that out. It is all together different than the Spirit of God. It's just an attitude of selfishness. And now understand this: Satan's attitude is selfishness. The self comes a certain degree in some person, and a greater degree in another, and a smaller degree in still another.

Also, the Spirit of God comes into a certain degree in one, and a different degree in another; and there are differences. And a whole lot depends on you, your attitude, on your prayer life and how much you pray, where you set your affection, where you set your mind. Where are your goals? What are you striving for? We have to **grow**. We have to **overcome**. We have to **endure** unto the end. And **then we shall be God**.

Teachers Needed

Now I say you can't start a school until you have teachers. God can't start the World Tomorrow until He has teachers and leaders, and that's why He is calling us now. Now God is prepared. I saw that the Church couldn't go on without a school. I had to come down and start Ambassador College. Ambassador College now has produced a great many very fine young ministers, and they are teaching you. They are teaching others all over the world. You, in turn, have to teach others later – sooner or later. And when we are really made God, then we find we will still grow.

You know, I believe God is still growing Himself. A couple of weeks

ago, God didn't know a lot of things that were going to happen on the earth that have happened since, because humans – still with free moral agency – they make up their own minds what they are going to do and God allows that. Now God knows things now He didn't know two weeks ago. God is growing in knowledge all the time. I don't think God is growing in perfection, because He reached that a long, long time ago; or else He's always been that way. But we haven't reached perfection yet; and we have to still grow, and grow, and grow.

So understand that the Holy Spirit in you, it does **change** you. It does make you different. It gives you a different **attitude**, a different **purpose in life**. You are going for a different **goal**. You are looking forward. You have a different **purpose** in what you want.

Pray For Enemies

Some have gone out of this Church; and they have only one goal, and that is to destroy this Church. Anything they can do to destroy this Church and this Work. They tell me they want to destroy me personally if they can, and I don't think God is going to let them do it; but I just place myself in God's hands. I'm one of these imperfect people, trying to get better; and I hope that God knows that and He understands it, even if enemies don't.

I still pray for all of my enemies. I pray for them first. You know, I've said before I start out by thanking God that He is God and that we have such a God. After I express my thanks and pray for the Kingdom of God, then I next pray for my enemies. Then, after that, I pray for the Church and my own family.

Now maybe that's not just the right formula; but it seems right to me, and that's the way I do. That's why I do ask for the prayers of all of you, and I know I do have them; because I need them because ... Well, as I know my

wife said to Mrs. Rona Martin before she died, she said that Satan would rather destroy her husband than anybody else on earth; now maybe that's true. Well, sometimes I think he comes pretty close to it; but he hasn't been able to yet.

Satan works through human instruments, just like God does, too, you know, and some humans, allow themselves to be used by him. Well they don't realize it. I pray for them because I don't hate them. I don't want to see them have to go into the Lake of Fire. I don't! I want to try to save them, as even as you read in the [{3}](#) 3rd chapter of Zechariah, a brand plucked out of the fire at the last moment (as it says there of Joshua, the high priest).

You know, when you have the Spirit of God, you don't just pray for those where there's something in it for you. Everybody says, "Well, what am I going to get out of it now?" You don't always look at it from the standpoint of "What am I going to get out of it?" How much can I **give** into it? How much can I contribute? Well, brethren, I am very appreciative that in this Church there are so many who are giving and giving so generously.

Now this morning, here it's on the Sabbath; but, I know there are some that had to get up about three o'clock this morning to get over to answer the telephone, the WATS line telephones coming in from broadcasts in the Eastern time zone three hours later. I mean, three hours, well, it's three hours later their time than it is for us out here, almost the same time; but their clocks say three hours later. And so the telephone calls begin to come in. When we ask for volunteers, they respond.

In the Co-worker letter, I mentioned the need up at Orr for the camp there for the teenagers, up there. And, you know, I just wonder. If the brethren didn't respond, I was going to say I was going to write something about it the next time. But I don't have to do. Just the first two or three days, about \$46,000 came in for what we need to so up there. So now instead of

one building we are going to be able to build two, because that's the way our brethren are.

But, brethren, we're only on the way. We've started, but we still have a long way to go. I know God is blessing you, because we have the goal. We've made the start. We're on our way. But Satan is still against us. We still have to pray. We have to persevere. We have to overcome. We have to grow. And I know we will.

I think that the most important part of my life remains yet to be lived and to be done. By far the greatest things that God needs to use me for lie yet ahead. I do need your prayers for it.

I have a very important mission in the next few days. I'm going to Washington, DC on Wednesday. I have some very important meetings there. And then I expect to speak, a week from today, to a combined Church service at Pittsburgh. Many of the Churches in that area will all come together in one large auditorium. And then, that night, on to Big Sandy where the summer camp is starting. I'll speak to the students there the next day. And then up to Orr and the next day speak to students up there.

And, incidentally, I may have to go down to, on Monday, to Austin, Texas. The state legislature of Texas has passed a law, finally, that our children legally now are allowed to be off on all of God's holy days; and that's one place where they've caused so much trouble. They've expelled children right and left, all over Texas. Now, our brethren have had great trouble in the state of Texas. And now it's a law. And on a week from Monday, Monday of the following week, the governor is going to sign that bill. I may go down there to be there. If there's going to be a ceremony of any kind, I may go down there to be there at the signing of that bill.

So, once in a while, government has even helped us; although usually it's been government that Satan's used to persecute the Church. But, in this

case, the government has been on our side. So we'd better be thankful for what we get from the government.

Well, God bless you all. We're on the way; and I just want to say, brethren, you're doing fine. Let's just keep it up, only let's speed up the pace a little faster as we go along.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said "how is He made the Spirit of God" but then he corrected himself and said: "or how is He made the Son?"

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: At first Mr. Armstrong said, "No man can come to me, except Jesus, except the Spirit;" but then he corrected himself, saying:" except the Father."

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said the 4th chapter of Zechariah, but it is found in the 3rd chapter.

50th Anniversary of the Eugene Church

Sermon (September 24, 1983)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

50th Anniversary of the Eugene Church.....	1554	Two Cannot Walk Together	1576
Why The Church?	1556	God's Law Or Satan's	1578
What Is Wrong With This World?	1559	Man Created Incomplete	1580
The God Of This World	1560	Attitude Of Vanity	1581
Challenged By Two Topics	1563	Pray For Our Enemies	1583
Shadow Of Things To Come	1564	How Satan Kidnapped The World	1584
Annual Sabbaths To Be Kept As Well	1565	Church Subject To Government	1586
How The Church Receives Truth	1568	God Then Formed Man	1592
Much To Learn	1570	Man Made Mortal	1594
Origin Of Satan	1571	Conditions Of The Pre-Flood World	1595
The Bible A Book Of Law	1574		

With me up here are the only three, that I know, that were original members of the parent Church when it was first formed. Now I understand that there are several others who came into the headquarters' Church up here a little later, or many who were just children and hadn't grown up to be baptized and members yet at that time; and I will later ask you to stand up, and everybody can see who you are.

But here is Bill and Jean Kahn and Bobby Fisher. [applause] These 'kids' were just teenagers; and we were having regular meetings in my home, which was then I believe on ... was it 5th or 3rd? It was before we finally moved to 1608 West Sixth; and I think that two of my eldest children, my two daughters, were in the group. Now, let me see. Oh, Phyllis Day. She unfortunately is no longer with us. She told me the reason was that I let everybody call me by my first name in those days. I didn't want to put on any airs, and she said that familiarity breeds contempt; so she sort of lost respect or something. However, I regained her respect later; but that didn't bring her

back into God's Church.

But here are three members that have been **faithful** and have stood all these years; and now these 'kids' are gray headed, like I am. [Laughter] Oh, I love these 'kids'. [Mr. Armstrong speaks to the three on stage.] You remember when we had those meetings? (A woman's voice is heard answering, "Yes.") You were just teenagers, you know. What? About 14, 15, maybe 16? (A man answers "Probably 16. I was probably 17."). Sixteen or seventeen. [Mr. Armstrong chuckles] Well, they say that all men are just little boys grown up; and I guess most women are just little girls grown up. But here we still are!

And now I'd like to have all of the others, at least who considered themselves in the Eugene Church – which is "the Parent Church" of the Philadelphia era. Would you please stand? I think they should most of them be in one area. I'm not sure they were seated that way.

How we have grown through the years. You know, since this original Church here at Eugene 50 years ago, this Church grew at the rate of **30% every year for 35 years**. Now we couldn't keep up that percentage of growth after that, that brought us up to about 1968. But we are growing more in numbers every year now than we did then, just not as big a percentage. The percentage finally got pretty high, because 35 years ... When you realize that we were doubling in size every 2 and 2/3rd years. We were multiplying our size by 8 in 8 years and by 64 in 16 years. And so by multiplication it finally begins to skyrocket up, and that's what has happened to the Work of God; and it is still growing.

I'm glad to say that we've had a growth; it is not as big a percent, but somewhere around 6 or 8% in the last year. But 6 or 8% on around 100,000 is a pretty big growth. That is several thousand a year. We used to grow, from a few members, 30% more; but it only added a very few. Today it adds a great

many. But I know it is a wonderful thing and a matter to rejoice in, after all these years.

Now this is just one little small crowd of our brethren today, one of the smallest Feast sites. There are several that are much larger than this group; and I think we have everything to thank God for, because we didn't do it. I didn't do it. **Jesus Christ did it.** I perhaps would never have yielded myself to Him if He hadn't beaten me down in quite a different manner than He did the apostle Paul. But nevertheless He did, and brought me to surrender to Him; and not only to accept Christ, **BUT TO GIVE MYSELF TO CHRIST.** And I've tried to leave myself in His hands ever since. I haven't done too good a job at that, but I have tried; and He has at least borne very great fruit, and we are very thankful.

[Mr. Armstrong turned to those on the stage with him and said:] Haven't seen you in a few years, but this has been a joy. Good to see you again. I'll see you after the service. Thank you. [Applause]

Well, you know, after 50 years we sort of get a little older. When I think back to teenagers, and now we're looked on as elderly people and gray haired. But someone was using that slang expression, I think last evening: "You've come a long way baby." [Laughter] Well, I guess we were just babes in Christ. But God has blessed this Church, and this is **HIS CHURCH.**

Why The Church?

I didn't know **WHY** there was a Church back in those years. I just knew I had been challenged. My wife had taken up with fanatical religion, so I thought. She was keeping Saturday instead of Sunday, and that is the most fanatical thing I ever heard of. So we had an argument about it, but I couldn't convince her; and I wanted to save our marriage. Two can't walk together except they be agreed, and we weren't agreed about it.

I told her that the Bible says, “Thou shalt keep SUNDAY.” She said, “Well now, where does the Bible say that?” “Well” I said, “I don’t know. I don’t know much about the Bible.” (I didn’t then.) And she said, “Well, then how do you know?” I said, “Because all the churches keep Sunday; and they get their religion out of the Bible, don’t they?” And she said, “Well, **do** they?” “Well” I said, “Of course!” And so I had to start studying the Bible to see; and, to my surprise and chagrin, I found that the churches do NOT get their religion out of the Bible. They **try** very desperately to **read** their ideas of religion INTO the Bible. But what they believe did not come out of the Bible, because they believe just the CONTRARY in MOST important things. Now they don’t know why there should BE a church. I didn’t know then either. I just didn’t know.

Well now, today we are celebrating not only the 50th anniversary of the local Eugene Church as it was, which was the first Church of the Philadelphia era. I was still working with and preaching in the Sardis Churches up in the Willamette Valley, up near Jefferson, over in a little country schoolhouse at Beaver, up in that direction. But God began to reveal NEW TRUTH that the others didn’t know; and I found that those people who were humble and sincere people ... They had God’s Sabbath and the truth of God’s law. They had the right name, the Church of God. They were a sincere people, but they thought they had all of the knowledge; and they would not accept any **new knowledge** that the Bible contained that they hadn’t seen. So they didn’t grow with us.

Now why should there be a Church in the first place? Why are WE assembled here? Why do we HAVE a Church? Why should there BE a Church? You ask the average Methodist, Baptist, Presbyterian, Congregationalist, Church of Christ person, anybody. I think they would be stumped for an answer.

What’s the **purpose** of the Church? Why should there BE one? What is

it? Just a social club, or what is it? Well, the word “church” is an English word. Now, all of the New Testament is written in the Greek language; and in the Greek language the word was “ecclesia.” That’s a Greek word. And ecclesia means ‘come out ones,’ and it means come out of this world.

Come out of this world! Well, I didn’t understand that 50 years ago. I wasn’t able to teach that to the teenagers that were meeting with me once a week either. But we read in II Peter 3 and verse 18, the last couple of verses of II Peter, that ” ... *we must GROW in the grace ad the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.* ”

When we first are converted and receive the Holy Spirit, we don’t receive God’s Holy Spirit 100% full measure, or without measure, or without any proportion of a measure, like Jesus Himself had. HE ALONE had the Holy Spirit FULLY and COMPLETELY – “without measure” as the Bible words it. But WE receive just a measure of the Holy Spirit, and we’re told to **GROW IN GRACE** (and that is in God’s Spirit, in God’s favor that He favors us with as He just injects His Spirit literally into us) **AND IN THE KNOWLEDGE** of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

We start out as BABES in Christ. But a baby must grow up physically. We are SPIRITUAL BABES, and we must grow up spiritually; and some of us did. Most people who profess to be Christians never do. All these (a few million people over the United States) that call themselves “born-again Christians” have no knowledge whatsoever of what it means to be born again. They are not born again any more than a skunk or a jack rabbit. They haven’t any conception of what it means; and I doubt if they’ve ever become even BABES in Christ, let alone growing up into full stature of adulthood spiritually. No. Spiritual babes must grow up, and God has finally revealed that to us; and in this Church that is what we’ve been doing.

What Is Wrong With This World?

But now **why** did Christ come to call us out of this world? Because the word ‘church’ comes from “ecclesia” which means ‘come out’ of the world. What’s wrong with **the world**? Why should we COME OUT of it? Well, I’ll tell you what’s wrong with it. You look at the world today; and you see a world of AWESOME progress and advancement in technology, in science, in many of the accomplishments of human beings. But nearly all of that accomplishment is in materialism and the things of matter.

But SPIRITUALLY we find this world full of APPALLING EVILS, and the evils are multiplying. Man is against man. Neighbor is against neighbor. Group is against group. Husbands and wives are against one another. Parents and children are against one another, capitol and labor, black and white, nation against nation. We just can’t get along with one another. The world is in trouble as it never has been before. But this is NOT GOD’S WORLD!

Now, people just can’t understand that. I was interviewed by a reporter from The Webster Guard yesterday afternoon; and I said, “This is not God’s world. This is Satan’s world.” I said, “But everybody thinks it’s God’s world. I suppose you do, don’t you?” And he was quite embarrassed. Well, yes, he did. He thought God had a lot to do with this world. Well, God is concerned about this world. He loved this world enough to give His own Son to die for it; but He is not **OF** this world. There is a great difference.

He’s concerned about it, yes; but will it shock you if I say that God is not trying to SAVE this world NOW. Now, God **is** going to save this world – and I mean the WHOLE world, **ALL OF IT**; but He hasn’t started to do that just yet. He will do that. He is only calling certain ones at this time, and He is going to call others later. And those who have lived and died **uncalled** will be resurrected to judgment, because in Hebrews 9:27 you will read “*it is*

appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.” And in I Corinthians, let me see, the 15th chapter and 22nd verse ... *”as in Adam all die.*” I tell you anybody that is under 160 years old (and I don’t think there is anybody on earth as old as 160 today) ... everybody else whoever **LIVED** is DEAD. They are no longer **living**. They are no longer **here**. And they DIED IN ADAM. They are going to be made alive by a resurrection **in** Christ, and then their eyes are going to be opened.

Oh, they’re going to be JUDGED; and they’re going to be pronounced GUILTY; and the sentence is going to be **DEATH**. And that sentence is going to be **PRONOUNCED** on them when they face the judgment seat of CHRIST. And then Christ will tell them, “But what would you say if you knew that I paid your penalty for you? Now it’s conditional. **If** you want to repent of the way you lived, **if** you want to live better than you did in the other life when you were on this earth, **if** you want to begin to live GOD’S WAY instead of Satan’s way, **then** My death will take the place of yours and you can now receive that Tree of Life that Adam rejected. You can now receive the Holy Spirit.”

They’ll be given 100 years of a sort of probationary sentence; and, if they live according to God’s law and with His Spirit (which He will then give them by measure, of course), if they grow in grace and knowledge, if they overcome – they shall inherit eternal life. Now, not everybody is going to inherit eternal life. Some are going to refuse even then. Otherwise you wouldn’t read in the Bible that they are going to be *“ashes under the soles of our feet.”* that they are going to be burned **up**. Not burning forever and ever and ever in a hell fire that Dante Alighieri pictured, but burned up.

The God Of This World

Now they don’t understand, they don’t believe, that this is Satan’s

world. I'd like you to notice a few scriptures. Ephesians 6 and verse 12 where it says here "we wrestle not against flesh and blood." Now we are all having struggles. The Communists have a struggle, "the struggle of the Proletariat" they call it. It's a constant struggle so that they can overcome all other nations and rule the world. That's what they want to do. That's their goal.

We **all** are struggling against this, and that, and the other thing in the world. It's a world of **contention**. It's a world of **competition**. It's a world of **evil**, of person against person, class against class, group against group. But we are not struggling against other PEOPLE, and we don't REALIZE that; but against the "rulers of the **darkness of this world**."

Now, "rulers of the **darkness of this world**." **WHO is really ruling this world?** Notice the rest of this sentence, "against **spiritual wickedness in high places**." Now that can otherwise be translated "against wicked **spirits** in high places." **THEY** are the RULERS of this world – the **EVIL WICKED SPIRITS**: Satan and other demons (that are former angels) with him.

Now if you will notice next in II Corinthians the 4th chapter, verses 3 and 4:

***II Corinthians 4:3-4** But if our gospel [which is the gospel of the Kingdom of God, Christ's gospel, the gospel he preached. If it] *be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: (4) In whom the **GOD OF THIS WORLD** [which is Satan the Devil] hath **blinded** the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the **glorious gospel** [which is the Kingdom of God, the Family of God] ... should shine unto them.**

Satan has **BLINDED** the eyes of the people of this world. He is the **GOD** of this world. **PEOPLE WORSHIP A GOD, BUT THEY DON'T WORSHIP THE SAME GOD THAT CREATED THE EARTH. THEY DON'T WORSHIP THE GOD THAT THIS CHURCH DOES! THEY WORSHIP A GOD WHOSE REAL NAME IS SATAN THE DEVIL.** We

need to understand these things.

Now next, if you will notice Ephesians the 2nd chapter and the first two verses, where Paul is talking to those who had been converted in Ephesus. They were babes in Christ. They had received His Holy Spirit. And the 2nd chapter of Ephesians starts off with this:

Ephesians 2:1-2** And you [you new Christians there] hath he [God] quickened, [which means ‘made **alive**’] who **were** dead in trespasses and sins [The wages of sin is death, and the death sentence was already on them because they had sinned; and so they were considered **spiritually dead**, not physically but spiritually dead.]; (2) *Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of **this world [This is the world we are to come **out** of, this world. And all of us did walk according to the course of this world.], *according to the prince of the **power of the air** ...**

Satan the Devil, the **prince of the power of the air!** I could never understand that until I went **on** the air and broadcast. And I broadcast into a microphone, like I have a small one here in front of me; and it would go out on the airwaves and go right **through the air** and go into thousands of homes, and thousands of people would listen and hear everything I was saying. It went through the air! **SATAN BROADCASTS THROUGH THE AIR.** Now he doesn't broadcast in words and sounds. He doesn't broadcast in pictures like television. He broadcasts in **attitudes** and states of mind, attitudes of hostility, attitudes of jealousy and envy, attitudes of resentment, attitudes that are contrary to God's attitude of love and cooperation and sharing and giving and helping.

So, you see, we formerly were living according to that way; and he is the god of this world. And this is not God's world. It is Satan's world. And you will read, for example in the 12th chapter of Revelation and in verse 9, that **ALL NATIONS** all over this **WORLD** are **DECEIVED**; and they're

deceived by Satan the Devil. He has deceived all nations.

Challenged By Two Topics

Now how was this Church raised up? It started with this little Church in Eugene. I went and tried to see this little church building that we finally bought back in those years. I think that was about, let's see, about 1935 or 36 we bought that church building. (It's been moved. I went to a place supposed to be it, but it wasn't the church at all; and I don't know what happened to it. I wasn't able to find it.)

But I was challenged in the year of 1926 regarding the Sabbath day and also regarding the theory of evolution. Now the theory of evolution was a theory of origins of how human beings came to be, how human life originated. Evolution was then rapidly becoming the basic concept on which all knowledge and education is based in the universities of this country and in the world, in England and Germany, other places. And I was challenged on it.

I had never studied it in depth, but I was more or less conversant with it; and I simply did not accept it. I didn't believe it, and I was told I was **ignorant** by a sister-in-law just fresh out of college at that time. She had had a dose of evolution injected into her young mind at that time. Well, I was pretty proud in those days; and that sort of nettled me; and I told her I was going to make her eat those words. I said, "Unless you are right ... in that case, I'll have to accept it; but I think you are wrong."

So I studied evolution right along with the matter of the Sabbath, because I was sure that the Bible said 'Thou shalt observe Sunday.' I said that all the churches received their doctrines, their beliefs, from the Bible. Well, there was a six-month **intensive**, in depth, study. I was studying up to 1:30 in the morning. Many times my wife Loma would yell out and say "Herbert, when are you coming to bed? Are you going to stay up all night?" She'd been

asleep for an hour or two, and I was still studying. Well, I'd come to bed. I didn't get full nights sleep. I'd be up in the morning, down at the public library waiting for it to open at 9 o'clock, to go on studying more. I studied almost constantly.

I had to eat crow, if you know what I mean. I found my wife was right. I found that the churches **do not** get their religion out of the Bible, but just the contrary; and I began to learn that the Bible said many things I had not believed it said. Well, I won't go into that further because I think many of you know the story anyway. But I was converted in the spring of 1927. The challenge came in the autumn of 1926, but in the spring of 1927 I had all but accepted the Sabbath. And then I came to one passage that stumped me, and that was Colossians 2 and verse 16.

Shadow Of Things To Come

Now, let's see. Here we are, where it says: *Colossians 2:16-17 Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the Sabbath days: (17) Which are a shadow of things to come: but the body is of Christ.*

Now you notice the "shadow." If the shadow comes from the sun, the sun has to be behind you. Now if it is the shadow is of things behind, the sun would be in front and you are looking backwards. But if the **shadow** is of things to **come**, the **shadow** you see is things that are **going to come**, and so the sun would then be behind you and you're looking **forward** into the **future**.

Now, the Sabbath and the monthly [1](#) new moons and the annual holy days were a **SHADOW OF THINGS TO COME**. In other words, they represented THINGS TO COME that hadn't happened yet. **THEY WERE OF THE FUTURE**, not of the past, and people were using that to say that they

DID AWAY WITH THE SABBATH. That's what Methodists, and Sunday churches, and Baptists were all saying.

Now I found a book written by a former 7th Day Adventist who had become soured on 7th Day Adventism and had left and had written a book trying to prove how bad the 7th Day Adventists were. He took this passage, and he showed that **everyplace** in the Bible where the weekly Sabbath, the monthly new moons, and the annual Sabbaths are used together. (And there are several places I didn't know they had been used in a number of places all through the Old Testament.) In EVERY place they were simply used together; and they were talking about times on which sacrifices had been held. That's sacrificial meat.

So it says *"let no man judge you in meat or drink or in RESPECT ..."* Well, at first I took that to mean the Sabbath was abolished. I told my wife that; and, when I told her that, she was so concerned and so worried that that night she did not sleep a wink. She spent that whole night in prayer; and the next morning she said, "I want you to go down to the public library and I want you to get the original Greek words for every word in that paragraph and look it up." And she said, "I know that God has revealed to me that some place you are going to find a mistranslation and that it doesn't mean that those days are done away."

I did that, and I found that this word "respect" comes from the Greek word "m-e-r-e-i." I don't know just how to pronounce it (whether it's 'meer-i' or how you pronounce it), but it means 'sacrificial meat observance of.' So here's what it meant. "Let no man judge you in meat or in drink or in the sacrificial meat observance of a holy day, or a new moon, or the Sabbath."

Annual Sabbaths To Be Kept As Well

The **sacrificial meat** and the sacrificing of animals was DONE AWAY

BY THE BLOOD OF CHRIST. AND YET THESE DAYS WERE A SHADOW OF WHAT IS TO COME. THEY FORETOLD THE FUTURE. THEY HAD MEANING FOR THE FUTURE. I said **INSTEAD OF DOING AWAY WITH THE DAYS IT CONFIRMS THEM.** And I SAW it; and I came to her and said, “**THAT MEANS WE HAVE TO KEEP THE ANNUAL SABBATHS AS WELL.**”

Now the 7th Day Adventists translated that this way: “Let no man judge you in meat or in drink (and they admitted that did away with it) or in respect of a **holy day** (and they said the ‘holy day’ means the weekly Sabbath) or a new moon or of the Sabbath day” – of the Sabbath day or a holy new moon or Sabbath day. Now the Bible would be almost **illiterate** if it said anything like that. The holy day had to be a different day than the weekly Sabbath, and everywhere they are **used together** it was speaking of **annual** Sabbaths and not weekly Sabbaths; but the weekly Sabbath is mentioned with it.

Now what about the new moons? Well, I researched that very thoroughly; and no place did I find where new moons were ever observed as a necessary ordinance of any kind, or where they were commanded. We did think, however, that they were a certain day. It was a way of marking a certain time from other times, and we did have Bible studies every new moon for some time. But there is no command for that, and it is **not** a holy day. It is **not** a commanded convocation or time of assembly in any manner, shape, or form. And so the Church has not continued to do that, because there is no reason for it. If we wanted to have some sort of a thing like a monthly Bible study, that would be a good time for it. But instead of that, in most of our Churches, we have **weekly** Bible studies to have one every week **besides** the Sabbath observance.

Well, that showed me that I not only then did have to keep the Sabbath but also the annual Sabbaths. Now I didn’t see that we, at that time, that we had to get away and congregate together for 8 days in the Feast of

Tabernacles. I just saw the weekly Sabbath. But my wife and I began then to keep them in the spring of 1927, and I've been keeping them ever since; and so I am sure that I have been keeping them longer than anyone of you here.

Now, it was 7 years before I could induce the Church to do it. I was preaching then. A little later, I was preaching before the people that were of the Sardis era up in the Willamette valley; and, of course, I preached about this. I told them that was new light that we ought to observe, and that it is **commanded**. Now I went back and I found that **every one** of these annual feast days are commanded **FOREVER**, and I found that Christ observed them. I found the apostles observed them **AFTER** the Church started, and that the early Church for at least three or four hundred years (the real true early Church) continued to **observe** those days.

I told the people of the Sardis congregations that were meeting up in the valley. They **LAUGHED ME TO SCORN**. They would have **none** of it, and some of their ministers got very **ANGRY**. There was a time up in Beaver when I was preaching up there; and I was sharing the pulpit every other week then with Roy Daly, one of the young Sardis ministers. He preached every other week, and I preached every other week.

Well, I had agreed I wouldn't preach this on the Sabbath because they were so **irate** against the annual holy days, the annual Sabbaths. But they thought, in fairness to me, that they should give me a time to **FULLY** explain it; and so we had a weeknight that was set apart for me to do it. I remember that Roy Daly tried to heckle me, and I couldn't go ahead. He would heckle me so I couldn't even finish the sentence.

Finally, I just told him that this meeting had been set apart for me to explain it. I said, "The other brethren want to hear it." And I said, "Roy, you don't want them to hear it." I said, "**SIT DOWN AND BE QUIET.**" He continued to heckle. I said, "Roy, if you open your mouth and say another

word, I'll have the ushers **THROW YOU OUT OF HERE, AND IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST I'LL COMMAND YOU TO LEAVE HERE.** He got up and walked out. He was not going to have any of it. And the Sardis people, I am sorry to say, **never** would accept that truth. Never did.

Isn't it a terrible yoke of bondage that we have to be here, brethren? Don't you feel punished? Isn't God a harsh, stern God to tell us we have to be here in this meeting, and we have to have these holy days and festival once a year? Well, I don't think so; and I'm sure you don't either! Well, that revealed to me the holy days. I continued my study, and I've continued it ever since; and I have perhaps learned more in the last **year** (my 91st – 92nd year I am into now) than any other year.

How The Church Receives Truth

Anyway, I was ordained by the Oregon Conference in June 1931. Now, I was converted and **began** the study of the Bible. In other words, the Bible is the WORD OF GOD. Now Jesus Christ is the Word of God. JESUS is the Word of God in **person**. **This Bible is the Word of God in writing, but it is precisely the same Word of God,**

Jesus taught the early apostles. **WHERE DID THE CHURCH GET ITS TEACHING?** It didn't get it from Jesus, and it didn't get it from Satan. It got it from the **APOSTLES**, and the prophets and the writings of the prophets. That's why you read in Ephesians the 2nd chapter that the church was *"founded on the foundation of the apostles AND the prophets* the apostles of the New Testament, the prophets of the Old (because there were no prophets in the New Testament that had anything to do with the founding of the Church, or the teaching of the Church, or the setting of policies, or the giving of truth to the Church).

I think there are only, I believe, 4 or 5 prophets even **MENTIONED** in

the New Testament; and not one of them had anything to do with the administration or the revealing of knowledge to the Church. They were not prophets in that sense at all. So it is referring definitely to the prophets of the Old [Testament] (and they are constantly quoted in the New Testament) and by the apostles. The apostles received their knowledge, which they taught the Church. They received it from Jesus in person AND from the writings of the PROPHETS.

NOW, WHERE DID I RECEIVE THE KNOWLEDGE in this day and age? I received it in the same manner exactly. The Bible IS the Word of God. It is Jesus Christ then IN WRITING. And THE SAME JESUS taught me (only He taught me in writing through the Bible) that taught the early apostles. But first He had to open my mind. He had to bring me to surrender to Him and to His will, where I would be WILLING to believe Him.

You know the hardest thing for anyone to do is to admit that he is WRONG, and the second hardest thing for **ANYBODY** to do is **BELIEVE** God or **BELIEVE CHRIST**. NOW THERE ARE MILLIONS THAT CLAIM TO BELIEVE IN CHRIST. I told a Catholic woman one time, I said, “You don’t even believe God.” She said, “I do too believe in God! Don’t you dare say I don’t.” I said, “I didn’t say that.” I said, “You don’t **believe God**. You just say you believe **in** Him, that’s something all else again. But God speaks in the Bible, and you don’t believe much of what it says. Very little of what it says do you believe.” (Chuckles) She quieted down.

Well, anyway, say I began to study and God began to teach me (Christ did, through His **written** Word.) 100 TIME CYCLES from the time He began to teach the early apostles. He began to teach them in **27 AD**. He began to teach me in **1927**. They were ORDAINED on the DAY OF PENTECOST when the HOLY SPIRIT came into them in **June 31 AD**. I was ORDAINED in June **1931**, just **100** time cycles later. Now is that altogether just a coincidence, or did God plan it that way brethren? What do you think?

Well, while I was preaching for them and finally, first on a \$20 a week salary, and finally on \$3.00 a week. It was during the Depression, and that was back in 1933; and two places opened up for ministers. Now we had a couple of ministers, up in Oregon here, from California. And the Church up at Harrisburg was opened up for some meetings, and the little school out here called the Firbutte School. (It's not there any longer. It's been torn down; and there is a lake in its place, I understand, about 8 miles west of here.)

Of course, the ministers from southern California and the Los Angeles area demanded that they have the Church at Harrisburg and that I take the little schoolhouse. It had 36 seats. Well, I had services there for 6 weeks, 6 nights a week; and our average attendance was about 40. In other words, there was an average of 4 people standing for every service. Some nights it wasn't even full, and other nights it was very much overcrowded; but that was the average.

I started meetings there on July the 1st 1933, and it ended on August the 12th with 19 members in the Church that is now "the Parent Church" of the Philadelphia era. The Church was not officially organized as a Church until October. I don't have the date of that, and I don't know whether I could find it out unless someone here might remember.

Much To Learn

But I had proved the existence of God, which I was shaken about when I studied evolution because you can't believe evolution straight and still believe in God. Some people kid themselves that they can and that evolution was the way God created, but it isn't; and no died-in-the-wool evolutionist believes there is any God at all. So I had proved that God exists.

Next I had to prove is the Bible a real authority? Is the Bible the WORD of God? Can I **RELY** on it as an **AUTHORITY? IS IT GOING TO**

JUDGE ME in the Judgment? AND I PROVED THAT. NOW I HAD SOMETHING TO STAND ON. I KNEW THAT THIS GOD WAS AND THAT THIS WAS GOD SPEAKING. I began to study it, and my WHOLE HEART AND SOUL was in it. I was so interested.

Now I came, in that first 6 months, to an understanding about law and grace. I came to understand about the gospel (that is, the Kingdom of God), but I didn't fully understand what the Kingdom of God is yet. I understood about the annual Sabbaths as well as the weekly Sabbath. I understood that we were the 10 tribes of Israel, and the identity by physical birth is Israelite. I came to understand, had the key to, prophecy and began to understand the prophecies (which most people couldn't understand). But there was so much yet I had not learned and didn't understand at that time.

Now, why should there be a Church in the first place? What is the purpose? What is the function of the Church? WHY DO WE HAVE A CHURCH? WHY NOT JUST DISBAND AND FORGET IT? The Church must have a **PURPOSE**. THERE MUST BE A **REASON** FOR IT. Brethren, we need to stop and think of these things. Well, I learned that later as we went along.

Now the Church comes from that word 'ecclesia' which means 'called out' – called out of this world to be **separate** from the world. Then I had to finally learn that this is not God's world. This is Satan's world. I gave you a few scriptures at the beginning of this sermon on that.

Origin Of Satan

Well, what is the origin of Satan? Did God create a Devil? How did Satan gain this world? How did it come to be his world? How did he get a hold of it? Well, we'll turn back to II Peter 2 [2](#) and verse 4. Let's see, do I have that marked off here? Yes, II Peter 2 [3](#) and verse 4.

*II Peter 2:4 For if God spared not the **angels that sinned**, but cast them down to ... [Tartaroo the original word is. It should not be 'hell' here because tartaroo has a different meaning altogether. That was the Greek word.] and delivered them into chains of darkness to be reserved unto judgment.*

So angels sinned. Now, that was a stunner! I thought angels were just perfect and holy and could not sin. But this says that angels DID SIN. Now HOW? What caused them to sin? And where did it all start? Finally I found, if you'll turn back in the Old Testament ... (Now I have to use a different Bible because I have to use a very large print because of my eyes, and a magnifying glass even then.) Back in the 14th chapter of Isaiah and beginning with verse 12, here it speaks of the super archangel called Lucifer, and it says:

*Isaiah 14:12-14 How art thou fallen from heaven O Lucifer, [Now Lucifer is a Hebrew word that means 'one who brings light' or 'shining star of the dawn.' "How art thou cut down to the ground O Lucifer"] son of the morning! [That is the morning star, bringing light.] How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! [Or 'thou who didst weaken the nations cut down to the ground.'] (13) For thou hast said in thine heart I will ascend into heaven, [So he must have been under heaven, to ascend up to heaven.] I will exalt **MY THRONE** [He was on a throne. WHERE was that throne? It wasn't in heaven. Notice it, 'I will exalt my throne'] above the stars of God [And there 'stars' is a symbol of angels.]: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the [far] sides of the north [That is the only place in the Bible where it tells you the location of God's heaven, where God's throne is.]: (14) I will ascend above the heights of the clouds [So his throne must have been on earth, you see.]; I will be like the most High. [Or, 'I will become the most high.']*

He was going to knock God off the throne and take over. That was the

FIRST COUP. HE WAS PUT ON THIS EARTH TO ADMINISTER THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD. He was put on this earth to administer the government of God. Now he became jealous of God, and he said he was going to ascend up to heaven and take over the whole throne of God.

Now next I would like to read Ezekiel 28 where it says about him again; this time he is the one of whom the Prince of Tyre was only a type, and it lifts up to the great anti-type of Satan. And here, beginning with verse 12, it says in the middle of that verse:

Ezekiel 28:12-14 ... Thou [speaking to this same Lucifer, thou] sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. [In other words, the sum total of wisdom and beauty. You could never say that about a human being. So he is not talking here about a human being.] (13) Thou has been in Eden the garden of God ... [And so on] (14) Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth {4} ...

... where God revealed to Moses the throne of God in heaven, and he made an earthly pattern out of matter of that throne. It shows that there were two archangels, or cherubs, whose wings spread out over the very throne of God in heaven; and he was one of those anointed cherubs. So he had been taught in the government of God at the very throne of God in heaven. Now he was set on a throne of his own here.

At Ambassador College we teach and train some future ministers. After we have taught them, we send them out and put them in charge of a local church to administer the government of God there in that local Church. Well, it's the same thing. Lucifer had been instructed on the very throne of God; and now God put him, as we say it down there, out in the field. (Eugene here is up in the field, and Chicago is out in the field and so is New York according to our just ordinary shoptalk down at Pasadena.) So he was, you might say, put out now to represent God and administer God's government

here on the EARTH. Now it says, "thou art the anointed cherub that covereth." Then verse 15:

Ezekiel 28:15 Thou wast PERFECT in thy ways from the day that thou wast CREATED till iniquity was found in thee.

God make him a PERFECT super archangel. Angels have minds, minds much superior to human minds. But **character** is the decision of the mind to go the right way, and to choose that way, and to **will** to go that way even though you might have desires to go the other way – because it's right. He had been taught the right way, but he deliberately willed to go the other way. Now iniquity is lawlessness. In other words, rebellion against **law**. Now why did he do it? Verse 17 shows why.

Ezekiel 28:17 Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness ...

He was so beautiful he was just **BRILLIANT – BRILLIANTLY BRIGHT**, bright like the sun; and that led to **vanity**, self glory, and he wanted to glorify himself. He wanted to go knock God off His throne. He wanted to take over and rule for himself. But he was cast back down to earth, because God was his Creator and God was more powerful. Now he became Satan the Devil. His angels became demons.

But he was on a throne to administer **THE GOVERNMENT ON THIS EARTH**. But, of course, he was put here to administer **GOD'S GOVERNMENT**. He **REJECTED GOD'S GOVERNMENT**, and he chose a government of his own. Now do you know that the government of Satan is operating in this world, and the whole world is following that government and loyal to it? I think you never thought of it this way.

The Bible A Book Of Law

Now let me explain something that perhaps you never thought of before. I spoke not too long ago to the Law School of the University of Southern California, was introduced by the Dean of the School of Law and was introduced then finally by the President of the University who sat there with me. And I mentioned in that little speech ... (That this had been broadcast on the Sunday program on the air. In fact, my speech was put on the air. You may have seen it.) I mentioned that, when I was 5 years old, my father had said that I would be a Philadelphia lawyer when I grew up because I asked so many crazy questions. He got tired of answering them. And I said, in a way that I didn't expect then, that perhaps this prophecy had been fulfilled.

Then I said that I was challenged in 1927 on a point of LAW. (It was the law of God about the Sabbath. I didn't tell them what it was.) And I said, "So I went to a LAW book to study this point of law." Now I said, "The law book I went to is just filled with law from beginning to end. But it is a textbook on law that not many Universities, not many Law Schools, have in their library. You might search and see if you have one here. But I feel sure that most Law Schools don't have this book in their law library, and yet it's a book of LAW. It's a book called **The Holy Bible**. Now you wouldn't think it has anything to say about law, but beginning the very 2nd chapter in the beginning all the way to the last chapter in the bible, it's **LAW, LAW, LAW ALL THE WAY THROUGH.**"

I said, "You may know that the Bible talks about sin; and it says '*sin is the transgression of the LAW.*' It's talking about LAW." Now I said, "I had to learn what LAW is. What do you mean LAW? Let's define it. Here in your Law School you teach law." I said, "Law is merely rules of conduct. It's merely the rules of the way you live – a way of life. The **rules** of an athletic game might well be called the **law** of the game." Now I said, "Here at your University of Southern California is one of the great football schools of the

United States. You often are rated number one in football among all the universities of this nation. You are very strong in track. You are very strong in basketball and in baseball, and you supply many of the players that are players in the major league that are graduates of this university.”

Now I said, “The **rules** of an athletic game could be called the LAWS of the game. You can’t have government without LAW; and there is a law in one form or another on the foundation of EVERY GOVERNMENT, whether it is a municipality of a city, or a state government, the national government or the government of any nation. In the United States the foundation is called the Constitution of the United States; and it’s merely a code of LAW, which cannot be violated. It tells us HOW TO LIVE.” Well, they never thought about that before.

I know there was a woman who had been a lawyer and had been a member of the Supreme Court of the State of California was there; and she came up afterwards and said, “Well, Mr. Armstrong you gave us something to think about.” Well, I guess they just hadn’t thought of it that way. And I might say, incidentally, that later the Dean of the Law School called us up at our offices and said that he had searched; and he said, “What do you think? We did find one Bible in our library.” But he said, “I put in an order now for about a dozen, so we are going to have several Bibles in our Law School from here on.” [Chuckles] Well, maybe I did one bit of good there anyway.

Two Cannot Walk Together

So you see here was one who let **vanity**, and vanity is self-law. Now then, what is the law of God? What is the basis of it? In other words, let’s go back to the origin of it. How did it start? **WHAT IS THE LAW OF GOD, WHY IS IT? HOW DID IT START?** It starts back as you read in John the 1st chapter in the New Testament in the first 4 verses.

John1:1 In the beginning was the Word, [Now who was the Word? Verse 14 says, “The Word was [later] made flesh and dwelt among us ...” and became Jesus Christ. So it was Jesus Christ before He was born.], and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

So He was God even before He was born as a human; and when He was born as a human He was still God in the human flesh, or ‘God with us.’ His name was Immanuel (as you read in the 6th chapter of Isaiah), and Immanuel means ‘God with us.’ He was God in the human flesh. He had lived **forever** with God, and God had lived forever. There never was a time when They didn’t exist. But it says They LIVED, in Them was LIFE. So They lived. HOW did They live? A WAY OF LIFE! HOW DID THEY GET ALONG?

There are two principals enunciated in the Bible. One is: “*Two cannot walk together except they be **agreed**.*” The other is: ONE MUST LEAD THE OTHER. ONE MUST BE THE BOSS. Why do we have trouble between husband and wife? Usually it is because the wife is trying to be the boss and lead. God made the husband to do the leading, but he doesn’t do it; and many a wife says she has to lead because her husband won’t, and that’s not the way it ought to be.

We had a sermon on this very thing the first Sabbath after the new fall session, and College opened and there were many new freshmen there. In that sermon it was said that male students must grow up to be **men** and that men must, if they marry, must rule their **households**. But he said they must **rule** with loving authority, and I like that expression. Not with **harsh** authority. They must dominate but NOT DOMINEER; and they must rule in LOVE, and so that they are **as much** concerned or maybe even more concerned about their wife’s happiness and welfare in every way than they are about their own. They want her to be happy.

They are not ruling for their own **self-** pleasure, but for hers just as

much as their own. But they still should be in **charge**, and they should be in charge over the **children**. Today most men are ABDICATING their AUTHORITY, and many women are having to take over; and more and more WOMEN are trying to take men's JOBS and do the work of MEN. IT OUGHT NOT SO TO BE! And that means the whole country is going **down** and **down**, until it will go OUT.

This country is going to be defeated in WAR, and the United States is going to be BEATEN. I TELL YOU THAT ON THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHRIST. I've told foreign kings that around the world, and they're sort of startled when I say that; but I say it with authority. There is something WRONG with this world. People don't know how to solve their problems. Now there's a way of life, and the only reason the world is in trouble is the way we're LIVING. In other words, we are breaking God's LAW. That's why.

God's Law Or Satan's

Now how did the Word and God live before the Word became Christ? They loved one another. When Jesus was being baptized, God the Father said: "*This is my **BELOVED** Son [He loved Him.] in whom I am well pleased,*" He said. Jesus **loved** the Father. He said, "*I have obeyed my Father.*" "*I have kept my Father's commandments ... think not I have come to destroy the law,*" He said. And so, of course, the churches all think He came to destroy the law, don't they?

If He said, "Do this," people say, "No, we won't." If He said, "Don't do that," they say, "Well, let's do that." They want to do just the **opposite** of what God says. To **BELIEVE** God and **OBEY** God is the **HARDEST THING IN THE WORLD**. PEOPLE DON'T WANT TO DO IT because Satan is putting his ATTITUDE in their minds. That's why.

God's government then is based on His law. His law is the way of love – outgoing concern for the good of others. It's the way of **cooperation**. It's the way though of leadership too; and ONE must LEAD, but He must lead in LOVE and in **loving authority**. We don't have much of that in this world, unfortunately. Now that is God's Word, and in the Church we find that the Church called out of this world is told WE in the Church must ALL SPEAK THE SAME THING. **WE MUST ALL BE AGREED. BUT AGREED IN WHAT? AGREED IN THE WORD OF GOD, IN THE LAW OF GOD, IN THE WAY OF LIFE OF GOD.** WE'RE NOT TO LIVE LIKE THE WORLD LIVES; BUT LIVE AS JESUS DID LIVE; and live as God lives, and as Jesus and God lived together before He even became Jesus.

And that is the Word we must speak, and we must all speak the same thing. The Bible says MARK those that cause divisions among you and **avoid** them, and we are **disobeying God** IF WE DON'T mark those that are trying to cause division. The only two ways we can avoid them: one is we all get out of the Church and leave them in, and the other is to put them out. We sort of prefer to put them out and leave the rest of us in, so that's the way we do it. Now if you think that is wrong, why maybe you'd better leave too; but I'm sure you don't.

Now we come to Satan's law. Satan **disagreed** with God. He disagreed that we must be under authority and that it **must** be the way of kindness and love toward others, and that there must be **submission** to the authority of God and all of us living the same way. Satan came to believe, "I want to go my own way. I don't want to go God's way." And so his way was to teach his angels to go your **own way**. And so finally, God you see ... Go back to Genesis 1:1.

Genesis 1:1, 26 In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.

Genesis 1:26 And **God** said [And the word for ‘God’ is ‘Elohim’ which means **more** than one. It meant God and the Word. God said,] *Let US make man in OUR image ...* [It’s both God and the Word, and man was made in their image, after their likeness physically.]

Man Created Incomplete

Now God had His law, and He began to reveal His law and His way of life to Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. But they were made out of human flesh, out of the ground. Genesis 2 verse 7 says:

Genesis 2:7 *The Eternal {5} God formed man of the dust of the ground [and that’s all he is, just dust] and man [the dust of the ground] became a living soul ...*

So the dust of the ground became a soul, not spirit. The soul wasn’t made from spirit. It was made from **dirt**. That’s all. It’s physical, not spiritual. But Adam was made incomplete. You know, it’s just like a women baking a cake. Maybe it is a two-layered cake, which she bakes in two layers; but it is still not complete. So she puts one on top of the other, and then puts the icing on. Now God hadn’t put the icing on, so to speak. Adam was complete in a sense; but yet he was incomplete because **God wanted him to reproduce** and have children, and the poor man didn’t know how to do it. He was just a man, and all by himself he couldn’t have children. I don’t think you’ve ever seen a man yet that could do it. And so God gave him an anesthesia – put him into a deep sleep, it says in the Bible; and God took out one of his ribs. He didn’t even feel it. God made a woman out of that rib, and presented the woman to him; and now he was **PHYSICALLY COMPLETE**, but he still was not **SPIRITUALLY** and **MENTALLY** complete.

Now he had a **MIND**, and a mind is the physical brain; and his brain is no better than a cow’s brain, or an elephant’s brain, or a chimpanzee’s brain.

But they can't **think**, they can't **reason**, they can't make decisions, they can't plan and design; and man's brain can. WHY? Because God put a SPIRIT in man! Now man is not made out of spirit. He is made out of the dust of the ground. But the dust of the ground, **the soul, had a spirit put into it in its brain**, in its **mind**. And that **spirit empowers the brain** to think, to reason, to appreciate such things as music and art and literature. Animals don't. And to have **attitude** of either love and cooperation, or attitude of envy and jealousy and **antagonism** and controversy and competition, leading to violence and destruction. Now Satan had turned to that, and he had become perverted in his mind and his thinking; and he is a spirit being.

God's purpose now was to **reproduce Himself**. You find that in the 8th chapter of Romans where it says that "*Jesus Christ was the firstborn of many brethren.*" I mentioned this last Wednesday night, the beginning of the Festival; and you saw it on the screen of how God made us [{6}](#) to have character. We have to make a **choice**, and it's a matter of **attitude**. Are we going to have hostility towards others? Are we going to be filled with vanity? Satan was filled with vanity, and vanity means 'I want to glorify **myself**.'

Attitude Of Vanity

You know, we've had this matter come up in the Church now, within the last year or two about. We settled the matter of men smoking several years ago; and now we've had to get to the matter of women painting their face, makeup. If there were no mirrors, no woman would ever pain their face. And I think if mother Eve had had a looking glass or a mirror, she would have started it right then. She didn't start it. It was the **harlots** that started it later on; and I find now that in ancient Israel they regarded painting the face as HARLOTRY, and only a harlot ever did it. That's the way they considered it in ancient Israel.

But women do it to glorify themselves, and because they want to be like the world, and because they're afraid the world and other women are going to scorn them if they aren't like other women and don't paint up like other women do. **IT'S ONLY VANITY, AND YOU WOMEN ALL KNOW THAT; AND IF YOU DENY IT YOU DON'T EVEN KNOW YOUR OWN MIND.** And if I am God's apostle, brethren, you'd better listen because I speak the truth and I speak it in the name of Jesus Christ and by His authority!

Now Satan's idea was every man for himself. "I'm for myself." Vanity means, "I'm above everybody else." That means then that I look down on others. I'm against others. I choose me instead of them. I love **me**. You know, I often repeat this old song they had when we came out to Oregon in 1924 and when we came from Iowa. When we arrived out in Oregon, there was a popular song quite popular at that time. It was, "I love me, OH, I LOVE ME. I'M WILD ABOUT MYSELF. I PUT MY ARMS AROUND MYSELF AND GIVE MYSELF A SQUEEZE. I'LL MARRY ME SOME DAY. OH, I LOVE ME; but I don't care about anybody else."

Now that is Satan; and Satan says, "Every man for himself." If every man goes for himself, one man wants to go one way, another wants to go another, and another another way, and another another way; and all you have it confusion, and finally you have anarchy. That's what it leads to, finally to anarchy; and this world is getting very close to that now. It's getting more and more that way. Every group wants to go the way of that group against other groups. Every person wants to go the way of that person.

NOW, SATAN HAS A LAW; and HE CHANGED THE GOVERNMENT he's enforcing on the **THRONE OF THIS EARTH to EVERY MAN FOR HIMSELF – SELFISHNESS, SELF-GLORY;** and that means envy and jealousy toward others. "Well, I'm for me, I'm not for anybody else." That is Satan's **LAW, AND THAT IS THE LAW AND THE**

WAY OF THIS WORLD. Jesus Christ came to teach just the **OPPOSITE** way, of **LOVE** toward others. Don't have jealousy and animosity against others. Have love towards them. Be kind.

Pray For Our Enemies

I have said often lately, Jesus taught us to pray for our enemies; and I pray for my enemies first before I pray for you people because you don't need it so badly. My enemies need it. I **LOVE** my enemies. I don't want to have to see them go into a Lake of Fire. I don't want to see them have to suffer. I pray that **GOD** will do **SOMETHING** to **GET HOLD** of them and **WAKE THEM UP AND MAKE THEM SEE HOW WRONG THEY ARE AND THAT THEY ARE GOING THE WRONG DIRECTION SO THAT THEY WILL TURN AROUND AND GO **GOD'S WAY**** so they don't have to reap what they're sowing; and that's what they are going to do.

Brethren, that's the love that can come only from God. I didn't used to have that kind of love. I do now. I love my enemies. I have enemies that, well, I hate to use that word but I could say that they hate my guts. But they do. They would kill me if they thought they could get away with it.

So Satan has his government, and he is **RULING THE WORLD** with **HIS GOVERNMENT**.

Now the **LAW OF GOD** is the law of the **GOVERNMENT OF GOD**. **AND THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS THE FAMILY OF GOD** into which **WE MAY BE BORN WHEN WE BECOME GOD LIKE HE IS, HIS CHILDREN**. Jesus is not ashamed to call us "brethren." We can call Him "Brother Jesus," and Jesus calls us "brother so-and-so" or "sister so-and-so." He may not just come out with those words all the time, but then that's in His heart. That's in His mind and His thinking.

So God offered life to the first man, Adam, but that life would come with God's Spirit. And God's law is love, and love is the fulfilling of God's law. But it takes a **divine** love to FULFILL it. Now HUMAN love won't do it. Human love, well, it can be pretty good. You see what Adam chose was the Tree of the knowledge of **good** as well as evil; and man has an idea of good, and he has his ethic. He wants to be thought of as important, and so he wants other people to think he is good.

I guess the highest form of love that is normal and human is MOTHER love, the way a mother loves her baby. But, you know, she doesn't love other babies like that. She loves it because that one is HERS. That baby came out of **her**, and she loves that baby because it belongs to HER. She doesn't love others that way. She won't pray for her enemy necessarily, not unless she is a Christian.

How Satan Kidnapped The World

So God offered life. But Adam took to himself. Now, notice what he took. Eve strayed away; and Adam wasn't on the job like he should have been, in loving authority over his wife. He wasn't looking after her, and he let her slip away and get outside where she met SATAN. SATAN didn't say, "Now look here Eve, I want you to come to my government. I want you to accept me as your god, and I want you to go my way." He didn't say ANYTHING LIKE that! He said, "Look Eve, you do the thing that looks right to you. You go your own way. Now, you just look at that forbidden fruit. God wasn't fair. See, God held that back. He was sort of stingy. He didn't give you everything, did He? He held that back. He is cheating you. Just look how beautiful that is. That's good for food; and it will make you WISE, and **you'll** be like God knowing good and evil."

You know, she was deceived. It **did** look good; and she began to **covet**

that Tree, so she reached out and **took it** even though she knew God said, “Don’t.” She gave it to her husband. He wasn’t deceived; but he took it, and went right along with her. Instead of being a man and ruling his wife in loving authority and telling her, “No, you shouldn’t have taken that, Eve; and you must not take it.” He let her take it, and he took it **WITH HER**; and he **SINNED**. So God **CLOSED UP THE TREE OF LIFE**, which is the Holy Spirit, until Christ, the 2nd Adam, would come.

Now a **WORLD DEVELOPED**; and Satan, **RIGHT AT THAT TIME**, **KIDNAPPED** ALL HUMANITY BECAUSE ALL HUMANITY HAS BEEN BORN FROM ADAM AND EVE. YOU AND I ALL CAME FROM ADAM AND EVE. They began to have children; and their children had children; and their children had children and kept enlarging and growing and multiplying until there are about 4 1/3 or 4 1/2; billion of us today on earth.

Satan **kidnapped** us; and Christ had to come and pay the **RANSOM PRICE** to bring us back to God, because Satan had kidnapped us away from God. Here is what happened: (Now think of this, and maybe you never thought of it this way before.) The **WORLD** that has been **KIDNAPPED**, instead of **WANTING** to get back to its Maker, wants to stay with the kidnapper; and the world wants God to keep His nose out of their affairs. It says, “I like the idea of going my own way and doing my own thing.” That is the **LAW OF THIS WORLD. THAT IS SATAN’S LAW**, and he sits on the **THRONE OF THE WORLD. HE IS A KING OF KINGS AND A LORD OF LORDS. HE’S THE GOD OF THIS WORLD**. I read that to you, II Corinthians 4:4{7}.

So Satan deceived the world to go the way of self. The Holy Spirit was closed until Christ should come, and Jesus Christ was the 2nd Adam. Now He came as an **ADAM** to start **GOD’S** world. The 1st Adam was used by Satan to start **SATAN’S** world, and this was **Satan’s** world. Jesus came to start **GOD’S** world, **another world**; and He started it with the one man,

Jesus. Jesus called TWELVE and began to say, “*Come out of the world and be separate.*” Others began to follow Him; and, of those who began to follow Him, very soon many of them began to turn away. He said to His disciples, “Will you desert Me and will you turn away also?”

Some people say, “Mr. Armstrong you started a Church here.” No, I didn’t. God did it. He just used me a little bit. But they say, “You’re all wrong. Look how many people have gone out of the Church.” Yes, I know; they sure have. Of course, it is only a comparatively small percent; but, nevertheless, it’s several hundred. As a matter of fact, probably by now even a few thousand. But it’s only a few thousand, and there are a hundred thousand of us that are still here.

So **Christ** is **wrong** and they were **RIGHT**? Oh, no. So some of those that are **SOUR** and **EMBITTERED**, they have **GONE OUT** of the Church. One man wrote me recently. He said, “Mr. Armstrong,” he said “Christians have **GONE OUT**; and you’ve got people in the Church that are **NOT** Christians, and they are the **RIGHT** ones (the ones that went **OUT**).” Well, he needs to have his head examined because I find he was sent out to be Pastor of a Church, and he’d been misleading them. We’ve just found it out, and within the last 10 days he’s had to be **put out**. God says **MARK THOSE THAT CAUSE DIVISION AND OFFENSES CONTRARY TO THE WORD OF GOD. MARK THEM AND GET RID OF THEM.** But we didn’t have to get rid of this man. He got rid of himself. He put himself out.

Church Subject To Government

But Jesus came and said, “**I WILL BUILD MY CHURCH.**” I asked at the beginning of this sermon **WHY SHOULD THERE BE A CHURCH? WHY?** God had to start another world, and the Church is the beginning of **GOD’S WORLD.** We are just the embryo, beginning. You know, Jesus used

the parable of the grain of mustard seed. That's the smallest of all, but it finally becomes the biggest and will fill the whole earth.

The Church started with one man – Jesus, the 2nd Adam. But this 2nd Adam took the Holy Spirit and obeyed God, instead of disobeying like the 1st Adam did. The 2nd Adam then began to teach others to follow that same way. One **went out**. He got put out. Jesus said to him, He knew what was on his mind, what he was going to do; and Jesus said at that last supper, “*What you do, do quickly.*” So he got up and went out, and he was gone. Others left Jesus while He was still on earth. And then what did they do? They began to try to kill the apostles, and most of the apostles were **martyred** and put to DEATH.

WHY DID THEY PUT JESUS TO DEATH? BECAUSE OF WHAT HE PREACHED, BECAUSE OF THE GOSPEL – BECAUSE OF WHAT HE PREACHED, THE WAY OF GOD. THEY DIDN'T WANT IT. THEY WANTED TO STAY KIDNAPPED. THEY WANTED TO STAY CHILDREN OF SATAN. You look in the 8th chapter of the book of John beginning with verse 30. The book of John the 8th chapter beginning with verse 30, now read on several verses and you'll find there He's speaking of many Jews that **BELIEVED** on Christ. And of those Jews who BELIEVED on Him, He said, “*You are [the children] of your father [Satan] the devil*” and his work you will do. “**YOU DON'T BELIEVE ME. YOU DON'T BELIEVE WHAT I SAY.**” It seems that people don't want to believe what Jesus **SAYS**. This Bible is just what He says. It is His Word, and they don't want to believe it.

Jesus came to CALL people **OUT OF THIS WORLD** – to surrender to God and to **GOD'S WAY OF LIFE, AND TO GOD'S LAW**, which means **THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD**. Be no part of this world. We have to live in it. We have to be subject to the authorities that are over us, which means ultimately even subject to Satan; but that doesn't mean obey him. It means

just be subject. When you have to disobey in order to obey God, then you're subject to whatever penalty the law puts on you.

Now let's take the early apostles. The apostle Paul wrote many of his books while he was put in prison. So he was being subject to the government. **THEY WERE WRONG;** but he was subject to them, and he subjected himself to be put in prison [{8}](#).

Character, spiritual character, must be formed in us; and then, by a resurrection from the dead, we can be made "*what we shall be,*" wholly spirit – if we receive God's Spirit, if we grow in grace and knowledge, if we continue to obey and be doers and not only hearers of God's will and God's law, and if we endure unto the end. We shall be beautiful.

CREATION NOT YET COMPLETE

Angel creation was dual. It, of necessity, had to be, because angels we think of as being holy and righteous; but in II Peter 2 and verse 4 we read; "*For if God spared not the angels that SINNED ...*" You know, that ought to stagger anyone to read that – that angels sinned. What? Holy, righteous angels? They sinned. How could they sin? If God had made them holy and righteous to begin with, and their creation was complete, they had to stay the way they were made. They couldn't change, because spirit does not change. But they did change some way. They became sinners.

Now we read back here in the 28th chapter of Ezekiel [{9}](#), speaking of Lucifer, who became Satan the Devil. In verse 14; "*thou art the anointed cherub that covereth.*" He had been on the very throne of God in heaven. He had known the way of God. He knew the government of God. He had been there observing and having a part in the administration of the government of God at the throne of the whole universe. And then God had put him on the earth. And then verse 15:

*Ezekiel 28:15 Thou was **perfect** in thy ways from the day that thou was created **till iniquity** was found in thee.*

That can mean ONE THING ONLY! SINCE SPIRIT DOES NOT CHANGE, it can mean only one thing: that when God first created **Lucifer** and his angels, their creation was not completed. He created them in dual stages. The icing on the cake had not been put on. CHARACTER had not been formed in them. Of necessity, it COULD NOT have been formed in them because CHARACTER is the ability of a SEPARATE ENTITY WITH FREE MORAL AGENCY TO MAKE UP ITS OWN DECISIONS, INDEPENDENT OF GOD. In others words, a separate entity that becomes perfected and completed has **a part in its own creation**.

Now you and I have a part in our creation as we ultimately are to become, brethren. We have a great part in it! But don't forget that we are a work of God's hands. His creation is going on in us, but we have OUR PART in it; and yet the **character** that is to come into us comes from God. It's **God's character**, which must come into us. But it must come with **our** consent, with our desire, with our will and willingness; and we have to will ourselves and have the WILLPOWER to go that way and go that way **constantly**. That's why we were PUT HERE. That's the purpose of life.

Now angels had minds; but angel creation could not be complete, since they were to have CHARACTER, until the CHARACTER had been formed in them. So angels were made out of spirit, but UNFINISHED. They were given minds. They were given free moral agency. They could have knowledge. They could weigh it. They could think about it, because they had **independent** minds. Each angel had an independent mind all his own, just as you and I have. But angels finally had sinned. They made the wrong decision.

Now you explain that from Ezekiel 28 where he was put; because God formed him, but it's like the cake is perfect but it isn't finished till the icing

was put on it. Now let's get that: "...till iniquity was found in thee." Now that iniquity didn't come from God. GOD DIDN'T CREATE THAT IN HIM. But God **CAN'T** CREATE PERFECT CHARACTER BY FIAT. THE INDEPENDENT ENTITY, the CREATED entity, HAS to make a decision and have its own part in that creation and in that decision; or there can be no character. Now in verse 17:

Ezekiel 28:17 Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty; thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness:

God made him so beautiful it went to his head. You know I think so many humans, they suddenly are promoted and they get a higher office in the Work of God. It goes to their head. Do you know that **half** of those that have been raised and elevated to the highest rank in God's church (to that of Evangelist), half of them have either been put out or gone out of God's Church. They couldn't take it. They didn't endure to the end. In fact, I think some of them have never admitted they were wrong in the first place. Of course, God knows. I don't.

But the very fact of what you read here in Ezekiel 28 means God had NOT completed the creation of the angels until **THEY THEMSELVES** had decided. And this Lucifer let this brightness go to his head. He let envy and jealousy come into him. All of his angels followed him, and that was a third of the angels. Now they didn't each one independently think of it, because we find, that when he had turned, that Lucifer became Satan; and Satan is a deceiver. He deceives all of the world. Well, he deceives his own angels; and I feel he could not have done that just in one 24-hour day. He is very cunning, very subtle. So he came to them as an angel of light, as he always pretends to be. Little by little, he got them to thinking that maybe God wasn't quite fair.

God had given Lucifer and his angels only this little earth down here, and the whole universe is a pretty big place. Even in our own solar system,

look at the larger planets: Jupiter, Saturn, other planets bigger than the earth and a lot of other planets. God was still ruling all of that and all of the other galaxies, millions and millions of times more of them. And the very fact that he said to Eve, “Didn’t God holds something back? He didn’t give you all of the trees in the garden, did He?” Well, you see, he had been using that same psychology on his angels. “God didn’t give you everything. He held something back.” He got them to be a little bit envious, a little bit jealous, and finally a little resentful – until they turned against God and were willing to be formed into an army to swoop up into heaven and try a coup and take over the throne of the whole universe from God and rule the whole universe. But they got cast back down to earth; and Lucifer became Satan the Devil, and his angels became demons.

Now, they are immortal. Once their character was complete (and they had to have their part in it) – and once they had made **their** part of the **decision**, their character was **complete**; and once their character was complete ... Well, I tell you what it makes me think of: It’s like our pouring cement. At first it is sort of unfinished; and when we pour it, it is fairly thick but it is still somewhat liquid and men can walk down in it and it splashes around. But, in a few hours, it hardens. It dries and hardens. And once it hardens it becomes very hard. Maybe it is not permanent. Over enough thousands of years cement wears. But, for the time being, it is very hard.

Now once angels made their DECISION, once the creation was COMPLETE, THEY ARE **SPIRIT** AND THEIR SPIRIT IS **COMPLETE**, THEY ARE COMPLETED spirits and they CANNOT CHANGE. SATAN CAN **NEVER** CHANGE. God can’t be born as an angel and redeem the angels and redeem Satan. If He can, it is certainly not revealed at any place I’ve found in the Bible. And apparently they are going to have to go on in their own wretched mind that they have set themselves to – that they have chosen of their own free will, knowing the other side and knowing better.

Now they had never sinned in the first place. They just **went** into sin deliberately, and they knew. They had great minds, and they had the knowledge. How long they had existed before they sinned, we aren't told; but apparently it was a long, long time.

God Then Formed Man

Now then, after they had sinned, God formed man after His own image. But how did He form man? Go back again to Genesis and in verse 26.

***Genesis 1:26** God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.*

But what did He form man of? Not spirit, like angels. Verse 7, chapter 2, just across the page in my Bible:

***Genesis 2:7** And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground [not out of spirit like He had angels, but the dust of the ground] and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life and man [the dust of the ground] became a living soul.*

Now there is **living** matter, but that doesn't mean that it is permanent like spirit. It's only temporary, and he became a temporary living piece of matter. He became a living soul. But a soul is **material**. It came out of the of the ground, and it is not spiritual. It is not eternal. And God said to that soul, "If you take of the wrong fruit instead of taking of the tree of REVEALED knowledge and of the love of God that will give you the love to fulfill the law which He will reveal ..."

Then he would become immortal; but he was not made immortal. He was made ... Again, his creation was complete **physically**; but his creation was complete **only** physically. Now physically he was made incomplete though at the start. Let me go back on that. God's purpose was for him to

“multiply and replenish the earth.” In other words, to reproduce. But the man alone could not reproduce. I’ve mentioned this a number of times. So God had to take a rib from him and make a woman, and now he was complete.

The two became one. They became **one flesh**, and they could reproduce; and they did. They had a son. His name was Cain. They reproduced again and had another son. His name was Abel. But they hadn’t followed God’s way. They didn’t follow God’s law. They didn’t teach Cain God’s law or God’s way. So Cain became the first murderer and perhaps the first human liar, although Satan gave the first lie.

They were also **mentally incomplete**, and they were **spiritually incomplete**. God gave them a mind that animals do not have. In order to do that, God put one spirit – a human spirit – in Adam. And God so formed Adam that, in every human born, a human spirit would come in to that human. Now that spirit is no part of the human. It is just something in him, that leads him at best; and it is something that imparts the power of intellect to a physical brain. The human physical brain is no better than an animal’s brain; but it can do a lot things an animal can’t because of that spirit that is there.

But mentally it is only half there. It has only ONE spirit; and to have a full mind it needs another spirit, the Holy Spirit of God. It can’t receive SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE, so it was spiritually incomplete too. It had one spirit all right, and that gave it spirit so the spirit in it could come to have spiritual attitude of malice, of resentment, of hatred, of competition and strife, of rebellion, of vanity, of greed, lust. Oh, it’s going to have all of that; but it, of itself, does not know how to have godly love. It does not know how to have love toward others.

So that gets into the Two Trees, which I have spoken on so much now (for about a year and a half). Now one of those Trees meant **God revealed**

knowledge and attitude; and, of course, if he took of that that was the Tree of Life. That would give him GOD LIFE, and even that God life would come in the dual stages: First in this life with the Holy Spirit, and secondly through a resurrection he would become a complete spirit being.

Now then, the second Tree was a tree of **self-devised** knowledge and attitude. Now God made him and created him with ability to deal with matter, as I've said so many times, with material things. But also he had the ability to come to a certain spiritual attitude; but not the attitude of God's love because it takes the "*love of God spread abroad in or hearts*" to pour out from us in that kind of love, and Adam was not made with that. So he was made **incomplete**. Again, God starts his creation incomplete; and it has to be finished later, as he goes along.

Man Made Mortal

Now, why did God make him mortal? Why did He make him of matter instead of spirit? Well, if man chose the wrong way, if he did the wrong way, he could change, he could repent. Matter can CHANGE. Matter is **always changing anyway**. Spirit cannot. Once the angels made the wrong choice and their creation was **complete**, they can never change. They are always going to be evil forever, and they have immortality and will exist forever.

With Adam, it is just as if He had asked, "Adam, would you like to take over the rulership of this whole universe?" And he could have taken it over from Satan, but he made the wrong decision. He made a decision just like Satan had made; but the decision man made can be changed – because he is mortal, because he is made out of **matter**.

Now then, at the time Adam made that decision, four things happened. I've taken a lot of time to go over these four things. I'll just mention it real quickly. At that time, as you read in Revelation 13:8, Christ, as the Lamb of

God, it was decreed then and arranged in God's plan that He would be slain in due time. "The Lamb of God slain from the foundation of the world." The foundation of the world began when Adam made that decision.

It was also decreed at that time, and God decreed it, that it was appointed that man then should **die**; but after that the judgment, and that there should be a resurrection. God ordained that man, if he made this mistake, everyone who ever had lived was going to be resurrected. Or, as you read in I Corinthians 15 beginning with verse 22:

*I Corinthians 15:22-23 ... as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all [the same ALL] be made **alive**. (23) But every man in his own order ... [Now Christ became human; and He was the first to be resurrected immortal, 1951 years ago.] ... afterward they that ARE Christ's [I hope that includes us, brethren.] at Christ's [{10}](#) coming*

And then after that two more resurrections are to come, as you read in the 20th chapter of Revelation. Then another thing happens, you read in Genesis [{11}](#) 3 verses 22 to 24; God closed the Holy Spirit so man can't, just of his own accord, go in and take the Holy Spirit, not unless God decides to give it to him.

Conditions Of The Pre-Flood World

Now then, that founded this world under those conditions; and this world was founded. It started. As I say, the first son born killed his own brother and then lied to God about it; and man started out in violence. Now notice how things continued from then, chapter 6 in Genesis.

Genesis 6:1, 5-6, 11-12 And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them [Skip down to verse 5.] (5) And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in

*the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. (6) And it repented the Lord {12} that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. [Then we read further in verse 11.] (11) The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. (12) And God looked upon the earth and behold it was corrupt; for **all flesh** [all flesh] had corrupted his way upon the earth.*

Now God had given men a temporary existence, and up to that time they were living about 900 years of life. God found Noah. Noah found favor in God's sight, and he was perfect in his physical generations; and God chose Noah to save humanity alive.

So why did God kill all of those people? I want to come on a little further before I answer that question. Man's temporary existence was cut off – all of them, as I say, except 8 people – and started a world all over again. Why did God allow carnal life for the six thousand years? Why didn't God cut human life off at the time of Adam? Why has He allowed carnal people to go on, and yet the Holy Spirit cut off from them so they CAN'T BE CONVERTED? GOD'S PURPOSE IS THE CREATION OF CHARACTER. GOD'S PURPOSE IS TO REPRODUCE HIMSELF OUT OF US, OUT OF MAN. WHY DID HE ALLOW PEOPLE TO GO ON AND **NO** SALVATION WAS OFFERED TO THEM?

I think my own experience shows a little of the reason. I've thought about that a great deal, brethren. Why did God allow people, and give them no chance of salvation? What has that got to do? What is human life through these six thousand years up to now? What has that had to do with creating righteous, holy, perfect spiritual character within us?

I look back at my own experience. It came to me one night just as I was preparing for bed and for sleep. I was thinking on these things, and I began to think that God was somehow dealing into my life and with me before my

conversion. Now my conversion didn't take place until I was 34 years of age. I had been what I thought was quite successful in this world, and then God had taken every bit of that away from me. God had caused, in the flash depression of 1920, my clients from whom all of my income derived to go into receivership; and those who had any money invested lost what they had and all of the officers of the company were removed.

Now that included the Goodyear Tire and Rubber Company; that included the JIP Plough Works; that included John Deere and Company – they were my clients. The name went on. The companies still exist today. But I went down and lost everything at the same time those big corporations did because my income came from them. But, you know, I have thought many times that the EXPERIENCE that I had in those years prior to age 34 when God struck me down into poverty after I had been successful, I{13}...

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong said "weekly" new moons but meant "monthly."

[{2}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said chapter 3 instead of chapter 2.

[{3}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said chapter 3 instead of chapter 2.

[{4}](#) - [***55:30 Tape skips at this point, and some words are missing.*]

[{5}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong uses "the Eternal" where the original reads "the Lord."

[{6}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong had to collect his thoughts here a moment and then continued.

[{7}](#) - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong originally said "Ephesians" but corrected

it to II Corinthians.

{8} - [******There seems to be a gap at 1:33:51.]

{9} - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said 28th chapter of Hebrews but meant Ezekiel.

{10} - Editor's Note: The original says "at His coming."

{11} - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong said "Revelation" here but was referring to Genesis.

{12} - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong used the word "God" but the original says "the Lord."

{13} - [****** 1:58:34 *Tape unfortunately ends at this point.*]

Kidnapped

Sermon (September 29, 1983) – given Last Great Day
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Kidnapped.....	1599	Satan, The Kidnapper	1614
Spring Holy Days	1600	Foundation Of This World	1616
Fall Holy Days	1601	Purpose Of Christ's Coming	1618
Trunk Of The Tree	1603	Pouring Out Of God's Spirit	1619
Just The Two	1605	Preparing The Way	1621
Law And Government	1607	Restoration Of All Things	1623
Creation Of Mankind	1610	The Judgment Process	1625
Satan Tempts Eve	1611	Valley Of Dry Bones	1627
Developing Godly Character	1613		

Well, brethren, what a wonderful and rare thing it is to be able to have the modern facilities we do. I wonder what the early apostles and the early church of the first century would think if they could see the types of facilities, the technology that has been developed, and the things that we have today to get the gospel around the world, to speak to the brethren all over the world at one and the same time.

All over the United States and Canada here, we were all singing the same hymn at the same time. Now it was twelve noon in Alaska and in Hawaii, and yet they were singing with us. It was four o'clock in the afternoon on the east coast, and all of our brethren there at four o'clock in the afternoon were singing that same hymn right along with us at the same time. Unfortunately, it's nine o'clock tonight in Britain and in Europe. It was recorded over there, but they will be hearing it next Sabbath. That will just be day after tomorrow in this particular case.

For eight days we've been enjoying the Feast of Tabernacles. That festival is over, but today is the Last Day, the last festival. This is the last

sermon of the last festival of this year, the year 1983. We've been going through the festivals all this year (the Passover in the spring), and these festivals picture God's Master Plan of carrying out His purpose here on earth. God Himself is tremendously interested in what is going on here.

He is with us here right now. His eyes are here—not on what the nations are doing; because the nations are the nations of a certain government, with one sitting on the throne as the “king of kings and lord of lords,” believe it or not. But it is not God. It is the god of this world, Satan the devil. He would do anything he could to disrupt this service. He would do anything he could to spoil everything we do. He HATES this Church; and his people, under his government, hate this Church. But, you know, pretty soon he isn't going to be around.

Spring Holy Days

Well, last spring we celebrated the beginning of God's spiritual harvest. Now God's whole Master Plan is set out in two, you might say, two segments or divisions. One was the physical division. That started with the human, Adam, about 6,000 years ago. But Adam sold out to Satan the devil.

Satan has a law. I'm going to explain that as we go along. He has a government; and, you know, no government can function without a law. Every government is based on a **law** of some type. For example, the United States government is based on a law that we call the Constitution of the United States. In Japan, it is the Diet. In Israel, it is the Knesset. In Britain, it is the Parliament. But in every case it is a basic law-making body or a basic constitution of some kind (because I just mentioned the law-making bodies). Yet they are all based on a basic constitution of some sort. Otherwise, there would be no government.

Then the Days of Unleavened Bread: The crucified Christ was pictured

by the Passover. That was the very beginning of [1](#) God's **spiritual** plan. (I'm going to cover it all just a little later.) Then in the spring came the Day of Pentecost—the coming of the Holy Spirit, because we try to put sin out of our lives; and, brethren, we are just not able. Every one of you listening to me now has committed sin, and not only before but even after you have been converted and received the Holy Spirit of God—believe it or not.

In I John, we read that if anyone says (and that's speaking to those that are converted, in the Church); and if anyone says that he has not sinned, he just is mistaken and doesn't know what he's saying. But:

I John 1:11 IF we confess our sins [and if we repent of them], he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleans us from all unrighteousness.

We can come out of it. We don't need to continue on in that type of life any longer. You know, the majority of people in the world are blinded to that; and the god of this world has blinded them, as you will read in II Corinthians 4:3-4. The world is blinded, and they just can't see.

I wish that all could have heard a sermon that we heard here yesterday, on eyesight. I was especially concerned because my eyesight is growing dimmer, and it is a very great handicap. But there are two kinds of eyesight—physical eyesight and spiritual eyesight. I am so grateful to God that my spiritual eyesight is still very good, although my physical eyesight is becoming very dim indeed.

Fall Holy Days

Now we just celebrated the Feast of Tabernacles, which pictures the Millennium. About fifteen days ago... Well, it's a little more than that now—21 days ago, we celebrated the Feast of Trumpets that pictures the second

coming of Christ. He's coming to rule and take over the throne of the earth as the King of kings and the Lord of lords.

Then on the tenth day of this seventh month of God's calendar; and just now (Let's see, there are {2} seven days in a week.) twelve days ago, we celebrated the Day of Atonement—where Satan will be put away. We will be made at-one with God. At-one-ment, or Atonement.

Then came the Feast of Tabernacles—the thousand years reign with Christ after He comes. Satan will be put away, and we'll begin to have peace in the world. Now peace isn't going to come immediately at the beginning of the Millennium. I wonder if you all realize that? It is going to take time. It will take two or three generations, because the world will have to be **re-educated**. And there's one thing, as an educator—having started three colleges (or been used of God in starting them)—I have learned that it is about ten times harder to unlearn error and false beliefs than it is to learn something new you never knew before. This world is going to have to go through a period of unlearning, of getting rid of false conceptions, of false ideas, of false philosophies, of false concepts of life and what it means and what life is all about.

But gradually—with Christ ruling, and those of this congregation listening to me now, and those who've gone before and have died... Yet, when He comes, they will be resurrected and will rise first; and we, which remain, will be changed in an instant (quicker than you can bat an eye). This mortal will put on immortality. We'll be changed from human to divine; and we will rule with Him.

We'll be caught up in the air to meet Christ. Why will we be caught up in the air? We're not going to heaven. He's not coming to meet us as we're on the way to heaven. Rather, He's coming back to the earth, and we are going to rise to meet Him as He's coming down. We are going to come on back

down with Him, and be forever with Him; and we'll all come down on the Mount of Olives.

Now, we are scattered all over this earth, and my voice now...some will hear it tomorrow or on the Sabbath day, a day later or two days later in your part of the country. Incidentally, in Australia and New Zealand and that part of the world it is already 'tomorrow,' believe it or not. It's already tomorrow morning over there; because we're living on a round earth, and we **keep time as time comes to us.**

You know, we don't keep the Sabbath day at exactly the same time that they do in Australia or New Zealand. It comes to them first. We live on a round earth, and time is measured by the earth turning on its axis and by the sun as it reflects on the earth. We keep the day when the day comes to us.

But even though we have now celebrated the Millennium and the Feast of Tabernacles picturing 1,000 years with Satan gone and Jesus Christ here sitting on the throne of the earth and ruling all people, that is not going to be the end. Satan will have been imprisoned. That's true. But Satan will then be loosed for a little season; and he's going to go out to deceive the nations, and he will deceive them (as you read beginning the 7th verse of Revelation the 20th chapter).

Now the Millennium didn't picture either the beginning or the ending of God's purpose and His Master Plan for accomplishing that. The Passover began it, and today we picture that event that will end it. So today I want to cover both the beginning and the ending briefly so that we get the background and that we understand.

Trunk Of The Tree

It has been my custom recently to stick pretty closely to the trunk of the

tree and the roots that bear the trunk. You know, God's whole purpose (and His whole Master Plan of working it out) might very well be pictured as a large tree. It is supported by the root structure, and all of the branches are supported by the trunk. Then many branches, and then there are smaller branches off of those branches, and finally little twigs off of the small branches. But they are all part of the one and same trunk, and they all come from the root structure. The tree gains its life through the root structure, out of the ground.

But I am so happy to notice that the ministers now are speaking of the many little branches, the smaller branches, and sometimes the twigs; but they bring in the details. I just give you the general outline, the general overall purpose—so that we understand where all of these smaller branches of God's plan fit in, and how they do. But God's Church is now getting back on the track. Thank God for that! And we have peace among ourselves such as we have never had since this Church was started.

Now today I want to cover both the beginning and the ending in brief outline form. To begin, we begin way back where there were just two personages—two individual personages. One was God; and the other was called the Word, or the Logos in the language [{3}](#) in which the New Testament was written (the Greek language). It means Spokesman. It means Word or Spokesman.

John 1:14 *And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us [and became Jesus Christ.]*

So in the beginning was God and this Word; and the Word is the one who later (after perhaps billions and trillions times millions of years) became Jesus Christ. Now God and the Word had ALWAYS EXISTED. Your mind can't conceive that. I can't. You can't conceive the one who had always existed, never was a beginning.

Hebrews 7:3 Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life” [as we read in the book of Hebrews].

Just The Two

But They began, just the Two. There was no earth. There was no sun and moon. There were no stars. There was no universe. Just those Two! Now They LIVED. **In Them was Life**, and so They lived. Now let me go through this very rapidly. How did They live? Why did They live? What did They do? If They lived, They had to be doing something. What did They do, and how did They live?

Well, what They did: They were **Creators**. They created angels first and angels are composed of spirit. They are spirit beings, not of matter at all. And there was not yet an earth. There was not yet a sun. There were no planets, no Milky Way, no galaxies. Nothing! Just spirit beings. So first They created just the angels.

But They lived together. Now how did They live? (I want to go to that first, before I go on to what They created.) They lived **the way of love**. God loved the Word. The Word, who became Jesus Christ, loved God. They cared about one another. They were concerned about one another.

When Jesus was on earth and being baptized (about age 30), God spoke from heaven and said, “*You are My BELOVED Son.*” He loved the Son, in whom He was well pleased. Jesus loved the Father, and They loved one another. Their way of life, then—Their life style, if you please (People are interested in life style today.)—God’s life style was that of love. Love meant cooperation. It meant serving. It meant helping. It meant being concerned about one another and the welfare of the other. It meant caring, and that is the way They lived.

Now, in the Bible—which is the Word of God and the foundation of all truth—it says two cannot walk together except they be agreed; and that is true. You can't. You can't get along with someone that is just hostile and disagrees with you in everything. But there is another thing too about two getting along together. Two cannot go along together except one is **the leader**. One has to be the boss.

The young woman, I've said many times, who says "I don't want any promise to obey in my marriage ceremony" means "I'm going to be the boss." She will say, "I want to live 50-50. We're going to have a 50-50 marriage." Oh, no, they're not! There is no such thing.

If the man does not have the authority that God gave him...and it should be (as one of our ministers said here, in a sermon at the opening of the college year: it should be) **loving authority**—the kind of authority that cares about his wife. It is concern for her good, and her welfare, and her happiness just as much (and sometimes perhaps even a little more than) his own. That's the kind of authority he should have—that that is kind, considerate, patient, and all of those things.

That is the way it was between God and the Word. But now, one of Them was the boss; and that was God. He was the leader. Jesus said, when He was on earth, "I have kept My Father's commandments." He was the Word. He said, "I have not spoken except what the Father told Me to speak (what He commanded Me to speak)."

Now, Their work was creation; and yet They were both in creation. How? In Ephesians 3:9, you will read that God created EVERYTHING. But how did God create everything? He created everything **BY** Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ is the Word; and He spake (as one of the Psalms tells us), and it was done. When He spoke, the **POWER** that emanated from God the Father and from Christ—**the power of the Holy Spirit**—leaped forward and DID

what He said; and He only said what God the Father told Him.

Law And Government

Look at the co-operation. Look at the order and the system. That **Way of Life** became a law. I spoke before the law school of the University of Southern California recently. I gave them my concept of law. A member of the Supreme Court of California, who was in the audience, came up to me later and said, “You gave us something to think about. We never thought of it that way before.”

Law is simply the rules of the game. It is the rules of living—of conduct, of performance, of behavior. For example: the rules of a football game (or a basketball game) you might call THE LAW of the game, because the law is merely the order or direction of life, or life style, or performance.

Sin (we hear so much about in the Bible, and in Christian circles)... Sin (although most professed Christians don't even know what sin is)... “*Sin is the transgression of the law.*” But it's the law of God.

The law of God is His Way of Life, and that's the way I just mentioned to you. It's the way of LOVE. God loved the Son (That is, He became God's Son when He was born.), and Jesus loved God; and the Word previously had loved God. They loved one another. Now that is how they lived, and that is A LAW; and that is **the law of God**. That is the law by which God RULES the entire universe!

Now law is the foundation of government. How do you define government? Government is simply the administration of law. I don't like the word just enforcement of law. It is more than that. It is the administration of law. That includes enforcement, when necessary.

Of course, all government requires a leader. There has to be leadership.

And like a tree and its branches, it comes from the leader (which is the trunk of the tree). In this case, Christ is the trunk and God is the root structure. God is the head of Christ, and Christ is the head of the Church. But God is the head over ALL. Over everything that exists is God Himself—God Almighty. Now God sits on the throne of the universe, and God has a **government**. That government is over all creation!

Angels And The Universe

Well, now the time came (after He had created angels) that then He created the physical universe and the earth. In both Genesis 1 and the 2nd chapter of Genesis, you will find that God created THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE at the same time, at the same day He created this earth. Most people don't seem to know that. It's right there in your Bible. He created the universe, and that was after angels; because, when He created the earth, you read in the 38th chapter of Job that the angels were already there. The morning stars were singing. That meant the archangels, the cherubs.

All the angels of God were shouting for joy because this earth was made to be their abode, their home. They were put on the earth. That was before any man had ever come into existence. Man didn't come by a gradual process of evolution, by resident forces, and out of nothing, and without planning or design. But man was created by God and through Jesus Christ. So finally man was created.

But first He put angels on this earth. On the throne of the earth, He put a super archangel, a cherub, called Lucifer. His name was Lucifer. Now God names things, or people, what they are. What was he? Shining star of the dawn. The name Lucifer means “shining star of the dawn” or “light bringer.” Bringing light. And he had been given the light, because he was one of the two archangels whose wings had overspread the very throne of God in God's heaven at the throne of the entire universe (after He had created the universe).

He was already well schooled in God's law and God's government; and he was set on a throne on this earth to ADMINISTER the government of God on the earth. Now that meant to administer the way of love. He could have been the leader; and he would have still had to look at the Supreme Leader, of God. But he was sent here to administer God's law of love.

He lifted himself some way and realized he was supremely beautiful. His brightness was like the brightness of the sun in beauty, and he began to glorify himself. He began to be jealous of God. He must have thought: "Well, here I am on this one little earth. It's only a tiny speck in all of the great universe, and God has all the rest of the universe. He only gave me this earth." So he said, "I'm going to ascend. I'm going to arm my angels that are under me, and we'll go up and pull a coup. We'll knock God off the throne. I'm going to take over. I want to be God. I want to be something bigger!" And so they ascended up to heaven.

Now this Lucifer was perfect in all his ways from the day he was created, as you read in the twenty-eighth chapter of Ezekiel. (Ezekiel, the 28th chapter) But sin entered. He was perfect in his ways till iniquity was found in him, as you read in Ezekiel 28. Iniquity is lawlessness. Instead of observing law, he turned against the law of God—or against love, against cooperation, against giving and caring and concern for others. He was concerned about self. He loved himself.

As I said a week ago over the microwave to all of you, it was like the song that was so popular, when we came out to Oregon from Iowa, back in 1924. The song typified the way of this world. It was I LOVE ME. "Oh, I love me. I'm wild about myself. I put my arms around myself and give myself a squeeze. Oh, I just love me! I'm wild about myself! I'll marry me some day. I love me." But I don't love you. Now that became the way of this Satan^{4}, and here he was on the throne of the earth.

Creation Of Mankind

Now God created mankind next, starting with one man whose name was Adam. So He created Adam. You read in II Peter, the second chapter and fourth verse, that the angels (at least, one-third of them) sinned. We think of angels as being holy. Well, perhaps two-thirds of them still are; but one-third of them sinned. One-third were on the earth, and they sinned. So the government of God was no longer operated on the earth, and it was replaced by Satan's government.

Now what is Satan's government? It is just the opposite. That's the thing that the world does not understand, and I think we did not understand it until recently. I've come to see it. So now listen, because perhaps you didn't understand this before. Satan has a law that is the basis of his government, and he rules the earth. He rules over the nations of this earth, of this whole world; and his law is VANITY.

Vanity seized him when he saw how beautiful he was, just like it seizes women when they want to paint their faces. Vanity! You see, if mother Eve had had a looking glass or a mirror to look into, she might have painted her face. The only reason she didn't, was that she didn't have a mirror—because she took the way of vanity. She chose that which looked good and was going to make her wise, and that appealed to intellectual vanity. But men have vanity too. All people do. That means self, and it means self-love. "I love me," as I just said. That is the way of humanity. Now Satan's way is love yourself. That is, do your own thing. Have your own idea.

So God created man on the earth, and man wasn't complete physically. God wanted man to reproduce and have children, but the poor man couldn't do it; and so God gave him a wife. One man with one woman together became **one family**. They were joined as one, and they did have children. Now they could reproduce.

But they were not completed mentally or spiritually either. God made them with one human spirit in the human brain, and that gave them human intelligence. (The one spirit in the brain of man.) And man is **a soul**. God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man, made of the dust of the ground, became a soul. The dust of the ground is a soul; and God put a spirit in that soul, (made of the dust of the ground). That spirit empowers the human brain with intellect.

Animals have brains just like men, like humans; and just as good. The physical brain is just as good, but they can't think. They can't know what men can know. They can't reason. They can't make decisions. They can't plan and design. They have no concern for beauty, for art and literature, and for things of that sort. The **spirit in man** gives man the capacity for things like that, and the spirit in man was necessary because God had A PURPOSE in creating man. He created man TO BECOME GOD! God was REPRODUCING HIMSELF IN **MAN!** He wanted man to reproduce so there would be a lot of them, to become a lot of Him ultimately and eventually.

He said, (the same principle) two can't walk together except they be agreed; but one must be the leader. Adam was told to be the leader, and he should have ruled over Eve with loving authority. But he wasn't on the job; and, when he wasn't looking, Eve just sort of stole away. She wasn't obedient.

Satan Tempts Eve

So the devil came along, and the devil began to tempt her. Now the devil didn't say to her, "Look, don't worship God. You worship me. Look, I'm on the throne of the earth. I want you to worship me. I'm the god of this earth." He didn't say that. Did you ever think of that? Go back and read it

again, and see. No, he said, “Look at that Tree.” Now, of course, he said: “God wasn’t fair. God didn’t give you everything.” You see, He hadn’t given Satan everything. He kept everything back except the earth. But God gave man EVERYTHING in the garden, except one Tree.

You take a little child about nine months old, put him on the floor, and put about eight or ten toys around; and point to one and say “You mustn’t touch that one. Can’t touch that. Just play with the others. Don’t touch this.” Then you go off, and close the door, and look through the keyhole, and see what he’ll do. He’ll go for the one you told him not to touch every time. That is because he is influenced by Satan and doesn’t realize it.

Satan is the prince of the power of the air, he broadcasts in attitudes, and he begins.... You know, most parents today neglect their children until they are six-years-old; and then they cart them off to school, and let the teacher take care of them. But Satan doesn’t neglect your children! Satan is on the job; and he gets to them, and puts within their little minds his attitudes of self, of vanity, of selfishness. They have it before they are a year old.

So Eve took of that Tree, and gave to her husband. Instead of having watched over her and preventing her from sinning, he went along with her and let her be the leader. And look at the fruits of it today. Today women are trying to rule everything. Women are trying to rule everything today.

You know, when I had a very nice half-hour with Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher of England last autumn, I said to her “Now I can say I’ve met all four of the women who are ruling great nations in this world.” She started to try to name the other three. Well, she named Indira Gandhi first, because Mrs. Gandhi had visited her just about two or three weeks before I did. Then she said Golda Meir. Then she hesitated on the other one until I reminded her it was Mrs. Bandaranaike of Sir Lanka. “Oh, yes.”

Well, now, President Nixon thought she was a pretty tough woman. He

didn't like to talk with her, because she was tough. I found her very charming indeed, very gracious and very charming. She took me into her living room, and not her office; and we had a nice half-hour together. The only other person present was her secretary, Sir Robert Armstrong. He was an Armstrong also, so she had two Armstrongs in the room with her. I got a little kick out of that, of course.

Well, women are gradually beginning to take over. Do you know, it was mother Eve who started the E.R.A Movement? E.R.A. means "Eve Rules Adam." That's what it means. That's the way it started.

Developing Godly Character

God's purpose was to reproduce Himself. But to reproduce Himself, man had a spirit; but he had to have more. He had to develop character. Character is the main thing. If you want to know what God is, first of all God is **holy, perfect, righteous, spiritual character**. That is: knowing the right way, and making the decision; and the will to go that way and no other way. That is character.

Now man had to develop that character. God did not give him immortality. God is a Spirit, but He made man out of the dust of the ground. Man had a mind, and that mind was capable of knowing good and evil. There was one Tree—the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Man had the ability created within him to come to a knowledge of good and evil. That is, his own concept of good. In the world, the people that don't know God and don't know Jesus Christ, there are many that are good in this world's standards. They have high ideals, and a code of ethics, good morality, upstanding; but there's a lot of selfishness in it.

Perhaps the highest kind of love we know, just naturally among people that are not converted, is mother love. A mother loves her child, and that's a

very beautiful thing. But, you know, even that is selfish. She loves her child because it is hers. It came out of her. She doesn't love other children the same manner that she loves her own. The love that fulfills God's law is **a higher love** than that. It is the love that God has.

Satan, The Kidnapper

Satan, in a sense, KIDNAPPED the first man and woman. Satan KIDNAPPED them! It was then decreed, as you read in Revelation (Let me see. It's Revelation 13... I forget the exact passage.) but Jesus was the Lamb of God slain from the foundation of the world. In other words, the foundation of the world is when Adam started this world by making the wrong decision and selling himself out to Satan.

Now Satan kidnapped him. At that time, God decided He would **pay the ransom price**. A ransom was demanded to regain the one that was kidnapped. Perhaps you never thought of it quite in that way before. So let me give you something you didn't think of before. When God paid the ransom...

You know, they kidnap a child of a multimillionaire. They demand one million dollars ransom. Well, maybe the man is worth a hundred million. He winces when he does it, but he gives them one of those millions to pay the ransom to get his son (or daughter) back from the kidnapper. Do you know what God did? He gave **HIS ALL! All He had was in His Son, Jesus Christ;** and *"He GAVE His only begotten Son, that whosoever [would believe] in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life."* (The golden text of the Bible)

Now Jesus right there had to offer to come down and be a human being, and Satan wanted to kidnap Him too. He said, "GIVE ME YOUR OWN SON, and I'll get Him just like I got Adam. You intended Adam to become

Your son. I kidnapped him. Send me Your own Son, Jesus Christ. I'll kidnap Him too." So God GAVE His only begotten Son. Satan tried to kidnap Him when He was a little baby, an infant just born. But God had Him taken down to Egypt where Satan's cohorts on earth couldn't find Him.

*[**Part of the sermon is missing at 42:54, where the cassette tape was turned over here. During the missing section, it appears Mr. Armstrong was talking about Satan's temptation of Jesus Christ as found in Matthew 4.]*

Also, I think, the fourth chapter of Luke. But Jesus refused. He refused to be kidnapped. And do you know that He **gave His life** in order to ransom us? Instead of being kidnapped, He paid the ransom price for you, and for me, and for EVERY human being on the face of the earth—because He was our Maker, and His life was more valuable than all of our lives combined; and He gave that. He gave that for us no matter what we've done.

For those who'd thumbed their nose at Him, who cursed His name, for those who put a crown of thorns on His head, who spit in His face, who mocked Him, who beat Him until He was almost ready to drop and unable even to carry His own cross very far (He was so weak)—yet He prayed, "Father, forgive them. They don't know what they are doing;" and He gave His life for them. He GAVE HIS ALL!

You know, I was thinking of it this morning during the talk just before the annual holy day offering: How much do we give? We give a little bit. Well, God only demands 10% of what have as a tithe, plus whatever offering we are able to give; and He lets us decide that—according to the generosity of our own heart and according to ability. But just think what God gave! How much have you given? And how much did He give?

You know, I had to think while I was hearing Mr. Tkach on that (Well, I think I could say 'sermonette' he had this morning before the offering.) that God gave everything He had to redeem me, because I have sinned. Some

people would hate me and think I ought to be killed. But (because I repented, and I confess it, and I don't want to do it any more, and I want to let Him come in and live my life for me from here on) He paid everything He had to redeem me.

BUT THE WORLD DOESN'T WANT TO BE REDEEMED. THE WORLD WANTS TO STAY KIDNAPPED. You see, Satan {5} was the shining star of the dawn; but he turned into darkness, and he turned the world into darkness. Jesus came as a LIGHT to the world. He said: *“This is the condemnation, that light is come into the world; but men love darkness rather than the light.”* They want to stay kidnapped.

Most of the people in the world say: “Get away. I don't want to hear about God and about how He ransomed me and paid the price to get me back. I don't want God. I like the kidnapper better. I want his darkness. I don't want God's light.” How the world is like that! Where are they going to end up? Where is it going to get them?

You know, I know how it's going to all come out. I know how my life is going to come out. I looked in the end of the Book—the Bible—(way over here in the end, the last chapter) to see how it comes out. I know how it comes out. I win, and you can win too; and we can all **win!** God paid the price so we could. Let's never forget that.

Foundation Of This World

Well, so a world developed. Adam's family had been kidnapped, and they grew into this world. They followed Satan's law and Satan's government; and he's still on that throne ruling, and his government is every man do your own thing. Don't agree. Now, his rule says: Well, organize. Unionize—get together in a group for selfish advantage against another group. That's all right. But fall out even with your own group when it serves your

own personal vanity, and your own personal greed, and your lusts. Whatever you want, go after it. Get it for yourself. That is Satan's way.

Well, when Adam made that choice, God closed the Tree of Life, which was **freely offered**. God offered Adam IMMORTAL Life, self-sustaining Life, INHERENT Life within himself; and Adam rejected it. But (It was Revelation 13:8 I was trying to think of the scripture a while ago, I have it here in my notes.) Jesus was the Lamb of God slain from the foundation of the world; and that was the foundation of the world. So what God decreed right then was that it was appointed to man once to die, but after that the JUDGMENT. That's what we are coming to today. That's Hebrews 9:27 in the New Testament. It's appointed unto all men once to die, and after that the judgment.

Now how can there be a judgment after you die? Well, I Corinthians 15 beginning with verse 22 explains that:

***I Corinthians 15:22** As in Adam ALL DIE...*

God pronounced the sentence of death if Adam disobeyed and took of the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil. That is, he **took to himself** the knowledge of what's right and what's wrong. To do his own thing, in other words! That's what Satan wanted him to do. That was **Satan's law!**

Now the Tree of Life was **God's law**. Adam had to make a choice between God's law, which would have given him immortal Life; and that was the law of love. Love is the fulfilling of the law, but it takes the love of God shed abroad in our hearts **by the Holy Spirit**; and Adam never had the Holy Spirit—which he could have had, and which God offered him freely. Instead he took to himself the knowledge of good and evil, to go his own way and do his own thing; and his children have been doing it ever since.

But God also decreed that: "*As in Adam ALL DIE...*" And **all** have been

dying in Adam. Everyone except those alive today; and no one is 150 years on earth yet. Everyone else who ever lived is already dead. But they have all died in Adam.

I Corinthians 15:22 As in Adam all die, even so in **Christ shall ALL be made alive.**

ALL shall be made alive, and in a judgment that is to come. Now more about that just a little later.

Purpose Of Christ's Coming

Alright, Jesus came for a purpose. He came as the Second Adam. It is prophesied of Him in the 9th chapter of Isaiah (verses 6 and 7) that He would be born as a baby, that He would grow up, and the government of God would be on His shoulders. He would rule. His name would be called Counselor, Mighty God, and Prince of Peace, and so on. That was a prophecy of Jesus.

So, in due time, Jesus was born of the virgin Mary. He grew up; and Satan tried to kidnap Him, and didn't succeed. Jesus then said, "I will build My Church." Then He began teaching His gospel. He called twelve disciples and began to teach them. Twelve. Now, He was the start of **God's world!**

Satan's world started with Adam. Satan sits on the throne; and this is his world, and all in it are his people. You look beginning with verse 30 in the 8th chapter of John in the New Testament, and you will find (several verses on past the 30th verse there, you will find) that all on this earth—even those who "believe" in Jesus Christ—are children of Satan the devil unless or until they receive the Spirit of God and are begotten as children of God. You are the children of Satan the devil UNTIL you are begotten of God by His Holy Spirit.

Then Jesus began preaching His gospel. It was the gospel of the

Kingdom of God. Now “gospel” means “good news.” He was a newscaster, and His news was really news. It hadn’t happened yet. It was news of the future. It was a prophecy: the Kingdom of God, which means the government of God over the earth. A kingdom, a government; and He is going to rule it. He is going to restore the government of God to this earth. Satan had it, and Satan turned away from his agency to administer God’s law. Jesus is going to rebuild it.

Pouring Out Of God’s Spirit

In Joel 2 and verse 28, you will read the time is going to come when God will pour out His Spirit on all flesh. Now, at the time of Adam—the foundation of the world—God closed off the Holy Spirit. But the time is coming, said the prophet Joel, when He will **pour out** His Spirit ON ALL FLESH. Well, that time hasn’t come yet.

That time hasn’t come yet; but Jesus intended that the Holy Spirit would be poured out on those that God called, and He began to preach His gospel. He taught it to the Twelve. He told them go out and teach others. But He also said, in John 6:44:

***John 6:44** NO MAN can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draws him.*

So God isn’t calling the world to salvation **yet**; and that word “yet” is very, very important because the time is coming when God will call EVERY human being that’s ever been born. God isn’t playing favorites. He isn’t playing favorites at all. But He calls some out, first to learn the way so they can help teach others the way; and that’s for the good of the others that are not yet called—that there be some that can help them and teach them.

That’s why you’re here, brethren: every one of you that has the Holy

Spirit of God. You have been called and chosen by God for a very definite purpose. So many times all through the New Testament (time after time, after time, after time) it says we have to be called. We have to be chosen. We are a chosen generation even.

The Church is only the **firstfruits** of God's harvest. His harvest, ultimately, will be the entire earth—the entire world, every one ever born. Now the first-born son's name was Cain (the son of Adam and Eve). He had a brother whose name was Abel. But they had the spirit of competition and strife—Satan's idea of your own way, do your own thing. Cain didn't like his brother, Abel; so he killed him. Then God said, "Where is your brother?" He LIED.

People today think they can lie. One said to one of our ministers: "You do so-and-so, and I'll lie about you; and I'll get you. See, I'm not a member of the Church; and I can lie. I'm able to lie. I'm not a member of the Church. You don't dare lie because you're in the Church." Well, you know, the penalty of lying is just as much on someone that is not in the Church as it is on someone that is in the Church. But this poor girl didn't know that. That was just too bad because no liar is going to get into the Kingdom of God; but many liars are going to get in there by repenting, and confessing it, and being forgiven because God had to pay by giving His all-giving His only begotten Son; and Jesus had to pay by giving His life in order that we can be reconciled after all of that.

But Jesus put the government of God in His Church, and the government of God... But it didn't last in the Church. They began to lose a whole lot of what was started in the Church. The gospel of the Kingdom of God was suppressed. You read in Galatians 1:6-7, also in II Corinthians the 11th chapter, you read of how the apostle Paul feared that Satan might beguile and deceive the people in the Church at Corinth (just as he had mother Eve); and how he had his ministers—Satan's ministers—POSING as the

ministers of Jesus Christ.

They're not ministers of Christ at all. They are really ministers of Satan and Satan's law. They have their own sense of good, and they preach only good. That's the whole idea. They preach good, but it's not good enough. It's not the good of God. It's not the good of God's love and God's Holy Spirit. It's only human good and human love.

Preparing The Way

But in Malachi the 3rd chapter, the first five verses, God made another prophecy. The Church now had turned to a false gospel. Down through time (And you saw it on the film, 'Behind The Work'. I hope you have all seen that film. It was shown twice here. It was shown in most all Feast sites twice.), there were the various eras of time, and we are in the sixth era now (and the seventh is yet to come) in the Philadelphia Era of time of the Church. At this time, God was going to raise up someone who would prepare the way for the second coming of Christ. If you read verses 2 through 4 and 5 in Malachi 3, you will find it is not speaking of the first coming but the second.

John the Baptist was merely A TYPE. He came as a voice crying out in the physical wilderness of the Jordan River, to a physical world and announcing the coming of the human, physical Jesus coming to a temple built of stone, and wood, and other metals (the temple in Jerusalem) and to His own human physical people. He came to His own, but they didn't receive Him. They rejected Him, all but the few.

So he was a type, and one was to come in these last days crying out in the SPIRITUAL wilderness of religious confusion, and all the confusion of the world, and all of its competition, and its organizations (one against another). Husband and wife against one another, parents and children against

each other, family against next-door neighbor, group against group, black against white or white against black (or whichever); but contentions—nation against nation, organization against organization; everyone for himself. Everything get! Everything is get, not give.

Jesus said it is more blessed to give than to receive; and God’s law is based on the way of love, and give, and share, and serve. Satan’s law is GET all you can get, take them for all you can get out of them. That is Satan’s law; and many they are. They only look at what little temporary “good” they can get in this life. If they can get money, they’ll do anything they can to get it.

Well, Jesus came; and during His ministry He said, in Matthew 17:10-11... Now, let me see. Matthew 17 and verses 10 and 11; He said:

***Matthew 17:10** His disciples asked [Jesus], saying, Why then say the scribes that [Elijah] must first come?*

Now {6} John the Baptist had already come; and, at the time they said this, John the Baptist had already been beheaded. He had finished his ministry. He had been taken a prisoner, and had been put to death. And they said, “Why does it say that Elijah must first come?” Jesus had just been showing them, in the Transfiguration, the Kingdom of God—Himself, and Elijah, and Moses in the Kingdom of God. So they asked Him, well, that’s before He would come and in the Kingdom.

***Matthew 17:11** And Jesus answered and said unto them, [Elijah] truly SHALL first come...*

John the Baptist already had come and was now dead! But He said, “*Elijah SHALL* [yet in the future, “shall”] *come, and RESTORE all things.*

Tell me, please, what did John the Baptist restore? Read your Bibles. See if you can find it. John the Baptist didn’t restore anything. What was to be restored just before Jesus Christ comes? Government, THE

GOVERNMENT OF GOD IN THE CHURCH! It had gone out of the Church. The true gospel, which had not been preached! Jesus preached the gospel of the Kingdom of God.

There was a blank of history, the first century of the Church. This much we know: there was a violent controversy on whether the gospel should be a gospel **of** Christ or a gospel **about** Christ. All we know is that, when the curtain lifts on the history of the Church 100 years later (about 150 A.D.), the gospel being preached was merely a gospel about Christ; and the gospel of Christ was the gospel that Christ preached, and that was the Kingdom of God. That's the gospel of Christ—the Kingdom of God.

For 1900 years, the GOSPEL OF CHRIST was NOT PROCLAIMED! Yet, in Matthew 24 and verse 3 [{7}](#), the disciples asked Jesus “What will be the sign of Your second coming?” He said, “This gospel of the Kingdom will be proclaimed in all the world for a witness to all nations, and then shall the end of this world, (Satan's world) come.” Brethren, that gospel has been proclaimed around the world by this Church! It has been proclaimed, and the government of God has been restored to the Church. The true gospel has been restored and proclaimed around the world—and before kings, and before men in high places in government all around this world. I think you saw it on some of the films that were shown you during the Feast.

Restoration Of All Things

Now, in Revelation 11:15, we read of the second coming of Christ. (I see I'm not going to have time to finish. I'm going to keep you a little over time. I hope the lines of the satellite are open, because I'm going to finish this sermon.) The reason for Christ's return you'll find in [{8}](#) Acts the 3rd chapter, verses 19-21. The heavens have received Him until the time of restoration of all things. That is, the restoring. Restitution is the word used, and it means

restoring to a former state or condition, restoring something that had been taken away.

What was taken away was the **government of God**, and Jesus is coming to restore the government of God. It's already been restored just in the Church, but that's all. He's coming to restore it to the whole world and over all nations. In the 20th chapter of Revelation you read, in the first five verses (or the first three verses) you read of Satan being taken out of the way, who is ruling on that throne now, after the second coming of Christ.

On the Feast of Trumpets, we celebrated the second coming of Christ to restore what had been taken away. That is, the government of God. Then on the Day of Atonement, we read of Satan being put away. You read of that in the 20th chapter of Revelation, verses 4-6. Satan will then be put away. Then will be a thousand years reign with Christ. But after that thousand years, he is going to be released for a little time.

Now remember that the whole world was deceived, and deceived people didn't know about God. They didn't have any chance for salvation or eternal Life. It was SHUT OFF from them. But God is not unfair. He isn't going to do it. Rather, He raised up the Church, and we are to know so we can teach them and help them; and the time is coming for them. As I quoted to you from Hebrews 9:27, it was appointed unto all men once to die, and after that the judgment; and as in Adam they've all been dying, so in Christ they will all be made alive.

Then we come to Revelation 20; and, let me see. Revelation 20, and beginning with verse 11. After Satan has been loosed and deceived a lot of the people on the earth once again, then Satan is put away PERMANENTLY and forever. Now, this is after the Millennium that we've been celebrating the last seven days. John telling what he saw in a vision that was to happen in the future, and he said he:

Revelation 20:11-12 ...saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it [will be Jesus Christ], from whose face the earth and the heavens fled away [The heavens meaning the sky above us, the earth's atmosphere.]; and there was found no place for them. (12) And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the **book of life** [Those in that book are going to be given immortal Life through the Holy Spirit of God.]; and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books.

Now then, what about the millions and billions of people that have never heard the true gospel of God? They've never heard the gospel of the Kingdom of God. For 1,900 years after about 53 A.D. that gospel was never proclaimed to the world. What about all those people? Jesus said, "Repent, and believe the gospel." Without the knowledge of the gospel, they couldn't believe it; and they didn't hear it. They couldn't have believed it. So now is the time they are going to come up for judgment.

The Judgment Process

Now judgment is a process. We go into a court. There's a judge sitting on the bench. It's a matter of a trial—whether you are innocent or guilty, and which way it goes and what decision the judge is going to make; and he's going to be some time making this judgment. But they're going to give account for everything they did in this life. Now those that are not converted and have not received Christ as their Savior, have not received His Holy Spirit but say "I can lie. I am not in the Church. I can lie."

There was a man up in Oregon that said "Well, I don't have to tithe. I'm not a member of the Church. Just you have to tithe." So I preached a sermon that the law applies to everybody, and he'll have to give account in the judgment if he didn't. You know, after he heard that sermon (he was there,

present), he came and brought his tithe in. Right away things began to happen for him, and he collected money he thought he'd never see again. It was during the Depression, he didn't have anything. Now everything began to go well with him financially, as soon as he paid that tithe; and he tithed all he had.

Well, there is going to be a judgment. Those that are judged according to how they lived; and they are going to be pronounced **guilty**, because the wages of sin is DEATH. That's a sentence, and they sinned. But then they're going to hear... Many of them were born long before Christ, and they don't know that He came and died for them. They died not knowing that. Others don't understand it. They've never really consciences. God hasn't opened their minds. They are going to learn for the first time that God paid the penalty in their stead.

Jesus Christ on the throne is going to say, "YOU'RE GUILTY." And the Lake of Fire... you may think fire only lasts a few seconds, as one woman said. Oh, it's going to be a lot worse than that! Don't kid yourself, but take advantage of God's mercy while there's time. They are going to find that Jesus paid the penalty for them. It's already been paid, if they would just accept it. They don't have to pay it.

Sure, the penalty is DEATH! The penalty is BURNING UP IN FIRE, until you are BURNED UP. But they're not going to have to pay that penalty if they accept Christ's penalty—the blood of Christ—instead. That applies to all, even though they sin willingly, as long as it's not willful to the extent that they say "Anyhow, I'm just going to go on. I'd rather go into a lake of fire." As long as they want to turn around, and go the other way, and do the right thing—the door is open.

Now back in Matthew 12, verses 41 and 42. Jesus said:

Matthew 12:41-42 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment [Now

this is in the judgment, the Great White Throne Judgment.] *with this generation, and shall condemn it; because they repented at the preaching of Jonah: and, behold, a greater than Jonah is here. (42) [Then He said:] The queen of the south [from Egypt] shall rise up in the judgment with this generation...*

You know, that makes me think, I had lunch just a few weeks ago with (you might say) the queen of the south. In other words, the former first lady of Egypt—Madame Jehan (or Madame Sadat). I had lunch with her in San Francisco. She is the queen of the south, or was for a while. She would like to be again, I think.

Matthew 12:42 ...and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

It's speaking of a judgment that is coming. Now Jesus spoke of that judgment in other places. Sodom and Gomorrah are going to fare better in the judgment than those Pharisees that denied Christ even though they heard Him in person and were there when He was there.

Valley Of Dry Bones

Then, finally, I'd like to turn to the Old Testament—Ezekiel 37. I hope that was mentioned in many places this morning. It was here, I know, in the auditorium here in Pasadena. Ezekiel 37 and beginning with verse 1. This was spoken to ancient Israel, who was God's only people at that time (prior to Christ).

Ezekiel 37:1 The hand of the [Eternal] was upon me [said Ezekiel], and carried me in the spirit [that is, in vision] of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones.

Now a lot of people are puzzled about that valley of dry bones. I remember hearing a sermon by, oh, this woman evangelist from Los Angeles of about 30-40 years ago—Aimee Semple McPherson. She had an illustrated sermon in her church in Los Angeles, and she had a lot of paper things that looked like dry bones up there on the stage; and she said, “Now who and what are these dry bones?” She said that represented all the other churches in the world. “They are all dry and dead. But we are alive here in this church; and we are not the dry bones, we are the resurrection.” Well, that was her interpretation!

Now let’s see what God’s interpretation is:

Ezekiel 37:2-9 And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, there were very many in the open valley; and, lo, they were very dry. [In other words, they’d been dead quite a long time. Skeletons.] (3) And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord God, thou knowest. [He didn’t know.] (4) Again he said unto me, Prophecy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the LORD. (5) Thus said the Lord [ETERNAL] unto these bones: Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye **shall live** [Speaking of those that are dead that are going to be resurrected. As in Adam all die, all will be made alive through Christ.]: (6) And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you [This is all material now, you’ll notice. Not spiritual.], and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I am the LORD [the ETERNAL]. (7) So [Ezekiel said] I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking [In other words, an earthquake.], and the bones came together, bone to his bone. (8) And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no breath in them. (9) Then said he unto me, Prophecy unto the wind [or the air], ... Thus saith the Lord GOD; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these

slain, that they may live.

Now this is just physical life, because there's nothing said about spirit here.

Ezekiel 37:10-11 So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army. [There are going to be billions, because they're not only going to be those of the nation Israel but all nations; and they were only a type of all the other nations.] (11) Then he said unto me, Son of man, these bones are [Not just the other dead churches, as Aimee Semple McPherson said. These bones are...] the whole house of Israel: behold, they say, Our bones are dried, and our HOPE is lost [They had no hope.]: we are cut off for our parts.

If they could be alive and could know, that's what they would be thinking.

Ezekiel 37:12-13 Therefore prophesy and say unto them, Thus said the Lord [ETERNAL]: Behold, O my people, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. (13) And you shall KNOW that I am the LORD.

They didn't know that in their lifetime. They didn't really know Him. Now they were going to come to know Him, **in the resurrection to judgment!**

Ezekiel 37:13 You shall know that I am the LORD, when I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves, (14) And [Now, once they come to KNOW HIM, and once they find that He has paid the penalty of their sins in their stead, they are going to accept Him, and He is going to] ... put my spirit in you. [Now they were resurrected mortal, no spirit. After they had come to KNOW HIM, He would put His Spirit into

them in that Great White Throne Judgment after the resurrection.], *and ye shall live* [That is, they will have eternal Life, Life eternal, self-existing Life.], *and I shall place you in your own land: then shall ye know that I the LORD* [your God].

The 100-Year Period

Now there's a prophecy in Isaiah 65. I am overtime, and I'm not going to take time to go to it now; but there will be a period of 100 years. They'll have 100 years to learn the way of God, to have His Holy Spirit. Satan will be gone. The Kingdom of God will have been on earth for 1,000 years. They will have all of us (then immortal) helping them, loving them, wanting to help them have life and develop THE CHARACTER OF GOD; and they can become God.

Finally, EVERYONE is going to have their opportunity of salvation. I don't mean... That's not a universal salvation. Some are going to go into a lake of fire. But I can't help but believe that, once they're eyes are opened and they come to really understand, that most of them are going to come to God. Most of them are going to want to live. They are going to find that that way is better.

You know, I'm reminded of our summer camps: up at Orr, Minnesota; in Big Sandy, Texas; over in Loch Lomond in Scotland; and I'm going to the camps very soon, in January, down in Australia and New Zealand (because that will be their summer down there). But I am just reminded of how children come and learn there is a better way of life than they knew back home. They were with the kids; many of them had been using marijuana and some other drugs perhaps. They'd been doing the way of other kids. And they learn there's another way of life, and it's more fun.

You know, kids just think of one thing until they are about sixteen. I don't think they think of much anything else until sixteen. Then they begin to

think a little bit seriously, perhaps, between sixteen and eighteen years of age. But they only think of fun. Isn't that what you thought of until you were sixteen? You know it is. But then we begin to think a little more seriously about life, and its meaning, and what it does mean.

God has made it possible for all of us to live forever in happiness and joy! In a way that's just thrilling! It's so satisfying. It's so fulfilling. It's so wonderful. BEYOND what anyone can possibly know! You know, I wish everybody could know; but, in due time, they will.

We have enemies that have gone out of the Church, brethren. Somehow they were blinded. They didn't see the truth. You know, they are the ones that I pray for every day. I don't think I pray for all of you every day. I finally get around to you, but you don't need it as badly as my enemies do; and I pray for them every day because I love them. They don't know it. They don't think I do, but I do; and I pray for them.

I know God is hearing my prayers; and, sooner or later, something good is going to happen to them. That's the love of God: that you can pray for your enemies. I don't think I learned that until somewhat recently. You can pray for your friends; but it's pretty hard to pray for those that spitefully use you, those that want to harm you, those that would just like to see you DEAD. There's been a lot of people waiting for me to die, and I just haven't died soon enough to please them. But I do pray for them; and, for their sakes, I hope God will let me live a little longer so I can continue praying more for them; and I think He will.

Well, look, I want to read one scripture in closing. There's a lot more. I haven't had time to finish all of it. It is a wonderful thing, a wonderful story; but in Romans... Let's see. In Romans the 11th chapter, and I'll just read verse 33.

Romans 11:33 *O the depth of the riches, both of the wisdom and*

knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments [We've been talking about His judgments, and the Great White Throne Judgment. How unsearchable are His judgments...], *and his ways past finding out!*

How wonderful are God's ways, more than we can possibly realize!

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: At first Mr. Armstrong said – the first of God's spiritual harvest. But then he corrected himself and said – the first of God's spiritual plan.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: While thinking out loud, Mr. Armstrong mistakenly said there are ten days in a week and then miscalculated, drawing the conclusion that the Day of Atonement had been seventeen days ago. However, falling on the tenth day of the seventh month, the Day of Atonement is actually twelve days before the Last Great Day (the day on which he was speaking for this sermon, and the twenty-second day of the seventh month on God's sacred calendar).

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: At first Mr. Armstrong said the French language, but then he corrected himself.

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Although Mr. Armstrong hasn't explained it in this sermon, he always understood and taught that the super archangel Lucifer became Satan.

[{5}](#) - Editor's note: Although Mr. Armstrong hasn't explained it in this sermon, he always understood and taught that the super archangel Lucifer became Satan.

[{6}](#) - Editor's note: Although Mr. Armstrong said – Elijah here, he undoubtedly meant John the Baptist (who was a type of Elijah, to come before Christ first coming), because it was John the Baptist – not Elijah of the

Old Testament – who was put in prison and beheaded.

{7} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said verse 13, but it is actually Matthew 24:3 where the disciples asked the question of Christ.

{8} - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong said the book of Matthew, but he was speaking of Acts 3:19-21.

The Trunk Of The Tree

Sermon (October 1983)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Trunk Of The Tree.....	1634	Temporary Life Only	1653
Getting Back On Track	1635	Rejecting Revelation	1655
Avoid Those Causing Division	1636	Satan's World Today	1658
Clearing Up Understanding	1636	At-One-Ment	1658
Wanting To Understand	1637	The Church, Start Of God's World	1660
Jesus, The Living Word	1640	Restoring The Government Of God	1662
Understanding Origins	1641	Called To Be Teachers	1664
The Pre-Existence Of God	1643	The Second Coming Of Christ	1665
God's Manner Of Living	1644	Judgment Now On Us	1667
The Way, Or Law, Of God	1646	The Marriage Supper	1669
Creation Of Angels	1647	The New Covenant	1670
Governing The Material Universe	1648	Times Of Judgment	1671
Beauty And Vanity	1649	At The End Of The Millennium	1674
Doing Your Own Thing	1651	Rebuilding The Universe	1676
Creation Of Man	1651		

Well, greetings again, brethren. I'm just trying to think how long it had been since I had been here. It seemed to me like I am becoming almost an every week or almost every Sabbath speaker over here. But they are trying to tell me it's been a year since I had been here. I think it was last May, though, if I'm not mistaken. I believe I did speak then. I was in London last May, and I believe that is the time that I did speak to you last. Anyway, I'm happy to be back here with you once again.

Now the holiday season for this year of God's holy days is over, and reports that I've had from everywhere in the world is that this truly was the greatest Feast of Tabernacles that we've ever held. I think the year before was up to that time, and I think it was even more so this time.

Getting Back On Track

For the last, especially, the last three or four years, the Head of this Church, Jesus Christ, has been getting His Church back on track. We were getting off the track. The Church was getting off the track in the United States. Liberalism was coming in. It's not so long ago that I found the same type of thing was getting in over here among you brethren. I think that we're glad to see that gone. We're not glad to see some of the people that were involved gone from among us. But, if they are going to cling to that sort of thing, I guess it's better they go with it; because the apostle Paul said that we must all speak the same thing, and he beseeched us in the name of Jesus Christ.

You know if in... Well, take a football team. You have a different kind of football over here than we do. As a matter of fact, American football is almost localized American football, whereas soccer is more or less a worldwide football. But nevertheless, if one member of the team becomes sour and bitter and in discord, that team is going to begin to lose games. It is not going to succeed.

Two cannot walk together except they be agreed. And if, for example, you can't drive... What is it? A horse and a mule? It's certain animals. They won't go along together. One will pull in one direction, and one will go off in another direction. They won't serve you. They won't get anywhere together. Two cannot walk together except they be agreed.

All right, you take three or four. If one among them is in disharmony, you have trouble. And, as I say, on a team—whatever size team you have (Some teams, like basketball, have 5 playing at a time; American baseball, it's 9; football is 11.)—different numbers depending on the type of game; but, if just one member turns sour, you got trouble.

Avoid Those Causing Division

And if there's one or two in the Church that are out for trouble, the whole Church is having trouble. That's why God says, "Mark those that are causing division, and offenses, contrary to the doctrine that we've been taught through Christ, and avoid them."

There are just two ways we can avoid them. One is if we all get out. We leave the Church and leave them in. The other is if we put them out. And I think we'd rather prefer just to put them out; because, if they are going to prefer sin, we put sin out of our lives. That's what we begin learning in the first festivals, the beginning of the year—first the Passover, then the Days of Unleavened Bread—that teach us to put sin out of our lives. And we have to put sin or sinful people, or discontented people that are causing trouble, out of the Church.

Now that doesn't mean something that is wrong. We used to feel, well, we must show love; and to show love we must keep those discontented people among us. Then you have trouble. And that is not love. It is not love! The way we show love is to let them know that they're wrong, and they cannot have fellowship with those of us that want to go the way of God and the way of Christ.

Clearing Up Understanding

Now this afternoon—following the whole year's festivals, which have just recently ended now—I would like to go back over certain points that I feel may still be not quite clearly understood in the minds of all of us, and specially some things respecting the Millennium and the Great White throne Judgment and the matter that AFTER....

I know that in Pasadena there was one sermonette on the period right

after the Millennium of the 1000-year reign with Christ, when Satan is loosed for a little while out of his prison; and he goes forth to deceive the nations. Afterward, one of the members asked me, “Well now, I can’t quite understand it. Here we’ve had a Millennium. Satan has been chained. The earth has been full of the knowledge of the Lord. as full as the ocean beds are covered with water. And the Law of God has gone forth to all the world from Jerusalem. And how can Satan go up and deceive people again? And what kind of people are they? Are they mortal or immortal?”

A lot of questions came to mind. So some of those little things I think we might clear up. And I have to think that in the average church they have a certain form and ceremony. But really—when it comes down to life, and to religion, to church, why should there be a Church, why do they come to church, why do they attend Church services—the truth of it is that most of them don’t know. Ever since they were little babies, they’ve grown up. They’ve probably been taken to church. They know that there are churches—that the good people are supposed to go to church, at least they suppose so. They have certain ceremonies.

And there must be some kind of a being, or a god, or a something that looks down. He’s going to hurt you, and curse you, and cause you all kinds of trouble if you don’t please him, do what he wants you to do. They don’t know why; but he’s kind of an angry god, apparently. They don’t understand it. They don’t know why we are alive. They don’t know why humans are on earth. They don’t know where we are going. They don’t know why there should be a Church. What’s its purpose? What’s its function?

Wanting To Understand

You know, I have always wanted to understand. I have always asked why. My father told me when I was 5 years that I was sure to be, not what I

thought I was going to be when I grew up. You know, at 5 years of age we had the little dinky trolley cars just coming in; and the horse-drawn cars... I presume it's the same over here in England. It was in the United States. We had horse-drawn streetcars, and they were just going out. The first trolley cars, little small cars (We call them dinkies over there.), and they were coming in.

I use to, when we would get on those little streetcars, I'd get up on the front seat and watch old Bill, the motorman, run that car. And, you know, I got very ambitious. I knew right then (I was only 5 years old.) what I wanted to be when I grew up. I was going to be a streetcar motorman. But my father had other ideas. He said that I was sure to be a Philadelphia lawyer. I was always asking what he called "so many Tom-fool questions". He got so tired of answering them he said I would become a Philadelphia lawyer when I grew up.

Well, I always wanted to know "Why?" And I wanted to know "How?" I was always asking questions like that. I wanted to understand. I always craved understanding.

Now, when I grew up, I changed my mind. I... A man that I worked for on a summer vacation aroused ambition within me when I was 16 years of age. I think that prior to age 16, most boys and most girls think only about one thing. Their minds are pretty much on one thing. It's a little 3-letter word, F – U – N. Fun! That's about all they think about. At age 16, a man showed confidence in me and told me that I was going to really amount to something someday. I was going to make my mark in the world, and I was going to become something important, and I could do big things. I said, "Well, can I?" And I got to wondering; and I began to believe that maybe I could do something, someday.

Ambition began to come into me. Well, I knew this much about

ambition: It was desire to accomplish something, backed up by the purpose and the will to work hard enough to accomplish that desire. And I had ambition; and I was willing to work for it, though I didn't know what I was going to do yet.

Then, at age 18, I saw a book in the public library. I was beginning to look into the library and study things in the philosophy department and business administration section of the library and things of that sort, in addition to things I was getting in high school.

I found a book on choosing a vocation; and, so I took that book out. It put me through a sort of self-study course, a self-analysis analyzing one's own self of whatever aptitudes you might have; any talents, if any; your faults, your weakness; your likes, the things you like to do; and the things you detested and didn't like to do at all. And then it went through all the various professions and occupations to see where you would fit and where you belong (where you could succeed in life), and what type of occupation or profession you should pursue to avoid fitting the proverbial square peg in the round hole, as it were. And I seemed to fit in the advertising profession.

I didn't know it at that time, but the advertising profession in magazines and newspapers (mostly magazines) was only preparing me for what God really was going to call me to do. I don't know that God had made any analysis on me, or anything of the kind. But, for some reason or other, He decided He was going to make me willing to bend to His will and really believe what He says. But that was to come a lot later.

Now you notice in the film, "The History of the Church," how right after my marriage (That took place way back in 1917, when I was 25 years of age.) that my wife had a dream that was so intense and so different that she didn't know whether it was really a dream or a vision. Anyway, I won't go into the detail of that now this afternoon; but it was an angel coming down

and putting his arm around both of us, to her very great surprise because I had lost all interest in church after 18 years of age.

I had been taken to one of the Protestant churches that started and originated over here in England and then moved to the United States. Like most churches, I didn't know that there was any purpose of the Church. I don't think anybody in it did. They had their ceremonies, such as it was, and a sermon was... Well, we just heard a good sermon in the sermonette. We just call that a sermonette here, and that's about the size of sermons that you'd ever hear in one of the Protestant churches.

But so far as understanding the Bible and going into the Bible, they just don't do that. The truth is they don't really BELIEVE the Bible, because the Bible is God speaking. Christ is the Word of God, and the Bible is the same Word of God in writing.

Jesus, The Living Word

Now Jesus was the Spokesman—the Word, or Spokesman. When He was on earth, He taught the apostles. He's not on earth now. He's in heaven as our High Priest. The early Church got all of its teaching from the apostles, and the apostles got it from Jesus Christ in person.

He is the Word of God in person. The Bible is the same Word of God, identically. Jesus is the real Author of the Word of God. This is what He said. This is what He taught the apostles, what He taught the ancient prophets; and they wrote it down, and it has been preserved.

The churches have gotten away from it, and they don't believe it. They have followed their own traditions, and their traditions have changed through the years. Their beliefs have changed. They have dropped many things that the early Church had 1950 years ago or more. They don't realize how much

they have changed. They've just changed from generation to generation.

You show them the Bible, and they hold it in contempt. They don't believe it. They claim they do, but they don't. They believe in God; but they don't believe God, because Christ is the Spokesman for God. Now I say, two cannot walk together lest they be agreed. But God and Christ are 100% in agreement. Jesus is the Word, but He spoke only what the Father told Him to speak—absolute harmony, and agreement.

Now there is some reason why we have kept these festivals through this year. There's some reason why we have the Church. And today I want to start. I want to cover a lot of ground this afternoon. I'm going to hurry right through. I am not going to spend much time on any one scripture. We should know the scriptures in this Church. But I want to put it all together, once again. I think we need to have it altogether to understand.

Understanding Origins

We come into this world, down in the year now 1983; it will soon be 1984 before we know it. We see the world as it is today, but we don't know what made it this way. We don't know how it came to be and become this way. It's like turning into a movie, a motion picture (or cinema, you call it over here); and well, it's almost over. It's been going on a long time, and you try to understand it and enjoy the last 5 or 10 minutes of it; and, you know, you don't understand it at all. You didn't see what went on before; and what you are seeing now doesn't make sense, if you don't know what happened before and what led up to it.

And that's the way it is. We come into this world now, in this Twentieth Century. And unless we know what was going on back in say the 10th century (and back in the 1st century, and way back before these centuries began, before Christ, and way back in the beginning, and what formed the

world, and how the world came to be) we just cannot understand. And that's why the world is without understanding. It doesn't get...

The people in the world have been born into this world. They've grown up. They see what is about them, and what the people think and believe; and all the others think and believe what they have been taught and told from the time they were little children; and they don't know what led up to the present time—the present kind of customs, the way people are living today, what they are doing. They never stop to think, “Why are people on the earth?” “How did we come to be here?”

Now the scientists are trying to explain God away. So they evolved evolution, a theory that postulates that creation came here without any Creator. In other words, evolution. Or EVILution, I guess you could pronounce it over here. And it is evil, although it would be spelled E-V-O-L (not E-V-I-L). Nevertheless, it is evil. And it is NOT true, and I have proved that. It is the atheist's explanation of the presence of a creation without any Creator who thought it out, planned it, designed it, and then produced it.

It's like saying that the watch I have here didn't have any watchmaker. No one thought it out; no one planned it; no one designed it. It just, the metals in it, came out of the ground. The gold and the other metals, they put themselves together. They formed themselves into the shape they are, put themselves together; and they got themselves started to running, but there was no thought back of it. There was no one that designed it, no person who made it. And you say, “Well, if I say that, then I'm crazy.”

But that's what the evolutionists are saying about creation, and you can't get around it. I know that's an old argument and they say, “Oh well, that argument was laughed out of school a long time ago.” Well, that's the way they get around it. They never have been able to answer it, however.

The Pre-Existence Of God

So now I'd like to begin at the beginning and just go real rapidly through everything. To understand these festivals that we've been going through, they picture the whole plan of the spiritual creation of God. God's creation of man has been in two stages: First, the physical creation, and then the spiritual creation. The physical creation began with Adam, the first Adam; and the spiritual creation began with the second Adam, Jesus Christ. But why? And what is it? And what's the difference?

Now the holy days begin with Christ and His sacrifice, and they picture the spiritual creation from that point on. The holy days don't begin back in Genesis with the first Adam. They begin with Christ and His sacrifice. The holy days were given to the Church; but they were given to first the Church in the wilderness back in days of Moses, called "the congregation of Israel" at that time. Congregation means the same thing as Church. Both come from the same root Hebrew word, any way.

To understand, we have to go clear back to prehistory. And I am going to go over it very rapidly and give you an overview of the purpose back of it all, and the Master Plan for accomplishing that purpose. We need to always keep that in mind. The trouble is, we forget that. And if we'd keep it in mind and see everything today in the light of what has gone on before, then we can begin to understand and get it in its right perspective, in the right place.

God and the Word preexisted before anything else. There was no other light. There was no earth, no sun and moon, no stars, no matter, and no living creatures; no living beings except just two. There was God and the Word. Now the Word was also God; and you find it in John 1, the first 4 verses of the first chapter of John in the New Testament. But, in the 14th verse, you find the Word was made flesh and became Jesus Christ.

Now before He was born as Jesus Christ, He was just the Word; and in Greek it is Logos, meaning Spokesman or Word. And the Word was God, and the Word was with God. They were together. And the Word made all things. All things were made and created by Him. And He LIVED. In Him was LIFE. He lived, and God lived.

Now we have two Beings, and They were alive. If They were alive, if They lived, They had to be doing something. They had to be moving. And They had supreme minds; and They could think, and plan, and design. Now why did They live? They had supreme mind. They had a purpose. The purpose, ultimately, was to create and reproduce Themselves; but to do that they had to create certain other things first.

They were going to create, for example, countless planets (like our earth) and suns (like our sun). And many of the stars we see are suns; and many of them, they look like tiny stars to us that you can just barely see. But that's because they are so far away that they look small. The farther away they are the smaller they seem to human eyesight. And some of them are, they say, thousands or millions of times larger even than our sun; and our sun is so much larger than this earth that your mind doesn't quite comprehend it.

And They were going to reproduce themselves into BILLIONS of God Beings born of Them. Now the average person going to a church never heard that, doesn't know anything about it. That is the great purpose back of it all. So now let's go through it a little bit.

God's Manner Of Living

If They lived, there had to be a manner of living. I have shown They had a purpose. To do that, They had to live and They had to do certain things. Now there had to be a manner of living. How did They live? They lived the way of love. Two can't walk together except they be agreed. Well, They

agreed.

Now the Word became flesh and became Jesus Christ. God the Father said, “You are My beloved Son.” BELOVED Son. He LOVED His Son. And Jesus showed He LOVED the Father, and obeyed God. They lived the way, then, of LOVE.

Jesus said He had never spoken anything except but for what the Father told him. Now two can't walk together except they be agreed. Well, They agreed 100% because all that Jesus ever said was what the Father told Him to. So They were in complete harmony and agreement. There was cooperation and agreement.

But two can't walk together except one is the leader. That is another principle. A husband and wife, for example, join together and become one family; but one of those two is going to be the leader. Now God made the HUSBAND the leader; but most husbands today abdicate their position. They just don't have leadership. They give it up; and so the wife has to pick it up and take the lead, and that is contrary to God's nature and what God intended.

Many a young woman today says, “I don't want anything in my marriage ceremony where I promise to obey. I am not going to obey. We are going to have a 50-50 marriage. No one is going to be the boss.” Well, let me tell you that means that she is going to wear the pants and be the boss, every time. There is no such thing as a 50-50 marriage. ONE is the leader, every time!

I have a daughter who says, “We have a 50-50 marriage.” Oh yeah? Well, I know—and her children, who are my grandchildren, will tell you—that mom is the boss. Yes, that's true! By the way, they were with me the last time I spoke over here, too, I believe. Anyway, it's always that way. Whether you believe it or not, or realize it or not, it is that way. But there had to be leadership.

The Way, Or Law, Of God

The way They lived is the way of love and cooperation, and there was a leader. Now that way of life becomes a matter of law. Stop and think. We talk about law, and we have laws. You have a Parliament down here in London, and the Parliament is a law-making body. Humans make laws; and you have police officers, and we have other officials, who administer and enforce those laws. If you break a law, there is a penalty and you get punished.

A law is merely a rule of human conduct, of human performance in relation to others. A law, then, is merely a rule, laying down the rules of conduct between minds. Now a law then, God's Law, is between God and man and between man and man. The Law of God is love, because that's the WAY of life that God and Christ lived. It's a way of living. It's the rule of living; and it's first toward God, and then toward neighbor.

The trouble is, in this world, what little bit of law they have is man toward man and man toward his human neighbor; but they leave God out of it entirely. They never think about the fact they have to have a relationship with God; and they do have, one way or the other. And most of them are ignoring God altogether, and God is not in their lives. He just does not enter into their consciousness at all. Most people will say, "Oh, yes, I believe in God." But they hardly ever think about the person they call God. It's just once in a while. God isn't really a part of their thinking, their everyday life.

Well, God and the Word lived. And They lived the way of love, and of mutual agreement entirely, and understanding. One was the leader. Now when one is in command as the leader, then you have government. That IS government. Government is merely an organized system of one administering law, which is a way of living. That's what a government is!

A government can form a city; you have a city government. Over here

you have shires, and we have states in the United States, and they have provinces in Canada, and so it goes. And each one has their own system of laws, and law enforcement. We have governors of states, and you have your system over here. We call that government. It's only an administration of the rules of living, one with his neighbor. Now the overall thing is the relationship of man with God.

Creation Of Angels

Now going back, God is a Creator. All right, let's go back to the beginning now. The first thing that God created was angels. Now there was no matter, there was no earth. There was no sun or moon, no stars, no such thing as matter—just space.

An angel is not composed of matter, but of spirit. Our human eyes cannot see spirit. There's nothing about spirit we can see. Spirit doesn't vibrate and make sounds and noises, so we can't hear spirit. You can't taste spirit; you can't smell spirit; you can't feel spirit. The only way you have any knowledge is just by the things that come into your brain through the senses of sight, or feeling, or hearing, or tasting, or smelling. So you don't know anything about spirit unless God reveals it.

All I know about spirit is what God reveals, and He reveals it in the Bible. And most people don't believe the Bible anyway, so they don't know anything about spirit. Scientists don't believe there is any such thing as spirit. They can't see it. They don't believe the Bible, so they just say there isn't any such thing. And yet spirit beings are running this world that we live in, and running their lives; and even scientists don't understand what is going on in their own lives.

Well, God first created angels; and angels are other spirit beings. And they were just out in space, out in space. Then after that, after God created

angels, next He created the entire universe and this earth. Now in the first chapter of Genesis and in the second chapter of Genesis, if you go back and scrutinize it really carefully, you will see that it says plainly in both places that the earth and the entire universe were created at the same time.

This earth was created the same time the whole universe was. I don't mean it means this same instant or the same... It uses the expression "day" there, but a day has two meanings. It is used two ways in the Bible. One is a time, a general period of time; and the other is a specific 24-hour day. It's not speaking of a 24-hour day in that case, but of the same general time.

Governing The Material Universe

God then created the universe and the earth, and the earth made is out of matter. Now the suns are not, well, they are matter all right; but they are a type of electrical matter that is very brilliantly bright and shines, and has terrific heat. Well, anyway, I won't try to go into a scientific analysis of the sun. But here was the earth, and God placed one third of the angels on the earth to inhabit the earth.

Now the earth has from its center something we call gravity that pulls everything down to it, so that we are on the surface. You know, people on the other side of the earth, just exactly through the earth (the other side from us), what seems "up" to us would be "down" down there because up to them is going just the opposite direction. But the earth pulls them up to it, or pulls us down to it, whichever. Now you can get all confused as you try to work out that in your mind, so I'm not going into that.

But on this earth God already had government. And God was the head of the government, and He ruled over even Christ; and then Christ was given rule over the angels. And They placed a super archangel... There were three types of angels. There are ordinary angels. They don't have wings. Then there

were seraphs. They are a little higher species or type of angels. They do have wings. The most, the highest, most intelligent of all, the most powerful, are cherubs. Only three of them are mentioned in the Bible—Michael, and Gabriel, and Lucifer; and they do have wings also. Two of them had wings that overspread over the very throne of God in heaven. One of them, Lucifer, was put on this earth. Now he was so brilliantly bright and beautiful that it went to his head. And here he was on the earth, and he was put in charge of the government of God over the angels.

Now remember, the government of God was administered by laws. You have to have law as a foundation and basis of every government. In the United States the basis is the Constitution of the United States. That's the foundation and basis of all laws. Any law contrary to the Constitution will be knocked out and cannot be called a law. And you have your basic Constitution in England. Every country does.

Beauty And Vanity

So God had His government based on His laws of love, first of all toward God and then toward one another. Lucifer was set on a throne of GOVERNMENT to rule the government on this earth over angels, but he was to rule under God and administer God's government. Now he looked and he saw that God had all these other planets that He had made, and He gave Lucifer only this one; and he got VERY jealous. He looked at his own splendor and beauty and began to think, "How important I am!" And vanity seized him. Vanity just gripped him; and he said, "I think I should be greater than God. Look at how beautiful I am."

Vanity grips a lot of women. That's why we've had a lot in the last two years to say about women wearing makeup. If there weren't any looking glasses, they wouldn't think about makeup anyhow. But a woman looks into

it and thinks, “How beautiful I am. I want to make myself more beautiful.” You know, all she does is put a lot of dirt on her face and thinks that makes her more beautiful. She doesn’t think of it that way. And why doesn’t she think of that way? She thinks of it in the way she was brought up from a little girl, and the way other women do; and the women of this world do it that way. And we are [creatures of habit] of following other people, and we do what they do. We don’t know half the time WHY we do what we do! And that’s the way it is. But let’s get back to God and God’s revelation, and get some sense into our heads.

Now this Satan was filled with vanity, and vanity exalts itself; and he began to exalt himself above God. And so he said, “I will exalt my throne above God. I will ascend; I will go up and knock God off His throne.” Now it might have taken him millions of years, we don’t know, to convince the angels under him that competition against God would be better than obedience to God—that competition, and vanity, and thinking that you are so great that you want to be greater than anybody, and thinking of what YOU want to do instead of what you are told to do, and organizing them into an army. And so the first invasion to try to have a coup of government and take over the throne of God and knock God off His throne occurred before a first human being had been created.

So they swooped up to heaven to knock God off the throne—all those angels and this super archangel, Lucifer; and they were cast back down to the earth. Now their minds became perverted. They turned against God’s way of love, and they turned to the opposite way of love of only for self. Love is outgoing. Love is toward God. And love is toward neighbor and other people, and concern for their good and their welfare. Now Lucifer became concerned only about his own good and his own welfare, and glorifying himself and not glorifying God.

And so Lucifer became Satan, the devil; and all of his angels sinned, as

you read in, let's see, I think it's II Peter 2:4. "The angels that SINNED," and they did sin. They became demons, instead of angels. And so sin entered.

Doing Your Own Thing

The principle of sin, then, was vanity; and vanity exalts the self. Vanity makes self want to serve self instead of others and to take away from others, to get from others. Instead of helping others and cooperating and giving to others, it's taking away from others; and getting and competition enters. And that became a law—a way of life. Here was Satan on the throne of the earth, and he changed the kind of law of the government he was administering; and the government he administered from that time on was vanity, exalt yourself, and do your own thing. Don't do what you are commanded. Do your own thing. And he was going to do his own thing.

Now just keep that in mind. I probably haven't explained it just that way before. You may not have thought of it that way before, but bear that in mind. I'm going to give you something that you may not have thought of before. But let's get this whole thing straight. So here we had now a throne on the earth and government, and the government now was based on vanity and self. There could have been some self-righteousness in it; but it was self first, nevertheless.

Creation Of Man

God then formed man. Now He formed man of the dust of the ground. God had created matter, and now He took some of the matter that was in the earth and formed a man out of it. But God doesn't create all at once. In many ways God creates in two stages; sometime in more of a gradual progression of stages, but in many ways in two different stages.

There's a great duality principle in God's creation. For example, He created the man, but the man physically was not complete. He was a physical being made out of matter; but God wanted to him reproduce and have children—because God's purpose was to take matter, create human beings out of that matter, and have those human beings become, finally, born as children of God; and create Gods out matter, reproduce Himself out of matter that He had created. That's God's ultimate purpose!

So now He created a man. But He wanted the man to reproduce, because He wanted there to be many of them (instead of just reproducing one person as a God); and the man could not reproduce. You know, no man yet could reproduce by himself, nor could any woman reproduce by herself.

So God didn't take some dirt and make another person. Now think of that. Maybe you haven't thought of it that way before. But God put the man to sleep. He used anesthesia, so to speak, so the man didn't feel it. Just like they do in an operation today in a hospital, He performed an operation; and He took one of the man's ribs out of him, and He made a woman out of that rib.

Now He didn't make the woman out of dirt. He made the woman out of the man. He made the man to rule over the woman, but He made the man to rule in LOVE over the woman. And it should be LOVING authority that a husband should have for a wife. Loving authority! And loving authority means he's more concerned really for her good, and her welfare, and her comfort, and her happiness than he is for his own.

You don't find very much of that kind of love. The trouble is people spell love, not L-O-V-E; but they spell it L-U-S-T, lust. It's what so many husbands look on a wife, not to love but for lust, what they can get from her; but love is giving. Remember that: Love is not getting. Love is giving.

So sin now had entered, and there was Satan's government. Now man

came. God had a purpose, and that was to reproduce Himself; but reproducing God's self required God's character. Character is learning this right way—which is God's way of life—and this principle, and obedience to that principle and to that leadership of God, and the WILL to enforce the self (even against the self-desire to go otherwise) to go that way. That is character. That character had to be instilled in the man. God intended to make man just as a clay model and instill that character in the clay model before the man could be changed into a spirit being and become God.

Temporary Life Only

Now He made man of the dust of the ground; and man had only the same life that an animal does, which is a temporary existence. There were just two differences between a man and an animal. Man is an animal except for two things. Two things differentiate him from an animal so that he is not an animal. One is he is made in the form and shape of God. God said not “Let Me” but “Let US.” See, there was God and the Word together.

Genesis 1:26 *Let us make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness.*

Man was made to have a relationship with God, because ultimately he is going to become a child of God in the God Family. God is a Family, and He wanted man to be born into that Family. Man has to have CHARACTER to be born into that Family, spiritual character; and spiritual character is built on the way of obedience to God's Law. God's Law is the way of life. It is the way that leads to happiness, the way that leads to cooperation, to great production, to great accomplishment. God is an accomplisher, a Creator.

So man had to have character. Now that required man to make a choice. And here was Satan that had started another kind of life, had another kind of law. And Adam had to make a choice between (1) Satan's kind of way of doing your own thing, your own way, and vanity and (2) to surrender to God,

and letting God reveal knowledge, and living God's way. Adam had to make a choice. So there were the two trees in the Garden of Eden that were symbolic—one of immortal life, which God would have given him through the Holy Spirit.

Now I say man was not physically complete till He made a woman out of man, and gave her to him; and they two became one family. Now they could reproduce and have children. But man was also made incomplete mentally and spiritually.

Now there's another way. I said man differs from an animal in two ways. One, he is in the form and shape of God. The other is man has a spirit with his brain that gives him mind power, and animals don't have that. Animals have a brain. An animal's brain... They find in the modern science of brain research, they find that the animal brain is just as good as the human brain.

But an animal can't think; an animal can't plan; an animal can't design, make plans, and carry them out. An animal has no sense of appreciation of music, and art, and literature. An animal does not have the sense of attitudes: of jealousy, of evil, of planning and scheming, and of things that man does. He just doesn't have the same type of mind. He doesn't have mind; he just has a brain. Animal brain is equipped with instinct and human brain is not.

Human brain rather has a spirit with it that God created to come within every man. A spirit. Now that spirit is essence. But the spirit that is in a man, that portion of spirit stays with the man for his entire life and becomes part of him, in a sense. It's something in him. Well, it's not... Man himself is matter, and the spirit is not matter. The soul is the living matter. An animal is a soul. A soul doesn't have spirit. A soul is not spirit. A soul is matter.

Satan has the world thinking that a soul is a spirit. It isn't. So get that out of your head, that soul is the spirit. Soul is the living, breathing animal.

But there is a spirit IN the human breathing animal. In other words, there is a spirit in the soul. Man is the soul. And there's a spirit in man, and that spirit imparts the power of intellect to the human brain.

The animal brain can't think like a human can. It can't know the things a human can know. It can't take this bit of knowledge and that and all kinds of bits of knowledge and put them together into a reasoning process. It can't calculate things by arithmetic, by calculus, and by advance mathematics, and things of that sort. An animal doesn't have that type of ability. God does. Angels do, because they have mind power.

Through the spirit in man, man has mind power. Animals do not. Now man is dust. He has only temporary life. But the purpose is to reproduce him as God. And he is given that one spirit so he could (through that spirit) have a contact with God. He was created to have a relationship with God, and God wants him to become God's own child.

So man had to make a decision about character; and, to become God's child, he had to have God's kind of character in him. In other words, he had to agree with God's way of life—the law of God—which is love; and its love toward God first, and then love toward neighbor second. That's what it is.

Rejecting Revelation

Adam influenced... Well, Satan got to Eve first; and Eve influenced Adam into making the wrong decision. Now Satan came to Eve; and when he came to Eve (I want you to notice one thing that maybe you never noticed before.) Satan didn't say to Eve, "Look. Don't you worship God. You worship me. I'm God. I am on the throne on this earth; and you worship me and my government, not God's government."

You know, Satan didn't say anything like that to her at all! He didn't try

to get her to worship him instead of God. No, no. He said: “You do your own thing.” He tried to put vanity into her. He said, “If you take that forbidden fruit, it’ll make you WISE. You’ll be like God. You’ll make yourself God. You can be as great as God or greater!” He wanted her to begin to think the same way he did, that maybe she could be greater than God.

And, besides, he tried to make her jealous and envious. He said, “God held something back. He didn’t give you all of the trees. He held that one tree back. He gave you everything else, but he held one back. God is stingy; He’s not fair!” He tried to make her envious and jealous.

So she used her reason. She did her own thing. Satan’s law was do your own thing, go your own way. She did, and she took of that fruit and did eat it. She took it first! Go back and read it in the third chapter of Genesis. She gave to her husband, and he did eat with her. She ate it first. She was deceived, Adam wasn’t. He knew better. He did it anyway, deliberately. And so, they both sinned; and they followed Satan’s way of life. They obeyed Satan’s law and rejected God’s law.

God forbid them to eat it; and, if they had taken God’s Law, they would have received the Holy Spirit of God. The Holy Spirit of God in the mind opens the mind to comprehend God’s Law and to comprehend God’s knowledge when God reveals knowledge. That means knowledge that is SPIRITUAL knowledge that man can only receive by having it REVEALED through the Spirit!

Now there is spiritual knowledge, and NO HUMAN MAN without the Spirit of God can understand spiritual knowledge. I don’t care how great an education you have. The most learned men in the greatest universities in this world cannot understand spiritual knowledge. They just cannot understand it. Simple-minded humans, if they surrender to God and receive God’s Holy Spirit, CAN understand spiritual things and spiritual knowledge.

So now, in a sense, Satan had kidnapped the one that God was going to have for His own child. So man had sinned, and now the penalty of that sin has to be death. Man was made with a temporary life that will run out—like a wound-up clock; and when it runs down, it will just quit running. In other words, it's going to die. God said, "If you will eat of that forbidden fruit, you will surely die." Satan said, "Well, God is lying. You're an immortal soul. You won't die." And human beings have been believing that lie ever since, although the Bible says, "*The soul that sinneth, it shall die.*" It says that twice.

God said to the soul, Adam and Eve. He said, "If you take of that fruit, you will surely die." So the soul can die! But educated men today in the universities don't believe that. They believe Satan. In other words, they followed Satan's government; and Satan is on the throne of the world; and they sold out to Satan; and Satan kidnapped them.

Now, man had only this temporary life. God's purpose is to reproduce man. It required this character. Adam chose the wrong way, and so he neglected to have God's character; and God thereupon closed up the Tree of Life, which is His Holy Spirit. You see Adam was incomplete, spiritually and mentally. He had one spirit, a human spirit; and that human spirit made it possible for him to have a contact with God. That spirit made it possible for him to receive the Spirit of God and to come to have spiritual knowledge. That spirit gave man the power to have MIND power and to distinguish certain good, up to a certain level, from evil.

But to understand spiritual knowledge and God's kind of love took the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit. That is what Adam rejected. So God closed up the Tree of Life. And God closed up that Tree of Life until AFTER Jesus Christ, the second Adam, should come and pay the penalty of man's sin. Otherwise man had to die.

And, in the meantime, it is appointed for all men to die and after that the judgment God had ordained at the very time of the foundation of this world. And the foundation of this world is the time when Adam made the wrong choice that founded a world. It was Satan's world, based on Satan's law and Satan's government, and Satan is on the throne ruling this world. It is Satan's world. It is not God's world!

Satan's World Today

The world assumes that this is God's world. It is not! It is Satan's world, and Satan has kidnapped them. In the eighth chapter of John you will read that the people who even believe in Jesus Christ; but don't have His Spirit, and don't obey God; and are the children of Satan the devil. And Satan is their father. Spiritually, he is their father. Not God. So this thing of the brotherhood of man and the fatherhood of God is just so much tommyrot. It isn't true, that's all.

In due time, Jesus came born as a human baby. He was God now in the human flesh, and He was born of the Spirit of God; and he did have the Spirit of God BY BIRTH. Remember no other man now had the Spirit of God. God has shut it up from all other humans. But Jesus was born with the Spirit of God; and as a baby He had the Spirit of God within Him, as well as a human spirit.

Now, the two spirits join you to God. The spirit in man was given to man as a means of joining that man to God, just as Eve was joined to Adam and became one family. And so a man can be joined, or a woman can be joined, to God by the Spirit and become one Spirit.

At-One-Ment

Now this Day of Atonement: You know, we have a lot to be found out on the Day of Atonement—that it is spelled A-T (at) O-N-E (one) M-E-N-T (ment). At-one-ment. We finally become at one with God; and we can't be as long as Satan has kidnapped us away from God. That's the situation that we are in.

Jesus came then as the second Adam to start God's world. Adam sold out to Satan. Satan is on the throne ruling the government with Satan's government, which is do your own thing. Vanity is the essence of his government. "Don't obey God. Do your own thing, and obey your own self." And, of course, Adam chose right and wrong. He chose the tree of the knowledge of good AND evil. And there IS good in man, as well as evil; but man's good can be only high enough up to the human level. The kind of good that God demands is a little higher kind of love than that.

Man can have a love that is carnal and selfish. For example, take mother love. That's perhaps the highest love that we know of in human love. A mother loves her baby because it's part of her, came out of her. It's hers, belongs to her. It's like part of her. It's a selfish love. She doesn't love other babies the same.

But God's love, God loves even His enemies. While we were yet enemies, Christ died for us. Those very people that were spitting in Jesus' face, were putting a crown of thorns on Him, making fun of Him, mocking Him, cursing Him, beating Him within an inch of His life; and finally taking His life by stabbing Him to death until He bled to death. He said, "Father, forgive them. They don't know what they're doing." And He gave His life for them. That was love!

You know, human good isn't that good. We don't have that kind of good. You can't have that kind of good until God GIVES it to you through His Holy Spirit.

I tell you, the churches in this world (the Church of England, the Roman Catholic Church, the Methodist, the Baptist, the Protestant churches) they don't know what that kind of good is—the righteousness of God by the Holy Spirit; and most of them don't ever say anything about the Holy Spirit of God. They don't know what it is.

It is the very life of God. And it's the Spirit, which is the attitude of God. It is the power of God. And it's the Spirit that opens up the mind to comprehend the knowledge of spiritual things, and the knowledge of God that an ordinary mind can't comprehend at all.

The Church, Start Of God's World

Jesus came to start God's world, and He came to start it by starting the Church. The Church was started with one Man. Now this world, Satan's world, was started with one man—the human Adam. Now God's SPIRITUAL creation is beginning with “Adam.” It'll be God's world, and it began with one Man—“the second Adam”—Jesus Christ.

He started the Church. He was the one that started it, one Man. He called 12 disciples and taught them. He told them to go out to teach others. Now also there were a number of others that followed Him; until and including the 12 disciples, there were 120 that followed Jesus. And on the Day of Pentecost...

After Christ had paid for the penalty of sin by His death, and had been resurrected (and making the resurrection to life possible for us), and had ascended up to heaven as our High Priest, the Church was founded on the Day of Pentecost. So we observe Pentecost in the summer. And that is the beginning of the Church; and that means, “called out ones.” The word “Church” comes from the Greek word “ekklesia;” and that means, “called out ones.”

Jesus said to the people He was calling to the Church (And they had to be called by God.), He said, “*Come out from among them*” of this world. Come out from them “*and be separate.*” Live God’s Way of Life according to God’s Law—instead of Satan’s way of life according to Satan’s law of doing your own thing, of disobedience to God, of the way of get instead of the way of GIVE, of the way of competition, of the way of... Oh, what are the words that I got to think of? Of controversy, of animosity and feelings toward other people of that kind, different forms of hatred, and so on.

“*Come out from among them*” and have God’s love in your heart and God’s Spirit in your mind, to open your mind to understand the knowledge of God, and the things of God; and have the love of God, so that we can even love our enemies and pray for our enemies. Do you do that, brethren? I confess I didn’t for years. I didn’t quite see that. But in recent months and years I’ve come to see that as never before, and I pray first for my enemies.

As I have said many times, I pray for them first before I pray for you people because they need it worse than you do, and you don’t need it. And I love those enemies. They want to kill me. They hate me. They do everything against me they can. And really the only reason they hate me is because I love the Way of God and they don’t. They don’t realize that. They would never say they don’t love the Way of God. They just say it’s me that they don’t like.

Well, I suppose those who killed Christ, they didn’t realize the only reason they killed Him was because of what He said. They didn’t like what He said. They didn’t kill Him because He had halitosis and bad breath. They didn’t kill because they didn’t like His looks. They killed Him because they didn’t like what He was teaching—the Way of love. And they wanted the way of self, and of vanity, and of self-glory. That’s the reason they killed Jesus.

Restoring The Government Of God

Now He came to restore the government of God on this earth. That's another thing, there's Satan sitting on that throne of the government of God. So the Church began with Jesus. Then there was the Twelve. On the Day of Pentecost there were 120. Now the Church began to grow. They received the Holy Spirit, the first time the Holy Spirit had been opened; but still it was opened only to those that God would call into the Church.

The Holy Spirit was not yet open to all flesh, although Joel prophesied (It's in the second chapter of Joel and about, I don't know, is it verse 30? I forget the exact verse, 32?) that the time will come when God is finally going to pour out His Spirit.

Now the Spirit is not a person. The Holy Spirit is not a ghost. The Holy Spirit is something God can pour out, like you pour water. It's essence, but it's divine essence. God will pour out His Spirit upon all flesh. That time has not come yet. But it began to be poured out on the Church on the Day of Pentecost. They were called out from the rest of the world, and they were called to live by God's government—the Law that forms the government of God in the Church.

Now you wonder: Why the Church age, then? Why does this Church have to have... We've had 1950 years already, and over. Why this church AGE, before God does anything more? Well now, let me explain that. It had to take time for the Church to be trained under Jesus as our High Priest; and we have to become kings and priests, when He comes, to train the rest of the world and convert the rest of the world.

God closed up the Holy Spirit; and no one could be converted until Jesus began to choose the Church EXCEPT—God made one exception—the prophets for the writing of the Old Testament, which was part of the

foundation of the Church. That was a part of the Church, born ahead of time. Just the prophets, no one else received the Holy Spirit.

Ancient Israel did not have the Spirit of God. God gave them His Law. But it's a SPIRITUAL law, and it took the love of God shed abroad in their hearts by the Holy Spirit; and ancient Israel didn't have that kind of love. They only had human love, and that would be their human righteousness. And our own human righteousness, God says, is just like a lot of stinking, nasty, filthy rags to Him. He can't accept that as righteousness. It takes the righteousness of GOD, which comes by the Spirit of God, which ancient Israel didn't have.

Meanwhile, it was appointed for all men once to die. And all through these generations for 4,000 years men had been dying, but after that the judgment. And as all die in Adam (I Corinthians 15:22, "*All die in Adam.*"), so the same all are sooner or later to be resurrected and brought back to life through Jesus Christ.

Now ancient Israel: They sacrificed lambs, which was sacrificing and a type of picture of Christ coming as the Lamb of God and being sacrificed for them; but they still didn't get the meaning. They never did understand it. And when the real Lamb of God came, they crucified Him. They rejected Him; and they do to this day reject Him, because their eyes have never been opened to know and to understand that the One they crucified was the very Messiah who gave His life for them.

But they are yet going to be called, don't you see? They're not condemned forever. You read the 11th chapter of Romans in the New Testament. Has God condemned and cast away His people Israel whom He foreknew? God forbid. Oh no, they are just for the time being. The day is coming when the Deliverer will come again to Zion and is going to save ancient Israel, even yet. And they will be resurrected. All those who died are

going to be resurrected out of their graves.

It's only a matter now of the time when God changes us from human unto God, when we are converted and when we become children of God. Now it began with the second Adam, Christ. The spiritual creation began with Christ. And ancient Israel has always been blinded to that; and to this day they are still blinded, and they can't open their eyes to it.

Called To Be Teachers

It's a matter of government. It's a matter that makes sense all the way through. There had to be a Church Age to have time to train people that God is calling out of the world; and it's only a few, one out of maybe hundreds of thousands. Every one of you is just one out of hundreds of thousands that God has called. And all of the others (a hundred thousand others for every one of you) God never called. They are not converted yet. Not yet. But many of them will be someday. People don't understand God.

So we are called—those called out for TRAINING in the Way of God. And God gives us His Holy Spirit so that we can understand the Word of God, so we can understand the Law of God, and so we can have the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit. We're being trained to become kings under Christ WHEN THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD IS RESTORED TO THIS EARTH instead of the government of Satan. Then we are going to start saving the whole world. That time hasn't come yet, and people don't understand it.

In the meantime, Jesus has become our High Priest, and He is the High Priest for THIS Church. He is not the High Priest for the Catholic Church. He is not the High Priest for the Methodist Church or the Church of England. He is the High Priest for THE CHURCH OF GOD and ONLY the Church of God, because the rest of them don't have this knowledge.

AND NO CHURCH ON EARTH BELIEVES A THING I HAVE BEEN TELLING YOU UP TO THIS POINT! They don't UNDERSTAND what I have been telling you here today. God has revealed it to me, and to me to reveal to you and for you to begin to understand it and to be trained in Godly living, in God's kind of living, according to God's Law, and through His Holy Spirit in your lives, His Spirit of love.

In the meantime, Jesus went to heaven as High Priest. Now I want to read a word or two right here out of Scripture. Well, I'm not going to turn to the Bible. I'm just going to quote this. In Acts 3, verses 19-21, the heavens have received Jesus until the times of restitution of all things. Now that's in Acts 3, verses 19 to 21—a sermon that Peter preached just a day or so after the Day of Pentecost when the Holy Spirit had first come.

Now restitution means restoring to a former state or condition, or restoring something that had been taken away and lost. Jesus is coming to restore the GOVERNMENT of God. He's coming to knock Satan off of that throne over the world, and Christ will sit on the throne and rule over all nations.

The Second Coming Of Christ

When Jesus comes in the Second Coming, He is going to sit on two different thrones; and they are both going to be in the same city and the same country. One of them is the throne of David, and that's the throne over the one nation of Israel; but that nation of Israel, every tribe has become a nation, every one of those 12 tribes. It will be on those 12 nations. And the different apostles of the first Church, of the first century, each one is going to be a king over one of those nations; and David will be over all of them.

But Christ is going to be over all the nations and all the other nations. Now who is going to be over the Gentile nations? You ought to read our

booklet, “The Wonderful World Tomorrow, What Will It Be Like?” and you will see who will be over all the other nations.

Now at the Second Coming of Christ, after the Church Age (We’re coming very close to that time.) Jesus will return; and Satan is going to be imprisoned away from the world for 1,000 years; and Christ will rule as the King of kings. We who have been in the Church, and have had His Holy Spirit, and have grown in the knowledge and SPIRITUAL knowledge and the grace of God, who have overcome, and have endured to the very end—we will then be made immortal. And at the time of Christ’s coming, those who have lived on earth from the Day of Pentecost on, and the ancient prophets, will all be resurrected out their graves.

And we that are alive and remain at that time, at the Second Coming of Christ—if any of us are still alive at that time; and I think that most of us would be. I don’t know that I will; but most of you will be, brethren. And maybe, by the grace of God, He would even keep me alive that long. I don’t know. That’s for God to decide.

The dead in Christ shall rise first; and we will be changed from mortal to immortal in the twinkling of an eye, less than a second. It’ll be an instant death and resurrection—made immortal, no longer composed of flesh and blood and of matter; but composed of spirit and made immortal, and rise and meet Christ in the air.

The only reason they are rising in the air to meet is because He is going to come down on the Mount of Olives over by Jerusalem and the people are going to come. You see this is a worldwide Church. And from all parts of the world they’ll be resurrected out of their graves, or others living are all going to go up in the air; and that’s the quickest way to get us all over, the same day. We will go instantaneously through the air, faster than airplanes, because we will be immortal then. We won’t have to have airplanes.

All right. Now I think we need to understand why God has left Satan on the throne here for 6,000 years—and 2,000 years even after Christ came and overcame Satan and qualified to rule in his place. Had Jesus come right after Adam sinned (back at the time of Adam 6,000 years ago), then the purpose of God of having actually millions of humans converted and made into God-Beings would have been frustrated. Millions had to be born first, if they were going to be reborn and born again into the Kingdom of God. So God has had to give this time. There's a reason for all these things.

Now man was made mortal so he could die in the first place, lest (as you read in Genesis 3 verses 22 to 24), lest he would take of immortality and take the Tree of Life and live in sin forever. Sin just makes you unhappy and everybody else unhappy around you. So God would rather they just come and die finally into extinction, as if they had never been; and that's the ultimate end of those that refuse. But in the meantime, all were to die in Adam and be resurrected in Christ into a time of judgment.

Judgment Now On Us

Now, in the meantime, judgment was put on the Church of God. And, this Church Age, we have been under judgment; and we are being judged once-and-for-all now. We in the Church—you are never going to have another chance, brethren. You are either going into the Kingdom of God by what you are doing now in this life, or you are go into the Lake of Fire and burn up to a crisp and be ashes under the soles of the feet of those that go on living forever. One or the other!

The rest of the people in the world have not been called. And, if God has not called them as yet (and millions and billions of people have lived and died, and have never been called by God), they are going to have their chance; and their judgment is going to come. Now judgment is going to

come, and I must read you something about that.

Let me see. I want to give you a definition of judgment. I've got it here. Judgment is a trial, a decision, or a sentencing of a judge. You are called before a judge, taken to a courtroom today; and you are tried to see whether you're guilty or innocent. The judge will decide to your guilt or innocence, and you go free or you're sentenced. He will put the sentence, and then it will be carried out.

But in the Great White Throne Judgment, when billions of people that have died unsaved, they are all going to be found guilty all right because they sinned. But then they are going to find that Jesus Christ came that they didn't know about, or that they have rejected because they didn't understand; and that He paid for their sin and paid the PENALTY in their stead, and that they don't have to die. If they want to receive God's Spirit, they can yet receive God's Holy Spirit. And then, if they will live according to God's Law and God's Way of Life, they can develop that character; and then they will be converted and receive eternal life.

At Christ's Second Coming that we celebrated on the Day of the Feast of Trumpets, Revelation 19:7, where it says, *"Let's us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife has made herself ready."* Brethren, we are to be that wife! We are the affianced... The Church is the affianced bride of Christ.

Now that includes the original apostles of 1900 years ago. That includes all the original prophets. That includes Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob; and I think perhaps Joseph is included with that. That includes Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel. That includes Daniel. That includes the prophets. That includes all the Church that really had God's Spirit within them, and have lived according to God's Spirit, and have overcome, and have grown in grace and knowledge, and have endured till their death time; and they'll be resurrected.

The Marriage Supper

Now the wife will have made herself ready. And that doesn't mean everybody in the Church is going to be part of that wife however. It does mean that—if we are accounted worthy to escape these things that are coming—we will, with the Spirit of God, if we are being [led] by it. Now let me see. The marriage is explained in verses 8 and 9. Let me go on and read that. Verse 8:

***Revelation 19:8-9** And to her [the wife] was granted that she should [That's the Church now, at the Second Coming of Christ.] be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints. (9) And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true saying of God.*

You know, brethren, ever since my wife Loma died back in 1967, I have been holding a formal dinner for every senior student at Ambassador College in Pasadena before they graduate. So I have to have a number of such dinners every year because I can only take 11 at a time. I make the twelfth, and the dining table just seats 12 people. It's a formal dinner. And at the last dinner that we had, which is just a few nights ago, I was saying that a king or two had dined at that table. Well, one king had dined there that died just a couple of weeks (10 days ago), King Leopold; and he sat at my right at the same table. But I had said that all those sitting there are future kings—kings and priests.

Brethren, we're all going to sit at a finer table someday, at that Marriage Supper. That is going to be a table of real splendor, let me tell you. That is going to be wonderful. That will be the finest table at which you have ever sat, and I hope you'll all be there. I hope I will be, and I hope we'll all be there.

The New Covenant

Now Christ made a Covenant with ancient Israel; and He is going to make a New Covenant, and we need to understand that New Covenant. You read of it in Hebrews the eighth chapter. Let's see.

Hebrews 8:6-7 But now has [Christ] obtained a more excellent ministry, by which also He is the mediator of a better covenant [Better than the Old Covenant.], which was established on better promises. (7) For if that first covenant [made in the time of Moses with ancient Israel]...

Now that made Israel a nation, one of the world's nations. It also made Israel a Church—a congregation called “the congregation of Israel.” And it also made Israel the wife of the One who became Christ. It was a marriage! But Israel played the harlot, and Israel was not faithful to the marriage. Now it was a marriage covenant. And so the New Covenant will be a Marriage Covenant.

Hebrews 8:7-8 For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place be sought for the second. (8) But finding fault with them [Not with the Ten Commandments, but finding fault with the people.], He said, “Behold, the days come, says the [Eternal], when I will make a NEW COVENANT [not with Gentiles]...

Now you know the Methodist church, the Baptists, and some of them, they will tell you that the Old Covenant was made with the Jews but the New Covenant will be made with Gentiles. The Old Covenant wasn't made with Jews! It was made with Israelites, and only part of the Israelites were Jews (just those of Judah). But the people don't understand those things today.

Hebrews 8:8 I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel AND with the house of Judah.

The house of Judah are the Jewish people. And the house of Israel are the British and the American people, and also the northern French, and the Dutch, the Belgians, the Swedes, the Danes, the Norwegians. He is going to make a New Covenant with them.

***Hebrews 8:9** Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers [That's back in the days of Moses.] ...when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued NOT in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the [Eternal].*

A covenant is a contract, an agreement. It was a marriage agreement, but it was a covenant that made them a nation; and it made them Christ's wife.

***Hebrews 8:10** For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel [and with the house of Judah] after those days, says the Lord; I will put my laws [God's laws] in their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be their God, and they shall be to me a people.*

And we will be God's people and God's nation. Now that will be a divine nation. And we will be part of them of the Family of God; and it will be the Family of God that will be the ruling nation, ruling over all the nations of the world for a thousand years.

In Revelation 3:21, Jesus said that if we overcome we will be granted to sit with Him on His throne when He comes and rules over all the earth. In Revelation 2:27-28, He said, if we overcome we will be given POWER over the nations to rule, and under Christ for that thousand years. And in Revelation 5:10 it says we will be kings and priests and will reign ON THE EARTH. Not up in heaven, but on the earth.

Times Of Judgment

Judgment is now on the Church, you read in 1 Peter 4:17. We are being judged now. The world and angels are to be judged by us. Now I want you to note in 1 Corinthians 6, verses 2 and 3. 1 Corinthians 6, verses 2 and 3, where the apostle Paul said:

***1 Corinthians 6:2** Do ye not know that the saints [And that should be us.] shall judge the world?*

We are taught, when judgment comes to the world in the Millennium, we're going to be doing the judging—under Christ—because we will be God-Beings. We'll be God then, and we are going to judge the world. Now notice verse 3:

***1 Corinthians 6:3** Know ye not that we shall judge angels? How much more then things that pertain to this life?*

We have to do some judging, even in the Church. We have to do it, and that becomes my painful duty at some times. But we have to judge according to the Word of God. He gives us all of the rules. It's just a matter of carrying out God's instructions. That's all.

Now, let me see. Matthew 25. Oh yes, I'm going to turn to that next. Matthew 25 and beginning with verse 31.

***Matthew 25:31-34** When the Son of man shall come in his glory [That's at the Second Coming of Christ, soon to happen now.], and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: (32) And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: (33) And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. (34) Then [Not later, but then. Notice, then...] shall the King say to them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, INHERIT the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.*

To inherit... We don't inherit the Kingdom when we are converted now, brethren. We only become heirs, and an heir hasn't inherited yet. Inherit means they will be changed from mortal to immortal, right then. Through the Millennium, those that are being converted, I presume that they will have to live a lifetime until they die; and be tried, and tested, and overcome (like we do), and grow in grace and knowledge (like we do). But at the time of their death during the Millennium, they will be changed. Instead of just dying and being buried, they will be changed to immortality right then; and that'll be carrying on through the Millennium.

Now I want to come to some things that may not have been understood. Back in Zechariah, and I won't take time to read it, but in Zechariah [14], especially in verses 16 to 19, you will read that in the Millennium when Christ comes all nations are going to have to come up to Jerusalem to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. And if the family of Egypt won't come, God is going to send no rain. They'll have a famine. And He will hold rain away from them for a year; and then, if they don't come, He'll send plagues that will make them come.

So when Christ comes at the Second Coming, the nations are going to be angry. They don't want Him. They are going to say that He is the antichrist, that He is NOT Jesus Christ. That's what they will be saying at that time. And it's going to take time during the Millennium. Again, people have learned the wrong things; and they are going to have to unlearn before they can learn God's truth. And it's going to take about three generations before (maybe four generations before) we find that we have taken away all these false teachings of the Protestant churches and the Roman Catholic Church, and other ideas and traditions of humans, and taught them the truth of God, much of which I am giving you right here this afternoon. It's going to take generations before they'll come to really understand it.

Now then, we are coming down to explain some of the final things.

Let's see how time is getting along. If this is right, we are overtime right now. Is that right? (I thought I was talking too late the Last Day on the satellite, and I found that I actually quit 15 minutes early.) Well, I'm going to have to close this very quickly; but I want to go a little farther. You've come a long distance for it; and I have too, to explain it to you.

At The End Of The Millennium

At the end of the Millennium, here's one thing that some didn't understand. The earth will be full of the knowledge of God. Satan will be gone. And after 1,000 years, now look how many lifetimes that is. A majority of the people, when you get down into that last 100 years of the Millennium, will not know much about Satan. He'll be long forgotten. And in that last group there will be many that as yet have not been changed into immortality; and they are still under judgment (and their time hasn't been fulfilled yet, either being condemned or receiving immortal life), which takes a lifetime for everybody anyway. And then Satan will be loosed.

Now the ones who are going to follow Satan: Remember that there will be MILLIONS of people born in that last century—only born then, never been born before. They'll know practically nothing about Satan. They have been taught God's ways. They don't know of Satan's ways of competition, and exalting yourself, and his ways of vanity. And, when Satan is loosed, he is going to instruct people in his ways of vanity, and competition, and getting everything for yourself; and millions are going to begin to fall for that and go his way. And that's when you read that they will come down and encompass the camp of the saints about, in Revelation 20; and fire will come down from heaven and devour them.

Then will come the White Throne Judgment. And in the Great White Throne Judgment, ALL OF THOSE—clear from Adam, and Cain, and Abel;

on down for all those 6,000 years; and all that have died up to the Second Coming of Christ—who were not converted and didn't have God's Holy Spirit (and that will be the overwhelming majority of all of them), they will then be resurrected in that Great White Throne resurrection.

You should have heard about that on the Last Day of the Feast, after the Feast of Tabernacles really was over, on that last final Great Day. And that's when that will occur. They will be resurrected, and they will live 100 years. And in that 100 years... There will be one more 100 years. At that time, they will then know the truth. All the blindness will be stripped from their eyes. God will call them. And if they will answer the call, if they will repent, if they will surrender to God's Way of Life—which is God's Law (and remember that the Law is a way of conduct, a way of life, of performance toward God and toward neighbor)—they then will receive God's Spirit; and there will be billions of them.

And then, finally, you will read in the second chapter of Hebrews that, from then on, all the others... There'll be a final resurrection, of course. That's in Revelation 20 also. Those of the incorrigible wicked that just rejected everything, some of them are finally just going to lose out entirely; and there'll be a Lake of Fire. That'll be the earth becoming a molten mass; and it will just burn them up, and they will be ashes under the soles of the feet of the rest.

Everyone will have had every chance in the world to become a God-Being. Everyone who has ever been born will. God is no respecter of persons. The fact that we have the opportunity now and others not yet means that there is a greater responsibility on us. Also I think perhaps some, well, I think a greater position because we will be priests and kings and reigning, helping to bring others to come into that condition; and ours will be, I think, the greater honor. But everybody is going to have the chance for immortal life and to come, as a God-Being, into the God Family.

Rebuilding The Universe

And then, finally, we are going to go out to the other planets all over the vast universe. What we are going to do God doesn't say. But they are just like hunks of burned out, decayed matter at the present time. I think they are going to blossom forth, just like beautiful gardens can be very beautiful on this earth; and I think under God's plan they can be more beautiful than they are now; and that's the way it's going to be.

And, I tell you, the glories that lie ahead that God has for all of us ultimately are clear beyond anything you can imagine or describe in any way at all. It's just clear beyond belief. So we should give all glory to God; and realize that, just like Paul wrote in Romans one place [Rom. 11:32], His ways are beyond finding out. They are so wonderful that we just don't understand them, and we don't really get them.

But I hope I have given you a little more understanding this afternoon.

We need to keep these things basically in mind because they are the foundation, and all the other things of how we must live as Christian lives fit within the framework of this general outline and foundation that I have given you this afternoon. I can see that it's my job to give you this basic foundation, primarily; and the other ministers... In other words, I'm giving you THE TRUNK OF THE TREE—the roots, and the trunk, and the major branches. And the others fill in with the smaller branches, and its smaller branches than that; then the little twigs. And all those are important too. They are all part of the same tree.

But it's all part of the same overall purpose of God, and it's a wonderful purpose. It's a wonderful thing that we have been called to such a high calling. It's clear beyond anything you can possibly imagine.

Well, I'm glad I have been able to have a talk—to be with you this

afternoon. And so I will say now, “Good-bye, till next time.”

The Value of Human Life

Sermon (October 1983)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Value of Human Life.....	1678	Spirit In Man	1692
What Is The Real Value Of Human Life?	1678	Who And What Is God?	1694
Truth Is Revealed	1681	Man Made In God's Image	1697
Missing Dimension In Knowledge	1683	God Creates In Duality	1698
True Gospel Restored	1684	God Is A Family And Reproducing Himself	
God Is Reproducing Himself	1684	1699
A World Held Captive	1685	Human Spirit Transmitted From Adam	1703
Why Truth Revealed To Us?	1686	Spiritual Reproduction Parallels Physical	
Real Value Of Human Life	1689	Reproduction	1705
Matter & Spirit Compared	1691		

Greetings once again, brethren! It's been three—let's see, one, two—three weeks since I spoke to you here and two weeks ago I spoke to about one thousand brethren in England, and two weeks ago I spoke to quite a group of our own people who are working over in Jordan. They all gathered together in my apartment in the hotel and we had a wonderful Sabbath together. While we were in Copenhagen the thought came up, in a discussion with Mr. Hogberg and Aaron—for the minute I can't think of his last name—I tell you some day the census-taker's going to come wanting to know what my name is and I'll tell him “I can't remember!” Aaron Dean—I don't know why names won't come to me. Something just stops it just before it comes out!

What Is The Real Value Of Human Life?

Anyway, we were discussing a question that came to my mind: “What is the only real value of a human life?” The only real value. Now, when you stop to think about it, there can be no more important subject than that. What is the only real value of any human life? And a discussion came, and I want

to speak on that subject this afternoon because there is no subject more important.

Why is a human life of more value than an animal life? A horse, a cow, a dog, an elephant; a human life has so much more value. Jesus even spoke about that and of how much more value is a human. God takes care of even little sparrows, but of how much more value are we? Do we ever think about the value, the real worth, of a human life?

You know when someone is very elderly, and for some reason the mind is no longer active, and they're just like a vegetable—they are totally unconscious. Not many years ago a neighbor right across the avenue over here on South Orange Grove, Mrs. Wrigley, in the Wrigley mansion, was lying there as a vegetable. She never regained consciousness. They knew she never would. But they tried desperately to keep her heart beating and to keep that vegetable just going on living. And they think that this life is the only life.

Now Mr. Hogberg mentioned to you the Princess coming up that evening; and we were talking about these crippled children, and it did touch us. You talk about things touching your heart. Well, we saw dozens of crippled children all on wheelchairs. Now just dozens of wheelchairs and children having to go back and probably will have to spend the rest of their lives on a wheelchair. Can't walk, can't get up and run and play like other children. It's a pitiful thing.

So there was that school, and then there's the other school of the mentally handicapped. And I was so glad to see the progress that has been taken in the last two years, since we've been concerned with that school of the mentally handicapped. Their minds are actually improving, and one has come along and come to the place where he actually now is employed and has a job. And we've sent our own people over there to institute for them and

aid with them in instituting another school in connection with it—a more advanced school, an occupational school, of teaching them occupations. That is, they take children from about 3 years old (We saw one or two new children only about 3 years old that had just come in.) up to about 12 or 13. Well, then what do they do? Now, our own people have seen that, and presented that to them and we are working with them to produce, now, an occupational school, so that from age 13 they are being taught how to be useful and earn their own living. But those things do touch you.

And I was speaking to the Princess that night about the value of a human life; and she made this remark: “Well, after all, we have to do what we can for them because, you know, there’s only the one life and that’s all and then it’ll be all over.” And, you know, I had to correct her. I said, “Every one of those children is going to be alive and walking and living again.” She looked so strange at me. I explained a little bit; but I don’t know whether the Truth actually soaked in, or not.

It is so STRANGE to the world, the real Truth! The world is in darkness and it DOES NOT UNDERSTAND THE TRUTH. THE WORLD DOES NOT UNDERSTAND THE VALUE OF A HUMAN LIFE. It doesn’t understand WHAT a human life IS! THE WORLD KNOWS NOTHING ABOUT THE GOD WHO PRODUCED A HUMAN LIFE. NOT ONE RELIGION KNOWS WHO AND WHAT GOD IS! THEY DON’T KNOW, except God’s own Church. And God has sent us to bring a light into the world—a world that is in darkness, intense, deep, black darkness.

It doesn’t know what and why a human being is! How do we come to be here on the earth? WHY do human beings inhabit the earth? Why are we of more value than an animal? People just don’t know. They know what their eyes see in front of them. They know today they have an automobile; a hundred years ago they didn’t have anything like that. Today their minds are on things like that. Their minds are on what they see on the television screen.

Their minds are mostly on being amused and entertained today. Of the Creator who thought it all out and who planned and designed them and produced them and gave us what life we have, which is only a temporary existence: they don't even know that. You're living in a world of darkness.

Truth Is Revealed

Now humanists and certain psychologists will talk about developing the hidden powers and resources within you— the “god” that is in you. And the only god they know is the god that's supposed to be your own self, within you. “Develop your latent powers within” and that is the psychology of this world; and it's all vanity: “Develop yourself; exalt the self; think of how great you are.” Now human life, let me say, is infinitesimally less valuable of itself, just of itself, and at the same time is INCREDIBLY of greater value than the most highly-educated people in this world have any conception or understanding. A HUMAN LIFE, SO FAR AS THEY KNOW, AND THE PART THEY KNOW ABOUT IT, is of infinitesimally LESS VALUE THAN THEY THINK.

Now think that over a while. You probably never thought of that before. Think that statement over. On the other hand, a HUMAN LIFE (if you understand it) POTENTIALLY IS OF INCREDIBLY GREATER VALUE than anything they ever remotely dreamed. Because they don't know what it is, or what it is IN or about a human life that makes it different, that makes it of VALUE.

Now GOD has REVEALED IT! Real Truth is revealed. You know, Jesus Christ said: *”I thank thee, Father in heaven, [speaking to God: the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob] these things are hidden from the wise and prudent [they don't understand] and yet they are revealed to babes”* if they will be babes in understanding and come to God and let God reveal the Truth.

Truth is revealed. You never can think it out yourself. Real Truth you can't see with your eyes; real Truth you can't hear with your ears. Now how does knowledge get into your mind? Only through those two senses and the sense of feel and touch or of smelling, and of tasting. There's no other way that knowledge comes into your mind.

To really understand, Truth has to be revealed. And it's been revealed ever since God had Moses start writing that book we call the Holy Bible. It's all there. Of course, it wasn't all written by Moses. That was the start. It was written by many different writers over a period of many centuries and many hundreds of years. And yet there is not one contradiction anywhere and every Truth shows it came from the same mind; all the way through it all came from the same mind.

There's a great MISSING DIMENSION in knowledge today. We have our great universities, our schools of learning, and one of the greatest university presidents of our time, who was president here in 1960s up at the University of California at Berkeley, said that the university (the modern university today) is actually a factory. You know, that was rather new: A university, a factory? We think of a factory as the place that, well, perhaps makes automobiles.

Or like Mr. Hogberg was explaining to you, we were down at the factory producing the new Gulf Stream III airplane. Now that's quite a large factory. I just wondered if you got one idea, while he was describing that—these different parts scattered around; they weren't all just scattered right around within two or three steps of one another: it was quite a large factory and one part was in one part of the factory, another part way over in another part of the factory, a good many steps away. It's quite a large factory, and I was amazed at how many parts go into an airplane! It's absolutely amazing! Most of it, you just see the outside. You don't realize what goes inside to make that plane (like a great big house). And it goes up in the air, and travels

so swiftly—over 600 miles an hour—getting us from one part of this earth to another.

Missing Dimension In Knowledge

So Truth is revealed. There's a missing dimension in knowledge, and it's missing from ALL education in the universities. The REAL knowledge, they know not. They simply do not know. They know materialism. They know about things of matter, things that can be seen, tasted, smelled, or heard. But you don't see spirit, and you can't hear spirit; you can't taste it or smell it. And so they know nothing about spirit; and they deny that there is any such thing. The most important Truth has been restored to this Church, and God has used me to restore a great deal of it to you.

He was speaking in the sermonette, Mr. Hogberg was, about light and how even Mayor Teddy Kollek (Was it Mayor Kollek, or was it Mr. Moshe Kohl?) who said that I had brought light to the world. Well, if God has brought light through me and, of course, it was God who did it if it was light. I was just thinking: someone said that most important thing that God had brought to me was what I'm going to explain to you this afternoon. Well, I'm not so sure, because other very important bits of knowledge have come, that the world doesn't understand.

First is the spirit in man. That is not understood at all in any university in all of the knowledge being disseminated. Now what is a school or a university? We start in little first grade schools teaching people to read and write when they're about six years old; and we go all the way up to the great universities. And I pictured it, as I've said many times before, as a lot of pupils sitting at their desks in a classroom and a funnel stuck in each head; and a teacher goes around just pouring ready-made, so-called knowledge into their heads.

Now in the sermonette last night I think you heard there is a way that seems right. No, I guess that was in a sermonette this morning. “*There is a way that seems right* to a man, the end thereof are the ways of death.” What seems right to a man is not always right, or true; and the knowledge being disseminated is far from the real Truth. But people know and believe just what’s BEEN STUFFED IN THEIR MINDS by other people. AND WHERE DID THE OTHER PEOPLE GET IT? Well, they sort of thought it out; and there’s every CRACKPOT RELIGION AND EVERY CRAZY IDEA IN THE WORLD about what man is, why we’re here, what life is, about any kind of knowledge. And this world knows almost nothing.

True Gospel Restored

Now there is a spirit in man. I’m going to say more about that later. But is that more important than the fact that the True Gospel has been restored? JESUS CHRIST CAME WITH A GOSPEL. WHAT DOES “GOSPEL” MEAN? It means “Good News.” And Jesus Christ came as a newscaster. He brought news. Now, we think of news as something that already happened. That isn’t “news.” That’s “olds!” You should call that “olds.” It’s already old, it’s already happened. He brought NEWS that hadn’t happened yet. It was an announcement for the future: the Kingdom of God. It hasn’t come yet, but it’s on the way. And we, brethren, are part of that Kingdom of God in embryo. We’re only the embryo. We haven’t hardly become a fetus yet; let alone being born as a human from that point of view, if you understand how I’m speaking.

God Is Reproducing Himself

Then another bit of very important knowledge is the fact that God is reproducing Himself. The World doesn’t know that! NO RELIGION

KNOWS THAT. JUDAISM DOESN'T KNOW THAT! MOSES KNEW IT. IT'S IN THE BIBLE—AND THEY HAVE THE BIBLE BUT THEY DON'T SEE IT THERE. THEIR EYES ARE BLINDED AND THEY CAN'T SEE IT. IT'S IN THEIR OWN BIBLE AND THEY DON'T SEE IT.

PROTESTANTS have the Old Testament and the New Testament. There's a lot of knowledge there. And they're blind. They read right over it. They don't see it. It's plain. It's simple. It's not difficult. They try to make something complicated and difficult out of it. They just don't understand, because their minds are not willing to understand. That's why. They close their minds up like a clam. "Don't disturb me; I'm asleep; I don't want to know; don't wake me up; I just want to go on like I am." (Like you're in a dream, and you don't want to wake up.)

Restoring the Gospel was one thing; the fact that God is reproducing Himself; and then the Government of God has been restored. People don't know anything about God's government, and that has to do with the coming Kingdom of God: a government that will rule the whole world and bring us peace at last—and there will be world peace and in our time. And I tell people that; they think I'm a little bit off in the upper story. They think I don't know what I'm talking about because they're living in darkness, and they simply don't understand.

A World Held Captive

I'm having to write very large things; and still I can hardly read it, my eyesight is getting so bad. Oh yes, one other thing that the world doesn't understand, that has been restored; and that's the subject I'm writing a book on now: This world is held captive. A WORLD HELD CAPTIVE! You know, we've been reading a great deal about hijacking of airplanes lately; and the passengers are hostages. They're held captive. Do you know that this whole world has been kidnapped and that this whole world is held CAPTIVE? And

the world doesn't understand that.

The world assumes this is God's world, and it isn't God's world at all. Moses wrote it: the first chapter of Genesis and the second chapter and the third chapter of Genesis, especially in the third chapter. It's held captive by a great former super-archangel, or a cherub, called—his original name was Lucifer—and he became known as Satan the Devil. And he kidnapped the one that God put on this earth in the first place, and we are all just his children. We're his family. He was a human being. We're the human family, and we're all the children of our original parent. He was our original human father, Adam. And it's all right there; it's in the Bible. It's plain. It's simple. They read it. But the preachers, the priests, the rabbis have never explained it. And so the **PEOPLE DON'T UNDERSTAND IT BECAUSE THEIR MINDS ARE CLOSED LIKE CLAMS, AND THEY WON'T OPEN THEIR MINDS TO UNDERSTAND.**

Yes, it's a world held captive; and it's **SATAN'S WORLD, NOT GOD'S WORLD. AND IT COULD ONLY BE HELD THAT WAY IF GOD DIDN'T ALLOW IT.** And it's not going to be held captive much longer. So we can get back to that song that's been composed by Ross Jutsum, "It Won't Be Long Now." It won't be long now until the world will be held captive no longer—until the great Messiah will come and will rule all the world and will set the captives free, and we'll come to a different way of living.

Why Truth Revealed To Us?

Why has the Truth been revealed to us? Well, perhaps I should say, "I don't entirely know." I know God dealt with me first, because He did use me to start it off; and He's used all of you then, too. But He started at least this modern era of God's Church through me. And somehow He took away all the prosperity that I'd had financially and economically after I'd had real

prosperity. I'd been quite successful. He took that all away, and He beat me down, and He made me willing. And then He challenged me. And it was the hardest thing I ever had to admit: how wrong I had been. But my eyes came to be opened. He made me willing. I can't take credit for that! I would never have been willing of myself. It's not from any goodness of mine that I became willing to let Him reveal the Truth to me. It's all His doing. But He did make me willing.

And I was challenged. First I was challenged on the doctrine of evolution. That has become, in a sense, the god of the world. Of course, in another way, Satan is the god of the world. But Satan's used this doctrine of evolution to deceive the world—the intellectual and the educated world. As I studied evolution I began to wonder “Does God exist?” because if you believe evolution, you can't believe in a real, personal God—because it is the atheist's explanation of the presence of the creation without any Creator. No Creator thought it out, designed it, planned it, produced it, brought it into being. The watch I have here: no one thought it out, no one planned it, no one made it, it just made itself. The metals came out of the earth; and they put themselves together, and put themselves in this form and shape, and started themselves running. I guess they just put themselves on my wrist! According to that theory—it's just as nonsensical to believe it that way!

So why was the Truth revealed now—to us, and to this Church? I began to realize I'd never proved whether there was a God; and I said, “Now I've gotta know! I'm not even going to believe in the existence of God unless I find it PROVED!” I had to DIS-prove evolution first, and I had to prove how false that theory is. Not just believe it is, not just think in my own mind “Oh, well, I believe it's going to be.” Making my mind to believe it's false. I proved it absolutely. There is no evidence whatsoever that is real evidence. And then I had to prove that God does exist. The next thing I had to prove is that God has communicated and revealed Truth to us.

And I had to prove whether the Bible was the book by which He does that revealing. And I PROVED it. I came to know that it is ABSOLUTE AUTHORITY. And the Bible speaks with authority if people would only believe it. It's not complicated; it's not difficult to believe. But people have been taught something else. And I tell people what the Bible says and say, "See..." "That isn't what I've been taught. No, I can't accept that!" "No? Well, there it is in the Bible. Read it for yourself!" And they're "Yeah, I know. I read it. But I can't accept that. That's not what I've been taught!"

YOU HAVE TO BELIEVE WHAT SOME OTHER PERSON TAUGHT YOU? SOME OTHER RELIGION? SOME OTHER ORGANIZATION? WHAT ABOUT THESE religious organizations in the world? What are all these religions? WHAT ABOUT ALL THESE NATIONS, all the other kinds of organizations in the human society—where did they COME FROM? The world doesn't know. You were born in such a world, and you just take it all for granted. That's what has been going on.

I had to prove that the Bible was the Word of God. But I discovered as I went on that the Bible is coded. It's a coded book. I've explained so many times how one government sends a message to their own ambassador in another country, but the message is coded. Now if we send a message through the State Department at Washington to the United States ambassador in Moscow, we know that the Russians are going to get that message; and they're going to read it. But it's coded so the Russians won't understand a word of what it says when they do read it! But it's coded in such a way that the United States ambassador is going to be able to un-code it and read it and understand it.

You know, the Bible is like that. And there's ONE THING that un-codes it so you can understand it, and that is surrender to God, which results in God giving you His Spirit to unite with your spirit in your mind. And then you can begin to understand the Bible because the Bible is concerned with spiritual

knowledge, and spirit is not something that occupies space and has weight. We define matter, and in the universities they will tell you that matter is something that occupies space and has weight. Look in a dictionary, and you'll find that definition. Spirit does not have weight, and spirit cannot be seen. Gravity has no effect on it. You can't hear it, and you can't smell it, and you can't taste it. And so the average person can't do anything about it—except by revelation from God. And I found that God would reveal it and would give His Holy Spirit to whom? Who? The Holy Spirit, the Bible says, "*which God has given to them that obey Him.*" Only to those that obey God, and most people don't want to obey God. They don't want to do it.

I had to come to the place where I was willing to admit how wrong I had been. I had to come to the place I had to admit how wrong I WAS—and everything about me. I had to get all the vanity out of my head. I thought I was a pretty important cock-of-the-walk as a young man, because I'd been successful in my twenties—when I was a young man.

Real Value Of Human Life

Well, now the answer to the question: What is the one, sole, real value of a human life? Why is it more valuable than a sparrow for example, or a horse, or a cow, or an elephant? The **SOLE VALUE OF A HUMAN LIFE LIES IN THE HUMAN SPIRIT COMBINED** with the human brain. Now think that over. No scientist understands that because he doesn't believe there is any such thing.

All right, let's go back to see what Moses wrote:

Genesis 1:1 *In the beginning God* created the heavens [It should be plural, and is in the Hebrew.] *and the earth.*

But the word for God that Moses wrote was not "God." That's an

English word. It's been translated into English. Moses wrote it in the Hebrew, "Elohim." And Elohim means "more than one". The "-im" pluralizes it—Gods, more than one. And it is more than one because in verse 26 this "Gods" said:

Genesis 1:26 *Let US* make man in our *image after our likeness*.

Didn't say, "Let Me." Not one person. "**Let Us.**" WHY? Ask the Hebrew scholars, who study Hebrew, "WHY IS IT PLURAL? WHY DOES IT SAY 'US'?" And they can't answer you because they don't know who and what God is!

Now, we look to the second chapter of Genesis and verse 7; and it says that:

Genesis 2:7 *God formed man* [Now He designed man and planned him first. And then He had to form him.] *of the dust of the ground*.

Now man was formed out of what? Spirit? No! He didn't form man out of spirit. He formed man of the dust of the ground. That's plain **matter** that occupies space and has weight. Just that simple!

Genesis 2:7 *And man* [Now that's the dust of the ground, remember.] *became a soul*.

Then the dust of the ground is a soul, and a soul came from the dust of the ground, and a soul is NOT SPIRIT. But the devil came along. You see God had said, "If you eat that forbidden fruit you will, surely will die!" In other words, "You don't have everlasting life. You have a limited existence. And, if you take the wrong fruit, you will die. If you take the Tree of Life (which was offered to him in the garden of Eden), you shall live and have everlasting life."

"If you take the other tree..." Adam had to make a choice. And God

said he would die—that he was not immortal. He was not an immortal soul, but a plain mortal soul. And the soul you see in the first chapter of Genesis. Let's see. Is it three or four times? Animals are referred to as “nephesh” the same way. The Hebrew word is “nephesh.” But when it came to man the translators translating into the English language translated it “soul.” When the same Hebrew word “nephesh” was used to describe animals (cattle, for example), they translated it “creature.” And we think of them as creatures, and not human. Well, then man became a living creature same as animals, or animals became a living soul the same as man—whichever English word you want to translate it in.

Matter & Spirit Compared

Man then—the soul—is made from the dust of the ground. Now the Bible reveals there is a spirit in man, in Job, for example, the thirty-second chapter and verse 8: “There is a spirit in man.” And then you go on over to verse 18 in the same chapter, and it says that “*the spirit in me constrains me*” (impels me, moves me). There's a spirit, then, in the soul; and the soul is made of matter, material. Spirit is not material.

Now let me explain something right here. I don't know that I've ever explained this to you before, brethren. So listen. Matter... I may have explained this, and you should know this anyway. Matter can be present in three states. It can be in the solid state—like this table, this magnifying glass, a microphone, a solid chunk of ice. Now you take a solid chunk of ice and at a certain degree of heat, you get above 32 degrees Fahrenheit, and it becomes liquid; and we call it water. That's into a different state now. It's the same thing, but it's in a different form and state. It's in the state of water. It's liquid, and it will pour. Ice won't pour. Now you put it in a still higher heat, above 212 Fahrenheit; and it begins to become a gas. In other words, steam. It goes up in the air, and that is a gaseous form. Air is a gas. From that point of view,

it's one of the gasses. Matter can be present in those states.

Now spirit can be present in two different states. I don't think I've ever explained this before, so listen carefully. Spirit can be present in the, let's say, the, what's the word I usually use? Like an essence: like water, or like air. Air is an essence. Water is an essence. You can pour water. Air you can push and funnel and one thing and another, or you can go through it. Now spirit can be like that. God spoke about "pouring out" His Spirit. Jesus talked of the Spirit of God as living waters—that are living waters—flowing. That's essence. That's not something solid. Now spirit can also be present in a form of an actual personal being. God made spirits, or angels; and angels are composed of spirit. And each angel is an individual personality—an individual being, and not just some essence.

Now **the spirit in man** is more of an essence. It is not a ghost. It is not another person inside of you at all. The spirit in you does not have a mind of its own at all. The spirit in you can't think. It's your brain that does the thinking. The spirit merely empowers it to do the thinking. But it's the brain that does the thinking. The spirit can't know anything: the brain does the knowing. The spirit can't see: it's your brain that sees through the eye. It's the brain that hears through the ear. The spirit can't hear; it can't see; it can't think; it can't know—because it's an ESSENCE, like air or like water. And the word for "spirit" in Hebrew is the same word that is the same word for "air". And in the Greek language "ruach..." No, "ruach" is the Hebrew word, isn't it? It's the same word for air or for spirit; and it's the same in the Greek. It's the same Greek word for spirit is the same word for air. Now an angel, though, has a separate mind of his own—is a separate being and personality. And spirit can be present in those two forms.

Spirit In Man

The spirit in man is just spirit that uses the human brain or—no, it doesn't use the human brain really. (Maybe it's the human brain uses it? I don't know.) But the spirit constrains the brain. It empowers the brain with that faculty we call intellect: to think, to reason, and the many things that a human brain has that an animal brain doesn't have—an appreciation of music, art and literature; the different moods and the different attitudes—of resentment and bitterness, hatred; or of love and affection; of cooperation and out-flowing love for the good of others. Or, on the other hand, of contention, of hatred, of competition, of strife, and wanting to harm or hurt. And that is all from the human brain, but the spirit gives you that and that type of attitude. Animals don't have that. They have brains, but the physical brain doesn't have all of that. It's in the spirit that is connected with the human brain.

Now the human spirit, then, does not supply us with the life we have. And the life we have is only an existence. And what gives us this life that we call human life, which is only existence? Well, it's the blood of life. And Moses wrote, "*The blood... is for the life thereof.*" And also Moses wrote, "*God breathed into us the breath of life.*" Now, notice, God breathed it into man. I'm going to come to that later too.

Now the spirit empowers the brain with intellect and also something else. **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERS THE BRAIN TO HAVE A CONTACT WITH, AND A RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD, or a union with God.** Now a cow and a dog can't have any relationship with God or any union with God. They have a brain just like you and I. And a cow's brain is just as good as a human brain. Did you know that? The modern science that the universities are discovering of brain research has shown us that human brain is no better than animal brain. And they search **IN VAIN** to find **WHERE'S THAT DIFFERENT SOMETHING IN THE HUMAN BRAIN** that they can't find in an animal brain. Why do we have these different attitudes and different

senses of things like art, music and literature that animals can't have? What's the difference? They look, and they can't see anything different.

No, you can't see it, because you can't see spirit. But it's the spirit in man that makes all that difference. It's the spirit of man that can be united with God, who IS a Spirit; and God's Spirit can come, like essence, into US and unite with our spirit. And you read, in the eighth chapter of Romans in the New Testament, that His Spirit witnesses with our spirit; once His Spirit comes to us, witnesses with our spirit that we are the sons of God. And people see that we are to be begotten first, and then later born as sons of God. Now, if I say that my son was born of me, and as my son, he's human like I am; and a lot of people can't believe that, huh? Oh, yes they do! They can believe that all right! But when you say you're a son of God, they think "Well, you're just something God made". NO, He means literally we become sons of God. But we are not yet at this time. The Bible reveals we are only begotten, not yet born. A fetus in the mother's womb is not a born human yet. It's only a begotten human. It's not yet born. So the spirit of man can unite us with God; and we were made to have a contact with—a union with—God. But the world has cut itself off from God.

Who And What Is God?

Now, who and what is God? The world doesn't understand. Is God one person? Just one great person? They speak of God as "Him" or "He"—one person. But Roman Catholics and most Protestants say that God is a Trinity—Father, Son and Holy Ghost. Judaism rejects the Trinity and says that there never was a Son; that Jesus was a bastard, not the Son of God. They don't understand their own Hebrew scriptures. But children are born, and they've got to believe what it says. I can show them that the Bible says, the very Bible that you have says, this. "Well, I can't believe that! You see, I've been taught something else." What are you going to believe? What you've been

taught by people that are IGNORANT? Or believe **what** God says in plain language.

DO YOU KNOW WHY WE CAN BE A LIGHT TO THE WORLD? YOU KNOW WHY LIGHT HAS COME AND I CAN GIVE YOU LIGHT? IF I'M A LIGHT TO THE WORLD, WHY? BECAUSE I BELIEVE GOD. THIS IS GOD SPEAKING IN THE BIBLE, AND I BELIEVE IT. People say, "Well, I believe in God." Yeah, but that's something different. Believing in God is something altogether different. There were a lot of Jews that believed in Christ. And Jesus turned to them and said, "*You are the children of your father the devil*" because they didn't believe Him. They didn't believe God. They only believed on Him. They believed that He exists, and that's all—that there was such a Being. That's, that's easy! But to believe Him is to believe what He says, and that's what people won't do—is to believe what He says.

Now what is God? God is supreme mind; and God is supreme spiritual, perfect character. And what is character? Character is of an individual entity or being who has a mind, and has been able with the mind to come see light from darkness, or truth from error, and to see what is right and the right way; and who has willed to go that way and to actually put it to action and DO it and to DO THE RIGHT even if he wants to do the wrong. Did you ever see something that you sort of knew was wrong, but yet you wanted to do it? Well, I have, and so have you. Be honest! You've seen things that you knew you shouldn't do.

The other night after dinner there were some chocolates put on the table at the end of the dinner, about the time the coffee came or after, in a restaurant. Now I knew I shouldn't take a chocolate. I said, "Oh, I think I won't do it." And someone else said, "Well, I'm going to take one." So I said, "Well I guess I will too!" [Laughter.] I didn't do that willfully, but I certainly did it willingly! I yielded to it. How many times have you yielded to do

something? You sort of knew you shouldn't do it. But perfect, supreme character is the ability to enforce yourself to do what your mind sees and you know and has been proved is right. And to resist the wrong, no matter how hard it is. And it gets down to doing, and not just thinking or believing. It's not wishy-washy. It's doing.

Now God is supreme mind, and God is supreme perfect character. That's what God is. Now we find in Genesis 1:1 God is called "Elohim": E-L, "El" in Hebrew is God. But Elohim, the "-im"... Eloah is God [singular], but the Eloah-im means more than one. And that's described in the New Testament, in John 1 verses 1 to 4. Now in the New Testament many so-called scholars say that the book of John should have been put first in the New Testament. Now by that they don't mean it was written first. It might have been written last. But, in time order, that it should be at the first; and that would be the very first word then. If it were put first, the first word in the New Testament would start out the same as the first word in the Old Testament.

In the Old Testament, it starts out:

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*

In the New Testament, then, it would begin:

***John 1:1** In the beginning was **the Word** ...*

Now who was the Word? What do you mean Word? Well, Word is just simply Spokesman. But the fourteenth verse of the same chapter explains it. You don't have to turn to somewhere else to have it explained what it means. Right there in the same chapter it says, in verse 14:

***John 1:14** The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us [became Jesus Christ].*

Jesus Christ was the Word. And He became, finally, born of the virgin Mary just as Isaiah prophesied; but the rabbis won't believe that. Their Bible says so, in plain language: "*A virgin shall conceive and bear a son.*" But they won't believe it. "*A child is born unto us [and He will grow up] ... THE GOVERNMENT WILL BE ON HIS SHOULDER.*" He was to be born as a child. BUT THEY'RE BLIND. THEY'VE REFUSED, BITTERLY REFUSED TO BELIEVE what their own Bible says and what Moses taught them. It's time that the whole world wakes up! Jews are wrong; Christians are wrong; Catholics are wrong; Buddhists are wrong; the whole world has gone wrong. And the world is in darkness, and the world is suffering, and the world is in trouble. And there's a reason, there's a cause for all of that. I'm trying to bring light to the world.

Man Made In God's Image

So the Word was the one who later was made into a human baby, who grew up and became Jesus Christ.

John 1:1 ...and the Word was with God.

Now the Word was a Personage, and God is a Personage. Now you've got two Personages there. And then it says:

John 1:3 All things were made by [the Word] and without Him was not anything made that was made.

And the next verse says:

John 1:4 In Him was life...

And in God was life. They LIVED. If there was life in Them, They had to live. And if They lived, They had to be thinking, doing something, because They had supreme mind. How did They live? What did They do in living? So

now you go back to Genesis. In the beginning:

Genesis 1:26 *God [Elohim, more than one] said, Let us make man in our image.*

Why, the “Us” was God and the Word!

John 1:14 *And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us.*

And they said to Jesus Christ while He was on earth, they said “Well, show us God the Father. What is God the Father like?” Jesus said, “Well, have you seen Me? If you’ve seen Me, you’ve seen the Father.” In other words, He looked just like Jesus. And what did Jesus look like? Like any other Jew of His day! And God said, in Genesis, “Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.” In other words: look the same form and shape. And humans look the same form and shape as God.

If you could see God, you’d see someone in the same form and shape as we are. He would have arms and hands and fingers. He would have legs and feet and toes. He would have a head. And in His head would be two eyes and a nose and a mouth; and he’d have ears. SAME FORM AND SHAPE exactly—only man was made out of the DUST OF THE GROUND, AND GOD IS COMPOSED OF SPIRIT. BUT GOD IS THE KIND OF SPIRIT THAT IS A PERSON, not essence. Now remember, I said spirit can be in the form of essence or in the form of a person.

God Creates In Duality

God is the Creator. How then? It says that the Word did the creating. How about it? Well, in Ephesians 3 and verse 9 it says, “*GOD created all things by Jesus Christ*”, or by the Word. Now when Jesus was on earth He was the Word. Now He’s made human; and when He was human on earth He said, “*I speak*, but I have only spoken what God the Father told me to speak.”

And He said, “I have obeyed my Father. I have kept my Father’s commandments.” And He believed in keeping the Father’s commandments. “Christians,” who believe in Christ and call themselves after His name, don’t believe in keeping God’s commandments like Jesus did. So they’re wrong. Judaism is wrong. Christianity is wrong. God is right; and God has revealed Himself in His Word, the Holy Bible. It’s about time we open up our minds, instead of just trusting people; and begin to trust God.

Now how does God create? That’s another thing that God has restored through His Church. He creates in the system of duality: first one, then another. First Adam was made in the form and image of God. He was a male. God wanted him to have children and reproduce. I’ve said time and again, “The poor man couldn’t do that!” And so God performed an operation: took out one of his ribs made a woman out of it.

Women today want to rule over men. So we’ve had women at the head of governments, and don’t be surprised if you get a woman president of the United States. Could be the very next one. Don’t be surprised if the Democrats come up with a woman vice-president candidate; and don’t be surprised if they win the election; and don’t be surprised if the next president is a Democrat and he dies in office and the woman then becomes president. And, let me tell you, that can happen within two or three years from now. Just don’t be surprised if that happens. I’m not saying it will happen at all. I’m just saying it could and don’t be surprised if it does.

God Is A Family And Reproducing Himself

But God creates in a system of duality. Now first there was one being; but he wasn’t complete, and he couldn’t reproduce. So God had to make another, a female. And He joined the male and the female together; and they, joined together, became one family. Not one person, but two persons make

one family. And God and the Word were two Persons, but they were one God FAMILY. AND GOD IS A FAMILY! AND GOD IS NOT A PERSON—GOD IS A FAMILY! No religion on earth believes that. NO RELIGION. BUT GOD SAYS IT, AND GOD REVEALS IT. GOD IS A FAMILY! AND GOD IS REPRODUCING HIMSELF!

Now how is He going to reproduce Himself? That's what I'm coming to. Adam was physical. He was physically incomplete. So God created a woman; and, joined together, and they become one human family. Joined by the Holy Spirit—man is incomplete of himself—God created man with a spirit in him. But that spirit in man is all alone by itself, and it needs another spirit to go with it: just like the male man needed a female woman to go with him. And a man needs a wife. And many young men by the time they become 23, 24, 25 years old, or even more, begin to realize how much they need a wife; and a girl growing to that age begins to realize how much she needs a husband. Yes, a man needs a wife; and a young woman needs a husband. And our spirit needs the spirit of God in the same way.

Now God made man and offered him life through the Tree of Life in the Garden of Eden. Man didn't take it. If he had taken it, he would have received the Spirit of God to go with his spirit. Man was only half there spiritually; he was only half there mentally. The spirit is what gave him mind power with his brain. But he couldn't understand spiritual knowledge, only material knowledge. So he was only half there. He needed the Holy Spirit. Adam had to make a choice. Adam made the wrong choice, as you know. And there's a whole lot about how Satan tempted Eve. And then that comes in another in the book I'm writing; and that'll be in the *Plain Truth* in the, let's see, either the February or the March number. I'm writing it now.

Now the only human superiority over an animal, then, resides in the spirit in man and the form and shape. Man has two things that make him more important than an animal: he's in the form and shape of God, and he has

a spirit that can be united with the Spirit of God. And he can become one with God, and no animal can. That is the ONLY way a man is superior to an animal. So the SPIRIT IN MAN united with the human brain is the only thing that makes human life of real value, and you probably never thought of that before. You know God has been progressively revealing new knowledge lately? Do you notice that almost every time I speak to you lately, I've had some new knowledge to reveal to you? God keeps giving, just pouring it in! And I want to continue receiving it as fast as He gives it!

Now the first stage in spiritual reproduction, God is reproducing Himself. Now that's spiritual reproduction. God has created matter out of spirit, and then of the matter He has said that He will take and make a human being and He will turn that human being into a God-being. Now He turned spirit into matter; and He's going to turn that matter, that is a human being, back into a God-being.

By the way, let me just sidetrack here for a second. We had the most wonderful Bible study last night about Heaven and the three heavens and all of that, which of course has been taught to the Church for a long, long time; but never gone into so much detail as Mr. Neff went into last night. And he quoted many, many scriptures –all of which mean what they say–that the heavens will dissolve and will melt with fervent heat; and the earth and the material things of the universe. Let me remind you of this: we also learn in physics and in chemistry, we learn about the law of the preservation of matter and that, oh, what is the law I'm trying to think that–matter can change form, but it never ceases to exist.

And to say that God is going to convert everything back to spirit again–the Bible nowhere says that–so don't jump to that conclusion. That the Bible did not say, and does not say. The heavens declare the glory of God–is God then going to destroy all of that which declares His glory? Oh, no, not at all, brethren. So let's not just add something that the Bible didn't say by adding

something the Bible didn't say, and saying He's going to convert all matter back to spirit, the Bible does not say that. Now if you can show me where it does, then I'll begin to believe it.

Now the first stage in spiritual reproduction, because God is reproducing Himself, is in the mind for character development. So God had to have mind in man to develop character. He can't be reproduced as God **until** he has the character of God. And that character has to be built into us and started in this human life, and that means we have to receive the Spirit of God with our spirit to begin to develop that character. That's where conversion comes in.

Now an animal dies and reverts back to dirt, or dust, again. The human dies and his body reverts back to dust just the same as an animal, but the spirit returns to the God who gave it. You read that in Ecclesiastes, in the Bible. But the human body returns to dust the same as an animal. Yet both human and animal have the same existence, the same breath. They have the same kind of blood running in their veins. Well, maybe it's not the same kind. But it runs and the blood is the life. And it's the breath of life in both of them, and they live the same existence. They die the same death.

But man is a special, made to have a special, relationship with God and to be JOINED TO and WITH GOD until he becomes begotten of God and becomes, finally, born as a son of God. And then he will be a member of the God-family and not a human family any longer. Then HE WON'T BE HUMAN ANY LONGER. HE'LL BE GOD! AND GOD IS GOING TO HAVE BILLIONS OF CHILDREN SOME DAY that will all be God. God-children, not human children. Oh, brethren, nobody knows that but this Church. In all this world, little as we are, God has entrusted us with that tremendous knowledge.

So we're in the same form as God, and we have the Spirit of God; and

that's what differentiates us from animals, and that's all. And contact with God comes only through the human spirit that is in us. That is, with God's Spirit added to it. But man's creation was not complete in Adam—either physically, nor was it mentally and spiritually—because the one spirit in him needed another spirit, just like the male needed a female. So there is the one-two punch again, the duality.

Human Spirit Transmitted From Adam

Now, there was a spirit created in Adam. And the only reason that there was a spirit also in Cain and Abel and Seth, and then in their children, and that there is a spirit in you today, is because it was in Adam. And the only reason there is a spirit in us... Now get this! This is something new again. You never thought of this before. Here's new light, new knowledge. Open your mind. It had TO BE TRANSMITTED FROM ADAM.

Did you hear what I said? The spirit in you, the spirit in Cain and Abel and Seth, was transmitted from their father, Adam. When you become a God-being, the spirit in you would have been transmitted, put in you, from God the Father. It comes from the Father, and you can't get around that. I've wondered time and again: when does the spirit enter a human being? Does it enter at the first breath? I have never said it does. Now because I've said it could, and it sounded like, seemed like perhaps it did, someone's going to say, "Well, Mr. Armstrong said the spirit enters at the first breath." I didn't say that, brethren. I said it could. And I've often wondered.

But now I see something more—that has been revealed, just during this trip. THE SPIRIT HAD TO BE, SOMEHOW OR OTHER, CONVEYED THROUGH THE HUMAN MALE SPERM CELL FROM ADAM. NOW WHETHER IT WAS ACTUAL SPIRIT, and that spirit was present in the embryo and in the fetus prior to birth, God doesn't say; and I don't know. It

may be something that just caused spirit to enter with the first breath. But, if so, it was something that came from Adam, and came from conception.

Now that means some other thing: if it came from conception, then abortion is a murder. And that's the thing that the Supreme Court of the United States has been considering. That's the thing the lawyers are considering. And what do they know about the things of God? ABORTION IS MURDER. Now you can put that down as absolutely definite.

The only reason there is a spirit, and was in Cain and Abel and Seth, is because it was transmitted from Adam. And that spirit had to be transmitted from Adam right on through all humanity; also to the daughters and the women, because they have a spirit the same as men. Now in Genesis 2 and verse 7 it says **God breathed**:

Genesis 2:7 God formed man of the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath...

Now there it just says "breath," but that's the same Hebrew word that means "spirit". I've always taken it to mean "breath," but also it could mean the spirit came with that same breath. Also though, if it does, it is because there was something that came from the sperm cell of the male at conception; at the time that the human ovum, smaller than the dot after a period at the end of the sentence in your newspaper—small as a pin-point—and the sperm cell was in that ovum. Small as it was, somehow it transmitted either that which drew the spirit or that which was the spirit; and God doesn't reveal which. I don't know. But it had to come from Adam.

We've always wondered about some of those things. It could only be transmitted. If it's transmitted from Adam, the only way it could be transmitted was through the human sperm cell. Now, if the spirit enters at the first breath—if it does—then something was transmitted from the human sperm cell that **caused** the first breath to draw it, otherwise the first breath of a cow

would bring a spirit into it, and it doesn't. Why does a spirit enter man? If it does enter at the first breath, why does it enter a human and doesn't enter a cow, or a dog, or an elephant or any other kind of an animal? They draw a first breath too, when they're born. It came, somehow or other, through the sperm cell of the father; and it all came from the human, Adam.

Spiritual Reproduction Parallels Physical Reproduction

Now, take a parallel. Man himself becomes an ovum. God is reproducing Himself. Each one of you is an ovum. You have a nucleus; and that's your brain, your mind, with a spirit in it. The human ovum, small as a pinpoint, has inside of it a nucleus. And a human sperm is only one-fiftieth as large as the ovum, and it's so tiny you can just barely see it. And the sperm cell is so small you can't see it with a naked eye, takes a microscope to see it.

(Now let me see. I've written this down. I don't know that I can carry it in my head.) You take this parallel: Man is an ovum. The Holy Spirit is the sperm cell from the divine God. So when the Holy Spirit enters you, it transmits God-life into you and God-mind into you; and you can begin to understand the things of God, which your mind couldn't understand before. Still you are not God. You are still human. And the young fetus that is already impregnated is not a human. It's a fetus. It's not born yet, and we don't call it human until it's born. Still you're not God; and you don't have God-life until the time of the resurrection, or the birth when you are changed from mortal to immortal. Then you will become God.

Now then, I want to explain a few things if I have time. I don't know whether I have the time or not. I don't have much time. I'll just explain part of it. I see time is about up. I'd like to begin with the first chapter, but there won't be time for that. First Corinthians the second chapter, so let's begin here with about verse 9. Paul had been explaining that none of the wise men

and the leaders of this world understand spiritual knowledge and the things that Paul had been explaining to them—the apostle. And in verse 9 he says:

***1 Corinthians 2:9** But as it written, eye hath not seen, ear has not heard neither have entered into the mind of man the things which God has PREPARED for them that love Him.*

Now God has prepared things for us. And people don't know what that IS, and what God has prepared. It hasn't entered their mind, the things that God has prepared. Why? They can't see it. Now the next verse explains why:

***1 Corinthians 2:10** But God has revealed them unto US...*

Who's the us? "Us" is Christians. That is, "us" are those who have received the Spirit of God with their spirit to un-code the Bible and open it up for your understanding.

***1 Corinthians 2:10-11** God has revealed them unto us BY HIS SPIRIT [That's the Spirit of God coming in with our spirit—opens your mind to understand spiritual knowledge which you couldn't understand until you had the Holy Spirit.]: for the spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. (11) For what man knows even the things of a man, save the SPIRIT OF MAN which is in him?*

You couldn't have HUMAN KNOWLEDGE except for the spirit that is in you. A cow has a brain like you do, but a cow can't understand the things that you can. He can't understand things about chemistry and physics and astrology, astronomy I mean. I didn't mean astrology! I don't think any body understands that either, because that's just a whacky thing! But, anyway...

***1 Corinthians 2:11** What man knows the things of a man, save the spirit of man that is in him? [In the same way] the things of God knoweth no man [no man can know the things of God] save by the SPIRIT OF GOD in him.*

You have to receive that. And how many people on the face of this earth have received the Spirit of God? Almost none! It's so few; it's infinitesimal. They just don't understand. They haven't been willing. God gives His Spirit to them that obey Him. And people have not been willing to obey God. They just think they do.

***I Corinthians 2:12** Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that [And spirit sometimes means attitude, too, and intention of mind.] that we might know [That is, come to the knowledge of.] the things that are freely given to us by God."*

The knowledge of these things I've been giving you today that the world does not have and does not know. Now, to verse 13 and 14:

***I Corinthians 2:13-14** Which things also we speak ... [Well, I want verse 14.] (14) But the natural man [Just the ordinary man without the Spirit of God.] receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness to him.*

And he can't understand them. And that's the truth. They are just foolishness to the people in this world.

So, brethren, I hope we've contributed a little more to the light, the knowledge, that God is disseminating in a world of darkness. And I hope your minds have been open to receive it; and, if you obey God, I think they have. And if you don't quite understand what I've said, maybe you haven't obeyed God as much as you should; and you might think that over too. Thank you.

Mission Of The Philadelphia Church Era

Sermon (December 17, 1983)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Mission Of The Philadelphia Church Era.....	1708	2. Purpose Of God	1736
Consider Matthew 24	1710	3. God's Plan Through The Holy Days	1737
Let No Man Deceive You	1711	4. Government	1737
Wars And Rumours Of Wars	1712	5. Who And What Is God?	1738
The Sign Of Christ's Coming	1713	6. What And Why Is Man?	1738
Abomination Of Desolation	1714	7. Spirit In Man	1739
Great Tribulation	1715	8. Firstfruits	1739
Jewish Opposition To The Gospel	1716	9. Knowledge Of What The Millennium Is	1739
Gentile Opposition To The Law Of God	1717	10. Truth About The Holy Spirit	1740
Controversy Over The Gospel	1718	11. Begotten Now	1740
Turning To A Gospel About Christ	1719	12. Born Again At Resurrection	1740
God The Father Is The Lawgiver	1720	13. Identity Of Israel	1740
Messenger To Prepare The Way	1721	14. Identity Opens Up Understanding Of Bible	1741
Elijah To Come	1724	Prophecy	1741
What Christ Will Restore	1726	15. Second And Third Tithe	1741
Lucifer's Rebellion	1727	16. Identity Of Babylon And Her Daughters	1741
How God And The Word Worked	1728	17. Satan Is The Guilty Party	1742
Two Trees:Test Of Character	1731	18. We Are To Be Separate	1742
Government Of God In The Church	1733	God Has Restored Truth	1742
Restored Truths Listed	1735		
1. The True Gospel	1736		

Greetings everybody! This afternoon I want to speak on the mission of the Philadelphia era of the Church (this Church today) in comparison to the first Church, or the first era of the Church (the Ephesus era of the Church). It has been seeming more and more to me, as the years go by, that the Bible was written primarily for the Philadelphia era of the Church. It has not been understood previously to now. The Bible was not all written yet during the beginning of the Church (during the Ephesian era, the first era of the Church)

Until close to the end of the First Century, the Bible was not complete. There was no printing. Every copy had to be written carefully, slowly, one

copy at a time; by hand and by copyists. There were not very many of them. The average person never saw one. Much of the Bible had not been revealed yet, especially the book of Revelation; and I, II, III John; and the Book of Jude. And most of the early Church never saw those books. They had been getting away from the Truth as they had received it from the apostles. And, by the time Jude wrote, he urged the people to contend earnestly for the faith once delivered, because they were getting away from it.

Most prophecy in the Bible refers to our time now, and is concerned with our time—not with the time back in the First Century, not in the Middle Ages. How many times do you find in the Bible “in that day”? Such-and-such will happen “in that day.” “In that day” again and again, especially in the Old Testament prophecies. And it is referring to the time now and leading on into the Second Coming of Christ—the Coming of Christ the Messiah, and these events and these days just preceding—when there is **the greatest mission** of the Church. And that is the mission that has devolved down on us. Today’s mission of the Church you will find in Matthew 24 and in verse 14:

Matthew 24:14 And this gospel of the kingdom [that is the same gospel that Jesus preached] shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations and then shall the end come.

Now, the early apostles had been asking Jesus about this time. They knew... They were somewhat familiar with the prophecies: especially prophecies like Isaiah and Jeremiah, Ezekiel; and then the so-called “minor prophets.” Hosea, Amos, Micah, Daniel, all of those prophets; and how many times they said “in that day.” Jesus had said to them, He said “If I go, I will come again and receive you to Myself.” He had taught them about the Kingdom of God. And He had taught them in a parable that He would have to go to heaven to receive the kingdom and then to return; and that we had to occupy, or continue on the job that He had given us, until then.

Consider Matthew 24

And so we read, beginning with the third verse in Matthew 24. And, incidentally, Matthew 24 I think might be called the principle book of prophecy so far as Jesus Christ is concerned, of what Jesus Himself said. Of course, the book of Revelation is the book of prophecy of all of the New Testament. And Matthew 24 is recording, essentially, the same thing that Mark 13 and Luke 21 is also recording; but Matthew 24 goes into more detail and gives us a better summary of the entire thing.

Now, Jesus had been with the disciples at the Temple and just outside of it. He was showing them the buildings of the Temple; and then as He sat on the Mount of Olivet (or the Mount of Olives) a little later, His disciples had come unto Him privately. There were about three or four of them that came to Him privately, saying:

Matthew 24:3 Tell us, when shall these things be?

Now, what things did they refer to? In the first verse, you will see that He was showing them the buildings of the Temple and telling them that a time of trouble was coming and that all those buildings were going to be destroyed. There wouldn't be one stone left upon another of the buildings of the Temple. Now, they supposed that that destruction was going to come at the time of the end—the end of this world, and the Second Coming of Christ and the time of His return. They knew that such a time was coming—the end of this world and the beginning of the Kingdom of God, or the World Tomorrow. But they thought that that was going to occur at the same time, and they thought it was going to occur in their lifetime. And so they asked Him, "*When shall these things be?*" that He was talking about, the destruction of the Temple. But since they thought that was the same time as His Second Coming, they added this question:

Matthew 24:3 ...and what shall be the sign of Thy coming, and of the end of the world?”

Because they thought that His Coming would end this **world**. He had talked to them about **another world**, the Kingdom of God. So they asked Him about that.

Let No Man Deceive You

The first question that they asked was what He had just been talking about, the destruction of the Temple; and that did happen in their lifetime. He'd been talking to them along about 30 or 31 AD. And the Church was finally established in 31 after Jesus had been crucified, resurrected, and had ascended to heaven. So Jesus answered first their first question, and said unto them:

Matthew 24:4 Take heed that no man deceive YOU.”

Deceive who? He didn't say “deceive people at the end of the world, at the end time.” He was talking to His disciples, and He said even His disciples could be deceived. *”Let no man deceive you.”* I tell you, brethren, it is very necessary that we understand one thing, especially in reading the New Testament. Where it says “you,” you need to know who He's talking to. In most cases, He's talking to the Church or to the apostles. The apostle Paul says “you;” and he's talking, very often, to one of the Churches. Jesus was talking to His apostles.

When the expression “they” is used, it usually refers to the outside world. When the expression “we” is used, it'll refer either to Christians or, in some cases, the apostle Paul might just be referring to the Jewish people (as a nation, or religion, or race, or whichever you might call them). But Jesus said, “For many shall come in My Name. Now be sure that nobody deceives

YOU—you apostles in the First Century—because many are going to be coming in My Name, saying that I am Christ; and shall deceive many.” Now, we need to understand that.

Wars And Rumours Of Wars

After the Church had started, Christ had gone to heaven. One thing: where did the early Church get its teaching? Where did it get its doctrines, its beliefs; and its practices, its customs? The early Church received all this from the apostles. And where did the apostles receive it? They received it primarily from Jesus, who had taught them for three and a half years. They also were familiar, more or less, with the prophecies of the Old Testament because many of them had seen it or had had a copy. Usually a book like Isaiah would be just in a book all by itself. They didn't have the whole Old Testament. Or they would have the five books of Moses all together. But usually and many times, especially in the prophecies, it'd just be one book of prophecy.

So He said “*M*any shall come in my name, saying I am Christ; and shall deceive many.” And then He went on talking to them.

Matthew 24:6-7 And ye [That is, you apostles.] *you shall hear of wars and rumours of wars* [Now He had told them there would be wars at the end time, and they knew that. He said, “Now you will hear of that.”], *see that you be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.* [In other words, He was telling them plainly the end was not coming in their time; and, when they heard of wars, that wouldn't mean the time of the end.] (7) For [He said] *nation shall rise up against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes...*

He could have been referring to the end, when that happened; but He said that the end wouldn't come when they heard of wars and rumours of wars in their time. Now He said:

Matthew 24:8-9 *All these things are the beginning of sorrows.*” [He was undoubtedly referring there to the time that we’re in now.] (9) *Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted.*”

Now He was talking to them again, and talking of the trouble that did occur at the time of 69 and 70 AD when the Roman armies entered and destroyed the Temple at Jerusalem. And it was a terrible time of trouble then, such as had never happened to any nation up till that time. They were even, for lack of food, killing their own children and eating them. It was a terrible time then; but it was local, and it was just in that one locale in and around Jerusalem.

The Sign Of Christ’s Coming

Then shall they deliver you up. Now He was talking to His apostles, and many of them were martyred. In fact, some people think that all (except possibly John) of the apostles were martyred.

Matthew 24:9-11 *Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you; and you shall be hated of all nations [or in all nations] for my name’s sake. (10) And then shall many be offended, and [they] shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. (11) And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceive many.*

Now, they did. He said, “Take heed that you be not deceived (now, at the very beginning). For many will come in My name, saying that I am Christ, and deceiving ...” Here He says, and He’s speaking to them, “Many false prophets shall arise, and deceive many.” Well, they did! And they did come in Jesus’ name, saying that they were His ministers!

Matthew 24:13-14 *But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. (14) And this GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM [That’s the*

gospel He was preaching to them—the Kingdom of God.] *shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and THEN shall **the** end come.*

The end of the world, and the Second Coming of Christ! That was the only sign He gave of His Second Coming.

You know, Jesus was asked by the Pharisees for a sign that He was the Messiah; and He said only one sign would be given; and that was the sign of the prophet Jonah—that as Jonah was three days and three nights in the great fish’s belly, so Jesus would be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth, or the tomb, which was hewn out of rock in the heart of the earth.

Abomination Of Desolation

Now He continued:

Matthew 24:15 *When you therefore...*

I have great difficulty reading it, even with a magnifying glass, though this is very large type; and it takes three books of this size to contain the Bible in the size I have to read now. But you’ll have to bear with me in this little handicap. The Work gets done, just the same. “But I say unto you that you shall not see Me henceforth, until you shall say ‘Blessed is He that cometh in ...’” Wait a minute. No, I’m back a page. I skipped a page.

Matthew 24:15 “*When you therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand).*”

And you find in Luke 24 and verse 20 that that refers to the same thing, and “the abomination of desolation” there spoken of was Jerusalem being surrounded by armies. Now that applied to 70 AD. It is going to apply again, because so many things happen in a dual manner. Sort of a one-two punch, as

I sometimes call it. And Jerusalem will again be surrounded by armies. In fact, it is to a great extent right now.

Matthew 24:16 *Then let them which be in Judea [Of course, He was speaking locally there.] flee to the mountains...*

And so on. Then He comes down to that terrible time that happened in 70 AD as a type of what is going to happen at the latter time—the Great Tribulation (verse 21).

Matthew 24:21-22 *For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not from the beginning of the world to [that same] time, no, nor ever shall be. (22) And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved [King James says “saved.” The Moffatt translation says, “saved alive;” and that’s what it means.]: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened.*

So it shows “for the elect’s sake” those days will be shortened. And it doesn’t mean for the elect’s sake they’ll be shortened so that some can be converted, but it’s speaking about being saved alive.

Great Tribulation

Now it continues on. He talked about the Great Tribulation, how terrible it’ll be. And now “except those days be shortened.” And now He definitely... That’s referring primarily, anti-typically, to this time yet coming, just ahead of us now, that there would not one person be saved alive. The number one problem before the world today is that of human survival or human extinction. It’s one or the other. That’s a question that I’ll be going into on television tomorrow morning: Will humanity even survive a nuclear war? Will there be a day after? And in this program, I’ll be referring to the movie that created such a sensation just about three or four weeks ago, on “The Day

After” about nuclear war. And primarily I’m going to be somewhat concerned with the conference or dialogue that happened, between some of the most important people politically in the United States, that followed the movie. Now most people tuned out, and didn’t even listen to that; and that was the most important part of the whole thing to my mind. And I’m commenting on their comments. And I hope that you’ll all be viewing it tomorrow. Now in verse 29:

*Matthew 24:29-30 Immediately after the tribulation of those days [Just to give you the dating of it, and the time it’s referring to. “Immediately after the tribulation of **those days...**”] shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken. (30) And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall SEE the Son of man [Christ] coming in the clouds of heaven with POWER and great glory.”*

Coming as the King of kings and the Lord of lords, to rule all nations. So definitely that is talking about the time just ahead of us now.

Now He said—the mission of this Church, then—that “this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be proclaimed in all the world for a witness unto all nations, and THEN shall the end (the end of this world) come” and the Second Coming of Christ to introduce the World Tomorrow, another world altogether.

Jewish Opposition To The Gospel

Now I want you to contrast verses four [{1}](#) and five, where He said: “Let no man deceive you. Many will come in My name, saying that I am Christ.” Immediately after the Church started, there was great opposition. And the first opposition, for the first several years (first few years) at least, was Jewish opposition—an opposition of denying that Jesus was the Christ.

Most of the preaching of the Twelve apostles at first was proving that Jesus was the Christ.

That is the reason that Jesus chose twelve in number. It's the same reason that they have twelve on a jury today to decide a case, because twelve is supposed to... A unanimous decision by twelve is supposed to be accurate and convincing. And the Twelve disciples had all been with Jesus for three and a half years, while He was here on the Earth as just an ordinary human being; and then they had been forty days with Him after His resurrection—to PROVE that He had been dead, that He had resurrected, that He WAS the Christ (because the resurrection is the proof).

Now, a little later, that had become established. Of course, the Church at first was Jewish; and many of the Jews would not accept that Jesus was the Christ. Those who did came in and that started the Church. The Church at the beginning was entirely Jewish—of those who HAD accepted the truth that Jesus was the promised Messiah. Many expected Him to come, as He will the second time, with great power and authority to rule all nations; but He didn't come that way the first time. He came to qualify for the office, but not to set up the nation or the kingdom. He came to proclaim the Kingdom; He came to announce the Kingdom—that it would come. But He didn't come to initiate the Kingdom at that time.

Gentile Opposition To The Law Of God

After a short time, you notice even the apostle Paul went to the Jews first; and a certain number accepted the truth. And then the Jews began to universally just turn away. They would not accept that Jesus was the Christ. And then Paul says, "Lo, I turn to the Gentiles." And then he began going to Gentiles, and the gospel then was primarily sent to Gentiles after a certain number of years. Now when it went to the Gentiles, there was no question

about WHO the Christ was. They accepted Jesus as the Christ. But the Gentiles didn't like to accept the law of God as a way of life. And then many Jews, who had accepted Christ, still wanted to inject the Law of Moses.

I hope that I will feel up to it; and I would like to take the Bible Study, if I do, on next Friday night. Yesterday I had had a deposition session, and I was very tired; and I just felt I wasn't in any shape to speak to you last night, and so I didn't. But I hope that next Friday night I may, because I want to speak on this very thing and the difference between the law of Moses and the law of God: two separate laws altogether. One is physical, has to do with physical labour; the other is spiritual, has to do with the relationship—our first relationship to God and secondly human relationships with other humans. And this is entirely misunderstood in all the churches that call themselves “Christian” today. That is still **the greatest difficulty** in “Christianity” today, and it became that.

So they were **against the** law of God. And many Jews were wanting to bring in circumcision and the law of Moses, which was a law of rituals (of physical duties to do morning, noon and night): various eating and drinking and things of that sort, just physical labour. It had nothing do with human relationships or man's relationship to God. Now about that time... And it was prior still to 70 AD, the time that Paul turned to the Gentiles; and they began preaching about the law. The Jews who had accepted Christ and come into the Church did that; and, of course, Paul and the apostles had to refute that.

Controversy Over The Gospel

But, from that time, there was a great controversy on **what the true gospel should be**. And we find evidence now in history, and the history is almost missing on this point... There was a great lapse of history for a hundred years—from around, oh, from 30 or 50 AD up to 150 AD—practically

no history of what was going on in the early Church that had just come up, of Christianity. This much we do know: that at the beginning of that time there was **a great controversy**(in which was a life and death matter to many, and there were many martyred) as to whether the gospel should be a gospel about Christ. Because, you see, the early apostles had to prove that Jesus was the Messiah, that Jesus was the Christ; and many thought that was **the** whole gospel. And the controversy came up: Was the gospel about Christ, just proving that Jesus is the Christ? Or is the gospel “the gospel OF Christ,” which means the gospel Christ preached?

Now Jesus came as a Messenger bearing a message, and the message He brought was the Kingdom of God. That was the gospel! You read in Mark 1, The beginning of verse 1:

Mark 1:1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ.”

I don't need to turn to it in the Bible again. It speaks about John the Baptist coming, preparing the way before His First Coming. And then it speaks of Jesus' baptism and His (just one verse of His) temptation before Satan the devil, and His qualification to rule in the Kingdom of God. And then, after that, we find that Jesus came into Galilee preaching THE GOSPEL. But what gospel? The gospel of THE KINGDOM OF GOD! That is the FAMILY of God as a governing Family GOVERNING THE ENTIRE WORLD. A world government by the Family of God, into which those of the true Church may be born. So we have quite a contrast there, at that time.

Turning To A Gospel About Christ

Now in Galatians 1, verses 6 and 7. I believe I'd better not take the time to read that. You read where the apostle Paul... And this was about 53 AD, only about 22 years after the Church started. Paul found that already they were turning to **another gospel**. They were beginning to turn to a gospel

about Christ instead of the gospel of Christ. But at that time, many of the Jews, they accepted that Jesus was the Christ; but they were coming in now saying that you must be circumcised and keep the law. (And I hope that on next Friday night we can go through the book of Galatians a little bit and get that all straightened out, because some people are terribly mixed up on that point; yet it should be very clear.)

II Corinthians 11, you find that Paul mentions how there would be false prophets coming in the name of Jesus, saying that Jesus was the Christ; but they would be preaching another Jesus. And that is precisely what they did! They preached a Jesus who was a smart aleck young man, who knew more than His Father, and did away with His Father's law and commandments. They preached a Jesus that nailed the law to the cross. They preached a Jesus that was in opposition to God the Father.

And that is what has come on down through Protestantism! And you will notice that TODAY THE PROTESTANT CHURCHES AND THE CATHOLIC CHURCH TALK **ABOUT** JESUS (Although the Catholic Church probably talks more about Mary than they do about Jesus even.); but they talk about CHRIST, ABOUT JESUS—BUT THEY LEAVE GOD THE FATHER OUT OF IT. THEY WON'T HAVE ANY CONTACT WITH GOD THE FATHER. THEY TALK ABOUT CHRIST, BUT THEY WANT TO DO AWAY WITH THE LAW.

God The Father Is The Lawgiver

Now let me make this straight. The law came from God the Father. You know, it's a great deal like the government of the United States. The Congress is the law-making body; the President is the executive of the administration to administer the government; and then we have the Supreme Court to do the judging. Now, spiritually in the government of God, God the Father is the

Congress (or the Parliament). He is the Lawgiver. He makes the law. And when you break the law, you have put yourself clear outside of God the Father. It is God the Father you need to be **reconciled to**, not Christ. You accept Christ not because that saves you. The receiving of Christ does not save you. And yet they say that you're already born again if you say "I receive Christ." And the churches are saying that thing all over, and they are in gross ERROR!

And it is simply, as it says in II Corinthians the eleventh chapter, beginning along, let me see, a little farther along—they are the ministers of Satan the devil, but they pose as the ministers of Christ. They say He was Christ, but they don't speak much about any connection with God; and they don't want anything to do with God's law. And they think the blood of Christ saves you.

Now in Romans 5, and about verse 5, you will read that by the blood of Christ we are RECONCILED TO GOD THE FATHER; but we are SAVED through Christ by His life—the resurrection. And God is the one who resurrected Christ, and who will resurrect you and me. And of course, Christ now is "of God" and "is God." And He says He has the power to raise us up at the Last Day also. And those things, no wonder they call it "a mystery" today; and they are so confused in the world today.

Messenger To Prepare The Way

But now I would like to go back to the Old Testament and show you what was prophesied to happen. They got turned away to another gospel; and in the book of Malachi, the third chapter and beginning with verse 1, here is a prophecy for our day:

Malachi 3:1 Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom you seek, shall suddenly come to his

temple, even the messenger of the covenant [That was Jesus Christ. Moses was the mediator of the Old Covenant; Jesus came as the Messenger of the New Covenant. Jesus came proclaiming the New Covenant.], *whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the LORD of hosts.*

But now in Mark (or in, well, Matthew, Mark, and Luke and John) you will read of how John the Baptist apparently was the messenger who was to come. John the Baptist was a type of the one it's speaking of here. This is speaking of one coming to prepare the way for the Second Coming of Christ. Now John the Baptist was a messenger crying out—a voice that cried out in the physical wilderness of the Jordan river—preparing the way for a human, physical Jesus, who was to come to a physical, material, temple (made of stone and wood and other metals, and materials), coming to His physical people, Judah, (who rejected Him), and coming only to ANNOUNCE that there WOULD come the Kingdom of God and the government. But He came as a Lamb, the Lamb of God. He didn't come to enforce things. He merely came... Well, He allowed them to spit in His face; to put a crown of thorns on Him; to lash Him; to whip Him; beat Him within an inch of His life; and then go out; hang Him up in the most disgraceful kind of a death on a cross; stab Him with a spear till He bled to death; and they finally did kill Him.

So now notice who it's talking about here. It's NOT talking about John the Baptist.

Malachi 1:2 But who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appears? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap.

Now, a refiner's fire heats. When you find gold or silver, it is mixed up with a lot of other metals and worthless material. And the way you get it, you melt it; and the gold or the silver will dissolve and melt out from the other. And that way you can divide the one from the other, and come out with pure gold or pure silver instead of a motley mixture with a lot of worthless other

metals. And He was talking about burning out the sin of other people here. "Who may abide the day of his coming? For he is like a refiner's fire, or fullers' soap" which washes the dirt off. And He would get rid of the sins. Jesus didn't get rid of the sins when He came. He merely talked about it.

Malachi 3:3-5 *And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the [Eternal] an offering in righteousness. (4) Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the LORD [When He came the first time, they didn't offer any offering that was pleasant to Him. They rejected Him, spit in His face, and killed Him; or had Him killed. So this is talking about the Second Coming], as in the days of old, and as the former years. [And He says:] (5) I will come near unto you to JUDGMENT [He didn't come to judgment. Then He talks here about the Levites and the priests and others. They rejected Him. "I will come near to you to judgment..."]; and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, against the false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in his wages, the widows, and the fatherless...*

And so on. So it's talking there about the Second Coming of Christ. Now it continues speaking about Him in the fourth chapter, where it says (the last two verses of the entire book of Malachi, the last two verses in the Old Testament):

Malachi 4:5-6 *Behold, I will send you Elijah, the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the [Eternal] [or, the Day of the LORD]; (6)and he shall turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to the fathers, LEST I come and smite the earth with a curse.*

And the Hebrew word there means and is translated in Zechariah and other where as "a total destruction." Smite the Earth, in other words, unless

there is no flesh saved alive—talking about the Great Tribulation and that same time.

Elijah To Come

Now, later on, during the time of—that is, during Jesus’ Gospel—He came and said, “I will build my church.”

And I want to get into that, again, a little later. But I’d like to turn now to Matthew the seventeenth chapter and beginning with verse 1:

Matthew 17:1-2 After six days Jesus took Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into a high mountain apart, (2) and was transfigured before them.

In other words, showing them Himself in the Kingdom of God. And with Him were Moses and Elijah [verse 3], giving them a glimpse of the Kingdom. Now, prior to that, He had said there’d be some standing among “you” that will not die until they have seen Christ coming in the Kingdom of God. Well, this is where they did—in this vision of the transfiguration. When they came down, He said “Don’t tell any man about it until after I’ve ascended to heaven.” And then in verse 9:

Matthew 17:9 As they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them saying, Tell... no man, until [I have] risen again from the dead [it was]. (10) And his disciples asked him, saying, “[Well,] why then say the scribes that Elijah MUST COME FIRST?”

Now, at this time, Elijah had already come. I quoted a while ago Matthew. I don’t mean Matthew, but Mark the first chapter and verse 14:

Mark 1:14 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee.

And that was the beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ. He didn't BEGIN His gospel until after the mission of John the Baptist was completed. And John the Baptist was probably beheaded by the time that is being referred to here. So why does it say that John the Baptist...or that Elijah, I mean, must first come?

Matthew 17:11-12 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elijah truly SHALL FIRST COME, and [Get this] restore all things.(12) But [He continued.] I say unto you, That Elias is come already [Referring now to John the Baptist, who came in the power and spirit of Elijah, as he said specifically in another place.], and they knew him not, and have done unto him whatsoever they listed.

Well, they put him to death; and he had been beheaded, his head chopped off. They didn't recognize him.

Now it is speaking about a second—just as a Second Coming of Christ, a second coming **of a** messenger to prepare the way before Him. As John the Baptist was the physical messenger in the physical wilderness of Jordan, so there **would be** a messenger with a message—with a VOICE CRYING OUT in the SPIRITUAL WILDERNESS of the modern Twentieth Century, and the last half of the Twentieth Century—PREPARING THE WAY FOR THE GREAT SPIRITUAL JESUS TO COME TO HIS SPIRITUAL TEMPLE. AND YOU ARE THAT TEMPLE! A SPIRITUAL TEMPLE! You will be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, after the dead in Christ rise first; and rise with them to meet Christ in the air as He comes. HE'S COMING TO **HIS SPIRITUAL TEMPLE**; AND WE ARE THAT TEMPLE, as you read in the last few verses of the second chapter of Ephesians. To a spiritual temple, and THIS TIME TO SET UP the Kingdom of God and to rule.

So He said, "Elijah truly shall come;" but He said "and restore ...

things”. Now John the Baptist didn’t restore anything. They already knew about the law, and he called them to repentance; but he didn’t have to give them sermons about what all the law is. They knew that. He just called them to repent and turn to another way, and baptized them. He was John “the Baptist.” But this is speaking of **one** Jesus said (after John the Baptist had completed his mission), ”*Elijah* truly **SHALL come** and restore all things”.

Now next, he’s coming **to prepare the way** before Christ. I want you to notice: Christ is coming to restore all things. So in the third [2](#) chapter of the book of Acts This is a day or two after the Church had started. Peter and John were in the Temple. Peter had healed that cripple; and the crowd came around, and Peter preached to them for some little time. And this is Peter talking to them at that time.

What Christ Will Restore

Verse 19, the third chapter of Acts, Peter said:

Acts 3:19-22 Repent you therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, WHEN the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord; (20) AND HE SHALL SEND [the time when He shall send] Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: (21) Whom the heavens must receive [Now, He’d ascended up to heaven; and the heavens would receive Him UNTIL a certain time.] until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all of his holy prophets since the world began.

Now “restitution.” Look that word up in the dictionary. Restitution means “restoring to a former condition, a former state or condition;” “restoring what had been taken away.” Restoring what had been taken away.” So now I ask you, “What is Christ coming to restore that had been taken away?” What had been taken away was THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD.

The Government of God! And, if you know the whole Bible, that's the whole story of the Bible. That's **the** whole purpose. Everything!

Lucifer's Rebellion

You read, back in Isaiah 14 verses 12-14 (and I've gone over it so many times, I'm not going to turn back to it now); but you read there first about the king of Babylon. And then he is **a** type of the one whom he served and who really ruled over him, who was Satan the devil. And then the type lifts up to the one that he represented, Satan the devil. And it spoke to him then (beginning with verse 12 in Isaiah 14), calling him "Lucifer." Lucifer was the name of a super archangel, a cherub; and this cherub's wings had spread out over the very Throne of God. But he was on a throne, and it was on Earth; and he said:

Isaiah 14:13 I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt MY THRONE above the stars [or, the angels] of God.

Now he had a throne, and he said he would rise above the clouds. So he was under the clouds, and he was on Earth; and there was **a** throne on the Earth.

Now in Ezekiel 28, also beginning verse 12. Verse 1, or in the earlier part of the chapter, it began speaking of "the prince of Tyre." Now as Babylon was the political capital of the ancient world at that time and the capital of the first great world empire, Tyre was also the commercial capital, where all the ships went by that were transferring freight and merchandise and that sort of thing. It was the New York, you might say, or the London, of the ancient world. Not the political capital, but the merchandising capital. There it speaks first of "the prince of Tyre" who was the human ruler. Then the type (the same way) lifts up to the one it represented, Satan the devil; and he's called "the king of Tyre."

And there it says [in Ezekiel 28] that he sealed up the sum total of wisdom, perfection and beauty; that he had been CREATED; and he was perfect from the day he was created **until** iniquity was found in him. And he was made so beautiful that he became jealous, and full of envy, and also full of vanity. And vanity means he exalted himself above everything. Above God! Above everything! It means he wanted to be served, and not to serve. He wanted everything to come to him. He wanted to receive; he wanted to get; he wanted to take. (God is the great Giver! Just the opposite.)

Now, prior to this, God had had a law. But this Lucifer ruled on this Earth. He was put on the Earth and the throne of the Earth. He ruled over the whole Earth. And the Earth at that time was occupied by angels. You find something of them in the thirty-eighth chapter of Job, at the time that Christ created the Earth; and the angels were there shouting for joy, because they were going to inhabit this Earth at the time of its creation. But in II Peter 2 and verse 4 you read of "the angels that sinned." And, in the next verse, you read of the sins between Adam {3} and the time of the Flood. And after that you read of the time, later, of the great destruction that came to Sodom and Gomorrah. So there's a **time sequence** there; and it shows the sin of the angels was prior to the creation of the first man, Adam. Now, as a result of the angels being turned against God, the Earth came to a state of decay.

How God And The Word Worked

But I need to explain a little something here about the government of God. You read in John the first chapter in the New Testament, John 1 and verses 1 to 4 or 5:

John 1:1 In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

Now, who's the Word? Verse 14 says:

John 1:14 *The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us.*

And became Jesus Christ: the Word is the one who was made Jesus Christ. In other words, the Word was Jesus Christ before His human birth and before He became Jesus Christ. And He was also God. And in the third chapter and the ninth verse of Ephesians, I believe it is, "*God created all things by Jesus Christ*". Jesus obeyed His Father.

Now, They were together. The Word was with God, and the Word was God. All things were made by Him, the Word; but God made it by Him, and Jesus did only what His Father said. He was the Word, the Spokesman, He said "I've spoken only what My Father commanded and told Me to speak." And so He is the one who created man.

Now we turn back to Genesis the first chapter. Well, first I want to explain about the government of God. Two can't walk together except they be agreed. So They were in absolute harmony. And everywhere in the Bible it shows that Jesus and God the Father were completely as one—of one mind; of one belief; of one agreement; no discord; no disagreement of any kind whatsoever. Also two cannot walk together except one is the leader. You must have leadership, and we had a sermonette on that. You must have leadership! And God was the Leader. Jesus obeyed His Father. He said "*I have kept My Father's commandments.*" And He also said He'd set us an example. We should also keep them.

Now, law is merely a way of life. Their way of life was love: cooperation; mutual love and affection. God ruled over Jesus, but it was **loving authority**. Loving authority. And Jesus obeyed, in love. And They loved one another, and there was no conflict whatsoever. It was total cooperation, but God was the Head. And you will find where Christ is the Head of the Church, but God is the Head of Christ; and we must never forget that. So that is the basis of government.

Now a LAW has to be the basis of ANY GOVERNMENT. You can't have government without a law. The basis of the United States is the Constitution, which is a law; and all laws must be according to that basic law, the Constitution. That's the foundational law of all the United States' government. But the basic law of the whole universe is love (L-O-V-E), which is outgoing concern. Outgoing concern toward others: first toward God and then toward our fellow creatures.

Now God and the Word worked. They lived. It said, "in them was life." If They had life, They lived. If They lived, how did They live? They had to DO something to live! What did They do? They created. Now, They had a way of creation. How did They create? Well, God created all things by Jesus Christ. God told Him what to do and what to say. He spoke; the Holy Spirit responded; and it was done. Now God said, in Genesis the first chapter, it says there:

Genesis 1:1 *In the beginning [God] [Elohim, which is a plural word, meaning "Gods"] created the heavens and the earth.*

Now the word "God" should be pluralized, or "Gods." And the word "created the heaven" as it is in the King James, also is translated in every other translation, as far as I know, "heavens [It's plural.] and the earth." And they were all created at the same time, you read in the second chapter of Genesis also. And in verse 26 of Genesis 1:

Genesis 1:26 *God said [And this must have been God saying it to the Word.], Let Us make man in our image.*

And so God told the Word to do it, and the Word formed man. And in the second chapter, Yahweh is mentioned, and always speaks of the Word who became Christ.

Genesis 2:7 *[And the LORD God] formed man of the dust of the*

ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man [dust of the ground] became [a soul] a living soul [Not an immortal soul!].

So the dust of the ground became a living soul. And God said, “If you disobey, you will surely die.”

Two Trees: Test Of Character

Now the Two Trees were merely a test of character. The Tree of Life simply meant obeying God; letting God reveal knowledge to you; letting God reveal His law. The law is merely the Way of LIVING. And, if Adam had taken the Tree of Life, God would have revealed His Way of Living—His LAW—to Adam. Now I have never put it quite that way before. Get that firmly in your mind. But what he did, he took to himself the knowledge of good and evil. In other words, he took to himself the way of life. HE MADE HIS OWN LAW of how he would live, but he was influenced by Satan and Satan’s way.

Well, what did Satan say to Eve when she came? He didn’t say, “Worship me.” He didn’t say, “Disobey God.” Even. He said, “Just go do your own thing! Do your own way, use your own head, use your own mind, do what you think is right!” And that is the way that Adam took as the law of his life: the way that seemed right to him. Now God’s Word, the Bible, says:

***Proverbs 14:12** There is a way that seems right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death.*

You see, it is **the law of God** that tells us which is **the right way**. That was in the Tree of Life, which Adam rejected. Now God’s purpose was to reproduce Himself: to reproduce Himself. But God is, first of all, perfect, spiritual, righteous character. And man could not be made God until the very CHARACTER of God had been implanted within him. And it wouldn’t be

character unless the man himself made the choice to receive it, and unless it came with the man's not only consent but by his own will even. And yet it had to come from God, and God would give it to him; but a man had to make the decision, and want it. And that same thing faces all of us today. You see, all of us have found that the Tree of Life has been opened to us.

Now Adam rejected the Tree of Life and took the Tree of the Knowledge—self-knowledge of what is right and wrong. In other words, of law or the way of life. And then God closed up the Tree of Life until Christ, the second Adam, should come. Now that meant the Holy Spirit, because human eyes have not seen, human ears have never heard what God has in store for us that love Him. That is in I Corinthians the second chapter and verse 9.

And verse 10 says but God reveals to us what He has (spiritual things ahead for us) **by** His Spirit that dwells in us. Now the Spirit doesn't do the revealing. God reveals it, but He reveals by His Spirit that is in us. Not by His Spirit that He has that He sends to reveal. The Spirit is already in us. His Word says it. Here's the Word. I read it, and the Spirit lets me understand it. You know the world can't understand this Book, the Bible. It's just a lot of foolishness to them. They don't understand it at all. They don't regard it as the most important Book ever written.

I was talking to some lawyers yesterday, there were three lawyers in the room. I mentioned something about the Bible. One of them said, well, he respected the Bible. I said, "The Bible is **a book of** law. It talks about law from the beginning to the end." Beginning the second chapter, the first book in the Bible, Genesis—it talks about God's law and obedience; and clear up to the last chapter in Revelation, it's talking about law (a way of life). Law regulates conduct. It regulates human performance, or angelic performance if you please, or what ever.

Now Adam made the decision for all of his family that were born from him. Even Eve came out of Adam. And all of us have come, then, from Adam. And he made that decision for all of his family. And the Spirit of God, the revelation of SPIRITUAL knowledge and of God's SPIRITUAL law, was hidden from people until they couldn't understand it.

Now it takes love to fulfill that law; but human love won't fulfill it. It takes "the love of God ... shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit." (And that's Romans 5 and verse 5.) And you can't really fulfill God's law, even if you know what it is, UNTIL you have received the Spirit of God. The Spirit of God in you will fulfill it, and very few have that; but that has been opened, through Christ, to the Church.

Government Of God In The Church

Now then, Adam chose his own self way. The Holy Spirit was closed until Christ came. Jesus came; and He said, in Matthew 16:18, "*I will build MY Church.*" He's called the second Adam. He came, and He already had the Holy Spirit. He had what Adam, the first Adam, rejected. He called disciples; and He opened to them the Tree of Life, which had been closed ever since Adam. And He called The Twelve; and He called them out from the world (which had only a human kind of love, and didn't have divine love of the Spirit of God)—to live separately from the world and live according to God's law, according to God's government. And God's law is the foundation of God's government. And it's a matter of government.

Jesus started the Church. Now I've already quoted to you from Mark 1 and verses 14 and 15, which simply shows that God put government in the Church. Jesus came to restore **the government of God**. In Isaiah 9 verses 6 and 7, you read that He was to be born as a Child; and THE GOVERNMENT would be on His shoulder. He's going to take over the government and sit on

the throne, where Satan is now sitting, and to rule over the whole world. Well, when He came, He called a SMALL nucleus (the small embryo) to begin the Church—starting, as He explained, small as a grain of mustard seed; but to grow till it fills the whole Earth ultimately. Ultimately the whole Earth is going to be filled with the people of God. Did you know that? Now it's almost filled with the people of Satan. But it is “for the elect's sake” that this world is going to be spared.

Now in Revelation 2:26 and 27 and Revelation 3:21 you read that, if we that are called into the Church (to whom the Tree of Life is opened; and we have accepted the Tree of Life and the Spirit of God), if we overcome and we grow in grace and knowledge, and we overcome and endure—we shall be given... We'll rule with Christ on His throne when He comes to TAKE that throne of the Earth away from Satan. We will be given power over the nations, and we shall RULE them with a rod of iron. And it is only the called who can come. All through the New Testament you read Jesus called His disciples. It is those that are called, and they're called out of this world. On the day of Pentecost Peter said, when they wanted to know what to do, he said

Acts 2:38 Repent, and be baptized [into] Jesus Christ [every one of you], for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the Holy Spirit. (39) For the promise [of the Spirit of God] is unto you, and to your children...as many as the Lord our God shall call.”

God has to call us. Jesus said, in John 6:44 “No man CAN come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him.” God chooses the one He's going to call. JUDGMENT IS ON US NOW! When Christ comes, He's coming to JUDGMENT! Then judgment will be on all that are still living on earth. Judgment now is only on those that are called, in the Church. And we need to understand that. But we're being called to become teachers; and we're going to rule, and we're going to judge.

Now I explained about the government of the United States a while ago. God is the Lawgiver; but Jesus is in the office of President, or the executive. But Jesus also is given the Judgeship. And even in the United States government, the President appoints the Supreme Court Justices; so there's quite a similarity there. But it is only "the called" that can receive the Spirit of God NOW. That's just a question of when. And we are the firstfruits! The rest of the world will be called later. In Ephesians 1 verses 9 to 12 you learn we're the firstfruits. Also it's explained, and predestination is explained, in Romans the eighth chapter.

Now the Gospel was suppressed; and, as I say, they turned to a gospel ABOUT Christ. But they have not talked of His message! And His message talked about God as being the Supreme Ruler. And His message had to do with the Government of God; and God is the Lawgiver. And when you sin, the sin is the transgression of the law; and that has cut you off from GOD THE FATHER. BUT WHAT ARE THE PROTESTANT PREACHERS PREACHING? "JUST RECEIVE JESUS CHRIST AND YOU'RE ALREADY BORN AGAIN." POPPYCOCK! THEY ARE WRONG! THEY ARE IN ERROR. THAT IS THE TEACHING THAT SATAN THE DEVIL HAS GIVEN THEM. That alone is not enough! That's a start, but it's not enough. It takes far more. The world has lost the purpose of God. They have lost all knowledge of the gospel of Christ, which is the Kingdom of God. They have lost all of these things.

Restored Truths Listed

Now then, coming back to what I was saying in the beginning. Oh yes, I was showing the Church is persecuted, Revelation 12 verses 5 and 6, and so on; and they've had a false gospel. **Elijah was to come and restore things.** (Jesus is going to come and restore the government and, through the government, everything.) But WHAT was Elijah to restore? And, brethren,

HAS it happened yet? HAS it been restored? And what was restored?

1. The True Gospel

The world had lost the gospel. They didn't know what the gospel was. I came among the true Church of God of the Sardis era. They didn't know what the gospel was. They thought it was what they called a "third angel's message." They didn't know what the gospel really was. They called it a "third angel's message." **God revealed** it to me, and **through me to the Church**, that **the gospel is the Kingdom** of God. That is the gospel Jesus preached. That's the gospel Paul preached to the Gentiles. That's the gospel that Peter and John preached. And you'll find when Jesus sent them out, and sent out a seventy, He said: "Preach the Kingdom of God." That is the only gospel! It is the gospel OF Jesus Christ. The world has a gospel about Christ. Now the first thing to be restored to the Church is **the true gospel**.

2. Purpose Of God

The second thing to be restored is the purpose of God. And the gospel has to do with that: that God is reproducing us, and that MAN CAN BECOME GOD. No other Church on Earth believes that, brethren. And now let me tell you, I'm going to reveal to you now things that have been restored in this Church. And, let me tell you, these are all things that some of those who have been MINISTERS IN THIS CHURCH, IN HIGH OFFICE, HAVE GONE OUT AND NOW ARE SAYING, and saying publicly, that we are departing from the faith and that we are going farther and farther into error—because they will NOT receive the truths that God has been restoring into the Church. God's purpose is that He is reproducing Himself, and that we ultimately become God.

3. God's Plan Through The Holy Days

Now another thing that has been restored is, through the Holy Days, God's Plan—His master plan for accomplishing that purpose, and the annual Holy Days. And no other church has had those Holy Days and understands them.

All right, what's the next thing restored? I'm saying, I don't think these are in any special order. But the next one I have listed anyway, if I can even read my own writing. Well, the true Church has kept the commandments of God and the true name; and the Sardis era did have that. And many of them had tithing, but they didn't all even believe in tithing. But I think you could say the Church did, and God's true Church has believed those three things through most of the time. But many of these other things had to be restored to the Church, which had been lost.

That the end time was coming after World War I: Malachi 3:1-5, well I just read that to you. But to go on with the things that have been restored. Let's see. The gospel, and the true gospel was first preached to the world precisely 100 time cycles after it was lost in 53 AD. It went out to the world on Radio Luxembourg in Europe for the first time. It had gone coast to coast in the United States and Canada, and then it went to all of Europe 1900 years after Paul wrote in Galatians 1 that they had turned to another gospel: a century of time cycles.

4. Government

The government of God has been restored to the Church. And the government of God has been placed **in the Church!** You read that in Ephesians 4 and I Corinthians 12. Christ is the Head of the Church; and under Christ in the administration of the government are an apostle or

apostles; then evangelists; then pastors. Then all are called elders, all ministers, all the way up and clear down to the lowest. So then there are teachers and elders (both speaking elders and preaching elders), deacons and deaconesses. And the Church is restored in that form of government. Sardis Church, even, didn't have the right form of government.

The purpose of God—that we can be born into the Kingdom of God and the Family of God and become God—that knowledge has been restored to the Church.

5. Who And What Is God?

Who and what God IS. NO RELIGION ON EARTH KNOWS **WHO AND WHAT GOD IS**. No religion on Earth! Billy Graham doesn't know it. Jerry Falwell doesn't know it. Roman Catholics don't know. God is NOT a Trinity! God is NOT a single person. God IS a FAMILY of persons—and THE FAMILY began with God and the Word. You read of that in John 1 verses 1 to 5. You read of it in Genesis 1 beginning with verse 1. You should learn about God first; and it begins first both in the New Testament and the Old, because many experts feel (That is so-called experts, let me add.) that the book of John should be placed first in the New Testament, although it was not written first. God is A FAMILY, and it began with the Two; and WE can be born into that Family.

6. What And Why Is Man?

Now the next thing that's restored to the Church: What and why man is. WHAT IS MAN? Why did we come to be on Earth? The Sardis Church didn't know. They didn't know in the Middle Ages. Man was made from the dust of the ground. Man was made with one spirit, and he needs another Spirit—the Spirit of God, which unites him with God and is the impregnation

of God-life in him; and he will be born of God.

7. Spirit In Man

Next **the human spirit IN man**. No other church knows about that. That has been REVEALED to the Church. That is knowledge that has been RESTORED to the Church of God, and this Church has that knowledge.

8. Firstfruits

Another, the next piece of knowledge, that has been RESTORED to this Church that the rest don't know and no other church knows it: That this Church is the FIRSTFRUITS. That God is NOT trying to save the whole world now. He's calling us out NOW, and He'll use us as teachers to help save the others IN THEIR TURN. And they, in turn, from the Millennium will help save all the rest in the Great White Throne Judgment. And ultimately God is going to go after the saving of everybody who ever lived! But no church understands that: That we are the firstfruits. We are the embryo of the Kingdom of God.

The fact that we have to be CALLED BY GOD and that salvation is not open to just anyone "whosoever will." The whosoever will may come is found in the last chapter of the Bible, and does not pertain to this time at all. And no other church seems to know that. That knowledge has been restored to this Church.

9. Knowledge Of What The Millennium Is

The knowledge of the Millennium and what it is. Now the Sardis people knew that Christ would rule a thousand years. They knew it would be a Millennium. They had NO IDEA IN THE WORLD about what would happen

in the Millennium. They had NO IDEA what is the purpose of the Millennium. **We know.** And we assemble for the Feast of Tabernacles. That's what we're celebrating. And we know what's going to happen in the Millennium, and that salvation will be opened then to all that are still alive; but it is not open to all now. No other church knows that. These are things that YOU, brethren, ARE **PRIVILEGED TO KNOW.** **You!** God has BLESSED YOU with this knowledge—has RESTORED THIS KNOWLEDGE to you.

10. Truth About The Holy Spirit

Now, truth regarding the Holy Spirit.

11. Begotten Now

And the fact that we are BEGOTTEN NOW. You're NOT born yet, only begotten.

12. Born Again At Resurrection

That we will become born at the time of the Second Coming of Christ, when this mortal puts on immortality [I Corinthians 15:54], when we won't be human any longer. We'll be divine. The knowledge that he that his "*born of the flesh IS flesh,*" mortal. And that's what we are! That is, that when you are BORN of the Spirit, you will **BE SPIRIT.** (Someone please go tell Jerry Falwell that, so he'll know he's not yet "born again".)

13. Identity Of Israel

Another thing restored to us is **our** roots, **our** identity, **WHO WE ARE.**

We [in the USA] are the tribe of Manasseh of the lost Ten Tribes of Israel; and no other church on Earth knows it. That knowledge has been RESTORED into this Church. And God restored that **to me** 53 years ago:

14. Identity Opens Up Understanding Of Bible Prophecy

Our identity! And that opens all the doors of ONE THIRD OF THE WHOLE BIBLE–**PROPHECY** you can't understand without that knowledge. That opened up a whole third of the Bible, which is prophecy. That's a third of the Bible. And so, a third of the Bible and the understanding of prophecy has been opened to THIS Church, that has been restored to this Church.

Has **God sent someone** TO RESTORE KNOWLEDGE to this Church, brethren? I'm not tooting any horns. I'm just telling you what has actually HAPPENED, and you know it's happened!

The fact of the annual Festivals, that they represent God's plan.

15. Second And Third Tithe

The second and third tithe (What other church knows about that?) that was restored by this Church! That knowledge, restored by this Church.

16. Identity Of Babylon And Her Daughters

Then the great deception, the counterfeit of Revelation 17:5: *"BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH"*– her daughter churches, and who they are.

17. Satan Is The Guilty Party

And the fact that Satan the devil has deceived the whole world. Brethren, Satan is the one who is guilty. Those people in the Catholic Church and the Protestant churches have been deceived. And I think they really believe. God just hasn't opened any more truth to them. We don't sit in judgment of them. We're not judging them yet. We're going to do it. And, when we judge them, then all truth will be open; and God will take away the blindness from their eyes so they **can** understand, if they're willing. Today they couldn't understand it, even if they're willing. I don't think they're willing either, far as that goes.

18. We Are To Be Separate

And how, in Revelation 18:4, that God has called us OUT from among them TO be separate.

God Has Restored Truth

Well, brethren, ALL THOSE THINGS **have been** restored; and there is a mission for this Church that never applied and has never been done by any other Church: "*This gospel of the kingdom*" has been restored and "shall be preached in all the world for a witness to all nations." [Matthew 24:14] Has that been done? Has that been restored? Is that gospel going out to the world? You listen on television tomorrow.

Or do you have something more important to do? You might think about that. Maybe the telecast of the Truth of God is not important. Maybe you have something more important to do. And maybe, when you do something else, you'd better think "Was it more important, or should I have been listening to the program?" I'm afraid a lot of you don't listen. Well, I

hope it's not a lot of you either. Maybe it's only a few. But I know that some are bound to be a little bit careless.

But thanks and praise to God, **He** HAS restored knowledge. That is all God's doing. None of us can be anything more than human instruments. If I have been willing to do anything, it is only because God Himself brought about circumstances to compel me and make me willing, whether I wanted to be or not; and even then I can take no credit whatsoever. It was all the doing of God, through Jesus Christ.

But remember this: the Protestant churches, they just have Christ. We have to come to God by way of Christ. And Jesus taught us: When you pray, pray "*Our Father* which art in heaven." And we pray in the name of Jesus Christ. He said whatsoever we ask the Father in His name (the name of Christ), God will do—if we ask in faith, believing. We must ask what God has promised to do. Remember that faith is simply believing that God will not lie; and that, what God has promised, He will perform. So let's be thankful. Let's praise God for it. Let's give all thanks to God Almighty, the Father.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently gave the wrong scripture reference. The original says, "I want you to contrast verse 3."

[{2}](#) - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently gave the wrong chapter. The original says, "In the 19th chapter of Acts."

[{3}](#) - Editorial note: Referring to II Peter 2:5 and the old world, Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said "Moses" when he meant "Adam." That is, the sins from Adam to the Flood, not from Moses to the Flood.

Foundation of a New World

Sermon (December 31, 1983)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Foundation of a New World.....	1744	Another Gospel	1756
Understanding Given	1745	A New And Different World	1758
The Human Spirit	1748	Reconciled To God The Father	1759
Man Offered Immortal Life	1749	Buildings: The Church And The World	1762
Building God's Family	1752	Building A New World	1765
Satan The Kidnapper	1754	Deciding To Go God's Way	1767
Foundation Of This World	1755		

Greetings, brethren. The doomsday clock has just been set up by the atomic scientists from 4 to 3 minutes before midnight. The eleventh hour struck some time ago. World leaders are perplexed. They're frightened. They have no solutions. The unthinkable has become very thinkable, and hundreds of millions now are beginning to worry about it. The President of the United States recently said it would seem like Armageddon is approaching near.

If you happened to stay tuned after the movie "The Day After" appeared on the ABC network (Let's see. That's a little over a month ago, I think about the 26th of last month.), there was quite a discussion of some of the leading advisors to the United States government. The panel in the discussion to discuss the whole thing included the Secretary of State, and the former Secretary of State, and many others that had been advisors to the President or former Presidents of the United States in regard to this very world condition and the possibility of nuclear war. And everyone is beginning to realize now that we have come to the place where a nuclear war can BLAST ALL HUMANITY out of existence – not leaving a man, woman, or child alive on the face of the earth; and that includes every one of us.

Now, in a world of absolutely awesome progress and yet of world of

appalling evil (as I've said so very many times), are we now reaching the end of human existence? Are we reaching human extinction from this planet? Is the crowning achievement of technology and science and massive governmental production going to be the Frankenstein that will destroy us all and blot out all humanity?

World leaders are bewildered. I talk to many of them. Perhaps I've talk to more in their own home offices than any other man alive recently. They're absolutely helpless. They have no solutions. They are bewildered. They don't know how to face the future. Why?

Understanding Given

Now this does vitally concern us all, and it has something very special to do with this particular Church. I don't mean just the Pasadena p.m. congregation, but I mean the whole Church of God worldwide. Jesus preached the solution, and He preached a great deal of it in parables. He preached in parables so that the world would not understand. They didn't understand what He meant by His parables. He did explain to His own disciples. He said it was given to them to understand.

And it is given to you and me, brethren, to understand. It is not given to the world in general. They do not understand. They can't understand. Now if we aren't preempted tomorrow morning, I'm thinking we probably won't be tomorrow night, on I believe that will be Channel 9 at ... Let's see. Will that be 9:30 or 10:30? I forget. But it's a rather late hour, and prime time; however, I think the program will be on – an interview with one of the leaders of the government of Israel. And, if you are watching that interview, you will notice, as I begin to explain what does lie ahead, he seems to be perplexed; and he rather admits that he doesn't understand the Bible. And he did express that he wished I could explain to their rabbis so that they could

understand the Bible a little better; and I thought it was a clear indication that he recognized that I have a better understanding of their own Bible than their own rabbis do – which I would agree with him. [Laughter in audience.] And that doesn't have to be any boast, because they don't understand it.

Jesus explained to His disciples something that the world never did understand. It was all about the Kingdom of God, which is the overruling purpose of God. And that was Jesus' message – the Kingdom of God. The world didn't understand that; and they don't yet, because that gospel has not been preached to the world. They have not preached the gospel **of** Christ. They have preached man's gospel **about** Christ. They've merely preached about the person.

The person, Jesus, was a Messenger. The gospel is His Message. That is not preached, and was not in the world until God opened radio to me before the days of television; and it was proclaimed all over the United States in a 19-year time cycle. And then, precisely a century of time cycles from the time that the gospel was SUPPRESSED, Radio Luxembourg, the most powerful radio station on earth, was opened up in Europe; and the gospel went out to Europe.

(Even though I have very big type that I think you can almost read down there in the front row, I can scarcely read my own notes here.)

Well, I want to give you a certain analogy today. It's not a parable. Let's call it an analogy, but it's similar and one that I think you will understand. The people that God has called **will** understand. This world is a building. It has a foundation. It has a superstructure. It has been built. It has been built in a certain way. We read in Revelation 13:8, in the middle of the verse, it talks about "*the Lamb [of God] slain from **the foundation of the world.***" The world was built on a foundation. You build a house or a structure on a foundation.

Now, I've been going back to the foundation of this world for the last, I think maybe 2 or 2 1/2 years, most of the time; and you can't understand it without going back to the foundation. It's the one thing that I'm afraid the Church had been overlooking. I've said so many times it's like coming in to a movie when it's about 90-95% finished. You don't know what went before. You don't know what events led up to what you're seeing in the movie now. Consequently, you don't **understand** what's going on when you see the movie, if you didn't see it from the beginning. The beginning always sets the foundation for the whole thing.

So people try to look at this world that way, from what they see today. If you don't go back and see what led up to it, you don't understand the world. You don't understand how it came to be this way. What was the foundation of this world? God's purpose is to build a kingdom. That kingdom is something built, and it is likened to a building; and it's compared to a building in the Scriptures.

Like a building, it had to be built on a foundation. We read in Psalm 127 (Psalm 127. Let me see. Didn't I have a marker for that? I don't know how I overlooked that, but I'll find it pretty quickly here. My marker got lost.) where David wrote:

Psalm 127:1 Except the [Eternal] build the house, they labour in vain that build it.

There the world is likened to a house that is built; and except God builds the house, they labor in vain that build it. Now God did purpose to build a house. That house is a kingdom. That house is a great nation. That house was a great civilization. And He chose to build it out of matter, out of dirt. So He formed a man out of dirt, out of the dust of the ground. He intended to build the house from that man.

Now, the man wasn't complete. He hadn't completed even the

foundation yet. Physically, the man was incomplete because God wanted him to reproduce and produce more people to build, so that the building would carry on and grow. The man, of course, couldn't do it alone. So God took one of his ribs; and, out of Adam, He made a woman. He didn't make the woman out of the ground, like He had Adam. She was made out of him. Woman came from man. Man came from the ground.

The Human Spirit

Also, he was incomplete (as I've said so many times) mentally and spiritually. He had a brain like animals – no better than animals, just like animals. But God had put something in the human brain that was not put in the animal brain, and that is **a human spirit**. The human spirit is a psyche. It imparts intellect to a physical brain. The spirit can't see. It can't think. It is the brain that sees through the eyes; the brain that hears through the ears. The brain does the thinking, but the spirit sort of impels the brain. It suggests. It sort of leads the brain. It gives the brain the power of intellect.

Now again, in Genesis the first chapter and the first verse, we read how:

***Genesis 1:1** In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*

The word for God is Elohim, which is a plural word meaning more than one person. It could be written even "*Gods [plural] created the heaven and the earth.*" I think the translators didn't translate it that way in English because they thought that would confuse people. And yet you come to verse 26, and you find:

***Genesis 1:26** And God said, Let **us** make man in **our** image, after **our** likeness.*

God intended them to reproduce and multiply, and He was going to build a structure from that foundation. In the second chapter of Genesis and

verse 7, it says:

Genesis 2:7 The [Eternal God] formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man [That is, the dust of the ground just formed into a man.] became a living soul.

The dust of the ground became a soul that's all together matter. Now there was **a spirit IN the soul**. The soul itself is not a spirit. So many, in fact the whole world, have been deceived on that point. I'm going to make it clear right here, as I have many times.

Man Offered Immortal Life

Now, the man had only temporary existence. His life came; the only life he had was a temporary existence that came by the breath of air (the breath of life, as it's called) and the circulation of blood. The blood was oxidized in the lungs. It was passed through the lungs by the air, and sort of fired it (like your engine in a motor car is fired by a spark plug; and it ignites the gas, and fires it, and produces power).

So man had only a **temporary** existence, but God **offered** him immortality and perpetual existence. That was offered in one of the trees in the Garden. God had moved him into the Garden of Eden, which must have been the most beautiful garden that has ever appeared on the face of the earth.

One of the most beautiful gardens I've ever seen was the Japanese Garden over in the campus at Bricket Wood, which was our college campus for some 17 years. Another most beautiful garden is the one at Exbury, a garden of rhododendrons; and millions and millions of dollars have been spent in building that garden. It occupies several acres. Some of us from here when through it last May. I have a movie of it, showing "The Glory of the

Garden,” as it is called; and it’s just one of the most beautiful things you ever saw. Millions of dollars have been spent in building it. But the Garden of Eden was undoubtedly far more beautiful because God built it; and He beheld everything He had built and made, and:

Genesis 1:21 *And, behold, it was* [Not just good. It was:] **very good.**
[Very good!]

So man was offered immortal life, and that came through the Tree of Life; but it would come from God. It was just as if God had said to Adam (It was coming from God through the Holy Spirit.), and God might have said to Adam something like this: “I have given you a human spirit in your brain, to give you a human mind to know of yourself good and evil; and you have. But you have self-existence.” But it would be a selfish good.

That’s as far as he’d be able to see; and, if he took it, it would ultimately result in death. He would have a sense of good up to a certain point, on a human level, as far as he could. But it would be self-centered and selfish. And he also had evil. Now he would have good towards himself and evil towards other people, and that is what has happened.

But, if he took of the Tree of Life, God might have said, “With it and the Tree of Life you’ll receive My Spirit; and in it you will receive MY MIND – because it is a better mind than yours, a mind that can understand all **spiritual knowledge**. You’ll only be able to understand physical and materialistic knowledge, and the spiritual qualities of good and evil on the human level – on the physical level, more or less. But to understand it on the higher spiritual level you’ll need My Spirit, and you will need the Life that comes from Me. I will give you of My own Life. You will be first begotten and then born of Me. And your life will come right out of Me, and I will give it to you from Me,” God might have said to Adam. With it, of course, would come spiritual knowledge.

Mere Human Knowledge

Otherwise, you would have merely human knowledge if you take the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, which would be human knowledge. But, without God, you will never be happy. You cannot succeed. You'll be confined to a lower level. Your life will run out, because you don't have eternal life; and you will surely die. So that could have been called **the tree of death**. The other tree (that God did offer him freely) was the Tree of LIFE. But God forbade him to take of the tree of death; and, if he did, he would surely die. In other words, it was just merely good on the human level; and on the human level he only had a temporary existence. So naturally he was going to die.

Now, if he took of the Tree of Life, he would also – through the Spirit of God, that God would have given him from that (I mean receiving it from God.) – receive the guidance of God; and he needed that guidance. Now Adam did received guidance. He made the decision, “Well, I'll go it alone. I'll depend on myself. I'll decide good and evil. I don't need You to tell me good from evil. I'll decide it for myself.”

He didn't meet up with Satan himself. His wife, Eve, stole out when he wasn't looking and met Satan; and Satan deceived her. But Satan must have gotten to Adam too, since he gets to everybody as ”*the prince of the power of the air*” and as spirit. A spirit being can communicate at least attitudes into the human brain, because our human brains are on Satan's wavelength.

Now, you can't understand things that are going on radio stations that can be heard right here in this auditorium if your ear could be tuned in on their wavelength, and you could even hear voices and see pictures coming from television stations if you can be tuned in on their channel; but it takes instruments to do that for us.

But Satan broadcasts. He doesn't broadcast in words (I've said it so

many, many times.) or definite thoughts but **in attitudes** that lead to thoughts and lead to motives and motivations. So he [Adam] received whatever good he had from Satan. Then God closed up the Tree of Life until Jesus Christ, the second Adam, should come and pay the penalty that Adam had incurred and that all of his sons were going to incur.

Now God could not give his sons the Holy Spirit because Adam had sinned. And before the sons had become old enough to comprehend and understand and receive the Spirit of God, Satan had gotten to every one of them with the attitude of selfishness that led to sin. And those sins had to be paid for because *"sin is the transgression of the law."* The law has penalties. *"The wages of sin is death."* All had then inherited the penalty of death. And until Christ came, who had never sinned, and then had died and paid the penalty of human sin, God could not open up **the Spirit of Life** to any human being.

Now He made an exception in the prophets of the Old Testament, for the writing of the Bible; and they were sort of a pre-foundation of the Church. The Church has come to receive the Holy Spirit because Christ had paid the penalty and our sins could be forgiven, and Christ came. His death doesn't give us salvation. It doesn't impart eternal, or immortal, life to us at all. It reconciles us to God.

Building God's Family

Now there again is something else. God had purposed ... And I can even have another sort of analogy or sort of a parable. God had purposed to build a Family. It was His Family; and His Family potentially began with Adam. It was all coming **out of Adam**, because Eve came out of Adam, and then Cain, and Abel, and Seth. Then they had other sons and daughters after that, who all came out of Adam and Eve. Then other children came out of

them. So you trace it back, and ultimately every human being has come out of Adam; and we're all the family of Adam. It was **the potential Family of God**.

Now there's another analogy: Satan came along and kidnapped that family. I am writing now another book. The first chapter will appear in the February number of The Plain Truth. Some of us have already received advance copies of that issue. The lead article is "A World Held Captive," which will be the title of the book; and that is the first chapter of the book (if I can get around to finding the time to write the rest of it). At least the first chapter is written.

Satan **kidnapped** this family. And here we had the rather ludicrous and ridiculous idea, or situation, that the kidnapped person actually believed in the kidnapper and the kidnapper's way of life a whole lot more than the potential Father. God is the potential Father, and He intended them to become His children; but they had to receive Life from Him. They had to first QUALIFY. In other words, God is the perfect spiritual character, and man was given a chance to receive the Spirit of God.

First he had to make a decision. He had to want that. Wanting it, it was available to him; and God offered it to him freely. He would have received the Spirit of God. Through the Spirit of God he would have begun to receive the knowledge, and he would have received the LOVE of God shed abroad in his heart. He would have received the knowledge of the law of God, of the way of perfection in life and perfect character. But in order to perform that perfect character and produce it, it takes **love**.

God did not build Adam, or create Adam, with that kind of love. That was like the icing of the cake, would have to come later. It could have come through His Holy Spirit if Adam had taken of the Tree of Life, which he did not do. He rejected it, so he could not have it; and it could not come to

humans until the time of Jesus Christ.

Satan The Kidnapper

But Adam, instead of receiving the guidance of God, now received the guidance of Satan the kidnapper; and so the whole family did go. It was the potential Family of God; but it was kidnapped by Satan, and it has loved the way of the kidnapper.

We had an example not too long ago, when the granddaughter of the famous newspaper publisher (William Randolph Hearst), Patty Hearst, was kidnapped. Low and behold, she was brainwashed a little bit; and she came to love the way of the kidnapper more than the way of her own parents. While they were human and carnal, yet you see humans have good as well as evil. They were considered as an upright and good family, as this world goes. But Patty, for a while, preferred the way of them and even entered into a bank robbery with them with loaded guns, or loaded rifle.

Well, it seems like that situation finally came out all right from this world's point of view. She was finally rescued; and I think it's something in the past now, at this time. But it does give us an illustration, and that might be of some value. I would think that even she herself would be glad if we could use the experience for the good of other people, to illustrate it – that ALL HUMANITY has loved the way of the kidnapper, and the kidnapper *"deceives the whole world."*

So a world was founded on Adam. He had made a decision. He was going to go the way he did, and he was influenced and led by Satan when he could have been led by God. He became Satan's property, and it was Satan's way of self – do your own thing, resent authority, selfishness, vanity – instead of cooperation, and serving, and helping, and togetherness. That became the foundation of the world. But the foundation was faulty, and so the

superstructure was bound to be faulty.

Foundation Of This World

Now we turn back, and I'd like you to read (or listen to, as I read) Matthew the seventh chapter and verses 24 through 27.

Matthew 7:24-25 Therefore [Jesus said] whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock [a solid foundation of a rock]. (25) And the rain descended, and the floods came [It was a heavy storm.], and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

It had a solid foundation. It had the right start, the right foundation. And every building starts from its foundation. You know, you don't build the roof first, and then the top floor and others, and then build under them because what would hold up the roof and the top floor? You build the foundation first.

Matthew 7:26-27 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: (27) And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew [It was a big storm.], and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall [thereof].

Now, a house has been built. "Except the [Eternal]— or except God — build the house, they labor in vain that build it." Humanity has been laboring in vain 6,000 years building this house, this superstructure that we call the world, that we call this civilization. It is a world, it is a building, on a **faulty foundation**; and every thing has been wrong with that foundation. Not only was it an unsound foundation but it was started out on the wrong attitude, the wrong motive — self — from Satan; and it was influenced by Satan all the way through.

Jesus came to save the situation, and I want to tell you how He came to save it; but first I want you to notice this. He came, and Satan tried to kill Him. Later he tried to deceive Him and to get Jesus to sin, and Jesus didn't. And so, when Satan couldn't do that and Jesus did found His Church, His Church was a building started on a solid foundation of a Rock; and Jesus Christ is that Rock. The foundation, as I'll show you later, is the apostles and prophets; and Christ, the Rock, is the chief corner stone and the chief of the foundation. So Jesus came with the good news of another building altogether – the Kingdom of God.

God was going to start a kingdom, but Satan kidnapped that kingdom. That kingdom has built a certain superstructure that we call the world, that we call civilization. It's been built on a false foundation.

Now, the Protestant churches have been deceived; and they're trying to SAVE the world. They're trying to save the superstructure. They're not going back to repair the original foundation. No, there's a Rock in the foundation that's going to let the whole building crash; and they're laboring in vain, because the Lord isn't building their house. They're trying to work on the superstructure and save that. God has no intention of saving that superstructure. That may be a surprise to you, but just listen.

Another Gospel

Jesus came and preached the good news of the Kingdom of God. The Kingdom of God is THE FAMILY OF GOD that will rule the world and become a nation. In other words, it too starts with the Church, and the Church is that Kingdom **in embryo**. The Church is also called a house, or a building, "*fitly framed together.*" It's built on a Rock.

Now what I want you to notice, Jesus preached this gospel. But, in Galatians the first chapter and verses 6 and 7, the apostle Paul said to the

Churches up in Galatia:

Galatians 1:6 I marvel that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel.

What they were called to was this sure and safe foundation – the truth of God and the grace of Christ, who came to restore us back to the Father (God) from whom Satan the kidnapper has kidnapped us.

Galatians 1:6-7 I marvel that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel [Another message about what it's all about.]: (7) which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would **pervert** the gospel of [Jesus] Christ.

Again, I want you to turn ... Well, Satan counterfeited with another gospel. He turned them to a different gospel altogether. Jesus did not come to try to save this superstructure. What He came for was to start another building altogether. God had started a potential building that could have been His building, but Adam rejected Him and turned to Satan and Satan's way instead. Now God is going to let it CRASH! God is going to let this world **COME DOWN!** GOD IS NOT TRYING TO SAVE THIS WORLD, and this world is going to CRASH DOWN and go into extinction.

Now those words are a little bit shocking, I think, to most people. I don't think they should be to you, brethren, because I think you've already heard enough to understand. But most religions think Jesus came to save this superstructure. That's what they are trying to do. They don't say, "Come out of the world." They're PART OF THIS WORLD. The Catholic church is part of this world. The Protestant churches – the Methodists, the Presbyterians, the Baptists, the Lutherans, the Congregationalists, and so on – they're all PART OF THIS WORLD. They're **the religious part**, and they are preaching. They don't realize it. They're blinded. They're deceived, and they don't know it. I'm not saying they are maliciously, intentionally, wrong. They

think they're right! They're just as honest in believing they're right as you are in knowing that we're right. But they are deceived, and they are trying to save this world.

A New And Different World

God is **not** trying to save this world. And you can't find where Jesus Christ, when He was on earth, tried to save this world. Rather He called His disciples out from this world and said, "Come out of this world altogether. I'm going to start a **new** and a **different world**. We're going to start a new building. We're going to let this building crash! We're going to start a NEW BUILDING altogether." And it's based on a foundation that was first a Rock, and then the disciples that He taught became apostles. The superstructure, the foundation of this building that God is building, is:

Ephesians 2:20 ... built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself [the Rock] being the chief cornerstone.

A building built on a Rock. So God sent Jesus Christ into the world as the second Adam, starting all over where the first Adam could have but failed. Jesus came as the second Adam.

Now, Jesus made the decision. In fact, He had the Spirit of God from birth because He was **begotten** by the Spirit of God and not by a human sperm cell. But He was tempted in all points, every way that Adam was and then some. Satan tried to kill Him. Then Satan tried to deceive Him. Satan didn't succeed.

Then Satan went after the Church; and he martyred the leaders of the Church, and they were put to death. Then he started a controversy as to whether the gospel should be the gospel of Christ (that Christ brought, His own gospel) or some different gospel that they would make up (a gospel of

men) merely about Christ.

There was a 100-year lapse in the history of the Church, and we have no record of what happened. But when the curtain lifts over that which had been drawn down over the history of the Church, 100 years later we find a church calling itself “Christian” that is as different as night is from day from the Church that Jesus started on the day of Pentecost through the apostles – built on Christ and the apostles. It was a totally different church, and that is what all the churches in this world have come on out of that. Men believe what they get from other people in the church.

This Church, brethren, did not come that way. The original apostles were taught by Jesus Christ, and the apostle of this time was taught by Jesus Christ. Jesus in person is the personal Word of God. The Bible is the SAME Word of God, in writing. And God taught me by Jesus in writing, just as He taught the early apostles by Jesus in person; but it’s the same Word exactly.

The churches have preserved it, believe it or not; but they don’t understand it because it’s written in code. They can’t break the code. They can’t understand what it says.

Jesus came as the second Adam. He started **an entire, NEW, different building all together** – A DIFFERENT CIVILIZATION. Not reforming, not healing up this sick world; but starting a new world all together – from start to finish built on a new, separate, foundation. And He called His disciples OUT OF this world. They didn’t choose Him. They were not volunteers. He said, “You have not chosen Me, but I have called you OUT OF THIS WORLD;” and He taught them.

Reconciled To God The Father

Now then, Jesus came to reconcile those who are called OUT of this

world. They are no longer part of the world, and they are reconciled to God by the blood of Christ. The world thinks you are saved by the blood of Christ. You read Romans 5, verse ... well the 5th chapter of Romans. (I was going to say verse 5, but I'm not quite sure of the verse.) But read in the 5th chapter of the book of Romans, and you will see that we are not saved by Jesus' blood. We are reconciled to God by the death of Christ, not saved by the death of Christ. Death can't give you life. But we'll be **SAVED BY HIS LIFE**, His resurrection! We are not saved by His death. We are saved by His Life. But His death reconciled us back to God from whom we'd been kidnapped.

Now **THE WORLD DOESN'T WANT TO GO BACK TO GOD; AND THE WORLD BELIEVES IN A FALSE JESUS. MOST OF THE CHURCHES PREACH ABOUT JESUS. THEY PREACH ABOUT CHRIST. THEY DON'T PREACH ABOUT **GOD THE FATHER****. You don't hear very much about GOD. That's why they say, "The law is done away." The law is honoring God. It is GOD who established the Sabbath. It is GOD who said you are stealing when you take His tithe that is holy to Him. The things that are **holy to God** they're not concerned about. They're only concerned selfishly about the things that seem right to them, and that's what the Protestant churches are teaching all the time.

Well now, at the foundation of the world God had a plan; and our annual holy days picture that plan to us. But in Hebrews 9:27 ... Do I need to turn to that? I believe I do because I've read it so many, many times. It'll only take a second though. Let's turn to it.

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die [That's from the foundation of the world.], but after this the judgment.

Now the judgment will come by a resurrection. Next you go to I Corinthians 15, beginning with verse 22.

I Corinthians 15:22 For as in Adam ALL die ...

Adam died. He lived 930 years, then he died. His life ran out. We find men then lived to be about 500 years old. Then they lived to be about 120 years old. And finally, in the days of king David, he was 70 years and was “old and stricken with years.” Then he died, when he reached 70. And today that’s about the expectancy of life – 70 years. God has blessed some of us with a little longer life than that, but:

***1 Corinthians 15:22-23** For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall ALL [the same “all”] be made alive. (23) But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits [by a resurrection from the dead, the firstborn among many brethren]; afterward they that are Christ’s at his coming [will be resurrected out of their graves].*

Those that are alive and remain at that time will be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, from mortal to immortal; and will rise to meet Christ in the air as He’s coming back to reign in the new world that He came to start. Not this same world at all! An entirely new and different building – a new world, a new civilization.

The present world started on a foundation. God started another world on this foundation of Christ, but He’s not trying to save this world so that whosoever will in this world can just get saved; and the whole world is going to be saved one by one. Instead, Jesus said in John 6:44 ... I’ve read this so many, many times. Jesus said:

***John 6:44** No man can come to me ...*

Now, there’s only one door to God. The main thing is to **get back to God the Father**. The Protestant churches and the Catholic church ignore God the Father. The Catholic church teaches you to go to Mary, and the Protestant churches teach you to go to Jesus. But, you see, the law came from God the Father. Christ came to restore us to God the Father and reconcile us to God. It’s God who has eternal life to give. God is the Father from whom the

potential Family has been kidnapped. Jesus said:

John 6:44 *No man can come to me [And He's the only door to get to God.], except the Father which hath sent me draw him.*

It's a case of getting to the Father; and the Father has to choose and call you and draw you, or you can't come to Christ. That's why you can't talk your relatives into seeing the truth of God. If God hasn't called them, you can't do it. They're blinded. They can't see, and they think you're crazy. Who is there among you that haven't been called crazy by relatives and other people when you tried to tell them some of the truth? They can't see it. To them, you're just crazy if you believe what I'm preaching.

Buildings: The Church And The World

So the Church now is, and is called, a building. Notice in Ephesians, in the 2nd chapter of Ephesians. I'd like to begin first in verse 1.

Ephesians 2:1-2 *And you [said to the Church at Ephesus, and they had been Gentiles originally. You ...] hath he quickened [or, made alive and given the spirit of immortality], who were dead in trespasses and sins; (2) wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world ...*

You were part of this structure – this superstructure built on a false foundation. It is led by Satan, who has built a superstructure we call “the world.” And you were part of it. You were deceived by Satan.

Ephesians 2:2 *... according to the prince of the power of the air [who is Satan], the spirit that now WORKS [now is working] in the children of disobedience.*

And he was working in every one of us, brethren; but we've been called out, so he doesn't work in us any longer. We are no longer part of this

building. This building is going to CRASH! This building is coming down.

If you are in a big building and it is going to topple over in an earthquake, if you can get out and away from that building maybe you can save your life. But you don't want to stay in it or you'll crash with it. **This world** is going to crash down! It's a building that's going to CRASH and CRUMBLE and BE DESTROYED. If you stay in it, you're going to be destroyed with it.

Jesus said, "COME OUT of this world and be separate." He called us out of the world, and it is only those that are called. Now I took a sermon one time to devote considerable time going through actually dozens of passages all through the New Testament showing that all of those who get into the Church have been **called**, have been **chosen by God**. They are not volunteers. They are draftees. We have been conscripted.

Well, now then, I wanted to go a little farther. Coming over next to Ephesians the 2nd chapter, beginning with verse 19:

***Ephesians 2:19** Now therefore you [who were Gentiles. He said to the Church at Ephesus:] are no more strangers and foreigners [because the true Church was Israel converted and receiving the Spirit of God], but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the **household** of God.*

Now house – **household** – that is the family. It's a family living in a house; and that house is built on a faulty foundation, and we are to come out of it. But the new Family is built on a new foundation, and it is new house. It's **the house of God**. In the Bible, we find the kingdom of Israel and the kingdom of Judah are so often called "the house of Israel" and "the house of Judah." The word "house" is used to designate a nation in many, many places in the Bible.

***Ephesians 2:20-21** And [you are] built on the foundation [Now*

notice the foundation here. And in the Church we are built on a NEW and DIFFERENT foundation. Not the foundation of Adam and Satan. Built on the foundation:] *of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone* [Just as I've been saying, we are built on a Rock. We are built on a solid foundation.]; *(21) in whom ALL THE BUILDING* [You see, we are a building. The Church and the world to come, the civilization, is a building. "In whom all the building ..."] *fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord* [a spiritual temple].

And you, brethren – and I'd like to include myself with you – are that temple to which Christ is coming. Some people think the Jews are going to build a new temple for Christ. The Jews reject Christ. They're not going to build the temple for Him to come to. But **GOD IS BUILDING THAT TEMPLE!** And you and me – we, individually – each are the temple of the Holy Spirit; and as a collective body we are **the temple of God** in whom the Holy Spirit dwells. We are built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets. Jesus Christ the ROCK is the chief corner stone, or the foundation on which we are built.

Ephesians 2:22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

It's the building in which God will dwell, a habitation of God – an entirely new and different building, an entirely new civilization.

Jesus taught the knowledge about the Kingdom of God. And so He taught us that this world is going to crash, and He is going to come as the King of kings, the Lord of lords, to start a new world. Jesus had to meet Satan head on. He conquered Satan, and He qualified to replace Satan on the throne of the earth. Satan is on the throne of the earth, and this says he has kidnapped the potential Family of God. It has been his world, and he's on the throne of the world over all the governments of the different nations of the

world; and Satan is the king over all of them. They are blinded and they don't know it. He has blinded them so they don't see the truth, as you read in II Corinthians; let me see, I think it's 4 and verse 3.

Building A New World

Now in Matthew 24, they asked Jesus about **the end of the world**. This world is going to come down and crash. This building is going to crumble and be destroyed. He said that this same gospel of the Kingdom that Jesus preached would be proclaimed in all the world; and it was not for 1900 years. God has raised me up to proclaim that worldwide, and it has gone worldwide.

Matthew 24:14 This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations [Not in all nations, but for a witness to them.]; and then shall the end come [The end of this world, the collapse of the world.].

It will be ended. It will be over. In verse 21 and 22 you find the final crash, being the Great Tribulation; and ALL HUMANITY would be destroyed – there wouldn't be a man, woman, or child left alive from the nuclear war – except that God will for the Church's sake (the elect's sake that He has elected) shorten those days before everybody is made extinct. For our sake, the whole world will be ... Not all of the world will be saved, but enough at least to start a new world; and we will be ruling over them.

Now then, finally in Revelation the 3rd chapter and the 21st verse, Jesus said:

Revelation 3:21 To him that overcometh [That's in the Church.] will I grant to sit with me in my throne [That's in the new earth, after this earth has crumbled, and fallen, and crashed; and He's come to start the new world, the new building.], even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in

his throne [that was in heaven].

And then in the 2nd chapter and verses 26 and 27 of Revelation:

Revelation 2:26 *He that overcometh* [And we have to overcome, and we have to endure to the end. “He that overcometh:”], *and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations.*

We’re finally, after the world has crashed and Satan is gone, now we’re going to start a **new government – a new world**. And we are, say, the first floor or two of the next high-rise building built on the original foundation of Jesus Christ and the apostles and prophets. We’re going to build the rest of the superstructure. And, as Christ taught the apostles and they began to teach others, I’ve been teaching you people.

You are being taught so you can teach others at this time, when you’re going to have POWER over the rest of the world. You’re going to rule them. You’re going to judge them. And you’re going to teach them the truth. And then they will be able to repent, and come and receive the Spirit of God, and take of the Tree of Life – which Adam rejected (the first Adam), and which the second Adam did take, and which we’ll ALL be taking at that time.

Revelation 2:26-27 *He that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations; (27) And he shall RULE them with a rod of iron ...*

Other scriptures say we’re going to judge the world. We’re even going to judge angels. But this world God is not going to save. He’s going to save a lot of people out of it. Those in the world that are not called now, I read you the scriptures of how all who are not still alive have all died; and many more are going to die before Christ comes. In fact, I would say that more than two-thirds of all the people on the face of this earth. I would say that probably close to 3 BILLION people on the earth are going to die or be killed between

now and the Second Coming of Christ, and that's in our lifetime.

TERRIBLE things are going to happen, and the world now is frightened. The world's leaders are frightened and perplexed, and they don't understand. They don't have any solutions. They don't know what to do. Brethren, God is using us as the solution. We're going to not save this world. We're going to build a new world. And those that are left alive, they will have been called out of this world because this world will have CRASHED and be dead. We'll be starting a new world, and they will then ...

There won't be any devil around to deceive them. And then for 1,000 years – which we celebrate at the Feast of Tabernacles every year – we're going to be saving the rest of the world, and judging them, and ruling over them **IN GOD'S WORLD, living God's way according to God's law and through the Spirit of God. They will be given the Spirit of God, and then they will be given eternal and immortal life.** That is, all who are willing. But they will have to repent. They will have to make a decision – every one of them. But there won't be any Satan around to deceive and mislead them. They won't be deceived.

Deciding To Go God's Way

If they make a wrong decision, their blood will be on their own head. They won't be deceived. Today most people are deceived. God knows that, and He puts the blame where it belongs – on Satan the devil. That is, the primary blame. Then, after the Millennium, there'll be the Great White Throne Judgment; and everybody that ever lived is going to come back to life. Those converted during the Millennium, plus us, will all be in the Family of God in this **NEW BUILDING, THIS NEW STRUCTURE.** And the old structure will have crumbled and been long forgotten. Then, every one of them is going to be just like Adam was in the beginning. They're going to

face the two trees, so to speak; but there won't be any devil there to deceive them.

We'll be there to teach them, and every influence around them is going to be a godly influence to lead them God's way. You know, personally I believe the overwhelming majority are going to respond and be saved when they are no longer deceived; but not all, otherwise the Bible wouldn't say that there are going to be those who will become ashes under the soles of our feet.

It's not a universal salvation. No one can be saved except he makes the decision himself. It's not only making the decision, it's acting on that decision. Sin is the transgression of the law, not just the temptation and the desire. It is acting on that temptation. It's when the desire comes, you meditate on it and you think, and finally you give in and say, "Well, I'll go ahead and do it." The **doing** is the sin! People are going to have to make their own decisions. They're going to have to be doers as well as hearers.

But finally it will be God's building, built on a sound foundation. But this world, this building, is on its last legs. We talk about the end of the world. It's drawing near. Be sure that you're not caught in the destruction, when the building crumbles that you don't fall down with it. Come out of it before that time, because we are going to have protection. You've heard of the protection that we have, in the sermonette. Come under that protection and we have nothing to worry about, but all **hope** and **glory** lies ahead for all of us.

The Spiritual Law vs. Rituals

Sermon (January 21, 1984)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

The Spiritual Law vs. Rituals.....	1769	Even Within The Church	1783
God Is A Family	1770	Being Justified	1785
Mankind Kidnapped	1771	The Law Of Rituals	1788
Christ “The Second Adam”	1773	Habit Of Obedience	1790
The Early New Testament Church	1775	The Book Of The Law	1793
The Lost Century	1776	A Schoolmaster	1796
Churches Deceived Today	1777	Observer Of Times	1797
Calling An Apostle	1780		

Well, I think there’s something very important that I need to get to tonight, and I think I’d better get right at it. Now last Sabbath I gave you a number of **new truths** that have been restored to God’s Church, in the last 50 years by this Church. Some of the truths were restored, but not to the entire Church, up to 56 years ago. One truth about the annual holy days and God’s festivals were restored. And I restored the truth to the Sardis Churches in Oregon, and they laughed me to scorn. As far as it went, the only members up there that observed them were Mrs. Armstrong and myself for about seven years. And then soon (and it’s the parent Church of the Philadelphia Era had been raised up in Eugene, Oregon) the Philadelphia Era began keeping God’s holy days. Many new truths were restored then. Many more have been revealed and restored since. And it really is amazing when you stop to think about it, so many things that no other church understands; none believes, not one.

I want to give you just a quick little summary of the history of the Church in the first 150 years or so. It began in 31 AD. You see, originally God had put an archangel on this Earth. The great cherub, Lucifer, sat on a

throne; and the Earth was populated by angels, and he was sent here to administer **the government of God**. He was perfect in his ways, and did follow the laws of God (until iniquity was found in him) from the day he was created, because he was a created being. And then destruction, physical destruction, came to this Earth as a result of his sin and the sin of the angels. He tried to pull off a coup against God in God's heaven and take over the throne of the entire universe, being dissatisfied to rule only this one earth, this one planet Earth out of all the universe; but he was cast back down. And he became Satan the devil, instead of the beautiful archangel; and his former angels became demons.

God Is A Family

Then God sent forth His Spirit, as you read in the 104th Psalm and verse 30; and He renewed the face of the Earth for man, because the face of the Earth had been destroyed and come into decay and a state of being waste and empty as a result of the sin of the angels. And God decided to create HIS OWN FAMILY.

Now one of the truths that is not known by any church is that **God is a Family**. Some people (I believe the Jewish people) regard God as one person. The Roman Catholic Church and I think most Protestants regard God as a Trinity, three persons. They think the Holy Spirit is a ghost, a personal being, a person. Jesus talked about the Holy Spirit being "*rivers of living water.*" [John 8:38] I don't know any person that is "rivers of living water." He talked about the Spirit being **POURED OUT**. You can't pour out a person.

They say, "Well, why is the Holy Spirit called 'he'?" It is in some places, that's only the... Well, in some languages they don't use the term 'it' like we do in the English language. It's either 'he' or 'she.' I remember that over in Europe, Mr. (Oh, can't I think of any name when I want to think of

names?) Who was the head of all our grounds over there, chief gardener? Anyway, he loved plants. And he talked about certain plants; and he said, “He likes this. And he likes that” (speaking of a plant—calling them ‘he’ instead of ‘it.’) And that’s done in other languages. But also you will find the Holy Spirit is called ‘it’ in many places, in the book of Acts and other places in the Bible. It’s not always called ‘he’ at all. And it is called “water.” Jesus said:

***John 8:37-39** If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. (38) ...and out of his belly shall flow **rivers of LIVING WATER.** (39) (But this spake he of the Spirit) [The Holy Spirit, not a ghost.]*

Well, God created a human man out of the dust of the ground, but in the form and shape of God. He had a brain like other animals except it was all in the form and shape of God, even the brain. And also He placed in the man a **human spirit** so that it could receive with it, (It was not complete until it also received with it and living in the brain) the Spirit of God, to unite him with God—because God formed man after the God-kind and cattle after the cattle-kind.

God formed man to be potentially God’s Family, to be BORN of God through His Spirit and to become part of His “Family of God”—the God Family. But this super-archangel, now turned Satan, Lucifer (who now became Satan the devil), came along; deceived Eve, tempted Adam. (Or, Adam was tempted) and Adam was kidnapped. And Adam was the beginning of **the expansion of God’s Family**, and God intended His Family to expand from that one man.

Mankind Kidnapped

Now Eve was not created out of the ground, like Adam. She was made from Adam. And they two, then, began to reproduce. And the first man born was called Cain, and he came from them, and then Abel, and then Seth, and

then other sons and daughters. And then other children came out of them. And so the potential Family of God (which, God had intended **potentially** to become His Family; and it still is God's potential Family, if we understand.) had been kidnapped in Adam. Adam made the decision for himself not only, but all of his family. Adam seemed to prefer the way of Satan, taking knowledge to himself, doing his own thing.

Satan had not done God's thing. He had not ruled by the law of God. He had not administered God's government. He did his own thing, and that is **Satan's way**—vanity and doing your own thing in defiance of God. And that is what he tempted Eve to do, and deceived her into doing. And so God's potential Family had been kidnapped. And Satan didn't kidnap the child, because I think you can say that Adam was like a child when he was first created. He had to receive a lot of knowledge that had not yet come ready-made into his mind. But he **WILLINGLY** went into the captivity. And his **CHILDREN** have **WILLINGLY** stayed in that captivity ever since. And they have loved the kidnapper more than their potential Parent, God. And so they have been as-it-were “adopted” by the kidnapper, Satan. And they have, therefore, become **the children of Satan**.

Then in due time, God sent His own Son to be born of a human woman; and He was both man and God. He was God **in** the human flesh. He was called “Immanuel,” which is a Hebrew word meaning “God with us”—God in the human flesh, God made human so that He could die. While God is immortal, yet He had come into the human form for the very purpose of death. And He came to pay the ransom price. God paid the ransom price, and Jesus was the Ransom; and with His death He paid that ransom price.

Now He didn't come to try to snatch Satan's children away from him and say, “We want to adopt them as God's children.” Oh, no. God's Family has to be **born of God**, until they **BECOME GOD** because they are born of Him. The churches don't know that. That's a truth that is exclusive to this

Church! And you are a guardian to such **wonderful truth!** Well, I wonder if you understand it brethren, if you realize it? And if you realize what the responsibility is that you possess such truth, which is unknown to the billions all around the Earth. Only [known to] the very few that have come out of all these billions into the Church of God.

Christ “The Second Adam”

But Jesus came as THE SECOND ADAM. And He came not to change over and make the people change their minds and all say, “Well, we’ll come and be adopted by God.” Oh, no. They have to be **born of God** as He intended in the first place. If Adam had taken the Tree of Life, he would have been begotten of God, just like we can be if we receive the Holy Spirit. And, in due time, he would have become a child of God, very God—just as Christ was when the second Adam, when He was resurrected from the dead.

But Jesus came and started now the God Family, which the first Adam should have started; but the first Adam didn’t. He was willingly kidnapped. And THE WHOLE WORLD is still held captive by Satan the devil, AND BLINDED and regard him as their god. And they don’t understand it, and they don’t know it. And Jesus came as the second Adam. He was born human as a Child of God; and He was God as well as man. And so the God Family (beginning to increase) started with the one Man, the second Adam, Jesus Christ.

He called twelve apostles. He taught them the way of God and the law of God, by which God governs the world. And the **law** is merely **the rules of conduct**, a different way of life than the way the world is living. The world is living the way of Satan, the way of vanity, the way of doing your own thing, the way of resentment and bitterness, and opposition and hostility against God and God’s way of life. Jesus came and lived God’s way of life. He

taught His disciples, and they began to live God's way of life.

Then the Church was founded, after Jesus died and was resurrected. And altogether, including those Twelve, there were 120 that had followed Jesus. And then on the day that the Holy Spirit came and was **POURED OUT**... Not a person, but a Spirit that entered into and filled each being. It wasn't a person filling each one of them. But it was, in a sense, the life of God and also the life of Christ; and now it became their life, and they were made **one with God**. They were however begotten, not born. They became **HEIRS** of God, not yet inheritors or possessors. A day or so later, another 2,000 were added; and then things began to happen.

Now, let me give you just a little piece of, thumbnail as-it-were, quick history of the first 150 years of the Church. There was opposition immediately, and the first opposition to the Church was Jewish. The Jewish people refused to accept Jesus as the Christ. Now the twelve apostles then became twelve eyewitnesses, like a jury, to **PROVE** that Jesus was the Christ. They had been with Him 3 1/2 years before His crucifixion and death. They had been with Him then 40 days after the resurrection **TO PROVE** that He was a Man that had died, that was resurrected from the dead and the proof of Christ.

Jesus had been asked, during His ministry, for a sign to prove that He **WAS** the Christ, the promised Messiah. He gave only one sign; and that sign was that He would be **three days and three nights** in His grave, in the heart of the earth. The churches don't believe that. I mean, they don't believe He was three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. They think He was in there only one day and two nights. And yet that's the only sign He gave; and they deny **THE ONLY SIGN** that He gave by their Sunday, because they observe Sunday in honor of a Sunday resurrection of Christ. And He wasn't resurrected on Sunday at all, but on the Sabbath day—near the end of the Sabbath, in the late afternoon that day.

The Early New Testament Church

So now the first opposition of the Church was Jewish, who refused to accept Jesus as the Messiah. And so the purpose of the teaching of the twelve apostles was to prove that Jesus was the Messiah. They were eyewitnesses. But they did preach the gospel of the Kingdom. That was the gospel Jesus preached! The GOVERNMENT OF GOD to rule the whole Earth. THE KINGDOM OF GOD – A FAMILY that will rule and become a great nation, a Divine Nation ruling all nations on the Earth.

The early Church, then, became Jewish. It was some little time before the gospel went to Gentiles. Peter took the gospel to Gentiles a little later on, over to the house of Cornelius. You read of it in the tenth and eleventh chapters of the book of Acts. And then, later, the apostle Paul was commissioned as the leading apostle—and Barnabas with him, and then others later were added as apostles and as evangelists and other offices in the Church—carrying the gospel to Gentiles. Now, that began a little later.

But in the early Church, when it was all Jewish, there was opposition. And the first opposition to the Church was simply... Well, in the first place, they didn't even believe that Jesus was the Christ. Once they accepted that, then wanted to fasten on the Church the RITUALS of the law of Moses and circumcision. Now the rituals of the law of Moses is something I'm going to explain a little later, as we go along.

All right, the third thing that happened next—this opposition put an **emphasis** on Jesus as the Messiah, and it had a tendency to **de-emphasize** God the Father. Now bear that in mind, because I didn't mention that Sabbath. That's another truth. I don't know that I've mentioned that before. Perhaps some of you never thought of that. Let's say we are revealing that truth then right now. And so the de-emphasizing of God the Father came on, and they began to look on Jesus as God.

And so a great controversy then sprang up, and this was after the apostle Paul had been around, and getting around between say, oh, 51 and 70 AD. From thirty to fifty years or so from the time the Church was started. A great controversy came about as to whether THE GOSPEL should be the gospel about Christ (just about Christ that He was the Messiah) or whether the gospel should be the gospel OF Christ. In other words, the same message that He brought and preached. Now the gospel OF Christ is the gospel Jesus preached! The message He brought, that God sent by Him as a Messenger to mankind. That is the true gospel. A gospel about Christ is merely man's gospel, about Christ. It is NOT Christ's gospel at all!

The Lost Century

Then ensued what I call "The Lost Century" of history of the Church. For about 100 years (from at least 50 AD up to 150 AD) you find practically NO HISTORY whatsoever of what was going on in the Church. It's a blank. It's like a curtain is rung down on history; and then the curtain rises up in about 150 AD, and you behold a church calling itself "Christian," talking about Christ (yes, and naming itself after Him). But you behold then a church that, by that time, had turned grace into license; had done away with repentance; had done away with obedience to the law of God and the government of God (and had lost that truth); and that was just preaching about Christ.

That was about 150 AD. And a great controversy arose at that time then, for some little time—especially as to whether we should still observe the Passover, or do away with that and observe the pagan Easter. There was a disciple of John, Polycarp, who argued for the Passover (as the apostle John had taught him). But some others had come in and entered in to deceive, the brethren and entered into the Church (called themselves members of the Church); but they entered in to deceive the Church. And they wanted to get

the pagan Easter in, instead of God's Passover. And that became a fact, and it was to the death, and some were killed because of that controversy.

By that time they had already turned grace into license. Now, let me see. I think you'll find it in Jude. I have to determine, well that's the wrong Bible. I have to have the Bible now in three different books to get print large enough so I can read it. In Jude the third and fourth verses. (If I should tell you chapter 97, I hope you'd understand the difference.) [People laugh.] "*Beloved...*" This is written pretty close to 90 AD.

Jude 1:3-4 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that [you should carefully] you should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. [They began to get away from the real truth right then. That was written before the close of the First Century.] (4) For [he said] there are certain men crept in unawares [Now, that is speaking to members of the Church. They were accepted, but they weren't converted.] who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness [which means license to disobey].

You know the Catholic Church at times gave "indulgences," which meant permission to go ahead and sin; and it was forgiven before they committed it, turning grace into license. That has been done. That's an absolute historic fact that that happened.

Churches Deceived Today

Now, the churches today have continued to be deceived. And they scarcely mention God except when they are mentioning the Trinity, in connection with the Trinity. I wonder if you ever noticed that most of the people—if you listen to other so-called "electric evangelists" (and I don't call myself one)—but if you listen to those that are on television or radio

preaching, they preach about Christ. You never hear them say much about God. Now there's a reason for all of that, and that's really the subject I want to go into tonight. I want to explain that. They have LOST the knowledge of God and of the God Family, and that we can be born into the God Family. You don't hear them saying anything about that. They don't know it. They've lost all that knowledge. In fact they never knew it. That was lost before they were born. I mean the Church lost it in former generations.

So they have a "no law" doctrine. They say Jesus nailed the law to the cross; Jesus nailed the Ten Commandments to the cross. Now the law is the basis of government. So they deny government. No government in the Church. So, tonight I want to go into that subject.

There is a program on television. I'm sure that some of you have caught parts of it at least, whether you listen to all of it or not. It's been going into the book of Galatians recently, taking verse by verse. And that can be very deceptive if you don't understand it. But Jesus came to reconcile us TO GOD. Jesus didn't come to convert us to HIM. He came as our Savior, and the blood of Christ doesn't save anybody! The blood of Christ reconciles you to God.

Your SINS have cut you off from God. Now, let me explain that. There is one Lawgiver, and that is God. There is a government in this universe. God is the same as our Congress in the government of the United States. Jesus is the same as the President of the United States that is in comparative office. That is, He exists; He's administering the government of God. And He conquered Satan, who was put on Earth to administer that government on Earth; and Jesus has qualified to come and administer that government on the Earth when He comes again, which He will.

But **faith in Christ** and then receiving, as I'll explain a little later, the **faith of Christ** has the purpose of reconciling us to God. By the blood of

Christ we are reconciled to God the Father! Now, we are saved by Christ; but not by His shed blood. We are saved BY HIS RESURRECTION. And who resurrected Him? God the Father. And He taught us, when we pray, don't just pray "Lord Jesus." He said pray, "Our Father which art in heaven." And He said whatever we ask THE FATHER in His name (the name of Christ) the Father will do—if we ask according to what God has promised and if we have the faith to believe. So I wanted to give you that little background before we start.

Now recently, this particular person that I mentioned to be going into the book of Galatians a great deal. And from here on, I want to go into certain phases of the book of Galatians. I don't intend to cover the entire book. I want to cover one phase of it, however; and I want to straighten out one thing. And I hope that it's being recorded; and perhaps that this part at least, can go out to other Churches.

Now Paul starts the book of Galatians "*Paul, an apostle.*" Instead of signing his name at the end, in those days they put it at the beginning. And then he tells who he is:

Galatians 1:1-2 Paul, an apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead.) (2) And all [that are with him, and so on. Then coming to verse 6, he says:]

Galatians 1:6 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of [God] unto another gospel.

They were already getting away from **the true gospel** that Jesus had brought and preached. They were talking about man's gospel about Christ, instead of the gospel of Christ; and they were getting away from many things.

Now remember the Galatians. Who was he talking to? The Gentile Churches in Galatia. They were mostly Gentiles. There might have been a

Jew here and there among them, but they were primarily Gentile. And you have to remember who Paul is writing to. Now they were being deceived, and Paul was writing this letter to straighten them out on some of the deception.

Galatians 1:6-7 ...gospel, (7) which is not another; but there be some that trouble you [there was opposition] and would pervert the gospel of [Jesus] Christ.

Not a gospel about Jesus Christ, but the gospel OF Jesus—which is **the gospel He proclaimed**. That is what they were talking against. Now I'd like to drop down to verse 11. I'm only going to cover certain phrases that I want here. But he says:

Calling An Apostle

Galatians 1:11 But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man...

And, brethren, I want to say to you the same thing. The gospel that I have given you is not after men—I say just exactly as Paul did, for he continues;

Galatians 1:12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

And the Book, the Bible, is **the revelation of Jesus Christ**. The book of Revelation is the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to Him to reveal to His servants the things shortly that should come to pass. [Revelation 1:1] I say to you the same thing that Paul said to the Galatians. Next he says:

Galatians 1:13 For ye have heard of my conversion in time past in the Jews' religion [I think my conversion in times past was in the field of business—the conversion into Christ, coming to God.], how that beyond

measure I persecuted the church of God.

Now there's the name of the Church. Which Church did he persecute? "How that I persecuted the Mormon Church..." "How that I have persecuted the Lutheran church..." "How that I persecuted the Roman Catholic Church..." Can you find that in your Bible? Who did he persecute? – THE CHURCH OF GOD. Well, I didn't persecute the Church of God. Matter of fact, I didn't know very much of anything about it.

Galatians 1:14-15 And [he continues] *profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals...* [And so on; Now continuing in verse 15.] ...*But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and CALLED ME by his grace.*

Now I say the same thing; "When it pleased God to call me." And no one can come to Christ except God the Father draws him, or calls him, or chooses him and so on. [John 6:44]

Galatians 1:16 *To reveal his Son in me...*

And God revealed it to me through the written Word. Jesus is the personal Word of God. The Bible is the same Word of God—exactly what Jesus taught the disciples, but it's in writing. The same Word of God in writing. He was the Word of God in person.

Galatians 1:16 *To reveal his Son [or, Christ] in me that I might preach him among the heathen [or, the Gentiles]; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood.*

I can say the same thing. I didn't confer with other people to learn what is the truth. I was challenged! I didn't go to other people to learn whether it was true or not.

Galatians 1:17 *Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were*

apostles before me.

All right, take my case. Neither did I go to a theological seminary to let men teach me the truth about the Bible—to stick a funnel in my head and pour **their ideas** into it. I went directly to the Bible itself, just like Paul went directly to Christ. Now I'll show you.

***Galatians 1:17** Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me; but I went into Arabia...*

And he mentions later that he had been with Christ, and spent about three years with Christ; and he was three years in Arabia, and there's no other time when he could have been with Christ. That's when he got it, and Jesus taught him in person. Jesus taught me through His Word. The Bible is Jesus, just in writing.

***Galatians 1:17** ...and returned again unto Damascus.*

So I received the truth the same way, and have relayed it on to all you brethren. Now coming to the second chapter, he says:

***Galatians 2:2** And I went up by revelation [In other words, God revealed it to him somehow through the Spirit that he should go.], and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reputation [That means at Jerusalem, apostles.], lest by any means I should run, or had run, in vain.*

In other words, he was comparing whether he had the same truth as they did. Now Jesus had taught him, and he found he believed exactly what they did—because Jesus taught him the same truth that Jesus Christ had previously taught them. ”*But neither Titus*“... I think before this he said that he went up to see Peter. He primarily went to Peter, and there's a reason why he went primarily to Peter instead of all the apostles.

Even Within The Church

Galatians 2:3-4 But neither Titus, who was... [This was, in the 15th chapter of Acts it is recorded.] *being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised. (4) And that because of false brethren unawares brought in.*

Now remember that a lot of this ‘truth’ had come from false brethren **inside the Church!** And we had that happen. And I found that some false brethren were teaching Bible in Ambassador College and **teaching CONTRARY to God’s Word!** They are not with us any more, thank God. And we run out anyone like that as soon as they’re spotted and we know who they are.

Galatians 2:4 ...unawares brought in, who came in [privately] to spy out our liberty.

Now he talks about liberty, and he’s talking about liberty from the slavery of sin. Sin is the transgression of God’s law. And you are really in bondage when you’ve sinned because whatever you sow you are going to reap. And there can’t be a law without a penalty, and the ultimate penalty of breaking God’s law is death; but there are other penalties in the meantime.

Galatians 2:4 ...our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage.

I just wanted to mention that there are false brethren. Now we’re going down to verse 7.

Galatians 2:7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter.

Now, do you see? Peter was the leader of the Twelve. Paul was the leader of the apostles sent to the Gentiles. Now there are some who deny that,

and say they were all equal. You can't have any kind of organization without **leadership**. Someone has to be in charge! You can't run a business without it. You can't run a government without it. You can't run an organization or an institution without a head. And democracy means all of the people do the governing, if it were a pure democracy; but the United States is NOT a democracy. We just call it that. We don't have democracy. We have a republican form of government. You might think that one over. A lot of people don't know that, but that is true.

***Galatians 2:8-9** (For he that wrought effectively in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles.) (9) And when James, Cephas [That's another name for Peter.], and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision [or the Jews].*

Now I'm going to turn from there, to get to the points that I want to have you understand tonight; to verse 15.

***Galatians 2:15-16** We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles, (16) knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith OF Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified **by THE faith OF Christ**.*

Do you get something there, brethren? We believe in Christ. That is our own faith. We supply that faith. That's something we produce, that faith. We come to believe. Even we have believed in Christ. We did that, in order that we might receive another kind of faith FROM Christ. That's **HIS FAITH** put, by the Holy Spirit, into us! That's why people don't have faith, brethren. They don't have **THE FAITH OF CHRIST**. That means having the same faith Christ did have and still does have. We have faith in Christ IN ORDER THAT we may receive the faith OF Christ. And that's not our own faith at

ALL! That's Christ's kind of faith—His faith put in us through and by the Holy Spirit.

Being Justified

Now, some things are mentioned here; and I want to show you, because this man I was mentioning, if you ever turned into his broadcast (and I'm not urging you to do that).

Galatians 2:16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law.

Now, he says you are not justified by keeping the Ten Commandments. And for someone who is ignorant of it, that looks perfectly natural; and they swallow that hook, line, and sinker. The word “works” is translated from the Greek word ‘ergon.’ E-R-G-O-N. And it refers to physical labor or work. You can look it up in Young's Concordance or any lexicon, I mean; and so on. Now I want to read you what the Fenton translation has on that same verse.

Galatians 2:15-16 (Fenton) We are naturally Jews, and not sinners from among the heathen. (16) But we know that a man is not made righteous by ritualism...

The works of the law were physical laws, physical labor. Do you see any physical labor in spiritual laws? The Ten Commandments are **a spiritual law**. In Romans 7 and verse 14, Paul says the law is spiritual (not physical). In Romans 7:12, he said the law is holy and just and good. And he said by his mind he wanted to obey and serve the law of God; but he found another law in his body, in his members, that worked against the law of God—in his so-called human nature.

Galatians 2:16 (Fenton) We believe in Christ Jesus so that we may be made righteous by the faith of Christ [Now **the faith of Christ** is Christ's

own faith. **The gospel of Christ** is Christ's own gospel, same way.] ... *and not by legal rituals; because by legal rituals no person will ever be made righteous.*

Now Fenton translates that as being “made righteous.” The King James translates it as being “justified.” Now there's a difference. Being **justified** means the past is squared up, justified. Or, in other words, the penalty has been paid for you is what it really means. It doesn't mean to justify it by saying it's all right to do it. But it means that it's been wiped out, justified, cleared off. Like you made a wrong mark on a blackboard, you take an eraser and you erase it off. Now some things you can erase. But you can make some marks on some things you can't ever erase. And you can do some sins that you can rectify, but others you never can do anything about. If you kill a person, there's nothing you can do about it. He's dead, and you can't bring him back to life. And some things, once they're done, they've been done.

Coming to verse 15 now, same chapter.

***Galatians 2:15** We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles.*

Oh that's what I did read, isn't it? The works of the law, in other words, rituals—physical laws and I want to explain that a little later.

***Galatians 2:17** But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves (also) are found sinners...*

Now, what is sin? And what does he mean “sinner”? Sin, the only Bible definition is I John 3 verse 4:

***I John 3:4** Sin is the transgression of the law.*

But the law is spiritual. Sin is a spiritual thing, not a physical thing. The Ten Commandments are the law that is sin to transgress.

Galatians 2:17 *If...we (ourselves also) are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin?*

He says you can't keep a certain law. It was a law of rituals. Now, is Christ the minister then of sin? – Because sin is the transgression of the law. It says right there, he doesn't mean the Ten Commandments at all. But this man reads it as if it were the Ten Commandments. Now let me tell you **the deception**.

Galatians 2:17 *But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ [Through His death, paying the penalty in our stead.] we ourselves also are found sinners [That is, transgressing the Ten Commandments.] is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.*

And in [1](#) I John 2:4 (I think it is verse 4.):

I John 2:4 [If any man say], *I know him* [that I know Christ. I know God.] *and keeps not his commandments, [he] is a liar, and the truth is not in him.*

All right, let's continue on now.

Galatians 2:18-19 *For if I build again the thing which I destroyed* [What he'd destroyed was breaking the Ten Commandments, the sin. Now if you go back and break the Ten Commandments again,] *I make myself a transgressor.* [Transgression is a transgression of the law.] *(19) For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto [Christ].*

Now let me read that in the Moffatt, not Moffatt but the Fenton translation. (Now wait till I get the verses, it's rather difficult to go through these things. You'll have to be patient with me. My eyesight is becoming quite a problem.) It's verse 19.

Galatians 2:18-20 (Fenton) *For if I loosen such as I have torn down, I*

prove myself foolish, (19) for through a law I died to law, so that I might live with God. (20) I have been crucified with Christ, but I live; yet still not I, but Christ lives in me.

Christ said, “I have kept My Father’s commandments.” If He lives in us, He will still be keeping His Father’s commandments—because He said: “I’m the same yesterday, today, and forever. I change not.” He kept God’s commandments. If He is living in you, He’ll keep God’s commandments in you.

Galatians 2:20-21 (Fenton) *But Christ lives in me. (21) [Later on, he says:] if righteousness comes through a ritual, then Christ died [to no purpose, or] in vain.*

Now let’s go back to the King James, verse 20.

Galatians 2:20 *I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ lives in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by THE faith OF the Son of God [Not my faith in Christ, but Christ’s own faith placed in him. So he had the same faith that Christ had...“the Son of God”], who loved me, and gave himself for me. (21) I do not frustrate the grace of [Christ]: for if righteousness come by the law [And he’s talking about the law of rituals.] then Christ is dead in vain.*

The Law Of Rituals

Now coming on to chapter 3, beginning with verse 2:

Galatians 3:2 *This only would I learn of you [you Galatians, or you Gentiles up there in Galatia.]...*

Galatia is the country where Turkey is located today, in Asia Minor; and there were a number of Churches up there in that day.

Galatians 3:2 This only would I learn of you, Receive ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

Now that is chapter 3 and beginning with verse 2. Here's the Fenton translation of that:

Galatians 3:2-5 (Fenton) I only want to learn this from you, Did you receive the Spirit from a law of rituals [You can't call the Ten Commandments 'a law of rituals.'] or from communication of the faith? [That is, communication that is the faith that's come into you.] (3) Are you so senseless? That having begun spiritually [according to the spiritual law] you would now end in the flesh [In the fleshly law of rituals, which is physical and physical duties which they had to do morning, noon, and night. Now I'll explain that later, as I said a while ago.]. (4) Have you suffered so much for nothing? If it was really for nothing. (5) Then did he who brought the Spirit to you and worked powerfully in you do so by a law of rituals?

He asked the question and I didn't read that in the King James yet but that's in verse 5. Now let's take verse 5 in the King James.

Galatians 3:5 He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, [There again, "rituals of the law."], or by the hearing of faith?

Well I might as well explain this right now. God gave ancient Israel different laws. Now remember that Israel was a nation. The overall basic law was **a way of life**—the spiritual law, the Ten Commandments. That law is love. It's a way of life. Now it was divided into the two great laws: (1) love towards God and (2) love towards neighbor. It's always **out flowing love**. It's not incoming lust. It is out flowing love for the good of others and having concern, caring for others, being concerned about their welfare as much as your own. And not only being concerned of God's welfare as much as your own; but love towards God means praying towards God, and obedience

towards God, and love towards God. But you don't have the love that can love God until God gives you **THE HOLY SPIRIT IS THE LOVE OF GOD** "shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit". In other words, God gives you **HIS LOVE** to fulfill the law.

Now the law of God is a spiritual law. And what performs it? What fulfills it? **LOVE** is the fulfilling of the law, because the law **is** love. That's what is the way of life. Now it is the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit. (Romans 5:5, or is it Romans 5:10? – Whichever.) That was the basic law, of course. That's **spiritual**. That's **eternal**.

But they were a physical nation; and, as a nation, they had to have national statutes and judgments. Now let's compare it to the laws that we have—like the Constitution of the United States, and the laws that men make, laws of the government that regulates one man's relationship to another by getting down to every little thing. Well, statutes and judgments that God gave Israel were all based on the Ten Commandments, but they were separate laws and they went into much more detail, as the local laws of the nation.

Now they had a third kind of law and that not only included animal sacrifices, which was a substitute for Christ (And a very poor substitute one might say, because it is impossible for the blood of goats, or lambs, or whatever, to forgive sin.); but they were, as you read in the New Testament, a reminder of sin.

Habit Of Obedience

Then they had **a law of rituals**. Now the rituals were physical in meat, and drink, and different washings; and physical things to do morning, noon, and night. Now they were to teach them **the habit of obedience**. For example, up in Oregon one time, I had started preaching down in Eugene, Oregon and had started the first, parent, Church in this era. And my wife and

children were still up in Salem, Oregon. I went home over the weekend occasionally. Of course, a little later they all moved down to Eugene with me; but for a while they still stayed up in Oregon.

And so when I came home over one weekend, for a day or so, my wife told me that (Let me see. Which one of my sons was it? I guess it was my eldest son.) Dick had gotten so he wouldn't do a thing she told him. She'd tell him something, and he just wouldn't pay any attention. Or he'd say "Well, okay." But he never did it. So I determined to do something about it.

Now I am reminded of Basil Wolverton, who was with this Church for a long time; and he's dead now. But he kept the Church up in Vancouver and even in Portland alive for quite a while, as a local elder. But he was quite a cartoonist, a nationally famous cartoonist. But he always had a sense of humor. He called to say something, it was funny. Everybody knew of course, it was funny. For instance, he'd say "Well, I think I'll have to go home and beat up on my wife." And everybody, he'd say that right in front of her, and she'd begin to laugh. He'd say, "Now, wait a minute folks. I don't mean to beat her with my fist. I didn't mean that." He says, "In fact, I've found a club much more effective." [Audience laughs] Then, of course, everybody laughed. He was always bringing out something like that. He had a great sense of humor.

Well, I did punish my sons. I don't remember what I did with my daughters. My sons came along ten years later, after my daughters. But I remember how I punished my son. And I didn't do it with a club, or with my fist, or with my bare hand. I took a table tennis paddle, or a ping-pong paddle. I was careful to get one that had a smooth face. Some of them you know have a sandpaper face that would get off the ball when you hit it. Well of course, well that could really hurt because sometimes I'd paddle on the bare bottom, you know. And I paddled enough that I found that it would sting. Oh, boy, it would sting! But it didn't bruise, and it didn't do any

physical harm; but it did get the lesson across.

Well, I punished Dick this time. And I said, “Now, are you willing to obey your mom when she speaks to you?” And he said, “Yes, sir.” Oh I said, “Well let’s see if you are.” I said, “You see that chair over there. I want you to move it and put it over here.” And so he moved it to another place. He did it, and I said, “Good. Now you did what I told you, when I told you.” Now I had him do something else, then I found something else—had him move it to some other place, now do this, now do something, now take that chair and put it back where it was in the first place; now do something else. I said, “Now you’re beginning to get the point.” I said, “You get in **the habit of obedience**. Now, when you are spoken to, you must jump and mind right now!”

Then I called his mother in; and I said, “Now, you tell him what to do. Let’s see if he’ll jump and do it when you tell him.” And, you know, he began get the habit. And the next week she told me while I was gone that he obeyed what she told him. He developed the habit of obedience.

Now there’s another way I used to illustrate this when I preached up in Oregon many, many years ago—up to 50 years ago. I saw in a magazine... Mrs. Armstrong sent me a very fine magazine, called The American Magazine. I don’t know if any of you remember that magazine, or not? You’ve got to go back a good many years, if you do. It was a very fine magazine. I used to read it. But they had a sort of a test in it at one time, to test your intelligence. And this was a question: What is easier to remember, to wind a one-day watch (like a wrist watch, with just a one-day pocket watch) or to wind an eight-day clock (one you have to wind every eight days)? Well now, if someone says the eight-day clock, that shows how ignorant they are! The one-day clock becomes habit.

For many years I carried such a watch. It was a pocket watch, and I

bought it during the beginning of World War II. And such watches were only for railroad men. The public couldn't buy them. But the local jeweler up in Eugene, Oregon had one; and, for some reason, why he had an extra one that he could sell. And I needed it to time myself on my broadcast. It had a large face, and a very easy face to remember; but I had to wind it every day.

Now, as I would take that watch out of my pocket at night before going to bed, I would wind it before I laid it on the dresser, or the table, or wherever I laid it. It got to be habit. And, you know, I developed such a habit I never forgot. But an eight-day clock, you can't remember when eight days comes along. Something that you do constantly becomes habit.

God instituted these RITUALS to develop **THE HABIT OF OBEDIENCE** into the Israelites back in the days of Moses. There were things to do morning, noon, and night. Now, long after both Israel and Judah had been taken into captivity and a colony of Jews went back under Zerubbabel. And then the priests at that time were Ezra and Nehemiah. And after those days (Now that was about 500 years before Christ, so maybe two or three hundred years later, but still long before Christ.), other rabbis later began to take these rituals and use a pagan doctrine with them.

Now the pagans didn't have anything like grace. They didn't have any forgiveness of sin. Rather the pagans, if one had sinned, they had to punish themselves an equal measure to make up for what he had done; and that justified his sin, so they thought. You see it didn't at all. But these rabbis took these rituals and made them a sort of penance for sin and used a pagan doctrine. And that had been changed by the time of Christ, and the Jews were doing that in the time of Christ. Now you have to get a little history to know all of those things. But there were these various laws.

The Book Of The Law

Now the rituals were to teach them the habit of obedience. They were a substitute for the Holy Spirit. Now when Christ came, there were no more animal sacrifices because they had been just a physical substitute for the great spiritual thing of Christ giving His life. Also, when the Holy Spirit came, they didn't need rituals to teach them the habit of obedience. They had the love of God shed abroad in their hearts, which was the love that fulfills God's law. Now I want you to understand that. Now we come down to verse 10 here, I believe. Yes, verse 10.

***Galatians 3:10** For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in **the BOOK of the law**.*

Now, these rituals and animal sacrifices were given to Moses; and he wrote that law IN A BOOK. And it was called "the book of the law." When Moses came down from Mt. Sinai, he had all of that. (Now, let me see. We've got here Romans 21, that's not the one I want. Well, I think I can find it here in the Old Testament.) In Deuteronomy the 31st chapter and verse 24, Moses is writing this:

***Deuteronomy 31:24-26** And it came to pass, when Moses had made an end of writing the words of **this LAW in a book**, until they were finished, (25) that Moses commanded the Levites [who were the ministers of that time, the priests], which bare the ark of the covenant of the LORD, saying, (26) Take **THIS BOOK** of the law [that had all these rituals and sacrifices and things written in it], and put it **in the side** of the ark [That's outside of the ark, but in its side, but outside of the ark.] of the covenant of the LORD your God, that it may be there for a witness against you.*

Now, let me see. That is the 31st [2](#) chapter of Deuteronomy. Well now, wait. What was I reading in the New Testament here? At that point, I want to get that in the Moffatt, or rather the Fenton translation; and that will

be verse 10 of Galatians 3. (It's rather difficult for me with my poor eyesight to just keep all these things and find them, because I don't see so readily.) In verse 10 and 11, let's see. No, I have to begin ahead of that. So, beginning in verse 9:

*Galatians 3:9-12 (Fenton) So those of faith are blessed with the faith of Abraham, (10) for whoever dependeth on a law of rituals are under a curse: For it is written that all who do not continue in **all the writings of the book of the law** to do them are under a curse. (11) But it is clear that none in law are righteous with God because the righteous shall live by faith [and he's explained that it's the faith of Christ.], (12) but the ritual did not come from faith.*

Now continuing on in verse 10... That's what I've just read. It says here "the book of the law" and "the works of the law" again meaning **rituals**. Now continuing on in verse 17:

*Galatians 3:17-19 (KJV) And this I say, that the covenant [now speaking here of the Old Covenant], that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law which was four hundred and thirty years after [That's after Abraham.], cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. (18) For if the inheritance [And the inheritance, of course, is the Kingdom of God... "if the inheritance"] be of the law [He's talking about the law of rituals.], it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise. (19) Wherefore then serveth the law? [What good is it then? Now, get this. The law of rituals—what good was it then?] It was **added** because of transgressions...*

Now, brethren, stop and think. What are transgressions? Your Bible says: "Where no **LAW** is, there is no transgression." That's in the book of Romans.

Romans 4:15 ...where no law is, there is no transgression.

So there had been a law being transgressed that constituted sin. So there were transgressions, or sin. Now then, get what I just read.

Galatians 3:19 *Wherefore then serveth the law [of rituals]? It was added* [Now, it was added later. Added to what? – Added to the Ten Commandments. It was added...] *because of transgressions* [The transgressions are of the Ten Commandments, not of the law of rituals. It was added because of transgressions,] *till the seed should come to whom the promise was made* [And that “seed” that was to come was Christ.]; *and it was ordained by angels in the hand {3} of a mediator* [referring to Moses there].

A Schoolmaster

Now verse 24:

Galatians 3:24 *Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ,* [To teach them the habit of obedience. You see, a “schoolmaster” to bring them to Christ.] *that we might be justified by faith.*

How would this other man explain the law was a schoolmaster? He dealt on that last Sunday morning, if you happened to be listening. I happened to hear part of it last Sunday. I didn’t hear it all.

Galatians 3:25 *But after that faith is come...* [You have no more need of the schoolmaster.]

Faith comes by the Spirit of God and through the Holy Spirit. So when the Holy Spirit had come, the Holy Spirit through faith gave you obedience to God and the mind of obedience; and you didn’t need the law of rituals any longer.

Well, this moment in time has come along; and time is up. “*Even so...*”

Now coming on to the 4th chapter.

Galatians 4:3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world.

Oh, you have to realize to whom he's talking. "The elements of the world" are, oh, the customs of the world. And it goes on and says you desire to want to return. Who wanted to return? – These Gentiles. Now they try to say you want to return back to the law of Moses. They never kept the law of Moses. Consider to whom he is writing here. "You," he goes on to say (verses 9 and 10):

Observer Of Times

Galatians 4:9-10 But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, [The elements or customs of the world.] whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? [in bondage of sin.] (10) Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.

Now whether they observed days and months and times and years, he said, "Yeah, you observe these annual holy days and the weekly Sabbath, shame on you!" Now someone who didn't know any better would swallow that. All right, who is he talking to Gentiles? What did they want to return to? They wanted to return to days... (I'm going to take just an extra few minutes. You'll have to pardon me, but I want you to get this.) To days, and to months, and times, and years. What about Christmas day? What about Easter? What about New Year's Day? What about St. Patrick's Day? Does the world observe days that that? They always did. They always did.

Now one of the things they wanted to return to was **times**. They wanted to return to the observance of "times." Well, let me show you something in

the Bible; and its back in Deuteronomy, the 18th chapter. Now in verse 10. Here is the law of Moses.

***Deuteronomy 18:10** There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times [Now get that: “An observer of **times.**”], or an enchanter, or a witch.*

“Observers of **times** went along with enchanters, and witches, and that kind of thing. And it was FORBIDDEN in the law of Moses! Now they wanted to return to what was forbidden in the law of Moses. And yet this man tries to tell you that they wanted to return back to the Sabbath. That’s what he was hitting at. He was hitting at the Sabbath. All right, now verse 14:

***Deuteronomy 18:14** For these nations, which thou shalt possess [Gentile nations.], hearkened unto observers of **times**, and unto diviners: but as for thee, the [Eternal] thy God hath not suffered thee to do so.*

You can’t return to the observance of times, and so Paul is telling them here. He’s not telling them not to return back to the Sabbath. He’s telling them “You mustn’t return to the Gentile days and times,” Fortune tellers, witches, things of that kind.

Well, I won’t have time for any more tonight; but I don’t think you need any more. I think that should be enough to explain the little tricks that so many of them have to try to...

And why do they want to get around the Sabbath? – Because the Sabbath is holy to God. The Sabbath is holy to God. They say they want to keep “the Lord’s day.” They say Sunday is “the Lord’s day”? Show that me in the Bible and I’ll give you a check for a thousand dollars. I might as well make it a million dollars. I don’t have that in my own account. I think maybe I could make the thousand, but not the million. I don’t have to worry about it.

You can't show me, because it isn't there.

No, they were Gentiles; and they wanted to return back to the ways of the Gentiles, some of them. Well, I think time is up. I'm going to let you go home and get a little sleep, because we have more services coming tomorrow.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Mr. Armstrong inadvertently gave the wrong chapter. The original said: "In I John 3:4."

[{2}](#) - Mr. Armstrong inadvertently gave the wrong chapter... The original said: "That is the 24th chapter of Deuteronomy."

[{3}](#) - Mr. Armstrong stumbled over his words here. The original said:"... by an angel in the mind of a mediator. Now wait a minute. In the hand of a mediator, not mind."

Unity

Sermon (1984-02-4)
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Unity.....	1800	Organizing Nations	1815
Good News And Bad News	1801	A Whole New Civilization	1817
Helping Developing Nations	1803	The Household Of God	1821
Striving For Unity	1804	God In Us	1823
The Tree Of Life	1808	Dealing With Division	1824
The Tree Of Good And Evil	1810	True Church To Get Ready	1827
The Creation Of Man	1812	Blessings From The Trip	1828
The Flood	1814		

Well, greetings brethren. It is nice to be back. And we have had a very eventful, a very hectic, and a very exciting trip; in many ways, a very trying one. I'll tell you about it in a few moments. First I want to make one comment. I heard, in the morning service, a great deal about the many who have left the church, and again in the sermonette this afternoon; and I'd like to clarify that just a little bit. If even one member leaves the Church, brethren, that is too many. And I think if a dozen, or a hundred, or even two or three hundred leave the Church, we would begin to call that "many." But don't ever get the idea that it is the many who have gone out and the few who are left, because that is absolutely not true. **THE MANY ARE STILL IN. THANK GOD FOR THAT. AND, COMPARATIVELY, it is the FEW who have gone out.** And I want to say something about the many who are in the Church this afternoon. My message is going to concern them.

First, however, I think you'd like to hear a little bit about the trip we had; and I am not going to try to give you an account of the events, because you will read that in The Worldwide News. I think the first half of the trip has already appeared in print, and the rest of it will in perhaps the next issue of

The Worldwide News. But it has been both a very eventful trip, a very trying one and yet with all I would say the most rewarding, the most successful, the most fruitful trip that I have ever taken.

Good News And Bad News

You know the story of the good news and the bad news; and I think I should give you the bad news first, and then we will come to the good news. We departed on, let me see, it was the day after It was the day OF the parade and the Rose Bowl game. Immediately after the New Year's Rose [Bowl] Parade, we had a luncheon in the faculty dining room for some celebrities; and I left them there for the airport. And while the Rose Bowl game was being played we were flying out across the Pacific Ocean toward Honolulu, spent the night there; and next morning we traveled on down to Auckland, New Zealand. Of course, we lost a day along the way when we crossed the International Date Line; so I think it was Monday when we left here. It was Tuesday morning when we left Honolulu; and that same night we arrived in Auckland, but it was Wednesday night. We got right down to the middle of the week in a hurry.

And, I believe it was the next day, we went out to the S.E.P. Summer Camp. And somehow at the summer camp I was in one of the counseling rooms, there must have been a draft or something, and I caught a very sore throat. And, I think it was later that night, and certainly by the next morning, I had quite a sore throat. And I was quite alarmed because, if it went down into pneumonia, that would be quite serious at my age. I'm more afraid right now of something like that than I am of another heart attack. As far as my heart is concerned, I think you all know I am living on borrowed time. But it seems to hang on about the same way; and I simply have to stop at times, sit down and no matter what, just say I refuse to go another step until I rest, because it would overdo my heart. And if I started to go on, maybe I'd stop

going on for the rest of this life. So I am usually very careful to sit down the minute I feel any trouble coming on to my heart. And as long as I am very careful about that, I feel God can keep me going for quite a little time yet.

The one thing I have been deathly afraid of would be catching a cold going into pneumonia, and I've had to struggle with that this whole trip. Fortunately God did not let it hurt my voice and my voice kept up. I was able to keep up with all of the speaking that I had intended to do, in every way; and I spoke to practically all of our brethren in New Zealand, and then practically all of our brethren in Australia. We even went out to, now I get mixed up down there whether it's Eastern or Western Australia, but the other side of Australia, or Perth. I have never been to Perth before. It's a very beautiful city; and, actually, quite a lot larger city than I had thought it was. It would be considered as one of our major cities if it were in the United States, a city of that population. I think it would be considered larger than Seattle or Kansas City. It's, after all, a fairly good-sized city.

At Singapore they had a special orchestra play a special, abbreviated concert for us. It probably lasted about twenty minutes. It was played on old Chinese instruments. I had never seen such instruments in my life, and I am sure most of you have never seen instruments of that type. So there was some talk about bringing that orchestra here to play in this auditorium. Now they are of the caliber that would qualify for performance in this auditorium. They are very professional, very proficient. They happen to have a very professional conductor. They played various kinds of music – not only oriental music and old oriental music, but some of the modern European music of the more classical type – on those instruments.

It was quite interesting; and I found that, if we would sponsor their coming here, perhaps they could also play at the Kennedy Center in Washington and perhaps other places in New York, San Francisco, and Chicago. The Japanese government would pay two-thirds if we'll pay one-

third of the expenses, and I think something may come of that. But there is a Chinese orchestra also possibly coming to play here. So we may still see some of those ancient oriental instruments.

At Hong Kong, we have three members; and, the group of us and so many of our television crew being there, we really had quite a little group. I don't know, maybe that was just last Sabbath. I believe it was just last Sabbath. We had quite a service there. And then we went on to Tokyo. We arrived in Tokyo, that must have been on Monday night. Now Sunday night we went down to the newly decorated grill room that has a new fancy name that I don't remember now (It's all renewed.) and had a dinner. I didn't eat anything that should have upset my stomach; but, about an hour or two later, I had very serious stomach trouble; and then I began to throw up.

Now, during the trip I had also been in a draft in Australia and had caught cold; and I had a temperature varying anywhere from normal and one or two tenth of a degree all the way up to two degrees. And two degrees of temperature I consider now at my age quite serious. And so I have been fighting those things the whole trip. Still I have managed to carry on everything except that, when this hit me in Tokyo, I was confined to bed for the next two days. I had to cancel all engagements in Tokyo. However many of my Japanese sons, as I call them, came to the hotel to visit me. Others, including Prince Mikasa, sent flowers and I heard from them; and some very outstanding things were accomplished.

Helping Developing Nations

One of my Japanese sons is now in control, under the Prime Minister, of that part of the Japanese budget allocated to giving aid to the developing nations (other smaller nations), just like the United States does. Now Japan is the second most powerful economic nation in the world next to the United

States. Japan is more powerful than Germany, than Britain, than Russia, than any other nation in the world. And in many cases, where the Ambassador Foundation might invest a few thousand dollars in some project that is needed in a developing country, the Japanese government will back us with millions of dollars.

They already have done that in Kenya, in Africa. Through our Foundation we contributed \$35,000 to the establishment of a new University in Agriculture and Technology. I planned that some seven or eight years ago with President Jomo Kenyatta of Kenya. Of course, the whole nation was named after him. The Japanese government put in a total of about \$50,000,000; and the University is now going full bloom. Many new buildings have been built. They are not quite of the standard of Ambassador College Campus in quality and character. But they are new; they are modern; they are clean; and it is quite a university going. And they have about the same student enrollment there that we have on this campus here.

Striving For Unity

And in many ways this trip was an overwhelming success. So I just thought you would like to know those things before I get started on what I believe is a very important subject. Brethren, there is one goal that human beings have been striving for, for the last 6,000 years. I might read a certain Psalm that we have had quoted more than once. I think it is the ... Isn't it the 103rd Psalm?

Psalm 133:1 How good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!

You know, the world has been trying to get together in unity ever since Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden about 6,000 years ago. It's been a goal that has been striven for to bring about inter-racial, international unification

and a one-world government with peace, or some kind of united government. When they couldn't unite the governments of the world, they've tried to form alliances. But, of course, one alliance has always been formed to oppose and usually have war with some other union of nations, or alliance, or allied nations.

Why is it that in the world they have NEVER succeeded in a universal government? There has always been division. Something that I noticed on this trip, I noticed it in New Zealand and I noticed it in Australia. For example, in Australia I met a man who had the same position that we in this country, we would call it Governor of the State. And of course we heard talk about the opposition, and the opposing party. Everywhere there is the opposing party. Here in the United States, we have a Republican in the Presidency and a Republican Senate. But there's the opposing party, the Democrats. Now they are doing everything to move heaven and earth, if they can, to oust President Reagan and to get complete control of the Senate. It's one against the other. They cannot have unification.

Now, about six months ago (It doesn't seem that long; but it really has been now over six months ago, or just about that.) we had Dr. von Hapsburg here; and he spoke from this platform, visited my office and my home. He is striving for the unification of Europe into one nation again, and they are having a terrible time to accomplish it. And it is a little discouraging to some of those working for it at the present time. Bible prophecy says they are going to accomplish it. And something is going to happen to suddenly just change the course of events in Europe and bring that about. And it will happen.

But now, why? Why is it that men cannot get together? Why must there always be division? Why must there always be competition and strife? And yet, brethren, I wonder if you realize that in the last half century, the last half of this twentieth century, God's Church has accomplished what the

governments of this world have striven for 6,000 years to do and could never accomplish. God's Church has accomplished it.

For the first time in 6,000 years, it has been accomplished – a united government; and there is united government **in this Church!** And I am going to touch on one reason why some have left, and why we're not going to have as many leaving the Church from now on as we have had in the past. There is a reason for these things. But a goal has been achieved (and I want you to understand it) by this Church, during the second half of this twentieth century, that all humanity has striven to achieve and never could before. And that is a unified government.

I notice now that wherever I go, and I've just been on a trip visiting brethren in ... Well, I met our minister and his wife in Honolulu; but otherwise I met brethren in New Zealand, both those from the north and the southern part of New Zealand. I spoke in Auckland and also in Wellington; and, with some telephone hookups, we've reached practically all the membership in New Zealand. And then I spoke from I never can remember the names of certain cities. Well, in the north and south and the other side of the whole continent. But there were telephone hookups, just like we have here; and I spoke to practically the entire membership in Australia.

Unity In God's Church

Now, there we have had trouble in the past; but we are not having trouble today, and we are having unity. Ministers come here now and they say that five, six years ago there was contention; there was disputing; there was division; and there was trouble here at headquarters. Now they say, "Oh, it is so different today." Today we find harmony; we find unity; we find a spirit of love and a spirit of peace, a spirit of joy and happiness and togetherness." And they say it is so different, so refreshing. What has happened?

I wonder if you realize, brethren – and there is a great lesson for us in

what has happened – but whether I go to black Africa, or to the Philippines, or to South America, or to Europe, to Australia, New Zealand, or to Malaysia (And, incidentally I spoke to most all of our brethren in Malaysia and Singapore on this trip.), and wherever I go, there I find **the same spirit**. And you can tell a Church of God member almost immediately! There is something DIFFERENT about a member of this Church, and you can tell a difference. They are different from Seventh Day Adventist members. There is a different **attitude**– a different spirit – than you find in Baptists, or in Methodists, or in Catholics. There is A SPIRIT that is the same regardless of race, regardless of nationality, or country, or location on the earth. It is all the same.

Why? What is the difference? Why has God’s Church (headed by Jesus Christ) succeeded where the world (who has rejected God and who has really rejected the real Christ), why have they failed? There is no unification taken even in religion. The world is divided into many, many different religions. And the largest of all of them is the one that is so-called “Christianity” or is often called today “traditional Christianity.” And it is the largest of the religions in the world, and yet it is divided into hundreds of denominations and sects – each one having certain differences of belief and practice; and, to a more or lesser extent, competitive against others; and they don’t agree. They don’t associate one with the other. Each have their own spirit and attitude. But there is no unification. They are divided, and there is always the opposition. Why?

Now, once again, you know I have been accused of always going back to those two trees. Yesterday afternoon, it was almost sundown; and I got the idea that I would like to have a couple of big illustrations up to show you today. So I took it up with some of our editorial people in the artists’ division, and so they whipped together something real hastily for me that you find up here this afternoon. I have to get back to the beginning once again to explain

some of this to you. Not only to explain God's purpose, to explain why we are coming to unity and one government that is unified; and in the world there is always opposition.

The Tree Of Life

Had the first man, Adam, taken of the Tree of Life, there might have been the same unity that we have in this church today in ALL facets of society in the world, because it might have become God's world. Now the Tree of Life, I think the world has been more involved – in the so-called Christian religion – has been somewhat conscious of the two trees mentioned in the second chapter of Genesis. But you hear very little about the Tree of Life.

It was ... Let's see. Is it a year and a half ago? It's quite a little more than a year ago now. I was in South Africa. And down there they were asking me ... We were in, oh, the home of Dr I don't know why can't think of names. Anyhow, our leader and pastor down there. And practically all of the ministers and their wives from South Africa^{1} were there. And they gathered around me and they asked me, "Well, what about the Tree of Life? And what would have happened if Adam had taken of that tree?" And, you know, we've never discussed very much the Tree of Life. We've discussed the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.

Now, while I was at camp in Australia, some children ... And they were the children of some of our ministers, or grandchildren. And they were anywhere from 3 or 4, up to 6 or 7 years of age, just children. I am not talking now about the youth, or the campers, or about the others there; but just the children that happened to be there. And they had produced a large chart for me with a drawing of a tree. There was the trunk, and then a lot of bushes around it; and they had the Ten Commandments on the leaves for the

Tree of Life.

Well, that gave me an idea; so I went a little further in elaborating on it. Now I see at my right is a chart of the Tree of Life and (if you can hear), as I look at it, the root of that tree – from which it gathers all of its life, and everything comes from the root – is GOD. Then the main trunk of the tree is THE SPIRIT OF GOD. And above, on one side, are four main branches off of that trunk. The four main branches are the first four of the Ten Commandments, and they express **love toward God**. Then there are six other major branches, not quite so large because they are really not as important as those first four; and they denote **love toward fellow man**, the last six of the Ten Commandments.

So from God flows LIFE in the form of the Holy Spirit that is injected into those who take of this tree. And with Life comes the knowledge of the WAY OF LIFE (of good and evil) – love toward God and love toward neighbor. Then the very many other branches are all of the other things that come under love toward God and love toward neighbor. In other words, other ways that you love God and that you love neighbor. Then it comes out to the branches and the final fruit. And the FRUIT borne you'll see is ... Well, I can't read it all from here. But it is LOVE, and JOY, and PEACE, and HAPPINESS, and ACCOMPLISHMENT, UNITY, AND TOGETHERNESS, and ALL of those things are the fruit.

Now if Adam had taken of that fruit, he would have taken what came from the ROOT and up through the trunk of the tree. He would have had the Spirit of the LIFE of GOD. He would have done THE WAY OF GOD. And the SPIRIT OF GOD to give him the knowledge of that way; to give him the LOVE to FULFILL THAT WAY; to give him the POWER to live that way and then to produce the fruit of PEACE, and JOY, and HAPPINESS, and of every kind of abundance and everything that mankind could want.

The Tree Of Good And Evil

Now, on the other hand, there was another tree; and Adam had to make a choice. I can't see it very well from here. And I was just reminded, before I came out, this was put together very hastily; and I think one mistake was made. That looks like a dead tree, and in fact it is the tree of death; but actually that tree appeared very beautiful to Mother Eve. It's when she saw that it was so beautiful, and good for food, and desired to make one wise that she took of it.

But the root of that tree is Satan, and the spirit of Satan coming up through the trunk. And then the various ways that it leads to are the ways of COMPETITION, of VANITY, EXALTING THE SELF even above God, of COMPETITION, of STRIFE, of ENVY, of JEALOUSY, of bitterness. As those who attended the morning service heard in the sermon this morning – the way of OPPOSITION, of DISHARMONY and DISUNITY in EVERY WAY; and that ENDS IN DEATH.

The one tree was the Tree of Life, the other the Tree of Death. One is the way of GOD; the other is the way of SATAN. I think perhaps we can even improve on these drawings yet, and we can have something that can be printed and put in books that will help illustrate that whole thing. It is the very foundation of the way life began and has continued on this earth.

Now the first man that God created: God had first produced beings that were made perfect so far as their creation was concerned. There was a super archangel, Lucifer, who was placed over ordinary angels that were placed on this earth. God set a throne on this earth for GOVERNMENT; and He put this super archangel, Lucifer, on that throne to rule the earth. He is still on that throne, by the way; and he still is ruling this world. And that's what most people don't even realize. Because Satan is an archangel, he is therefore a spirit being. He is invisible. He cannot be seen. He cannot be heard, felt,

smelled, tasted. And so the so-called scientists (And science, by the way, would better be called “fiction” if you really understand; because there is so much science doesn’t even know and doesn’t grieve their help. But ...) they know nothing of spirit, or spirit beings. But he is still there on that throne to this day.

Now he had been perfect from the day God created him, until iniquity was found in him. But (as you will read in my book, “The Incredible Human Potential,” and many other writings) God made him a free moral agent with a mind that still could make his own decisions. If God had made him so he could not do wrong – that he could not disobey, that he could not choose any other way but God’s way of life (which is love, and peace, and joy, and happiness) – that he would have been nothing more than a brainless machine.

But even machines have a certain kind of a brain today. You may not realize it, and yet most of you may realize it: most automobiles today are pretty much made by robots; and they are machines that almost have a brain. They work up to a certain extent, but its all mechanical; and they only work the way they are set to work. But they don’t think, they don’t make decisions, they can’t work any other way but just the way they are set to work. And they are a machine. There is no personality there.

And that’s the way it would have been if God had made angels so they **COULD NOT** sin. Angels are made so they **CAN** sin. They’ve been made to understand the consequences of sin, to understand that sin is wrong. But they’ve been allowed to reason that perhaps it isn’t wrong after all, if they want begin to reason along that line. And that’s precisely what Lucifer did, and led all of his angels under him to do. And God finally came to realize that no one but **God Himself** could be relied on to have free moral agency – and who had the **POWER** of deciding otherwise, and the **POWER** of doing wrong and going the other way – but who would have the **character** to **NEVER DO THAT**. But to **ALWAYS** live the right way, the way that would produce

happiness, and peace, and joy, and abundance, and production, and everything good. And so I think you might call the creation of angels, and their experience, an experiment.

The Creation Of Man

Now God was not experimenting any further when He made humanity. Angels were given immortality and immortal life with the opportunity of turning the wrong way. He made man out of matter, which was necessary so that, if they turned the wrong way, they could be destroyed as if they had never been in the first place. They wouldn't have to go on suffering. The most unhappy, the most wretched, personality (or being) in all the universe is Satan the Devil. He is suffering more than any personality that has ever existed. His suffering is mental and spiritual, and it is far worse than physical suffering. It's far worse than pain that can come physically. He suffers bitterness, resentment, HATRED, anger, rebellion; and that cannot make one happy. It makes him miserable being unhappy; and he doesn't know how to get out from under it, and he never shall. He'll have to go on through eternity in that unhappy situation.

So God made man so that he had to develop **the character** so that he WOULD NOT sin BEFORE he could HAVE immortality. That's why Adam had to make the choice, and those two trees represented that choice. Now, Adam took the wrong tree. And I've explained so many times how God then shut up that tree entirely from mankind until Jesus Christ, the second Adam, should come. It's just like blocking off this whole thing. Man had no access to the Spirit of God, to God through His Spirit.

Now God made man so he could have **access to God** through the Spirit of God by putting a spirit – a human spirit – in man. Man himself is wholly physical and material. But the spirit of man, a human spirit, is put IN him. It

is not the man. It is no part of the man. It is just something in the man that works with the brain in the man. That EMPOWERS the brain with intellect, EMPOWERS the brain to think, to reason, to decide, to plan, to design and to do some of the things even that God and only God can do.

But man rejected that; and then God closed that tree, until Jesus Christ would come AS the second Adam. And when Jesus Christ came, He came to open that Tree of Life all over again. Now, in the meantime, this world has gone along. And I have shown you, brethren, in so many sermons recently and so many articles, how the Tree of Life has been closed to the world. And ONLY those that are first chosen and drawn by God Himself can even come to Christ, the second Adam. And it's only through Christ, the second Adam, who is the Son of God, that the Tree of Life may be opened to anyone today whatsoever.

Now to the one who is a real Christian, one who through Christ has come to God, the Tree of Life is opened; and they may take of the Spirit of God. And God's Spirit will come in to them to join with, co-habit with, the human spirit. And that joins them to God.

[***The tape skips at 42:24.*] ...that Adam took, and they are still under that way of life.

Now look at this world, before we come back to the Church now. In your Bible, things had not gone too long. We don't know very much about the history for the first approximately 1,500 years. Then we come to the 6th chapter of Genesis, in the history of the world, beginning with verse 5.

Genesis 6:5 *And God saw that the wickedness of man [who had taken of the fruit of this Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. That is man going on his OWN concepts of good and evil, according to what he could decide with his own human spirit and his human brain, his human mind. "God saw that the wickedness of man ..."] was great in the earth,*

(and) that every [thought and] imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

Now, what Adam took was the Tree of the Knowledge **of** good AND evil; but man let the evil outweigh the good. And you see inside of 1,500 years man had turned. Undoubtedly, some had had some high ideals and wanted to be good in the human sense. There are many today that do. But it had finally turned, after about 1,500 years, where God saw that the wickedness was great. It doesn't say it was 100%, but it was great.

***Genesis 6:7-8** And the LORD {2} said, "I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth, both man and beast ... and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them. (8) But Noah found grace in the eyes of the {2} LORD.*

The Flood

Then we come to the generations of Noah, and God gave Noah directions to build the ark. Then the Flood came and destroyed ALL that God had made, except He kept a male and a female of every species of animals – except for the clean animals, so they could have them for food; there were more of those taken onto the ark. There was the Flood; and mankind started all over again with Noah, his three sons, their wives, and then the children that were born from them.

Well then, what did they do? You would think they would have learned their lesson; but they didn't, because they didn't have the Spirit of God. They only had the human spirit of man. And soon they wanted to unite, and unite themselves. And so, in the 10th chapter of Genesis and beginning with verse 8. Well, I want to begin first in verse 4 in the 11th chapter {3} of Genesis. A little later on, God looked down and saw the people on the earth.

Genesis 11:4 And they said, Go to, let us [make] us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; [They wanted to go to heaven then, and people still think they can go to heaven.] and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered (abroad) upon [all] the face of the ... earth.

Now they were going to have unity. So that they wouldn't be separated, they wanted to unify themselves.

Genesis 11:8 So the {2} LORD scattered them [He came down, divided their languages, and (in verse 8) He scattered them ...] upon the face of (all) the earth [on all of the earth]: and they left off to build the city.

And their effort, they wanted one race. God didn't intend them to have one race. He wanted peace and all of that, but He did want **racial geographic segregation**. That's something they don't realize today. They want integration. In the world they want just THE OPPOSITE of what God decreed. God would have had racial segregation geographically; but there would have been peace between once race and another, even at a distance. But they would have been geographically some distance apart. If they had followed God's way and had God's Spirit, at least they would all be unified in spirit; but not for physical reproduction.

Organizing Nations

So immediately after that came the beginning of organizing nations. So now we turn to the 10th chapter of Genesis and beginning, let me see, with verse eight{4} I think it is. Cush was from Ham{5}.

Genesis 10:8-9 ... Cush begat Nimrod: [and] he began to be a mighty one in the earth. (9) He was a mighty hunter before {6} the {2} LORD; wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the {2} LORD.

You see, the thing people had to be protected from at that time was the

wild animals. He is the one who started building walls around the city to protect the people from the wild animals. Later on they built walls around the cities to keep the armies of other cities out. At first they were built, though, by Nimrod to protect them from the wild animals. He was a mighty hunter before the Lord. Let's see:

Genesis 10:10-12 *And the beginning of his kingdom* [Now he began to have governments; the beginning of his kingdom.] *was Babel* [or Babylon], *and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar.* (11) [And] *Out of that land went forth Asshur, and builded Nineveh* [Or Asshur is apparently the father of Assyria. "And builded Nineveh ..."] *and the city Rehoboth* [I can hardly read even this larger print any more.] *and Calah.* (12) *And* [Let's see.] *Resen between Nineveh and Calah: the same is a great city.*

Well, they had city-states for a while. That was the way men first began to organize as the population began to grow once again. There still were not millions or billions of people on earth. This was shortly after the Flood. There were not too many people, but they built city governments. No nations yet; but, gradually, nations came along. And after nations, Nebuchadnezzar got together the first empire uniting the nations; and we had the first empire. We read of that a great deal in the book of Daniel.

But city governments then began to arm themselves against other governments, and there began to be strife. Not cooperation, but war; one trying to destroy the other, one wanting to dominate over the other. And governments were always self-motivated by those in charge of the governments. We come down to our time today, and we have modern attempts at peace by alliances between nations. But whenever you find an alliance, it is an alliance of certain nations against an alliance of other nations; and it's always to fight and to conquer. It's never for peace. It's for war.

The object is by war to conquer all the others, and then to have peace by having it your way. For example, today I don't think there is anyone in the world that wants world peace any more than the Russian Communists. They WANT world peace! Did you realize that, brethren? They want it Russian-style, however. They want world peace of the kind where they dominate over the lives of us, and every other nation on earth; and where their warlords exert themselves over everybody, and serve them, and we're just their surfs and slaves. And, you know, we wouldn't call that peace. But that's their idea of peace.

So the cause of it was simply the way that Adam chose – which was vanity, exalting the self, me first, I want everything for me. And vanity, of course, leads to greed. Since I am really greater than anybody, since I exalt myself and glorify myself, I must conquer everything and everybody else and rule over everybody else and make them subservient to MY will.

Now, in due time, God sent Jesus Christ – the second Adam – into the world. And in Matthew 16:18 we read how Jesus said, “*I will build My Church.*” Now we had here in the world, we had a world that was really Satan's world. Adam took of that tree, and it became Satan's world. He is the root from which it all stems. Jesus Christ said that the people even who believed ON Him, but didn't obey Him and didn't believe **Him**. They didn't believe HIM in the sense that they didn't believe what He said. They merely believed ON Him, which means they believe He WAS the Messiah. But they wouldn't believe what He SAID. They wouldn't DO what He said. And so He said that they were the children of their father the devil.

A Whole New Civilization

Now Jesus came to start a whole new civilization. He came to open up the Tree of Life, and to start a new civilization based on the Tree of Life. This

world is based on this dead tree, and this whole world is going to **DIE**. And that tree may represent this world. **THIS TREE OVER HERE REPRESENTS THE KINGDOM OF GOD**. And it's based on the **power** and the **Spirit** of God – on the **WAY** of God, which is the **LAW** of God. Now sin is the transgression of the **LAW**, and the law is a **spiritual** law. It's the law of love, first to God and then to man.

The whole law is summed up in the one word, **LOVE**. Then it's divided into two main branches – love to God and love to neighbor, human neighbor. The first four of the Ten Commandments, the love toward God: the last six; love toward neighbor. And that is the **WAY** of life that leads to immortality and everlasting life: that leads to peace and all of the fruits that you see there – peace, and happiness, and joy, and patience.

Now Jesus came then to start a **new civilization**. He didn't start ... I have pictured this world as a building, and it's built on a foundation; and the foundation it's built on was an unstable foundation. This shows the foundation of that tree is the root. That's the foundation, and it's Satan. And Satan's **WAY** is the way of vanity, and the way of greed, the way of coveting, the way of competition, of envy, of violence, of war, of destruction, and of death. And this whole world is built on that foundation. I think I read you, in the last sermon I had before I left, some of the scriptures where Jesus ...

[***Tape skips at 58:46*]and how it crumbled and **FELL**, and great was the fall thereof. And that is only picturing what is going to happen to **THIS** world (based on the tree you see at my left over here, and your right). It's going to fall.

Jesus came to start another civilization altogether, through the Church. He didn't come to try to **repair** this and that structure of this Church. You know, it's a strange thing; I was awakened this morning in a dream. I was in a rickety old house in the dream, and I was going to try to redesign it and turn

some of its misarrangement into better rooms. I was thinking of a bedroom, and how they had to have a bathroom, and they had to have some of the things that I find in hotel rooms when I travel. You know, a wardrobe, a place to hang garments, and things like that. But it was a rickety old thing, and it was an awful job to try to fix it and patch it up. And I woke up and saw I was living in a nice warm bedroom. It was so much nicer than this old wreck of a thing I was trying to patch up in the dream. Well, I guess that's because I have been talking along this line. This world is a rickety old building, and it's about to crumble.

Now the Christianity of this world is a false Christianity. Satan has deceived it with a counterfeit Christianity. And that counterfeit Christianity says that a **false** Christ – not the real Christ at all – will reconstruct this old structure (this building that is this world), and repair it, and make it work. Now it's like a building where all of the water pipes and all of the plumbing pipes are rotten; and they don't work, the electric conduits, everything in it. And, if you try to repair everything like that, you're going to have an awful job; and when you get through, it's still going to be an old building.

Jesus came to start a new building – A NEW CIVILIZATION, which is built out of SOLID MATERIALS, out of LASTING MATERIALS. And lasting material is SPIRITUAL! It's based on the LAW OF GOD – of LOVE first to GOD (and a contact with God) and then (in context) to your fellow man. Love towards him: in cooperation, and in service, and in sharing, and in giving, and in helping one another, and that kind of thing.

Let's see. I Corinthians 1 and verse 10. Well, let me just read that parable to you. I think I read it before I left. Well, no? I Corinthians 1:10. This is the way this building, this structure, is built which is the NEW building, the new civilization altogether, where the apostle Paul said to the Church, which is this new structure:

***I Corinthians 1:10** Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye **all speak the same thing**, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be **perfectly joined together in the same mind** and in the same judgment*

Now in Philippians for example, he says:

***Philippians 2:5** Let **this mind** be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.*

It has to come in the mind of Christ. Not in Sam Jones' mind, and Bob Smith's mind, and somebody else's mind; but in the mind of Jesus Christ. And that mind must be in all, and there must be no division. Now in I Corinthians 12 and verse 5. Well, in I Corinthians 12, he's speaking about the Spirit of God. And there are many different functions in the Church, many different activities; but it's one SPIRIT, one ATTITUDE, one MIND. And in verse 11 it had been speaking about how God gives certain abilities to one and certain other abilities to another; but, all these, verse 11:

***I Corinthians 12:11-12** ... worketh the one and [same] selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will. (12) For as the body [That's the Church.] is one and has many members, and **all** the members of that **ONE** body [Not several churches, not several organizations or bodies; only one.] being many are one body; so also is Christ.*

And then, let's see, that was verses 11 and 12. What did I have in verse 5 here? In verse 5;

***I Corinthians 12:5** ... there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.*

But there's one Spirit through ALL; and there's the same ATTITUDE even though we have **different** offices, different jobs, different performances. But it's all the same attitude of love, and joy, and peace, and so on. (11 and

12, and now verse 28 [{7}](#), I wanted to read also.)

***1 Corinthians 12:28** And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets [And, in this case, in the Church prophets are preachers. Prophecy means to foretell, like a prophet of the Old Testament; but prophesy also means to preach. And a prophet therefore can be a preacher or one whom God inspires with prophecy for the future. But there are no prophets in the Church to whom God has revealed prophecy. But there are ministers. Apostles and ministers ...] thirdly teachers, [and] after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues [{8}](#). [And so on and so forth.]*

The Household Of God

Now the Church is organized. And you'll notice verse 28; or did I read that now? Verse 28, how God has, yes, set some in the Church and in order, first apostles and so on. Its ONE Church, and it is organized. Now we turn again to Ephesians, and in Ephesians the 2nd chapter beginning with verse 19.

***Ephesians 2:19** Now therefore, you [And, by the way, he was speaking to the Church at Ephesus; but this is to the Church there. Nevertheless, in principal, it's to all of the Churches. You...] are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and of the **household of God**;*

The Church then is the Household – it is the Family – of God. And the NEW WORLD, if you please, the NEW CIVILIZATION will be the FAMILY of God, A BORN FAMILY. And the Family will be a togetherness Family, ALL TOGETHER. There'll be one Head of the Family, who is GOD. The Husband underneath God is going to be Christ, and the wife will be the Church; and all the others will be the children that we have (that'll be converted through the Millennium and then born as children of God) – fellow

citizens of the Household of God.

***Ephesians 2:20-22** And are build upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ (Himself) being the chief corner stone; [There's the foundation. Or, like this tree over here, the **root**, which is the foundation of the tree, which is God Himself.] (21) In whom all the **building** [And here you see the Church is compared to a building; and you can compare this whole world to a building, and this civilization. "In whom all the building ..."] fitly framed together grows unto an holy temple in the Lord [That is the temple to which Christ is coming at His Second Coming.]: (22) In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.*

In other words, God dwells in each one of us. And each single one of us, in his human body (his or hers) ... Each human body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, and God DWELLS within each one of us. And the **mind** of God comes into our minds. Now the mind of God is one of love, and of peace, and of cooperation. Jesus was God; and He had the mind of God; and He came as a servant to serve and to help. He is also Lord and Master, but He is the kind of a master who serves and helps those over whom He rules.

Now in Ephesians 4 beginning with verse 3, where he speaks of:

***Ephesians 4:3** Endeavoring to keep the **unity** of the Spirit in the bond of peace ...*

The reason that we have that kind of unity today, and no longer the division that we had here five or six years ago, is that those who had not gone out were PUT OUT. They are not here to cause that kind of friction and trouble any longer.

***Ephesians 4:3-6** Endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. (4) [It goes on to say:] There is one body and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; (5) One Lord, one faith, one*

*baptism, (6) One God and Father of all [And we are all unified under the Father.], who is above all; and through all, and **IN** you all.*

God In Us

God the **Father** – through His MIND, through His SPIRIT, His very LIFE – **IS IN EACH ONE OF US, TILL WE COME PART OF GOD EVEN.** And that’s where the wonderful unity, and the peace, and the togetherness comes from; and why the Church. And that doesn’t mean that everybody who comes in is going to remain faithful and endure to the end either. It would be wonderful if that could be true. Now let’s see, verse 11; yes, now beginning with verse 10{9}; and here again is the organization. Let’s see:

***Ephesians 4:10-14** He that descended is the same also that ascended up (far) above all [the] heavens, [and so on] that he might fill all things. (11) And he gave some apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers. [Now what I want is the purpose then of this organization. Why should we be organized? It is,] (12) For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: (13) Till we **all** come in the **UNITY** [That is, **united together**. Not competing one against another, but all of one mind and one spirit. “In the unity ...”] of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God [That’s not knowledge about the Son of God, but the knowledge OF the Son of God. That means His knowledge in us, in our minds.], unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ: (14) that we henceforth be no more [as] children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men.*

We must all speak the same thing. We must all have the same mind. Now some people come with some crazy idea. He doesn’t agree with the

truth of God. I'll show you what's going to happen in just a moment, because there is going to be unity in the Church. We must all speak the same thing. There is one Spirit, and there must not be a different spirit coming in to upset that harmony and that unity that we have.

***Ephesians 4:15** But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: (16) From whom **the whole body fitly joined together and compacted** [just as if it's **welded** together – the one body, not two bodies. Not different branches, not different sects and denominations – one a Methodist, one a Baptist, one a Presbyterian, one a Congregationalist, one a Church of Christ, another a Church of England, and so on. “Compacted ...”] *by that which every joint supplieth, [and] according to the effectual [{10}](#) working in the measure of every part, [that] maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.**

And it's love and unification bringing us all absolutely together. But now, how do we keep that unity? You see, God created angels. He created a super archangel, the greatest of all, perfect in all his ways as God created him. And yet there was a mind that was able to decide wrong, and to disagree with God, and to have other ideas and opinions. Now he was kicked out of heaven, right back down to earth. Jesus Christ has conquered him, and he is going to even be removed from his throne on the earth ultimately. I mean, Satan is. And Christ is going to come and take that throne, and there is going to be peace.

Dealing With Division

Well, supposing that one even who has received the Holy Spirit changes his mind and wants to go off a different way; and he begins to cause friction and trouble. Some will say “Yeah, you are still going to have friction in the Church.” Oh, no. We are not, brethren. No, we're not! And I want to show

you why. Next we have to turn back to Romans, the last chapter of Romans, the 16th chapter and verse 17 where Paul says:

***Romans 16:17** Now I beseech you, brethren, **mark** them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned, and avoid them.*

Different doctrines – they are causing division, they are causing trouble. **THAT IS WHAT WE HAD IN THE PAST.** And the **REASON** that we had it was we said, “Well, we must be more loving and more kind and more good than God; and we must just leave them in among us.” God says, **MARK THEM AND AVOID THEM.** Now there are two ways we can avoid them, and only two that I know. One is if we leave them in the Church and we all go out. We’re no longer in the Church. The other is that we put them out, and we stay IN. Now, brethren, I think we’d prefer to stay IN. And so our choice is going to be to **PUT THEM OUT.**

And I want to say to you that one of the greatest offenses that we have **COMMITTED** – and we didn’t know it, and we didn’t realize it, and we didn’t do it maliciously or deliberately; we did it thinking we were doing it to be kind. and to not be too hard or tough – we **ALLOWED** that kind of people to **STAY IN UNTIL THEY TOOK OUT OTHERS WITH THEM.** **THE THING TO DO IS – JUST AS SOON AS THE MINISTERS MARK ONE, OR SEE ONE** who is **contrary**, who is causing **division**, who has other **ideas**, who is in a wrong attitude – to deal with that person quickly.

Now that doesn’t mean be harsh and put them out immediately. We don’t do it that way. But we go to that person, and we try to deal with that person kindly. We try to show that person where he is wrong. We try to see that he is not going to be contrary, but will see where he is wrong. Work with him; and, if he will show a right attitude, he will get into a right attitude and all of the controversy will be over. And then there is no division in the

Church. And, if we can save one, we will meet with him. We will pray. We will treat him with love.

But **if** we find he is in a **hostile** and an **antagonistic** spirit – a spirit of **hostility**, of **bitterness**, of **strife**, of **resentment** – **then we will not waste the time of day with him.** We'll say, "**YOU ARE EXCOMMUNICATED!** You are **NO ARE LONGER A MEMBER OF THIS CHURCH. YOU CANNOT ASSEMBLE WITH US ANY FURTHER.**"

The Church is going to remain united. Now, brethren, I repent of the fact that we have not been very careful on that point in the past. We are trying to be now. Now I have had a number of cases (not a large number, a very small number but a few) of ministers in the Church in this last three or four years. In some cases, they have had to be brought to me. In some cases, we have worked with them. We've found they were willing to come to a right attitude, or they already had a right attitude. What was wrong could be corrected. We have worked with them. We have saved them. They are continuing on, in harmony and in peace. We will work with them in every way we can – in LOVE, in PEACE – if they will have it that way. We want them to go into the Kingdom of God with us.

If they are hostile, then they no longer belong in this Church. And we're going to be very stern about that thing from now on. And there will be **NO DIVISION IN THIS CHURCH!** And that is the reason why now there is **one government.** Jesus Christ is the Head of that government. And I believe Jesus Christ is going to be able to keep it, and protect it, and carry us right on. The world has no way to eliminate opposition, competition, strife, division, discontent and unhappiness. God does give us a way to eliminate that from our midst.

My eyes are in worse condition today than they were yesterday. I don't know why. I think that's just something temporary today. Anyway, I just want

to say that there was opposition in the Church in the first century; and it brought about a suppression of the true gospel. And the true gospel was not preached after about 22 years to the world. The Church itself continued on in the true gospel, and Jesus had said that the gates of the grave would never prevail against the Church.

True Church To Get Ready

Now, as the Church went on, gradually they lost certain points of truth and of doctrine. Actually, when I came among the Church (which was not 50 years ago, but about 57 years ago). And about the first 7 years I was working with the **Sardis** people (Before the present era, or the Philadelphia Era, of the Church became distinctly different. And we date that, of course, as to 50 years ago where this is our 50th anniversary year.), the location of the Church as to where they are located and so on. (Well, we do that today. Today it's not in any one place, or city, or district. It is worldwide; so we call it Worldwide "Church of God" – which is truly, according to the Bible, the correct Bible name of the Church.) They had the tithing system, with tithes holy to God, and something else that is holy to God, His Sabbath day. And they had the truth of the law of God, and they knew that sin was the transgression of the law.

There were 17 other major points of doctrine that they had lost, and God has restored all of those to the Church through His apostle. Now all 20 are here; and, if more are to be restored, we shall accept them as fast as God reveals them. But the Church has been **making itself ready**. Now, finally, I want one last scripture; and that's back in the 21st chapter of Revelation and the last verse of the 21st chapter, speaking of the Kingdom of God.

***Revelation 21:27** And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie, but they*

which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

In other words, there will not enter into the Kingdom any that are contentious, that are breaking God's laws and God's commandments, that are in a wrong attitude or a wrong spirit. They are NOT going to enter the Kingdom of God. God will not let them enter there; and yet some liberals would think we should let them enter and stay in the Church until they have ruined every member of the Church. It's a great deal like having a crate of apples. If you have one rotten apple, it'll rot the ones next to it IF you leave it there. If we can't – and if he insists on remaining hostile, resentful, bitter, antagonistic, of a contentious or a hostile attitude – he will be marked; and he will be disfellowshipped.

And the Church is going to remain united in love, and in harmony, and in peace. God help us that we will never again have to talk about many who have left the Church. I don't like to hear that. I don't mean that as a criticism of those who have mentioned it. There were lessons to be learned. But I am just sorry it's had to be. And God has shown us how to correct that so it will not happen in the future. And we are going to have happiness, and truth; and God is going to bless this Church from now on, as He has never blessed in the past.

Blessings From The Trip

Many blessings have come as a result of my trip that I have just concluded. Many more are coming. Other things have opened up, even in the day or two that I have been back. God is working to open up **big** openings and **big** opportunities ahead for this church, some that are much bigger than I can reveal to you right now. But I am just immensely thankful and grateful to God for what He is doing; and, if we will follow Him and follow Him honestly in love and in peace, He will bless us.

Now I will say that everything's continued well while I have been gone. Mr. Neff said "Everything except the finances." And I rather laughed. And then he told me the increase in the month of January over a year ago; and I laughed, and I said, "And you say everything except that?" Well, it could have been bigger perhaps; but I will say I am very grateful that it was as good as it was. And God is going to bless us according to how well we serve and obey Him, and how close we keep to Him. He will bless us, and bless the whole Work, and bless the Church from now on.

I might mention that in Thailand (I wonder if I have time to mention it? I'm five minutes overdue. I'll just take time to say this one thing.) I had dinner with the Royal Family, and in the same dining room they had other tables; and our television crew and others that were with me on the trip all were eating in the same dining room but at different tables. And, during the dinner, I know there had been some discussion about the Queen of Thailand coming to visit us here on the campus. And apparently she didn't want to say anything if she weren't going to be invited, and she had to know that I would invite her. And I was in a position that I couldn't invite her if I were going to be turned flatly down, and I wanted to be sure that she would come. And so it was it was sort of up

It's been talked about ever since I arrived in Thailand. And, well, I was sitting on the right of His Majesty, the King, during the dinner; and at my right was the Queen's secretary, so I was talking part of the time to her. And she sort of mentioned that; and finally she, apparently, she had talked to the Queen a little bit during the dinner. And I had signified or indicated to her that I would invite the Queen, if I knew the Queen would come; but I didn't want to invite her, and just appear to be presumptuous, and then get turned down. And apparently she had mentioned that to the Queen while I was talking to the King. Then she whispered to me. She said, "Her Majesty would come if you would invite her." I asked if she was sure; and she said, "Yes."

And I said, “Okay, I’ll invite her.” So I crossed the table; I did, and she said she would be **very happy** to accept.

And so later in the year Queen Sirikit of Thailand is going to be our guest here on campus. Now I don’t have any of the details yet. There is some little time to work it out, and it’ll be in the summer or early autumn. But I just thought that might be a nice thing to say in finally closing. That’s another one of the things that happened on this trip.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said Southern Carolina here, then corrected himself.

[{2}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong uses the word “Eternal” where the KJV says “LORD.”

[{3}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said chapter 10 instead of chapter 11.

[{4}](#) - Editor’s Note: The tape appears to skip at this point but it is verse eight that Mr. Armstrong is quoting.

[{5}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said “Dan” here, then corrected himself.

[{6}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said “from” here, then corrected himself.

[{7}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong said “verse 25” here, but meant verse 28.

[{8}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong said “languages” here, but the KJV uses “tongues.”

[{9}](#) - Editor’s Note: Mr. Armstrong said “verse 11” here, but actually started reading from verse 10.

{10} - Editor's Note: Mr. Armstrong used the word "eternal" here instead of the KJV "effectual."

Rely On God

Sermon (April 6, 1985) – First Day of Unleavened Bread
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Rely On God.....	1832	Fourth Mystery: Satan’s World	1848
Holy Days Revealed	1833	Fifth Mystery: The Nation Of Israel	1848
Sardis Era Rejects Holy Days	1834	Sixth Mystery: The Church	1849
Holy Days Picture Spiritual Creation	1835	Seventh Mystery: The Kingdom Of God ..	1849
We Must Grow Out Of Sin	1838	The Law Of God	1850
Hunger And Thirst For God’s Righteousness		Holy Spirit Required To Fulfill God’s Law	
.....	1840	1852
If Adam Had Taken Of The Tree Of Life ..	1842	Self-reliance Or Reliance On God	1852
Man Is Not Totally Physical	1843	Key Issue Is Government	1854
New Book	1845	Revealed Truth: Hope Of Resurrection	1855
First Mystery: Who And What Is God?	1846	Spirit And Principle Of The Law	1857
Second Mystery: The Spirit World	1847	Judgment Now On The House Of God	1859
Third Mystery: Man	1848	Rely On God	1859

Greetings everybody. Well, it’s a real nice greeting and send-off to have my (I think I should call him my) “executive aide” give the sermonette and my Young Ambassadors sing just before I speak. They’re my kids and I love them. Although I have grandchildren older than any of them, they’re still my children; and I’m glad we can all enjoy what they give us at the fall festivals every year. Before I begin speaking, I want to thank all of you for the generosity and the nice offering that we had this morning, breaking a record once again. We only take up **offerings seven times a year**. Whereas churches that call themselves “Christian,” so many of them take up offerings every Sunday, every meeting; we take up offerings **just when God commands it** and only when God commands it.

Money is only a medium of exchange; but it takes work to do the Work of God. And it’s not only some of us who work in preaching, in writing and editing, in teaching others in College to become ministers, and many of those

things. But others have to work to provide so that they will be provided for, so they can work. And what they provide is merely transferred into money as a medium of exchange, and so it does take money. But that only means we're all working together. Actually, we're all one great vast team; and we have a worldwide Work; and I'm glad I can say the job is getting done. It's getting done gloriously.

Holy Days Revealed

The night before last, we had a very solemn ceremony. We had to be reminded, once again, of how Jesus was beaten, whipped, bruised—as no man ever had been. And in Isaiah 53 you will read that He was beaten as no man had ever been. Or is that in the latter part of Isaiah 52? It's right in that passage. And then He was nailed to the cross and died the most shameful, agonizing death possible **because you and I have sinned**.

Now today... That was a time of solemnity—very solemn, very serious. Today's a more joyful time, because today marks the time of our **coming out of sin**. And in a sense we're only starting out of sin all over again, as we do every year. And I wonder if we really do realize fully and comprehend the real meaning of this festival. I first learned back very early in the year of 1927 that we should keep the Passover and that we should keep seven special Sabbath days—annual Sabbaths or holy days. At that time I didn't know why. Do you know I had to think of Abraham, when God called him OUT of Babylon. And, you know, God was calling me OUT of this world; and He's called you OUT of this world. When God called, his name originally was... I believe it should be pronounced "A'bram" (I think many have called it "A-brahm."), till God changed his name to Abraham.

And God called him OUT to leave the gaiety and the bright lights of the civilization where he was. And he didn't quibble. He didn't say, "Well, do I

have to?” Or, “Well, can’t I go later?” Or, “Can’t I go someplace else?” Or, “Why isn’t it just as well here?” It just says one, just two words: “Abram went.” That’s all. He didn’t question. And I think that came to my mind when I saw that we should keep these annual days.

I think you, most of you, have never heard the history of how I came to keep the Sabbath; how I found out about these days. And, in a sense, that’s how you came to be here today, how you came to be keeping these days—because God brought it to me. And I don’t know of any church that had kept these days for hundreds and hundreds of years. I think there’s some record that the annual holy days and festivals were kept by some in the Church, by some of the faithful, for perhaps (I think I have heard) up to four hundred years.

I saw, however, that they were ordained forever. I saw that Jesus Christ had kept these days, and set us an example that we should do the same thing. I saw that the disciples kept these days; and, when they became apostles, they taught the Church, and the early Church kept God’s festivals. I saw that they were ordained forever. They were kept in the New Testament as well as the Old. I didn’t know why. I didn’t say: “Well, why? Well, well, Lord, I won’t do it unless you show me why!” I just said, “God says ‘Do it!’ I will do it!” And my wife, of course, with me; and for seven years we kept these days alone.

Sardis Era Rejects Holy Days

I explained these days to the Church that we regard now as the Sardis Era of the Church, but was the Church of God, down in the Willamette area of Oregon. They laughed me to scorn. They would have nothing to do with the annual Sabbaths. They kept the weekly **Sabbath**, but they would go no further. In other words, they would do what they had been doing all their

lives. They had been taught by their parents, I guess; but they would go no further. They would not GROW in grace or in knowledge.

And then when the Church, the first Church, was raised up that became “the parent Church” of this Philadelphia Era in Eugene, Oregon (or just west of Eugene) in the country school house—that was in the autumn of 1933—I began to teach these days. That autumn we kept the fall annual Sabbaths; and the next spring we kept, not only the Passover with foot washing, but also the annual holy days. But we didn’t know why. And that was in 1933.

Then on through the years, up to 1945, as the Church was growing, the Philadelphia Era of the Church began to **keep all of these days**. The Sardis Era never did. We fellowshiped with them. I didn’t leave them to start a new Church of my own, or any thing of the kind. I’ve been falsely accused of that. It is not true! We continued as brethren. I continued to minister to the Church of the Sardis Era. In fact, I did until the broadcast was a few years under way. And, finally, the Work was just so all consuming. This Church was growing so fast—the Philadelphia Era; and they were falling farther and farther away.

At first, I continued to pastor one Church up in the Willamette Valley; and, when I couldn’t spend all the time to be there every Sabbath, I divided it every other Sabbath with one of the ministers we call Sardis ministers. That’s just our nickname. We find them identified as the Sardis Era in the second, or the third chapter rather, of the Book of Revelation, the first seven verses. And, after a while, I could not even get up there every other Sabbath because the Work was growing so fast; and they drifted their way, and we finally drifted ours. But, for several years, it was a gradual transition from the Sardis into the Philadelphia Era of the Church.

Holy Days Picture Spiritual Creation

And then in 1945... I think you never heard of the history of why we

keep the Feast of Tabernacles; and why we keep all these days, and what they mean. In the public library in Eugene, Oregon (and I think it was one of the commentaries), I saw something. Someone could see that in some way these annual festivals of God pictured **the SPIRITUAL creation of man**. Now, God had started a creation in the human family. The first was the physical creation. That started with the first man, Adam. The spiritual creation was started with the second Adam. Jesus Christ is called the Second Adam. He called people out of the world that had built by the first Adam, influenced entirely by Satan. And I want to go into a little of that in just a few moments. But I want to continue with this history just a moment.

This article, as I remember, didn't give the whole thing. It just mentioned that the spiritual creation began with Christ, and that the Passover was the first event to happen in the spiritual creation. And then I could see that the Days of Unleavened Bread represented putting sin out of our lives; and it just naturally unfolded, and God opened up the meaning to me. But the next festival, happening some fifty days later, that we call the Day of Pentecost—actually, in the Bible originally it was called the Feast of Firstfruits; and WE ARE the firstfruits (and I didn't understand that at that time)—but I saw that that meant the coming of the Holy Spirit, after Christ was crucified.

He was crucified for our sins; and, naturally, the next thing we must do in the spiritual creation of man is to put sin out of our lives. What was wrong with humanity? Sin had come into the life of Adam. Sin had come into the life of his children—Cain and Abel, and even Seth; and then of the others as they came along. And ALL have sinned, even righteous Abel! And Jesus called Abel, the son of Adam, “righteous Abel.” But he sinned, because the Bible also says:

Romans 3:23 ALL have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

We read how Enoch walked with God, nevertheless Enoch sinned. Noah was perfect in his generations (meaning his birth, physical birth), but he also walked with God. And he alone was found righteous; but only in the carnal sense, because he did not have the Holy Spirit of God. So God saved him and just his family—his wife, their three sons, and the wives of their sons; and the WHOLE WORLD has come from them. And ALL have sinned. All have sinned.

Well then I began to see, in the seventh month, the Feast of Trumpets. I saw in the Bible how at the last trump Jesus Christ will come again. And it became very plain that the Feast of Trumpets signified the second coming of Jesus Christ. Then I studied the Day of Atonement that came next, the fast day; and I could see how it showed the putting away of Satan as the Azazel goat that was driven out into the wilderness. And then came the Feast of Tabernacles representing for seven days the seventh thousand-year—[the] reign of Christ on Earth. And that is only finishing the first seven thousand years.

Now the Holy Spirit was closed. I'll come to that a little later. But it was closed until Satan is put away—until the fulfillment of the Day of Atonement, until the second coming of Christ. And, of course, Satan will be put away after the second coming of Christ to rule, and He will sit on the throne that Satan is now sitting on. But gradually, then, I came to see the meaning of these days; how wonderful it is that it pictures. No Church on Earth—but this one—keeps these days.

Dr. Hoeh showed us this morning, in one of the parables, how some have split off. They didn't endure but a little time, for various reasons. There are four classifications shown, and only one classification endures. Sometime you think that so many have split off from the Church. Well, if you look at the parable, you'd think that at least three-fourths has split off and only one-fourth remained; but actually not. I don't think over ten or fifteen percent

have ever split off. And so I think we have a great deal to be thankful for. But it was foretold. Jesus foretold it, and that is the thing that I'm coming to now.

We Must Grow Out Of Sin

Today [this first Day of Unleavened Bread]—what does it mean? It means the coming out of sin. And we have to renew it every year; because, brethren, you have **NOT fully** come out of sin. Not one of you! Neither have I. You read in First John in the first chapter (not the Gospel of John; but First John, near the end of your New Testament):

***1 John 1:8** If we [in the Church] say we have no sin, we deceive ourselves.*

WE DO SIN—even after we have been converted; even after we have repented; have received Jesus Christ as our personal Saviour; have received the Holy Spirit of God to lead us. But not one of us has been filled with the Holy Spirit completely. To be filled completely with the Holy Spirit, every other wrong “contending spirit” has had to go completely out of you; and I don't think that has happened to a one of us yet. It is what the world does not realize: it is **a gradual process**. We have to GROW in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, as Peter tells us in one of his two books in the Bible. Then we have to grow out of sin. You have to gradually put sin out.

Last Wednesday there was quite a commotion going on over in my home, and Rhona Martin had gotten a number of people over there. And they were helping, and they were scouring every nook and cranny of the house for even some breadcrumbs. They'd heard a sermon over the weekend before, and how they can even get into the carpets; and so carpets were being vacuum cleaned, and everything was. I don't know. Everything was left spic and span when they got through; but there was quite a crew over there

working, trying to get all leaven out of the house.

Now, I'm quite sure the leaven was really cleaned out! But have we really completely cleaned **the leaven** out of our lives? The sin. Whenever you get to the place where you have, you'll be just like Jesus Christ was. He never sinned; and not one of you has ever approached that place yet—where you can be as pure as He was, as free from sin as He was. I'm not, and you're not.

You know, there's one thing the world doesn't understand that I want to mention right here, while it's on my mind. I have to speak to you a little differently now than I used to. I like to have an outline, and have the Bible here, and go through the Scriptures. I can't do that anymore because I, no matter how large I may type out or write out the notes, I still can't see them with a magnifying glass unless I take time to study a long time; but I can't do that right off to you. So I just don't even bring a Bible along anymore. However, in the meantime, God has written a lot of it up here [pointing to his head]. I don't have to read up there. I cannot see in my own brain. I never have done that, and you've never seen your brain either.

That's one thing I mention in my new book. You don't know **who** and **what** you are. You've never even seen your own brain. You don't know why you are. Or do you? I hope you do. Some of us do, but most people don't. I used to wonder about that. I won't say I really worried about it at that time; but I was thinking, and I was wondering. And I remember it was in the summer of 1926, and that fall God gave me a challenge that started me into His Word—the Bible—and began to explain all these things to me; and I've been able to explain them to you since.

Anyway, we have not come all the way out of sin. It's a gradual process, and will go on as long as we live unless we could, in this life, attain to the same holy, righteous, perfect, perfection that is that of God the Father

and that of Jesus Christ. Only one Man ever lived **without any taint of sin whatsoever**. And, if leaven represents sin, there was not even a tiny little crumb of it anywhere around in His life. But I can't say that, and not one of us can say it. But, by His grace, He paid the penalty for the past sins.

But there's so much more than just that. When we repent of sin, that means we start to go the other way. We grow out of sin, and we have to GROW out of sin. As you GROW out of sin, you also—at the same time you put sin out of your lives—you put more of God's Truth and God's love in.

What is sin? Sin is the transgression of the law. But I think we don't understand fully **what sin** is. Now, you think you do. You say, "Oh, I understand sin, Mr. Armstrong. Well, sin is the transgression of the law." Yes, I know. I've taught you that, and perhaps you knew it before I taught you too. And the law is the commandments of God; and it's holy, and just, and good. The law is perfect, but we're not. But I think we don't fully understand.

You can sum up the Law in one word—**love**. And without love and love in your heart (and a lot more than we have acquired, or developed, or received) from God... And **the love of God** you have to receive **from Him!** You don't work it up, or develop it, yourself in your own life at all. You can't go above the human level, and that's the level of **the human** spirit within you. It takes the level of **the Holy Spirit of God** that must come into you. And none of us has ever come to the place where we're 100% holy, and righteous, and living according to God's law—and not even a fraction of 1% that is in violation even of "the spirit of the law." Not one of us has ever come to that point. If we GROW (as Peter said) in grace and knowledge, we also grow out of sin. You don't put it all out all at once. We all have some of it left in us.

Hunger And Thirst For God's Righteousness

In the last year or more, I've been especially concerned about the

passage of scripture that talks of hungering and thirsting for God's righteousness. I began to wonder: Did I really hunger and thirst for it? I knew I ought to want to have God's righteousness. And I had to really stop to think, and begin to pray about it, before I began to **really**. And I thought I had, but I hadn't really hungered and thirsted for it. I WANT God's righteousness! Now if you can understand, you will too.

I think of God's righteousness; and I think of God, and how holy and how righteous He is. God is so righteous He is absolutely perfect! Now God has... He never suffers anything, except sorrow that you and I cause Him; but of Himself He suffers nothing. He has no pain. He has no backache. No hips out of joint. No headache. But He is full of vitality. And He just feels so good, and so active, so strong, and so vigorous, and just feels good over and over all the time; and He's never tired or weary. He is perfect, and EVERYTHING is just perfect in His life. He has NO FEARS and no worries of any kind, because He's perfectly righteous. Perfectly! Now, that's something to hunger and thirst for!

Now, I have some aches and pains. Sometimes they come; sometimes they go, and then others come. So do you. So do we all. But if we hunger and thirst for God's righteousness, if we ever achieve it we will have perfect contentment, perfect happiness, perfect joy just brimful and running over, enthusiastically filled with love and with happiness beyond any description. We'd better hunger and thirst for it. Well now, what is that? It's the absence of sin.

And what is sin? In another way, you can say **sin is the absence of righteousness**. That's what it is—the absence of righteousness. We sin in many ways that we don't realize. I was just thinking: one of the greatest sins is our tongue. Any of you free from ever sinning with **the tongue**? Things you say? Are you always courteous, always pleasant? Always tending to make other people comfortable and happy? Always just reflecting love, and

joy, and peace? We haven't attained to that quite yet, brethren. It's something we have to work for and strive for—day, by day, by day. And how do you achieve it? On your own power and strength? You aren't that strong! You don't have the power and the strength.

If Adam Had Taken Of The Tree Of Life

So that's where we have to get back to the beginning. I'm always going back to the beginning: the first man Adam. And we are his children. Now, once again, I go back there where I've gone dozens and dozens of times in the last few years now. Before Adam were those two symbolic trees among, perhaps, hundreds of other trees in that beautiful Garden of Eden. But two were special symbolic trees: the Tree of Life and also the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.

Now, we used to say very little about them at all. We'd hear about Adam's "apple" once in a while, and that meant the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil; but that was just a way of expressing. It didn't mean anything to people. And we began to see that it meant a little something: that Adam sinned, that he rebelled against God. He disobeyed God, and that's where sin started in the world. But we never saw very much about the other tree, the Tree of Life.

I hadn't thought as much about it as I should. And I didn't realize I didn't think about it either, until down in South Africa. I was in the home of Dr. McCarthy in Johannesburg, and it was after a Sabbath meeting, and we were all over there for a buffet dinner that evening. And I was sitting at a table. Some ate dinner on their laps, on a buffet dinner, you know; but I was a little older than most of them, so they let me sit at a table. And then others began to gather around me.

Then somebody came up. I was talking about **the two trees**. And they

said, “Well, Mr. Armstrong, what would have happened if Adam had taken of the Tree of Life?” And you know, they almost stopped me right there! I had never thought very deeply on that before. It just seemed we never thought: “What IF he had taken of the Tree of LIFE?” And I began to think a lot more on that line from that minute on—if Adam had taken the Tree of Life. That’s what he should have done; because Jesus Christ, the second Adam, came to do what the first Adam should have done and did not do. Jesus **did** take of the Tree of Life.

If Adam had taken of the Tree of Life, **God’s Life** would have entered into him. Now, how does God’s Life enter into you? Through the Holy Spirit of God! All right, that’s the beginning; but that’s only part of it. It means so much more than just that. That has great meaning—if God’s Spirit had entered into him. He had a spirit in him. God created man mortal but with a human spirit. That is what the world does not understand!

Man Is Not Totally Physical

We learn gradually. I hadn’t learned it all at once, but gradually. Back here about four, five years ago I began talking to you about the Two Trees; and I began seeing. And I had seen prior to that time for some five or ten years—I had been seeing about “**the spirit in man.**” Well, I thought the spirit of man is something in man; and I said then that it seemed to me, at that time, that the spirit is no part of man at all. It’s something different. It’s just something in – Man is WHOLLY flesh and blood, wholly physical. I said, at that time, “A man might swallow a marble, and the marble is in him; but it’s not really part of him.” Well, I don’t know. As long as it’s in him, I guess it is a part of him.

I finally had to come to see that God created the first man with a spirit in him, and the man is **NOT** wholly physical! His whole body, his brain,

everything is physical; but there is a spirit in man that does not exist in the other vertebrates. It doesn't exist in a cow, a horse, a dog, an elephant, or a whale, or a dolphin, or a chimpanzee. They have a brain, and their brain is as good as ours; and they can't find very much difference in the constituency of the brain—the human brain from an animal brain. But the human brain has thousands of times greater output. Now, the human brain has with it a spirit; but it's a human spirit. It's the spirit of man!

I Corinthians 2:11 *What man could know the things of man, save the spirit of man* which is in him?

“The spirit of man which is **in** him.” Well, it is part of him. I thought, well, it was something that God added with the first breath.

Now the word for “spirit” in both the Greek and the Hebrew language (The Hebrew in which the Old Testament is written, and the New Testament written in Greek.) is the same as the word for “air.” Let's see. It is “*pneuma*” in the Greek, and it is “*ruach*” in the Hebrew. Now it's “spirit.” But it means “spirit,” or it also means “breath,” and it means “air”. And Jesus explaining to Nicodemus about being born again, He said it's like the wind. You can't see it, but you can tell where it's going. Nicodemus couldn't understand about being born again and born of the spirit.

John 3:6 *That which is born of the Spirit is [and becomes] spirit.*

We're not spirit. We're flesh, but with a **human spirit** within us.

God's Spirit Joins With Spirit In Man

Now THE SOLE VALUE OF HUMAN LIFE IS THAT SPIRIT, because every bit of the rest of you is going to die. And everybody who ever lived has already died, except those that are alive today; and no one is as old as 150 years. There's no one alive that was alive 150 years ago, on the face of the Earth. No one. I think we've heard of someone right around 135, over

somewhere in Europe (south of Russia somewhere), if they can count. But we don't live to be 930 years old, like Adam did, any longer. But that spirit is of EVERY possible importance because that makes possible a connection with God. **GOD'S SPIRIT COMES INTO US AND IT JOINS WITH OUR HUMAN SPIRIT. THE TWO JOIN TOGETHER!**

God formed Adam of the dust of the ground, but he wasn't complete physically. God wanted him to reproduce, but the guy couldn't do it (and no other man can do it). He couldn't do it until God operated and made a woman out of him, and presented the woman; and they joined together, and they became one flesh. The two became one. They were joined together; and they could reproduce their kind, and they had children.

If Adam had taken of the Spirit—of the Tree of Life—he would have received THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD! AND THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD COULD JOIN WITH HIS SPIRIT. It couldn't join with the physical brain; it couldn't join with his big toe or his little finger, but it could join with his SPIRIT. GOD GAVE US A **HUMAN SPIRIT** SO WE COULD BE UNITED WITH GOD. And when you die, you die; but the spirit returns to the God that gave it, and the body returns to the dust from whence it came.

Now, THE SPIRIT IN YOU can't think; it can't reason; it can't know. The brain sees through the eye and hears through the ears. It's the brain that sees and hears, through the eye or through the ear. It's the brain that thinks and reasons. But the brain alone couldn't think and reason and couldn't know without the spirit. The spirit EMPOWERS the brain to do that. Psychologists don't know that. They don't teach that in any university, or any college, because they don't know. They don't know **what a man** is.

New Book

I want to mention, just a moment in passing, about the new book that I

am writing. It will fully explain all of these things. The mystery of man: What is man? Of course, first of all, we were created by a wonderful God. And nobody knows who and what God is, it seems—unless you can understand as God reveals Himself in His Word, and very few do. So the first great mystery of all is the mystery of God. Who and what is God, and what is He like? Why is God not real to people?

One young woman comes to me and says, “Well, God just isn’t real to me!” Well, He isn’t real to most people. Why? The new book, *Mystery of the Ages*, the first chapter is about the mystery of God; and I hope I can begin to make God a little more real to people in that chapter. And, by the way, it will be published serially in *The Plain Truth*. Now most of you will have a copy of the book sooner than you’ll get very much of it in *The Plain Truth* because it’ll only come out a chapter, or a part of a chapter, at a time in *The Plain Truth*; and it’ll be a year or more coming out. We hope to have the book all ready well before the Feast of Tabernacles, and I hope there’ll be a copy for every member of the Church. And I want to ask you now to read from the beginning and read every word; and you will come to a comprehension, and an understanding, better than ever before.

First Mystery: Who And What Is God?

There’s not much that is “new” in this book. The Bible is like a jigsaw puzzle—with many, many pieces. Perhaps a few thousand pieces here and there; and they have to be put together in exactly the proper way; and one relates to another; and then finally you have a beautiful picture and it all clears up. And this book is merely a synopsis of the Bible: putting it together so it can be understood.

You begin reading the Bible in Genesis one and verse one and you can’t. “*In the beginning God...*” And right there you’re stuck: Who and what

is God? You don't know, and that doesn't explain it. You have to look to many other scriptures in the Bible to know who and what God is. You'll find a lot about God in Isaiah; you find a lot about Him in the Psalms; you find a lot about Him in Proverbs; you find a lot about God in Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John; you find a lot about God in Ephesians. You have to go to many other scriptures to find out about God.

This book is trying to take the trunk and the main branches of the whole "tree of knowledge" that is the Bible, and put it together. But it's only a synopsis. It doesn't go into great detail. It doesn't cover the smaller limbs of the tree, or the little twigs and small branches. It's sort of a summary of the whole story of the Bible, making it so plain that, when you read the Bible, you will really understand it. And you must read the Bible along with it, and see how various parts of the Bible come clearly to your mind as they never did before.

Second Mystery: The Spirit World

The second great mystery that will be handled in this book is the mystery of the spirit world. The first thing God created was not human beings. The first thing He created was not the universe. He hadn't created the Earth yet. He hadn't created the sun, the moon. He hadn't created any of the stars or anything we see in the universe. The first thing He created was angels. Now, about a third of the angels sinned. But what about the other two-thirds of the angels? And what about the angels that sinned? And WHY? And HOW? And what has that got to do with us?

I remember when I was a boy eleven years old, some boy had a favourite expression; and we all took it up. Someone would ask a foolish question; and he'd say, "Well, what's that got to do with the price of putty?" So I still use that expression. I sometimes ask, well, some nonsensical

question. I say “Well, what’s that to do with the price of putty anyhow?” And who cares about the price of putty?

So that chapter explains about the angels and their function, about who and what they are, and why they are. And why did God create them? And how a third of them went wrong. And did God create a devil? And how come there is a devil.

Third Mystery: Man

The third, then, is man. The third chapter is the MYSTERY OF MAN. Man is a mystery. He doesn’t understand himself. That goes into the spirit in man. That goes into the two trees. That goes into the sin of Adam, and how the whole world was kidnapped and is being held captive.

Fourth Mystery: Satan’s World

Then the next chapter is the development of Satan’s world. The mystery of the world. What about this world? Why is the world one that is producing awesome progress, just fantastic progress, the things we do today? The minute things we do in little instruments and machines. And the great vast things: sending men to the moon and back; transplanting hearts and other human organs; all of the machinery. And at the same time, men with brains that can do that kind of thing don’t have enough brains to solve their own problems, get along with their wives and children, get along with their next door neighbors. Or men that employ others who do these things can’t get along with their employees, or with competitors, or anybody else. The men that head nations are men of great minds, but they can’t get on with other nations. They’re always having wars. Why? That’s a mystery. And how did this world develop?

Fifth Mystery: The Nation Of Israel

And as the world developed, God intervened in the world and brought out one nation. Were they His favorite nation? Israel. WHY THE NATION OF ISRAEL? What have they got to do with the price of putty? God chose the nation. Did God discriminate against other nations? WHY the nation Israel and what do they have to do with the whole thing?

Sixth Mystery: The Church

Then the next is, in this world came Christ and built the Church: The mystery of the Church—and that’s the biggest chapter of all! Why should there be a Church? Most people take “church” for granted. They don’t know why there are churches. They say, “Well, there’s a church down there on the corner.” Well, there are all kind of churches around. Why? Is there any reason for them? Is there any purpose? That’s a mystery, and people have never understood. We need to know why and how: Who, and what, and why, and how.

Seventh Mystery: The Kingdom Of God

When Christ came, He came with **a message from God**; and His message was the Kingdom of God.

And the Church is merely the Kingdom of God in embryo. In other words, the Church will grow into the Kingdom of God. And that comes finally, that will be chapter seven: The mystery of the Kingdom of God.

And no one seems to know what the Kingdom of God is. Many of the preachers say, “The Kingdom of God is within you.” The Roman Catholic Church says they are the Kingdom of God, the Roman Catholic Church. I

remember, here about seventy years ago, they used to say the British Empire was the Kingdom of God. They don't say that anymore! There isn't any British Empire anymore.

And then what happens after the Millennium and **after** the Kingdom of God? That's all in the concluding chapter.

So **it begins with God** (Who began before time was), and **it ends in eternity ahead** (which will never, never end). It's the most comprehensive work that I believe has been produced since the Bible, and it is the Bible put in understandable language. Not the whole Bible, as I say, but a synopsis—enough to give you understanding. And still it's going to be well over four hundred pages, I believe. It'll be by far the largest book so far.

Well, I perhaps shouldn't have taken time for that. I better see what time it is, because I don't have an outline now. And I need to look at my watch; or, I don't know, I might talk here like Paul did till midnight one time! Now that I'm not using an outline of Scriptures, I could!

The Law Of God

But how did I come to these things? Well, let me go back and finish what I was saying. If Adam had taken of the Tree of Life, he would have received the Spirit of God. That would have given him the **knowledge of** how to live, God's Law. Now, we say that sin is the transgression of the law. Adam would have received knowledge then about sin. That's the thing we're interested in today: coming out of sin. Well, sin is the transgression of the law. Then what is the LAW?

I said, down to the Law School at the University of Southern California, that: "The greatest Book on law in the world is probably one you don't even have in your library! But it's the greatest Book on law, and it talks about Law

from the beginning to end. It's one of the largest books ever written; and it's the largest selling book in the world; and it's in more places than any other book. But probably you may not even have a single one in your library!" You know, they looked afterward and discovered they had. It was the Book. It's the Bible, of course. And they found they had one Bible in the library. That's all. And that's the biggest book on law, and yet they never look at that book in studying law.

Now, WHAT IS LAW? Law is merely the rules of human conduct, or the law of conduct. (It doesn't necessarily need to be human.) Our laws are the rules that regulate performance. Now, a transgression or violation of the law always brings a penalty. The rules of a basketball game could be called the law of the game. Now, there are all kinds of penalties. There are fouls that have to be made right along several times during the game, and there are various penalties.

The Law of God is the way we ought to live. It's **the way God does live**. IT'S THE WAY TO BE HAPPY. IT'S THE WAY TO DO AWAY WITH PAIN, WITH SORROW, WITH SUFFERING. IT'S THE WAY TO DO AWAY WITH FEARS AND WORRIES. IT'S THE WAY TO HAVE PERFECT PEACE, AND HAPPINESS, AND JOY. IT'S THE WAY THAT **PRODUCES** THAT; AND YOU VIOLATE IT, and it produces something else.

If Adam had taken of the Tree of Life, God would have REVEALED His Law in a more full manner. I think that God did reveal His Law to a certain extent to Adam, but I don't think He went into the full details. If He could have and if Adam had taken the Tree of Life, and then he would have had a direct contact with God. He would have been connected to God. He and God would have been joined together, in a sense. And God, and God's mind, would have been in him; and God could begin to put some of God's righteousness in him.

Holy Spirit Required To Fulfill God's Law

It not only would have given him the LAW of God, the knowledge of WHAT to do and HOW to live, and what not to do; but, in order to do it, you have to have something to do it with. You can't fulfill the Law except with something, and that something is love. *"Love is the fulfilling of the law."* [Romans 13:10] But man was not created with the love that will fulfill the Law of God, because the Law of God requires the HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD to fulfill the Law: It is *"the love of God...shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit"* [Romans 5:5], and that is the only love that can fulfill the Law of God.

Now, Adam would have received the knowledge in his mind of WHAT to do. He would have received the POWER TO DO IT! If he had only taken of the Tree of Life, he would have had direct contact with God; and been made one with God; and begotten as a son of God. Now, just as a child is a begotten son of its parents, there is, in human life... A child begotten of human parents goes through a period of gestation, as we call it. And in the human family, that's a nine-month period. In some animals, it doesn't take that long before their young are born. That's a period of development and growth. And, if Adam had taken of the Tree of Life, he would have received all of this. He would have been a begotten son of God, and then he would have had to develop just as we do. But there was one difference: Adam had never yet committed sin. God told him this before Adam had been tempted by Satan, before Satan could get to him. Satan didn't get to Adam until after God had talked to him.

Self-reliance Or Reliance On God

Now, Adam didn't have a natural tendency to hate God, or to be hostile to God. The natural mind of man today is hostile against God: Romans 8

verse 7. The mind is hostile against, and always is. They don't believe it, but they are. They're hostile against God, whether they believe it or not. They'll say, "Oh, I am not hostile to God." Oh, yes they are! And God knows they are. A lot of people are alcoholics; but they deny it and say, "I am not." But they are, and they need to admit it before they're ever going to get over it. And a lot of people need to admit their hostility to God and get it out of their hearts and minds.

But Adam eventually would have sat on the throne that was occupied by Satan, and Satan would have been deposed; but he didn't do it. And so Christ had to come as the Second Adam, and do what the first Adam did not do. And Jesus Christ did have the Holy Spirit. He was born with it; and He kept the Holy Spirit; and He obeyed His Father. He said, "I have kept my Father's Commandments." And He said, "Of Myself I can do NOTHING." He was entirely DEPENDENT on His Father.

Now, if Adam had taken the Tree of Life, he would have been dependent on God for everything. He would have relied on God. If he'd got in trouble, he would rely on God to show him the way out, or deliver him—either show him what to do; or, if it wasn't anything he could do, God would have done it for him. But he said, "No, I will rely on myself." And humanity has been relying on humanity ever since! They don't rely on God. That's the trouble! If we're sick, we don't rely on God. JESUS WAS CUT TO PIECES AND BEATEN, as we saw night before last; but we don't rely on it. If we're sick, we rely on the doctors. Adam would have relied on God.

I've come to the place where I see that, of myself, I am absolutely helpless: I can't do anything. Jesus said it is the Father in Him that was doing the work. Anything I do, if it's any good, brethren, I'm not doing it: Christ in me is doing it. And some of the enemies that hate me and hate the Church had better understand that. And it is not me that they hate. It is Jesus Christ, and it is God the Father.

That's why I pray for them, and I hope they'll come to their senses and understand it. They could be devoting their talents to something better; and that would bring them more happiness, and joy too. And I'd like to help contribute to that happiness and joy. If they'd only turn the right way, that would make it possible.

Called Out Of Satan's World

Well, Adam did take of the wrong tree; and we have all been born that way. And so, at that time was the foundation of this world. At that time it was decreed that Jesus, the Second Adam, would come. He would come as the Lamb of God, and He would be slain for us. He would pay the ransom price to ransom us back from Satan, who'd kidnapped us. He would be the Second Adam. He would do what the first Adam failed to do. And, through Him, God would call us out of the world that was developed from the first Adam and by, actually, by Satan through Adam's children. And this world was developed, and we were born into this world; and God has called us OUT of this world.

Jesus said, "*I will build my Church.*" The word "church" comes from the Greek word "eklesia," and it means "called out ones." In other words, "I will CALL OUT some people from this world that's been developed here to start another world—to start God's world." This is Satan's world. And He said, "I will start God's world." And, brethren, we are the begotten children of God in the stage of gestation, being developed where we will become God when we're born. And we'll be in the world of God. We will be kings, and we will be rulers; and we will sit with Christ on His Throne, right here on this Earth. And we will be given power over the nations.

Key Issue Is Government

Now, I didn't understand any of that; and I was giving you a little history of how this all started. I was challenged; and, you know, I was wondering back. And I've written this in this book. I remember very distinctly. It was the summer of 1926. And I got to wondering about myself; and I asked, "Who am I?, and What am I?, and Why am I? How'd I come to be here? Is there any purpose in my living? And just what am I?"

I thought maybe I was an immortal soul (I'd been raised in one of the regular Protestant Churches), or if I had an immortal soul. I didn't know which. But I thought that when I died, if I was good, I'd go to heaven; if I was not, that I'd burn and burn forever in hell fire. But when I was challenged—before I learned about the holy days or anything, one of the... I was challenged on the point of GOD'S LAW and of GOD'S GOVERNMENT: THE WHOLE THING WAS GOVERNMENT! THE THING THAT SATAN TOOK AWAY WAS GOVERNMENT. THE THING THAT CHRIST IS COMING TO RESTORE IS GOVERNMENT. AND WHAT HE RAISED ME UP FOR WAS TO RESTORE GOVERNMENT IN HIS CHURCH. And the whole test, the challenge in the first place (after God had softened me by other things that'll be recorded in this book), was a point of government.

Revealed Truth: Hope Of Resurrection

But early in that study I ran across a scripture in Romans six and verse 23, the last two verses. Yes, the last two verses. Well, the last verse. It's the one verse in two parts.

Romans 6:23 *The wages of sin is death...*

Now, I knew that wages meant the pay you get for what you've performed, what you've done; and that said that what you get for sin is death. I thought that what you got for sin was eternal life in hell fire. If you sinned,

you'd burn and burn forever; but you'd never die. I didn't think you'd really die. And then "...the GIFT of God." Now this, this was a bigger surprise still:

Romans 6:23 ...the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

That's the last half of the same verse. And I said, "Well, I already HAVE that gift! I'm an immortal soul! I've got eternal life. I'll never die. I'll either go to heaven or hell, but I won't die!" Then I began to look into the Bible, and I saw this golden text. John 3:16 they call the golden text of the Bible.

John 3:16 God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish.

And I began to see that a soul can die. I saw twice where it says, "*The soul that sinneth, it shall die*". [Ezekiel 18:4, 20] I saw, back in Genesis, where Adam was a soul. God breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and man became a soul. [Genesis 2:7] And to that soul God said, "You take of the tree I forbid you to take, and you will die. [Genesis 2:17] "*You shall surely die.*" And he did die.

Well, now then, I saw it said that God loved us enough He gave Jesus so we wouldn't perish. And I thought then that die meant to PERISH, and that was terrible. That meant we'd be as though we'd never been. And then I began to see further in the Bible. And these things came gradually to me, before I could reveal them to you.

I Corinthians 15:22 As in Adam all die, so in Christ shall [the same] all be made alive [by a resurrection from the dead].

I began to see that there would be a resurrection from the dead. And then I began to see that the final penalty is a second death, and not the first death at all! And I began to see the hope of the resurrection. And it was a long

time before it dawned on me that God had closed off the Tree of Life in the days of Adam, and it's still closed off to the world. And it is opened ONLY TO THOSE THAT GOD HAS PREDESTINATED, AND GOD HAS CHOSEN, AND CALLED, and drawn to Him. If you have really come to Christ, it's because God selected you and predestinated you and has drawn you to Him. No man can come to Christ except the Father that sent Jesus draws him. [John 6:44]

Spirit And Principle Of The Law

It all began to come clear, and I began to see a little more about what sin is. It is transgression away from the Law of God. And God's Law is a perfect Law; and we keep the Law according to its SPIRIT—not the letter, but the spirit.

The Law is one word—**love**. Now, it's subdivided into two divisions. One is love toward God, and the other is love toward neighbor: the two great commandments. [Matthew 22:37-39] Then that, in turn, is subdivided into the Ten Commandments. [Exodus 20:3-17] The first four of them are love toward God; the last six are love toward neighbor. But then that expands in principle to include EVERY possible sin.

The Law covers EVERYTHING. You don't have to find... I've mentioned so many times, when I was converted, I wanted to know about smoking: Is that a sin? And the Bible doesn't say anything about it. I didn't have to find a direct command "Thou shalt not smoke." There's a principle involved in the SPIRIT OF THE LAW. **The Law is love toward God and toward neighbor.**

Did I want to smoke because of my love toward God? Did that help me love God more? No. I read in the Bible where God loved the sweet-smelling savour of our prayers, but I don't think He loves second-hand cigar or

cigarette smoke! And then neighbors: You know, once in a while you might find, out of a great big crowd, you might find one who might enjoy your cigarette smoke second hand. I don't know. But I know there are a lot of them that don't enjoy it. And I can't see how you are really ministering toward your neighbour and conferring love, showing your love toward your neighbor, by smoking!

Now, of course, you're to love your neighbour as yourself; and we love ourselves. Because our bodies are the temple of the Holy Spirit, part of loving ourselves is to take care of this body, because it's the temple of the Holy Spirit; and that's an obligation. I knew the purpose of lungs; and I knew that smoke would impede that purpose of elimination of toxins and poisons through the breath as the blood circulates and passes through the lungs and is oxidized by air. I could see then that smoking violated the SPIRIT and the PRINCIPLE of the Law of God.

Women can't see what's wrong with PAINTING THEIR FACES! Women won't admit it's vanity that makes them do it. They won't ADMIT IT'S BECAUSE THEY WANT TO BE LIKE THE WORLD, want to look like other people and will admit that! But "OH, NO! I DON'T WANT TO BE LIKE THE WORLD!" Oh, yes they do, or they wouldn't do it. I guess some women don't know their own minds. I don't think any woman's going to come to me, and just look me in the eye, and tell me she isn't doing it because of any vanity or because she doesn't want to just look the other women of the world. She's ashamed not to be like the other women of the world. That's why she puts it on her. Same principle exactly as why smoking is wrong: It violates the SPIRIT of the Law, and not very many can see that. You don't have to have a "Thus saith the Lord: you shall not do this." But there are plenty of scriptures about painting the face besides—when you understand them correctly, if you don't try to twist them around like some have done.

Judgment Now On The House Of God

Brethren, I won't compromise. If you want to compromise, go join one of these factions that have turned off from us that are LIBERAL. They'll be real liberal. They let you go if you want to go Satan's way instead of God's way, and PRETEND that you're in the Kingdom of God, PRETEND YOU'RE IN GOD'S CHURCH. If you want to KID YOURSELF, go do it until you die. But you're being JUDGED NOW. JUDGMENT IS ON THE HOUSE OF GOD. JUDGMENT IS ON US. JUDGMENT IS NOT ON THE PEOPLE IN CHINA AND THE PEOPLE IN INDIA AND THE PEOPLE IN RUSSIA. JUDGMENT IS NOT ON EVEN THE PROTESTANTS AND THE CATHOLICS YET. BUT JUDGMENT IS ON US; AND WE'RE BEING JUDGED, BRETHREN.

And I know that's been the thing that's come up here in the last four years in the Church, this thing. I don't think we've had much contention on the smoking issue, but we have on women painting their faces. It's a little thing, yes; but it's a GREAT BIG THING in principle. It's a BIG THING in principle. And there are MANY OF YOU WOMEN SITTING RIGHT HERE THAT ARE KEEPING PAINT OFF YOUR FACES JUST BECAUSE I SAID YOU HAVE TO, AND YOUR HEART ISN'T IN IT. AND YOU BETTER **GET YOUR HEARTS RIGHT WITH GOD!** YOU CALL ME "GOD'S APOSTLE." YOU'D BETTER LISTEN TO WHAT I SAY, and you'd better quit KIDDING YOURSELF, because time is short.

Rely On God

So we begin the seven days today of Unleavened Bread: **coming out of sin.** We still have to come out of more sin. There are many little things—oh, there're so many, I can't go into all the things. The many things you can say, just by hurting someone's feelings with something you say. The tongue is

something no man can tame. The many, many sins: the temptations that we have. Now, we all have to fight these things, and it is a struggle. But finally there won't be a struggle, brethren, if we win out!

And we can't do it on our own. We have to rely on God. He will give us the help. Jesus is there at the right hand of God as our High Priest, interceding for us. RELY ON GOD. Seek His righteousness. Hunger and thirst for God's righteousness. Rely on God. Go to Him in prayer about these things, and continually; and spend more time in prayer. I think we're getting toward the Laodicean condition, and we need to check up. Now we're just starting all over again, one more year. This is the time for "new year" [Exodus 12:2] resolutions, only you'd better make them stick this time!

Well, I can't make an outline of a sermon. I can just come out here and talk. But I think I've talked to you long enough for today. We're on the way out of sin. Let's look forward to the glory that shall be revealed in us, brethren. It's a struggle. It's a struggle for me, the same as it is for you. We all have it. We're going to be accused falsely, by others. We all have Satan to contend with. But we have Jesus Christ as our High Priest. We have God as our Father. And we can rely on both Christ and God the Father. Be sure that you do.

Coming Out of Sin

Sermon (April 12, 1985) – Last Day of Unleavened Bread
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Coming Out of Sin.....	1861	The Sabbath Question	1873
Just One Apostle	1862	Making Bible Truths Plain	1877
More Ways to Sin	1863	The Start Of Human Sin	1880
Angels That Serve	1864	The Firstfruits	1883
Golda Meir	1865	Has Elijah Come?	1885
Avoiding Sin's Penalty	1867	Special Mission	1888
Book: Mystery of the Ages	1869		

I wonder if we always realize just how beautiful this music is that my brother had composed for this Church. I think perhaps a lot of the things in the early part of the Church many of you don't realize and perhaps have not heard or been informed on. But when we first began the College and we were raising up a new church here in Pasadena, a local church; and we already had a couple of churches up in Oregon. They were very small and no real minister to take care of them at all. And my brother had composed a piece that I heard him play, and it was very beautiful. And I'd had the idea, ever since I had been converted, that in the congregation we should be singing the words that God Himself has given us.

You know, the hymns that we had been singing were just regular hymnals that other churches use; and I noticed that they all seemed to sing the praises of the people. If you get some of those books and read the words that go with many of those hymns, composed by people having no knowledge of the Bible actually, they sing the praises of the people doing the singing; whereas the Psalms that God wrote (and "psalms" really means "songs") sing the praises of God and are meant for the worship of God.

And so I asked my brother if he would devote his time to composing hymns for the Church, and so he devoted the rest of his life for it. Now I think there are about as many hymns that he composed that have not as yet been printed, and that you have never heard, as there are already in the book. And, in due time, they will come along; and we will be learning news ones. However, we have a great many even as it is. And hearing that number just played with two violins and a piano made me realized—when you hear just for the music, and played as special music—it is beautiful music. So, I will say that much in my brother's memory. He died at the age of eighty; and he had devoted the rest of his life, from back about 1947, to composing the music that we all sing.

Well, brethren, this afternoon is the last service in the first annual festival of the year. We have festivals three times a year—in the spring, in the summer, and in the fall. We have the Passover and the Days of Unleavened Bread in the spring, and this is the second holy day at this time. I want to tell you a little later how we come to be observing these days. But first I want to just say: Do we really understand **why** we keep them? And do we understand this particular festival of the Feast of Unleavened Bread thoroughly?

Just One Apostle

You know, we have an entirely different situation today than they did in the days of Jesus and the first original, first century, apostles. I think that we have heard compared a number of times, and some of the things that have been put on the motion picture screen for us, of the comparison of what those apostles had to confront and how it is for the apostle today. And strangely, here's a much bigger world today and many more people in the Church than there were the first year or two in the Church back there where they had twelve apostles. Of course, the number of apostles grew even then; but there were Twelve at the beginning. Yet they had to go afoot, or on horse or mule

back, or row a boat by hand; or sometimes they could use a sailboat at the whim of the winds.

But today we have so many more people, and **just one apostle today** can carry the message out to millions more people than those Twelve could do in those days. Today we have automobiles; we have the airplane; and we have the printing press. Today we are probably reaching somewhere around twenty to twenty-five MILLION people through the printing press. And we are reaching, undoubtedly, much more than a million every week by television.

How many people do you think, who just happen to tune in and happen to listen to a program on television? And we're never on the best network stations, or at the best time. How many out of a thousand, or out of two or three thousand, who listen do you think are going to go to the trouble of going to the telephone and calling in to request literature? One or two out of a thousand perhaps, or out of two thousand or three. And yet here we're getting up ten, twelve, fourteen, seventeen thousand telephone calls from one program.

And that is not even half of the number of people that are writing in to subscribe for the Plain Truth or for other literature. There are still more that come in from newsstands and from other means. And we are reaching people by the millions.

More Ways to Sin

But there's one other difference between the way conditions were at that time and the way they are today. This is the festival teaching us to **come out of sin**. By putting leaven out of our houses, it is. The idea is to teach us to put sin out of our lives. Well, there are more sins that have been getting into lives today than there were in the days of the early apostles! I wonder if you

realize that? Now, they had all of the natural sins that we still have today. But there are more mechanisms today that increase the amount of sins—more opportunities for sin—with the motion picture, and the automobile, and all of the things that we have today, and the printing press.

Now Jesus said “*as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be*” in the days just before His Second Coming, and His return to put an end to all of this kind of sin in this world, and to bring in God’s world—the World Tomorrow, the Kingdom of God. And certainly, what He said was true. Sins have multiplied, and increased; and there’s so many more ways to sin.

Now today, instead of coming out of sin, in the world it seems that the public media (not only newspapers and magazines but radio, television, every means of reaching the people) are trying to show people how to sin and get a way with it. In other words, how to avoid the penalty of sin! Not how to avoid the penalty by QUITTING sinning, by coming out of sin; but go ahead and sin, and then avoid the penalty.

One of the greatest sins today (and it has been ever since, I think, the days of Adam and Eve) and one of the things that Satan is using against the world, perhaps even more than any other area of sin, is sex. I wonder if you ever stop to think that Satan has no sex. He cannot reproduce himself. We have been given such a wonderful God-given opportunity to reproduce ourselves, to have a family relationship—a loving, pleasant, joyful family relationship. Satan and the angels cannot have that.

Angels That Serve

Now, I think the angels rejoice; and their mission is to aid and service us who are the heirs of God’s salvation into His Kingdom. And it is like the [holy] angels are a good deal like the nanny that...

For example, I think there are two young princes now in England; and there was a new one born not long ago. But the parents don't really take much care of them. They have a nanny take care of the little kids, or they have servants. Wealthy people have servants to look after their children. But when the child grows up, if he is the heir of a very wealthy father, then he will of course be in a much higher position than the servant. But while he's yet a child, the servant is over him.

And so, the angels are now higher than we are; and they are here to serve us. They are not only [all] demons. The demons are ruling this world, because Satan is sitting on the throne of the world and not an [ordinary] angel. Satan is a former archangel, but he's sitting on the throne. But the holy angels are there to serve us.

I could tell you of a number of places; and, as a matter of fact, I remember that I wrote that and added it in the book ["Mystery of the Ages"] that I've been telling you about. That is now complete. And I think (unless we discover something else later that we want to update, or alter, or make an addition to, or something) it's now complete and ready to send to the printers for final printing. And, by the way, we are going to print the book in the Plain Truth serially; and the first issue will come out in about another month or so. I have already turned the copy over to the editors of the Plain Truth. Of course, we have the whole book ready by now. But we hope to have the whole book ready before the Feast of Tabernacles. So it's ready to go to press in just as fast as they can get it printed from now on.

Golda Meir

But, well, I was going to mention something a minute ago (but I think it's slipped me now) that I added into the book. Well anyway, let me get along. I'm speaking without notes now, and I just have to say what comes to

my mind. That reminds me, the last two nights have been a movie on channel 13 about Golda Meir. I wonder if some of you saw that? It was two hours each evening. It was a full four-hour movie. Probably about three hours or a little more originally, but the commercials take up so much time on television; so it took two nights for it.

It concluded with the time when Anwar Sadat made the famous visit to Jerusalem to declare peace instead of war. And it showed them having some kind of a banquet; and President Sadat had made his speech, and others. Finally, Mrs. Meir was going to have to make a speech. And someone sitting next to her said, "Have you thought about what you're going to say? Do, do, do you have something in mind to say? What are you going to say?" She turned and said. "Did you ever know me when I didn't have anything to say?" [Laughter.] I couldn't help think about myself! [Laughter again.] Maybe I didn't have anything to say when I came out here, but I'll keep saying it nevertheless! [More laughter]

But I knew Golda Meir, and I knew Anwar Sadat. Anwar Sadat was a very courageous man to have made that visit. And I attributed, so far as you can attribute to carnal people that do not go by God's Holy Spirit, I've attributed greatness to her. She was a very unusual woman; and, so far as the natural mind goes, she said some of the very things to me that were said on this movie towards the end.

She said to me that she wished that the leaders of the Arab nations could all come and sit across the table from her. She said we could have peace. And she said our scientist and our technicians, and our experts could teach them so many things to help them; and they could produce so much more out of their lands; and they could have so much more of the good things of the world. They could be happier, and we could all be happier. Now, I visited many heads of state, but I have never heard any one else say that about enemies. That was one of the things that I noticed.

Avoiding Sin's Penalty

Well, there's one thing: There are more sins, and more opportunities to sin, today. And the whole effort is to make sin possible and to then avoid the penalty, to try to cheat God out of the penalty. Now the wages of sin, finally, is **death**; and all the scientists and technicians in the world are never going to cheat God out of that! However, most of them are asleep at the switch; and they don't know what they are doing. Jesus prayed on the cross, "*Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.*" [Luke 23:34] And really, I think that far more than 99% of the people in the world just know not what they are doing when they're sinning.

There's so little of the right kind of education in this world, and their minds have not been open to the truth of God. Satan has blinded them, and they are blind. But one of the things he's tempting people on, almost more than any other one thing today, is sex. Now, they try to make it possible to enjoy illicit sex in a way that God never intended. And in so doing, they enjoy the beauty of sex (as God intended in marriage, and then the production of children, lovely little children to come along and the beautiful family relationship of real genuine love) for a temporary sensation.

So today, they're beginning to find that what they sow they reap. Now we have the new diseases. Now AIDS, coming from homosexuality, so they try to justify homosexuality. Instead of trying to do away with it, and teach it for what it is; they say, "Well, it's just his sexual preference." Well, indeed it is! And sin seems to be the preference of most people—instead of righteousness. Do you ever think about what is your preference, brethren? Is it sin? Or is it righteousness?

Because, again, I've mentioned before... (Let's see, was it in the sermonette this morning or was it the sermon this morning? I mean, was it the sermonette this afternoon or was it the sermon this morning?) Anyway,

someone mentioned how I had said that **sin is the absence of righteousness**. That's precisely what it is. And righteousness brings so much peace, and happiness, and joy! It is the absence of that which brings sorrow, and suffering, and pain, and anguish, discouragement, frustration, remorse; and those consequences are not happy. They're not pleasant. And that's what the world is suffering.

I think they say that... I heard a statement the other day. I don't remember the exact figure, but nobody who had AIDS a certain number of months ago (a couple of years or something like that, or three) is still alive today. They know of no cure. And yet they don't say, "Let's give up homosexuality, and begin to obey God's laws." They say, "No, let's break God's laws; and let's try to find a way round it." And so, the scientists now are trying desperately to find a cure for AIDS. "Let people go ahead and break God's law, let them bring on this disease; and then let us find some way to cheat God by a medicine that will cure it."

And let me tell you THERE IS NOT A CURE IN A THOUSAND CAR LOADS, OR A MILLION FREIGHT CAR LOADS, OF MEDICINES AND DRUGS! There just isn't. There may be temporary relief. But you know even the government won't let you put 'cure' in advertising any kind of medicine. You can say 'relief.' You can't say 'cure.'

Then much in the news in the last couple of days has been another one that I frankly had not heard of. Although I have written a textbook on the subject of sex, this is something I think that has come along since; and I had not heard of it—the I.U.D. I had a hard time remembering that, because they only use initials today. They don't want to speak the whole words out. And I have to think it's 'I' and 'U' and then 'D.' And a lot of women have been experimenting with that as a contraceptive. And they're finding that once she uses it, now in so many cases, it makes her barren. And some wives, in order to postpone another pregnancy for a year or two, have used this; and then

they find they can never have another child when they want one.

YOU CAN'T CHEAT GOD'S LAWS AND GET AWAY WITH IT, BRETHREN. YOU CANNOT DO IT! I hope we have the sense to know that. The world does not have that kind of sense. They want to break God's laws; and then use some means of a drug or a medicine, or have science invent something, that will let them sin and then avoid the penalty.

They throw sex at you in every way today on television. I think it was this morning there was a sermon, yes, about turning on x-rated movies on television if you have the, oh, one of these additions to your television set that you can get now so that you can have the rottenest kind of sex coming right into your living room. And a lot of people like to feast their eyes on something of that sort. Well, we were advised in the morning sermon against that sort of thing.

Book: Mystery of the Ages

Now I thought it might be interesting this afternoon if you would know a little more about **why** you are here, and **how** you came to know about these holy days. Here we are on a Friday. What are we doing here on a Friday, anyway? The world will probably think we're crazy. I've explained some of this before, but I think I haven't explained what I'd like to say now in quite the same detail. I thought you might be interested in hearing about it. But I think it's pretty well known that I was challenged in the autumn of 1926, both on the subject of evolution and of the Sabbath Day. My wife began to keep the Sabbath. To me, that was religious fanaticism. I had lost interest in church and religion since I'd been 18 years of age. I was interested in business.

When I was challenged, I began to study evolution first. Now it was quite convincing, many of the arguments; but there were a few little missing links that changed the whole complexion when I discovered them.

Ultimately, **I proved evolution is a false theory.** I can absolutely, completely, disprove evolution; and I have done it. And I have caused ‘dyed in the wool’ evolutionists to admit that I’ve proved it.

But they say, oh, but they have to go on accepting it and believing it anyway; because they’ve just been wedded to it for so long, they wouldn’t know how to live without believing in evolution. Well that’s the atheist explanation of the presence of a creation without the supreme mind of a Creator to have designed and thought out everything and brought it into being by a creation through a Creator.

So I began to wonder. I said, “I had always supposed there is a God. I’ve been taught that, ever since I was able to know anything, as I was taken to church from the time I was born. Now, maybe I’d been misled? Maybe they were right, maybe there is no God?” I said, “I’ve got to have PROOF!” Why do you believe there’s a God? So many of you, brethren, have not really seen the proof. You’ve heard it, and heard it; and taken it for granted. There are a lot of people in the world that say, “Oh, I believe in God all right.” Now they don’t **believe God**. He’s not a part of their lives. But they’ll say, “Well, I believe there is a God. I believe God exists.” That’s what they mean. Well, they’ve never proved it. They just heard it and taken it for granted.

I couldn’t take it for granted any longer. I had to KNOW! And I was studying day and night, and often up to one or two-o-clock in the morning; till my wife would call out and say, “Are you ever coming to bed? You need to get some sleep.” And I would be up early enough in the morning to get down to the library in Portland, Oregon by nine-o-clock, when they opened, and begin another day’s study. **I proved the existence of God.**

And then I wanted to go further. Could I believe the Bible? I was going to go into the Koran and into the religious writings of other religions. But I said I would take the Bible first, because it’s the book out of which the

Christian religion comes; and that's the religion of this country.

Well, at first I thought the religion of Christianity came out of the Bible; but, in my study, I found that it doesn't. They try to read it **into** the Bible; but they are teaching precisely the opposite—the very antithesis—of what the Bible says on most important things. They don't know what the gospel is. They don't know what salvation is. They don't know how you get it. They don't know what man is, or why he is. They don't know who and what God is.

No religion on Earth knows. That's why I decided to write this book, "The Mystery of the Ages." WHO AND WHAT IS GOD? Can you **prove** He exists? Why is it that people say, "Well, God isn't real to me? God just doesn't seem real." I've heard people say that. Well, we try to make it real—as real as I can in writing—in the book.

There are many nations over in the east (in the Far East) that believe in evil spirits, and various kinds of spirit gods, and spirit worship; and people for thousands of years have believed things like that. Well, what about it? Are there such? Are there spirits? Are there angels? Why? What are they? Why are they? Did God create a devil? That's a mystery. This book had to explain all that.

Then man... You see, I was thinking in the summer of 1926 before this challenge came. I remember it so absolutely vividly, just as if it was only yesterday. I was trying to reason out. I supposed I was an immortal soul at that time. And I was trying to reason out: "If I'm an immortal soul, what will happen to me when I die? And just who and what am I?" And you know the more I thought, and tried to philosophize my way around it, and tried to come to an answer; but it was a mystery. I couldn't understand it. But in the study that began that autumn of 1926, I finally found out what a man is, a human being. The mystery of man—that's chapter three in the book.

And then this civilization that has come from man, how did it develop?

A civilization that now in the twentieth century has produced awesome results! Going to the moon and back, the automobile, all the farm implements—most all have been invented either in the last part of the last nineteenth century or in this century, many in this century. Phenomenal progress, and yet people can't solve their own problems. Troubles are escalating. Problems seem unsolvable by human beings. Great minds that can produce great technological advances still cannot solve their problems in their own homes or with their next-door neighbor. We can't solve political problems; we can't solve economic and industrial problems, capital and labor, problems between nations, wars, everything wrong. How did this civilization develop? That's a mystery.

Ancient Israel, why should there be a chosen people? Did God discriminate?

Then, why the Church? Why is there a Church? What is the Church? Why is it? Is there any reason for it? Does it have a purpose, and what is it? The world doesn't know. The ministers of the churches don't know. And the whole message that God sent by Jesus Christ—His gospel—was the Kingdom of God; and they don't know that. The ministers don't preach it today. They preach a gospel about the person, about the messenger; but the message that He brought they say nothing about. That finally comes to be chapter seven.

And when we get through that, that's only still the beginning. But, in that study, I had proved the existence of God. Then I had absolutely proved to my own satisfaction—absolutely proved the authority of the Bible—that it is definitely the Word of God, the Creator God; that it is 100% true in its original writings.

Of course, we have translations; and a few errors might have crept in here and there. But there are so many translations, and there have been so many copied, that we can get to the exact truth if we just have a little bit of

patience and are willing to study a little bit. We don't need to be in doubt about any point.

The Sabbath Question

Now in that study, finally of course, I had proved that God exists. I had disposed of evolution, but I hadn't yet disposed of this Sabbath question. And I was reading everything that the Methodists and other people had for Sunday and against the Sabbath. Of course, I was reading what Seventh Adventists had and what the Sardis Era of the Church of God had about the Sabbath; but I wasn't believing what they said, necessarily. I was only using that as a guide to what was in the Bible, and to see whether they had that correct; but the main point was what does the Bible say? And I had finally come to the place where I was just about to accept the Sabbath. And that meant 'eating crow' to me because, in a dispute as intense as this was, a man doesn't like to admit that his wife was right and he was wrong. But I was just about to accept it, and then I came across a booklet written by a dissenter from the Seventh Day Adventist church.

Now they have had dissenters from their church, just the same as we have. And here was a dissenter who had written something to try to prove that the Adventists were wrong about the Sabbath. And he had in this book, had gone through all of the passages in the Bible where **the Sabbath, the monthly new moons, and the annual holy days** were mentioned. And they are mentioned many times—**all three of those mentioned together**.

Then he came to Colossians 2:14 and 16. And he said, "Don't you see? There they are, and they are from the Old Testament; and that does away with the Sabbath!" And I told my wife, I said, "Well, I was just about to accept the Sabbath; but," I said, "this knocks it all on the head. This is a former Seventh Day Adventist. And this shows that those days are done away. And it includes

the weekly Sabbath as well. It says these holy days and new moons are all done away, and that means the Sabbath is done away with it.”

And my wife was worried sick. When I told her that, she didn’t sleep that night. She prayed all night long. And in the morning, by the time I awakened in the morning, she told me to go back to the library. And she said, “I want ask you one thing. I want you to do this, before you make a final decision. I want you to go through Colossians 2:16, and look up every single word in the original Greek language and get the meaning; and you will see.” She said, “God has shown me though the night, and I know that there is a word there that has been mistranslated; and when you get that straightened out, it does not do away with the day.”

“Well,” I said, “I can’t believe that; but I’ll certainly go down and look up these words in the original Greek language.” So, I got a Greek text; and I took the words, one by one. And I looked up each Greek word in the lexicon, which gives the definition in the English language of each Greek word. And I finally came to a word ’**respect**.’ Now I want to take time to show you what it was, so I have asked Aaron Dean to come out and read the text. I can’t bring a Bible and read it to you. Aaron?

[Aaron Dean] “Yes, Sir.”

You’re there. Will you read Colossians 2:14 first?

Colossians 2:14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross.

A handwriting of ordinances, now **nailing it to the cross**. The idea was that all this is nailed to the cross; and that meant that the Sabbath was nailed to the cross, and the holy days. Now it says in that verse, “*handwriting of ordinances*.” Well, I thought it meant this—what Moses had, and that included

the Sabbath and everything.

Now verse 16, if you will read it.

Colossians 2:16 *Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the Sabbath days.*

Now, I get an echo over here. I didn't hear every word of it, but I know it pretty well by heart. It talks about **in respect of** a holy new... Let's see. What is it—the Sabbath, holy day, and new moon?

[Aaron Dean] “Holy day, new moon, and then Sabbath.”

The holy day, new moon, and the Sabbath. Now, I'd already read this. And you see, that is what got me because verse 14 talked about nailing to the cross; and in verse 16 there was the holy day, the new moon, and the Sabbath day. And I said, “That does away with the Sabbath.” I said, “We know...” I said, “even the Adventist's admit that the annual holy days are done away with. They don't observe these annual Sabbaths.”

So I went to the library, and I came to the word 'respect'. I looked up every word in Colossians 2:16. And I saw that the word for 'respect'—the original Greek word is *m-e-r-e-i*: and it means part, parcel, portion, or observance of. And I looked further into commentaries, and I'd looked up in different lexicons; and one lexicon said that one definition of *m-e-r-e-i* is sacrificial meat observance. **Sacrificial meat observance.**

I went back and looked it over; and I said, “**Well, that's what's done away! That's what is nailed to the cross.**” In every one of the texts—wherever the annual holy days, the monthly new moons, the weekly Sabbaths are mentioned together—every place in the Bible there were animal sacrifices held on those days. There was an animal sacrifice every Sabbath and every new moon. And every time that you could possibly mention, there were animal sacrifices. And separate from the things that happened daily

otherwise. Then I began to see that what was done away was the observances.

I began to see (from a further study of Colossians and of Romans, not Colossians, but rather of Romans and Galatians) that “the **works** of the law” meant “the **rituals** of the law.” And it was not talking about the Ten Commandments (a spiritual law), but a PHYSICAL law. And I found out that God had added [physical ritual observances], besides statutes and judgments.

Now, statutes and judgments were the national law of the land. We have a national law of the land in the United States that’s the Constitution of the United States. We have many national laws that are made by Congress in Washington. We have state laws made by the state legislature up in Sacramento. Then we have ordinances made by the city council, and we have even county laws, and so on.

The laws that regulated one person’s relationship to another person within the nation were the statutes and judgments. But God added another code of law to ancient Israel, and that was the...often they are called **rituals**. In other words, they were physical things to do morning, noon and night—every day. And they included **special animal sacrifices every Sabbath, every new moon, and every annual holy day** (or annual Sabbath. “High day Sabbath” the Jews will call it still today, a high day.)

And so I saw that what was nailed to the cross was the physical ordinances. They had been a SUBSTITUTE for the Holy Spirit. God had CLOSED UP the Tree of Life in the days of Adam and Eve. And the Tree of Life had been closed up UNTIL Christ would come to sit on the throne and do away with Satan; and He hasn’t done that yet. The Tree of Life is closed up from the world, and still is today! And today there are some CALLED OUT OF THE WORLD for some special purpose, and that’s the Church. But Jesus said, “*No man can come to Me (in the Church), except the Father which sent Me draw him.*” In other words, those coming into the Church are

the called out ones; and God the Father calls them out, draws them to Him. And the world does not understand that.

Making Bible Truths Plain

The new book I'm writing will make every bit of this so plain, so clear. Now it's going to take you a long time to read it. It'll be over 400 pages. You are not going to read this book at one sitting. You are not going to read it in any one day. And by all means, when you get a copy of this book, I want you (after you have read it) to go back and read it again—because there are many things that you are going to forget that you read in chapters one, two, and three by the time you get the chapters six and seven. And with that in your mind, you go back and read it all over; and it'll all make sense. And, if you don't do that, you're likely to still be mixed up.

There's nothing essentially 'new' in this new book. Let me explain that. But the Bible is like a jigsaw puzzle. Like it's cut up into a few thousand pieces, each one in a different form and shape—little curlicues, and some oblongs, triangles, and squares, rectangles. But in different forms and shapes, and there's only one way that one piece will go with certain other pieces. They'll go together no other way. And when you get them together, it forms a beautiful picture, a jigsaw puzzle.

That's the way the Bible is. It's in different parts here and there, any one subject. You study the Sabbath, and you find some of it the second chapter of Genesis; and you find some of it clear back in Revelation, clear to end of Revelation. You'll find it all the way through—a little here, a little there. So **the Bible** itself tells you, in the book of Isaiah, that God has made it **a coded Book**; and it is here a little, there a little.

Well, the book I am writing is trying to take all those pieces and put them together in time sequence; and still it's only a synopsis. In other words,

I'm covering the root, the trunk of the tree, and the major branches. But the little minor branches and the twigs, I'm not trying to fill in. It is a sort of... Oh, what is the word I want to think of? Well it's a summary, anyway. But it explains it so you can begin to understand the Bible. And it is the Bible made plain. That's what it will be.

Aaron Dean and I have been working very hard on this. And since I can't see to read anything any more, he has to sit there and read to me. I start to type on the typewriter; and every time I stop, he has to come and read what I wrote and set the typewriter for the next word. And I hit the wrong key quite often; but he is able to figure out where I hit the wrong key and correct it. That is the way we get things done.

You know, if you read the booklet on the Seven Laws of Success, you'll find that one of the laws is having the... Oh, now, what's the word I want? You not only have to have education and drive, but you have to have the... Someone will have to tell me the word, I guess. It won't come to me. The ingenuity to think your way through it, anyway. And then you have to stick with it and never give up. Well, I've tried to practice that; and the job is still getting done. There is always a way.

I find, now, we're serving handicapped people over in Jordan. And I can really suffer to an extent with them and appreciate them, because I find I have quite a handicap now. And I find that you can go ahead and get things done in spite of a handicap. That's a thing a lot of people would learn, and I suppose some people have not learned it.

Man Created Incomplete

Now, how did this all start? How did sin start? It started in the Garden of Eden. God had one man created. Now that man, as far as he went, was perfect. God saw whatever He had created, and it was not just good. It was very good, very good. But He hadn't finished it yet. Now I've said so many

times, there is so much **duality** in the Bible; and in this book you will find the duality is mentioned dozens of times all the way through. There's so much duality—the first and the second. The first is usually physical. The second is spiritual. The Old and the New Covenant. The first Adam and the second Adam.

Adam was made in sort of a dual process. First God made the man. God's purpose was to reproduce Himself. But He started out with a physical man, made from the dust of the ground. The man, as far as he went, was made very good. You could call it perfect. Physically, he was absolutely perfect. There was nothing wrong with him. As long as he observed nature's laws, he wouldn't be sick. But he was **not complete yet**. His creation had not been quite completed. God wanted him to reproduce, and he couldn't do it; so God had to complete him by putting him into a deep sleep. (That's exactly what they do when they operate on you in the hospital. We call that anesthesia.) And then God operated on him, and God took out one of his ribs.

And, you know, there's a little point there that may interest some of you. A lot of people say, "Well, if God did that, how come we all don't come short of one rib?" Well, you know, acquired characteristics are not carried on by heredity. A man can have a leg amputated, a finger amputated or a toe; but that doesn't mean when he has children that they will have it amputated, or gone, and be born without one. So Adam's children had the full number of ribs when they were born.

But He made a woman out of one of Adam's ribs. The woman wasn't made from the dust of the ground. She was made from the man. Now, right now one of the things—one of the evils—that are coming along... God made the man to rule over the woman, but it was the kind of ruling in love. God is a ruler, but God is love. His mercy is as great towards us as the heavens are high above the Earth. As far as the east is from the west, so far has He removed our transgressions from us, if we repent and because He paid the

penalty in our stead through Christ.

That is the way a man should rule over his wife. It is a loving supervision. Loving her as himself. Sometimes a man loves his wife more than himself; and does things for her that he shouldn't, that are not good for her. A lot of men love to please their wives, and still they neglect the right kind of leadership over them. This rule is merely leadership. **Loving leadership**— that's what it is.

And so man was finally physically complete, but not mentally. He still just had one spirit, with a brain; and that gave him human mind—with perhaps several million times greater output than an animal brain, and yet the brain is the same. And the animal brain is just as good. The difference is that there is **a spirit in man**, but man is not a spiritual being.

On the television this morning, I heard a man say that. I was watching my program this morning on television, and there was another program following mine. I won't mention the man's name. He will mention mine. He says I don't have any credibility. I don't think he has any either [Laughter], but I don't have to mention his name.

Anyhow, he was saying that God formed man of the dust of the ground; and he became a spiritual being. That is not so! The Bible doesn't say that. A spiritual being is spirit, is become spirit, and can't die. And God said to this soul, "*You shall surely die*" if you take of the forbidden tree. And "*the soul that sinneth, it shall die.*" And so the soul is not spiritual.

The Start Of Human Sin

Anyway, then God had created the woman. And how did sin start? Well, Satan slipped in. Now as to whether Eve had stolen away from Adam and Satan got to her alone, or whether Satan got to her while she was right there

in Adam's presence, frankly, the Bible doesn't state. It does say that when Eve was tempted and deceived that *"she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat."* [Genesis 3:6]

Now, at that time, the husband was there with her. Well, was he with her at the time Satan tempted her? The Bible just doesn't say one way or the other. I'd always assumed she'd stolen away from him, and he should have been looking after her. Now, perhaps so. And, if so, she came back to take it; and her husband was with her when she took the fruit, but might not have been with her when the Devil tempted her. I don't know. I only know what God says. When I tell you these things, I'm only telling you what God reveals; and you can check up on it. It's all in the Bible, and you can see it the same as I can.

I'm not giving you things that I made up in my mind. I didn't originate the truths that I teach. But I learned them the same way the apostle Paul did, directly from Jesus Christ. But, you see, Jesus Christ in person was on Earth and taught Paul. And, but, Jesus... The Bible is Jesus Christ in writing. It's the same Word exactly. Jesus Christ in person was the Word of God, and the Bible in print is the Word of God; and they're both the same. I just learned it from the printed Word; and he learned it from the verbal Word and from Jesus in person, who spoke to him. But the Word was the same, precisely the same.

Now, they disobeyed God. They sinned. And when they did, God closed the Tree of Life. And it was closed UNTIL the second Adam would come, and remove Satan from the throne, and sit on that throne. As long as Adam had obeyed Satan, Adam and his family were to be Satan's kidnapped children. And this world is being held hostage.

Qualify to Rule

And Jesus came to pay the ransom price for the kidnapping, when He

paid for our sins. And so all through time, up till now, the Tree of Life has remained CLOSED! That's why the world can't understand. And again in Ephesians 4, the first few verses up to verse 4, you will read how Satan has deceived the world and blinded them. And blinded them, so they can't see spiritually. They can't see the truth.

Now, when Jesus came, He was **the second Adam**. But He did not come to sit on that throne. Jesus came... (Now I want you to get this, because I haven't put it quite this way before.) Jesus came first **to QUALIFY** to sit on that throne, where the first Adam failed. The first Adam could have qualified to sit on that throne, and replace Satan; but he failed. Jesus came, and He had to meet Satan head on; and He conquered Satan. Satan tried to conquer Him. That was the most titanic battle ever fought! No great war involving millions of people and shedding of much human blood has ever been as titanic a battle as the one that Jesus fought when He had fasted forty days and forty nights and was tempted of the Devil in the three very great temptations, both physical and spiritual. You read of it in the fourth chapter of Matthew, the first verses.

Jesus had to come... He couldn't just come and sit on the throne. He had to come and QUALIFY. Now He didn't have to be taught how to do it. He already knew that. But He came to call others out of this world, to join Him in sitting on that throne when He was going to sit in the throne.

HE DIDN'T COME TO SAVE THE WORLD! He made no effort to save the world. Not once can you find Him begging people to give their hearts to Him. Not once did He promise them the Holy Spirit if they would only accept Him and receive Him. Not once! Not once did He go out, or did He send anyone out, on a soul saving crusade.

On the contrary: He was walking up through Samaria, and He came to Jacob's well; and there was a woman, a Gentile woman. And He

mentioned... He asked her to give Him some water, draw a little water out of the well. He was thirsty. And He said she wondered who He was. She said, “How come You, a Jew, would ask me, a...?” Oh, they were Samaritans; and the Jews would call them ‘dogs,’ and would have nothing to do with them. And it was surprising that He would even talk to her, because Jews would not. And she asked Him, “How come?”

And He answered her, “If you knew who has asked you for that cup of water, you would ask Him to give you living waters; and He could give you **living waters**, and you would never thirst.” Well, right away, she did ask Him. She said, ‘Well, give me of this living water.’ By “living water,” He spoke of **the Holy Spirit**. Oh, what a wonderful chance for Him to say, “Daughter, if you confess Me now, you can have the Holy Spirit. You’ll go to heaven when you die!” [Laughter.] He didn’t say anything of the kind!

You know what He said to her? He told her about her sins. He said, “Go call your husband.” Well, she looked a little strange at that. “Well, er, er,” she said. “I have no husband.” “Well,” Jesus said in effect, “for once you’ve told the truth (as if she’d never been accustomed to telling the truth). You’ve had five husbands, and the one you’re living with now is not your husband.” Well, she wondered, “How did He know all that about me? He never saw me before.”

The Firstfruits

No, He wasn’t on a soul saving crusade. HE SAID, “NO ONE CAN COME TO ME **EXCEPT THE FATHER WHICH HAS SENT ME DRAW HIM!**” Now, WHY? Why is the Church the firstfruits? Brethren, today we’re ending the first festival—the spring festival. And we begin to look now towards fifty days from last Sunday, and we come to the time of the day of Pentecost—or, the Feast of Firstfruits—picturing the Church as **the firstfruits**

of God's salvation.

Why are we the firstfruits? Is God discriminating against the rest of the world, when He calls us out and says others can't come to Him? We have been predestinated to come to Christ. You have been **PREDESTINATED**, if you have God's Holy Spirit. Otherwise you wouldn't have God's Holy Spirit.

But now, why are we the firstfruits? Why is God not calling the rest of the world? Why are we being called to become **teachers** in the World Tomorrow? We're going to be called "*kings and priests.*" [Revelation 5:10] As kings, we will rule. Jesus said to **us in the Church** (not to anyone outside of the Church), "If you overcome, you will be given power over the nations to rule them with a rod of iron." [Revelation 2:26-27]

Revelation 3:21 [paraphrased] *He that overcometh, to him will I grant to sit with me in my throne [when He sits on Satan's throne], even as Jesus did overcome and is now set down with His Father on His Father's throne [in God's heaven].*

We're called for a **SPECIAL** reason. Now, why are we called now? **WHY?** Is God discriminating against the rest of the world? Or is He discriminating against us? We have to fight Satan. And when they're [called], when God finally saves them, they won't have Satan to fight—because He's not going to call and save them until Satan is put away.

All right, let me tell you something you never thought of before. Now open your ears please and listen, because here is a truth I think you haven't thought of. Jesus had to come and **QUALIFY by OVERCOMING** Satan before He could sit on that throne. We are going to sit with Him on that throne. So, we have to be called at a time when **WE** qualify by also having to overcome Satan. "He that overcometh." **What do you overcome?** Satan, and the world (Satan's world), and your own self (that Satan's already inoculated his spirit and attitude into you).

THAT'S WHY WE'RE THE FIRSTFRUITS. WE HAVE TO QUALIFY DURING SATAN'S REIGN! The rest of the world will be called when Satan is not reigning any longer. Now you never heard that before, brethren. God has called me as one to whom He can reveal His truth, and through whom He's revealed the truths that you have. He revealed the truth to me.

I started to tell you at the beginning of the service this afternoon—how God called me back at the fall of 1926, and how I came to this about the Sabbath and Colossians 2:16. When I saw that the days weren't being done away with, but that the sacrificial meat offerings on the days were done away with (and only the physical things, but not the spiritual things); then I said, "Then the days are not nailed to the cross. The days are not done away with." And I said to my wife, "That means you're not keeping enough of the Sabbath. You're only keeping **the weekly Sabbaths**, and we've got to keep **the annual Sabbaths** as well." And she was overjoyed! She could see it right away [Laughter]; because now I could see the Sabbath, and I could see that it meant the annual Sabbaths as well.

Has Elijah Come?

Brethren, so far as I know, no one else on earth except those or those who got it from us (and that's very few) are observing God's annual Sabbaths. It just has not been done through these ages. God said someone was to come and **restore the truths that had been lost**; and they were lost mostly during the very first century of the Church, over nineteen hundred years ago.

You know, there's a prophecy about John the Baptist. Well, the prophecy's about Elijah. But if you read in [{1}](#) Malachi 3 and verses 1-5, it is talking **not** about someone preparing the way about Christ's first coming, but

when Christ comes to sit on the throne of the Earth and remove Satan. You read verse 1, and you can apply that to John the Baptist. But you read on through verse 2, 3, 4 and 5; and you'll find it's talking about the second coming of Christ, the things that He will do then. But He did none of those things that are in verses 2, 3, 4, and 5 when He came the first time.

Now, John the Baptist did fulfill verse 1. Even Jesus said so. Jesus said that he had come in the power and spirit of Elijah. [Matthew 17:12-13] Was he Elijah? No, he wasn't. They asked John the Baptist, "Are you Elijah?" He said, "No, I am not." [John 1:21] And he wasn't a liar. He knew the truth. He was not Elijah.

Am I Elijah? No, definitely not.

Now, huh, I've met "Elijah." [Laughter] "Elijah" has come and announced to me that he was Elijah, but I showed him the way out of the office. [Laughter] I didn't believe him. I suppose there're a lot of "Napoleons" around and a lot of "Elijahs." Even one came into one of our offices one time and said he was "Jesus Christ." Well, he got thrown out. And, if he was Christ, he couldn't have been thrown out. Christ was too strong for that. So there are some crackpots around. But just because we have truth doesn't mean we are crackpots by any matter of means.

In the 17th chapter of Matthew, you find the transfiguration—when a couple of apostles were with Jesus; and, in the transfiguration, they saw a vision. And there was Christ as He will be in His second coming, in glory; and with Him were Moses and Elijah. And He said, "Don't tell anyone until after." (I think it was after His crucifixion.) But then the disciples asked Him, "Well, how do they say now that Elijah shall yet come?" At that time, John the Baptist had already come and had been taken prisoner; and his ministry was all finished. And, undoubtedly, he had already had his head taken off and was dead.

And they asked Jesus, “How do they say that Elijah shall first come?” before the Day of the Lord and before Christ’s second coming. And Jesus answered, “**Truly, Elijah SHALL COME and restore all things.**” What was He talking about, brethren? John the Baptist did NOT restore anything! He came and called those who already knew. He didn’t restore knowledge to them. He called them to repentance and baptized them in a baptism of repentance. But he didn’t teach them new knowledge. Jesus did that. Jesus was the one who came as a teacher. John the Baptist was a baptizer, not a teacher. But Jesus said (after John the Baptist had come and gone) that ELIJAH WOULD YET COME, before the second coming of Christ and before the Day of the Lord.

Has anything been restored? The original truth that was lost has been **restored to this Church**. Brethren, these are days when God’s prophecies are being fulfilled! And we don’t have too much longer until even the second coming of Christ is going to occur.

Now, every now and then I see that some crackpot gets something out saying that I have said I am going to live until the second coming of Christ. I don’t remember ever having said that. And, I’ll tell you, I have no reason whatsoever to believe that, absolutely no reason in the world to believe it. I will just say this: I’ll live as long as Jesus Christ and God the Father want me to live. My life belongs to Them. It’s not mine. As long as He wants to keep me here, I will be here. And, if I die, it’s because He’s going to let me die. And that may be before tomorrow morning. I don’t know. I absolutely don’t know.

For your sakes, I want to stay on. I feel a lot like the apostle Paul did when he said he would like to go and be with Christ, but it was needful to them that he stay on longer. [Philippians 1:23-24] It’s the same way now. So, I’ll try to take care of myself so that I can stay on as long as God wants me to. I will try to continue to **lead you into the truth**, but there are those who

would love to destroy that truth.

Special Mission

We are the firstfruits. Now think of why. We are going to come to that holy day next. It will be only fifty...less than fifty days now. Fifty days from last Sunday. That is the Feast of Firstfruits; and we have to come to realize that we are called as **the firstfruits** because we are called to have to qualify to sit on that throne, the same as Jesus did.

Now, we'll be **under Him**; but we will be **made VERY GOD**, the same as He is made God, **by a resurrection from the dead**. If we die between now and then, we will be resurrected immortal as GOD BEINGS. If we're still alive, we'll be "*changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye*" [I Corinthians 15:51-52]; and rise (not in an airplane, but just rise up in the air by yourself without wings); and meet Him in the clouds in the air [I Thessalonians 4:16-17]. And everybody will come down over the Mount of Olives in Jerusalem, or just to the east of the main city of Jerusalem. That's why we go up in the air. God's going to get everybody over there in a hurry. And I think somehow you'll go faster than you would in an airplane. I don't know just how God is going to work that out. We'll wait and see.

But we're living in the very last days. Sin is increasing by leaps and bounds. Sin is coming at you and being thrown at you, in every way and from every direction, as never before.

Now we've had seven days to show us that we have to put sin out of our lives. We're called for **a special mission**. We are special with God. But that **puts the responsibility on you**—to resist sin, to put sin out of your lives; and put the righteousness of God in, and to hunger and thirst for God's righteousness.

Brethren, I've come to see why I should hunger and thirst for God's righteousness. You see, every bit of pain and suffering, every bit of stress, mental torment of any kind, every bit of everything that is unhappy and unpleasant comes from sin. If you are righteousness, that's the absence of sin; and sin is the absence of righteousness. But if you **get rid of the sin and supplant it with God's righteousness**, then you have none of those things to worry about.

I think about God; and God has no worries, no frustrations. God has full confidence and faith, and full assurance. God is supremely happy. The only thing that could possibly make Him unhappy is some of us, and maybe we do. But I think He loves us so much He's willing to suffer that for us, if necessary; and He does.

But I do hunger and thirst for His righteousness, because it means the absence of the **consequences of sin**. This world is trying to do away with the consequences of sin, AND THEY CAN'T DO IT! And they are not accomplishing it, and they never will. The consequences of sin are going to be there. We should **come out of it** all together.

Now look forward to the next festival, the Feast of Firstfruits; and remember we're called. And we're only starting now in getting sin out of our lives, and growing in knowledge and in grace, and overcoming constantly, and enduring to the end.

Well, God bless you and help every one of you. And keep close to Him.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong inadvertently said the wrong name for the book. The original says, "But if you read in Elijah 3 and verses 1-5..."

Why The Firstfruits

Sermon (May 26, 1985) – given on Pentecost
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Why The Firstfruits.....	1890	Increasing The Family	1901
Who And What Is God?	1892	The Human Spirit And God's Spirit	1902
How God Lived	1894	Why Christ Came	1905
Angels Were Created	1896	Christ Teaches His Disciples	1906
What God Looks Like	1898	Why The Firstfruits?	1911
The Character And Government Of God	1898	Speaking In Different Languages	1915
Man Became A Living Soul	1899	Not Yet Saving The World	1916

Greetings everybody. Well it's nice to be welcomed out here, first of all by the Young Ambassadors. They are favorites of mine; and, in fact, last year I became one. [Laughter.] So they bill me as the Forever-Young Ambassador. I don't know that I'll ever get to perform with them ever again, but I did enjoy it.

Well, brethren, today once again as it happens annually we come to the Feast of Firstfruits. It is generally called the Feast of Pentecost. That's because in the New Testament it was a matter of counting 50 days from the Passover time—the Sunday in the midst of the Passover time, beginning with that Sunday. And it was a matter of also 7 weeks. So originally it was given to God's people, ancient Israel, as the Feast of Weeks; but generally it was called the Feast of Firstfruits. And it is the time celebrating THE FIRSTFRUITS of God's reaping of His harvest for His Kingdom.

Now, WHY? Why is it the firstfruits? Why is the Church today the firstfruits? Mr. Kelly this morning was talking a lot about what, and how, and when, and why. Now I remember very well, when I was five years old, I was always wanting to know "Why?" And I was asking my father so many what-he-called "tom fool" questions about why this and why that. I wanted to

understand it. I always wanted understanding. He said that someday I would be a Philadelphia lawyer. And, indeed, so I am—because the greatest Law Book in all the world, as I told some of the professors in the law school down at the University of Southern California, is a book that I doubted whether they had a copy in their Law Library or not; and yet it is the greatest book on law of any that has ever been written. And it talks about law from the very beginning, in the second chapter, all the way through the book up to the very last chapter; and it's one of the largest books ever written—THE HOLY BIBLE.

It's a book about law. And "law" simply means the rules of human conduct. The rules of human performance and conduct, and especially in relation to others: first of all in relation to God our Creator, and secondly in relation to our neighbors. That's what law is. The churches today are afraid of law. They say that the law was nailed to the cross. But it was the law that nailed Jesus to the cross for us, to pay our penalty in our stead.

But WHY? Why the Feast of Firstfruits? Why is this Church the firstfruits of God's harvest for His Kingdom? Is God unfair? Is He discriminating against others, to choose us first (and they have to wait and come later)? Brethren, I want to say to you, **I think that most of you don't understand that AT ALL.** I think that most of you think that it merely means that God chose us to get into the Kingdom first, and then they'll come in later. **THAT IS NOT THE ANSWER AT ALL!** And I perceive that even our ministers, when they preach, take it for granted that the whole goal is to get us into the Kingdom of God; and that's all we are called for now. For no other purpose, but we'll get in ahead of the others. Then God is **DISCRIMINATING** against the others.

There is A REASON why we are the firstfruits. And I wish I could drive that home, but I fear that most of you just don't get it. You don't understand it at all. **WHY?** Why are we the firstfruits? I am going to try to

make it plain this afternoon, and still I think you won't get it. So much Protestantism has rubbed off on us we can't get it out of our heads. They think God is trying to save the whole world; and then we think, "Well, He's just saving us first." And that is not the answer at all. We're not saved just because God wants us to be His favorites and get us into His Kingdom ahead of others. We are saved for **a very, very great purpose**. We are the firstfruits of God's harvest for His Kingdom.

Who And What Is God?

Now, what is the Kingdom of God? We read in the very first verse in all the Bible, "*In the beginning **God** created the heavens and the earth.*" But Moses wrote that in the Hebrew language; and the word he used for "God" was Elohim, in the Hebrew language. And Elohim happens to be a plural name, meaning more than one person. God is NOT one person. God is **a Family of persons**. Why did God say...In fact, it wasn't just God as a person; but THE FAMILY said, "*Let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness.*" (Verse 26.) The God Family said that, not a God person. Not one person. He would have said, "Let ME make man after My image; but God said, "Let US."

Now, WHO and WHAT is God? That's a great mystery! Most people don't understand it. That'll be chapter 1 in the new book that has just been completed. It's now turned over to the printers. As fast as they can get it out, it will be out. At least there will be a copy for all of you at the Feast of Tabernacles, if not sooner. The greatest mystery—WHO and WHAT is **God?**

Do you know that no religion on Earth knows who and what God is? Tell me what religion knows who and what God is—except God's own Church. You should know, brethren. We should know, we who are here, because God reveals it Himself in His Word, if we understand His Word. But

the churches called “traditional Christianity” don’t understand God’s Word. I used to think they get their religion out of the Bible. When my wife began keeping the Sabbath, I said, “Well, the Bible says ‘Thou shall observe Sunday.’” She said, “How do you know? Have you seen it there?” I said, “Well, no. I don’t know much about the Bible.” Well, that was about 59 years ago, and I didn’t know very much about the Bible then. I know a little something about it today.

I said, “I know because all the churches observe Sunday; and they get their religion out of the Bible, don’t they?” And she said, “Well, do they?” “Why, yes, everybody knows the churches get their religion out of the Bible. That’s their source of religion.” So I began to study. I began to look into the Bible. And I began to find out that they’re believing today just exactly the opposite of what the Bible says. **The Bible IS God speaking.**

Now, we find God describes Himself. Very few people know who or what God is. As I say, no religion knows. Well, God reveals Himself. Now, I quoted Genesis 1:1. Let’s quote John 1, verse 1. ”*In the beginning*”—again, the same words; but instead of “*In the beginning [Elohim] created*” this (John 1:1) says:

John 1:1, 3 *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God... (3) All things were made by him.*

In other words, He created the universe.

John 1:14 *And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us [and became Jesus Christ].*

So Jesus Christ was **with** God, and He **was** God. But He gave up His divinity, His great glory as God, and became a human being—more than 1950 years ago. Nearly 2000 years ago now. But it said:

John 1:4 *In him was life.*

He lived, and God lived. God is one person. The Word, who became Jesus, is another person. And it was GOD who said to the Word (who became Jesus):

Genesis 1:26 Let US make man in OUR image.

God said that to Jesus. Jesus is the Word, the Spokesman, the One who speaks. He is the revelatory thought of God—who REVEALS God’s thinking, who REVEALS the mind of God, who SPEAKS for God, and who AGREES COMPLETELY with God. And They are ONE precisely in belief. They are NOT contrary the one to the other. They are 100% in agreement. Two cannot walk together except they be agreed.

Now God and Jesus Christ had existed FOREVER. There never was a time when They began to live and to exist. It says of Jesus Himself, in the book of Hebrews, that He was:

Hebrews 7:3 Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life, but... [has been a high priest continually, forever; and still is.]

How God Lived

But They LIVED. Now, if They lived, what did They do? Well, They were Creators. There are a few little things the Bible does reveal that would apply to Them. Jesus became the Son of God when He was born of a human virgin. Prior to that time, He was one with God; but He was not a Son of God. But He became God’s Son when He was born as a human. And Jesus said, when He was on Earth, that He worked; and He said, “*My Father works.*” So They were occupied, and They were busy. They had something to do, and what They did was **creating**. To create you first have to plan, and devise, and design. So They thought it out. They designed what would be

created. They planned it, and They worked according to the pre-thought-out plan and design.

Now, another thing is revealed in the Bible: Two cannot walk together except they be agreed. Well, They agreed perfectly! First let me answer, “How did they live?” They live THE WAY OF LOVE. When Jesus was being baptized, God the Father looked down and said, “You are MY **BELOVED** Son.” He loved the Son, in whom He was well pleased. Jesus said He LOVED the Father; and He obeyed the Father, and kept His Father’s commandments. So they were **in perfect harmony**. We just heard this beautiful song, “Harmony.” That will go ringing in my ears now, subconsciously. I’ll go to sleep tonight to that in my mind. I can’t get it out. I love that.

They had harmony. They were together.

There’s another thing about two people. Two cannot walk together except they be agreed. But two cannot get along together except one is the boss. God made a man and a woman, and He made the man to be the leader over his wife. Women don’t like that very well. At least, some of them don’t. A woman says, “I want my marriage,” as she’s going to the marriage altar, “I don’t want to promise to obey my husband. Our marriage is going to be 50/50.” Well, that makes me think of the old judge over in Gladewater, who drew up the first contract of the property deal that purchased the Big Sandy property for us, and our college campus over there.

He said that he settled this matter about who would be the boss on the day of his marriage. He said, “On the day we were married, I laid down the law to my wife. And I told her that I would be the boss. And I wanted that understood from the beginning. I said, ‘Now, as the boss, I would allow her to make any little unimportant decisions; but any of the important decisions I would make.’” Now, he says, “That has worked out very well all through

these years. No important decisions have ever arisen, or problems.”
[Laughter.] I’m afraid that’s the way it is in so many marriages.

Anyway, there has to be leadership. There has to be **a way of life**. Now, a way of life and rules regulating a way of life simply become **a law**. And a law is the foundation and the basis of government. And a **government** is merely the code, or based on a law. And the law is merely the rules of conduct. And the government merely is the administration of the regulation of that law governing conduct. And so that becomes a government.

And so GOD and THE WORD were **in authority** over Their whole Creation. And there was **government** because God was the head. It is stated in the Bible that there is one Lawgiver, and that is God the Father. And Jesus obeyed His Father’s commands. He said, “I have kept My Father’s commandments.” He said, though He was the Word of God (the Spokesman), He said, “I have spoken nothing of Myself. The Father which sent Me gave Me a commandment, what I should say and what I should speak.” He didn’t come just alone, of His own accord. The Father sent Him. But He willingly came. He did that of His own accord, after His Father sent Him.

Angels Were Created

Now, first of all, They created. And the first thing They created was **angels**. There was no Earth. There was no sun. There were no planets, no stars up in the air, in the sky out in the universe. No matter had ever existed. God is composed of SPIRIT. In John 4:24 you read, “*God is a Spirit.*” And in the first chapter of Hebrews, you read that angels are **spirits**. God made angels out of spirit. And angels are messengers of God—to serve God and to do His will. And God is the Ruler who governs over His whole Creation. The angels were His first creation so far as He has revealed to us.

And then, after He had created angels, the time came that He created

the universe. In the first chapter of Genesis, and also in the second chapter of Genesis (I believe it's about verse 3 or 4.), God created the heavens and the Earth in the same day. Now that doesn't mean twenty-four hour day. But in the day that He created them both—in other words, the general area of time—He created the heavens and the Earth all at the one time.

When He created the Earth, the angels were already here. I believe it was this morning or else last night (this morning's sermon, I believe) we heard the 38th chapter of Job quoted. The angels were shouting for joy and singing when God laid the foundations of the Earth, and first created the Earth. Now, at the same time, He created the whole universe. And He put angels on this Earth. That was their first abode.

And He put one super archangel... There are **three kinds of angels** revealed in the Bible: ordinary angels, and they look like humans; but they are composed of spirit. They don't have wings. Then there's another kind of angels (we don't read too much about them in the Bible) called seraphs, or seraphim. They do have wings. And then above them all, with greater power and superior minds, were the cherubs [or cherubim]. And only three of them are mentioned in the Bible. If God created more, He hasn't revealed it to us. One of them was Lucifer. The other two are Michael and Gabriel.

But He placed Lucifer on a throne on this Earth. Now, a throne means ruler over government. And it was God's government, and the government is ruled by God's law. And God's law is summed up in one word: LOVE. But it is **out-flowing love**—flowing out from God towards others. God is the great Giver. It's the way of giving, the way of serving. Jesus came as a servant, not just as a lord and master. He was a Lord and Master. He says, "You call Me Master and Lord; and...so I am" in one case [{1}](#). And yet He came as a servant, and He washed His disciples feet even. That was the lowly duty of a servant. But this Lucifer had to build character. There's one thing God cannot create by automatic, instantaneous, fiat; and that is CHARACTER.

What God Looks Like

Now, let's get back to God Himself for just a minute. What is God, above all things? I say no one seems to know who and what God is. Well, God—They are two persons. They are formed and shaped exactly as we are, because God made us in Their image. And Jesus was God, and He looked like any other human being. Someone asked Him, “Show us God the Father. What does God look like?” And He said, “Well, have you been so long time with Me, and you ask what does God look like? If you have seen Me, you have seen the Father. He looks like Me.”

Now, what did Jesus look like? Like any other man! Otherwise, why did the Pharisees and the high priests and the rest of them pay Judas 30 pieces of silver to point Him out, which one He was, so they could take Him? He looked like any other young Jew of His time, between 30 and 33 years of age. Between 30 and 34, and He looked like any other human being. So God has the same form and shape as we do.

The Character And Government Of God

But, now, these angels had **free moral agency**. They had to make a decision. Again, what is God? God, above all, is SUPREME RIGHTEOUS PERFECT SPIRITUAL CHARACTER. Character is doing what is right, and what has a right result—and rejecting what is wrong, and will have a wrong result. Even though you might want to do the wrong, it is resisting it and doing only the right. So there are different ways of living, different ways of going, different ways of conducting yourself.

God's government is simply the rules of His way of living, the way He and the Word had ALWAYS lived; and that was the way of love. They loved one another, and Jesus served His Father. It's the way of serving, the way of

giving, the way of cooperating, of helping one another. Not the way of taking away from one another. Not the way of competition or strife. Not the way of jealousy, and envy, and retribution, and hostility.

God put this super archangel, Lucifer, on the throne to rule the government **ACCORDING TO THE LAW OF GOD**– and **THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD**–that was placed on this Earth. Lucifer rebelled! And he became an adversary of God. Now, his name became Satan; and Satan means adversary – an enemy, an adversary. He became hostile. He became jealous of God. He became envious. He became resentful. And then he said that he would rise up, with his angels, and pull off a coup; and throw God off the throne. He would take over in God’s place and rule the whole universe! He wanted to head the government of the whole universe.

And he refused to administer the government of God on this Earth, the government that was based on law; and the law was love. But he turned to the opposite way of life [2](#). He turned instead of construction to destruction. Instead of love, he turned to hate, and jealousy, and envy, and competition.

Then God said, “*Let US make **man** in OUR IMAGE.*” (Genesis 1:12)
And so:

Genesis 2:7 The [Eternal] God formed man of the dust of the ground, [Now He took the dust of the ground, and He formed a man; but there was no life in him. He was just a hunk of dirt, but formed in the shape of a human being. Then...] God breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

Man Became A Living Soul

The Hebrew word is “nephesh,” for soul. And three times in the first chapter of Genesis the land animals, 4-legged animals, are called

“nephesh.” But the translators—believing that man was an immortal soul, which is not true; because they don’t believe the Word of God, and they think that a soul can’t die, that a soul is immortal—the word “nephesh” they translated into creature. That is, “living creatures” when it comes to animals. It’s the same word, nephesh, however. ”*God formed man of the dust of the ground...and man became a living [nephesh],*” same as animals. Now, nephesh or soul means “the life of animals.”

The man was not a soul until God breathed the breath of life into him. He was just a hunk of dirt with a certain form and shape. But when he came into consciousness and life and the breathe of air, he became a living soul. **NOT AN IMMORTAL SOUL!** Now, of that soul, God said, “If you take of the forbidden fruit of the tree that I forbid you to take of, YOU WILL SURELY DIE! That soul would **die!**”

Satan came along, confronted mother Eve, and he said, “Oh, you won’t surely die. God knows better than that. You are an immortal soul.” And Eve believed him. Adam seemed to believe it. And their children have been believing it ever since. They sill believe we are immortal souls.

God speaks through the Bible. Jesus is the Word of God. The Bible is the same Word of God in writing, exactly the same Word that Jesus spoke; and Jesus is the author of the Bible. And Jesus speaks only what God the Father tells Him to speak, so it is still is the Word of God the Father as well as of Christ.

Adam had to make a choice. Why? Because God said, “*Let Us make man in Our image.*” And what is **God’s image**? It is PERFECT SPIRITUAL CHARACTER. And that meant character, and God cannot **CREATE** character automatically. That cannot be done. That requires the decision and even the effort of the created being in whom the character will be formed.

Now, God wanted this Adam to have character, but He didn’t give him

immortal life. He didn't make him immortal. He made him of the dust of the ground and gave him **a temporary chemical existence** through the breath of air; and it was supported by food, or fuel you might say. By food and water that came from the ground, and he came from the ground. Incidentally, his wife Eve did not come from the ground. God performed an operation, put Adam into a deep sleep they call anesthesia in the hospitals today; and God performed an operation, and cut out one of Adam's ribs and formed a woman out of that. So the woman came from the man, not from the dust of the ground. The man came from the dust of the ground. The woman came from the man.

Increasing The Family

And then they two became one, just like Jesus (or, the Word) and God became ONE GOD. One God Family! And **God is a Family!** Now, THE GOD FAMILY said, "*Let US make man in OUR image.*" And He wanted man to become a family, but ultimately he's to become THE GOD FAMILY. And so God said to Adam and Eve:

Genesis 1:28 *Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth.*

Now, Adam alone couldn't do that. That's why God had to make a wife for him, because a man can't have children all by himself. But the two together could, and so they began to reproduce themselves. **GOD IS REPRODUCING HIMSELF.** When the angels sinned, God saw that no one but God could be depended upon to rule with the law of God, with love, and never deviate from it. That's why He said "We'll create man **in Our image.**" In other words, ultimately **after God's character.** And once man has been finally created in the character of God, you read in I John 3:9, that when we reach that state and we become BORN OF GOD, we'll be composed of Spirit; and it will be impossible for us to commit sin. In

other words, to do any wrong. We will simply live the way of God's law, the way of love, the way of giving and sharing and cooperating and helping. And it will be IMPOSSIBLE for us to live any other way, because we will have decided not to live any other way; and God will simply give us the power to not do contrary to what we have decided. So it'll just be impossible.

It's impossible for God to sin. And once we are born of God, it will be impossible for us to sin. But it wasn't impossible for Adam, because he was not **born of God** yet. He was only created as a flesh and blood being, made out of the dust of the ground. He had a temporary chemical existence.

The Human Spirit And God's Spirit

Now, there were two trees in the garden. If Adam had taken of the Tree of Life, he would then have received the Spirit of God. There's one thing I want to mention right there. When God created the human being out of the dust of the ground, He put something in him that He did not put in the animals. They are nephesh, and man was nephesh; but there is one difference. In the man, He put a **spirit** with his brain. It is a human spirit, not a divine Spirit. Not an angel spirit, a human spirit.

Now **the human spirit**, of necessity, is a self-centered spirit. But, nevertheless, it is SPIRIT. And the spirit in man empowers the human brain with intellect so that he can think. Now animals don't have that spirit, and animals can't think. They can't reason. They can't philosophize. They can't analyze things and come to conclusions. They can't exert wisdom and judgment. They have no concern for art, and literature, and music. But man, having a spirit with his physical brain, does appreciate all those things. And man can think. At least, he thinks he can think. But most of them don't think very soundly.

Now, the man was incomplete. He was physically incomplete. He needed a wife. So God performed an operation, and made a wife for him. But now he was still mentally and spiritually incomplete. He had one human spirit, but that human spirit didn't give him his life. It was the breath he breathed that gave him his life, with circulated blood; and the blood is the life, oxidized by the breath of air in the lungs (as the blood flows through the lungs, on the way back to the heart again).

The man was mortal. He had a temporary existence, like a clock wound up that will run down and it will stop when it runs down. But man was incomplete. He had a spirit that gave him an intelligence that animals don't have, gave him a mind that animals don't have. But to come to have the perfect mind and spiritual character, he needed **the mind of God**. If he had taken of the Tree of Life, that would have connected him with God. And then he would have had a direct contact with God, and the Spirit of God would have come into him. That is **THE MIND OF GOD**. That is **THE LIFE OF GOD**. And that would have impregnated him with **GOD LIFE**. That would have opened his mind, like the Mind of God, to comprehend spiritual truths that God could reveal.

Now without the Spirit of God, he couldn't understand spiritual truths, only physical things. That's why the great scientists, who do not have the Spirit of God, cannot understand spiritual knowledge. It is foolishness to them. They can understand only what they can see, taste, feel, smell, or hear—the five senses. So they just deny there is anything else. And that, of all things, is ignorance! So the most intellectual, with the largest number of PhDs and other letters after their names, are of all men most ignorant; because they don't have the Spirit of God and they can have no spiritual knowledge. And spiritual things are so much more real than material things! They'll go on lasting; but the material things are only temporary, and will soon be gone.

Adam had to make a choice. He chose rebellion against God, the same as Satan had done; and that put him under the captivity of Satan. He became kidnapped, and his children after him were kidnapped. And Satan, who is a spirit, was in-tuned in the same wavelength as Adam's spirit. So he could simply inject his spirit into Adam, which is the spirit of rebellion, the spirit of jealousy, and envy, and competition, and antagonism, and controversy.

So that came into Adam and Eve, and into their children. The first son of Adam was Cain, and the second son was Abel. I presume they must have been about teenagers when this certain event happened. Cain became jealous of Abel, his brother; and so he rose up and slew his brother and killed him. God said, "Where is your brother?" And he said, "I don't know." He was a liar! Now he lied to God about it. And humans have been doing it, and we've all come from Adam and from his children. This world has developed. Developed with a carnal mind, a self-centered mind that is self-centered, loves only self and what it considered that belong to self. Now, some love their possessions because they belong to them. Mothers love their children because they're hers. It's selfish, but it is good. Nevertheless, it is self-centered. God loves more than just His own. He loves everything—everybody, rather. And so this world developed.

When Adam sinned, God CLOSED UP the Tree of Life. And that means He shut humanity **OFF FROM GOD!** God is the Lawgiver. Man had broken God's law, and the penalty is death. All humanity was shut off from God UNTIL Christ should finally come and sit on that throne. He had to first come and qualify to do it, and remove Satan from that throne. As long as Satan's there, he had kidnapped these children; and he was going to rule over them (instead of God). And so they are shut off from God until the Second Coming of Christ, when He will come as Ruler; and Satan will be banished.

Why Christ Came

Now, there was one exception. Jesus Christ said, *“I will build My church, and the gates of [the grave] shall not prevail against it.”* The Church were the firstfruits. Now why did Jesus say, *“I will build My church...”*? In the first place, why did Jesus come? He’s called “the second Adam.” He came to do what the first Adam should have done, but did not; and that was to have contact with God, and obey God, and live God’s way—be filled with God’s love, with God’s mind, and with God’s power; and reject the wrong way of Satan. Jesus did that. He had to contend with Satan. Satan tempted Him; and He was tempted in all points like as we are, and yet without sin. He met Satan in immortal combat, and Jesus Christ conquered Satan. In the end, He snapped out an order and told Satan to get away; and Satan had to obey Him.

Jesus Christ came for a number of reasons. One was **TO QUALIFY** to replace Satan on the throne of this Earth, and **TO RULE THE EARTH AS A KING**. He was born to become a King, and He came to qualify to be the King and **replace Satan** on the Earth. The churches have lost all knowledge of that! They don’t preach Jesus Christ as **the coming King**, as a **Ruler** and **Someone to obey**. They have lost all knowledge of it. It is all in the Bible, however; but they don’t follow the Bible. They get their religion from other people before them, and people have just made it up in their minds. They don’t believe what the Bible says.

I was hearing on the air this morning looking for the Antichrist to come. The Bible doesn’t talk about some one Antichrist coming. In first or second John, whichever it is, it says that there are **many antichrists** and have been. But they have certain traditions that Protestants have had, and they simply follow the teaching of these Protestant traditions. And, as I say, they have rubbed off on us a great deal.

They think that God is trying to save the whole world. The world is lost. They really picture it this way: God created man immortal, an immortal soul. Satan came along and wrecked God's handiwork. So man fell, but he's still immortal. And God's plan of redemption is merely God's effort to repair the damage that Satan did, and restore the human race back as good as Adam was before he fell. **If you believe that**, please erase it from your mind and get rid of it because it is a lie. It's Satan's lie. It is not true.

Jesus Christ came TO QUALIFY! When He comes to rule, He's going to rule over the world; and He's going to teach the world **the law of God**—the way of living OF GOD. All that's wrong in the world is the way people live! I've said that to kings. I've said it to presidents and prime ministers over the world. I've said it to audiences in capitols all over this world. That's all that is wrong with the world. It's the way people are living! **THE WAY WE LIVE** is causing all of the troubles. And the way we live is rebellion against the law of God.

But the churches say the law of God is done away. I was listening to a religious program on the air this morning. This was after our program was on the air. They were saying how God will just forget about your sins. There wasn't one word said about repentance. They were saying the law is done away. And it was from the ministers of a church that I know who believe the law is done away, and they will debate it with you any day (that God's law is done away). Well, God's law is the right way of living. And all that's wrong in the world is the wrong way of living. Whatever we sow, we reap; and we're sowing the wrong thing because we live the wrong way. It's just that simple. But people cannot seem to understand that, because they are deceived by Satan. And Satan is the Great Deceiver.

Christ Teaches His Disciples

Well, Jesus said, *“I will build My church.”* Now what did He do? He called twelve disciples; and they became His students, or learners. A “disciple” means a learner or a student. Jesus started a school, and Jesus was the Teacher. And He started teaching these students—twelve that He had CALLED. Later He said to them, “You didn’t choose Me. You didn’t volunteer.” Peter didn’t volunteer and Andrew, his brother. They wanted to be fishermen. Jesus saw them out there on the Sea of Galilee in a boat, fishing. That was their business, their job. He said, “Come and follow Me, and give up the job you’ve got. I’m calling you to a different job.” They forsook all, and followed Him.

He called others. Later He said, “You didn’t choose Me. I’ve chosen you. I’ve drafted you! I didn’t plead with you to ‘Please accept Me. Please give your heart to Me.’” Brethren, you cannot find any place where Jesus went around saying, “Please believe on Me. Please give your heart to Me.”

A young man came to me one time, several years ago, up in Oregon. He said, “Mr. Armstrong. I gave my heart to the Lord last night.” Well I said, “Did you? Where was that?” “Why down in the First Christian Church.” “Well,” I said, “that must have been a wonderful event. Was there a physician there with anesthetics; and did he put you in an operation, and open up your body and take your heart out?” “Well, no. No,” he said. Well I said, “Did you get hold of your heart and hand it over to Jesus? Was Jesus there?” “Well, no.” “Well, what did happen? What did you do? You said you gave Jesus your heart.” He said, “Well, I guess I just don’t know.” He didn’t know what he did do. It didn’t mean any thing. No, it didn’t.

A Methodist preacher came to me up in Oregon. He said, “I’ve just married a wife. She’s got some money. And I’m just too proud to let her support me. I’m an ex-minister; and the only thing I know, that I’ve ever done, is to preach. But,” he said, “I haven’t had a job, and I haven’t had any pulpit.” He said, “Do you know of any vacant pulpits in Lane County,

Oregon here. My wife wants to live in this county, and I have to get a job right here somewhere.” I said, “Yes, I do know of one vacant pulpit. But,” I said, “that won’t help you any.” “Well, why?” Well, I said, “Because that’s a Church of Christ, or Christian Church; and you’re a Methodist. And,” I said, “They have different doctrines than you do, and different beliefs.” “Oh well, that doesn’t make any difference,” he said, “if I can have the job, I’ll preach whatever they want me to.” That’s the average preacher today. “I’ll preach whatever they want me to.” Yes, I’ve met all kinds. And this world is full of them.

Jesus came **TO QUALIFY** to sit on THE THRONE and RULE. **He called out some students and began to teach them—to teach them the way and the law of God, to teach them God’s plan, to teach them God’s purpose and what God is going to do with us.** That God is trying to make us HIS OWN CHILDREN, to be BORN OF HIM. And He taught them that which is born of God will be SPIRIT. God is a Spirit! We won’t be human; we won’t be flesh, any longer. We won’t be made from the dust of the ground. We’ll be **spirit beings**. And He taught them. After He had taught them, He also came to die for not only them but the sins of the whole world. And so He did that. Then He went to heaven and established the Church after He had arrived back in heaven.

Now we spent a day over in Munich, in southern Germany; and I found it was a holiday. I hadn’t heard of that holiday before. They call it Ascension Day. Well, it probably was the same day of the year that Jesus ascended to heaven, which is ten days before the day of Pentecost (which is today). It seems to me they had the wrong day. It must have been more than ten days ago. Anyway, there is nothing in the Bible that says there is any such day as Ascension Day that we are told to keep. And I hadn’t even heard of it, because I’ve been living according to the Bible and not according to men’s traditions.

But Jesus taught these people. He called them OUT of the world, to live His way—to live by the law of God, and live a different way than the rest of the world was living. And to teach them that WAY OF LIFE, about the government of God. And to teach them of God’s purpose, that we would become God; and that God is reproducing Himself. After He had taught them, He gave them **a great commission**. He said:

***Matthew 28:19-20** Go... [into all the world] and teach [in] all nations, baptizing [people] into the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy [Spirit]; (20) teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you.*

Learning To Become Teachers

So Jesus came to start a school. And He taught them the way of God, the way of GOD’S CHARACTER, so they could be born of God. Then He told them to go out and become teachers themselves, like He had been a Teacher to them; and teach others. And the others that they were to teach were also to be taught, to learn, so that they could become teachers. And the whole purpose of the firstfruits was to call some people out **to become teachers**; so that, when Christ comes to save the world, they could be kings and priests under Christ. That’s why, to those called into the Church (the firstfruits), Jesus said [{3}](#):

***Revelation 2:26-27** He that overcometh...to him will I give power over the nations: (27) and he shall rule them with a rod of iron.*

***Revelation 3:21** To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne [when He comes and takes over the throne of the earth, away from Satan.]*

In other words, Jesus came to **QUALIFY TO RULE** in the place of Satan. He came to call a firstfruits out to become teachers and to become

rulers and governors (like He is, with Him when He sits on the throne); and rule the others, and teach the others **when God starts to save the world**. He didn't come to teach us just to be saved. He came to teach us **TO BECOME TEACHERS!**

Now, we are concerned with a certain project over in Jordan—just outside of Amman, Jordan. It is a school for the mentally retarded. The first time I saw it was two years ago; and they had a fine new facility, new building. It was very modern, very nice. And they had little children there, from the ages of about four years old up to thirteen, all mentally retarded. And they had to even teach them to put a button in a buttonhole. They even had to teach them to sit on the toilet, because they didn't know anything. And I said, "Is this all of the mentally retarded people in Jordan?" "Oh, no. This is a small fraction of them. Why, Mr. Armstrong, there are thousands of them." Well, I said, "Maybe we could raise money and build a bigger place, and you could take in more of them. Let's get more of them." But they said, "Wait, Mr. Armstrong. We can't do that. Even if we had the money to buy the buildings, and more buildings, we couldn't take in more of them here until we first **train more teachers.**"

God cannot start the Kingdom of God until He first trains teachers. And He has called you and me to become those teachers! **THAT'S WHY WE'RE THE FIRSTFRUITS. WE ARE CALLED TO BECOME TEACHERS!** And it is, let's see, I believe it's the 5th chapter of Hebrews (Isn't it?), where the apostle Paul says to them, "You ought now to be able to be teachers, and you have to be taught just the kindergarten truth about the Kingdom of God. You haven't learned. You should have been better students."

WE are **NOT CALLED** just for salvation; and, if it were for salvation, we wouldn't have been called at all. You wouldn't have been called at all just to get you into the Kingdom. **THAT'S NOT WHY YOU WERE CALLED.** You were called to become a student. You were called to learn how to save

others **when** God's Kingdom comes, **when** Jesus is sitting on the throne on this Earth. Brethren, YOU DON'T GET IT.

I've heard ministers speaking as if they never heard of that! I've said to some of them, "I don't think our people understand that." And they say, "Oh yes, they do, Mr. Armstrong." Oh no, you don't. Brethren, you just don't understand that. We're not called to just be the first ones to get into the Kingdom of God. We are called for a **special mission—to become teachers**. We are not called to become some to go out and convert the world now. We are called to learn how, in the resurrection, we can be rulers and teachers.

TO THE CHURCH—and not to anyone but the Church—Jesus said, "If you overcome (you that are studying to be teachers, if you overcome) I will grant for you to sit with Me on My throne; and help Me rule the world and teach the world." Jesus is the Teacher, and Jesus is a Ruler. Revelation 5:10, we will be "**kings and priests: and we shall [RULE] on the earth.**" Brethren, I don't think you'll ever learn that.

Has my teaching been in vain, brethren? Sometimes I wonder. I get terribly discouraged. I don't think you get it. I think so much Protestantism has rubbed off on you that you just don't understand the truth when I give it to you. And it is really Christ giving it to you through me, because I'm certainly not competent to give it to you. Of myself, I could not do it at all.

Why The Firstfruits?

Why are we the firstfruits? **WHY?** I'm not talking about what, when, or how, or anything else; but why? We are the firstfruits to become teachers to teach others. The Church is school. And we are to be taught **the way of God**, the way of life; and to be taught of God's program—of God's program to reproduce Himself. And He's not trying to save the world. You wonder why you can't convert your relatives and your friends; and so do I, and I still do. I

can't get over it. I can't see why they can't understand any of the Bible whatsoever. They can't, and they won't until God calls them. Jesus Christ said:

***John 6:44** No man CAN come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him.*

Predestination was discussed this morning in the sermon.

Predestination has nothing to do with who is going to be saved and who is going to be lost. Predestination means that God predestinated that He would call certain people out, after Christ came to qualify; and we have to do the same thing. If we are going to rule, we have to do the same thing. We have to overcome Satan. Far from being “teacher’s pet,” far from God discriminating against the others, He’s giving us a harder job than He’ll give the others. **WE HAVE TO OVERCOME SATAN.** And when God does call others, that can't understand the truth now, there won't be any Satan around. And there won't be a world with television that is filled with smut, and with violence, and with rotten sex; and that is what your children are feeding on today. That'll all be gone. There won't be any of it. But the earth will be full of the knowledge of the Eternal God, as full as the waters cover the ocean beds; and you and I are the ones that are going to be teaching that knowledge and making the world full.

Now, it doesn't include just us here. We're just a little group in Pasadena, California. It doesn't [just] include all of us, just those in the Church all around the world. It includes those that were called in the early Church, back in the 1st century, 1900 and some years ago—53 or more ago, 54 years ago. They will all be resurrected. They are “the dead in Christ.” And the dead in Christ are those who have learned to be **teachers** and **rulers**. They have learned **HOW**, and they are qualified to teach and to rule.

The Church of God is the school of God. Now, we have something

more than just a school; we have a college here at Pasadena. And we have a sister college over at Big Sandy, Texas. There we teach some to be ministers. Then they go out, and they teach others (week by week, on the Sabbath) that God has called and that are in the Church—so that they come to grow in grace and the knowledge of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. Now I wonder if you get that? We have to **GROW IN KNOWLEDGE!** We have to learn God's program. We have to learn that God is calling us not just to be saved. He's calling us to **learn to be rulers and teachers**. Brethren, sometimes I get discouraged. Can I beat that into your heads and your minds?

They talk about so-and-so “had it made.” Are you sure he had it made? Is he going to be a teacher? Is he qualified to sit on that throne with Christ? Does he know about God's law? We're the Philadelphia Era of the Church, and we have to be lawyers—students of God's law, God's government, God's way of life. All that's wrong with this world is the way of life they're living. It's all that. And we are called out of the world to live a different way of life.

We Must Grow

Peter said we must grow. Not just in knowledge (the knowledge OF our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ) but in grace. What does that mean? Grace is unmerited favor, or gift. But the Holy Spirit is God's gift. And **growing in grace** means growing in the character that comes through God's Spirit. Are you growing in character day by day? Are you growing in the knowledge that God has? In other words, are you a good student? Are you learning? Are you going to be able to teach others? Are you qualifying to be a teacher, and to go out and teach others? **IF NOT, YOU ARE WASTING YOUR TIME!** You don't **BELONG** in the Church. Maybe God hasn't called you yet. Or maybe you haven't opened your mind to understand? I don't know.

I just know, brethren, that I do want you to learn. God has revealed this truth to me. It isn't known in any church in the world that I know of. It's

precious knowledge. It's so precious and so valuable! Don't trample it under feet, as if it was insignificant and didn't mean anything. It is **the truth of God**.

There's something else I want to say about Pentecost. I think if I'd keep talking here to one o'clock in the morning, some of you still wouldn't get it. Jesus called us "sheep." And sometimes I think some of us are pretty dumb sheep. I wish we could understand it, and I'm trying to make it plain.

You are students. How much are you learning, and how much are you developing your life? To grow in grace is to grow in the character of God. That's not only the knowledge, but it is living that way—to grow in love. That means in how you treat others in your own home. That means in how you treat neighbors, and how you treat people. How kind are you? How loving are you? How much do you encourage others, and try to help others? How much are you developing **the character of God** in your own life?

Just knowledge alone isn't going to do any good. You can hear the Word of God. You can have the knowledge. But not the hearers, but **THE DOERS OF THE LAW** are justified before God. Are you A DOER? The only reason you need the knowledge is to learn what to do; and it does you no good until you put it to work, and do it!

Now the one thing I did want to say (and I think I do have a little more time to say it in) about Pentecost: On the day of Pentecost there were many who had followed Jesus, and who did believe; and they wanted to know what they should do. [Peter] said, "Repent everyone of you, and be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins." And **repent** has to do with not only being sorry and remorseful for the past but changing your mind to the extent that you won't do it any more. You will change your way of life, and live God's way from on now. You'll try and not repeat the sins. And with God's help, you will succeed in overcoming. Now you won't overcome all

the sins at once. That's why it is a gradual process. It's **the overcomers** that are going to reign and rule with Christ. Not those who have made it, not those who are perfect all ready. It's a gradual process.

Speaking In Different Languages

But on the day of Pentecost there were many there from many different nations, speaking different languages. And something happened on that day. That was the day the Church was born, 1954 years ago today. This is the anniversary of that day. And the Holy Spirit came with a rushing sound, like a rushing mighty wind. Have you ever been in a hurricane? I have, right out in the middle of the Atlantic Ocean. And let me tell you, when you hear the winds whistling and roaring like I did, it's a terrible roar.

They heard the sound of the Holy Spirit coming; and they saw it, like flames of fire (or, tongues of fire) sitting on each one of them—the 120. There were 120 there that received the Spirit of God. And people could see the Holy Spirit, like tongues of fire; and then they began to speak in other languages, in tongues. There were people gathered there from nation all over. Some from Parthia, some from that were Medes, and some from...well, some spoke Greek [{4}](#), and some the Parthian language, and some the Median language and other languages. But EVERY ONE OF THEM, thousands of them, and every one of them **heard** them (the 120) speaking **in his language**.

They didn't speak in a lot of gibber. "La, la, la, blah, bla, ayre, waa, weer, blu, uuaaa, uuaaaa." I can do that. What did I say? You don't know. Neither do I. [Laughter in audience.] The tongues people that call themselves "Pentecostal" are NOT Pentecostal at all! They are poor **DECEIVED** people that don't know any better. They say that they are aping that same thing, and they are copying it. You don't see any tongues of fire on their head. You don't hear any roaring sound, like a rushing mighty wind. And they don't speak

with the languages that other people from other nations understand every word they're saying while they're there.

Now, there's one other case where they spoke with tongues. That's when Peter had taken salvation to the first Gentiles at the house of Cornelius, up at a (Oh, where is it?) just north of where Tel Aviv is today. They were devout people, and they wanted to serve God; they just didn't know everything. God had Peter go to them, and that's when salvation first opened to Gentiles. God had to show Peter, in this vision of letting a sheet of unclean animals down—telling him to “go eat.” He didn't mean eat unclean animals. He was simply showing him that he should call no man **unclean** because the Jews wouldn't have anything to do with Gentiles. So, Peter went to Cornelius' house. They were devout. They had repented. And when Peter told them the way of the gospel, then they believed. They'd already repented. And the Holy Spirit came on them—as on the day of Pentecost—and they did speak... They were of different language, and they spoke the Hebrew and the Greek language.

But, in the 14th chapter of I Corinthians, Paul said he would rather speak five words with understanding than 10,000 words in an unknown tongue. This speaking in gibberish and an unknown tongue is a deception of Satan, the devil. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of **a sound mind**—not of just a lot of gibberish and doing foolish things, nonsensical things. I think we understand that in the Church of God; but I just wanted to mention that, since this is the day of Pentecost.

Not Yet Saving The World

This is the day of firstfruits. We are the first. We are the ones who are being taught to become the teachers, to rule with Christ, and to be kings and priest. Now priests are the teachers. And that is when Christ is going to try to

save the whole world, when He comes again. He didn't try to save anybody [when He came the first time]. At Jacob's well, a Gentile woman... John had said {5} that she knew Who she was talking to. He could give her the **living water**, and she would never thirst. Well, she asked Him for those living waters. He's speaking of **the Holy Spirit**. And she said, "Give me then of the Holy Spirit." That's what it meant.

Wasn't that a wonderful opportunity for Him to try to convert her, right then and there? Instead, He said, "Go call your husband." Well, she kind of gasped for breath. She said, "I, I, I don't have a husband." And Jesus said, "Well for once, young lady, you've told the truth. You've had five husbands, and the one you are living with now is not your husband." She was amazed that He knew that much about her. He'd never seen her before. But He didn't try to convert her.

You can't find a place where Jesus went about and said, "Please accept Me as your Savior." And yet the churches think that is a whole thing that we should be doing. I guess they think—when I visit foreign kings, and presidents of nations, and prime ministers who rule nations—that I ask them, "Have you given your heart to the Lord?" Why they'd pitch me out of there so fast I wouldn't know what struck me." [Laughter.] I even think some of our ministers, the way they talk from the pulpit, think that's what I'm doing.

I'm carrying the gospel into those nations, but I'm not trying to convert the heads of the nations. I try to speak to them as far as they can understand. But God isn't trying to convert them. **NO MAN CAN COME TO CHRIST** except God the Father draw them, and God hasn't drawn them. That's why you can't convert your own relatives that think you've gone crazy when you've accepted God's truth. You just can't. You see **THEY'RE NOT BEING JUDGED!** The Judgment Day is coming.

Judgment is ON THE CHURCH OF GOD. Judgment is on US. We're

being judged, brethren. The world hasn't been called, and the world is not yet judged. And God isn't trying to save the world yet. Not yet. The way to help save the world, brethren, is to learn to be a good teacher—so that, when God's time comes, then you can be a real POWER in helping to save people when God's time has come. But God's time hasn't come for them yet. God's time has come for you to learn how to be a king or a priest. God help you, brethren, to understand.

Editor's Notes

{1} - Editorial note: Corrected order of titles, which were transposed from John 13:13. The original said: “You call Me Lord and Master, and...so I am”

{2} - Editorial note: Wrong word used, “love“instead of “life.” The original said: “But he turned to the opposite way of love.”

{3} - Editorial note: Jumbled scriptures corrected. The original said: “Jesus said in Revelation 2:26-27, ‘He that overcometh will I grant [Let's see, is that...] to sit with Me in My throne, even as I overcame and sat down with My Father in His throne.’ I don't know if that's in Revelation 3:21, which says... No. In Revelation 2:26:27, ‘give them power over the nations, to rule them with a rod of iron.’ And in Revelation 3:21, the same thing except that it said ‘He that overcomes will I grant to sit Me in My throne’”

{4} - Editorial note: Mr. Armstrong said Greece (the country) when he meant Greek (the language). The original said: “and some spoke Greece”

{5} - Editorial note: John had recorded the incident of the Samaritan woman at the well. (John 4:5-29) The original said: “Peter had said...”

Feast of Trumpets 1985

Sermon (September 16, 1985)

by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

Feast of Trumpets 1985.....	1919	The Spirit Of God	1936
Second Coming Of Christ	1921	Christ Called Out A Few	1936
They Have Been Deceived	1923	Lamb Of God	1937
The Whole Picture	1924	In The Twinkling Of An Eye	1939
The Law Of Love	1926	Seven Annual Holy Days	1940
And That Means Government	1929	As In Adam, All Die	1941
God Creates In Dual Stages	1930	The Government Of God	1943
A State Of Decay	1932	Loosed For A Little Season	1944
Let Us Reproduce Ourself	1933	Greatest Event Of The Universe	1945
The First Man Adam	1935		

Greetings, brethren. First, this afternoon I believe I should say a few words about my own health. About five weeks ago I had to come back home from Orr, Minnesota once again as the year before. We were on our way to the summer camp in Scotland; and I was overtaken with a temperature, and decided I had to get back home immediately. It seemed that I caught some kind of a virus; and my temperature rose up and stayed, more or less, for (oh) two weeks or more at about an additional two degrees. It did not rise higher, for which I was very grateful. But then it began to improve somewhat. And now, for the past three weeks or so, I find that my temperature will be normal in the morning; but it rises in the afternoon.

Now that's one reason that we set this service thirty minutes earlier today, because my temperature does rise in the afternoon. And by evening, if I walk about ten steps just across the room, I'm huffing and puffing as if I'd run a quarter mile at full speed. And that is the toughest race, as anyone who goes out for track (as any athlete) will tell you, because the quarter mile is usually run at full speed. And it leaves you feeling like your heart is going to

break by the time you get to the finish. And I've felt that way many a time. And often it's that way at bedtime. I have a hard time even getting from a chair, where I can undress, into bed.

Now we've had some blood tests made. Unfortunately during the morning service, (I was listening to it on my television set, where I see it just as if I were sitting in the front row here; and better than I would in my usual seat in this auditorium), there was a knock at the door. There was a woman coming to take some blood, and withdraw some blood for another blood test; and I had to explain. Now I guess the doctor who had sent her at that time didn't realize. I said, "We are in the midst of a very serious annual holy day service. We're in a church service, and I cannot be disturbed now. I'm very sorry." So I think she is going to come tomorrow. I hate to have them take blood because two such tests have already been made and analyzed; and the trouble, and my condition, seems to be I just do not have enough blood.

It's not anemia. Anemia is a lack of iron. My blood shows sufficient iron content. The doctor thought that I should not take milk. And, for the first three weeks or so after this thing started, I withdrew from all milk, cheese and everything of that sort. Well, I'm the calcium type. Every one of us is of a different chemical type physically. Most people don't know that. But I do need calcium, and the blood test showed I was short on calcium. So I've gone back to more milk again. I do try to watch my diet. And blood, it seems, is manufactured in the marrow of the bones; and bones come from calcium.

Now my doctor says that any other doctor would say that I needed an immediate blood transfusion. He doesn't want me to have that. In the first place, he says it would only be temporary—a stopgap. In the second place, I could catch this new fatal disease of AIDS. Again, he laughed; and he said, "You won't catch AIDS if you ever take it because," he said, "I'll get the blood from some of your own people:" [Laughter.] So some of you better look out! Fortunately, my doctor doesn't believe in much medicine. He's very

careful about diet however.

But I do need your continued prayers. I don't know, perhaps I have 80 or 85 percent enough blood. But you know what your life is? Your Bible tells you, if you listen when you read, "*The blood thereof is the life thereof.*" And God breathed into man the breath of life, and man became a living soul. Into the dust of the ground, the breath is the life; and the blood is the life. So your life comes from two things: breath and blood. And they mix in your lungs where the blood is oxidized by the breath. Impurities are thrown out, and the blood goes on to supply the life.

A Very Solemn Sabbath Day

Well, brethren, we are gathered here today on a very solemn Sabbath day. I doubt if we fully realize just how serious and how solemn it is. I hope I can make that a little more plain and simple to you this afternoon. We are here to be reminded of a day that is a foreshadow of the most tremendous event that has ever happened in the history, not of mankind, not of this earth, but the most important event that has ever happened in the entire universe. And I don't think you have ever realized that full scope before. I want you to realize it this afternoon.

The event we are here to celebrate in one sense is the greatest event that has ever happened in the history of the entire universe, except that God has always existed and has always lived (and that was not a beginning). There was no beginning, there will never be an ending—because God was without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor shall ever have end of life.

Second Coming Of Christ

But I am reminded of the time when I was advertising manager and

editorial writer on a daily newspaper. One day about four or five of us were having a little sort of a talk. They were the newsmen, the editors and the news writers; and they were discussing what would be the most astonishing and **the greatest headline** that you could possibly write on a newspaper. One of them suggested (and, by the way, this was before World War II), one of them suggested “Another World War Breaks Out”—the Second World War. Another one said, “I think something else would be even more shocking, ‘New York City Suddenly Blown Entirely Off The Map, New York City Totally Leveled.’” Then another says, “Ah, that’s tame.” He says, “I think the most important headline would be, ‘Second Coming of Christ Happened This Morning.’” “Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha.” And they all had a big laugh, except me. I said, “You men, if you live long enough, may live to write that headline.” And they didn’t laugh any further, because to them it was a big joke. Brethren, I want to tell you, **“It’s no joke.”**

But why could the second coming of Christ be **the most important event that has ever happened IN THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE?** I don’t think you’ve heard it put that way before. I doubt if many of you understand the real reason why it is that important.

You know I’ve mentioned many times how Winston Churchill said before the United States Congress during World War II, “There is a purpose being worked out here below.” You know, somehow he knew there was a **purpose** being worked out; and “here below” means there was a Superpower above, working it out. He didn’t know much about that Power. He didn’t know what that purpose was. And very few people on earth do know. Very few people even realize there is any purpose to life, or any purpose being worked out.

Now, about the second coming of Christ: When they asked Jesus to teach us to pray, He gave what is generally called “the Lord’s Prayer”—although that isn’t the real Lord’s Prayer. (The real Lord’s Prayer is found in

the seventeenth chapter of John.) But He taught us to pray a few things, about four or five things, there [in Matthew 6], among which was, “*Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.*”

They Have Been Deceived

Do you know the churches don't pray that? They don't understand that God's Kingdom has not come, and is going to come. They think it's already here. They say they are in the Kingdom. Some say the church is the Kingdom. Some say that the Kingdom is something in the hearts of men. They have every kind of wrong idea, but none of them seems to understand it.

They don't understand the prophecy of Isaiah the ninth chapter verses 6 and 7, where it says that a virgin is going to conceive and bear a Son and His name will be called... (Now that's in the seventh chapter of Isaiah, but the ninth chapter) that, the nation Israel would have a child, be born as a baby and would grow up; and the government would be on His shoulders. That He would live forever, and His Kingdom would last forever and ever. They don't seem to know that that's in the Bible, and they don't understand it.

They have been deceived. They just think that we live. They don't know how we came to be on Earth. They don't know of any purpose in life. They think, if you do good, you'll go to heaven when you die. And if you do what you think is wrong (and, of course, you decide what's right and wrong for yourself); but, if you do what you think and you know is wrong, then you are going to go to hell where you are going to burn, and burn, and burn, and never burn up. But just keep burning forever, shrieking and screaming in pain forever and ever and ever. Of course, if that were true, then the saved mothers who have gone to heaven will see some of their children down there shrieking; because they seem to be able to see them and know what's going

on. Well, this world has been terribly deceived; and they just simply don't understand it.

Some look at a passage in the fourteenth chapter of John, where Jesus said He was going to heaven; and He said, "*If I go,*" that He would come again. But they forget about His coming again. But He said, "*In My Father's house are many mansions.*" Now, if you will go to the original Greek in which that was written, you'll find it means positions, occupations, positions of government—not houses to live in, built out of wood or stone or brick, but **positions**. (Some can't understand. "If You went to prepare those places, why we don't go on to heaven?") And then He said, "*I will come again, and receive you unto Myself.*" And so they think that, when He comes, He's only coming to meet us as we take off to heaven.

They overlook I Thessalonians in the fourth chapter, where it says that at that time the dead in Christ will be resurrected, and they shall rise first; and we which are alive will not prevent (or precede) their coming. They will rise first. And we which are alive and remain shall be instantly translated from mortal unto immortal, and shall be caught up together with them in the clouds **TO MEET THE LORD** in the air. He's not coming to meet us as we go to heaven. **We are going to meet Him, as He returns here.**

But where does He go? Zechariah fourteen says that very same day we're going to meet Him in the air in the clouds. And He's coming on down from those clouds and land on the Mount of Olives, just to the east of Jerusalem. They overlook that entirely. They only read a few of the scriptures. They leave out the ones that would entirely negate everything they have claimed and everything they believe.

The Whole Picture

But why is it of such great importance? Why do I say that it will be **the**

greatest event in the entire universe so far? To understand that we have to go back to the very beginning; and I want to go through it, and skip through it real rapidly. We need to have a background. You need to get the whole picture. We can get little details; and you can get lost in the detail if you don't know what goes around, and what's on the other side.

Now think of it, the old saying, "A bear went over the mountain. He went over the mountain to see what he could see. And the other side of the mountain was all that he could see" when he went over. Well, most people don't know anything except what they see immediately around them. We need to go back in time. We need to go out in space. We need to get THE WHOLE PICTURE. And in that whole picture I want to give you something that perhaps you hadn't realized quite before this afternoon.

I said a while ago that God and the Word (that in the Greek language was called the Logos), who was with God and was God but another personage altogether. The Logos became flesh and dwelt among us, and became Jesus Christ. And of Him it is said, in the book of Hebrews, that He was "*without father, without mother, without descent, without beginning of days or end of life.*" The same is true of God the Father. Now, in Him was life. In the Father was life. And, if He had life, He had movement and action; and He was doing something. Well, when Jesus was on Earth, He said, "*I work and My Father works.*" They did work. But how did They work? What did They do? We find the Bible reveals They were Creators.

Now, They had a job to do; and there were two of Them. They were two different personages, yet both were God. The Word was with God, but the Word also was God. And so God is God, and the Word is God. Well, I am Armstrong; and my two sons were Armstrong; and all of my male grandsons are Armstrong—but they're different people. So the Word finally became the Son of God by being born of the human virgin, Mary. But He had existed from eternity with God.

Now what did They do way back there before He became Jesus Christ? That was before there was any earth. That's before there was any universe. They were Creators. And, to create, They had to think out a plan and a design, and design what was to be created. They had to create whatever was made. It first was spirit. (I was going to say "the material" that anything they created was made of, but angels are not material even. They're spirit beings.) Now the first thing that the God Family... And God is a family. The first thing that the God Family—God and the Word—created were angels.

Now, if They are working to do something, They have to have some kind of relationship in the way that They work together and do it. And "*two cannot walk together except they be agreed.*" Well, They were **perfectly agreed**. Jesus was the Word; but He said, "*I have spoken nothing except what My Father told Me to speak.*" He said, "*I have kept My Father's commandments.*" He said "*My Father is greater than I.*" And another time He thought it not robbery to say that He was equal with His Father. He was **equal** in the family sense, just as a son may be equal to his human father. He's a human being the same as his human father is, but he's not equal in AUTHORITY. And Jesus was not quite equal in authority, but He was as a being.

Finally, after He had been born human and after He had ascended up to heaven (where He said He would go and that He would come again), God had turned **ALL POWER** in heaven and in Earth, in the entire universe, over to Jesus Christ. But He still operates it, and does everything He does, as His Father dictates. "*Two can't walk together except they be agreed.*"

The Law Of Love

Again let me tell you, two cannot walk together except one is **the leader**, the boss. People don't believe that today. God made the husband the

head of the wife. You'll never find a real happy marriage unless the husband is the head of the wife. They might even get along to a certain extent. They might kid themselves they are happy, but they are not as happy. They don't know real happiness unless they are happy in the way God intended them to be.

Now, the wife is equal with her husband. She is a human being the same as he is. She's an heir of salvation, the same as he is. But he is the leader. Jesus is equal with God the Father. He is God. But **God is in charge**. They are not equal in authority.

Now the first thing that They created was angels. And each angel was created separately and individually. Angels were not reproduced or born as humans are. Each one of us humans has come from a mother impregnated by a father, and it took a father and a mother to produce each one of us. Angels have no father or mother except that (in the sense of being their Creator) they have been called "sons of God". You find that in the first chapter of Job. But we also find in Job 38 that, at the time of the creation of the Earth, the angels were singing; and the archangels shouting for joy because this Earth was made to be their abode.

Now, God created the Earth. Well, how did the sun and the moon get there? How did Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, the other planets of our solar system, how did they come to exist? How did our whole system which is part of a Milky Way, which is one galaxy, come to exist? And there are many other galaxies besides the galaxy of which our Milky Way is one, and our solar system is even part of that. **God created it all**. In Ephesians 3:7, "*God created all things by and through Jesus Christ.*" So, in a sense, Jesus Christ was the Maker; but He only made by His word. He spoke, and it was done; and He only spoke what the Father told Him to speak. There was complete harmony and unity.

How did they live together? They lived in LOVE—love one to the other. The Son loved the Father, and obeyed Him. The Father loved the Son. And, when He became Jesus and was born and was being baptized in the River Jordan, God the Father said “*You are My **beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.***” He loved the Son. Jesus loved the Father, and obeyed Him. There was absolute cooperation. Now how did they live? They lived by the way of love—which is cooperation, mutual respect, working together; but one in leadership. And in the Bible we read that there is one lawgiver. Jesus Christ is not that lawgiver. GOD THE FATHER IS THE LAWGIVER. But God the Father judges no man. He’s turned all judgment over to Jesus Christ the Son.

So there is **organization**. And there had to be organization. And to have organization you have to have some sort of **government**. You have to have a structure by which people operate together, or you have friction and one against the other; and finally anarchy and self-destruction.

Now, the way they operated together was LOVE; and love is an outgoing concern toward the other. That becomes a **law** because what is a law now? When I made a very short address before the Graduate School of the Constitutional Law Department of the Law School of the University of Southern California, I gave them a definition of law. I said, “I’m not a lawyer. I haven’t studied your law books here. But I have studied a law Book that,” I said, “you may not even have in your library here; but it’s the foundation of all law books. It’s one called the Holy Bible; and it speaks about law from the very beginning to the very end, all the way through. And lawyers ought to know what it says about law, if they want to know about law.” You know, later they did look it up and found one copy of that book in their whole library, the law library in the University of Southern California. So they told us that they were ordering, I think, about a dozen more Bibles.

Well, law is merely **the rules of human conduct**. It’s a rule which, if you violate it, brings with it penalty. Now you might call the rules of a

football game (and football is just on now, I guess) the rules are a law. And if there is a violation, if a man is offside, that's a violation. They fine that team by a five-yard penalty. There are certain other violations. If they violate that law, or that rule, it could be ten or fifteen yards. A law brings a penalty. And a law is merely rules of human performance or conduct.

Now the first thing that God created was angels. He had a law that they should love one another; and love is an **outgoing** thing from one toward others, of having concern for the welfare of the other, (That's what it amounts to.), and cooperation with the other, being of kindly feeling toward the other—not hostility (just the opposite) but rather cooperation. That was the relationship between God and the Word, and it was cooperation.

And That Means Government

Now I've gone over all this before; and I'm going to go over some more of this because I want to come to something. So God put angels on this Earth—perhaps a third of them, because a third of them went wrong; and I would assume that probably those were the third that were on the Earth. Anyway, He put a super archangel... And there are three kinds of angels: ordinary angels, and seraphs, and then cherubs. Cherubs are the highest, and only three of them are mentioned in the Bible. If God has created more, He doesn't tell us. But He does mention the three, and gives us their names. They are Michael, and Gabriel, and Lucifer.

Lucifer is the one who was one of two whose wings had spread out over the very throne of God in God's heaven. And God's heaven, I guess you would think of it as being on a planet where gravity keeps drawing it down. But you see originally there was no Earth. There was no matter of any kind. Everything was spirit, out in space. But there was a throne of God, and God is RULER. And the very fact that God began to create others, there had to be

rules that applied to their conduct (one with the other) so they could work together and do what they were given to do. And that means **government**.

The government is based on the principle of love. Now, for humans, that is given in the Ten Commandments. The first four of which tell us how to love God, define love—that is, the general principles of love toward God. And the last six give the general principles of how we love neighbor. But that’s only in principle. Sin is transgression of the law; and sin is transgression of the obvious intent or principle of that law (not just the letter of the law), if we understand it. You read of that in the third chapter of II Corinthians. But God had to have organization.

God Creates In Dual Stages

Now, when He created the earth, He created the entire universe at the same time. In Genesis 1 and verse 1, “*In the beginning*” Elohim, which is translated into the English word ”*God*” (And it should be “Gods.” It’s in the plural.), “*created the heavens*”(And that should be plural and is in the original language as Moses wrote it.) “*and the earth.*” So the heavens—everything in the whole universe—was created at the same general time.

Now in the second chapter of Genesis you read about “*in the day*” in which God created the heavens and the earth. That means the entire universe. But their “day” doesn’t necessarily mean... Day is used in two ways in the Bible. Sometimes it’s a twenty-four hour day consisting of a light part we call day and the dark part we call night. The seven days in the first chapter of Genesis were twenty-four hour days. But here it speaks of day in the general sense of an approximate time. That’s without regard as to whether it is twenty-four hours or maybe several days, or it could be maybe twenty-four years or more. But it’s an approximate general time.

God created the universe. He had created a whole universe. Now we

find that He put the angels on this Earth, and we find a great deal of evidence in the Bible. And, of course, I've written on this. It was in the book on the Human Potential. You'll also find it in the book that has just been printed [Mystery of the Ages], and many of you haven't received your copy as yet. Some of you have. All will receive it, at least at the Feast of Tabernacles, if not sooner. There will be a copy, at least, for every family in the Church; and we are sending a copy, by the way, to all co-workers too.

Anyway, God had **A GREAT PURPOSE!** When He created the universe, He wanted that universe perfected. Now God creates in **dual stages**, not all at once. It's like a woman baking a cake. She makes the cake first; but it's not complete until she takes it out of the oven, and then later puts the icing on it. Now what she takes out of the oven is good as far as it's gone. There's nothing wrong with it. It just needs to be a little something more added to it.

When God created the heavens and the Earth, He took one planet; and that one planet was called Earth. And that planet God had designed and intended to become **His headquarters OF THE WHOLE UNIVERSE.** Now I don't think you've heard that spoken of before. So I think you'll find something of it in The Human Potential book.

He put angels here, to try them, to see if they could do what He wanted done. He had created the Earth; and, as far as He went, everything He had done was very good. Not ordinary good, VERY good! But it wasn't complete. The icing wasn't on the cake yet. He put angels here on the Earth, and He intended angels to work the Earth. The Earth comes in three different forms: The solid part of the Earth, which consists of rock and metals, iron, steel, all kinds of metals. It consists of dirt. And it consists then of liquid which can be water, oil and various liquids. And it consists of gas, which we call air or gases. For example, one which we call H₂O, or water, at 212 degrees F, it begins to be converted into steam or a gas that goes up and just

goes into the air. At below 32 degrees F it becomes a solid (just like rock) and we call it ice. You know you can melt gold; you can melt silver; you can melt bronze until they flow just like thick water.

Now there are forces in the Earth. There are elements that produce electricity in the Earth. There are elements that can produce great power. Oil can burn. We find elements in the Earth that can explode. Now we find what they can do with an atom, and that there is energy and power within the matter of the Earth.

A State Of Decay

God intended the angels to try out on the Earth first, before they went to the other planets and the other places in our solar system (in our galaxy called the Milky Way, and other galaxies). This was the try out—the Earth. He wanted them to WORK the Earth, and beautify it, and improve the face of the surface of the Earth, and make it more beautiful. Instead, they defiled the Earth. They ruined it, and it went into a state of decay. And decay is not a created state. God cannot and never did create anything in a state of decay.

But now, while I'm on that, we find that the moon is in a state of decay. I knew all along that Mars and the other planets in our solar system are in a state of decay. When they first landed a camera in an unmanned spacecraft on the face of Mars and it sent photographs back here, we could see nothing but decay. Now decay is not an original created condition. It had become that way.

Instead of improving the Earth, the angels destroyed it; and they became demons. And Satan rebelled against **the government of God**. The government of God would have given them the way of teamwork, of working together and cooperation, organization to produce a result. Instead of that, there was chaos; and they rebelled against God, and against God's basic

principle of government—which is love. And they went into competition and strife and hatred and destruction, instead of construction.

Then, in six days, God renewed the face of the Earth **for mankind**(as you read in the, I guess, in Psalm 103). God renewed the earth back as it had been before He put the angels on it. Then He put MAN on here, and He intended MAN now to do what the angels should have done. He put man here to try man out, to see if he could do this earth—the idea being that, if they could finish the Earth properly, then they could go to all these other planets and the entire universe and beautify it and perhaps put life forms on all these other planets and all the places in this whole vast universe that goes farther than any astronomer even knows. So He put one man on the Earth.

Now in the beginning God had created the heavens and the Earth, and He'd put the angels here, but a lot of things happened between that first verse and the second verse of Genesis 1. The angels had destroyed things, and the archangel Lucifer had become Satan the devil. The angels with him, which were a third of all of the angels, had followed him. He'd probably talked them into it, convinced them; and they became demons. And they were bent on destruction and chaos, and not order and beauty and joy and happiness.

Let Us Reproduce Ourselves

And so God, in six days, renewed the face of the Earth. And God said, in the first chapter of Genesis verse 26, while He was reshaping the Earth (after He had brought about life, brought land out from the water, created the sun and the moon to shine on the Earth, had created fish and water animals in the seas, fowl in the air and some on the earth, and land animals on the Earth, even down to insects and everything), then God said, in verse 26, “*Let Us make man in **Our image, after Our likeness.***” In other words, “**LET US REPRODUCE OURSELVES.**”

God created angels, and they turned wrong. Now no one but God Himself, He knew, could be depended on and relied upon never to go contrary to His law of love. And that **law of love** was necessary to work together to have the organization so that they could reclaim **THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE**, not just this Earth alone. This earth is only a trial place. And this life... When He said *“Let Us make man in Our image,”* He made him with mortal life—not immortal life!

So, in Genesis 2:7 we read, that God *“formed man of the dust of the ground.”* And into the dust of the ground He breathed the breath of life. And man, made out of the dust of the ground, became a living soul. The dust of the ground became a living soul. And now people have been deceived into thinking that man is a soul, and that a soul is spiritual. No, a soul is living matter, breathing the breath of air, and with a circulation of blood in it; and the life comes from the blood and the breath of air.

But there is **a spirit in man**. God put a spirit in man. But the spirit was not enough. The man needed another Spirit to go with that spirit, just like God Himself needed someone to go with Him. So there was the Word, who became Christ; and They two became ONE GOD. And God is a family, and They are THE GOD FAMILY. They’re one family, but They’re two persons.

Now They said *“Let Us reproduce ourselves. Let Us make man in Our image.”* In other words, *“Let’s increase Our Family.”* It’ll still be one family, and we become **one with God**. Man was made with a spirit. If the Spirit of God comes into him that begets him—by a process of reproduction—to be reproduced as a God-being; and that unifies him with God. The Spirit of God joins with the spirit of man, and the two join together (like a husband and wife join together) to form one family. And the Spirit of God joins with the human spirit of man to form one God, but only **in the begettal state** in this life. We are only like an embryo, or a fetus, not yet born.

The First Man Adam

So God created one man, and all human life has come from that one man. You say “Well, didn’t He create Eve?” No, He made Eve out of Adam. He put Adam into a deep sleep, and took out one of his ribs, and turned it into a woman; and Eve came out of Adam. But they could reproduce, and they had children; and their children had children; and all those children had children. And today, there are about between four and a third and four and a half billion of us humans on the face of the earth today. That’s quite a swarm of people!

Now, the first man Adam had a chance to do what Satan had not done, and to submit to the government of God, and to organize. Then he would have children, and he would organize the children into a government of cooperation, of mutual love and concern, for they would work together in an organized way of government. They would work the Earth and do just what the angels should have done, and beautify this Earth.

God gave them a sample. He took the man and the woman He had created and put them in a beautiful garden that God created, called the Garden of Eden. Maybe that was to show them how the rest of the world, the earth, should be made. And maybe He intended them even to beautify the Garden of Eden, because He put them there to dress it and to keep it. But Satan got to mother Eve, and she took of the tree that she was forbidden to take of, and gave it to Adam, and he took of it too. And so they simply followed Satan instead of God.

God gave them permission to have of every tree in the Garden except one—the knowledge of good and evil. But also in that garden was the Tree of Life. Now, if they had taken the Tree of Life (that was God-life), the Spirit of God would have come into them. They would have been united with God; and, **united with God**, they would be like Christ is united with God. As a

human being, He is “the Son of God.” And Adam would have become a son of God—“a begotten son of God”. He would have had God’s Spirit. That would have connected him with God. And God’s mind would have come into him, just like the mind of God can come into us.

The Spirit Of God

In Philippians it says [{1}](#), “*Let this mind be in you which is in Christ Jesus.*” The Spirit of God coming into us is really coming in with our spirit—to join it, and join us with God—until we begin to see things as God does and to understand spiritual knowledge, because the human eye cannot see and knowledge cannot enter through the eye or the ear cannot hear. Nor has it entered into the mind of man the spiritual things that God has prepared and the spiritual knowledge. But God reveals it to some of us. God reveals it. Not the Holy Spirit reveals it, GOD DOES.

But how does He reveal it? By the Spirit, which is after the Spirit of God is in us. In other words, without the Spirit of God you can’t understand it. When God reveals it, you don’t understand the revealing; but with the Holy Spirit, you can. But it is God who does the revealing, not the Holy Spirit (if you notice the wording in I Corinthians 2:10). But then it shows, in verse 11, that there is a spirit in man; and no man can have the knowledge that he has (an animal can’t have it, and man could not have it) save for the spirit of man which is in him. That’s the human spirit. In the same way, we can’t understand the spiritual things **except THE SPIRIT OF GOD is in us, with the human spirit.**

Christ Called Out A Few

Now God gave man the chance to do what the angels have not done. But the first man turned wrong, Adam. So God closed up the Tree of Life

from Adam's descendants—Cain, and Abel, and Seth, and the others that came along. The Tree of Life was closed except that God opened it to certain ones to prepare for something later, the same as He is opening it to those in His Church. He's calling certain ones out of this world that had been developed, influenced by Satan; and Satan holds the world captive.

I'll pass over the early ones; because, of course, Abel is called "righteous Abel." And Enoch walked with God. And there was Noah, who was a preacher of righteousness. But we'll go on to Abraham, because all the promises of God have come from Abraham; and passed on through Isaac and Jacob, and to a certain extent to Joseph. And then there were the prophets of the Old Testament, in the nation Israel. Now God did give them His Holy Spirit for the writing of the Bible and as a part of the foundation of what was to become His Church. And in due time He sent the Logos—who was made flesh, and became a human being, and dwelt among us, and became Jesus Christ. He came as the second Adam. He came to do what the first Adam should have done—should have received the Spirit of God, and been one with God, and had the love of God within him, and then organize and carry on the government of God on the earth.

Jesus Christ called out a few to start the formation of the government of God **in the Church**. There was Peter and Andrew, and they were fisherman. Jesus walked along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, and He called them; and He drafted them. He said, "Come, follow Me." And they had to forsake all, and follow Him; and they did. He called twelve to start with. He started with those twelve, and He taught them for three and a half years. Then He paid the price of the penalty of human sin.

Lamb Of God

Now, at the time God shut up the Tree of Life, which means He shut up

the Holy Spirit from all flesh except those that were called for the Church. Just that one exception—otherwise it's still closed to everybody else. At that time, God said it was already decreed that Christ would come as a Lamb of God to be slain to pay the penalty in our stead, because sin is the transgression of God's law. Adam had broken it. All of his sons had broken it. And the penalty is death! But Jesus came and did not sin. And, when He died, He took our sin on Him; and He paid the penalty, and paid it in our stead.

Then God resurrected Him from the dead. He had not sinned. And now He has **all power** that He originally had, which he had forsaken and given up to come down here to start the Church, to lead us and to show us the right way, and to pull us out of Satan's world, and to pay the penalty in our stead that we could be reconciled back to God the Father. Now, we are not saved by His blood. By His death we are reconciled to God. And God is the one who has immortal life to give. But, if we repent and if we accept what Christ did for us and accept Him as personal Savior (and repent means that we are going to live God's way from here on), we repent of having broken it because we didn't go that way; and we change our life. It means a totally changed life—from here on, to **live BY GOD'S LAW**. And God's law is the direction of the way to live (not the way that seems right to a man).

Now the churches of this world only follow the way that seems right to a man, the same way as Adam did. But God formed a Church that would have His Holy Spirit. And God would come into those in the Church that He called, that God the Father would draw to Him. And Jesus said no man could come to Christ except God the Father would draw them.

And so Jesus paid the penalty. He rose, and went to heaven to be our High Priest, and prepare positions for us as our High Priest—in training us in this life so that, if we overcome, when He comes to rule the Earth and take over the throne from Satan, we shall sit on that throne with Him. And, if we overcome, He will give us power just as He has power over the nations; and

we will rule them. And God will set up His Kingdom, His government, on the Earth. And we are the ones that are preceding, in the Church. And the second coming of Christ is going to be followed by the next annual holy day, the Day of Atonement, which means putting Satan off that throne; and Christ will sit on it.

Now, when Christ comes, Satan will still be on the throne. And Christ isn't going to have Satan put off before Christ comes, but after He comes. Maybe it'll be ten actual literal days apart. We don't know. That's the way the holy days are arranged anyway. Of course, it doesn't mean that Christ will come on this certain day in just so many years from now. But there is ample reason to think that things have happened that way in the fulfillment of prophecies previously in the other holy days, and it could happen that way. But we don't know because God had said that no man, not even Christ, knew the time or the day or the hour when Christ would come. Only the Father knows that. So we can't set any time whatsoever. But we do know by all signs and enough of the prophecies that we know it's now near. It's even at the door. It's very close to us now. We are the last generation of this world and this age!

In The Twinkling Of An Eye

Then Christ is to come. And when He comes, the dead in Christ are going to rise first. Now, I can't tell you for certain whether that includes Abel and Enoch and Noah. But I know it'll include Abraham, Isaac and Jacob because Jesus Himself said to the Pharisees, "*You will see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the Kingdom of God and you yourself thrust out.*" It will include the prophets, because they are part of the foundation of the Church. It will include those that have had the Holy Spirit of God and have been overcomers, right down to us if we are overcomers today. And if we are still living, the dead will come first. They will rise first, at the coming of Christ.

Then we will be changed in the twinkling of an eye, from mortal to immortal, and rise and meet them in the air.

But we are only going to meet Christ as He's on the way back to the Earth. He's not meeting us. We're not going to heaven. There is not a word in the Bible that says we will ever go to heaven. God has ordained that **this Earth is going to be the headquarters OF THE UNIVERSE**. But we have to learn first how to work this Earth and turn it into the kind of beauty that it should be.

You know, there is one little comment I'd like to say right here. We are part of the remnant of God's one true Church of the Philadelphia era. There is another era yet to come. I think it'll only exist briefly, at the most about two-and-half or three years. But, in any event, this Church has taken what was the nearest thing to a slum in Pasadena, which is the very ground on which we are stationed right here, right now! And here is, in some respects, the most beautiful building on the face of the earth put here. This was all slums, and the most beautiful place in Pasadena is this campus. And we have taken it—or rather, Christ has taken it, and used us and we have submitted to Him and He has done it (we haven't really)—and turned it into beauty. Now that's what is going to be done with the whole Earth during the Millennium, and during the Millennium that we will celebrate with the Feast of Tabernacles that is soon coming up. [{2}](#)

Seven Annual Holy Days

So God has given the Church seven annual Holy Days. Now He gave the Sabbath to man. And Jesus said the Sabbath was made for man; and therefore Jesus, the Son of man, is Lord of the Sabbath day. So the Sabbath is the Lord's Day, not Sunday. The Sabbath was given when man was made. Man was made on the sixth day of what is called "Creation Week", which is

only a re-creation; and, on the very next day, God made the Sabbath for man. The first thing He made for man was the Sabbath.

But He didn't give man the annual holy days until the Church started. And the Church started in two phases. One was the physical material phase of ancient Israel. And the other is the spiritual phase, which is the Church of God that started with Christ. And so the annual holy days were given to ancient Israel, and they didn't know the meaning of it.

God caused me to see that He had ordained these days forever, and they should be kept. And so back in the year of 1927, I saw that we should keep these annual Sabbath days; and I said, "We shall keep them." And my wife and I began doing it. However, we couldn't convince anyone else to do it with us. For about seven years, we did it alone by ourselves. But we didn't know why. We didn't know the meaning. We just knew God commanded it; and we said, "If God commands it, we're going to obey. We will obey first, and let God show us why later." So later God did show us why.

These days are picturing the plan of God, working out His purpose here below—which Winston Churchill talked about. It begins with the Passover in the spring, the crucifixion of Christ. That made possible the beginning of the Church. The Church is starting **a new creation, A SPIRITUAL CREATION**. The Church is starting **THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD** all over again. We've had the government of man.

As In Adam, All Die

Adam chose the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, doing what seemed right to him, relying on himself, doing what he thought was right. Oh yes, there was good as well as evil in human nature and man. There's good in the world. Sure, there are people that have ethics, good morals, good intentions; but it's all on the human level, and it's all on the self-centered

level. It's a long ways from being on the high plane of the love of God which, shed in our hearts, alone can fulfill the law of God. That is a **spiritual love** that transcends anything that a human can have till they have the Spirit of God.

But God also decreed, as He decreed that Christ would come when He closed off the Tree of Life, He decreed that it was appointed for men to die once and after that the judgment. Then, as we read in I Corinthians 15:22, "*As in Adam all die,*" because all have sinned in Adam, "*so in Christ shall ALL be made alive.*" EVERYONE who has sinned and died; and all have died that are say under 140 years of age today, because there is no one quite that old on Earth. I think, if God would extend my life, that I could get fairly close to it. I'm in my ninety-fourth year now. I don't know how long God will extend this life. That's up to Him, and you brethren had better understand that. There's no guarantee that He's going to extend it on and on and on and on. I'm going to hope He will. As long as He wants to use me, I think He will. But, when David was old and stricken with years (23 years younger than I am), He let king David die. And David was a man after His own heart, and David was ruling His people.

So God determines a lot of these things. We can't of our wishful thinking do it either. And we need to realize that; and take it a little bit seriously, brethren. Your faith must not be in me. It must be in Jesus Christ. He's the Head of the Church. I'm not. And if I were not here, it would be another who would become the Pastor General. And if that should ever happen, if you want to get into God's Kingdom you will follow that Pastor General; and you will remain united, and you will remain one. And your eternity depends on that, every one of you. Don't you forget it. Because 10 years ago this Church was very seriously (it's a matter of seven or eight years ago) still divided. Thank God, it's not really divided today. There may be a little contention here or there that maybe we just haven't quite discovered.

Maybe some have a little contention they are keeping to themselves. It hasn't surfaced. But we have such wonderful cooperation now, such a wonderful attitude and spirit of love, the Spirit of God and of God's Holy Spirit.

Brethren, do everything and pray your heart out that it can continue that way in the Church.

The Government Of God

Anyway, now to finish: When Jesus comes, Satan will have been discredited. The Church will be then made immortal, and ALL THE GOVERNMENT will be restored. In Acts 3:19-21, the heavens have received Jesus **until** the time of restitution of all things. And then He's coming back again. Restitution means restoring to a former state or condition, or restoring what had been taken away. He's coming to **restore the Kingdom of God**. There was an Elijah to come and to restore things in the Church. That has happened. And what has been restored is THE GOVERNMENT OF GOD, and many of the truths. At least 17 or 18 principle, vital, doctrines of truth have been added to about the three that had survived in the Sardis era of the Church that they still had. But they had clung on to those three. But they didn't know about the government of God in the Church. They didn't know about what I'm telling you today. They didn't know about these holy days.

So, to start with, the Passover. Then follows seven days putting sin out of our lives. But we can't do it alone, without the Spirit of God. So then comes the next holy day, the Day of Pentecost, the coming of the Holy Spirit. And then comes this whole Church age. And the next thing to happen after that, and after this nineteen hundred and some years of the Church age, is **the second coming of Christ**. He's coming to take over the government of the earth, and He's coming to restore GOVERNMENT!

It has been restored into this Church. And there are those that are just

waiting for me to die; and, like buzzards, they would like to come and gobble up all you people, and tell you that no one else is fit to lead you but them. And they look to human charisma, someone who has a certain personality, someone who's a good entertainer; but God looks on the heart. Don't forget it, brethren. People are always fooled by human personality, and the charisma that attracts them right to someone. That must never happen in this Church. And I am going to do all I can to stay alive and prevent it happening as long as I can.

Now, when Christ comes, the government of God will be restored. And for one thousand years we go through the time reflected and foreshadowed by the Feast of Tabernacles—a thousand years! I think it will take at least three generations before we can weed out all of the evils and have a real utopia here on earth, but it'll come. It will come, and it will come comparatively fast.

Loosed For A Little Season

At the end of that time, Satan will be loosed for a little season at the end of the Millennium. And there is great possibility that he was supposed to be in the six thousand year period in God's plan, before the Second Coming of Christ. And He's coming a little sooner than that because He's going to cut the Great Tribulation and this time short, because there wouldn't be a human being left alive if He didn't. That little space that He cuts short may be added on the end of the Millennium. And that's when Satan will be loosed for a little while to go out and deceive those that are living, and yet have not been made immortal, and are the last generation of that thousand years.

And after that Satan and those he leads will be put away and reserved for the lake of fire. And then will come the one hundred years of the Great White Throne Judgment. And everybody who's ever lived will be resurrected.

And, at the end of that time, God's purpose of humanity—of reproducing Himself—will have been completed. And then, finally, the New Jerusalem is coming down. There will be a new heaven and a new earth, and even God the Father is coming to this earth. And this earth is going to be the headquarters of the universe.

Greatest Event Of The Universe

And according to the second chapter of Hebrews and the eighth chapter of Romans, the whole universe is in decay—waiting for the appearance of the sons of God, resurrected; and finally God's purpose in humanity completed. And then we are going to **restore** all of these planets from decay, like this earth. And this earth is just a place of starting. This life, brethren, is one of qualifying. This life is one of qualifying to reign and rule with Christ. Not just to get saved, not just to get into the Kingdom; but to **qualify** for a big position. And this earth then will be made as it should be and as all planets should be.

And this is where we are, practicing so that we can then begin to go throughout ALL ETERNITY into ALL THE UNIVERSE. And the Second Coming of Christ is that event which will start everything in the government of God to doing that for the first time. It will be **the greatest event that has ever happened in the history of THE UNIVERSE**. Not just the history of man, not just the history of this earth; but the greatest event that has ever happened in the history of the universe—when Christ comes to take over the government of God and to rule the earth. And the earth will be the headquarters of God. He didn't create all these planets and all this great universe in vain. It's in decay now, and it is in vain. Of course, a thousand years are like a day and a day is like a thousand years to God. And there is a lot of time. Eternity is a long time ahead. And ultimately God is going to make something beautiful out of this entire vast universe.

Jesus said, if we overcome, we will sit with Him on that throne. We will be given power over the nations. Are you overcoming, brethren? Examine your own self. That's something I can't do for you. I can teach you. Did you listen, and did it sink in? Well, keep it there; and meditate on it, and be sure and make your calling and election sure.

Thank you, brethren.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editorial note: Wrong chapter referred to. The original says: "Let's see. It's the fourth chapter, or the third."

[{2}](#) - Editorial note: Random comments omitted. The original says: "I can't see any more. I just want to see that I'm not running way over on time. God is always on time, and I like to be. I like to have our services start and end on time, and I usually do; but sometimes I run over. And I just wanted to check."

How Good and How Pleasant

Sermon (September 29, 1985) – Feast of Tabernacles
by Herbert W. Armstrong

Table of Contents

How Good and How Pleasant.....	1947	How God And The Word Live	1964
God's Sabbaths	1949	What God Does	1965
God Reveals Knowledge	1950	Angels Created First	1966
The Human Spirit	1951	Physical Universe Created	1968
Mystery Of The Ages	1955	God's Plan For Humans	1969
Having Unity	1957	As God Decreed	1972
Here For A Foretaste	1959	God's Holy Days	1973
Who And What God Is	1963		

...[1](#) that you find mentioned in the 7th and the 14th chapter of the book of Revelation, that are going to have the seal of God and sealed against the plagues of God that are going to be poured out just before the Second Coming of Christ. That shows you how close we are to the time of Christ's Second Coming. He's coming very, very soon now.

Tonight I'm going to have to just talk to you. In order that you can hear this tonight, it had to be recorded in advance, several weeks in advance. I recorded it at a time when a certain ... I guess it was a flu bug (I don't know just what it was.) had been going around. Several of our ministers and many of our members had been having it. And I'll have to tell you that I am talking to you now with a slight temperature. I'm not quite over it yet; but, by the time you hear this, I hope I will have been completely over it.

Now, in the meantime, since last year I have passed my 93rd birthday; and I am now in my 94th year. I want to tell you how it came about that I discovered these festivals, and that God had commanded them to be continued forever [2](#). I want to tell you something about it. First though let me just mention that not only are there about 131,000 of you attending but

you are attending in 90 different Feast sites (That's just a few less than the number of years I have lived.) and in 50 countries around the world. Half a hundred different nations and different countries, all around the world! And somehow, directly or indirectly, you are all **my children** in the Lord [{3}](#).

I have been observing these festivals now for 58 years, longer than any of you. And so I look on you as my children; and I am going to talk to you tonight as a father. Now I have a Bible in front of me. But, you know, I can't read a word of it. Last year, when I talked to you on this program the night of the very beginning of the Festival of Tabernacles, I was able to read scriptures and to read some notes. My eyes have been failing. Since a year ago, my eyesight has gone to the place I can't read even a note. I can't read a scripture. I am going to have to just talk to you, and I talk to you as my children; and I think you'll just have to look on me as your father tonight.

I want to tell you how this all came about. I was 34 years old. I had been successful in business; but God had finally called me, and He had had me challenged on two different questions: One, the question of evolution – which is the atheists explanation (or attempted explanation) of how there could be a creation without any planning, or design, or production by the thinking mind of the great Creator. Otherwise, the other challenge was on the question of Saturday instead of Sunday. That seemed like fanaticism to me at that time. And I had to go into an in-depth study in the subject of evolution.

You know, although my parents had come to the United States a hundred years before there was a United States (100 years before the Declaration of Independence) with William Penn (and they settled in Pennsylvania, which was named after William Penn), they were all Quakers. They came from England. I do have my genealogy traced all the way back to King Edward I of England; and, through the royal genealogy of the royal family of England, I have my genealogy every single generation back to King David of ancient Israel and Judah. I think that is significant that the one God

would call for what He has called me to do would be of the house of David.

But, you know, I began to realize I'd never even proved there was a God. I had gone to Sunday school as a boy, but I wasn't that much interested religiously; and I got away from it when I was 18 years of age, and quit attending church. Later on, my wife and I joined a Methodist church in Chicago, because it was convenient and handy. We liked the preacher. We like the people. That's why most people join a church. That's no reason to join a church at all, but we didn't know any better at that time.

In fact, you can't join God's Church. You never were joined. You were put in by the Spirit of God. You were baptized into the Church by the Spirit of God. That's the way we come into God's true Church.

God's Sabbaths

But I had to study the Sabbath question, and I had come to the place where I was just about ready to accept it; and then I came onto something in Colossians 2:14-16. That had to do with the Sabbath – the weekly Sabbath, the monthly new moons, and then the annual holy days. To me, it was like that said they are all done away. So I was just about to decide that I would give it up after all, and that Sunday must be the right day after all.

Then I went a little further, and I discovered something: that that was not doing away with the days at all, but rather establishing it; and that it then established the annual Sabbaths as well as the weekly Sabbaths. That's when I learned that we must keep the annual Sabbaths, and they had not been kept for hundreds, and hundreds, and hundreds of years in God's Church. But my wife and I began to keep them then, in the year of 1927. (I think that is 58 years ago.) Of course, she has passed on and is no longer with us; but I do continue. And now there are thousands of you that have joined in these days.

These days picture the very purpose and plan of God, and how God is working out His purpose and His plan here below. We are here now at this time for the Feast of Tabernacles. There are seven annual Sabbath days. One has already started tonight; and the other will be the 8th day, after the 7 days of the Feast of Tabernacles. That will be the final, seventh, annual Sabbath.

So I have been keeping these days all that time, and God restored it for you – for all of you – through me at that time. So give God praise and glory and credit. Of course, I deserve no credit whatsoever, and I suppose none of us does. God has all the glory, and all the praise and credit belongs to God.

But we are here to celebrate the coming of the Kingdom of God. Now we are living in a world that is in a great paradox. On the one hand, we are living in a world of the greatest accomplishment, the greatest progress that has ever happened since mankind has been on the face of this earth. If we have chronology right, people have been on this earth for almost 6,000 years.

I proved that evolution is not true. We didn't come through down any great stone age, and caveman time, and things of that sort. That's all a lot of rubbish that appears in the guise of intellectualism to deceive a lot of people. But people cannot understand the Bible, and they never did understand it. So evolution came along about 150 years ago and has grown until today it is generally accepted in all the institutions of higher learning, the universities and the colleges of higher education.

God Reveals Knowledge

Well, God opened my mind to the truth. Do you know, I found that the Bible is **a coded book** and that God didn't intend people to understand it until now. The prophet Daniel was given things to record as part of the Bible, and he wrote down what he heard. God was communicating to him through an angel; and Daniel wrote down, *"I heard, but I understood not."* Then the

angel said, “Well, just write it down, Daniel, and go your way.”

Daniel 12:9 *The words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end.* [And he said ...] *None of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.*

Now the words of the Bible had been closed and sealed **until our time**; and God began to open it to me, that you could understand. And it was through me that He opened to you that we should keep these days; and what a wonderful thing it has been that we have had these annual holy days, and especially the Feast of Tabernacles. I hope you enjoy it to the very full.

But God kept on revealing so much knowledge. I found the Bible is a coded book, and God did not intend for it to be understood until now. For example, you know Jesus spoke in parables a great deal; and the disciples didn't understand Him. They said, “Well, we don't understand the parable. Declare the parable to us. Tell us what You mean. Why do You speak in parables?” And Jesus said He spoke in parables so people wouldn't understand because He didn't intend them to get the meaning and understand it yet. No one seems to have understood why. Why wouldn't God want people to understand?

The Human Spirit

Well, I found that you go back to the very beginning – that God created the first man, Adam; and Adam was created with a human mind. Now, you know, even the psychologists today don't know what a human mind is. The human mind is a brain, but it is more than that. Animals have brains, just like we do – dogs, and horses, and cows, and cats, and elephants, and all kinds of animals. But do you know that the modern science of brain research has proved, when they have taken brains out and really looked at them, that the animal brains are just as good as the human brain; and the human brain is not

superior.

Then why does a human being know so much more than an animal? Why can a human think, and an animal can't think? How can a human have judgment and wisdom, and an animal can't? How do we appreciate music, and art, and literature; and an animal can't? Because what people don't understand, what none of the higher universities understand, what the great educated people of the world do not understand – it's all in God's Word, the Bible. This book right here.

God put **a human spirit**, along with the brain, in every human being. When you were born, there was a human spirit born with you. That spirit is in connection with your brain, and that spirit empowers your physical brain to think in the way that an animal can't think. It inspires your brain to come to comprehend knowledge that an animal can't comprehend at all.

You know, that's all in the Bible. In Job 32 and I believe verse 8, it says: "*There is a spirit in man.*" And in verse 18, that the spirit in man constrains him. Then we find about the spirit in man the 2nd chapter of I Corinthians. No man could have the knowledge that a human has (an animal can't have it, and no man could have it) except by "*the SPIRIT OF MAN, which is in him.*" But you know God made man to need another spirit.

Now God made the man just a man, one male man alone; and God wanted him to reproduce and have children. You know, the poor man couldn't do it. He didn't know how to have children. So God had to perform an operation on him. The Bible says God put him in a deep sleep. Today they call it giving him an anesthesia. That's the way they do in a hospital when they operate on you.

God took out one of his ribs, and God made a woman out of that rib and gave her to him as a wife. Now, the woman did not come from the dust of the ground. God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his

nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. So a soul is made out of matter, but the soul has a spirit in it. And, you know, people don't understand that today. They talk about a body, soul, and spirit; and they are all mixed up, and they don't know what they are because they don't understand the Bible.

But God began to give me understanding, way back there 58 years ago. And when I began to keep God's own law, to keep His Sabbath, to keep His annual Sabbaths ... and they picture God's plan and God's purpose, and this festival pictures the Second ... Well, the Second Coming of Christ is pictured back here about 5 days ago. No, no, I mean 15 days ago and at the Feast of Trumpets.

God's Holy Spirit

But then Satan the devil, and he had misled Eve; and then Adam deliberately sinned. The whole world has been sinning ever since, and the world was just kidnapped by Satan the devil. (The world has never understood these things.) And then God closed up the Tree of Life, and no one could have contact with God. The Tree of Life would have given Adam the Holy Spirit of God. The Tree of Life would have put **another spirit** in with his human spirit, and the two spirits together would have made them "one" with God.

Now there was Adam, a single man, but he was alone. He couldn't have children. So God made a woman, and the two of them became one family. Now he needed to have a second spirit, and then he would have been "one" with God. And, ultimately, we shall be "one" with God. Isn't that wonderful! And the world doesn't understand or comprehend it at all. It is just too bad. Well, we are here for a wonderful occasion – to celebrate the time after Jesus comes, when there will be a thousand years when we are going to rule and reign with Him.

Now Adam followed Satan. God closed up the Tree of Life, and it's been closed to all people; and salvation was closed. The world doesn't understand that, but salvation was closed to the world. Then God sent His own Son, Jesus Christ, as the second Adam. Jesus came as the second Adam to do what the first Adam should have done but didn't. He came, born with the Holy Spirit; and He never lost the Spirit of God. He had from birth the Spirit of God **with** the human spirit – the two joined together; and it connected Him with God. He was directly connected with God all His human life! But He was human as well as God. And so, when He died, He paid the penalty of your sins and mine because **GOD CREATED ALL THINGS BY JESUS CHRIST.**

Before Jesus was born as a human being, He was the Logos (as you read in John 1, in the New Testament). And God created ALL THINGS by Jesus Christ. You read that in Ephesians 3:9. God the Father had been closed off to all the world from Adam. Now, when Christ came, He said, "*I will build My Church.*" Now you and me, brethren, Jesus said (in the 3rd chapter and verse 21 of Revelation) that, if you and I overcome ... Now, we have to learn God's way first, and then overcome so we live according to that way of God. If we overcome, He will grant to us to sit with Him on His throne and help rule all the nations in the government of God under Him, when He comes.

Then, in Revelation 2:26-27, Jesus said if you overcome He will give you power over the nations, to rule them with a rod of iron. Brethren, you and I have been called to learn the truth. It's here, but it's in a coded message; and it's hidden from the world, and they don't understand it. But God has opened these truths to us; and much of the truth that you have learned God has brought to you through me. He's used me as a sort of father symbol to you. And, as I said in the beginning this evening, you are my beloved children in the Lord; and we have come to know these things.

We are called out of this world to learn God's way of living, and we are going to have to teach the whole world that way. We are not called just to get us saved and get us into heaven, and something like that. We are going to rule **RIGHT HERE ON THE EARTH!** We'll be both kings and priests – Revelation 5:10; and we will rule and reign here on the earth.

Mystery Of The Ages

Now, this last year (and since the Feast of Tabernacles last year) things began to come to me. I'll tell you how it came about. I got to looking into the biblical and religious curriculum in Ambassador College. I noticed that there was a lack of teaching about the Bible in the second year. So I began preparing a new book to be a textbook in Ambassador College. Now I didn't begin that until about November or December of last year; and I worked very hard on it now in my 93rd year, as I was. Out of it has come the most important book by far that God has ever written through me, and I think God wrote it through me.

I think it's the most important book in 1900 years, since the Bible. I worked very hard. You've heard somewhat about that book; and you know that I, just a couple of days ago, got to see myself the very first copy of it. And here is a copy – **MYSTERY OF THE AGES** – the most important book, I believe, that has been written in 1900 years. This book will open up the Bible so you can understand it. It takes the mystery away.

Now I think that carnal-minded people still will not understand it. But this is a complete full book. I just want to announce it to you; and at this Festival there will be a copy for every one, every family, of you. One to a family, they will be there for you; and we want you all to have it, and we want you to read it. I hope that you will **read it**, and I think it will open your eyes to the understanding of the Bible even more. I know your eyes have

already been opened to understand the Bible, but I think this will open them even more than they have been opened before. It is really the story of the Bible, but it makes the Bible clear – the things that have been a mystery to everybody.

It started out with my asking myself years ago: What am I? Who am I? Why am I? How did I come to be here? Why are people on the earth? Why are they put here? Are we here for a purpose? Or did we just happen – by evolution and some blind forces of nature – without any mind, or knowledge, or planning, or anything of the kind?

I just want to announce this book. A copy will be given you at this Festival, and may God help you to enjoy it. I am sure He will. Now I want you to enjoy the Feast. Brethren, the key really for this whole Feast is the Psalm that was my mother's favorite Psalm. So many people seem to think it was my wife's favorite. They get that a little wrong. It was my mother's favorite. It's the 133rd Psalm, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity.

Brethren, during the 1970s, there was quite a movement within the Church of **liberalism**, to get away from the real truth of God. Now we don't want to overdo the truth of God and to get straight-laced and go farther than God does – into fanaticism. We don't do that. On the other hand, we don't want to slide over towards the devil and the devil's way of life.

God has put His Church, in these last five years, **back on the track!** The Church today is growing as it never did before. And I want to tell you that, even through the summer (when we get fewer responses than any other time) on our television broadcasts around the world we have been getting an average of close to 17,000 or 18,000 telephone calls after every program. Think of 17,000 or 18,000 telephone calls coming in, and they are coming in that way every week. Our ministers are so busy – visiting people that are

prospective members, and people that are prospects for baptism, and bringing in new members into the Church – that we need more ministers.

Brethren, we have many ministers ready. They are educated. They have graduated from Ambassador College. But they have to earn a living, and so they have jobs. They would like to spend all their time as pastors of Churches, and going out and visiting people and bringing them into the Church. But they have to have a salary to do it. Otherwise, they just have to take their time on the job because they have their wives and children to support. So pray that God will send forth more laborers to the harvest.

Having Unity

The harvest is plenteous, but our laborers in God's Work now are too few. Remember that, and remember that we want to have **unity**– all of us together. And so now I am going to ask the Young Ambassadors to sing what they sang specially for me, right just to the garden to the side at the home where I live – that they sang for me in the last Young Ambassador film; and let that be a theme for this wonderful Feast of Tabernacles. So now have a good night's rest and sleep, and come back all refreshed tomorrow for the beginning of a wonderful Feast of Tabernacles; and God bless every one of you. Good night, brethren.

[Following, in *italics*, are the words of the song.]

How good and how pleasant for brethren to dwell, Together in unity, so David did tell; Like beautiful music, a breathtaking view, Like most precious ointment, like fresh morning dew.

That descended on the mountains of Zion long before; God commanded a blessing of life forevermore. How good and how pleasant for brethren to be Dwelling safely together in sweet harmony.

Now Jesus was praying with fervent desire, That all who believe might be one. With voices united, together we stand, At peace like the Father and Son.

[Chorus]

One body, one spirit, one Lord and one faith, One God, and one Father of all; One baptism into the Family of God, One hope, even as we are called.

[Chorus]

That descended on the mountains of Zion long before, God commanded a blessing of life forevermore. How good and how pleasant for brethren to be Dwelling safely together in sweet harmony.

Dwelling safely together in sweet harmony.

[Applause. Then the opening message from the previous year, 1984, is played – the transcript of which follows here.]

Well, greetings brethren. Not only to you here in Pasadena, but to all you brethren who just telephoned in from New Zealand that you are getting the program down there. Right now it is very close to 9 o'clock tomorrow morning in New Zealand, yet it is the same time that it is here not quite 2 o'clock in the afternoon. But I am speaking now by satellite to all of our brethren in all Feast sites in the United States, in Canada, and in England; and it is a wonderful thing that we can all be together. We can all sing together, sing the same hymns at the same time. As Mr. Tkatch remarked, wouldn't it be wonderful if we could hear what God does; and He sees and hears us all together at one and the same time. We are **at-one-ment** with God and with Christ. I think that's a most wonderful thing.

We are living in a world that has made tremendous progress. One great example of that progress, which is awesome, is the very fact that I can sit

right here and talk to ALL of our brethren ALL OVER the United States, and Canada, and Britain, and in New Zealand. If we only had the hook-up facilities, I could to the rest of our brethren all over the world. But, at the same time, we are living in a world of appalling evils, problems (unsolvable problems), troubles that are multiplying even much faster than the progress. Now, there is a reason.

Here For A Foretaste

We are here on the first day of the Feast of Tabernacles 1984 to sort of have a foretaste of that time described in your Bible in Revelation 11:15, when ALL the governments, and kingdoms, nations of this world will have become the kingdoms of our Lord and His Christ. It will no longer be run by the human beings who are under the influence of Satan the devil.

We are here to celebrate the time spoken of in the 11th chapter of Isaiah, when the wild animals will be changed. A young lamb will be playing with lions. Or, I mean, a young child will be out playing with a lion. When even the wild animals will be changed, and when we will have world peace.

We are here to enjoy a foretaste of the time spoken of in the 2nd chapter of Isaiah and about the first 9 or 10 verses – when the earth will be full of the knowledge of the Lord, and when they will beat their swords [{4}](#) into plowshares, their shears into pruning hooks, or the implements of war into implements of production. No one will learn war; and there will be no war anymore, but just **peace**.

We are here to celebrate the time when even THE WHOLE WORLD will begin to be made **at-one with God!** Today this world is at-one with Satan the devil. Now, for six thousand years, we have lived ... this earth has been populated by a humanity living in what might be called “the day of man,” or even more properly “the day of Satan.” This is **NOT GOD’S**

WORLD! This is Satan's world. We are here to celebrate the beginning of the time that will be God's world! It is not God's world yet. We in God's Church have been called out of Satan's world. We are the "come out" ones – those that have been called to **come out** and to follow Jesus Christ, and to be made now at-one with God.

But the world is not at-one with God. The world doesn't want to hear about God. God never enters in the minds, or the thoughts, or the activities of the people of this world. They are only concerned with the things of the ways of Satan. Satan is the author of vanity first of all, which has led to competition and strife, and attitudes of jealousy and envy, of hostility, of rebellion, of destruction, of tearing down (never building up), of wanting to get (never to give or to share).

Whereas God's way is the way of love. L-O-V-E. LOVE – the way of giving, of cooperating, of helping, of sharing, of having a concern for the good and the welfare of others of our own kind (the human kind, the people); but love first of all towards God, in obedience, in reverence, in worship, and in reliance and dependence on God. God who is love, who is THE GIVER of all good gifts and everything good; and the Giver finally (as we are going to see, in due time) the Giver of peace.

But we have been living in "the day of Satan." We are looking forward to a time when the whole world will be, as we have been called out of the world, to become now at-one with God! The time we call the Millennium – a thousand year period.

Now, when this gospel of the Kingdom of God is proclaimed in all of the world for a witness to all nations ... And it is now. The Plain Truth is going into every nation on the face of the earth today. In one way or another, we are getting the gospel into every nation on the face of the earth today. I don't know of any other church of any kind that is getting its message there,

although no other church HAS the gospel of Jesus Christ. They have a gospel **about** Jesus, many of them; but not the gospel **of** Jesus Christ – because His gospel was the gospel **about** the Kingdom of God, whereas man’s gospel is merely one about Christ. Christ was a Messenger, and they only preach a message about the Messenger; but they overlook entirely the message that God sent by Him.

So we’re looking forward to **a utopia!** Now, is utopia an impossible thing? You look up the word “utopia” in your dictionary. If you never did, you might look it up. You will find that the dictionary says that utopia is a fanciful, imaginary, impossible condition of absolute perfection where everybody is peaceful and happy, and there are no troubles of any kind. There is plenty for everybody and everybody has plenty. Everybody is happy and contented. Everybody is getting along, very happily and peaceably, with everybody else. In other words, the time of perfection.

Well, what’s wrong with that? Why shouldn’t there be a utopia? ...[{5}](#) and get, wanting to take instead of share, one of hate instead of love, antagonism instead of cooperation, always trying to get the best of someone else and trying to **get** something without effort and without producing, and take what someone else produced away from them. This world has been going on now for about 6,000 years in that manner.

God’s Great Purpose

Now, WHAT IS IT ALL ABOUT? When you get back to the beginning, what is it ALL about? In the first place, it all has to do with one central thing; and that is **the purpose of the Eternal Creator God!** God has a great purpose. You know, it was during World War II (and I’ve said this hundreds of times I suppose now), Winston Churchill – one of the greatest statesmen of all times and especially in our lifetime, and I think there is not one of that caliber living today – he was speaking before the United States Congress

assembled; and he said, “There is a purpose being worked out here below.”

I don't think Mr. Churchill understood what that purpose was. But somehow he seemed to know there is a purpose being worked out; and indeed there is. What is that purpose? And who is working it out? When he said “worked out here below,” he naturally meant by **God above working it out**. EVERYTHING revolves around that **GREAT PURPOSE!** That's THE OVERALL PURPOSE, and EVERYTHING that is going on (or ever has gone on) is only a part, or a portion, of the development towards that purpose.

Now that starts with God Himself. I don't know how to explain anything except to go back to the beginning. I've said so often: you look at this world and try to understand it and you don't. Do you know why? It is like going into a movie when it is almost over, and you don't understand it. You don't know what's going on. You don't know why the things you see being said and done are being done, or what led up to it – because you didn't see what went before. You didn't see what led up to it. Then you would have understood.

We have come into this world when it is almost over. It's near its 6,000 years; and God has, in His purpose, allotted 7,000 years to complete His purpose. The first 6,000 years have been allotted to Satan the devil. Now how did he get into this? Well, we need to go back to the beginning to understand even that. So I usually cover the trunk of the tree with its roots, and I leave the branches and the twigs to our other ministers. They bring you the details. But God has **a great purpose**.

Now in the first place today, I said we've been for 6,000 years in “the day of Satan” the devil; and he has so blinded the world that they have no idea about God. Most of the people in the world are simply not conscience of God. They just don't think about Him. He doesn't enter into their thoughts, or

the daily activities of their mind; and they don't want Him to enter in. You begin to talk about God, and they are uncomfortable. They want to change the subject or run away real quick. They are nervous. They don't want to talk about God.

Actually, they are afraid of God. It's not that they think God is a monster, going to harm them or hurt them. It's rather the other way. They think God is so good that they might find out how bad they really are, and they don't want to know. So they run away, and they are afraid of God.

Who And What God Is

I've said many times: there is no religion on earth that knows who or what God is, except God's own Church. You read in the very beginning of the Bible, "*In the beginning **God** created the heavens and the earth.*" But Moses wrote that in the Hebrew language. In the Hebrew language, he didn't use the word "God." The word for God in Hebrew was "Elohim," and Elohim is a plural {6} word. (Not uni-, but plural word.) It means more than one; and it should be **Gods** with an 's' on the end of it in the English language, because God later said, "*Let **Us** make man in **Our** image.*" Not let Me! There was more than one person there.

Now, who was that? Who and what then is God? Of what is He composed? What is He like? You find that described in the New Testament, in the 1st chapter of John, the first five verses – where it says, "*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*" Now, it's the same as in Genesis: "*In the beginning ...*" But instead of saying God created the heavens and the earth; it says, "*... was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God ... All things were made by him.*" There He's the Creator. It just goes into a little more detail.

Now, who and what is this **Word**? Is that talking about a being, a

personage? In verse 14, I believe it is, the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and became Jesus Christ. So **the Word** was a great personage that became Jesus Christ – is the personage before He became Christ.

We read of it in Hebrews, that He was like God. *“Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life.”* He will always exist. He always did. There never was a time when He began. He always has been. (Don’t try to figure that out in your mind. You just can’t. I can’t either.) Nevertheless, something had to always exist; and it took intelligence to produce the unintelligent things we find in the universe.

How God And The Word Live

Now it said that He lived. God lived, and the Word lived. The next thing then is: **How did They live?** They lived happily. They lived at peace. They loved one another. Two can’t walk together except they be agreed, and They agreed. When the Word (the Logos, as it is in the Greek language) became Jesus Christ – when He was about 30 years of age and was baptized – God said from heaven, “You are My BELOVED Son, in whom I am well pleased.” He loved the Son; and the Son loved God, who then became His Father after He was born of the virgin Mary. And He obeyed His Father.

He was the Word. He spoke; and one of the Psalms says, *“He spake, and it was done.”* The power that did it was the Spirit of God, the Holy Spirit that proceeded forth from God and also from the Word. But Jesus said, when He was human on the earth, that He never spoke anything except what His Father told Him to speak.

Now two cannot walk together except they be agreed. But, at the same time, two cannot walk together except one is the boss. Every young married couple going to the altar in a wedding ought to remember that. One is going to be the boss. So there are so many young brides today that say now, in

advance they say, they won't go to the altar if there's any promise to obey. "I'm not going to promise to obey. Our marriage is going to be fifty-fifty." And I just simply say, "Oh, yeah." [Audience laughs] Fifty-fifty?

You know, that reminds me of a judge back in Gladewater (We used to call it Gladewater. Now we call it Big Sandy.) over there in Texas. This judge said that he settled that question on his wedding day. He said, "I laid down the law to my wife. I let her know without any equivocation who was going to be the boss in our family; and I told her I would be the boss, and make no mistake about that. I would allow her to, well, make any decisions in some little, minor problems that might come along; but I reserved the voice in deciding all major problems. And I wanted her to understand that! I am the boss." Well, he said, "Now, that worked out very well all these years since we were married. No major problems have ever arisen." [Audience laughs.] So you can guess who the boss was.

Well, in this case God was the boss; and Jesus said He was. There is no question about it. You can't have any society, you can't have any organization, unless one is the boss. There has to be leadership. But God lived. The Word lived. They got along; and They lived the way of cooperation. One was the boss; and there was love between Them; and there was harmony, and there was peace.

What God Does

Now, the next thing is: What did They do? If They lived, They had to be doing something. What was Their occupation? Well, They were Creators. They **created**, and in Ephesians 3:9 you read that God was the Creator. He was the boss, and He created all things BY Jesus. Now Christ did whatever His Father told Him. He only spoke what His Father told Him to. So God told Him what to do. He spoke, and (as one of the psalms says) it was done. The

Spirit of God leaped out and did it. So it all originated with God the Father, and there was total cooperation; and a perfect creation came about.

The first thing that They created was angels. What is God? Of what is God composed? Let's see. It's in John 4:24, I think. *"God is a Spirit."* He is composed of spirit. What is man? Man is flesh, made from the dust of the ground. That's quite different. But you see back in Genesis, it was Elohim (more than one person) said, *"Let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness."*

But the Eternal God (and the Eternal is the one who became Christ) formed man of the dust of the ground – just out of matter. What was made out of matter became a living soul. So the soul came out of matter, and the soul is not spirit. But God did put a spirit in man to give him a mind. So you read in Job that there is a **spirit in man**. You read in the 2nd chapter of I Corinthians that no man could even have the knowledge that a human can have (a knowledge such as horses, cows, elephants can't have) ... No animal can have human knowledge, and a man could not have that kind of knowledge except by THE SPIRIT OF MAN – the human spirit – that is in him.

Now, I find in the Bible that there are different degrees, or levels, of spirit. Highest of all is the Spirit of God, who has the power of creation – the power of thinking and planning and designing, and then of bringing into existence out of nonexistence, of forming and shaping. He designed an oak leaf and caused an oak tree to always bear oak leaves. He designed the human brain and the human body, far more marvelous than anything any human can design or produce. God was **Creator**, and God was composed of spirit.

Angels Created First

Now the first thing that God created then was angels. We find that angels were in existence before matter, because you find in the 38th chapter of Job that, when the earth was created (and the heavens were created at the same time, according to both the 1st and the 2nd chapters of Genesis), that the angels were already in existence; and they were shouting for joy and singing for gladness because the earth originally was made as a habitat for the angels.

Now we find that there are three archangels, or cherubs. They are the highest level of angels. Angels are created on three levels: First are ordinary angels. They do not have wings. A little higher (also composed of spirit, also immortal – not made of matter, but made of spirit) are seraphs. They do have wings. Then above them, highest of all, next to God were cherubs or super archangels. They had wings. There are three of them mentioned in the Bible.

A third of them had followed one, Lucifer. Lucifer was one. He was on the very throne of God, and there was a government there. The government was based on a way of living, a way of life – which is love, cooperation, perfect harmony and agreement, and being at-one with God. At-one-ment with God! One of those archangels, Lucifer, had been on the throne of God. He was experienced in the government of God.

Now all government is based on a law. How would you define **law**? I had to speak at the law school of the University of Southern California – one of the most famous law schools in the United States. I mentioned then that law is merely the rules of human conduct, of the conduct of one or more persons in contact with other person or persons. I also mentioned that men can't seem to understand what is a right way of conduct.

Even our Supreme Court judges can't understand the difference between right and wrong. They just don't know. One of the big arguments right now is abortion. Is it right or wrong? Only God can tell you that! So I

think the next program that I put on the air will be answer to that question. When does human life start? Is it at birth, or is it before birth? Is an abortion the taking of human life? Is it murder, or isn't it? Well, I'm not going to give any opinions. I'm just going to tell them what God says. I'm going to tell them what Jesus Christ would say if He were here – what He does say, because the Bible is His Word in writing. So He says that. That's what He says.

Now any government is founded on a law, a basic law; and a law is merely the rules of human conduct. God's way of human conduct is LOVE.

Physical Universe Created

Now the next thing that God created was the physical universe. As I say, in Job 38 you read of God creating the earth. In Genesis 1 and Genesis 2 are statements that show in both places that the whole universe was created at the same general time as the earth. It says in the same day, but it doesn't mean 24-hour day. (The same general time.)

So angels were created before the physical universe. When God created the physical universe and created the earth, He put a third of the angels on the earth; and He put this Lucifer over them. Now there are two other archangels, each one over a third of the other angels I presume. One, of course, was Michael; and the other was Gabriel. Those are the three archangels.

But God set **a throne of government** on the earth that His government – based on the law of LOVE (of love towards God first of all, and then love towards your fellow creatures) ... In this case, it would be towards other angels. Lucifer was set on a throne to (Oh, what's the word I want?) administer that government; and he still is on that throne to this day.

Now **when** he was set on that throne, nobody knows. It was prior to the

creation of the first human. I don't know whether it was 2 or 3 years before or whether it was millions of years, because angels are immortal^{7} and they have been living a long, long time. They are immortal.

This Lucifer, when he got on a throne of his own, he became jealous and beauty went to his head. Now you find about him in the 14th chapter of Isaiah and the 28th chapter of Ezekiel. He was so beautiful that he allowed vanity to seize him. It went to his head, and he then became jealous of God. God rules the whole universe; but he could only rule this one little planet, earth. So he organized his angels into an army; and he said, "Let's go up and pull a coup. Let's invade God's heaven and knock God off the throne. I want to take over. I'm going to take God's place. I'll be God!" But he got knocked back down to earth. So he was no longer the super archangel. He became Satan the devil; and his angels, who went with him, became demons.

God's Plan For Humans

Now after that had happened, God next decided that He – in His great purpose being worked out here below – would reproduce Himself. He could create no higher being than the cherubs. Here was a cherub who had gone the wrong way and sinned, and lacked the character of God. So He said only God can be assured of always going the right way and never will go the wrong way. So He would reproduce Himself, and He would reproduce Himself out of humans made out of the dust of the ground. Then God said, "Let us ...". That was God the Father said to the Word, "*Let US make man in Our image, after Our likeness.*" Then the Word obeyed, and He formed man of the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life.

Now, he didn't have immortality. Angels did. But man had a mind, and he had a human spirit; and a human spirit was on a lower level than an angel

spirit. The lowest level of any spirit, but it was still spirit. It was **human spirit**, and the human spirit with a human brain ... And incidentally a human brain is no better than a cow's brain, or a horse's brain, or an elephant's brain, or any animal brain. But the human spirit with that brain empowers it with THE POWER OF INTELLECT – the power to acquire and comprehend knowledge, the power to reason, the power to have wisdom and judgment, to make decisions, to put facts together in a reasoning process and come to conclusions, even to invent and to do many things that the human mind can do. So the human brain empowered with the human spirit becomes a mind. Animals don't have minds. They merely have brains.

But God offered the man LIFE. He put him in the Garden of Eden. There were two symbolic trees. One was the Tree of Life; and, if the man would take that Tree of Life, he would then be made at-one with God. It meant that God, with God's Spirit, would enter into him and combine with his spirit.

Now man was at first made alone and incomplete. God had not completed the creation at first. He was only a single, male, human being; and God wanted him to reproduce and replenish the earth. The poor man couldn't do it. So God performed an operation, put him to sleep, used ... Perhaps it was a miraculous anesthesia, but it was an anesthesia. He took out one of his ribs, and made a woman out of it. So He added the woman – a female human – to the male, and the two became ONE! But one what? **One family!** They became one family, just as God and the Word are one God Family. Now, they became one human family. Already you begin to see a type towards God.

God offered {8} them eternal life. If they would take of the Tree of Life, then the Spirit of God would enter into them and would impregnate them with immortal life. They would have been **begotten** with eternal life; and, in due time, they would be **born** as very God – as Jesus Himself was later, after four thousand years.

But, in the meantime, Satan came along; and he deceived Eve. Eve took of the forbidden fruit. That was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil; and God forbade them to take that, to take to themselves the knowledge of good and evil. Now, notice: they were made with a human spirit, and it had the power to know up to a certain level. On the level of the human spirit, they could know good as well as evil. They couldn't know good though on the grand scale that God's mind can, because they had a lower grade of spirit; and any good that they could do was of a self-centered nature.

I've said many times that one of the highest attributes of good that is possible for a human is mother love – the way a mother loves her child; but that is in itself innately selfish. The child came from that mother. It's hers. She loves it. She doesn't love other children like that one. All the difference in the world!

Whereas God doesn't have favorites – God is just love, period. God loves sinners as well as the righteous. He loved sinners so much He gave His only begotten Son to die for them, that they could be reconciled back to Him again. That's a different kind of love all together. It's on a higher, more grand, scale.

So, what did God do? He closed off the Tree of Life so that no man could get to it; and He put super archangels guarding it with flaming swords lest anyone should go in and take it, and eat, and live forever. So this world was founded, and Satan had virtually kidnapped Adam and Eve. They went the way of Satan. Satan didn't say, "Worship me." He said, "Do your own thing." He said, "Choose good and evil for yourself, your own way. Do your own thing." And so they did!

But they could not choose a higher good, because it wasn't within their power. They only had a human spirit. It wasn't on that higher level of the Spirit of God. So the world that followed had both good and evil. But there

was Satan, who had kidnapped them and kidnapped their whole family.

As God Decreed

At that time, the foundation of the world, God made certain decrees. He decreed, as you'll read in the 13th chapter of Revelation and verse 8, that the one who was the Logos (or the Word) would become flesh and dwell among us, would live a perfect human life and would pay the death penalty in man's stead – because the penalty for that sin was death. So now it was already decreed that man's sin could be paid for and man could have his penalty removed.

The next thing God decreed was that, as in Adam all were going to die, so in Christ **the same all** would be made alive by a resurrection. You read of that in I Corinthians 15, beginning with verse 22. Then, along with that (in Hebrews 9:27) you will read that it was appointed then – at the very foundation of the world – for men once to die, because of sin. They're all the offspring of Adam and Eve, and they had sinned. Adam had sinned, and all have sinned since; and they all die in Adam.

But after they die, there would be a judgment. They would be resurrected in Christ. Christ would come and pay the penalty of sin. They would be resurrected. Then it would be possible after all for them to be saved. In other words, God had A PURPOSE He was working out here below. When Satan induced Adam and Eve to go the wrong way, he did **not** defeat God's purpose! **GOD'S PURPOSE SHALL STAND!** No one can defeat God's purpose.

So God arranged that, even though man should die, through Christ they would all be made alive. Then would come a judgment, but the judgment was not on the children of Adam and Eve.

It's just a case of **when** we are to be saved. Those that God calls are those that were predestinated to come. We have a different battle than those that will come later. We have to fight Satan. We have to fight this world. We have to overcome Satan; we have to overcome the world; and we have to even overcome our own selves.

Now, EVERYBODY is going to be called! But only those in God's Church are called now. Others will be called later. It's just a case of **when** you are called. We are called now, not to get salvation. We are called now to learn, and to come to be filled with the Spirit of God, and to learn of God in order to be teachers, and to bring others (when their time comes) into salvation and into the Kingdom of God, and to bring them into a condition where they too will finally be at-one with God.

So now God has given His Church ... and ancient Israel was the Church in the wilderness; but they were really the congregation or church of Israel. We are the Church of God. In other words, they were the flesh-born children of Jacob, whose name was changed to Israel. We are the spirit-begotten [{9}](#) children of God. So we are called by our Father's name. They were called Israel. That was their national name. We are called Church of God, and we go by our Father's name – God. Oh, brethren, do we realize these wonderful truths? Do we realize it?

God's Holy Days

Now, God has given us these annual holy days. First was, it began, the spiritual phase of God's program began with Christ and His sacrifice; and the Passover pictured that. The seven Days of Unleavened Bread picture coming out of sin. That's the next step. The Day of Pentecost, coming in the summer, pictures the coming of the Holy Spirit. Also, it was the time of the coming of the law at Mount Sinai. That comes in the summer, usually in the month of

June (I guess, always){10}.

Then we come to the Feast of Trumpets. That is the Second Coming of Christ. That is a time when Christ will come and take over the reign and the rule OF ALL NATIONS. When He comes, we are going to reign and rule with Him. He says, for example, in Revelation the 2nd chapter. Well, it's in chapter 2 verses 26-27 and chapter 3 verse 21. We will sit with Him on His throne. We will be given power over the nations, and rule them with a rod of iron.

We are called now **to qualify** to do that! That's the only reason we are called. Not just to get salvation. Those of you who think you are called just to get salvation are going to find you won't get it. You are like the one who received one of the ten talents, when Christ in the parable gave one talent to each of His ten servants. The one who took it and gained ten with it, and did something, and qualified for what he would do in the Kingdom – he's going to reign over ten cities in the Kingdom. He qualified for what he can do in the Kingdom of God. The one who gained five talents only did half as well. He will be given half as big a job in the Kingdom, which means half as big an honor really.

But the one who just tried to get saved, and that's all (and he tried to keep what he had, and he didn't add anything to it) had it taken away from him; and he didn't get into the Kingdom at all. That's what is going to happen to any of you people who think you are just getting into the Kingdom and you are just going to get saved. **IF YOU DON'T REALIZE YOU HAVE TO GROW IN THE KNOWLEDGE OF JESUS CHRIST** as well as His grace. **IF YOU DON'T REALIZE YOU HAVE TO OVERCOME.** **IF YOU DON'T REALIZE YOU HAVE TO ENDURE TO THE END.** **IF YOU DON'T REALIZE YOU HAVE TO QUALIFY.** We are rewarded **ACCORDING TO OUR WORKS**, not saved according to our works; but we are not being called just to be saved.

Salvation itself is a free gift of God, but we are called for something more than that now. We are called for a great job, and we **MUST** qualify! What have you qualified for? How much have you grown since this time last year? Ask yourself that. And many of you are going to have to say, “Well, I guess I haven’t grown. I guess I haven’t learned any more than I knew then. I guess my character is not any better than it was then [{11}](#).” I sometimes think that a lot of Protestantism has rubbed off on some of us, and they think it is just a matter of getting saved. Brethren, it is far, far more than that.

Now then, **if** we qualify, **then** when Christ comes we are going to sit with Him on His throne. We are going to be given power over the nations. We will be kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth. (That’s Revelation 5:10.) Then will come that thousand-year period that I mentioned at the beginning. After that, Satan will be loosed.

Satan will be put away. The Day of Atonement, which we had just ten days ago, pictures Satan being put clear away. Christ will come and rule. When He does, Satan won’t be on the throne any longer. He will be removed. YOU will be ruling with Christ. Have you been qualifying? Have you been gaining ground?

Brethren, I don’t say you have to reach absolute perfection. I don’t think any of us are going to do that. But we have to have gained ground. We have to have made progress. We have to have been overcoming. We have to have been growing in grace **AND KNOWLEDGE**. Do you study your Bibles enough? Do you pray enough? Otherwise, brethren, some of you are not going to make it into God’s Kingdom. We talk about making it into God’s Kingdom. Well, let’s quit talking that way. Let’s talk about **qualifying** to be a king or a priest.

Following then, of course, will come that thousand years; and after that will come the time of the Great White Throne Judgment. Those who had

lived before and judgment was not on them – they will be resurrected. As they have died in Adam, they will all be resurrected in Christ. It will be the final judgment; and, of course, that is a subject for the Last Great Day of the feast. Then we will show the final culmination of this marvelous, great purpose of God. It's a marvelous thing; and God's purpose, as I said, DOES STAND!

As I've said before, I have looked into the Book (which is God's Book). I've looked over to the end to see how it comes out, and **we win**. We will win, brethren. Keep studying your Bible. Keep praying. Keep qualifying, and never fail.

Editor's Notes

[{1}](#) - Editor's note: Words are missing from the beginning of this prerecorded message.

[{2}](#) - Editor's note: At this point, music begins to play.

[{3}](#) - Editor's note: The background music stops here.

[{4}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong began to say, "beat their plowshares;" but he corrected himself.

[{5}](#) - Editor's note: The audio skips here and part of the message is missing at this point.

[{6}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong first said Elohim is a uni-plural, but then he corrected himself – saying it is a plural word.

[{7}](#) - Editor's note: Originally Mr. Armstrong said, "because angels are immortal and having been living forever." But then he said "Not forever." and went on to correct himself.

[{8}](#) - Editor's note: Mr. Armstrong first said, "God said." But then he

corrected himself and said, “God offered.”

[{9}](#) - Editor’s note: At first Mr. Armstrong said we are the spirit-born children, but then he corrected himself and changed it to spirit-begotten children of God.

[{10}](#) - Editor’s note: Pentecost either falls in May or June on our calendar.

[{11}](#) - Editor’s note: Mr. Armstrong somewhat chokes or coughs at this point, and then says, “Excuse me.”